

DELHI UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY

DELHI UNIVERSITY LIBRARY

Cl. No. 0 A

Ac. No. 34814

Date of release for loan 2 JAN 1969

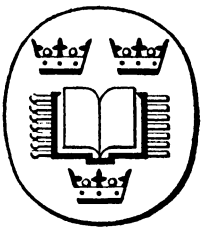
This book should be returned on or before the date last stamped below. An overdue charge of 5 Paise will be collected for each day the book is kept overtime.

THE OXFORD COMPANION TO AMERICAN LITERATURE

THE OXFORD COMPANION TO AMERICAN LITERATURE

BY

JAMES D. HART



OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

LONDON NEW YORK TORONTO

COPYRIGHT 1941 BY OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS, NEW YORK, INC.

FIRST EDITION

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

PREFACE

DESIGNED to serve as a useful companion for students and general readers of American literature, this volume provides ready references, not only to materials concerning the written word in America, but also to many allied subjects. It attempts to deal briefly with the American mind and the American scene, as these are reflected in and influenced by American literature.

In alphabetic arrangement, the work includes, first of all, short biographies and bibliographies of American authors, with information regarding their style and subject matter; nearly nine hundred summaries and descriptions of the important American novels, stories, essays, poems, and plays; definitions and historical outlines of literary schools and movements; and information on literary societies, magazines, anthologies, co-operative publications, literary awards, book collectors, printers, and other matters related to writing in America. Literary terms that are sufficiently defined in the dictionaries are not discussed, except when they have a distinctive history in the United States. Thus there are no entries on the conventional terms of prosody, but free verse, polyphonic prose, and stream-of-consciousness fiction are briefly treated, and there are lengthy articles on such subjects as the tall tale, the ballad, local color, and romanticism.

As is indicated by the Chronological Index, the scope of the volume includes far more, however, than literature considered as *belles-lettres*. Much of the writing that is discussed in these pages is undistinguished by beauty of style, but it is all important for a comprehensive review of expression in America. The printed word does not exist in a vacuum, and the writer of this book has constantly kept in mind the idea that the understanding of works of literature depends upon an informed knowledge of the entire social atmosphere of their place and time. This view has led to the inclusion of the social, economic, aesthetic, scientific, military, political, and religious forces and events that have affected the course of history and hence the thought in the lands now forming the United States, from the time of their discovery to 1941.

There are, accordingly, biographies of persons who are not authors but who have been important in the nation's social history and culture, articles on religious sects, wars, laws and documents, educational institutions, important cities and regions, political parties, popular slogans, and outstanding newspapers and periodicals. Entries will be found

on subjects ranging from the American Expeditionary Force to the Zuñi Indians; while Jesse James, the New York *Sun*, Jamestown, and the Reconstruction receive as much attention as Father Tabb, *The North American Review*, Brook Farm, and Realism. Reference to these articles will provide the reader with at least an elementary grasp of the social background of the work with which he is concerned. All such materials have been deliberately viewed through a literary lens. This practice may distort the information from the point of view of, say, theology or of political science, but it is meant to clarify the meaning for literary students and readers. In nearly every case there are references to novels, plays, poems, and other works that are related to the subject under consideration.

The explorers and colonial historians of neighboring countries are also treated, as is the major Canadian literature down to the present time. Foreign authors are discussed only when they have written important books about the United States, or when they bear some other relation to American literature. The biographical entry on Dickens, for example, tells only of his visits to the United States, and of his works only *Martin Chuzzlewit* and the *American Notes* are summarized. The same method has been applied in the articles on foreign statesmen, scholars, travelers, and others who have figured directly or indirectly in the shaping of American culture.

The length of an article should not be considered as marking the relative importance of its subject. Many considerations have upset precise standards of length, although an attempt has been made to allot space according to a careful judgment of what is significant in American social and literary history. Even among the authors, such considerations must be recognized as the duration of the various careers, the scholarly controversies about them, the differences between those who were recluses and those who entered actively into the life of their times, and the distinctions between those who wrote many books on different subjects and in varying forms, and those whose books were all cut on the same pattern. This is true also of the descriptions and plot summaries, which, irrespective of the literary qualities of the books, may be lengthened or shortened according to the diffusion or simplicity of the subject matter. The same forces operate in the general articles. Thus, although Boston's population is less than one quarter of Chicago's, its literary history is far longer and more complex and requires a more detailed entry.

Every precaution, within the limits of time and energy at the disposal of one man, has been taken to make the book accurate. Equally

well, care has been taken to make it comprehensive. Nevertheless, certain arbitrary limits had to be drawn. Along with accuracy, compactness has been an essential aim. It has therefore been necessary to reduce the bibliographies, even of the most important authors, to checklists of their major works, and to neglect any reference to certain peripheral matters, which would have so enlarged the book as to take it outside the scope of a one-volume 'companion.'

If this volume succeeds in its primary aims of comprehensiveness and accuracy, it will be largely because of my indebtedness to previous publications on American literature and history, and to my friends and correspondents.

It was my intention upon beginning the work, in 1936, to call upon various experts for contributions on special subjects, but this plan proved to be impracticable, and only one such entry exists. That is the biography of Emily Dickinson by Professor George F. Whicher, which, in addition to its intrinsic value, has been of great worth as a model for other articles of the same nature. There are no other entries wholly by other persons, but friends have in some cases prepared material that has been altered only slightly to conform to the general plan. My sister, Mrs.Joseph M. Bransten, provided the material on all painters, sculptors, and architects; Professor George R. Stewart is responsible for the information on Bret Harte, the Donner Party, and George Horatio Derby, the subjects of three of his books; Randall V. Mills has provided some of the synopses of novels by Simms and other 19th-century authors; and others who have furnished material or otherwise aided me include: Robert F. Almy, Henry G. Alsberg, Mrs.Caroline Camp, Robert Clarke, John Finch, Charles F. Haas, Robert B. Haas, Alfred Kazin, Mrs.John R. Marsh, Walter L. Pforzheimer, many student workers, Dr.Howard F. Lowry and Miss Margaret Nicholson of the Oxford University Press, and the staff of the University of California Library. Above all I am indebted to my brother-in-law and sister, Mr. and Mrs.Joseph M. Bransten, and to my wife, Ruth A. Hart, who during the five years of work on this volume furnished constant encouragement, listened with interest to the problems that it provoked, and ever gave stimulating and valuable suggestions. Any attempt to thank them must inevitably fall short. Mr.Frederic R. Gunsky, my typist and secretary during most of this time, has come to know the work as intimately as I, typing and retyping the various articles. He has gone far beyond the limits of the work required of him, and I can have no praise too high for his aid in every possible matter, from research and the compilation of materials to excellent suggestions concerning the general

plan. To all these persons I owe my thanks for aid in bringing to its fulfilment the purpose of the book, of helping readers and students to comprehend the materials and the background of American literature.

Berkeley, California J.D.H.
May 1941

THE OXFORD COMPANION TO AMERICAN LITERATURE

NOTE

CHARACTERS and REAL PERSONS are entered under their surnames, the former in ordinary bold type, the latter in capitals (e.g. Natty Bumppo under **'Bumppo,** NATTY' and Henry James under **'JAMES,** HENRY'), unless the surname is little known, or the two names are generally considered an indissoluble whole (e.g. **'John Henry'** and **'Little Eva'**). For the sake of convenience, a few famous characters are also entered under their Christian names.

AUTHORS and other persons are entered under their proper names rather than their pseudonyms (e.g. **'CLEMENS,** SAMUEL' rather than Mark Twain, and **'CODY,** WILLIAM' rather than Buffalo Bill). In all cases the pseudonym is entered with a cross reference to the proper name. Upon rare occasions, when the real name is forgotten or little known, the entry is under the pseudonym (e.g. **'CALAMITY JANE'** rather than Martha Jane Burke).

FULL NAMES are given; those parts not ordinarily used are enclosed in brackets (e.g. **'CATHER,** WILLA [SIBERT]' and **'MENCKEN,** H[ENRY] L[OUIS]'). Variant spellings and originals of altered names are enclosed in parentheses (e.g. **'FAULKNER** (or FALKNER)' and **'O'SHEEL** (SHIELDS)').

When more than one member of a family is mentioned, the entry is under the name which is most celebrated (e.g. **'WILLIS,** NATHANIEL PARKER' followed in a separate paragraph by 'SARA PAYSON WILLIS'). When several members of a family are equally famous, separate entries are made (e.g. the James family).

A TITLE consisting of a Christian name and a surname is entered under the Christian name (e.g. ***Tom Sawyer***). The TITLE OF A BOOK OR PAMPHLET is italicized; at the head of an article it is given in bold italics (e.g. ***Mosses from an Old Manse***). The title of a work not separately issued, i.e. printed in a periodical or as part of a book, is enclosed in quotation marks (e.g. 'Young Goodman Brown'); at the head of an article it is given in bold italic type.

All publication DATES, except as otherwise indicated, are American. Plays are dated in reference to first production rather than publication, although both dates are given for plays which are separately summarized. All dates are based on the New Style Calendar.

ABBREVIATIONS

b.	= born.	i.e.	= *id est*, that is.
c.	= *circa*, about.	MS. (MSS.)	= manuscript (manuscripts)
d.	= died.		
e.g.	= *exempli gratia*, for example.	q.v.	= *quod vide*, which see.
		qq.v.	= *quæ vide*, both which, or all which, see.
ff.	= following.		
fl.	= *floruit*, flourished.		

A

A.E.F., see *American Expeditionary Force.*

A.F.of L., see *American Federation of Labor.*

ABBEY, Edwin Austin (1852–1911), began his artistic career as a book illustrator, but later became known for his murals, which show an obvious debt to Millet and Rossetti. The large *Quest of the Holy Grail*, in the Boston Public Library, is typically literary in its approach, each fresco telling its own story without a flowing continuity in the series.

Abbotsford and Newstead Abbey, volume in Irving's *Crayon Miscellany* (1835).

ABBOTT, Jacob (1803–79), Massachusetts educator and Congregational clergyman, whose first book, *The Young Christian* (1832), was followed by some 200 similar works. The best known are the 28 volumes of the Rollo series (1834ff.), which are instructive stories for children in the genre of *Sanford and Merton*. Many of Abbott's books were written in collaboration with his brother, John S.C. Abbott (1805–77). His granddaughter, Eleanor Hallowell Abbott (1872–), was also an author of children's books, including *Molly Make-Believe* (1910).

Lyman Abbott (1835–1922), his son, was the successor of Henry Ward Beecher both in the pulpit of his Plymouth Congregational Church (Brooklyn) and as editor of *The Outlook* (originally *The Christian Union*). He was a leader of the modern rational outlook upon religion, opposing ultra-refined theological controversy and championing scientific views such as the reconciliation of the Darwinian theory with Christianity. His books include *Christianity and Social Problems* (1897), *The Theology of an Evolutionist* (1897), *Henry Ward Beecher* (1903), *Reminiscences* (1915), and *What Christianity Means to Me* (1921).

ABBOTT, Wilbur Cortez (1869–), professor of history at Yale (1908–20) and Harvard (1920–37), is best known for his *Expansion of Europe, A History of the Foundations of the Modern World* (1917, revised 1924). His other writings include: *Conflicts with Oblivion* (1924); *The New Barbarians* (1925); *New York in the American Revolution* (1929); and *Adventures in Reputation* (1935).

Abe Lincoln in Illinois, play by Robert Sherwood (q.v.), produced in 1938 and awarded the 1939 Pulitzer Prize. It was published in 1939 with an extensive commentary by the author on its 'Substance' and composition.

The 12 scenes of the play carry the hero from his young manhood as an unsuccessful storekeeper at New Salem, through the years of his marriage and legal career, to his election to the presidency and departure for Washington. Considering Lincoln's achievement to be 'the solidification of the American ideal,' the playwright has chosen critical episodes to show 'the solidification of Lincoln himself—a long, uncertain process, effected by influences some of which came from within his own reasoning mind, some from his surrounding circumstances, some from sources which we cannot comprehend.' Most of Lincoln's words in the play have been selected from his actual recorded utterances, and the whole work is based on careful documentation. Among the chief influences on the development of the hero's character, as presented by Sherwood, are the Abolitionism of his clerk and partner, Billy Herndon; the patient sincerity of his early teacher, Mentor Graham; the faith and encouragement of his friend, Bowling Green, and his brother-in-law, Ninian Edwards; the fierce pride and ambition of his wife; his own 'awareness of the West,' tragic sense of life, sincere liberalism, and relentlessly thorough personal and social philosophy.

Abe Martin, character in a series of books by F.McK.Hubbard (q.v.).

Abie's Irish Rose, comedy by Anne Nichols, produced in 1924. Its sentimental plot is concerned with the love of a Jewish youth and an Irish girl in New York's East Side. The play is credited with being one of the most popular ever produced in the U.S., having had a New York run of 2,532 performances.

Able McLaughlins, The, novel by Margaret Wilson (q.v.).

Abolitionist, name applied to one who aimed at or advocated the abolition of slavery (q.v.). The term may be found at least as early as 1790, during the period when Thomas Clarkson, William Wilberforce, and the younger Pitt attacked the

slave trade. In 1806–7, Prime Minister Fox secured the abolition of slave traffic between England and her possessions, and in 1808 the traffic was abolished in the U.S. Despite universal outlawry, the slave trade continued illegally. During the 1830's, the territorial expansion of the U.S. made slavery and its abolition a vital issue, but though the North had freed its slaves it was still economically dependent on the cotton industry of the South, to which slavery was indispensable. Out of this conflict emerged three schools of Abolitionist thought: (1) radical Abolitionism under W.L.Garrison (q.v.); (2) Free-soilism (q.v.) under Lincoln; and (3) the philosophical attacks of Channing and Wayland. Two events in 1831 accelerated the Abolitionist movement and the hostility to it: the South was alarmed by the defeat, by only one vote, of a bill in the Virginia Senate providing for the colonization of free Negroes and encouraging private emancipation; and the first issue of *The Liberator* (q.v.). The New England Anti-Slavery Society was organized by Garrison and others in 1831, and in 1833 the American Anti-Slavery Society was established at Philadelphia by this and other local societies. The American Anti-Slavery Society, including such members as Wendell Phillips, Whittier, Edmund Quincy, Arthur Tappan, James G. Birney, and Amos Phelps, was not dissolved until 1870, although a schism occurred in 1840 and most of the membership resigned to join other groups. In 1859 John Brown (q.v.) and his followers captured the armory at Harpers Ferry, intending to establish a base from which to free slaves by armed intervention. From then until the firing upon Fort Sumter, the Abolitionist cause and the opposition to it became increasingly powerful, being among the principal causes of the Civil War and influencing the Emancipation Proclamation and the Fourteenth Amendment (qq.v.). The earliest antislavery prose is to be found in such works as Sewall's *The Selling of Joseph*, Franklin's 'On the Slave Trade,' and the ninth of Crèvecœur's *Letters from an American Farmer*. Hildreth's *The Slave* (1836) is credited with being the first antislavery novel, but of the reams of literature—sermons, tracts, treatises, periodicals, poems, plays, and novels—for this cause, the most popular and influential were Mrs.Stowe's *Uncle Tom's Cabin* (1852) and H.R.Helper's *The Impending Crisis of the South* (1857). Other prominent antislavery authors were Lowell, Whittier, Benjamin Lundy, John Rankin, Samuel Crothers, T.D.Weld, Horace Mann, and Frederick Douglass.

Abominations, TARIFF OF, was devised (1828) in an atmosphere of political intrigue and represents the high-water mark of pre-Civil War protective legislation, bringing the average duty up to 44 per cent. Such New England representatives as Webster wished both to reduce the competition from imports and to make industrial employment a counterattraction to the agricultural lands of the West, which were draining the New England population. The rival presidential candidacies of Adams, Clay, and Jackson led the Jacksonian free-traders to load the bill with such unpalatable duties on manufacturers' raw materials that Adams's New England backers could not swallow it. Although satisfactory to almost no one, the tariff was passed. It was denounced in the legislatures of the cotton states, and in the fall of 1832 the South Carolina legislature, at the instigation of Calhoun, called a special convention which defied the duties as unconstitutional, and passed an Ordinance of Nullification. Although President Jackson was authorized to use armed force, a compromise led by Clay was effected, and upon passage of the new tariff the former Ordinance of Nullification was rescinded.

Abraham, PLAINS OF, adjoining Quebec, are noted as the site of the battle between Wolfe and Montcalm (1759), which ended the French and Indian War. The most famous historical treatment is Parkman's *Montcalm and Wolfe* (1884).

Abraham Lincoln Walks at Midnight, poem in iambic pentameter quatrains, by Vachel Lindsay (q.v.), published in *The Congo and Other Poems* (1914). The poet describes his vision of the 'mourning figure' of Lincoln, which paces the streets of Springfield on the eve of the World War, 'sleepless' because of 'the bitterness, the folly, and the pain' that are abroad in the world:

> Too many peasants fight, they know not why,
> Too many homesteads in black terror weep.

Absalom, Absalom!, novel by Faulkner (q.v.).

Acadia, early Canadian province corresponding with the present Nova Scotia,

though of greater area, was claimed by the English but mainly settled by the French. When the Acadians refused to take an oath of allegiance to the British, during the last French and Indian War, several thousands of them were deported (1755) to British provinces farther south. Many families were accidentally separated, although most of the French sought refuge in Quebec and Louisiana. Longfellow's *Evangeline* is the most famous account of these events. In Louisiana the Acadian exiles and their descendants are called 'Cajuns,' and their life has been described by Kate Chopin and other local-color writers.

ACO, Michel (*fl.*1680–1702), French explorer, was a lieutenant of La Salle, who sent him to explore the upper Mississippi. The expedition is described in the writings of his companion, Hennepin (q.v.).

Acres of Diamonds, religious lecture by Russell Conwell (q.v.).

Across the Plains, autobiographical narrative by R.L.Stevenson (q.v.), was published in an abridged version in *Longman's Magazine* (1883) and in book form in 1892. A sequel to *The Amateur Emigrant* (q.v.), it is an account of the author's journey by railroad (1879) from New York to San Francisco.

Actors' Equity Association, founded in 1915 to protect the business interests of American actors. Affiliated since 1919 with the A.F.of L., it has obtained the right of collective bargaining through the union.

Actress of Padua, The, romantic tragedy by R.P.Smith (q.v.), produced in 1836, which survives only in his narrative version published the same year.

This adaptation of Victor Hugo's *Angelo, Tyran de Padoue* is set in 16th-century Venice, where Angelo the tyrant rules. He is jealous both of his wife, Catherina, whom he does not love, and of the actress Thisbe, whom he does love. They, however, are both in love with Rodolpho. When Angelo condemns Catherina to death, Thisbe gives her an apparent poison, which is actually a sleeping potion. Rodolpho, believing that Thisbe has betrayed Catherina, kills Thisbe, who would really have made their escape secure.

ADAIR, James (*c.*1709–*c.*1783), Irish-born trader with the Indians in the South, came to America about 1735. His book, *The History of the American Indian* (1775), is valuable as an account of the customs and languages of the Chickasaws and other tribes, despite its thesis that the Indians are descended from the ancient Jews.

ADAMIC, Louis (1899–), born in Yugoslavia, has written of his life as an immigrant in the U.S. in *Laughing in the Jungle* (1932), and of his observations during a trip to his native land in *The Native's Return* (1934). Besides several translations, his other books include: *Dynamite: The Story of Class Violence in America* (1931, revised 1934); two novels, *Grandsons: A Story of American Lives* (1935) and *Cradle of Life: The Story of One Man's Beginnings* (1936); *The House in Antigua* (1937), concerned with the long history of a colonial house in Guatemala; *My America, 1928–1938* (1938), combining autobiographical material with a survey of the social scene; and *From Many Lands* (1940), dealing with the melting pot of America.

ADAMS, Abigail (1744–1818), wife of John Adams, whose charming letters were published by her grandson, Charles Francis Adams, in two volumes: *Letters of Abigail Adams* (1840) and *Familiar Letters of John Adams and His Wife during the Revolution* (1876).

ADAMS, Andy (1859–1935), born in Indiana, moved to Texas as a youth to become a cowboy, and during the mining boom went to Colorado, where he later wrote his stories of the cattle kingdom. He is one of the few authors of cowboy stories who are considered to have achieved high literary merit. Among his books are: *The Log of a Cowboy* (q.v.,1903), a novel of the cattle drive north from Texas, which contains character portraits of cattle hands, miners, Indians, and thieves; *The Outlet* (1905), a novel treating a similar subject, and the sharp methods of the railway companies, contractors, and congressional lobbyists who are concerned with the drive; *Cattle Brands* (1906), short stories of frontier life in the 1880's; and *Reed Anthony, Cowman: an Autobiography* (1907), a novel about a young Confederate army veteran who drifts to Texas and becomes a cattle rancher.

ADAMS, Brooks (1848–1927), historian, whose works include: *The Emancipation of Massachusetts* (1887), an iconoclastic

study of the religious and political bondage of the colonists; *Law of Civilization and Decay* (1895); and *Theory of Social Revolution* (1913). He wrote a lengthy history of the intellectual tradition of his family as a preface to the 'Letter to American Teachers of History' by his brother, Henry Adams (q.v.), and published both under the title, *The Degradation of the Democratic Dogma* (1919). He was a grandson of John Quincy Adams and a son of Charles Francis Adams.

ADAMS, Charles Follen (1842–1918), author of comic verse, is best known for 'Leedle Yawcob Strauss' (1876), a humorous, sentimental work in the 'scrapple English' of the Pennsylvania Dutch. His verses were collected in *Yawcob Strauss and Other Poems* (1910).

ADAMS, Charles Francis (1807–86), son of John Quincy Adams, entered politics as a 'conscience' Whig, founded the *Boston Whig*, and in 1848 ran for the vice-presidency as a Free Soil candidate. He later entered Congress as a Republican, and in 1861 was appointed minister to England, where he served during the Civil War. His diplomacy prevented England from continuing to furnish ironclad vessels to the Confederacy, and he was an arbitrator of the Alabama Claims. He edited the *Works of John Adams* (1850–56), the letters of Abigail Adams (q.v.), and the *Memoirs of John Quincy Adams* (1874–7). Henry Adams and Brooks Adams were his sons.

Charles Francis Adams (1835–1915), another son, was active in civic affairs, and president of the Union Pacific Railroad (1884–90). His writings indicate the wide scope of his interests: *Chapters of Erie and Other Essays* (1871), written with his brother Henry; *Railroads: Their Origin and Problems* (1878); a biography of Richard Henry Dana (1890); *Three Episodes of Massachusetts History* (1892); and *Studies: Military and Diplomatic* (1911). He also wrote a biography of his father (1900), edited Morton's *New English Canaan* (1883), and wrote an interesting autobiography (1916).

ADAMS, Franklin P[ierce] (1881–), newspaper columnist and humorist, began his journalistic career in Chicago (1903). He has since worked on various New York papers, and is best known for his column, 'The Conning Tower,' which features satirical verse and a personal diary in the manner of Pepys. Among his books are: *Tobogganing on Parnassus* (1911), *Christopher Columbus* (1931), and other collections of verse, from which *The Melancholy Lute* (1936) is a selection; and the *Diary of Our Own Samuel Pepys* (2 vols.,1935), edited from his newspaper column. His work is usually signed with his initials.

ADAMS, Hannah (1755–1831), is generally considered the first professional woman author of America. Her popular works included: *Alphabetical Compendium of the Various Sects . . . from the Beginning of the Christian Era to the Present Day* (1784); *A Summary History of New England* (1799); *The Truth and Excellence of the Christian Religion* (1804); and *History of the Jews* (1812).

ADAMS, Henry [Brooks] (1838–1918), grandson of J.Q.Adams and son of C.F. Adams, claims in his autobiography that his conventional education was defective, despite the best Boston and Quincy background, Harvard College, German post-graduate training, and his position as secretary during his father's ministry to England at the time of the Civil War. His first writing, an article on Captain John Smith published in 1867, was followed by other contributions to periodicals, including a review of Lyell's *Principles of Geology* (1868), clearly showing the importance of the evolutionary theory in human history and Adams's own divorce from the absolute standards of his ancestors. Returning from England to Washington,D.C. (1868), he continued to write carefully considered articles, and, completely out of sympathy with Reconstruction politics, abandoned former ideas of a political career to teach history at Harvard (1870–77), for most of this period also editing *The North American Review*. He next went to Washington to write history and to seek the companionship of such men as Secretary of State Evarts, John Hay, and Clarence King, for he said ironically, 'So far as [I] had a function in life, it was as stable-companion to statesmen.' There he wrote *Democracy* (q.v.,1880), an anonymous novel on Washington politics, and *Esther* (q.v., 1884), a pseudonymous novel of New York society. In 1872 he was married to Marian Hooper, whose suicide in 1885 tragically affected his life. Although he never mentions her in his writings, she probably served as a model for the heroine

in *Esther*. Adams commissioned his friend Saint-Gaudens to design for her grave in Washington a statue symbolic of the mystery of death, which he called 'The Peace of God.' When he could no longer endure life at Washington, he made a long trip through the Orient, from which he returned to complete his *History of the United States during the Administrations of Jefferson and Madison* (9 vols.,1889–91), brilliantly portraying politics and diplomacy in the early republic. He traveled widely during the following years, and among the literary results was the *Memoirs of Marau Taaroa, Last Queen of Tahiti* (1893, revised 1901). He 'drifted back to Washington with a new sense of history' after a summer in Normandy (1895) and a visit to the Paris Exposition (1900), where he saw the huge dynamo whose mysterious and terrifying force contrasted with that of the Virgin in the 13th century. *Mont-Saint-Michel and Chartres* (q.v.,1904) was the first result of his determination to measure the life and thought of a century in terms of Force. Above its value as a sound scholarly descriptive work, the book is important for its interpretive study of a unified universe. In 1910 he published 'A Letter to American Teachers of History,' reprinted in *The Degradation of the Democratic Dogma* (1919) by his brother Brooks Adams (q.v.). This work sets forth Henry Adams's dynamic theory of history. The second law of thermodynamics supposes a universal tendency to dissipate mechanical energy, and thus vitiates the idea of human history as evolving toward a state of perfection. On the contrary, according to Adams, human thought is a substance passing from one phase to another through critical points determined by attraction, acceleration, and volume (equivalent to pressure, temperature, and volume in mechanical physics), and he points out that history must be studied in the light of these principles. The complementary work to *Mont-Saint-Michel* is a study of 20th-century multiplicity, *The Education of Henry Adams* (q.v.,1907). The almost melodramatic skepticism and cynicism in the account of his self-termed failures pass beyond autobiography to a study of the garment of education draped on the 'manikin' Henry Adams, a figure used to measure motion, proportion, and human conditions. In later chapters, the use of his dynamic theory of history is made explicit. Other books by Adams include *Chapters of Erie* (1871), written with his brother, Charles Francis Adams; *The Life of Albert Gallatin* (1879) and *The Writings of Albert Gallatin* (1879); *John Randolph* (1882); and *The Life of George Cabot Lodge* (1911). His letters have been printed in various collections, and those of his wife were edited and published in 1936.

ADAMS, HERBERT BAXTER (1850–1901), a leader of the scientific school of American historians, was a professor at Johns Hopkins, where he organized his teaching on the model of German seminars. He edited the university's *Studies in Historical and Political Science* (1882ff.), and founded the American Historical Association (1884). Among his writings are *The Study of History in American Colleges and Universities* (1887), *Thomas Jefferson and the University of Virginia* (1888), *Life and Writings of Jared Sparks* (1893), and *Public Libraries and Popular Education* (1900). His letters, published as *Historical Scholarship in the United States* (1938), include correspondence with such students of his as Woodrow Wilson, J.S.Bassett, and F.J.Turner.

ADAMS, JAMES TRUSLOW (1878–), New York historian, educated at Brooklyn Polytechnic Institute and Yale, won the 1922 Pulitzer Prize for his book, *The Founding of New England* (1921). This was the first of a trilogy, completed in *Revolutionary New England* (1923) and *New England in the Republic* (1926), critically reinterpreting the ideals and achievements of the Puritans and their descendants. Other historical studies include *Provincial Society* (1927), *The Epic of America* (1931), and *The March of Democracy* (2 vols.,1932–3). Although the author is not related to the Adams family of Massachusetts, he has written two notable biographical works on the subject, *The Adams Family* (1930) and *Henry Adams* (1933). He was the general editor of the *Dictionary of American History* (q.v.,1940), and *Building the British Empire* (1938) and *Empire on the Seven Seas* (1940) are results of his recent interest in English history.

ADAMS, JOHN (1704–40), clergyman, scholar, and writer of conventional, imitative verse. His *Poems on Several Occasions: Original and Translated* (1745) consisted of Biblical paraphrases, translations from Horace, and devotional pieces.

ADAMS, JOHN (1735–1826), 2nd President of the U.S. (1797–1801), was born in Braintree (now Quincy), Massachusetts, graduated from Harvard (1755), was admitted to the bar (1758), and soon entered public life. He opposed the Stamp Act and the Boston Port Act, was a delegate to the first Continental Congress, where he aided in drafting a petition to the king and a declaration of rights, and returned to the second Congress, in which he proposed Washington for military commander, hoping to draw Virginia into greater support of Revolutionary policies. He worked for independence, but disliked Paine's plan of government suggested in *Common Sense*, and set forth his own ideas in *Thoughts on Government* (1776), one of his several energetic publications on current questions, which also included letters to Daniel Leonard (q.v.). He helped draft the Declaration of Independence, and, according to Jefferson, was 'the pillar of its support on the floor of Congress,' where he also served on many important committees. From 1777 to 1779 he was a commissioner to France, and in the latter year also consulted the French government concerning peace negotiations with England, although he failed to achieve anything because he alienated their foreign minister. His negotiations with the Dutch to secure a treaty and loan were ultimately successful. In 1782–3 he accompanied Jay and Franklin to England, where they negotiated the treaty of peace, and in 1785 he was appointed envoy to the Court of St.James's. During his residence in England, Adams wrote a three-volume *Defence of the Constitutions of Government of the United States of America against the Attack of Mr.Turgot* (1787). Upon his return (1788) he was elected the first Vice President of the U.S., and, although his office was mainly a matter of routine, he worked without party alignment on the side of the Federalists. His *Discourses on Davila* (1791), drawing a moral for the U.S. from the history of France, alienated Hamilton, who thought the work tended to weaken the government, while Jefferson considered it as leaning toward hereditary monarchy and aristocracy. After another term as Vice President, Adams was elected to the presidency in 1796, despite the opposition of Hamilton. Jefferson was antagonistic to Adams's administration, and Hamilton, with a strong influence in the Cabinet, particularly opposed Adams's conciliatory policy toward France, by which war was averted. (See *XYZ Affair*.) Hamilton's animus, as displayed in his *Letter Concerning the Public Conduct and Character of John Adams*, played into the hands of the Jeffersonians, and after he failed of reelection (1801) Adams retired to private life in Quincy. His *Works* were collected in ten volumes (1850–56), and many separate volumes of his correspondence have been issued, of which the most important are the letters addressed to his wife Abigail and the communications with Jefferson.

ADAMS, JOHN QUINCY (1767–1848), 6th President of the U.S. (1825–9), son of John and Abigail Adams, was born in Braintree (now Quincy), Massachusetts, and received his early training by accompanying his father on diplomatic missions to France and Holland. He graduated from Harvard (1787), after which he was admitted to the bar (1790) and entered politics and political discussion. His answer to Paine's *Rights of Man*, signed 'Publicola' (1791), and similar essays, led Washington to appoint him minister to the Netherlands (1794). In 1797 his father appointed him minister to Berlin, and he remained abroad until 1801. Literary results of this residence were his translation of Wieland's poetic romance, *Oberon* (first published 1940), and his *Letters on Silesia* (1804). In 1803 Adams was elected to the Senate, where his want of allegiance to Federalist tradition caused his resignation (1808). He had already been appointed Professor of Rhetoric and Belles-Lettres at Harvard, and his college lectures were published (1810). In 1809 he was appointed minister to Russia, and six years later minister to England, to remain until Monroe invited him (1817) to be secretary of state. In this capacity he postponed the Oregon boundary question by treaty with England, secured Florida from Spain, and recognized the revolting Spanish colonies. The principles underlying his policies were drafted by him in the Monroe Doctrine (q.v.), as enunciated by Monroe in 1823. After four years of independent policies as President, he was elected to Congress (1831) without any definite party support, and continued to serve until his death 17 years later. He was considered to be without peer as a parliamentary debater, and worked hard to oppose the extension

of slavery and consequently the admission of Texas and the Mexican War. All his actions were characterized by an independence of party. His *Memoirs* (1874–7) cover half a century, and are valuable both as political commentary, and as a study in American letters; they have been described by Allen Nevins in his edition (1928) as written 'with malice towards all.' His independent mind is indicated by the diversity of his other writings, which include the minor *Poems of Religion and Society* (1848), which he himself treasured, and the celebrated *Report on Weights and Measures* (1821), in which the subject is examined with the exactness of mathematical science, the sagacity of statesmanship, and the wisdom of philosophy.

ADAMS, John Turvill (1805–82), New England novelist, whose books include: *The Lost Hunter* (1856), laid in 19th-century Connecticut; and *The White Chief Among the Red Men; or, The Knight of the Golden Mellice* (1859), dealing with Sir Christopher Gardiner and the Pequot War.

ADAMS, Léonie [Fuller] (1899–) New York poet, whose books, *Those Not Elect* (1925), *High Falcon* (1929), and *This Measure* (1933), are characterized by an extreme sensitivity, austere intensity, and emphasis upon intellect, causing her to be frequently described as a modern metaphysical poet. In addition to her writing, she has been a teacher of English at New York University and Bennington College.

ADAMS, Maude (1872–), stage-name of Maude Kiskadden, who began her theatrical career as a child, later played with John Drew, and became a star in 1897 acting the role of Lady Babbie in Barrie's *Little Minister*. Her fame was increased with her appearance in other Barrie plays, *Peter Pan* (1906), *Quality Street*, *What Every Woman Knows*, and *A Kiss for Cinderella*. She was also known for her Shakespearean roles, and for her part in Rostand's *Chantecler*.

ADAMS, Oscar Fay (1855–1919), Massachusetts author and teacher, who is best known for his books, *Through the Years with the Poets* (12 vols.,1886) and *A Dictionary of American Authors* (1897).

ADAMS, Samuel (1722–1803), born in Boston, graduated from Harvard (1740), studied law, was unsuccessful in business, and after 1764 turned to the serious use of his talent for political agitation. He was a leader in directing popular hatred against the conservatives, and strongly opposed the Sugar Act of 1764, the Stamp Act, and the Townshend Acts. From 1765 to 1774 he was a member of the lower house of the Massachusetts general court, serving after 1766 as recording clerk, in which capacity he showed great skill as a polemical writer, drafting many important Revolutionary documents. As early as 1765 his writings pointed the way toward the Declaration of Independence, and at times, when revolutionary feeling was waning, he fanned the embers with bitter contributions to periodicals. He helped organize the Sons of Liberty, aided in the formation of the nonimportation association of 1768, and emphasized the revolutionary doctrines of the 'rights of man,' 'the laws of nature,' and American independence of Parliament. Inflamed by Lord North's Tea Act, he was the guiding spirit of the Boston Tea Party. As a member of the intercolonial congress, which he had proposed, and as a delegate to the Continental Congress, he worked for colonial union and against any compromise with England. After the signing of the Declaration of Independence his career waned, for he was essentially a revolutionary agitator and not a constructive statesman. His later career included membership in the Massachusetts Constitutional Convention (1779–80), and the lieutenant-governorship (1789–93) and governorship of Massachusetts (1794–7). His miscellaneous writings were edited and collected in four volumes (1904–8).

ADAMS, Samuel Hopkins (1871–), journalist and author, from 1900 to 1916 was associated with *McClure's*, *Collier's*, and the New York *Tribune*, for which he wrote muckraking articles. His books include: *The Great American Fraud* (1906), on patent nostrums; *The Health Master* (1913); *Success* (1921), a novel about modern journalism; *Revelry* (1926), a fictional account of the Harding administration, of which he also wrote a history, *Incredible Era* (1939); and *The Godlike Daniel* (1930), a biography of Webster.

ADAMS, William Taylor (1822–97), Boston author and school teacher, who adopted the pseudonym Oliver Optic (*c.*1850), and began to write juvenile books and magazine tales, comparable in

manner and popularity to the works of Horatio Alger. In 1865 he quit teaching to give all his time to authorship and to the editing of such magazines as *Oliver Optic's Magazine for Boys and Girls* (1867–75). He wrote more than 1,000 short stories, and more than 115 novels, most of the latter in series, which included The Boat Club Series (1854), Woodville Series (1861–7), Army and Navy Series (1865–94), Starry Flag Series (1867–9), Onward and Upward Series (1870), Yacht Club Series (1872–1900), and Great Western Series (1875–82). His heroes, like Alger's, were rather priggish, but Adams's were more concerned with patriotism and adventure than with rising in the business world.

Adams and Liberty, patriotic song written in 1798 by the younger Robert Treat Paine (q.v.), was popular during the period when John Adams was opposing French aggression. The tune was that later used for *The Star-Spangled Banner*.

ADDAMS, JANE (1860–1935), reformer and sociologist, founded the Chicago social settlement, Hull House, in 1889. Among her books on social questions are: *Democracy and Social Ethics* (1902); *A New Conscience and an Ancient Evil* (1911); *Twenty Years at Hull House* (1910); and *The Second Twenty Years at Hull House* (1930).

Adding Machine, The, expressionistic play by Elmer Rice (q.v.), produced and published in 1923.

Mr.Zero, employed for 25 years as an accountant, is discharged when adding machines are installed, and in a fit of temporary insanity kills his employer. Executed, he goes to the Elysian Fields, where he declines to associate with such indecent company as Swift and Rabelais, but enjoys himself in operating a Heavenly adding machine, and renews his friendship with Daisy Diana Dorothea Devore, the middle-aged office worker who has committed suicide to be with him. Mr. Zero rebels at the order that he be sent back to earth, until he is told that he has been doing this in successive incarnations, and is scheduled to continue until he is the complete slave with a worn-out soul who will 'sit in the gallery of a coal mine and operate the super-hyper-adding machine with the great toe of his right foot.'

ADE, GEORGE (1866–), Indiana author, whose books are noted for their racy use of vernacular and sympathetic portrayal of country characters. His *Fables in Slang* (1899) are often credited with being the most acute literary examples of the language of the common American. The satire and speech of this book appear also in *People You Knew* (1903) and *Hand-Made Fables* (1920). Ade was also known as a playwright, being the author of several musical comedies, notably *The Sultan of Sulu* (1902), and such plays as *The College Widow* (1904) and *Just Out of College* (1905), farcical satires on student life.

ADELER, MAX, see *Clark, Charles Heber*.

Adrea, romantic tragedy by David Belasco and John L. Long (qq.v.), produced in 1904 and published in 1928.

Adrea, a princess of an Adriatic island in the 5th century, is barred by her blindness from inheriting the throne, and therefore is deserted by her betrothed, Kaeso, who marries her eldest sister, Julia. Thinking she is going to marry Kaeso, Adrea is tricked by Julia into a marriage with the court jester, but upon regaining her sight and becoming queen, she stabs Kaeso to death, and yet indicates her constant love for him in the epilogue when years later she blinds herself and puts Vasha, the son of Kaeso and Julia, on the throne.

Adrienne Toner, novel by Anne Sedgwick (q.v.), published in 1922.

A wealthy, ingratiating, and forceful American girl, Adrienne Toner, shatters the complacency of the Chadwick family, typical English gentry, when she marries their elder son, Barney, who has been intended for Nancy Averil, a girl of his own station. The family is at first fascinated by her, but later hates her because she rules their affairs from her own point of view, rather than subscribing to their conventions. Against their judgment, she supports the younger son, Palgrave, in his determination to be a conscientious objector during the World War, which eventually leads to his death. When the daughter Meg falls in love with a married man, Adrienne, believing in frankness, urges the girl to elope with him, and this causes Barney to leave her and their child, who soon dies. Through the bitterness that she and the others suffer as the result of her actions, Adrienne learns humility and understanding. Instead of attempting to continue her domination,

she serves as a nurse, and attempts to restore the health of Roger Oldmeadow, Barney's friend, a disillusioned author, who falls in love with her. Though she refuses Oldmeadow's love, because she feels she must be faithful to her husband, she helps Barney to obtain a divorce so that he can marry Nancy.

Adulateur, The, satirical play by Mercy Otis Warren (q.v.), published in 1773. Purporting to occur in Upper Servia, the tragedy deals with Thomas Hutchinson (q.v.), the Massachusetts governor who claimed to be an American patriot, but was revealed by the Hutchinson Letters to be working against colonial liberties.

The bashaw Rapatio (Hutchinson) and his cohorts (members of the Hutchinson and Oliver families) suppress the move for liberty instituted by Brutus (James Otis), Cassius (probably John Adams), Junius (Samuel Adams), and Portius (John Hancock). He orders the chief of his Janizaries, Bagshot (probably General Gage), to fire on the people, in an incident reminiscent of the Boston Massacre. Although temporarily successful, Rapatio is stricken by his conscience, and Brutus prophesies a civil war that will bring victory to the party representing liberty.

Adventists, see *Millerites.*

Adventures of a Young Man, novel by Dos Passos (q.v.).

Adventures of Alonso, romance attributed to T.A.Digges (q.v.).

Adventures of Captain Bonneville, The, see *Bonneville.*

Adventures of François, The, novel by S.Weir Mitchell (q.v.).

Adventures of Robin Day, The, novel by R.M.Bird (q.v.).

Advertisements for the Unexperienced Planters of New England . . ., work by Captain John Smith (q.v.).

Advice to the Privileged Orders, work by Joel Barlow (q.v.).

Afloat and Ashore, romance by Cooper (q.v.,1844). *Miles Wallingford* (q.v.) is a sequel.

Miles and Grace Wallingford, orphaned children of a Revolutionary naval officer, are raised on their Hudson River estate by the Rev.Mr.Hardinge, with his children Rupert and Lucy. Miles and Lucy have already fallen in love when the two boys run away to New York, accompanied by the Negro slave, Neb. They sign on the *John*, a ship bound for the Indies, which is commanded by Captain Robbins, a friend of Miles's father. Rupert, a poor seaman, is made a clerk, but Miles and Neb are active and competent, and become favorites of the mate, Mr.Marble. In the Straits of Sunda the *John* escapes capture by Malay pirates, but is afterward wrecked off Madagascar. The survivors reach the isle of Bourbon and ship home on the *Tigris*, but Captain Robbins dies during the voyage. Rupert and Miles reach New York in time to deny reports of their death, and Rupert enters a lawyer's office. Miles ships under Mr.Marble as third mate of the *Crisis*, enlisting Neb as a seaman. After various adventures, including the capture of French privateers, they reach England and sail for the Pacific. They engage in trade on the South American coast, are captured by savages, escape, have their ship stolen by the crew of a wrecked French privateer, rebuild the privateer, retake the *Crisis*, and sail for China. When he returns to America after this voyage, Miles becomes master of his own ship, the *Dawn.*

Aftermath, sequel to J.L.Allen's *The Kentucky Cardinal* (q.v.).

Agapida, Fray Antonio, fictitious Spanish priest through whom Irving expresses the attitude of the 'monkish zealots' in his *Chronicle of the Conquest of Granada* (q.v.).

AGAR, Herbert [Sebastian] (1897–), historian and critic, whose books include: *The Garment of Praise* (1929), a study of English poetry, written in collaboration with his wife, Eleanor Carroll Chilton; *The People's Choice* (1933, Pulitzer Prize 1934), a study of American Presidents; *Land of the Free* (1935), a survey of American culture; *The Pursuit of Happiness* (1938), a history of the Democratic Party; and *Who Owns America?* (1936), a compilation edited with Allen Tate. In 1940 he became the editor of the Louisville *Courier-Journal.*

AGASSIZ, Jean Louis Rodolphe (1807–73), Swiss-born scientist and educator, received his training in Switzerland and Germany. In 1831 he went to Paris, became associated with the Jardin des Plantes, and assisted in and continued the work of his friends Cuvier and Humboldt.

During the following years he was professor of natural history at Neuchâtel, wrote on *The Fishes of Brazil*, the *History of the Fresh Water Fishes of Central Europe*, and similar subjects, and made the pioneer classification of fossil fishes, as well as the first treatment of the laws of glacial movement and deposit. When Agassiz came to the U.S. in 1846, it is said that 'American natural history . . . found its leader.' Exerting the characteristic vigor of his stimulating personality, he lectured to enormous audiences throughout the East, and beginning in 1848 was professor of natural history in the Lawrence Scientific School at Harvard, at the same time beginning the collections that became the Harvard Museum of Comparative Zoology. Continuing at Harvard until his death, he was also associated at various times with the Charleston Medical College, Cornell University, and the Smithsonian Institution, as well as collaborating in the work of the Coast Survey, and leading many explorations, including the Thayer Expedition to Brazil (1865–6). His influence as a teacher was great, especially in his urging of direct observation and experiment, his attacks on memorization and the study of 'dead' classics, and his encouragement of graduate work. His most distinguished writing during his American period appears in the *Contributions to the Natural History of the United States* (4 vols.,1857–63), which includes the 'Essay on Classification,' summing up his views on paleontology and geology, following the theories of Cuvier, and opposing Darwinian natural selection.

Elizabeth Cary Agassiz (1822–1907), his wife, was a founder and president (1894–1902) of Radcliffe College. She wrote a biography of her husband (2 vols., 1885).

Agawam, see *Simple Cobler of Aggawam.*

Age of Fable, see *Bulfinch, Thomas.*

Age of Innocence, The, novel by Edith Wharton (q.v.), published in 1920. It received the 1921 Pulitzer Prize, and was dramatized by Margaret Ayer Barnes in 1928.

In the highest circle of New York social life during the 1870's, Newland Archer, a young lawyer, is the fiancé of May Welland. Before their engagement is announced, he meets May's cousin, Ellen Olenska, the wife of a dissolute Polish count, from whom she is separated although she does not divorce him because of the conventional taboo. The taboo extends so far that she is nearly ostracized by her former friends, and only the efforts of Archer and his mother save her position. She wins the toleration of her grandmother, Mrs.Manson Mingott, but even then she is distrusted. Archer's taste and intelligence distinguish him in this dogmatic society, and he discovers in Ellen the companion spirit he has sought but not found in May, who is the product of her strict, formal environment. The two fall in love, but it is too late for Archer to withdraw from his engagement, and May manages tactfully to keep them apart until she and Archer are married. Ellen moves to Washington, then returns to care for her grandmother, and her relation with Archer is resumed. When May reveals to Ellen that she is pregnant, the situation becomes intolerable for the countess, who goes to live in Paris. Archer is never sure how much his wife knows until after her death, many years later, when he visits Paris with his son Dallas. Ellen invites them to visit her, but at the last moment Archer sends Dallas alone, feeling that, though they are now free to marry, he prefers his ideal vision of Ellen to the reality.

Age of Reason, The, deistic work by Thomas Paine (q.v.), published in two parts (Paris, 1794–5). Between the writing of the first and second parts, Paine spent 11 months in prison because of his activities in the French Revolution.

Part I affirms the existence of God and offers proofs from the arguments of design and first cause. The knowledge of God has been obscured, according to the author, by the calumnies of the Bible and all national institutions of churches, which are no more than 'human inventions set up to terrify and enslave mankind, and monopolize power and profit.' Man's moral duty should be to observe the real and ever-existing word of God in the creation, and to strive to imitate this beneficence. Part II is mainly an attack on the Bible, pointing out the cruelty of Moses, the folly of Solomon, the exaggerations of the prophets, the improbability of Jesus' miraculous birth, and the general inconsistency that renders the Bible fallible.

Ages, The, poem by Bryant (q.v.), presented as the Phi Beta Kappa poem at

the Harvard Commencement (1821), and published the same year. In 35 Spenserian stanzas, the work recounts the historic achievements of man, affirms the benevolence of God and the principle of human progress, and states optimistically that

> . . . a thousand cheerful omens give
> Hope of yet happier days, whose dawn is nigh.

Agrarians, name, applied to certain Southern writers, including J.C.Ransom, J.G.Fletcher, R.P.Warren, Allen Tate, and Donald Davidson, who champion an agrarian economy for the South and the more general movement known as Regionalism (q.v.).

Ah, Wilderness!, play by Eugene O'Neill (q.v.).

Ahab, CAPTAIN, character in *Moby-Dick* (q.v.).

AIKEN, CONRAD [POTTER] (1889–), Georgia-born poet and novelist, graduated from Harvard (1912), lived for many years in England, and now makes his home in Massachusetts. His early poetry, marked by subtle musical rhythms, subjective psychology, and metaphysical studies of chaos, includes *Earth Triumphant* (1914), *Turns and Movies* (1916), *The Jig of Forslin* (1916), *Nocturne of Remembered Spring* (1917), *The Charnel Rose* (1918), and *The House of Dust* (1920). With *Punch: The Immortal Liar* (1921), his contemplative lyrics and symphonic forms were turned to a more direct analysis of inhibited characters, continued in *Priapus and the Pool* (1922), *The Pilgrimage of Festus* (1923), *John Deth and Other Poems* (1930), *Preludes for Memnon* (1931), *Landscape West of Eden* (1934), *Time in the Rock* (1936); and *And in the Human Heart* (1940), a sonnet sequence. His *Selected Poems* (1929) were awarded the 1930 Pulitzer Prize. Aiken is also known for his critical writing in *Scepticisms* (1919), commenting on contemporary poets, and his introduction to an edition of Emily Dickinson's poems (1924), which had much to do with establishing her reputation. Besides *Bring! Bring!* (1925) and *Costumes by Eros* (1928), collections of short stories exhibiting his interest in psychoanalysis, he is known for his novels: *Blue Voyage* (1927), employing the stream-of-consciousness technique to reveal the minds of passengers on a transatlantic ship; *Great Circle* (1933) and *Conversation* (1940), dealing with crises in marital relations; and *King Coffin* (1935), the story of a neurotic criminal.

AIKEN, GEORGE L. (1830–76), actor, and author of many plays, who dramatized Mrs.Stowe's *Uncle Tom's Cabin* and acted in its first performance at Troy, New York (Sept. 27, 1852), where it ran for 100 nights.

AIMARD, GUSTAVE, pseudonym of Olivier Gloux (1818–83), who sailed to the U.S. from his native France as a boy midshipman, and lived for ten years in Arkansas and other regions of the Old Southwest, where he was supposedly adopted by an Indian tribe. His life as hunter, trapper, squatter, warrior, and miner furnished the material for his many romances, which caused him to be called the Dumas of the Indians. He later revisited America to gather further material for his fiction. He wrote more than 25 novels, and among those which have been translated are: *Loyal Heart; or, The Trappers of Arkansas* (1858); *The Pirates of the Prairies* (1858); *The Tiger Slayer* (1860); *Lynch Law* (1860); *The Gold Seekers* (1861); *The Freebooters* (1861); *The Indian Chief* (1861); *The Prairie Flower* (1861); and *The Last of the Incas* (1862).

AINSLIE, HEW (1792–1878), Scottish poet whose first work, *A Pilgrimage to the Land of Burns* (1822), a narrative interspersed with songs and ballads, was published just before he came to the U.S. (1822). There he was for a time a member of the New Harmony colony, and later published a further collection of dialect poems, *Scottish Songs, Ballads, and Poems* (1855).

Air Raid, radio play by Archibald MacLeish (q.v.).

Airways, Inc., naturalistic play by Dos Passos (q.v.), published in 1928 and produced in 1929.

Set in the residential section of a suburban town during the 1920's, the play is concerned with the lives of members of the Turner family. Dad, inventor of the undeveloped 'Turner's Rotary Alcohol Engine,' feels superannuated and frustrated, since his son Elmer sustains the family prestige by becoming a celebrated aviator and aircraft designer. Elmer's brothers, Claude and Eddy, are unintelligent and undistinguished, and his sudden wealth and fame soon corrupts Elmer, so

that the family is held together only by the efforts of their sister, Martha, who is in love with the radical labor organizer, Walter Goldberg. Elmer becomes president of All-American Airways, Inc., but he has already been drawn outside the family circle, which is destroyed by a succession of disasters, beginning with Dad's suicide. The others are unemployed because of a local depression, which they blame on a building trades strike, and Elmer is crippled by an airplane crash. Walter is 'framed' by police on a false murder charge, but the strike continues. When Walter's defense fails, he is electrocuted, and Martha is left penniless and desolate to care for Elmer.

AITKEN, ROBERT (1734–1802), Scottish-born printer and publisher, settled in America (1771). His most famous publishing venture was the Aitken Bible (New Testament, 1777; complete edition, 1782), the first complete English Bible printed in America. He also published the *Pennsylvania Magazine* (q.v.).

Aix-la-Chapelle, TREATY OF, see *French and Indian Wars.*

AKERS, ELIZABETH [CHASE] (1832–1911), literary editor of the Portland (Maine) *Daily Advertiser.* Her verse, popular at the time but now mainly forgotten, included the poem 'Rock Me to Sleep,' which contains the famous lines:

Backward, turn backward, O Time, in your flight,
Make me a child again just for tonight.

The poem was first printed in the *Saturday Evening Post* (June 9, 1860) under the pseudonym Florence Percy, and has since been set to music by more than 30 composers. Because of the pseudonym the authorship was disputed, but Mrs.Akers successfully defended her claim. The poem was later reprinted in her collections, *Poems* (1899) and *Sunset Song and Other Verses* (1902).

AKINS, ZOË (1886–), born in Missouri, began writing for *The Mirror* of W.M.Reedy, and came to New York to write plays for the Washington Square Players, achieving her first professional success with *Déclassée* (1919), a play showing the social decline of an English lady. This was followed by *Daddy's Gone A-Hunting* (1921), the story of a man who forsakes his wife to pursue his dream of becoming a great painter. Several less successful plays were produced during the next ten years, among them *The Varying Shore* (1921), tracing in reverse chronology the career of a woman from her death as a gambler and demimondaine to her unhappy shy girlhood, and *The Texas Nightingale* (1922), revived as *Greatness* (1923), the story of an opera singer. Miss Akins returned to her full power with *The Greeks Had a Word for It* (1930), a satirical comedy of three unscrupulous girls whose only loyalty is to one another. In 1935 she won the Pulitzer Prize with *The Old Maid* (q.v.), adapted from a novelette by Edith Wharton. *O, Evening Star* (1936) is the story of an aging actress whose burlesquing of serious drama in a motion picture re-establishes her career. *Forever Young* (1941), her first novel, deals with a Midwestern girls' school in the early 1900's.

Al Aaraaf, allegorical poem by Poe (q.v.), published in *Al Aaraaf, Tamerlane, and Minor Poems* (1829), and revised in later printings. With the sonnet 'To Science' (q.v.) as a 'prologue,' the poem is arranged in two parts, composed of octosyllabic groups, heroic couplets, and songs of two- and three-stress lines.

Al Aaraaf in Mohammedan mythology is a sort of limbo, but in the present allegory it is the brilliant star, briefly observed by Tycho Brahe, which the poet imagines to be the birthplace of the 'Idea of Beauty.' To this haven of ideal loveliness is carried the earth-born youth Angelo, but his worship is removed from the realm of the ideal by his passion for the maiden Ianthe. Because of their passion they do not hear the summons sent them by the presiding spirit Nesace, through her agent Ligeia, and they fall to perdition:

. . . for Heaven to them no hope imparts
Who hear not for the beating of their hearts.

***Alabama* Claims** were brought by the U.S. against England for the destruction of shipping by the Confederate battleship of that name, constructed by Great Britain during the Civil War. After several years of litigation, England in 1873 paid more than $15,000,000 as compensation for its breach of neutrality in building the *Alabama* and similar ironclads for the South. In its fight with the *Kearsarge* (1864), the *Alabama* was commanded by Raphael Semmes (q.v.). Although sunk in this encounter, it had already destroyed 57 Northern ships.

Alabama Platform, see *Yancey,W.L.*

Alamo, THE, originally a mission in what is now San Antonio, Texas, was converted into a fort and became the site of a desperate battle (March 1836) between some 150 defending Texans and Santa Anna's 4,000 Mexicans. The Texans were annihilated, and among those who lost their lives was Davy Crockett. 'Remember the Alamo' was the rallying cry of Texans in later encounters.

Albany Congress, meeting held in Albany, New York (1754), at which commissioners from New Hampshire, Massachusetts, Connecticut, Rhode Island, New York, Pennsylvania, and Maryland considered and accepted Franklin's plan to form a union for greater security in the war against the French and Indians. The colonial assemblies rejected the plan because it forced the individual colonies to surrender power to the union.

Albany Regency, name given to the political machine that controlled the New York Democratic Party from about 1820 to 1854, and was headed by Martin Van Buren. One of its leaders, W.L.Marcy, coined the phrase that describes its tactics: 'To the victor belong the spoils.' The name was bestowed on the group by its foremost opponent, Thurlow Weed.

Alcatraz, island fortress in San Francisco Bay, became a military prison (1886) and since 1934 has been a federal penitentiary for dangerous and difficult criminals.

ALCOTT, [AMOS] BRONSON (1799–1888), born in Connecticut, had little formal education, and early attempted to support himself as a peddler in the Southern states and as a schoolteacher in New England and Pennsylvania (1823–33). His educational ideas, continued in his Temple School at Boston (1834–9), and later in his work as school superintendent at Concord and elsewhere, were characterized by an attempt to create the harmonious development of the physical, intellectual, aesthetic, and moral natures, with stress placed on imagination. To achieve this end, he favored a conversational method of instruction, attempted to beautify the school surroundings and to give study and instruction the aspect of recreation, and introduced such innovations as gymnastics, organized play, and the honor system. His philosophy, mediating between the extreme idealistic and materialistic positions, was summed up in the term Personalism. Alcott was an extreme Transcendentalist (q.v.), yet he was opposed to its doctrine of individualism and believed that all seemingly separate minds are linked together by a common relation to a central Mind; that is, as he said, 'all souls have a Personal identity with God and abide in Him.' His philosophy, his theory of infant education founded 'on the great principle that every infant is already in possession of the faculties and apparatus required for his instruction,' his later emphasis on birth or heredity as more important than education and environment in determining character, and his social conscience were all bound up with his own integrated and benevolent personality. In 1835 Alcott's assistant at the Temple School, Elizabeth Peabody, edited his *Record of a School, Exemplifying the General Principles of Spiritual Culture*; and this was followed by two volumes of his *Conversations with Children on the Gospels* (1836–7). These books, setting forth his theory and practice of education, won Alcott the support of such friends as Channing, Emerson, and J.F.Clarke, but lost him many pupils whose parents considered his ideas dangerous and improper, so that the school was finally abandoned. In 1840 he moved with his wife and children to Concord, where he attempted to live by farming an acre of land, but this also failed. He then went to England (May-Oct. 1842), where an Alcott House had been founded to experiment with his educational ideas, and met Carlyle, who found the voluble American tiresome, but described him as being 'like a venerable Don Quixote, whom nobody can laugh at without loving.' In the U.S. again, in the company of a group of mystics, Alcott made plans for a co-operative community, which resulted in the ill-fated experiment at Fruitlands (q.v.). This transcendental, communal, vegetarian organization persisted for only seven months, and in January 1845 the family returned to Concord. There and elsewhere, Alcott continued to lecture and to hold informal 'conversations' to disseminate his ideas, meanwhile being supported mainly by the labors of his wife and his daughter, Louisa May Alcott (q.v.). Not until 1868 did they become financially independent, when Louisa published *Little Women*, based on the family life during her childhood. In 1859 Alcott became superintendent of

Concord schools, where he introduced the teaching of singing, dancing, reading aloud, and such novel subjects as physiology. This work and his endeavors in higher education that culminated in the Concord School of Philosophy (1879–88), a profound influence on U.S. education through his disciple W.T.Harris and others, embodied not only his philosophic ideas but also his genius for conversation and his personal influence. His serene unworldliness, his idealism in the midst of a material world, and his preoccupation with his own ideas and innumerable reforms made his practical relations with his family and friends difficult, although he considered the Family a golden mean between the hermit's cell and the phalanstery, and his home life was beautiful and generally happy. Carlyle had looked upon him indulgently as a man 'bent on saving the world by a return to acorns and the golden age'; but Emerson said, 'As pure intellect I have never seen his equal'; and Thoreau agreed that he was 'the sanest man I ever knew.' As an apostle of Transcendentalism, his medium was 'conversation,' in which he informally developed his ideas and personality. In this spontaneous art, Alcott exhibited the most lucid and brilliant aspects of his thought, but, as it inevitably died with him, his reputation later waned when he could be approached only through the colder medium of his writings. Among his early books on education were: *Observations on the Principles and Methods of Infant Instruction* (1830); and *The Doctrine and Discipline of Human Culture* (1836). Later writings include: the mystical 'Orphic Sayings' (q.v.), published in *The Dial* (1840); *Tablets* (q.v.,1868); *Ralph Waldo Emerson* (1865,1882), a laudatory estimate of Emerson's character and genius both in prose and verse; *Concord Days* (1872), a work based on his journals; and *Table Talk* (1877). *New Connecticut* (1887) is a poetical autobiography of his youth, and *Sonnets and Canzonets* (1882) is a volume written in memory of his wife. A selection from his *Journals* was published in 1938.

ALCOTT, Louisa May (1832–88), a daughter of Bronson Alcott, was born in Pennsylvania, spent most of her early years in Boston and Concord, and was educated by her father, receiving instruction and guidance also from such friends as Thoreau, Emerson, and Theodore Parker. She worked at various tasks to help support her family, and at the age of 16 wrote a book, *Flower Fables* (1854). Her ambition for a time was to be an actress, and she wrote several unproduced melodramas, as well as poems and short stories, some of which were published in the *Atlantic Monthly*. She was a nurse in a Union hospital during the Civil War until her health failed, and her letters of this period were published as *Hospital Sketches* (1863). She issued her first novel, *Moods*, in 1865, toured Europe the same year, and in 1867 became editor of a juvenile magazine, *Merry's Museum*. *Little Women* (q.v., 1868–9), her charming and immensely popular story for children, presents a cheerful account of her own early life in New England, and in it she portrays herself as Jo, and her sisters May, Elizabeth, and Anna, respectively as Amy, Beth, and Meg. This work brought the financial security she had been trying to achieve for her family, and she continued to write in the same vein, in *An Old-Fashioned Girl* (1870), *Little Men* (1871), and *Work* (1873). She revisited Europe (1870–71), returning to Boston to continue her participation in such reform movements as temperance and woman suffrage, and her writing of moralistic fiction for children. Her later works include: *Eight Cousins* (1875); *Rose in Bloom* (1876); *Silver Pitchers* (1876), containing 'Transcendental Wild Oats,' an account of her father's experiment at Fruitlands; *A Modern Mephistopheles* (1877); *Under the Lilacs* (1878); *Jack and Jill* (1880); *Aunt Jo's Scrap-Bag* (6 vols.,1872–82); *Proverb Stories* (1882); *Spinning-Wheel Stories* (1884); *Lulu's Library* (3 vols.,1886–9); *Jo's Boys* (1886); and *A Garland for Girls* (1888).

Alcuin: A Dialogue, tract by C.B. Brown (q.v.).

ALDEN, Henry Mills (1836–1919), editor and critic, was called the 'dean of American magazine editors.' He edited *Harper's Monthly* (q.v.,1869–1919), and his books include: *God in His World* (1890); *A Study of Death* (1895), edited in collaboration with W.D.Howells; and *Magazine Writing and the New Literature* (1908).

ALDEN, Isabella [MacDonald] (1841–1930), New York author of children's books, including some 75 in the series

issued under her pseudonym, Pansy. She edited the magazine for children, *Pansy* (1873–96).

ALDEN, JOHN (*c.*1599–1687), *Mayflower* Pilgrim who held various important colonial positions, was a friend of Miles Standish, with whom he founded Duxbury. He married Priscilla Mullins (or Molines) *c.*1621, but Longfellow's *The Courtship of Miles Standish* (q.v.) is based on a legend that arose in the 19th century.

Alden, OLIVER, hero of *The Last Puritan* (q.v.).

Aldine, The (1868–79), journal of art and typography, was founded as the house organ of a New York firm of printers. It soon became a magazine for general circulation, under the editorship of R.H.Stoddard (1871–5). After his retirement, the magazine abandoned general literature and drifted into bimonthly publication. It was consistently praised for its fine engravings and typography.

ALDRICH, BESS STREETER (1881–), Iowa novelist, later resident of Nebraska, whose works include: *Lantern in Her Hand* (1928), the story of a pioneer woman in Nebraska; *White Bird Flying* (1931), a sequel dealing with the children of the pioneers; *Spring Came on Forever* (1935); *The Man Who Caught the Weather* (1936), a collection of short stories; and *Song of Years* (1939), a story of pioneer life in Iowa.

ALDRICH, THOMAS BAILEY (1836–1907), born in Portsmouth, New Hampshire, lived in New Orleans, New York, and in his birthplace during his childhood. Portsmouth is the scene of his semi-autobiographical novel, *The Story of a Bad Boy* (q.v.,1870). He had planned to enter Harvard, but when his father died in 1852 he took a business position instead, and soon began to write poetry for magazines. After the publication of his first collection, *The Bells* (1855), he held various posts on N.P.Willis's *Evening Mirror* and *Home Journal,* became a correspondent for the *Tribune* at the outbreak of the Civil War, and was managing editor (1862–5) of the *Illustrated News.* In 1865 began his permanent residence in Boston, the mecca of his ambition and home of the New England group of authors who were the objects of his lifelong veneration. He was editor of *Every Saturday* (1866–74), during which period he published *The Story of a Bad Boy,* such gracefully turned short stories as 'Marjorie Daw' (q.v.,1873), and the refined, delicately finished, but shallow verses, printed mainly in the *Atlantic Monthly,* which he collected in *Pampinea* (1861) and *Cloth of Gold* (1874). Later collections of poetry included: *Flower and Thorn* (1877); *Friar Jerome's Beautiful Book* (1881); *Mercedes and Later Lyrics* (1884), whose title piece, dramatized by the author, was produced in 1894; *Wyndham Towers* (1890); and *Judith and Holofernes* (1896), whose dramatic version, retitled *Judith of Bethulia,* was later produced. His novels, written during the same years, were also marked by technical skill and charm, though they lack depth of understanding. They include: *Prudence Palfrey* (1874), a romantic tale set in a small New England town; *The Queen of Sheba* (1877), a fantastic story of a young man's meeting with a girl who thinks she is the Queen of Sheba, their second meeting years later after she has recovered her sanity, and their falling in love; and *The Stillwater Tragedy* (q.v.,1880), a detective mystery, partly concerned with an employer's triumph in quelling a strike. His best-known short stories appeared in *Marjorie Daw and Other People* (1873), *Two Bites at a Cherry, with Other Tales* (1894), and later volumes. Aldrich's editorship of the *Atlantic Monthly* (1881–90) was noted for his conservative policy and his adherence to 'Boston-plated' traditions, which also appear in his collected essays, *From Ponkapog to Pesth* (1883), *An Old Town by the Sea* (1893), and *Ponkapog Papers* (1903).

Alexander's Bridge, novel by Willa Cather (q.v.).

Alexandra Bergson, heroine of *O Pioneers!* (q.v.).

ALGER, HORATIO, JR. (1834–99), born in Massachusetts, was reared by strict Puritan parents. He graduated from Harvard (1852) and Harvard Divinity School, but then rebelled against his background by going to Paris and living a Bohemian life. Upon his return to Massachusetts, after an illness, he became a Unitarian minister (1864). In 1866 he quit his pulpit and moved to New York to begin his literary career. While associated with the Newsboys' Lodging House as chaplain and philanthropist, he wrote nearly 130 popular books for boys, all

based on the principle that a struggle against poverty and temptation inevitably leads a boy to wealth and fame. His most noted hero was the central figure in the Ragged Dick series (1867ff.), while the Luck and Pluck (1869ff.) and Tattered Tom (1871ff.) series were only second in popularity. He also wrote biographies of self-made statesmen. It is estimated that more than 20,000,000 copies of Alger's novels were published.

Algerine Captive, The; or, The Life and Adventures of Dr.Updike Underhill, novel by Royall Tyler (q.v.), published in 1797.

Dr.Underhill, in this fictitious autobiography, first tells of the stupidity of contemporary New England college education, and then, while studying medicine, illustrates the quackery of the profession, both in New England and the South. After invidiously describing the practice of slavery as he sees it in the Southern states and on a slave ship, he narrates his own difficulties when he is abandoned in Africa. He passes through a series of adventures, including captivity by the Algerines, being sold into slavery, barely escaping from pressure to become a Mohammedan, and other exciting incidents, during a seven-year absence from the U.S., which furnish an opportunity both for a picaresque story and an ironic depiction of American life in relation to what he observes abroad.

Algerine War, see *Tripolitan War.*

Algic Researches, treatise on Indian life, by H.R.Schoolcraft (q.v.).

Algonquin (or ALGONKIN) **Indians,** name applied to nomadic hunting tribes in Quebec and Ontario, and later to the entire Algonquian linguistic family to which they belong. Located originally near Ottawa, the Algonquian tribe was driven northward by 17th-century wars with the Iroquois and British, whom they, as allies of the French, opposed. They had the characteristic attributes of a Plains tribe (q.v.). The linguistic family, whose primitive culture preceded those of the Mound Builders and Iroquois, included the Arapaho, Blackfoot, and Cheyenne of the northern Plains; the Ojibway, Cree, Shawnee, Delaware, Mohegan, Narragansett, and Pequot of the eastern U.S.; and tribes as far south as the Powhatan. Longfellow uses Algonquian legends in his poem on the Mohawk hero Hiawatha.

Alhambra, The, 41 sketches by Irving (q.v.), published in 1832 and revised and enlarged in 1852, the result of the author's residence (1829) in the ancient Moorish palace at Granada in Spain. His purpose was 'to depict its half Spanish, half Oriental character; . . . to revive the traces of grace and beauty fast fading from its walls; to record the regal and chivalrous traditions . . . and the whimsical and superstitious legends of the motley race now burrowing among its ruins.' Tales of medieval Moorish Spain are interspersed with architectural and other descriptions, and anecdotes of the author's experiences among the native residents.

Alias Jimmy Valentine, see *Porter,W.S.*

Alice Adams, novel by Booth Tarkington (q.v.), published in 1921 and awarded the 1922 Pulitzer Prize.

This ironic, realistic story is concerned with the frustrated ambitions of a Midwestern family of the lower middle class. Alice, a pretty girl with romantic hopes of a stage career or a wealthy marriage, is the daughter of Virgil Adams, who has spent his life in the employ of the Lamb drug company, but is a failure according to his nagging wife, who persuades him to open a glue factory, using a formula he invented for Mr.Lamb. Alice, forsaken by the local beaux because of her family and her reputation for pushing, falls in love with Arthur Russell, a wealthy newcomer to the town, who returns her interest. Eager to snare him, she fabricates a web of small lies about herself and her family, which turns him against her when he submits to the ordeal of a family dinner party. As their affair ends, her brother Walter absconds with money belonging to the drug firm, and Virgil's new business is ruined by the competition of Mr.Lamb, who nevertheless aids the family when Virgil has a paralytic stroke. Although he recovers, his wife is forced to support him by opening a boarding house, and Alice, sadly wiser, faces reality by becoming a stenographer.

Alice of Old Vincennes, novel by Maurice Thompson (q.v.), published in 1900.

Alice Tarleton, the child of an old colonial family, is abducted and reared on the frontier by Gaspard Roussilon, a French trader with the Indians, at Vincennes in the Wabash country of Indiana. At the outbreak of the Revolution, she aids the campaign of George Rogers Clark, and the story is mainly concerned with his capture of Vincennes for the patriots

(1779). Alice's love affair with aristocratic Lieutenant Beverley, one of Clark's officers, turns out happily when her real parentage is disclosed. Other figures in the romance include Père Beret, the vigorous, ubiquitous priest; the old frontiersman Oncle Jazon; his friend Simon Kenton; and Alice's youthful companion, René de Ronville.

Alien and Sedition Acts, passed by Congress (1798) when the Federalists feared French liberalism and an alliance between the French and the Democratic Republicans. The three Alien Acts permitted the President to imprison or banish any alien he considered to be dangerous, and provided punishment for anyone who, during time of war, conspired against the law or published false or malicious writings about the administration. The Democratic Republicans, under Jefferson and Madison, drafted the Kentucky and Virginia Resolutions (q.v.) as an answer to this legislation. The Sedition Act was definitely aimed against Republican papers, and ten editors were fined and imprisoned for criticizing President Adams.

Alien Corn, play by Sidney Howard (q.v.).

Alison's House, play by Susan Glaspell (q.v.), produced and published in 1930, and awarded the 1931 Pulitzer Prize. Alison Stanhope is considered to represent Emily Dickinson.

Eighteen years after the death of the poet Alison Stanhope, her intense spirit continues to dominate the Iowa village homestead in which she spent her isolated life. Her sister Agatha, jealously guarding Alison's poems, books, and secrets, still resides in the house, but on the last day of the 19th century her brother prepares to remove her and her treasures to his home. He is aided by his two sons, the elder of whom, Eben, alone realizes the emotional significance of breaking up Alison's house, and by Louise, Eben's domineering wife, who understands nothing of his mood. Agatha, ill and of failing mind, in a last attempt to preserve the house's memories, tries unsuccessfully to set it afire. Later Elsa, Stanhope's daughter and Alison's favorite niece, a sensitive passionate woman ostracized because she is the mistress of a married man, pays a last visit to her childhood home. Agatha falls dead while urging Elsa to burn a mysterious portfolio, whose contents Stanhope, Elsa, and Eben later read. They find them to be Alison's poems concerned with her frustrated love affair, which Agatha concealed when the 'complete' poems were published. Stanhope wants to destroy these revealing documents, but Elsa and Eben persuade him to reconsider, and as the New Year arrives he is reconciled with Elsa, giving her the portfolio, 'one more little gift, from her century to yours.'

All God's Chillun Got Wings, play by Eugene O'Neill (q.v.), produced and published in 1924.

Jim Harris, clumsy, intelligent, and ambitious, is a Negro reared in a New York slum district, where he adores Ella Downey, a white girl who spurns him when she begins to feel the force of race prejudice. She lives for a time with the ruffian Mickey, but he deserts her and their illegitimate child dies. Ella in despair accepts Jim's proposal of marriage, and they live awhile in France, returning to New York so that Jim may study law. Ella is inferior in mind and feeling to her husband, and, in conflict with his mother and sister, is unable to conceal her dislike of his race. The strain of their life affects her mind, and to maintain her illusion of superiority she so harasses Jim that he fails in his bar examinations. He remains loyal and kind, and when Ella, becoming insane, believes that they are children again, he prays God to 'let this fire of burning suffering . . . make me worthy of the child You send me for the woman You take away.'

All in a Bustle; or, The New House, farce by William Milns, written for the opening of the Park Theatre, New York (1798). It deals with the difficulties of the stage manager and his actors and actresses, some of whom represented themselves in the production. The play is important as a source of information on early American theaters.

All Quiet Along the Potomac, poem by Ethel Lynn Beers (q.v.).

ALLEN, ETHAN (1738–89), hero of the Revolutionary War, was earlier a leader of the Green Mountain Boys (q.v.) in their opposition to the rule of New York state in the New Hampshire Grants. His irregular militia served under him in the Revolution, and, with a force of Connecticut soldiers under Benedict Arnold, captured Ticonderoga (May 10, 1775). According

to his own unverified account, Allen called upon the British fort to surrender 'in the name of the great Jehovah and the Continental Congress.' Serving in an expedition against Montreal, he was captured by the British (Sept. 1775), who held him prisoner in England, Nova Scotia, and New York until May 1778. This experience is described in his blunt, egotistical, and amusing *Narrative of Colonel Ethan Allen's Captivity* (1779). The deistic book, *Reason the Only Oracle of Man* (1784), is sometimes called 'Ethan Allen's Bible,' but scholars have contended that more than four fifths of the work was written by the free-thinker, Dr. Thomas Young (1732–77), to whose posthumously obtained manuscript Allen gave no credit. Allen appears as a character in Thompson's *The Green Mountain Boys* and in Melville's *Israel Potter*.

ALLEN, Frederick Lewis (1890–), born in Boston and educated at Harvard, has served on the editorial staffs of the *Atlantic Monthly* (1914–16), *The Century* (1916–17), and *Harper's Monthly* (1923–). He has written *Only Yesterday* (1931), an informal social history of the 1920's, and *Since Yesterday* (1940), its sequel, concerned with the 1930's; the text for two anthologies of photographs, *The American Procession* (1933) and *Metropolis* (1934); and *The Lords of Creation* (1935), an account of 'the immense financial and corporate expansion' in the U.S. since the 1890's.

ALLEN, [William] Hervey (1889–), born in Pittsburgh, graduated from the University of Pittsburgh and served in the World War, as he described in his autobiographical novel, *Toward the Flame* (1926). He taught English at Charleston, South Carolina, where with DuBose Heyward he wrote the poems, *Carolina Chansons* (1922). He has published other volumes of poetry, but is best known as a novelist and for his carefully documented biography of Poe, *Israfel* (1926). *Anthony Adverse* (1933), a lengthy picaresque romance of the Napoleonic era, was extremely popular, selling a half million copies during its first two years. *Action at Aquila* (1938) is a novel of the Civil War, and *It Was Like This* (1940) contains two World War stories.

ALLEN, James Lane (1849–1925), was born and reared in Kentucky, where he taught school until 1880, and then turned to writing critical and descriptive articles and short stories. *The Blue-Grass Region of Kentucky* (1892) is a collection of sketches contributed to *Harper's Magazine* during the '80's, while *Flute and Violin* (1891) contains romantic short stories of Kentucky local color, demonstrating his craftsmanship and polished style, and his interest in the interdependence of man and nature. This theme dominates his best-known novels, *A Kentucky Cardinal* (q.v., 1894), its sequel *Aftermath* (1896), and *The Choir Invisible* (q.v., 1897). Allen's numerous later writings include: *A Summer in Arcady* (1896) and *The Reign of Law* (1900), realistic novels of simple farm folk; *The Mettle of the Pasture* (1903), a tragic tale of the aristocrats of a Southern town; *The Last Christmas Tree* (1914), a prose poem describing the ultimate glacial conquest of the earth; *The Bride of the Mistletoe* (1909) and *The Doctor's Christmas Eve* (1910), novels concerned with the conflicts that arise from the desire of middle age for youthful passion; *The Sword of Youth* (1914), a novelette of the Civil War; *The Alabaster Box* (1923), an ironic tale of ingratitude; and *The Landmark* (1925), a collection of later short stories.

ALLEN, Major E.J., see *Pinkerton*.

ALLEN, Paul (1775–1826), born in Rhode Island, graduated from Brown University (1793) and lived in Philadelphia, where he was well known as a magazine contributor. His works include: *Original Poems, Serious and Entertaining* (1801); *Noah* (1821), a narrative poem largely revised by John Neal, who was almost entirely the author of Allen's *History of the American Revolution* (2 vols., 1819); and, with Nicholas Biddle, the official *History of the Expedition of Captains Lewis and Clark* (1814).

ALLEN, William (1784–1868), New England clergyman, educator, and historian. During his six years as assistant librarian and regent of Harvard, he compiled the first edition of his *American Biographical and Historical Dictionary* (1809). He was president of Bowdoin College (1819–31, 1833–8), but was unpopular because of his inflexible disposition and rigid insistence on church discipline.

ALLIBONE, S[amuel] Austin (1816–89), author of the important reference work, *A Critical Dictionary of English Lit-*

erature and British and American Authors (3 vols.,1858–71), and compiler of volumes of prose and verse quotations. After 1879 he was the librarian of the Lenox Library (New York).

ALLSTON, Joseph Blyth (1833–1904), South Carolina poet, whose best-known work, 'Stack Arms,' was written while he was a prisoner at Fort Delaware during the Civil War.

ALLSTON, Washington (1779–1843), painter, teacher of S.F.B.Morse, was himself a student of Gilbert West, with whom he shared the doctrine that painting should tell a story and appeal to the spectator by virtue of its sentiment. Long a resident in England and on the continent, Allston was an intimate of Coleridge, Wordsworth, Southey, and other prominent literary men. He was a brother-in-law of the elder R.H.Dana, and like him was a rather studied and affected poet, as exemplified in his work, *The Sylphs of the Seasons* (1813). His other books include a Gothic romance, *Monaldi* (1841), and his *Lectures on Art*, posthumously collected (1850) by R.H.Dana,Jr.

Almanac in America followed much the same development as in England, where it began as a calendar with the addition of some astronomical data. The first American work of this nature, *An Almanack for New England for the Year* 1639, was compiled by William Pierce (or Peirce) and printed by Stephen Daye, and, with the exception of a broadside, was the first work printed in the British colonies. Until the close of the 17th century, this press, associated with Harvard, continued to issue annual almanacs, and together with other presses caused Boston to become a center of almanac-making. The first humorous almanac was compiled in 1687 by John Tulley, of Saybrook, Connecticut. Subsequently all American almanacs, like their English counterparts, contained not only calendars but compendiums of popular science, notices of remarkable events and dates, problems, proverbs, jests, and practical information of various kinds, illuminated by illustrations. Among important early almanacs were the *Astronomical Diary and Almanack* issued from Dedham, Massachusetts, by Nathaniel Ames and his son, 1725–75; *The Rhode Island Almanac*, issued 1728–58 by James Franklin; and *Poor Richard's Almanack* and *The Farmer's Almanack* (qq.v.). The Crockett almanacs (q.v.) were a popular 19th-century series, noted for their tall tales of frontier heroes. Many religious sects and reform organizations issued almanacs, which have also been used by advertisers of medicines and other products. The *World Almanac and Book of Facts* is a contemporary publication of the New York *World-Telegram*.

Alnwick Castle, poem by Halleck (q.v.).

Alonzo and Melissa, see *Asylum, The.*

ALSOP, George (1638–?), emigrated from England to America (1658), of which he wrote in *A Character of the Province of Mary-Land* (1666), a promotional tract whose eulogy encouraged emigration. This jocular mixture of prose and verse describes the country, the Indians, and the arrangements for conveying poor people to America.

ALSOP, Richard (1761–1815), one of the Connecticut Wits, frequently collaborated with other members of the group in such light verse as *The Echo* and *The Political Greenhouse* (qq.v.). His serious poetry, including *American Poems* (1793) and *The Charms of Fancy* (1856), is conventional, imitative, and bookish.

ALTGELD, John Peter (1847–1902), born at Nassau, Germany, was brought as a child to Ohio, where he received little formal education. He moved to Chicago in 1875, and in 1886 was elected to the Superior Court of Cook County. In *Our Penal Machinery and Its Victims* (1884) he set forth his belief that American judicial systems were weighted against the poor, and after he was elected governor of Illinois (1892) he pardoned three anarchist leaders convicted of fostering the Haymarket Riot (q.v.). During the Pullman Strike, he protested against Cleveland's sending U.S. troops into Chicago without his permission. He was defeated for re-election in 1896 because of his alleged radical sympathies. He is the subject of Vachel Lindsay's poem, 'The Eagle That Is Forgotten' (q.v.).

Amana Community, communal religious society, was originally established near Buffalo, New York (1842), by Christian Metz (1794–1867) and more than 600 of his German followers, who believed that God inspires certain persons, who thus become direct instruments of His will. In 1855 the community purchased some 20,000 acres near Davenport, Iowa,

where it still flourishes, although it was reorganized as a joint stock company (1932), ending religious rule in temporal affairs. It now has some 1,500 members.

Amaranth, verse narrative by E.A.Robinson (q.v.).

Amateur Emigrant, The, autobiographical narrative by R.L.Stevenson (q.v.), written in San Francisco in 1879. It is an account of his voyage as a second-class passenger across the Atlantic 'from the Clyde to Sandy Hook.' Later rewritten, it was published with its sequel, *Across the Plains* (q.v.), in the Edinburgh Edition of the author's works (1894).

Ambassadors, The, novel by Henry James (q.v.), published in 1903.

Lambert Strether, an intelligent, conscientious American editor, is sent by his wealthy fiancée, Mrs.Newsome, a rigorously conventional Massachusetts widow, to Paris to bring home her son Chad, who has spent several years in Europe and is now required to take charge of the family's business interests. She has been unable to learn why Chad chooses to remain abroad, and when Strether arrives he discovers the young man much changed by his Old World environment and his relations with the charming, cultured Countess de Vionnet, who later appears to be Chad's mistress. Gradually Strether comes to realize the fascinations and satisfactions that life offers in Paris but not in Woollett, Massachusetts, and he virtually gives up his mission. Then a new group of ambassadors is sent after him, including Chad's aggressively proper sister, Mrs.Pocock; her husband, Jim; and Jim's appealing but inexperienced young sister, Mamie, who has been expected to marry Chad. Their arguments are supplemented by those of Strether's American friend, Waymarsh, and the situation becomes comic, for none of these people can comprehend the education that has reformed Chad and Strether. Chad's determination to remain in Paris is unmoved, but Strether's conscience is reawakened, and he is persuaded to return to America, even though this will end his attachment to the quiet, kindly Maria Gostrey, an expatriate who has been a sympathetic spectator of his cultural adventure and the comedy of contrasted manners it has involved.

Ambitious Guest, The, allegorical tale by Hawthorne (q.v.), published in *The Token* (1835) and in *Twice-Told Tales* (1837).

A solitary youth stops for the night at a lonely cottage in the Notch of the White Hills in New Hampshire. He tells of his hopes of fame and fortune, and each member of his host's family is moved to divulge his intimate desires. The head of the house would like 'to be called Squire, and sent to General Court for a term or two'; the youngest child would like to go at once on an excursion to 'take a drink out of the basin of the Flume'; his older sister hardly conceals her growing interest in the young stranger; and even the grandmother speaks of her wish to look well in her coffin. While they talk, a great landslide begins, which buries the whole company.

America, name first applied to the present continent of South America (1507) in a map by the German geographer Martin Waldseemüller (*fl.*1470–1513), who coined the title in honor of the navigator Amerigo Vespucci. He applied it to the whole New World in his *Cosmographiae Introductio* (1507), a work intended to be an introduction to a new edition of Ptolemy. Mercator used 'America' to indicate both North and South America (1538), but for more than two centuries the lands in the western hemisphere were known in Spain and Portugal as the 'Indies,' 'West Indies,' or 'New World.'

America, patriotic hymn written by Samuel Francis Smith (q.v.), was first sung at a Boston Fourth of July meeting (1831) and published in *The Choir* (1832), a collection edited by Lowell Mason. The tune is the British 'God Save the King,' often erroneously attributed to Henry Carey (1690?–1743), but actually a traditional air whose earliest known version is by John Bull (1563–1628). Smith's hymn is frequently known as 'My country, 'tis of thee,' its opening line.

America Comes of Age, critical work by André Siegfried (q.v.).

America the Beautiful, patriotic hymn by Katherine Lee Bates (q.v.), written in 1893 and published in *The Congregationalist* (July 4, 1895). A revision was published in 1904, and in the author's *America the Beautiful and Other Poems* (1911). Of the 60 tunes composed for it by various musicians, those most frequently used are by W.G.Macfarlane and S.A.Ward.

American, The, novel by Henry James (q.v.), published in 1877 and dramatized by the author in 1891.

Christopher Newman, a wealthy American on a visit to Paris, meets Claire de Cintré, a widow of noble birth, half French and half English. On his first call at her home, Newman is turned away by her ungracious brother, Marquis Urbain de Bellegarde, but later he meets others of the family, Urbain's wife, the charming younger brother Count Valentin, the shrewd, proud old Marquise, and her maid, the sympathetic Englishwoman, Mrs. Bread. The American becomes a close friend of Valentin, who encourages his courtship of Mme de Cintré, but the others tolerate him only because of his wealth. Finally his proposal is accepted, the engagement is formally announced, and the Marquis reluctantly introduces Newman to his aristocratic friends. Meanwhile the American comes to know Mlle Noémie Nioche, a copyist of paintings, whose meek, shabby-genteel father is Newman's French teacher. Newman benevolently orders a number of Noémie's paintings in order to provide her a dowry, and introduces her to Valentin. Although the young man realizes she is mercenary and unscrupulous, he continues to see her, and she is the cause of a duel in which he is fatally wounded. Before learning of this, Newman receives word that Mme de Cintré, influenced by her mother and brother, has broken their engagement. Summoned to Valentin's deathbed, he hears the young man's disgust with his family, and is told that Mrs. Bread knows a guilty secret about them that Newman may use to further his own ends. After Valentin's funeral, Mme de Cintré announces that she intends to become a nun. Through Mrs. Bread, Newman discovers that the Marquise killed her husband, and he threatens to expose the evidence, but Urbain and his mother still refuse to allow the marriage. At first Newman determines to fulfil his revenge, but in a revulsion of feeling he destroys the evidence of the murder.

American Academy of Arts and Letters, founded in 1904 as an honorary circle of 50 members within the National Institute of Arts and Letters. The Institute was founded in 1898 on the model of the French Academy, with 250 members divided into sections in Art, Literature, and Music. The Academy is intended to promote American literature, art, and music by honoring prominent artists, presenting public addresses, bringing representatives of foreign academies to the U.S., and organizing conferences and discussions, publications, collections, and awards.

American Anti-Slavery Society, see *Abolitionist.*

American Antiquarian Society was founded by Isaiah Thomas at Worcester, Massachusetts (1812). It has long been distinguished for its great collection of American historical materials and for its series of publications making available scarce items of Americana.

American Apollo, see *Massachusetts Historical Society.*

American Bible Society, founded at New York (1816), with Elias Boudinot as president, was supported by Christians of all denominations, for the purpose of distributing Bibles in frontier regions and among immigrants. The Society continues to publish translations of the Scriptures and distributes them throughout the world. In 1936 it circulated more than 7,000,000 copies of Bibles or Biblical selections. The American Tract Society, a kindred organization founded in 1825, distributed a wider body of religious literature to the same groups.

American Caravan, yearbook founded in 1927 by Van Wyck Brooks, Lewis Mumford, Paul Rosenfeld, and others, to be 'an affirmation of the health of the young American literature, and an earnest of the eventual formation of a guild for the co-operative publication of its works.' It has undergone some changes of title, in 1937 being called *New Letters in America,* but the purpose has remained the same despite lapses in publication. Among the contributors have been Ernest Hemingway, John Dos Passos, Gertrude Stein, and Eugene O'Neill.

American Chronicles of the Times, see *First Book of the American Chronicles of the Times.*

American Claimant, The, story by S.L. Clemens (q.v.), written under his pseudonym Mark Twain, and published in 1892. It is based on a play, *Colonel Sellers,* written by Clemens with Howells (1883) and

produced unsuccessfully (1886). The character of Sellers first appeared in *The Gilded Age* (q.v.).

Viscount Berkeley is an earnest young man who desires a just trial of the rights of American claimants to his father's earldom, and he goes to America to investigate the matter, as well as to see the democratic institutions he admires. The current claimant is Colonel Mulberry Sellers, in his old age still 'the same old scheming, generous, good-hearted . . . failure he always was,' and still on the trail of easy wealth. By a number of complicated coincidences, Berkeley, believed to have died in a hotel fire, disguises himself to seek work and test the institutions of western democracy. Although disappointed in both quests until he is employed as a maker of tintypes, he discovers Sellers, with whose beautiful and sensible daughter Sally he falls in love. Berkeley summons his father, who comes to America, is won over by Sally, and consents to a marriage. The families plan to return to England together, but as the ship is about to leave the colonel is missed. He has gone off on a scheme to control the sunspots, leaving a message that asks the others to watch for a vast sunspot which will mean: 'Mulberry Sellers throws us a kiss across the universe.'

American Commonwealth, The, political and social survey by James Bryce (q.v.), published in two volumes in 1888, and supplemented and revised in 1910. This study of 'the nation of the future,' as Bryce considered the U.S., is presented in six sections: (1) the Constitution, the organization of the federal government, and its interrelations with the state governments; (2) the state and local governments; (3) the party system; (4) the nature of public opinion, and its influence on policies and issues; (5) illustrations of previous arguments, with a discussion of the 'strength and weakness of democratic government' in the U.S.; and (6) social, intellectual, and spiritual forces, as they affect the course of life of the nation and its citizens. The work reasserted faith in democracy and the paradox that in general the wisdom of the mass is greater than that of the select few, although noting the following faults in American society: a lack of intellectual distinction; the apathy of the cultured and the leisure class; incompetence in legislation and administration; and laxity in the management of public business.

American Crisis, The, see *Crisis, The American.*

American Democrat, The, or Hints on the Social and Civic Relations of the United States of America, critical work by Cooper (q.v.), published in 1838.

Returning from Europe in 1835, the author was struck by 'a disposition in the majority to carry out the opinions of the system to extremes, and a disposition in the minority to abandon all to the current of the day,' and he writes in order to express 'the voice of simple, honest, and . . . fearless truth' on the peculiarities of the American system, in theory and practice. Following an introduction and general chapters on government and republican theories, he discusses government in the U.S., especially with regard to the doctrine of state rights. The 43 brief chapters that follow are concerned with 'Distinctive American Principles,' 'Equality,' 'Liberty,' 'Advantages of a Democracy,' 'Disadvantages of a Democracy,' 'Prejudice,' 'The Private Duties of Station,' 'Language,' 'Demagogues,' 'The Press,' 'Property,' and similar subjects, all discussed from the point of view of a conservative thinker who is convinced of the value of an aristocratic system.

American Expeditionary Force, the U.S. army that served overseas in the World War (q.v.), under the command of General John J. Pershing, from the first occupation of front line trenches (Oct. 23, 1917) to the Armistice (Nov. 11, 1918). At the close of the war, more than 1,200,000 American troops were in France and had served in several critical engagements on the western front. The American Legion is an organization of veterans of the A.E.F. and of those who served it at home.

American Farmer, see *Letters from an American Farmer.*

American Federation of Labor (A.F. of L.), organization of trade unions of the U.S., Canada, Puerto Rico, and Panama, was founded in 1881 to combine previous labor groups, and adopted its present name in 1886. From its inception until his death in 1924, Samuel Gompers was its president, and since 1924 it has been headed by William Green, who continued Gompers's program of avoiding political

entanglements, socialistic ideas, and radical policies, and working only for higher wages, shorter hours, and improved working conditions. The basic principle has been that of craft unionism, that is, to divide the workers of a plant into separate unions for each craft represented. This has been opposed by those favoring industrial unionism, that is, to include all the workers of each plant in an organization based on the nature of the commodity produced. The difference led to a schism after the establishment in 1938 of the Congress of Industrial Organizations (q.v.), headed by John L. Lewis, who in 1935 had founded its predecessor, the Committee for Industrial Organization.

American Folk-Lore Society, founded in 1888, through its quarterly *Journal of American Folk-Lore* and other publications, and the investigations of its branch groups, has made valuable contributions to the study of the lore of American Indians and Negroes, as well as of the folk ballads and tales of the modern U.S.

American Fur Company, see *Astoria.*

American Geographical Society, founded in 1852 at New York City, through the activities of its members and the publication of a *Bulletin* (later called the *Geographical Review*), has encouraged exploration and disseminated information on geographical subjects.

American Historical Association, THE, founded at Saratoga, N.Y., in 1884 and incorporated (1889) with a main office in Washington, D.C. It has aided in the classification of official documents, and promoted, organized, and published research in neglected subjects of American history. Its organ, the *American Historical Review* (1895–), special reports, annual bibliographies, and a co-operative *Guide to Historical Literature* (1931) are among its many important publications.

American Legion, THE, founded in Paris (1919) by Colonel Theodore Roosevelt, Jr. and other officers and men representing every division of the American Expeditionary Force (q.v.), was later extended to include any person who had worn an American uniform during the World War or served the armed forces in civilian clothes. It has posts throughout the world, and includes more than 800,000 members in the U.S., who have come to be considered as identical with the American forces of the World War, although only approximately one-sixth of those eligible have joined. It has done much to influence legislation for its own ends, securing the passage of such laws as the World War Adjusted Compensation Act (1925), which in 1936 paid a bonus to each veteran; it has also used political power and influenced public opinion to promote its concepts of patriotism.

American Literature (1928–), scholarly journal of literary history, criticism, and bibliography, published quarterly by the Duke University Press with the cooperation of the American Literature Group of the Modern Language Association of America.

American Magazine, The (Jan.–March 1741), first magazine published in the British colonies in America. Edited by John Webbe, it was published from Philadelphia by Andrew Bradford after Webbe had been dissatisfied with Franklin's terms for publication. Only three issues of this 'monthly view of the political state' were published, but because the first appeared three days before Franklin's *The General Magazine*, it is distinguished as the first publication of its kind. It contained proceedings of the colonial assemblies, essays on moral, scientific, political, and historical subjects, and brief reprints of *belles-lettres* from *The London Magazine.*

A second *American Magazine* (Dec. 1787–Nov. 1788) was a monthly edited by Noah Webster from New York. Besides the usual periodical features, the magazine devoted attention to education and to subjects of interest to women. It included contributions from the Connecticut Wits, and was strongly Federalist.

A third publication with this title was founded as *Frank Leslie's Popular Monthly* (q.v.), assuming its present name in 1906, when it was purchased by a group of muckraking authors, including Ida Tarbell, Steffens, R.S.Baker, F.P.Dunne, and W.A.White. To make money, they tempered their muckraking with an emphasis on the homely affairs of average people, and in time this became the primary interest, when the original publishers gave up the magazine. It now has a circulation of more than 2,000,000, and is devoted to optimistic stories of people who have reached success in spite of handicaps,

and similar fiction, aimed at average American families.

American Magazine and Monthly Chronicle, The (1757–8), political magazine founded at Philadelphia by William Bradford, with William Smith as editor. It published contributions by Francis Hopkinson and Thomas Godfrey, and attacked the French and the Quakers, championed the development of an American nation, and sided with the proprietors against Franklin in the quarrel over the question whether the Penns should pay taxes on their Pennsylvania grants. The magazine's contributors formed a literary group known as the Society of Gentlemen.

American Mercury (1719–46), see *American Weekly Mercury*.

American Mercury, The (1924–), monthly magazine founded by H.L. Mencken and George Jean Nathan (qq.v.) as a successor to their *Smart Set*, 'to attempt a realistic presentation of the whole gaudy, gorgeous American scene,' with all phases of American culture and institutions treated in a spirit of boisterous skepticism. The subject matter included not only lusty critical commentaries, but also short stories, poems, plays, and reviews of the arts, in keeping with the full-blooded editorial policy. After the first year Nathan ceased to be co-editor, and in 1930 he silently disappeared from the magazine whose character he had helped to shape. The many noted contributors included Dreiser, O'Neill, Sherwood Anderson, Cabell, Hergesheimer, Sandburg, Van Vechten, Sinclair Lewis, and Edgar Lee Masters. Among several celebrated departments, the one entitled 'Americana' was devoted to clippings from newspapers, ironically reflecting the alleged stupidity of the American mass mind. In 1934 Mencken left the magazine, whose quality and policy have since been considerably altered.

American Minerva (1793–1905), founded at New York by Noah Webster, as a daily Federalist journal to combat French influences. Webster under the pseudonym Curtius, and Hamilton and Rufus King under the pseudonym Camillus, wrote two series of letters defending Jay's Treaty. In 1794 a semiweekly *Herald: Gazette for the Country* began to be composed for larger circulation out of the materials of the daily. In 1797 the *Minerva's* name became the *Commercial Advertiser*, and in 1803 Webster retired from its editorship. Later editors included R.C. Sands (1827–32), Thurlow Weed (1867), Parke Godwin and William L. Stone, and in 1905 the paper was combined with the *New York Globe* to become the *Globe and Commercial Advertiser*, which in turn was bought by the New York *Sun* (1923).

American Monthly Magazine (1829–31), literary journal published from Boston by N.P.Willis (q.v.), whose other contributors included J.L.Motley, Richard Hildreth, Mrs.Sigourney, and Park Benjamin. Its levity and worldliness caused it to be a failure in Boston, and it was absorbed by the *New-York Mirror* (q.v.).

American Monthly Magazine, The (1833–8), literary periodical edited by H.W.Herbert (1833–5), during which time its contributors included Paulding, Verplanck, and James Hall. In 1835 it absorbed *The New-England Magazine* (q.v.), after which it was edited by Park Benjamin and C.F.Hoffman, and included Poe among its contributors. During its last year, an attempt was made to invigorate the magazine by introducing such political contributors as Horace Greeley and Henry Clay.

American Museum, The (1787–92), monthly magazine published and edited at Philadelphia by Mathew Carey. At first it contained mainly reprinted materials, although original contributions came from Francis Hopkinson, Franklin, Benjamin Rush, and the Connecticut Wits. In 1790 the subtitle *Universal Magazine* was added, and the policy was altered to include more *belles-lettres* and original writing.

American Notes for General Circulation, travel account by Dickens (q.v.), published in 1842. Dickens visited the U.S. (Jan.–May 1842) in a tour that took him from Boston and New York to Canada and as far west as St.Louis. His book is almost wholly descriptive, and does not attempt to analyze institutions. He wrote in a complimentary fashion about much of America, but antagonized many readers by criticizing the penal system, the lack of copyright and hence the pirating of English works, and the entire system of slavery and its adherents.

American Party, see *Know-Nothing Movement.*

American Philosophical Society, first scientific society in America, was founded at Philadelphia (1743) by Franklin, who was its first president. Corresponding members residing abroad were enrolled in 1766, and in 1769 the Society was merged with another Philadelphia organization 'for promoting useful knowledge.' Immediate successors of Franklin in the presidency were the astronomer Rittenhouse and Thomas Jefferson. Besides its *Transactions*, the Society publishes *Proceedings* (since 1838) and *Memoirs* (since 1900).

American Politician, An, novel by F.M. Crawford (q.v.).

American Register, see *Literary Magazine.*

American Republican Party, see *Know-Nothing Movement.*

American Review (1845–50), see *American Whig Review.*

American Review, The (1933–7), socio-economic magazine, founded and edited by Seward Collins, after the suspension of *The Bookman*, to analyze contemporary life and letters from a traditionalist basis. Space was devoted to such movements as Agrarianism, the New Humanism, and neoscholasticism.

American Revolution, see *Revolutionary War.*

American Scene, The, descriptive and interpretive work by Henry James (q.v.), published in 1907. The author toured the U.S. (1904) after an absence of 'nearly a quarter of a century,' and writes from a point of view that he claims to be almost as fresh as that of an 'inquiring stranger' and as acute as that of an 'initiated native.' He describes his dramatic adventure in rediscovering an America occupied by 'a society reaching out into the apparent void for the amenities, the consummations, after having earnestly gathered in so many of the preparations and necessities.' The chapters of sensitive and cultivated appreciation include discussions of New England, New York, and Newport; the foreign aspects of New York City; 'social notes' on upper-class life; and places associated with such authors as Hawthorne, Emerson, Thoreau, and Irving. The general impression is in keeping with his attitude as an expatriate:

> You touch the great lonely land—as one feels it still to be—only to plant upon it some ugliness about which, never dreaming of the grace of apology or contrition, you then proceed to brag. . . . You convert the large and noble sanities that I see around me . . . one after the other to crudities, to invalidities, hideous and unashamed. . . .

American Scholar, The, address by Emerson (q.v.) delivered before the Phi Beta Kappa Society of Harvard (Aug. 31, 1837), published separately in 1837, and reprinted in *Nature, Addresses, and Lectures* (1849). Called 'our intellectual Declaration of Independence' by Holmes, the work was immediately influential and remains important as an idealistic appeal for the active leadership of American society by native thinkers, developed through contact with the best products of former cultures and through free intercourse with nature and their fellow men.

The author announces that 'Events, actions arise, that must be sung, that will sing themselves.' The original unit, man, has been 'minutely subdivided and peddled out,' however, and 'in this distribution of functions, the scholar is the delegated intellect . . . he is *Man Thinking.*' The scholar, following 'the ancient precept, "Know thyself," and the modern precept, "Study Nature," ' must interpret the distinctive new culture, for 'Each age must write its own books.' Yet he must act, as well as think and write. His duties are all implied in the term 'self-trust'; knowing himself and his function, he must be self-reliant and free of bondage to the 'popular cry.' Society's purpose is to produce perfect individuals, and the scholar's idealistic mission is both to embody this perfection in himself and to make use of his divine inspiration for the highest good of his fellows.

American Songbag, The, folk songs and ballads compiled by Sandburg (q.v.).

American Spectator, The (1932–7), monthly literary journal published in newspaper format, was founded by G.J. Nathan, Ernest Boyd, Cabell, Dreiser, O'Neill, and Sherwood Anderson, and constituted a spiritual offspring of *The American Mercury.* In a flip, satirical manner, it published stimulating articles concerned with 'life, in general, and some of the specific problems of our time, in particular.' Clarity, vigor, and humor were announced as the three indispensable qualifications of contributions. Although the magazine had a brilliant list of con-

tributors and was financially successful, it was abandoned by its editors 'because they were bored.' It was then purchased (1935) by an anonymous group, but, lacking its former lively iconoclasm, was forced to become a bimonthly the following year.

American Speech (1925–), scholarly quarterly magazine, was founded and edited for its first eight years by Louise Pound. It deals with American phenomena of vocabulary, pronunciation, and style, studies of local dialects, slang, and technical nomenclature, and non-English languages in North America.

American Taxation, On, speech by Edmund Burke, delivered in the British Parliament (April 19, 1774), urging repeal of the duty on tea imports of the British colonies in America. With a wide and ordered knowledge of the subject and its background, Burke based his argument on four fundamental assumptions: happiness is the true end of government; political expediency is the means of accomplishing that end; the criterion for judging the end is the wisdom of the past; and the end must be attained through the medium of the British constitution. This speech was the least conciliatory of Burke's writings on America, and, although the basic ideas have much in common with his earlier speeches and pamphlets, it had little success.

American Tract Society, see *American Bible Society.*

American Tragedy, An, novel by Dreiser (q.v.), published in 1925 and dramatized by Patrick Kearney in 1926. The plot is based on an actual New York murder case.

Clyde Griffiths, son of street evangelists in Kansas City, desires to escape his family's drab life and to win wealth and social position. Becoming a bellboy in a hotel, he plunges into the worldly society of his fellow employes, but this life ends as the result of an automobile accident for which he is legally culpable. Providentially he meets his wealthy uncle, Samuel Griffiths, who is attracted by the youth's engaging manner and employs him in his collar factory in New York state. Here Clyde enters into a liaison with Roberta Alden, a working girl, and almost simultaneously falls in love with Sondra Finchley, who seems to him to represent the dazzling 'four hundred' of the small town. Roberta discloses that she is pregnant, and demands that Clyde provide for her. In a frenzy he plans to murder her, and for this purpose takes her to a deserted lake resort. They row out on the lake, where, though Clyde lacks the courage to complete his plan, the boat is overturned, possibly by accident. The youth swims away, leaving Roberta to drown. After his arrest and lengthy trial, he is condemned to death.

American Weekly Mercury, The (1719–46), Philadelphia newspaper founded by Andrew Bradford. Much of its material was copied from English journals. Franklin, forestalled by the rival printer Keimer in a project for launching a newspaper, contributed six of the 'Busy-Body Papers' to the *Mercury* in 1729.

American Whig Review (1845–52), political magazine founded to champion Clay's presidential campaign, was continued as a political and literary review. Poe contributed 'The Raven,' 'Some Words with a Mummy,' 'The Facts in the Case of M. Valdemar,' and 'Eulalie.' Other contributors included Lowell, Webster, Everett, Calhoun, and Greeley, and the magazine was a vigorous advocate of American literature. From 1845 to 1850 it was known as *The American Review.* The decisive defeat of the Whigs caused its suspension.

Americanization of Edward Bok, The, autobiographical narrative by E.W. Bok (q.v.), published in 1920, and awarded the Pulitzer Prize. It describes his arrival in the U.S. as a Dutch immigrant child, his rise during the subsequent 50 years to influential editorial positions, and his acquaintance with leading public figures.

America's Coming of Age, critical work by Van Wyck Brooks (q.v.).

AMERIGO VESPUCCI, see *Vespucci, Amerigo.*

AMES, NATHANIEL (1708–64), compiler of an annual *Astronomical Diary and Almanack* (1725–64), which attained a circulation of 60,000 copies and was among the works that served as models for *Poor Richard's Almanack.* His work was continued by his son, Nathaniel, Jr., until 1775. The material in their almanacs has been edited as *The Essays, Humor, and Poems of Nathaniel Ames* (1891).

FISHER AMES (1758–1808), another son, graduated from Harvard, and was admitted to the bar (1781). His political essays

in Boston newspapers and a powerful speech in the Massachusetts convention that ratified the Constitution made him the leading orator and pamphleteer of New England Federalism. Distrusting all signs of 'French liberalism,' he lustily argued that 'the essence, and almost the quintessence, of good government is to protect property and its rights . . . The major business of government becomes, therefore, the problem of keeping in due subjection to law and order the dangerous mass of the poor and vicious.' From 1788 to 1797, as a Federalist member of Congress, he helped to force Hamilton's financial measures through the House. After he retired, his essays and correspondence with Federalist leaders maintained his reputation as a party sage. His *Works* were collected in 1809, and an enlarged edition was published in 1854.

Amherst College, men's college in Massachusetts founded by Congregationalists (1821) to offset the supposedly heretical teachings of Harvard's Unitarians. It is now a leading small college devoted to liberal education and training in the classics. Alexander Meiklejohn was president (1912–24). Its graduates include H.W. Beecher (1834), Clyde Fitch (1886), and Calvin Coolidge (1895).

Amish, see *Mennonites.*

Amos Judd, novel by J.A.Mitchell (q.v.).

Anabaptists, religious sects that contend that infant baptism is unauthorized by Scripture, and that the sacrament may be administered only to believers. They were among the most radical during the Reformation and were widely persecuted because of their agitation for social and economic reforms. Although scattered in different sects, they possess certain fundamental beliefs in common, including the necessity of direct contact with God, without the mediation of human agencies; absolute pacifism; and a refusal to obey the state, whenever its demands conflict with conscience. During the first quarter of the 16th century, the belief spread through the Germanic peoples of Europe, particularly attracting the common people. Some communal experiments were tried, in which law, private property, and marriage were outlawed. Many Anabaptists moved to South Dakota from Russia in 1874, because of persecution.

Analectic Magazine, The, see *Literary Gazette.*

Anarchiad, The, 12 papers in mock-heroic verse, jointly composed by the Connecticut Wits (q.v.), published anonymously in *The New Haven Gazette* and *The Connecticut Magazine* (1786–7), and reprinted with notes and appendices in 1861 as *The Anarchiad: A New England Poem.* Probably conceived by David Humphreys, the work is considered to have been mainly written by Lemuel Hopkins, supplemented by Joel Barlow, Timothy Dwight, John Trumbull, and Humphreys. It follows the plan of *The Rolliad,* an English satire of Tory politics, and the authors, representatives of the Connecticut aristocracy, were intent on counteracting the popular appeal of agrarian economics and democratic liberalism, converting the faltering alliance between states into a national unity, and establishing commercial security through a financial policy based on sound money.

Anarchism, political philosophy that holds that society is an aggregation of individuals for whom the state is an arbitrary authority curbing personal liberty. Its ideal state would consist of voluntary, autonomous groups of individuals, loosely co-ordinated for purposes of production and exchange, and working on the basis of supply and demand. Therefore anarchists reject political action, trade unionism, and majority rule, their revolutionary media being the 'propaganda of the word' and 'propaganda of the deed.' Modern anarchism dates from the mid-19th-century theories of Proudhon, Bakounin, Prince Kropotkin, and Johan Most. Although there had been such isolated believers as Josiah Warren and S.P.Andrews, anarchism first became influential in the U.S. (*c.*1880) with the decline of the Socialist Labor Party, and the anarchist groups were strengthened during the visit of Most to the U.S. (1882–3). The movement was particularly influential in Chicago, but the power of the Internationalists was broken by the arrest of their leaders for inciting bomb-throwing in the Haymarket Riot (q.v., 1886). This event, and public feeling that led to the passing of a law (1894) excluding foreign anarchists, virtually ended the power of the movement in the U.S., although a few later believers, including Emma Goldman, Alexander

Berkman, and Sacco and Vanzetti, have temporarily exerted some influence.

Ancestral Footstep, The, romance by Hawthorne (q.v.).

ANDERSON, MARGARET C., see *Little Review.*

ANDERSON, MAXWELL (1888–), born in Pennsylvania, was reared in North Dakota, from whose state university he graduated in 1911. He received his M.A. from Stanford (1914), taught school in California and North Dakota, and entered a career of journalism, which brought him to New York and continued until 1924. His first play was *White Desert* (1923), a tragedy of repressed lives in North Dakota, and his second, written in collaboration with Laurence Stallings, was the immensely successful war play, *What Price Glory?* (q.v.,1924). With Stallings he also wrote *First Flight* (1925), concerned with an episode in the youth of Andrew Jackson, and *The Buccaneer* (1925), whose hero is the pirate Sir Henry Morgan. These were collected in *Three American Plays* (1926). Anderson published his only book of poems as *You Who Have Dreams* (1925). *Outside Looking In* (1925) was a dramatization of Jim Tully's *Beggars of Life*, and *Saturday's Children* (1927) was a comedy of modern marital relations. His next play, written in collaboration with Harold Hickerson, was *Gods of the Lightning* (1928), dealing with the Sacco-Vanzetti case, and he turned to verse drama with *Elizabeth the Queen* (q.v., 1930), concerned with the English queen's love for the Earl of Essex. *Night Over Taos* (q.v.,1932), also in verse, dramatizes the end of the feudal era in 19th-century New Mexico. *Both Your Houses* (q.v.,1933; Pulitzer Prize) is a prose satire of political corruption in Congress. With *Mary of Scotland* (q.v.,1933), the author returned to verse and to English and Scottish history, but *Valley Forge* (q.v.,1934) has a distinctly American theme, as do most of his later plays, which include: *Winterset* (q.v.,1935), a verse tragedy suggested by the Sacco-Vanzetti case; *The Wingless Victory* (1936), an adaptation of the Medea theme, set in Salem in 1800; *High Tor* (q.v.,1937), a satirical fantasy on the encroachments of industrialism on personal liberty; *The Masque of Kings* (1936), a verse play concerning the Mayerling affair; *The Star Wagon* (1937), a prose fantasy set in Ohio, concerned with an inventor in a small manufacturing town who makes a machine to control time, revenging himself with it on the company that has cheated him; *Knickerbocker Holiday* (1938), a musical comedy written with Kurt Weill, satirizing the New Deal through a story of Stuyvesant's government of New Netherland; *Key Largo* (1939), an idealistic verse play about an American soldier in the Spanish Loyalist army who must choose between common sense and heroic self-sacrifice; and such radio plays as *The Feast of Ortolans* (1938), set in France in 1789. *The Essence of Tragedy* (1939) is a collection of essays, and *Eleven Verse Plays* (1940) is a collection of his dramas since 1929.

ANDERSON, SHERWOOD (1876–1941), born in Ohio, at the age of 14 began his restless career, drifting from job to job and serving in the Spanish-American War. For a time he settled in his native state, was married, and became the manager of a paint factory; but he suddenly walked out of the factory, left his family, and made his way to Chicago. There, while writing advertising copy, he met such authors as Carl Sandburg and Floyd Dell, who encouraged him to publish his first book, *Windy McPherson's Son* (1916), a novel dealing with a boy's life in a drab Iowa town, his rise to success as a manufacturer, and his renunciation of this life to 'find truth.' This was followed by another novel, *Marching Men* (1917), set in the Pennsylvania coal region, and showing the failure of a mystical movement to organize the workers in order to free them from oppressive routine. He also published a book of poems, *Mid-American Chants* (1918), but it was not until 1919, when *Winesburg, Ohio* (q.v.) appeared, that he first attracted wide attention. These stories of small-town life voice the philosophy of life expressed in all his later works. Adopting a naturalistic interpretation of American life, he believed that the primal forces of human behavior are instinctive and not to be denied, as he supposed they are, by the standardization of a machine age. His characters are puzzled, groping, baffled, and possess no vision of order or channel for directing their energies against the frustrations of contemporary existence. Primarily through sex, which he endowed with a mystical significance, Anderson conceived man as having

an opportunity to escape from the confinement of this regulated life. Similarly, he placed stress on the mystical identification of man with the primal forces of nature. In *Poor White* (q.v.,1920), a novel of the Midwest, 'the town was really the hero of the book. . . . What happened to the town was, I thought, more important than what happened to the people of the town.' What happens is that the machine comes to the town, destroying whatever beauty and significance it once possessed. The same themes and attitude of mind are evinced in subsequent books: *The Triumph of the Egg* (q.v.,1921), stories depicting aspects of frustration and maladjustment in typical American backgrounds; *Horses and Men* (1923), stories mainly about horse racing; and *Many Marriages* (1923), a novel about a businessman's attempt to escape routine. In *Dark Laughter* (q.v., 1925), a novel contrasting the laughter and song of unrepressed Negroes with the spiritual sterility of the whites, he reached artistic maturity both in his style, simple, direct, consciously naïve, and admittedly indebted to Gertrude Stein, and in his mastery of form. *Tar, A Midwest Childhood* (1926) is a fictional treatment of his own life, which he had begun to describe in *A Story-Teller's Story* (q.v.,1924). After issuing two volumes of sketches, *The Modern Writer* (1925) and *Sherwood Anderson's Notebook* (1926), and a volume of poetry, *A New Testament* (1927), he retired to a small Virginia town to edit two newspapers, one Republican and the other Democratic. His next book, *Hello Towns!* (1929), is a narrative of visits to small towns, and *Nearer the Grass Roots* (1929) sets forth his reasons for retirement, to be 'in close and constant touch with every phase of life in an American community every day of the year.' *Perhaps Women* (1931) is a critical work, placing hope for salvation from the sterility of mechanized life in the leadership of women. *Beyond Desire* (1932), his first novel in seven years, shows a shift of scene to the industrialized South, but is still concerned with the problem of modern frustrations. A book of stories, *Death in the Woods* (1933), and a survey of the U.S. during the depression, *Puzzled America* (1935), were followed by another novel, *Kit Brandon* (1936), showing the author's characters still trapped in a situation with which they cannot cope. In *Home Town* (1940), a collection of essays, Anderson muses more quietly upon the position of the small town in American life.

ANDRÉ, JOHN (1751–80), came to America (1774) as a lieutenant in the Royal Fusiliers, and during the Revolutionary War was promoted to the rank of major. In 1780 he carried on secret negotiations with Benedict Arnold, when that American officer attempted to betray West Point. André was tried as a spy at Washington's headquarters, and was hanged for this offense despite official British protests and popular sympathy aroused by his engaging personality. He is the subject of plays named for him by William Dunlap, Clyde Fitch, and Philip Freneau, and figures often in fiction.

André, blank verse tragedy by William Dunlap (q.v.), produced and published in 1798. The author's revision was produced in 1803 as *The Glory of Columbia* (published 1817).

The tragedy has a terse unity of structure, for it begins after André has been captured and condemned, and centers upon the various efforts to save him and Washington's struggle between duty and humanity. Of the three forces at work to save André, the first is the young British officer, Bland, an American sympathizer. His mother, Mrs.Bland, also works for the spy in order to save her husband, Colonel Bland, who has been captured by Sir Henry Clinton and is threatened with execution unless André is released. Honora, who loves André and has come from England to be with him, is the third force in his favor. The action ends with the elder Bland's release and the procession to the execution of André.

ANDREWS, CHARLES MCLEAN (1863–), professor of American history at Yale (1910–31), whose many books include the *Colonial Period of American History* (Pulitzer Prize,1934; vol.II,1936), a reinterpretation of early American history in the light of British imperial policies.

ANDREWS, JANE (1835–87), school teacher of Newburyport, Massachusetts, whose popular books for children included: *The Seven Little Sisters Who Live on the Round Ball That Floats in the Air* (1861); and *The Stories Mother Nature Told Her Children* (1889).

ANDREWS, STEPHEN PEARL (1812–86), reformer interested in various radical movements, including the manumission of

slaves by purchase. His religious and economic free-thinking led him to develop, in his book *The Science of Society*, a semi-anarchistic social scheme which he called Pantarchy. His other books include *Cost the Limit of Price* (1851) and *Basic Outline of Universology* (1872). He helped Victoria Woodhull (q.v.) and her sister to found *Woodhull and Claflin's Weekly* (1870–76). He was also a brilliant linguist, knew 32 languages, created a universal language he called Alwato, and wrote several books of instruction in shorthand.

Androboros, the first American play to be printed (1714), was probably written by Robert Hunter, governor of New York (1710–19), and Lewis Morris, chief justice of the colony. A political satire, it was never produced, and the publication bears the fictitious imprint, Moronopolis (fools' town). It is an attack on the colonial administrator and military leader, Francis Nicholson, who is given the name Androboros (man eater). The plot deals with Androboros's proposed attack on the Mulomachians (the French), and the senate's resolution that he has behaved himself courageously in the attack, which he has not yet made. When the keeper (the author, Hunter) asks why they pass the resolution before the expedition, he is told that it is because there will be less reason after the encounter.

ANDROS, Sir Edmund (1637–1714), English colonial governor, was first sent as the Duke of York's appointee to New York (1675), and became royal governor of the consolidated northern colonies (1686) when James II attempted to concentrate British power against France in the New World by bringing under one government Massachusetts, Maine, New Hampshire, Plymouth, King's Province (the old Narragansett Country), Rhode Island, the County of Cornwall (northern Maine), and Connecticut, to which were added New York and New Jersey (1688). As head of this Dominion of New England, Andros was an autocratic governor until a reform movement culminated in the Boston uprising led by Cotton Mather and probably instigated by Increase Mather. Many Dominion officials, including Andros, were seized when William of Orange succeeded James II (1689), and the colonies returned to their former charter governments. From 1692 to 1697, Andros was governor of Virginia, but he was recalled as the result of charges brought by James Blair.

ANGHIERA, Pietro Martire, see *Martyr, Peter.*

Anglican Church, see *Protestant Episcopal Church.*

ANGLIN, Margaret [Mary] (1876–), Canadian-born actress, first appeared in 1894 in *Shenandoah*, and achieved a great success in *Cyrano de Bergerac* (1898), in which she appeared opposite Richard Mansfield. Her later plays included *Camille*, *The Devil's Disciple*, *The Great Divide*, and such Greek dramas as the *Antigone* and *Electra* of Sophocles.

Anglomaniacs, The, novel by Constance Cary Harrison (q.v.).

Animal Kingdom, The, play by Philip Barry (q.v.), produced and published in 1932.

Tom Collier, a wealthy young man, after years of happiness with his mistress, Daisy Sage, a painter, breaks with her and resumes his former social position. He marries Cecilia Henry, who, though outwardly a good wife, actually fails to understand and sympathize with his views of the world. Eventually he discovers that it is his wife, not his former mistress, who lives in the wrong world for him, and he returns to Daisy.

Anna Christie, play by Eugene O'Neill (q.v.), produced in 1921 and published in 1922, when it received the Pulitzer Prize. It is a revision of his unsuccessful play, *Chris Christopherson* (1920).

Chris Christopherson, Swedish-American captain of the coal barge *Simeon Winthrop*, awaits the arrival of his daughter Anna in the saloon of Johnny-the-Priest on the New York waterfront. Several years before, he sent her to relatives on a Midwestern farm, away from the baneful influence of 'dat ole davil sea,' and he pictures her as an innocent country girl; but when she enters it is obvious to all except Chris that Anna is a coarse, hardened woman of the underworld. She confesses to her father's mistress, Marthy, that she was seduced by a cousin when she was 16, lived as a prostitute in St.Louis, was ill in a prison-hospital, and has acquired a deep-seated hatred of men. Father and daughter leave New York on a voyage of the barge, and the sea that Chris hates proves to be the means of

Anna's regeneration, until the *Winthrop* picks up a boatload of shipwrecked sailors, one of whom is the rough Irishman, Mat Burke. In love with Anna, Mat wants to marry her, but she discloses her history, and the revelation shocks both Mat and Chris, who go off separately to get drunk, and sign for a voyage on the same ship. Mat's love is stronger than his sense of Anna's shame, and the same is true of Chris, so that both return to Anna, who promises to make a home for them when they finish their voyage.

Annabel Lee, lyrical ballad by Poe (q.v.), posthumously published in the New York *Tribune* (Oct. 9, 1849). In six stanzas of alternate four- and three-stress lines, the poem has been called 'the culmination of Poe's lyric style' in his recurrent theme of the tragic loss of a beautiful and loved woman.

Annandale, see *Book of Annandale.*

Annapolis, town in Maryland, is the site of the U.S. Naval Academy, founded in 1845 and reorganized in 1850. There had been several temporary academies before its establishment, and during the Civil War it was located at Newport, Rhode Island. Although all midshipmen must pass examinations before entry, 4 are appointed annually by each senator, representative, and delegate in Congress; 5 by the Vice President; 4 from the District of Columbia; 15 by the President from the U.S. at large; 100 from the Navy and Marine Corps; and 50 from the reserve, by competitive examination.

Annapolis Convention, meeting held at Annapolis (Sept. 1786) by commissioners from New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, and Virginia, to discuss the problems of restricted interstate commerce under the Articles of Confederation. Hamilton, Dickinson, and Madison were among those who attended. The convention recommended the convening of the Federal Constitutional Convention (q.v.).

Annie Kilburn, novel by Howells (q.v.) published in 1888.

The heroine, having lived in Italy for 11 years, after her father's death returns to her girlhood home, Hatboro', Massachusetts. Aged 31, and refusing to be an old maid member of the local social set, she plunges into a career of indiscriminate philanthropy. Influenced by her aristocratic acquaintances, she plans an amateur theatrical production to raise funds for a Social Union to improve the conditions of the factory workers. Mr. Peck, the young Unitarian minister, points out the superficial and unjust effect the Union may have. Inspired by his arguments and by her new friend, Dr. Morrell, Annie interests herself in other charities, sending several sick children to the seashore. When one of the little girls dies, Annie is heartbroken, finding that she cannot meet the bereaved family even on the ground of a common grief. Mr. Peck, nearly discharged for his liberal views, is retained because of popular agitation in his favor, and during the bitter controversy his motherless daughter Idella lives with 'Aunt Annie,' whom she comes to love. When the minister is killed in a railroad accident, Annie adopts Idella, and plans to carry on the Social Union enterprise, which everyone else has dropped. Finally she marries her adviser and friend in these activities, Dr. Morrell.

Annual, see *Gift Book.*

Anthology Club, Boston literary society (*c.*1804–11), devoted to raising the standards of American literature. Its members included William Tudor and George Ticknor, who, with such contributing members as Daniel Webster, Allston, Bryant, and Joseph Story, wrote for the Club's *Monthly Anthology and Boston Review* (1803–11), predecessor of *The North American Review*. This journal of poetry, fiction, and criticism was liberal in theological matters, conservative in politics, and severe in literary reviews. Although the members displayed a scholarly interest in Americana, their distrust of democratic 'vulgarity' and fight against provincialism brought them into conflict with Noah Webster, and caused them to be generally condemned as pro-English. Their reading-room was the foundation of the Boston Athenaeum (q.v.).

ANTHONY, SUSAN B[ROWNELL] (1820–1906), was a leader in the movement for woman suffrage and an ardent lecturer on abolition and temperance. In 1872 her test of the 14th amendment as permitting women the right of franchise precipitated a trial that was a *cause célèbre*. With others she wrote the first three volumes of the *History of Woman Suffrage* (1881–7).

Anthony Adverse, romance by Hervey Allen (q.v.).

Antietam, creek in southern Pennsylvania and Maryland that flows into the

Potomac. On its banks (Sept. 17, 1862), Lee and his Confederate forces, assisted by Stonewall Jackson, met the Union army under McClellan. The Southern army was forced to retreat, and McClellan was later blamed for failing to pursue it.

Anti-Federalist Party, political organization led by Patrick Henry and George Clinton, was at first opposed to the ratification of the Constitution. Later it opposed Hamilton and his so-called monarchial Federalists, and advocated the principles of the Democratic Republican party, with which it was merged.

Anti-Masonic Party, political party whose organization was specifically prompted by the disappearance and supposed murder (1826) of William Morgan, a Mason of New York state who had antagonized his order by publishing secrets of Freemasonry (q.v.). Thurlow Weed joined the party in an unsuccessful attempt to overthrow the Albany Regency, and other leaders included Seward, Fillmore, and Daniel Webster. The movement spread to New England and the Middle West in a wave of antagonism toward secret societies, and local groups opposed the election of Masons to public office. In 1831 a national convention nominated William Wirt for the presidency, in a vain attempt to keep Clay, a Mason, from the National Republican nomination. Generally, however, the party acted in collaboration with the National Republicans, and merged with the Whigs (1834).

Anti-Monopolist, see *Donnelley, Ignatius.*

ANTIN, MARY (Mary Antin Grabau) (1881–), born in Russian Poland, was brought to Boston (1894), where she attended public school and began to write poems which were published in local papers. While still a child, she wrote in Yiddish *From Plotzk to Boston,* an impressionistic description of life inside the Jewish Pale in Poland and the emigration of her family, which she translated into English for publication in 1899. She married a Columbia professor, and attended college at Columbia and Barnard (1901–4), but left before receiving a degree, to become a settlement worker at Hale House in Boston. In 1912 she extended her early book to make *The Promised Land,* a full account of the customs and hardships of European Jews, as contrasted with the enlightenment and free opportunity they found in the U.S. A later work is *They Who Knock at Our Gates* (1914).

Antinomianism, any theory that holds that moral law as such, or the Old Testament legal system specifically, is not binding upon Christians. In America the Antinomian controversy was precipitated by Anne Hutchinson (q.v.), who was supported, in her protest against the legal system of the Massachusetts Puritans, by her brother-in-law John Wheelwright, Governor Vane, and other Bostonians. She was opposed by John Winthrop and by the people and clergy of the rural districts. The theological dispute became a political one, and, in 1637, when Winthrop was elected governor, Vane returned to England, and the Hutchinsons were banished to Rhode Island. Although the extreme emphasis upon the belief that Christians, saved by the sacrifice of Jesus and justified by their faith, have no obligation to regard moral law, often tends toward fanaticism, the New England Antinomians seem to compare favorably with their neighbors both in practical morality and in devotion.

Antioch College, small coeducational institution, founded in 1853 by Horace Mann, is located at Yellow Springs, Ohio. It is a progressive school whose best-known feature is the co-operative plan by which two students who hold a job together alternate in periods of full-time work and study. A statement of the college's principles was published as *Of, By, and For* (1938).

Anti-Rent War, conflict of the agrarian feudal system with industrial democracy, centered in the Van Rensselaer landholdings along the Hudson River. After the death (1839) of Stephen Van Rensselaer, his tenants sought to purchase the reservations in their leases, and thus to terminate their tenure. When they were refused, Anti-Rent Associations were organized, and popular indignation led to disorders throughout north-central New York state. In the Constitutional Convention of 1846, the Anti-Renters managed to insert a clause abolishing feudal tenures and prohibiting the leasing of agricultural lands for more than 12 years. The movement was in force until 1854. Cooper's *Littlepage Manuscripts* (q.v.) form a trilogy on the Anti-Rent War.

Anti-Saloon League, see *Temperance.*

Antislavery, see *Abolitionist.*

Ántonia Shimerda, heroine of *My Ántonia* (q.v.).

ANZA, JUAN BAUTISTA DE (1735–88), Spanish explorer who founded the mission and presidio of San Francisco (1776). He was governor of New Mexico (1777–88) and wrote valuable diaries of his journeys in California, New Mexico, and Arizona, which have been translated into English.

Apache Indians, group of tribes or bands related to the Navajo, characteristically unsettled, predatory, and ferocious. Ranging throughout the southern Plains and the Southwest, they were known to the Spaniards as early as 1540, and their guerrilla warfare terrorized these regions until the surrender of Geronimo (q.v.,1886). Arizona, popularly called the Apache State, includes the present reservations of the tribe.

APES, WILLIAM (1798–?), Indian of mixed Pequot and white parentage, who fought for the Americans in the War of 1812, became a Methodist preacher (1829), and successfully championed the rights of the Cape Cod Indians. He later disappeared, and the date of his death is unknown. His writings include *A Son of the Forest* (1829), *The Experiences of Five Christian Indians* (1833), and *Eulogy on King Philip* (1836).

Apostle of the Indies, see *Las Casas.*

Apostle to the Indians, see *Eliot, John.*

APPLESEED, JOHNNY, sobriquet of John Chapman (q.v.).

APPLETON, THOMAS GOLD (1812–84), brother-in-law of Longfellow and son of Nathan Appleton, a wealthy cotton manufacturer. He was a Boston virtuoso with great conversational ability, but his talent was thin and his poetry, appropriately entitled *Faded Leaves* (1872), was formal and uninspired. Such books of essays as *A Sheaf of Papers* (1875) are pleasant little works, as are *A Nile Journal* (1876) and other travel accounts.

Appleton's Journal (1869–81), weekly magazine that published, in addition to fiction, articles of current interest on science, politics, foreign events, and the arts. O.B.Bunce, who became editor in 1872, originated a series of pictures by prominent artists to accompany texts by such authors as T.B.Thorpe and J.E.Cooke. The magazine became a monthly in 1876, but its character continued with little change. The writers included Miss Woolson, Julian Hawthorne, Bryant, Mrs. Davis, G.C.Eggleston, R.H.Stoddard, Burroughs, and Brander Matthews. During its last three years the *Journal* declined, and was made up mainly of reprints from foreign magazines.

Apple-Tree Table, The, and Other Sketches, ten prose pieces by Melville (q.v.), collected in 1922. Originally published in *Harper's Magazine* and *Putnam's* (1850–56), the sketches range from the critical 'Hawthorne and His Mosses' to the title story, an allegory of the appearance of two beautiful living insects in the dead wood of an ancient piece of furniture.

Appomattox, small town in Virginia where Lee surrendered to Grant (April 9, 1865).

April Hopes, novel by Howells (q.v.), published in 1888.

The brief engagement of Dan Mavering and Alice Pasmer is broken when she fancies that her fiancé is secretly wooing another girl. Their differences are adjusted, but Alice's jealousy is again aroused, and the engagement once more broken. After a brief reconciliation, she leaves him to go abroad with her mother, because of a disagreement about plans for their future. The couple is finally united when Dan promises always to be frank with Alice in their life together.

April Twilights, poems by Willa Cather (q.v.).

Arbella, flagship of the small fleet that arrived at Salem, Massachusetts (June 12, 1630), carrying some 600–700 persons from England to found a Puritan colony. Unlike the Pilgrims, who arrived on the *Mayflower* in 1620, these founders of the Massachusetts Bay Colony desired to reform the Established Church, not to separate from it. John Winthrop left a record of the *Arbella's* voyage in his *Journal.*

Archer, ISABEL, heroine of *The Portrait of a Lady* (q.v.).

Archer, NEWLAND, character in *The Age of Innocence* (q.v.).

archy and mehitabel, humorous verses by Don Marquis (q.v.).

Archy Moore, novel by Richard Hildreth (q.v.).

Arcturus, see ***Boston Miscellany.***

ARGALL, Sir Samuel (*c.*1572–1626), English maritime adventurer, made his first visit to America in 1609, and during later voyages to Virginia and New England made a treaty with Powhatan, repulsed French and Dutch attempts at settlement, and aided the early English colonists. He was deputy governor of Virginia (1617–19), but was recalled because of autocratic and dishonest policies.

Argonne, World War offensive (Sept. 26–Nov. 11, 1918), a part of Foch's drive on the Germans from Metz to Lisle, in which the Meuse-Argonne section was assigned to the A.E.F., assisted by the French, in an attempt to push the enemy out of France and Belgium. Ludendorff strove to defend the line his army had achieved, so that the best possible terms of the now inevitable armistice might be obtained for Germany. The American army reached a point on the Meuse opposite Sedan on Nov. 6, and the final victorious Allied engagement was fought Nov. 8–11. About 1,200,000 American troops were used against 40 enemy divisions.

Aria da Capo, verse play by Edna St. Vincent Millay (q.v.).

Arikara Indians, Plains tribe (q.v.) devoted to bison hunting and maize agriculture, are considered a branch of the Pawnee. During the 19th century the Arikara lived in villages on the Missouri River in North Dakota, where, as early as 1700, French traders had established relations with them. Warfare with aggressive tribes and the ravages of smallpox nearly exterminated some of their villages, and they became allies of the Mandan and Hidatsa. In 1804, when Lewis and Clark visited them, they were disposed to be friendly toward the U.S., but later they became hostile. Their conflicts with the Americans were concluded by a treaty (1825) in which they acknowledged the supremacy of the U.S. government and agreed to trade only with American citizens. They are frequently spoken of, from the name of their reservation, as the Fort Barthold Indians. They appear in Neihardt's *Song of Hugh Glass* and *Song of the Indian Wars.*

Arkansas Traveler, The, folk tune traditionally played on the fiddle, which originated in the backwoods entertainments of the Old Southwest. It is accompanied by humorous dialogue concerned with the arrival of a traveler at a rural tavern, and his reception by the fiddling proprietor.

Arlington, village in Virginia, across the Potomac River from Washington, D.C. It was the site of an estate belonging to the Custis family, and passed from G.W.P. Custis to his son-in-law, Robert E. Lee. During the Civil War, the estate was occupied as a camp and hospital of the Union army, and in 1864 became a national military cemetery. Some 50,000 dead have been buried there, representing all the wars of the U.S., and the most famous monument is the Tomb of the Unknown Soldier, dedicated to the unidentified World War dead (1920).

ARMAND, pseudonym of Friedrich Strubberg (q.v.).

Arminianism, doctrine developed by the followers of Jacobus Arminius (1560–1609), a Dutch theologian and critic of Calvinism. These followers, frequently called Remonstrants, differed from orthodox Calvinists on the following points: (1) conditional rather than absolute predestination; (2) universal atonement; (3) regeneration requires the Holy Spirit; (4) divine grace needed for human effort, but it does not act irresistibly in man; (5) believers can resist sin, but may fall from grace. These liberal ideas were inclined toward a belief in the freedom of man's will. The Remonstrants later became an independent church, and among those who shared their views were the Methodists, against whose doctrines Jonathan Edwards was led to write his *Freedom of the Will,* defending the orthodox Calvinist view.

Armory Show, name given to the International Exhibition of painting and sculpture (1913), held at the Armory of the 69th Regiment in New York City. It was organized by the Association of American Painters and Sculptors, of which Arthur Davies was president, and was largely aided by the progressive group known as 'The Eight.' It introduced Fauvism, Cubism, Futurism, and Expressionism to the American public, and provided a great stimulus for American painting and sculpture, and art criticism.

ARMOUR, Philip Danforth (1832–1901), was a gold miner in California before he became a grocer and meat packer in the Middle West. During the Civil War he acquired a fortune as a purveyor of

pork to the Union army, and later he joined his brother, Herman Ossian Armour (1837–1901) in the Chicago firm of meat packers that helped make that city the national center of the industry. From 1875 Philip was head of Armour and Company, whose prominence he promoted by applying new methods of economic production, refrigeration, canning, and distribution. The Armours were also famous for banking operations and speculations in pork and wheat. Their firm was the subject of a federal investigation for the sale of impure meats during the Spanish-American War, and, though officially exonerated, was seriously affected by this 'embalmed beef' scandal, which led indirectly to the Pure Food and Drug Act. Philip's many philanthropic activities included the founding of the Armour Institute of Technology (1892).

ARNOLD, Benedict (1741–1801), was an outstanding general of the Revolutionary War, and, with Ethan Allen, effected the capture of Fort Ticonderoga (May 10, 1775). In the same year he made a courageous march through the Maine woods in an unsuccessful attempt to capture Quebec. He was prominent in other important engagements, and in 1778 was made commander of Philadelphia when that city was evacuated by the British. Because of difficulties with the civil authorities, he was sentenced to court-martial, and at this time began to make treasonable reports to Clinton, the British general. In 1780 he accepted the command of West Point, and plotted to deliver the garrison to André. When the plot failed, because of André's capture, Arnold fled to the British army, later leading devastating raids against Virginia and his native Connecticut. The latter part of his life was spent in England and New Brunswick. He appears as a character in Brackenridge's play, *The Death of General Montgomery*, dealing with the Quebec campaign, and in such plays on the affair of André as those by William Dunlap, Samuel Woodworth, W.W.Lord, and Clyde Fitch. Source materials concerning his expedition to Quebec were edited by Kenneth Roberts as *March to Quebec* (1938), and employed in the same author's novel, *Arundel* (1930).

ARNOLD, George (1834–65), poet and humorist, was a member of the Bohemian group that gathered at Pfaff's in New York. His writing, published under many pseudonyms, consisted largely of burlesques in verse and prose. Under the name McArone, he wrote a series of sketches for *Vanity Fair*, including the popular 'Life and Adventures of Jeff Davis.' After his death, Arnold's poems were collected and edited by William Winter in *Drift: A Sea-Shore Idyl and Other Poems* (1866) and *Poems, Grave and Gay* (1867), the two volumes being combined in the 1870 edition.

ARNOLD, Matthew (1822–88), English poet, critic, and educator, visited the U.S. in 1883 and again in 1886, at which times he delivered the lectures collected in *Discourses in America* (q.v.,1885) and gathered the impressions on which he based his essays in *Civilization in the United States* (q.v.,1888).

Aroostook 'War,' conflict (1839) between the people of Maine and New Brunswick over the unsettled boundary on the Aroostook River. President Van Buren was authorized by Congress to resist the British 'invasion' of Maine, but armed hostilities were averted when General Winfield Scott obtained a truce and joint occupation. The boundary was fixed in 1842 by the Webster-Ashburton Treaty.

ARP, Bill, pseudonym of Charles H. Smith (q. v.).

ARRINGTON, Alfred W. (1810–67), lawyer, spent much of his life on the frontier. Under the pseudonym Charles Summerfield, he wrote *The Desperadoes of the Southwest* (1847), vividly portraying the operation of lynch law, and *The Rangers and Regulators of Tanaha* (1856), a novel of the Southwest in transition.

Arrow and the Song, The, poem by Longfellow (q.v.), published in *The Belfry of Bruges and Other Poems* (1845). In three quatrains of four-stress iambic lines, the poet likens his art to the shooting of arrows into the air. As he finds an arrow imbedded in an oak, long after losing it, so it is with his song, which,

> . . . from beginning to end,
> I found again in the heart of a friend.

Arrow Maker, The, drama by Mary Austin (q.v.).

Arrowsmith, novel by Sinclair Lewis (q.v.), published in 1925, and awarded the Pulitzer Prize, which Lewis declined.

Martin Arrowsmith attends the Uni-

versity of Winnemac, in a Midwestern state, where he is influenced by Max Gottlieb, a sincere though sardonic bacteriologist. After graduation he marries Leora Tozer, a nurse. They settle in Wheatsylvania, South Dakota, but his medical practice there is so small that he is forced to accept a post in the health department of Nautilus, Iowa. Disillusioned by the charlatanry of his superior, Dr.Almus Pickerbaugh, Martin leaves this post to enter a fashionable Chicago clinic. After further disappointment, he joins Gottlieb at the McGurk Institute in New York, hoping to find in altruistic research the relief he desires from publicity-seeking and money-grabbing commercial medicine. Martin is now tolerably happy, disturbed only by the patronizing visits of Capitola McGurk, wife of the founder, and by the demand that he turn out results to make newspaper copy. His actual discovery of an 'X-principle,' an organism that preys on bacteria, is not publicized until a Frenchman has announced a similar discovery. When an epidemic breaks out in the West Indian island of St.Hubert, Gottlieb urges Martin to seize this opportunity to test the efficacy of his 'bacteriophage.' With Leora and Gustaf Sondelius, a titanic Swedish scientist, he goes to the stricken settlement. Leora and Sondelius die of the plague, after which Martin, instead of maintaining rigid scientific controls, administers the serum indiscriminately, thus destroying the results of his experiment. He returns to New York to marry a rich divorcée, whose social life interferes with his work. Finally, with Terry Wickett, an uncouth but conscientious chemist, he leaves the McGurk Institute and his wife, establishing himself on a Vermont farm to manufacture serum and pursue his research.

Arsenal at Springfield, The, poem by Longfellow (q.v.), published in *The Belfry of Bruges and Other Poems* (1845). In quatrains of alternately rimed pentameter lines, this 'peace poem' was inspired by a visit to the U.S. arsenal at Springfield, Massachusetts, and likens the stored cannon to the pipes of a huge organ which will play 'awful symphonies . . . when the death-angel touches those swift keys!' After recounting the horrors of war, the poet prophesies a time when Christ's message of peace will be heard, and 'the blasts of War's great organ' no longer sound.

Art of Courting, The, didactic novel by Ebenezer Bradford (q.v.).

ARTEMUS WARD, pseudonym of Charles Farrar Browne (q.v.).

ARTHUR, CHESTER ALAN (1830–86), 21st President of the U.S. (1881–5), was born in Vermont, practiced law in New York, and was appointed by Grant in 1871 as collector of the port, but removed by Hayes during his civil service reform (1878). He was the Vice President under Garfield, and came into office upon the President's assassination, with public question concerning his integrity. Despite his previous subserviency to the Republican machine, he supported the Civil Service Reform Bill (1883), and proved an honest and efficient administrator.

ARTHUR, TIMOTHY SHAY (1809–85), author of nearly 100 moral tales and tracts, including *Temperance Tales* (1843), *Agnes; or, The Possessed. A Revelation of Mesmerism* (1848), and *The Debtor's Daughter; or, Life and Its Changes* (1850). His novel, *Ten Nights in a Barroom and What I Saw There* (q.v.,1854), was dramatized with great success by William W. Pratt in 1858. Arthur was also the editor of several magazines devoted to the cause of temperance.

Arthur Mervyn; or, Memoirs of the Year 1793, romance by C.B.Brown (q.v.), published in two parts (1799–1800).

This complicated tale of romance, intrigue, and terror, set in Philadelphia, has for its main theme the career of Mervyn, a lad of 18, stricken with yellow fever during an epidemic, who is cured and befriended by a Dr. Stevens. The latter's friend Wortley accuses the youth of being an accomplice of the embezzler, Thomas Welbeck. To clear himself, Mervyn tells how he was driven from his father's farm by a malicious stepmother, and came to Philadelphia, where he was employed as an amanuensis by Welbeck, whose career had included theft, forgery, seduction, and murder. Appropriating an Italian manuscript that Welbeck had stolen, Mervyn settled on the farm of a Mr.Hadwin, soon falling in love with his daughter Eliza. In the manuscript he found $20,000 in bills. Later, in Philadelphia on an errand, he found the city in the grip of the plague, and fell into the hands of Welbeck, who, in trying to regain the money, caused Mervyn to burn it. It was after

this that he was found by Dr.Stevens. Satisfied by his account, the doctor cares for the youth and begins to train him in medicine. Mervyn visits the Hadwins, and discovers all dead of the plague except Eliza, whom he places in safety. Returning to the city, he finds Welbeck dying in prison. The repentant criminal asks Mervyn's aid in redressing his misdeeds, leading to the youth's receiving a large reward that makes him independent. During his education, he is friendly with the young widow, Mrs.Fielding, and, finding that his affection for Eliza is only 'brotherly,' he concludes by marrying Mrs.Fielding.

Articles of Confederation and Perpetual Union, constitution containing 13 articles, proposed by the Continental Congress in 1776 and adopted in 1778, establishing the government of the United States of America. The ratification by states was not completed until March 1781, when Maryland acceded after causing a lengthy delay over the disposition of Western lands. Each state remained sovereign and independent, retaining all rights not expressly granted to the federal government, and each state having one vote in the Congress. A majority vote was required for the enactment of any legislation. The consequent lack of adequate central authority to regulate commerce and raise revenue was the outstanding weakness of the Articles, and they were replaced as the supreme law of the U.S. by the Constitution (March 1789).

Artist of the Beautiful, The, allegorical tale by Hawthorne (q.v.), published in the *Democratic Review* (1844) and in *Mosses from an Old Manse* (1846).

Owen Warland, a youthful watchmaker obsessed with a desire to create something ideally beautiful, loves Annie Hovenden, daughter of his former master. She is unsympathetic toward his aspirations and his delicate nature, and Peter Hovenden and the blacksmith, Robert Danforth, both rough and unimaginative, oppress Owen and destroy his inspiration. Annie marries Danforth, and for a time Owen forsakes his dreams for grosser practical activities, but then devotes himself to creating a mechanical butterfly, fragile, lovely, and endowed with living qualities. When he exhibits his work to Annie and her family, Danforth and Hovenden seem to oppress the insect as they do its creator, while Annie prefers to admire her child. The child, who resembles his grandfather, rudely crushes the butterfly, but Owen looks on calmly: 'he had caught a far other butterfly than this.'

Arundel, novel by Kenneth Roberts (q.v.).

As I Lay Dying, stream-of-consciousness novel by Faulkner (q.v.), published in 1930.

Addie Bundren lies dying, and her children prepare to fulfil her desire to be buried in her native Jefferson (Mississippi), far from the crude back-country surroundings of her married life. Cash, whom she loves best because he is her son by a former lover, makes her coffin, and when she is dead the family unites to carry out the one wish of hers it has ever respected. Her simple-minded, whining husband, Anse, in a frenzied moment of belated grief, bores through the wood of her coffin for a last look, after which they set off in a mule-drawn wagon. Floods have washed out a bridge, and while fording the river they lose their team. Cash breaks his leg in rescuing his brother Jewel's horse, and, unknown to Jewel, Anse trades the horse for a new team of mules; at this the boy runs away, until duty to his mother brings him back. During the gruesome ten-day trek, although the body begins to decay, Cash rests on the coffin, his leg in a homemade cast that permanently cripples him. One night the idiot son Darl sets fire to a barn, and Jewel, helping to rescue the animals, is badly burned. In Jefferson Darl is seized by the authorities, and Cash taken to a doctor. Dewey Dell, their sister, buys a 'cure' for her pregnancy, paying the drug clerk by giving herself to him. Having fulfilled his duty to Addie, Anse 'borrows' money from Dewey Dell, buys a set of false teeth, and, 'kind of hangdog and proud, too,' returns with a strange woman, saying, 'Meet Mrs.Bundren.'

ASBURY, Francis (1745–1816), was sent to America in 1771 by John Wesley, founded there the system of circuit-riding, and became the first Bishop of the Methodist Episcopal Church to be consecrated in America (1784). His journal, which gives a vivid picture of contemporary frontier society and religion, was published in 1852.

ASCH, Shalom (1880–), Polish-born novelist, came to the U.S. in 1914,

and has since resided mainly in New York City. His books are written in Yiddish or German, and among those which have been translated into English are: *Uncle Moses*, *Chaim Lederer's Return*, and *Judge Not*, republished as *Three Novels* (1938); *The Mother* (1930, new translation 1937), the story of a Polish family in New York City; *Three Cities* (1933), a realistic trilogy of 20th-century Jewish life in Russia and Poland; *Salvation* (1934), a novel of Polish Jews of the 19th century; *The War Goes On* (1936), a plea for tolerance and humanity set in a story of Jews in post-war Germany; and *The Nazarene* (1939), a novel presenting Jesus as the last and greatest of the Jewish prophets. Asch has also written many plays in Yiddish, the best known being translated as *Mottke, the Thief* (1917, new translation 1935). *What I Believe* (1941) is a testament of faith.

NATHAN ASCH (1902–), his son, is also an author. Among his novels are *The Office* (1925), *Love in Chartres* (1927), and *Pay Day* (1930). *The Valley* (1935) is a book of stories, and *The Road* (1937) contains observations on a journey through the U.S.

Ash Wednesday, poem by T.S.Eliot (q.v.), was published in 1930 as a profession of his faith in the Church of England, and represented a sharp contrast to the despair which he had expressed in *The Waste Land*. By employing certain portions of Dante's *Divine Comedy* and a sermon of Lancelot Andrewes in the frame of reference within which this poem of doubt and faith is constructed, Eliot manages to objectify the emotions he desires to evoke, concerning the security, the emotional satisfaction, and the profound truth that he can find only by accepting the traditions of the Church.

ASHLEY, WILLIAM HENRY (*c.*1778–1838), Virginia-born fur trader, became lieutenant-governor of Missouri (1820) and sent expeditions up the Missouri River to the Yellowstone (1822–3), employing such 'mountain men' as Jedediah Smith, Fitzpatrick, Bridger, and Beckwourth. He was in Congress from 1831 to 1837. H.C.Dale's *The Ashley-Smith Explorations* (1918) is an account of his expeditions during the 1820's.

Aspern Papers, The, novelette by Henry James (q.v.), published in 1888.

An American editor with an enthusiasm for the works of Jeffrey Aspern, a romantic poet of the early 19th century, goes to Venice to acquire the letters that Aspern wrote to his mistress, a Miss Bordereau, whom he called 'Juliana.' Under an assumed name he rents a suite in the ancient palace where she lives in poverty and seclusion with her niece, Miss Tita. He finds that the old lady is shrewd and haughty, and accepts him as a lodger only to put aside money for the future of Miss Tita, a timid unattractive spinster much in awe of her aunt. During the months of his residence with them, the editor wins the friendship of Miss Tita, to whom he reveals his mission. Miss Bordereau falls ill and he attempts to rifle her desk, but she surprises him and frightens him off before suffering a relapse. Leaving Venice for a fortnight, he returns to find the old lady dead. Miss Tita welcomes him expectantly, and he realizes that she is in love with him. She says that she could give him the papers only if he were 'a relative,' and, alarmed at this proposal, he leaves her. At their next interview he learns that she has destroyed the letters. Her suffering has matured and ennobled her, and she dismisses him with great tact and restraint.

ASSACUMBUIT (*fl.*1696–1727), Abnaki chief who helped the French destroy Fort St.Johns, New Brunswick (1696), unsuccessfully attacked the English fort at Casco, Maine (1703), and further assisted the French (1704–5) in attempting to drive the English out of Newfoundland. He visited France (1706), where he was knighted by Louis XIV, after boasting that he had slain 140 of the king's enemies in New England. He returned to America the following year, and in 1708 was present at the French attack on Haverhill, Massachusetts.

Assignation, The, story by Poe (q.v.), published as 'The Visionary' in *Godey's Lady's Book* (1834) and under its present title in *Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque* (1840). It contains the poem 'To One in Paradise.'

Passing at midnight near the Bridge of Sighs in Venice, the narrator sees an acquaintance rescue the child of the young Marchesa Aphrodite from drowning, while her aged husband, Di Mentoni, an intriguing aristocrat, looks on indifferently. He overhears the Marchesa's whispered 'Thou hast conquered,' and her promise to meet the rescuer one hour after sunrise.

The latter, a young man known throughout Europe for his fabulous wealth and solitary nature, asks the narrator to join him, which he does, arriving shortly after sunrise. He finds his host in a mood of eccentric gaiety, desirous of exhibiting his objects of art and discoursing on his aesthetic theories and tastes. Among the paintings is a portrait of the Marchesa, and the visitor guesses his host's unfulfilled love for her. At the hour after sunrise a page arrives with news of the Marchesa's death; and he finds his host not asleep from an excess of wine, as he supposed, but dead by the same poison that killed his beloved.

Assiniboin Indians, northern Plains tribe, many of whom migrated in the 17th century from Dakota to Lake Winnipeg, and later to the upper Saskatchewan and Assiniboin Rivers. Their southern branch was almost constantly at war with the Dakota Indians, until it was gathered on a Montana reservation. The Assiniboin figure in Neihardt's *Song of Three Friends.*

ASTON, ANTHONY (*fl.*1703–30), the first known professional actor in America. Apparently in 1703, he arrived in Charleston, 'full of Shame, Poverty, Nakedness, and Hunger: I turned *Player* and *Poet* and wrote one Play on the Subject of the Country.' That play is lost, but a negligible work, *The Fool's Opera; or, The Taste of the Age* (*c.*1730), survives, and to it is prefixed the autobiographical sketch from which the above is quoted. This parody of *The Beggar's Opera* is the only extant work by this strolling English player.

ASTOR, JOHN JACOB (1763–1848), German-born merchant, emigrated to the U.S. in 1784. He arrived in New York practically penniless, but two years later had his own fur store there. The growth of his fur business was phenomenal, owing to his skill in bargaining and personal supervision of frontier posts. He had acquired a considerable fortune by 1800, when his ships called at London and Canton, and by 1817 his American Fur Company (founded 1808) enjoyed a virtual monopoly, with trading posts dotting the plains and mountains as far as Astoria (q.v.) on the Columbia River. His profits were invested in New York City real estate, which, together with his profiteering in government bonds during the War of 1812, made him the wealthiest man in the U.S. He retired from the fur trade (1834), and with his son William (1792–1875) occupied the rest of his life in managing the Astor holdings in New York, which later made William known as the city's 'landlord.' Part of the family fortune was contributed to found the Astor Library, later joined with the New York Public Library.

Astor Place riot, the result of a controversy between Edwin Forrest and the English actor Macready. Both actors were appearing in New York in 1849, and both had ardent followers, the elite favoring Macready, the rank and file, Forrest. To the latter the controversy was a struggle between democracy and Anglomania. On the evening of May 10, a mob led by E.Z.C.Judson, and possibly abetted by Forrest, invaded the Astor Place Opera House, where Macready was appearing in *Macbeth*, and in the ensuing shambles, which almost wrecked the structure, 22 persons were killed and 36 wounded. For his part in directing the attack, Judson was sentenced to a year in the penitentiary.

Astoria, now a town near the mouth of the Columbia River in northwest Oregon, was founded as Fort Clatsop (1805) by the Lewis and Clark expedition. In 1811 John Jacob Astor (q.v.) founded a fur trading post at the site, but during the War of 1812 the Astor interests were sold to the British. Astoria was restored to the U.S. in accordance with the Treaty of Ghent (1818). Irving's *Astoria* (1836, revised 1849) is a history of Astor's fur trade in the Northwest.

Asylum; The, or, Alonzo and Melissa, Gothic romance by Isaac Mitchell (q.v.), published in 1811. An almost verbatim plagiarism appeared the same year under the title *Alonzo and Melissa; or, the Unfeeling Father,* credited to Daniel Jackson (q.v.).

Melissa decides to marry Alonzo rather than Beauman, his rival, but her father, finding Alonzo to be penniless, parts the lovers, and confines Melissa in a haunted ruined castle. She escapes to Charleston, whence comes notice of her sudden death. In despair, Alonzo joins the navy, and is captured by the British during the Revolution, finally reaching home by way of France, where he is aided by Franklin. He goes to Charleston to weep at Melissa's grave, and in that city, keeping a tryst with a mysterious lady, discovers her to be Melissa. The mysterious actions in the

haunted castle are explained by the discovery that the ghosts are the elaborate device of a group of smugglers in the service of the British. Alonzo regains his estate, and the novel concludes: 'And now, reader of sensibility, indulge the pleasing sensations of thy bosom—for Alonzo and Melissa are MARRIED.'

Atala, romantic tale by Chateaubriand (q.v.), was published in France (1801) and translated for American publication by Caleb Bingham (1802). Originally intended to be an episode in *Les Natchez* (q.v.), it was later incorporated in *Le génie du christianisme*, and illustrates the Rousseauistic concept of primitive man as nobler and more sensitive than the hypercivilized products of European society.

Following a poetic description of the Mississippi region is the tale that the old Natchez Indian, Chactas, tells to René, a young French exile. Chactas was reared in St.Augustine by Lopez, a kind Spaniard, but returned to his tribe on reaching manhood, and during a war was captured by the Muscogulges. He escaped with Atala, a Christian girl supposed to be the daughter of the Muscogulges chief, and took refuge with M.Aubry, a pious hermit. Although Atala returned Chactas's love, she killed herself, explaining before she died that she was the daughter of Lopez and a Christian Indian wife of the Muscogulges chief, who made her vow to remain a virgin. An epilogue tells of the death of M.Aubry at the hands of the Cherokees, and how Chactas and René died during a French massacre of the Indians.

Athenaeum, see *Boston Athenaeum.*

ATHERTON, GERTRUDE [FRANKLIN] (1857–), California author, whose many novels include a series depicting life in her native state from Spanish times to the present, in such volumes as *The Californians* (1898, revised 1935); *Before the Gringo Came* (1894), revised as *The Splendid Idle Forties* (1902); *Rezánov* (1906); and *The Sisters-in-Law* (1921). She also wrote a fictional biography of Alexander Hamilton, *The Conqueror* (q.v., 1902), and several sophisticated society novels which include *Julia France and Her Times* (q.v., 1912) and the sensational *Black Oxen* (q.v.,1923). Other works include essays, short stories, and a history of California, while more recent novels have included fictional treatments of classical themes.

Atlanta, capital and largest city of Georgia, with a population in 1930 of 270,000, is noted as the railway center of the South (q.v.) which was nearly destroyed by Sherman's raid (1864). It is the site of Oglethorpe University and a federal penitentiary. Atlanta authors have included Joel Chandler Harris, W.E.B. DuBois, and Margaret Mitchell, and Gutzon Borglum's Stone Mountain memorial to Confederate leaders is located near the city. Its most famous paper is the *Atlanta Constitution* (1868–), to which Harris, F.L.Stanton, and H.W.Grady were contributors. Grady, a spokesman for the 'New South' during the Reconstruction, was the editor (1879–89).

Atlantic Magazine, see *New York Review and Athenaeum Magazine.*

Atlantic Monthly (1857–), magazine of literature, art, and politics, was founded at Boston by leading New England literary figures. It was named by Holmes, who contributed his *Autocrat of the Breakfast-Table*, and the editor for the first four years was Lowell, who wrote for the magazine himself and also obtained contributions from Emerson, Longfellow, Motley, Whittier, Mrs.Stowe, and other prominent authors. Although the editors denied that it was meant to be an organ of Bostonian or New England opinion, the *Atlantic* was generally accused of Brahminism and failure to recognize writers outside of its region. In politics they contended that it was 'the organ of no party or clique,' but it was considered to be strongly antislavery. It was, however, relatively uninterested in current affairs until purchased by the publishers Ticknor and Fields (1859), and edited by J.T. Fields (1861–71). During the Civil War there were articles on contemporary matters by Sumner, Carl Schurz, and others prominent in politics, and the *Atlantic* published such stirring verses as 'The Battle Hymn of the Republic,' 'Barbara Frietchie,' and the second series of *The Biglow Papers*, as well as *The Man Without a Country*. Under the editorship of Howells (1871–81), the magazine was less concerned with politics, and, without ceasing to be representative of New England, drew its authors from farther afield. Nevertheless, the greatest success of his editorship was the publication of Aldrich's

'Marjorie Daw.' He added several new departments, including book reviews and sections on science, music, and education. Although holding to European standards, he printed the works of few foreign authors. When Aldrich became editor (1881–90), he returned the magazine to its Brahmin traditions, and authors who were now frequent contributors included Henry James, Miss Jewett, Parkman, Miss Murfree, Fiske, and G.E.Woodberry. H.E. Scudder, as editor (1890–98), emphasized social subjects in such articles as those by Theodore Roosevelt on civil service; and his assistant, W.H.Page, who succeeded him (1898–9), brought the magazine even more into the national scene. Under Page and his successor, Bliss Perry (1899–1909), it became interested in muckraking, and contributors included J.J.Chapman, Theodore Roosevelt, Wilson, W.A.White, Jacob Riis, Booker T. Washington, and Cleveland. The later *Atlantic* has preserved its traditions as a conservative, high-minded literary journal, while continuing to evince a keen interest in contemporary society, economics, and politics.

Atlantic Souvenir, The (1826–32), annual gift book which published the work of such authors as Paulding, Lydia M. Child, Cooper, J.G.Percival, Irving, Bryant, and Halleck.

Atlantic states, see *Eastern states.*

Attaché, The; or Sam Slick in England, humorous sketches by T.C.Haliburton (q.v.), published in two series (1843,1844) and continuing the adventures of the Yankee peddler, Sam Slick, from *The Clockmaker* (q.v.).

ATTERLEY, JOSEPH, pseudonym of George Tucker (q.v.).

ATTUCKS, CRISPUS (*d.*1770), Indian-Negro half-breed of Framingham, Massachusetts, is noted as the first person slain in the Boston Massacre. Hence he is sometimes considered the first person killed in the American Revolution.

Auctioneer, The, play by Charles Klein (q.v.).

AUDUBON, JOHN JAMES (1785–1851), born in Haiti, was educated in France, where the reading of Rousseau and Buffon aroused his interest in nature study. After studying under the French artist, David, he settled in 1804 on his father's estate near Philadelphia, and, while engaged successively in business, taxidermy, the teaching of drawing, and decorating porcelains with bird and flower studies, he turned seriously to ornithology and drew pictures of the birds in Kentucky and the neighboring wilderness areas. The result of this work was the elephant folio edition of *The Birds of America* (q.v., 1827–38). The accompanying text, *Ornithological Biography* (5 vols.,1831–9), was written with William MacGillivray. Audubon's gift of narrative and his intimate knowledge of frontier life may more clearly be observed in the extracts from his work published as *Delineations of American Scenery and Character* (1926). In collaboration with the American naturalist, John Bachman (1790–1874), he began work on *Viviparous Quadrupeds of North America,* which was completed by his two sons (2 vols.,plates,1842–5; 3 vols., text,1846–54). Although he painted numerous portraits, Audubon's reputation rests upon his bird paintings, the scientific accuracy of which may be challenged but whose vitality and freshness of approach are unquestioned. His *Journal* was published in 1929 and his *Letters* in 1930.

Aunt Polly, character in *Tom Sawyer* (q.v.) and its sequels.

Aurora (1794–1835), anti-Federalist newspaper of Philadelphia that supplanted the *General Advertiser* (1790–94), and, under the editorship of B.F.Bache, was vigorously pro-French and opposed to Washington. The *Aurora* office was wrecked by veterans of Washington's army (1797), but after Bache's death the following year the same Jeffersonian policy was maintained by William Duane, who edited the paper until 1822, and after suspending it that year revived it in 1834. The Alien and Sedition Acts were partly aimed at the *Aurora.*

Aurora Community, see *Bethel.*

AUSLANDER, JOSEPH (1897–), author of several volumes of poetry, including *Sunrise Trumpets* (1924), *Cyclop's Eye* (1926), *Letters to Women* (1929), *Hell in Harness* (1929), and *Riders at the Gate* (1938), all of which are characterized by a rhetorical romanticism. He is married to Audrey Wurdemann.

AUSTIN, JANE GOODWIN (1831–94), Massachusetts author of books for children, whose works include *A Nameless*

Nobleman (1881), a romance dealing with a courtier of Louis XIV who comes to America, and the Pilgrim Books, including *Standish of Standish* (1889) and *Betty Alden* (1891).

AUSTIN, MARY [HUNTER] (1868–1934), born in Illinois, moved to California at the age of 18, and lived for many years on the desert, engaged in the study of Indian life. She was a member of the artist colony at Carmel, and later moved to Santa Fé, New Mexico, to teach and continue her study of the Indians. Her first book, *The Land of Little Rain* (q.v.,1903), is a sympathetic description of the beauties of Western desert life. After *The Basket Woman* (1904), a book of short stories, she wrote her first novel, *Isidro* (q.v., 1905), a romance of California in the days of the Franciscan missions and Mexican rule. *The Flock* (1906) is a factual but poetically conceived narrative of shepherd life. *Santa Lucia: A Common Story* (1908), her first writing concerned with contemporary city life, tells of the marriages of three women and their different adjustments to typical marital problems. *Lost Borders* (1909) is a collection of stories, while *A Woman of Genius* (1912) is a novel about a woman who attempts to escape from her restricted life through a stage career. This book has, according to the author, 'the social ideal of Taylorville, Ohianna, for the villain.' *The Green Bough* (1913) tells the story of Jesus' progress from the passion to the ascension, and *The Lovely Lady* (1913) is an idyl concerned with a boy's dreams, his disillusion, and his ultimate triumph. *The Ford* (q.v.,1917), a realistic novel of social injustice and reform, is set in central California. After *The Trail Book* (1918), stories for children dealing with primitive life, and *Outland* (1919), a mystical romance exalting the primitive values, she wrote *No.26 Jayne Street* (1920), a novel concerned with contemporary radical activities in New York City. The subjects of her other works are divided between life in the West and the position of the individual in an increasingly standardized machine culture. These include: *California, The Land of the Sun* (1914); *Love and the Soul Maker* (1914), a discussion of modern problems of love, marriage, and divorce; *The Young Woman Citizen* (1918) a handbook of politics for newly enfranchised women voters; *The American Rhythm* (1923), studies of American Indian songs, and original poems expressing the same spirit and movement; *Everyman's Genius* (1925), a 'personal research into the nature and processes of genius'; *A Small Town Man* (1925), a revision of *The Man Jesus* (1915), presenting the author's concept of Christ as a human being and great mystical genius; and *Children Sing in the Far West* (1928), Indian songs and original poems, written with the 'help' of the children in her own classes, and preserving their youthful approach. Mrs. Austin left a record of her sympathetic understanding of the West, her mystical attitude, and her personal rebellion for the freedom of the individual, in her distinguished autobiography, *Earth Horizon* (1932). She was also the author of three plays, of which the best known is *The Arrow Maker* (1911), a drama of Indian life dealing with a medicine woman's unhappiness in her sanctified position, and her revenge when a young chief rejects her love to marry another woman.

AUSTIN, STEPHEN FULLER (1793–1836), born in Virginia, inherited from his father a large grant of land in Texas, on which he founded the region's first American settlement (1822). By 1834 he had settled some thousand families, over whom he had complete power, and had founded the city of Austin, which he established as an important commercial center. Although he opposed the desire of the American settlers for independence from Mexico, he was sent as their representative to Mexico City, where his arguments led to his being imprisoned for a year. Returning in 1835, he found the colonists already in revolt against Santa Anna. After independence was established (1836) and Houston defeated Santa Anna, Austin was appointed Secretary of State of the Lone Star Republic, having lost his campaign for the presidency. He died shortly after taking office.

AUSTIN, WILLIAM (1778–1841), graduated from Harvard (1798), and wrote of the restraints of college life in his precocious Rousseauistic *Strictures on Harvard University*. While training in London for his later successful career as a Boston lawyer and legislator, he wrote the popular *Letters from London* (1804), which show British lawyers and statesmen as they appeared to a New England Republican. Of his five uncollected tales, the

most famous is 'Peter Rugg, the Missing Man' (1824). This tells of a Bostonian who set out to drive to the city in a blinding storm, and continued to seek it for 50 years, during which his galloping jet horse with its white feet became a common sight, always heralding an approaching storm. This fable passed into New England folklore, and has been used by Louise Imogen Guiney and Amy Lowell. It seems to foreshadow Hawthorne and may have influenced him, for he uses the figure of Peter Rugg in 'A Virtuoso's Collection.'

Authors' Club, New York literary society, founded in 1882 by Brander Matthews, Edward Eggleston, E.C.Stedman, R.W.Gilder, and others.

Authors' League of America, founded in 1912 to protect copyright material. Its present membership of 4,000 (1940) is divided among the American Dramatists' Guild, Artists' Guild, Authors' Guild, and Screen Writers' Guild.

Autobiography of Alice B. Toklas, personal narrative by Gertrude Stein (q.v.).

Autocrat of the Breakfast-Table, The, by Holmes (q.v.), was published in 1858, although the germ of the idea may be seen in two papers published (1831–2) in *The New England Magazine* and never reprinted. These rambling Addisonian essays describe imaginary table-talk at a Boston boarding-house, and include a number of the author's poems: 'The Deacon's Masterpiece,' 'The Chambered Nautilus' (qq.v.), 'Contentment,' 'The Living Temple,' and others. The conversation comprehends many topics, and expresses Holmes's urbane philosophy and his concept of the New England character, in an easy, genial, witty style. Among those who participate are the Autocrat; the Schoolmistress, to whom he becomes engaged; the Landlady and her Daughter; the Old Gentleman Opposite; the Divinity Student; and the Poor Relation. The success of the *Autocrat* led the author to write three other series: *The Professor at the Breakfast-Table* (1860), *The Poet at the Breakfast-Table* (1872), and *Over the Teacups* (1891).

Average Man, An, novel by Robert Grant (q.v.).

Avon's Harvest, blank verse narrative by E.A.Robinson (q.v.), the title poem of a volume published in 1921.

The friends of Avon, a reticent New York lawyer, have long known him to be suffering some mysterious, psychological disturbance. He now discloses to one of them the 20-years history of his complex of hatred, fear, and remorse. As a schoolboy, he conceived an unreasoning hatred for another student, whom by chance or some malign fate he constantly encountered. After a furious fistfight, in which Avon was the victor, his enemy announced, 'I shall know where you are until you die,' and left the school. Thus began Avon's long penance of haunting fear, which finally entered the realm of the supernatural. For years, on his birthday, he received unsigned cards repeating the ominous farewell. They met only once again, in Rome, but Avon was never free of the other's mental presence, except for a brief respite after the sinking of the *Titanic,* whose list of dead included the name of his enemy. Soon afterward, while camping in the Maine woods, Avon was visited by a ghostly presence, and he has been haunted ever since, always in fear of some unpredictable vengeance. Finishing his story, Avon quickly dismisses his friend, who the next morning hears of Avon's death in the locked room. The physician certifies the cause to have been 'a nightmare and an aneurism,' but says privately 'there was rather more than fear':

> If I were not a child
> Of science, I should say it was the devil.

Awake and Rehearse, stories by Louis Bromfield (q.v.).

Awake and Sing!, play by Clifford Odets (q.v.), produced and published in 1935.

The Bergers, a poor Jewish family living in the Bronx, struggle for life 'amidst petty conditions.' Myron, the father, is a sententious failure; Bessie, his wife and the imperious leader of the household, is obsessed with the need for bourgeois respectability. Jacob, Bessie's father, is a 'sentimental idealist with no power to turn ideal to action,' and he encourages the rebellion of his grandson, Ralph, against their environment. Ralph's sister, Hennie, a stenographer, is deserted by her lover after she becomes pregnant, and hurriedly marries her immigrant suitor, Sam Feinschreiber, who believes it is his child she bears. She is still sought by her first lover, proud and passionate Moe Axelrod, a one-legged war veteran whose bitter view of the world is in direct contrast

with that of Bessie's brother, Uncle Morty, the Bergers's rich relative. Ralph falls in love with the orphan girl Blanche, to the intense displeasure of his practical mother. His unhappiness and that of the others cause Jacob to commit suicide in order that Ralph may have his insurance. During this crisis, Hennie abandons Sam and her baby to elope with Moe. Ralph, realizing the significance of his grandfather's teachings and the selfishness of his love for Blanche, gives the money to the family and resolves to devote himself to radical agitation for an improved order of society.

Awakening, THE GREAT, see *Great Awakening.*

Awakening of Helena Richie, The, novel by Margaret Deland (q.v.).

Awkward Age, The, novel by Henry James (q.v.), published in 1899.

The story is concerned with the 'awkward age' in the life of Nanda Brookenham, during the period just following her emergence from childhood segregation to the brilliant atmosphere of her mother's London salon. The girl and her mother are both in love with Vanderbank, a young government official, although Nanda is also fond of Mitchett, who wishes to marry her. Mrs.Brookenham's friend, the Duchess, wants Mitchett to marry her fragile, innocent niece, Aggie, and the two older women wage a diplomatic battle over the match, using as weapons Mrs. Brookenham's relations with Vanderbank and the Duchess's liaison with Lord Petherton. Nanda, having learned of the world through such friends as the unhappily married Tishy Grendon, has a mind of her own during these maneuvers. Mr.Longdon, just re-entering London society after a 30-years seclusion, sees in Nanda a resemblance to her grandmother, whom he once loved, and, interesting himself in her affairs, is converted to her modern point of view. He realizes that, though she wants Vanderbank, the young man is not anxious to marry her, because of her sophistication and frank display of affection. He thereupon gives her a large dowry as bait, but even then the ambitious Vanderbank fails to propose. Mitchett, finally discouraged, marries Aggie, and Mrs.Brookenham overplays her hand by demanding Nanda's return from a visit at Longdon's home. This alienates Vanderbank, and Nanda establishes herself in a separate suite at home. Longdon confers with Mitchett, who has found his marriage unsatisfactory, and they agree that they are Nanda's only remaining friends. They decide, and Nanda later agrees, that the best solution of the problem is for her to live permanently at Longdon's country place, since he is the one who has attained a truly modern point of view, and can meet her on her own terms.

Axe-Helve, The, blank verse dramatic narrative by Robert Frost (q.v.), published in *New Hampshire* (1923).

The poet, chopping wood, is interrupted by a neighboring farmer, the Frenchman Baptiste, who objects to his using an inferior machine-made axe-helve. He promises him a good hickory helve of his own cutting, and that evening the poet visits Baptiste's home, meeting his sociable wife, who speaks no English. He talks with the earnest workman, who proves to be a conscientious laborer who knows 'how to make a short job long for love of it,' and insists that his children shall not attend school, asserting the superiority of his own proud independence and appreciation of such essential things as the materials of a properly durable axe-helve.

Azarian, tale by Harriet Spofford (q.v.).

B

Babbalanja, character in *Mardi* (q.v.).

BABBITT, Irving (1865–1933), born in Ohio, graduated from Harvard (1889), and after study abroad became a professor of Romance languages at Williams (1893–4) and of French at Harvard (1894–1933). He was an outstanding scholar and as a leader of the new Humanist movement (q.v.) was a trenchant critic of romanticism and its arch-apostle, Rousseau. Among the books in which he set forth his humanist doctrines are: *Literature and the American College* (1908), a plea for the humanities; *The New Laokoön* (1910), on the romantic confusion in the arts; *Rousseau and Romanticism* (1919); *Democracy and Leadership* (1924), a philosophy of modern civilization; and *On Being Creative* (1932), a discussion of classic theories of imitation and romantic concepts of spontaneity. *Spanish Character* (1940), a posthumous collection of essays, contains a bibliography and index to his works.

Babbitt, novel by Sinclair Lewis (q.v.), published in 1922.

George Folansbee Babbitt, an enterprising, moral, stereotyped, and prosperous real-estate broker of the typical midwestern city of Zenith, has been trained to believe in the virtues of home life, the Republican party, and the middle-class conventions. Suddenly tiring of his life, he takes a vacation with Paul Riesling, an artist who has been forced into the role of a businessman. His return to Zenith is at first difficult, but he shortly discovers pleasure in campaigning for a friend for mayor, in several profitable real-estate deals, in the vice-presidency of the Boosters' Club, and in speeches before prominent local gatherings. During his wife's absence, he again tries to find an outlet from Zenith standards. After an unsuccessful and lonely trip to Maine, he enters into a liaison with Mrs.Tanis Judique, an attractive widow who fails to be the 'fairy child' of his dreams when he sees her in clear light in relation to her group of nondescript would-be Bohemians, 'The Bunch.' He next turns to liberalism, when impressed by Seneca Doane, a socialist lawyer. For this added heresy he is ostracized by all right-minded citizens. He is not again able to return to Zenith's outlook until his wife Myra is suddenly taken ill, and he once more feels a spiritual union with her and a sympathy with his city's point of view.

BACHE, Benjamin Franklin (1769–98), grandson of Franklin, at the age of 21 founded the Philadelphia *General Advertiser* (later the *Aurora,* q.v.) and in its columns bitterly attacked Washington, Adams, and Federalist policies.

BACHELLER, Irving [Addison] (1859–), author of popular romances, which include: *Eben Holden* (q.v.,1900), a novel concerned with the homely hired man who is its title character; *D'ri and I* (1901), a novel of the War of 1812; *Silas Strong* (1906); *A Man for the Ages* (1919), a story of Lincoln; and *A Candle in the Wilderness* (1930), concerned with early New England. He has written two autobiographical works, *Opinions of a Cheerful Yankee* (1926) and *Coming Up the Road* (1928).

Back Bay, reclaimed western addition of the city of Boston, on the south bank of the Charles River. Since the mid-19th century, it has been a fashionable residential district. *The Rise of Silas Lapham* is one of the many novels set in the Back Bay.

BACKUS, Isaac (1724–1806), Baptist preacher of Connecticut, who led his church in its struggle for freedom of worship. His *History of New England, with Particular Reference to the Denomination of Christians Called Baptists* (3 vols., 1777–96) is a monument of early historical scholarship, despite its bias and turgidity. The work is partially based on materials gathered by John Callender.

Backward Glance O'er Travel'd Roads, A, Whitman's prose epilogue to *Leaves of Grass* (q.v.), which served as a preface to *November Boughs* (1888), and first appeared in the 1889 edition of the collected volume.

Leaves of Grass, according to the essay, is intended 'to articulate . . . uncompromisingly my own physical, emotional, moral, intellectual, and aesthetic Personality, in the midst of, and tallying, the momentous spirit and facts of . . . current America—and to exploit that Personality, identified with place and date, in a far more candid and comprehensive sense

than any hitherto poem or book.' The author chooses to abandon conventional themes, ornamentation, euphemism, and rime, in order 'to conform with and build on the concrete realities and theories of the universe furnish'd by science,' as well as to root his 'influences in the emotional and imaginative action of the modern time.' Although his purpose is to write 'poems of realities and science and of the democratic average and basic equality,' he points out his literary influences, which might, however, have come to naught except for the Civil War, which gave a final reason for being to 'an autochthonic and passionate song.'

BACON, DELIA SALTER (1811–59), was among the first to propound the theory that Shakespeare's plays were written by a group headed by Bacon and including Ralegh and Spenser, and that a great system of thought was concealed in them by ciphers. Emerson and Carlyle encouraged her for a time, and Hawthorne wrote an introduction to her *Philosophy of the Plays of Shakspere Unfolded* (1857). She also wrote such fiction as *Tales of the Puritans* (1831) and *The Bride of Fort Edward, Founded on an Incident of the Revolution* (1839), a closet drama. She was violently insane during the last two years of her life. Hawthorne writes of her in *Our Old Home.*

BACON, LEONARD (1887–), author of satirical poetry, whose books include *Ph.D.'s* (1925), *Animula Vagula* (1926), *Guinea Fowl and Other Poultry* (1927), *The Legend of Quincibald* (1928), *The Furioso* (1932), *Voyage of Autoleon: A Fantastic Epic* (1935), *Goose on the Capitol* (1936), *Rhyme and Punishment* (1936), and *Bullinger Bound* (1938). He was professor of English at the University of California (1910–23). *Semi-Centennial* (1939) is an autobiography.

BACON, NATHANIEL, see *Bacon's Rebellion.*

BACON, PEGGY (1895–), caricaturist noted for her paintings, etchings, and drawings which satirize famous American persons and types. Her books include *Off With Their Heads* (1934) and *Cat-Calls* (1935).

Bacon's Rebellion, was led by Nathaniel Bacon (1647–76), a Virginia planter who caused the people to take up arms (1676), ostensibly against the Indians, but actually to curb the dictatorial policy of Sir William Berkeley (q.v.). Berkeley made some concessions but did not keep faith with the insurgents, and the rebellion ended for want of a leader at Bacon's sudden death by fever. A stately epitaph was written for him 'by his man,' and was published after being found among the Burwell Papers (q.v.). Bacon figures in several historical romances, including one by W.A.Carruthers.

Bad Lands, name applied to severely eroded, arid areas in various desert regions of the western U.S., particularly to the area of this character in southwestern South Dakota, east of the Black Hills.

BAGBY, GEORGE WILLIAM (1828–83), Virginia journalist, lecturer, and author of humorous local-color sketches. He edited the *Southern Literary Messenger* (1860–64), but is best remembered for his sketches of ante-bellum Virginia, with their sentimental picture of a past era, enlivened by a realistic homely humor. 'The Old Virginia Gentleman' and 'Jud Browning's Account of Rubenstein's Playing' are among the best of his sketches. A selected edition was published by T.N.Page (1910).

BAILEY, JAMES MONTGOMERY (1841–94), Civil War journalist known as the 'Danbury News Man,' since his humorous articles appeared in his newspaper published at Danbury, Connecticut. He is often considered the father of the humorous newspaper column, and his witty comments on current events were collected in several popular books.

BAKER, BENJAMIN A. (1818–90), New York playwright whose melodrama, *A Glance at New York* (1848), created a new theatrical genre by its realistic portrayal of Mose, the volunteer fireman and type of the Bowery boy. He wrote several similar plays.

BAKER, GEORGE PIERCE (1866–1935), was instrumental in encouraging and inspiring many little theaters, stage designers, directors, and dramatists. His '47 Workshop' at Harvard (1905–25) served as a laboratory for the staging of plays by such students as Edward Sheldon, Eugene O'Neill, Philip Barry, John Dos Passos, S.N.Behrman, Sidney Howard, and Thomas Wolfe. After 1925 he continued his work at Yale. Baker is the pro-

totype of Professor Hatcher in Wolfe's *Of Time and the River.*

BAKER, RAY STANNARD (1870–), a leading contributor to *McClure's Magazine* during its muckraking period, became an intimate of President Wilson and was director of the press at the Versailles Conference. His books include: *Woodrow Wilson and World Settlement* (3 vols.,1922); with W.E.Dodd, an edition of the President's public papers (6 vols.,1925–6); and *Woodrow Wilson: Life and Letters* (8 vols., 1927–39), the last two volumes of which were awarded the 1940 Pulitzer Prize in biography. Under the pseudonym David Grayson, he has written six volumes of familiar essays, the best known being *Adventures in Contentment* (1907).

BAKER, WILLIAM MUMFORD (1825–83), Presbyterian minister in Texas, Ohio, and Massachusetts, who was best known for his novel, *Inside: A Chronicle of Secession* (1866), published under the pseudonym George F. Harrington, and actually an autobiographical account of his life in the South during the War. His other books include: *The New Timothy* (1870); *Carter Quarterman* (1876); *The Virginians in Texas* (1878); *A Year Worth Living* (1878); and *His Majesty: Myself* (1880).

Baker's Blue-Jay Yarn, see *Tramp Abroad, A.*

Balance, The, or New York Journal, see *Hudson Balance.*

BALBOA, VASCO NUÑEZ DE (1475–1519?), Spanish conquistador, in 1510 joined the expedition to Darien as a stowaway, to escape his creditors. Upon arriving, Balboa took the command from Enciso, crossed the Isthmus, and discovered the Pacific Ocean (Sept. 25 or 26, 1513). The complaints of Enciso turned the Spanish court against Balboa, who had been appointed Adelantado (admiral) of the Pacific and governor of Panama. A new governor, Pedro Arias de Ávila, was named, and, just as Balboa was preparing an expedition to the land of the Incas, he was seized, tried on a charge of treason, and executed.

BALDWIN, JOSEPH GLOVER (1815–64), jurist of the Old Southwest, lived in Alabama and Mississippi during the 1830's and '40's, when speculation was rampant, politics turbulent, and law unsettled. Later he settled in California, but his earlier surroundings are described in *The Flush Times of Alabama and Mississippi* (q.v.,1853), a volume of sketches composed at leisure moments. He also wrote *Party Leaders* (1855), serious studies of Jefferson, Hamilton, Jackson, Clay, and Randolph.

BALESTIER, [CHARLES] WOLCOTT (1861–91), author of several novels and short stories, is best known for his collaboration with his brother-in-law Kipling on *The Naulahka* (1892), a novel about a California speculator in India, to which Balestier contributed the American chapters. A brief residence in Colorado (1885) led to his writing *Benefits Forgot* (1892), a novel of the Rocky Mountain mining camps.

Balisand, novel by Joseph Hergesheimer (q.v.).

Ballad, narrative poem of communal origin, transmitted by a process of oral tradition among people usually free from literary influences. Folk ballads frequently deal with common people, are presented with simplicity, have little description, and depend mainly on dialogue and incremental repetition, i.e., structural repetitions of a preceding stanza with some variation to advance the story. Metrically, the ballad is usually composed of long seven-stress lines, conventionally printed as two lines of four and three stresses each, riming *abcb*. Among the classifications of American folk ballads are those dealing with occupations ('Casey Jones' of the railroad workers, 'Git Along, Little Dogies' of the cowboys, and 'The Jam on Gerry's Rock' of the lumberjacks); with regions ('The Roving Gambler' of the Kentucky and Tennessee mountains, 'The Buffalo Skinners' of the Western plains, and 'The Erie Canal Ballad'); with wars ('Yankee Doodle' of the Revolution, and 'The Battle of Shiloh Hill' of the Civil War); with racial groups ('John Henry' of the Negroes); and with desperadoes ('Sam Bass' and 'Billy the Kid'). Many of the ballads are of English origin, some of these surviving almost intact in the Southern mountains. Variations of the most popular ballads constitute cycles or groups, for example those concerned with Jesse James, Frankie and Johnny, John Henry, Casey Jones, and Yankee Doodle (qq.v.). The many collections of American folk ballads include Louise Pound's *American Ballads and Songs* (1922), Sandburg's *American Song Bag* (1927), Lomax's

American Ballads and Folk Songs (1934), and Hudson's *Folksongs of Mississippi* (1936). Among literary adaptations of the ballad form are Longfellow's 'Wreck of the Hesperus,' Hay's *Pike County Ballads*, Whittier's 'Skipper Ireson's Ride,' Harte's 'The Heathen Chinee,' and Lindsay's 'The Chinese Nightingale.'

Balloon Hoax, The, story by Poe (q.v.), published in the New York *Sun* (April 13, 1844) in the guise of an actual article of news. According to the author, the '*jeu d'ésprit* . . . subserved the purpose of creating indigestible aliment for the *quidnuncs* during the few hours intervening between a couple of the Charleston mails.' It is an account of a fictitious crossing of the Atlantic in 75 hours (April 6–9) by eight men in 'Mr. Monck Mason's Flying Machine . . . the Steering Balloon "Victoria." ' The balloon, inflated with coal gas, is supposed to have started from a place in North Wales, headed out over the ocean, and then been caught in a powerful gale that lasted two days, driving the craft at great speed until it was landed on Sullivan's Island, South Carolina.

BALLOU, ADIN (1803–90), founder of the Hopedale Community (q.v.), was originally a believer in Universalism, but withdrew to expound the doctrine of Restorationism, that all men will be ultimately restored to happiness in the future life. He published a magazine, the *Independent Messenger* (1831–9), and wrote such books as *Practical Christian Socialism* (1854) and *Primitive Christianity and Its Corruptions* (1870).

BALLOU, HOSEA (1771–1852), Boston clergyman, was the foremost exponent of Universalism. His works include *Notes on the Parables* (1804), *A Treatise on the Atonement* (1805), and *A Series of Letters in Defense of Divine Revelation* (1816), a correspondence with Abner Kneeland. In addition to editing collections, he composed almost 200 hymns.

MATURIN MURRAY BALLOU (1820–95), his son, was a Boston publisher, editor, and author, noted for his production of popular literature for the masses. His journals included *Flag of Our Union*, *Gleason's Pictorial Drawing Room Companion*, *Ballou's Dollar Monthly*, and the *Boston Globe*. He was the first American editor to demand a set form of construction and type of plot, and as such was the forerunner of the dime novel publishers. In addition to many volumes of sensational fiction, most of them issued under the pseudonym Lieutenant Murray, he wrote several travel books.

BALTIMORE, LORD, see *Calvert, George*.

Baltimore, largest city in Maryland, situated on the Patapsco River near Chesapeake Bay. In 1930 it had a population of 800,000, of whom many were Negroes and recent immigrants. The present city, founded in 1729, soon became an important shipping point for agricultural products, and later served as a port for privateers and clipper ships. The Continental Congress met for a time in Baltimore (1776), and Fort McHenry is famous for its role in the composition of *The Star-Spangled Banner*. A great fire partially destroyed the city (1904), which since its reconstruction has been a leading industrial center. Educational institutions include Johns Hopkins University, Peabody Institute, and the University of Maryland. Among Baltimore authors have been Lanier, Tabb, Lizette W. Reese, F.H.Smith, and H.L.Mencken.

Baltimore *Sun* (1837–), nonpartisan penny daily, which, during the Mexican War, attracted wide attention by publishing news of the capture of Veracruz before the War Department issued the information. Its allegiance, like that of Maryland, was divided during the Civil War, since the paper favored the South but opposed secession. It was active at the end of the century in fighting the local Democratic machine. In 1910 began the publication of a separate edition, *The Evening Sun*, and during 1918–19 an overseas edition was issued for the troops in France. Since 1924 the *Sun* has had the exclusive privilege of printing the *Manchester Guardian's* news in the U.S. Among those who have been associated with the paper is H.L.Mencken, who was on the staff of the *Sun* (1906–10), and on that of *The Evening Sun* (1910–16,1918–).

BANCROFT, GEORGE (1800–91), Massachusetts statesman and scholar, while holding various government posts obtained material for his monumental *History of the United States* (1834–76). As Secretary of Navy under Polk, he was instrumental in establishing Annapolis as the U.S.Naval Academy, and as Secretary of War *pro tem* (May 1845) he sent General Taylor across the Texas border, pre-

cipitating war with Mexico. His standing order to Sloat to occupy California ports in case of war led to the early occupation of that territory. Bancroft was minister to Great Britain (1846–9) and minister to Germany (1867–74). His ten-volume *History* was revised in 1876 to six volumes. A final revision (6 volumes, 1883–5), includes the *History of the Formation of the Constitution* (1882). Although the work is now outmoded, it is still important as an example of the aggressive yet spiritual nationalism of America's mid-19th century. Some of Bancroft's many orations and essays are collected in *Literary and Historical Miscellanies* (1855).

BANCROFT, Hubert Howe (1832–1918), born in Ohio, followed his father to California (1852), where he engaged in mining and business, and finally became a publisher in San Francisco. In 1859 he began to collect a library of source materials, later donated to the University of California, on which he based his *History of the Pacific States* (28 vols.,1871–90), *History of the Native Races* (5 vols.), and *Chronicles of the Builders* (7 vols.), which made him famous as the first great historical scholar of the West Coast. This long series also included six volumes of historical essays, of which the most celebrated are *California Pastoral* (1888) and *California Inter Pocula* (1888). Although all these books bear Bancroft's name on the title pages, he was the author of only the last two and two others, the rest being by 12 writers under his editorial supervision. Among his later works are: *Resources of Mexico* (1893), *The New Pacific* (1900), *The Book of Wealth* (1909–10), *Retrospection, Political and Personal* (1910), and *In These Latter Days* (1917).

BANDELIER, Adolph Francis Alphonse (1840–1914), pioneer American archaeologist, was born in Switzerland and brought to the U.S. in 1848. He published many works concerned with his research among the remains of ancient man in Mexico, New Mexico, Peru, and Bolivia, and these are important sources for modern investigators. He is more widely known for his popular books, *The Delight Makers* (1890), a story of the prehistoric Pueblo Indians of New Mexico and their betrayal to the Navajos by their ruling class, the Delight Makers; and *The Gilded Man* (1893), concerned with the El Dorado legend.

BANGS, John Kendrick (1862–1922), humorous lecturer, editor of *Puck* (1904–5) and other humorous magazines, whose ephemeral writings were of great variety. He is best known for several collections of extravagantly farcical tales, *Tiddledywink Tales* (1891), *The Idiot* (1895), *Mr.Bonaparte of Corsica* (1895), and *A Houseboat on the Styx* (1896). In the last he gathers a company of such diverse characters as Shakespeare, Delilah, Lucrezia Borgia, and Artemus Ward, and lets his mind play freely with the absurd situations that ensue. The book is illustrated by his friend Peter Newell, of whom he wrote a biographical sketch. *The Pursuit of the Houseboat* (1897) is a sequel. With F.D.Sherman he wrote *New Waggings of Old Tales* (1888).

Bank of the United States, first established by the Federalists (1791) as a part of Hamilton's financial system, to provide a market for government bonds and a depository for government funds. In 1811 the Republicans refused to extend its 20-year charter, on the ground that such a bank was extra-constitutional. When the War of 1812 left government finances in a chaotic state, a new charter was granted (1816) for another 20 years, and, under Nicholas Biddle, the bank was managed in substantially the same manner as before. Andrew Jackson, in his 1832 campaign for re-election, militated against the bank as a tool of eastern financiers. On assuming office, he removed the U.S. deposits to state banks, and, under Van Buren, the independent treasury system was established.

BANNING, Margaret Culkin (1891–), Minnesota author of popular novels dealing with contemporary problems of love, marriage, and parenthood. Among these are: *This Marrying* (1920); *Country Club People* (1923); *The Women of the Family* (1926); *Mixed Marriage* (1930); and *Too Young to Marry* (1938).

BANNISTER, Nathaniel Harrington (1813–47), prolific Southern dramatist whose works are mostly historical melodramas. His most successful play was *Putnam* (1844), dealing with the Revolutionary War. *England's Iron Days* (1837) is typical of his other work, being set in a period that has been described as 'when Normans and Saxons were at odds with each other and certainly with history.'

Baptists, followers of the religious doctrine that baptism should be administered only to believers. The modern Baptist movement originated in England (1608), but soon divided into two groups: the General Baptists, who hold to the Arminian belief that Christ's atonement is not limited to the elect; and the Particular Baptists, who follow Calvinistic doctrine in contending that atonement is individual. The first Baptists in America, of the Particular belief, established a church in Rhode Island (1639) under the leadership of Roger Williams, although Williams soon withdrew. The next group, in the same colony, was led by John Clarke and Anne Hutchinson. Because of their opposition to child baptism, the Baptists were persecuted in New England, although they flourished in Pennsylvania and throughout the South. The strict Calvinistic belief of the Particular Baptists in the South has led to their being called Hard Shell Baptists. There have been various schisms, occasioned by such events as the Great Awakening and the Civil War, but the Baptists have grown in number, and there are now some 8,000,000 members in various U.S. churches, 3,000,000 of whom are Negroes. The Baptists are distinguished for founding such educational institutions as Colgate and Brown, and for such missionary work as that of Adoniram Judson.

Barataria, see Lafitte.

Barbara Frietchie, poem by Whittier (q.v.) in four-stress couplets, published in *In War Time and Other Poems* (1864). It relates a supposedly historic incident of Stonewall Jackson's entry into Frederick, Maryland. The 90-year-old heroine raises the Stars and Stripes:

> Shoot if you must, this old gray head,
> But spare your country's flag, she said.

Her courage impresses the general, who orders his troops to march on. Barbara Frietchie is the subject of a play (1899) by Clyde Fitch, who makes her a youthful heroine.

Barbary Coast, popular name for a quarter of San Francisco which was long notorious for its dance halls, gambling houses, and other criminal resorts. It was largely destroyed by the earthquake and fire of 1906.

Barbary Wars, see *Tripolitan War.*

Bare and Ye Cubb, see *Beare and Ye Club.*

Barefoot Boy, The, poem in tetrameter couplets by Whittier (q.v.), collected in *The Panorama* (1856). It recounts the adventures of rural boyhood, with a nostalgic sense of their innocent sensuous enjoyments.

BARKER, JAMES NELSON (1784–1858), Philadelphia dramatist, five of whose ten plays survive in print. His contemporary prominence was due to his concern with American subjects. *Tears and Smiles* (1807) is a comedy of manners, evidently suggested by *The Contrast; The Indian Princess; or, La Belle Sauvage* (q.v.,1808) deals with Pocahontas; and *Superstition* (q.v.,1824), considered his best play, deals with the regicide Goffe in early New England. His adaptations included one of Scott's *Marmion* (1812), and *How to Try a Lover* (q.v.,1817), a stage version of a French picaresque novel.

BARLOW, JOEL (1754–1812), one of the Connecticut Wits (q.v.), graduated from Yale (1778), taught school, managed a business, preached, entered military service, was admitted to the bar (1786), contributed to *The Anarchiad* (q.v.), and wrote a new version of the Psalms, all of which occupations were incidental to his lifelong ambition to write the great American epic. This work, *The Vision of Columbus* (1787), was finally revised as *The Columbiad* (q.v.,1807), which he considered his masterpiece. He went to Europe (1788) and during 17 years of residence abroad changed from a conservative Connecticut Puritan to a cosmopolitan Democrat. As a reward for *A Letter to the National Convention of France* (1792) he was made a French citizen. Inspired by his friend Paine, he next wrote his *Advice to the Privileged Orders* (1792), in which he sets forth the thesis that the state is the responsible agent of all society rather than of any one class, and that its duty is to safeguard the social heritage as a common asset held in trust for future generations. It was during this residence in France that Barlow wrote his charming little poem *Hasty Pudding* (q.v.,1796), for which he is best remembered. In 1795 he was appointed consul to Algiers, where he effected important treaties. Upon his return to the U.S. (1805) he published a *Prospectus of a National Institution to be Established in the United States* for re-

search and instruction in the arts and sciences. He lived the quiet life of a scholar for six years, and in 1811 was appointed minister to France. He died near Cracow, Poland, on his way to meet Napoleon, with whom he hoped to consummate a treaty.

BARNARD, FREDERICK AUGUSTUS PORTER (1809–89), president of Columbia University (1864–89), was an advanced thinker on American educational problems, and among other innovations advocated the elective system and equal advantages for women in higher education. Barnard College, the women's school associated with Columbia, is named for him.

BARNARD, GEORGE GREY (1863–1938), Chicago sculptor, studied in France, where he achieved fame for his *Two Natures* (1894), an allegory of dual personality. Among his works are the colossal *Hewer* in Cairo, Illinois; the two large groups of nude figures symbolizing *The Burden of Life* and *Brotherly Love and Work*, which flank the entrance of the Pennsylvania state capitol; the gaunt, homespun *Lincoln* in Cincinnati; and an unfinished memorial arch to World War soldiers. Although he has a tendency to moralize in stone, this does not destroy the courage and vigor with which he endows his work. His collection of medieval art, known as The Cloisters, now belongs to the Metropolitan Museum of Art.

Barnard College, see *Columbia University*.

Barnburners, name applied to radical Democrats of New York state (1843–8), who agitated against corporations and favored the abolition or nonextension of slavery. The name derives from the story of a Dutchman who burned his barn to rid it of rats, for the Barnburners wished to destroy the corporations in order to abolish their abuses. In 1848 the party allied with the Conscience Whigs in the Free-Soil party, which nominated Van Buren for President and C.F.Adams for Vice President. After the Compromise of 1850, the Barnburners returned to their previous affiliation. The antislavery element later joined the Republican party.

BARNES, CHARLOTTE MARY SANFORD (1818–63), author of romantic melodramas, including *The Forest Princess* (1848), concerned with the adventures of Pocahontas in America and England, and *Octavia Bragaldi* (1837, published 1848), a blank verse setting of the Kentucky Tragedy (q.v.). In the latter, events are transferred to 15th-century Milan, where Ann Cook becomes Octavia, Beauchamp becomes Bragaldi, and Sharp becomes Castelli.

BARNES, DJUNA, American author long expatriated in Europe. Her first work was collected in *A Book* (1923) of short plays, stories, and poems, presenting introspective analyses of people whose temperamental sympathies lie with the simple lives of animals. The book was reissued with three new stories as *A Night Among the Horses* (1929). *Ryder* (1928) is a satirical novel in the stream-of-consciousness style, concerned with a man's relations with his mother, his wife, and his mistresses. *Nightwood* (1936), a novel of the relationships of five psychopathic people, has been described by T.S.Eliot as having 'a quality of horror and doom very nearly related to that of Elizabethan tragedy.'

BARNES, HARRY ELMER (1889–), historian, historiographer, and sociologist, associated at various times with Columbia University, The New School for Social Research, and Smith College. His books include: *The Social History of the Western World* (1921); *The New History and the Social Studies* (1925); *The Genesis of the World War* (1926); *The Twilight of Christianity* (1929); *The History of Sociological Thought* (1936); and *Society in Transition* (1939).

BARNES, MARGARET AYER (1886–), novelist and playwright, whose fiction includes *Years of Grace* (1930, Pulitzer Prize 1931), the story of a Chicago matron of the era of respectability who lives on into the jazz age; *Within This Present* (1933), the chronicle of a Chicago family from the Civil War to the present; *Edna, His Wife* (1935), later dramatized by Cornelia Otis Skinner; and *Wisdom's Gate* (1938), a sequel to *Years of Grace*. Her plays include an adaptation of *The Age of Innocence* (1928), and *Jenny* (1929) and *Dishonored Lady* (1930), both with Edward Sheldon. She is a sister of Janet Ayer Fairbank.

BARNUM, FRANCES, see *Baylor, Frances*.

BARNUM, P[HINEAS] T[AYLOR] (1810–91), Connecticut impresario, failed as a shopkeeper, founded a weekly newspaper,

The Herald of Freedom (1829), and a few years later entered upon his career as showman by exhibiting an aged Negress fraudulently claimed to have been George Washington's childhood nurse. In 1842 he organized the American Museum in New York City, and soon achieved celebrity with this combined sideshow and stage entertainment through his extravagant publicity and advertising, in which he originated methods now characteristic of American show business. Two years later he made his first European tour, accompanied by the dwarf, 'General Tom Thumb,' already one of his leading attractions. In 1850–52 Barnum managed the highly successful American tour of Jenny Lind (q.v.). He served as mayor of Bridgeport, Connecticut, and as a member of the state legislature, but was defeated as a candidate for Congress. It was at this time (1871) that he organized his circus, advertised as 'the greatest show on earth,' which dominated that type of entertainment, especially after the merger (1881) with the circus of James A. Bailey (1847–1906), Barnum's chief competitor. Bailey managed the combined shows until his death, when they were absorbed by the Ringling Brothers Circus. Barnum's books include his *Life* (1855, frequently revised) and *The Humbugs of the World* (1865).

BARR, Amelia Edith [Huddleston] (1831–1919), English-born novelist, came to the U.S. with her husband in 1853, lived in Texas during the period of the Lone Star Republic, and went to New York in 1868 to write for the newspapers of Henry Ward Beecher and begin her career as an author of popular historical fiction. Among her numerous novels were: *Romance and Reality* (1872), *Jan Vedder's Wife* (1885), *The Bow of Orange Ribbon* (1886), *Remember the Alamo* (1888), *The Belle of Bowling Green* (1904), and *The Paper Cap* (1918). *All the Days of My Life* (1913) is an autobiography.

Barren Ground, novel by Ellen Glasgow (q.v.), published in 1925.

Dorinda Oakley, daughter of a land-poor farmer in Virginia, at 20 goes to work in Nathan Pedlar's store. She falls in love with Jason Greylock, weak-willed son of the village doctor, and forgets her purpose of helping her father to rebuild the farm, but the day before their planned wedding Jason is forced to marry a former fiancée. Bitterly disillusioned, Dorinda seeks work in New York, where she is injured in a street accident. She is attended by Dr. Faraday, who later employs her as a nurse for his children. A young doctor proposes to her, but she refuses him, determined to 'find something else in life.' At her father's death, Dorinda returns to the family farm, which is impoverished and overgrown with broomsedge. Having studied scientific agriculture, she introduces progressive methods, gradually returning the 'barren ground' to fertility, and creating a prosperous dairy farm. Her mother becomes an invalid, and her brother Rufus is lazy and selfish, so that Dorinda must carry on unaided. After her mother's death she marries Nathan Pedlar, to provide a home for his children, and after he dies she shelters Jason, now penniless and ill from excessive drinking. He soon dies, and to the suggestion that she might marry again, Dorinda replies with an ironic smile, 'Oh, I've finished with all that . . . I am thankful to have finished with all that.'

Barriers Burned Away, novel by E.P. Roe (q.v.), published in 1872. This popular moral tale is concerned with the love of a poor but well-educated young man, Dennis Fleet, for his employer's daughter, Christine Ludolph, which she does not return until his heroism and rescue of her in the disastrous Chicago fire convert her indifference to piety and affection.

BARRY, Philip (1896–), born in Rochester, New York, graduated from Yale (1919), and studied in the 47 Workshop of G.P.Baker at Harvard, where he wrote *You and I* (1923), in which a father, trying to guide his son into an artistic career, reveals his own thwarted ambition. Following *The Youngest* (1924), a satirical play concerning the revolt of a youngest son from the bourgeois standards of his family, and *In a Garden* (1925), a sophisticated comedy, he wrote *White Wings* (q.v.,1926), an ironic fantasy. His next play, *John* (1927), based on the life of John the Baptist, was unsuccessful, but *Paris Bound* (q.v.,1927) was a popular comedy concerned with contemporary moral standards. After collaborating with Elmer Rice in writing a fanciful mystery play, *Cock Robin* (1928), Barry returned to his earlier theme of a child's revolt against the standards of her parents in *Holiday* (q.v.,1928). *Hotel Universe* (q.v.,1930) was a mystical play, and he further showed his

interest in psychological investigation in *Tomorrow and Tomorrow* (q.v.,1931), and in *The Animal Kingdom* (q.v.,1932), plays concerned with modern marital relations. After two unsuccessful plays, *The Joyous Season* (1934) and *Bright Star* (1935), and *Spring Dance* (1936), an adaption, he wrote *Here Come the Clowns* (1938), which had a theme like that of *Hotel Universe*, being concerned with the revelations of the inner tragedies of a group of vaudeville actors through the hypnotic powers of an 'illusionist.' This play was published in the form of a novel as *War in Heaven* (1938). *The Philadelphia Story* (1939) is a drawing-room comedy concerning a love affair between a young heiress and a writer, and *Liberty Jones* (1941) is an allegory of the dangers threatening democracy in the modern world.

BARRYMORE, family of American actors, which has included: Maurice (1848–1905); his wife, Georgiana Drew (1856–93), a daughter of John Drew; their children, Lionel (1878–), John (1882–), and Ethel (1879–). *The Royal Family*, by George Kaufman and Edna Ferber, is reputedly a satire of the Barrymores.

***Bartleby the Scrivener:** A Story of Wall Street*, allegorical tale by Melville (q.v.), published anonymously in *Putnam's Magazine* (1853) and reprinted in *The Piazza Tales* (1856). It was written at a time when the author was overcome with a sense of futility at the public neglect of his novels ('Dead Letters'), and was engaged in producing magazine pieces for money, an occupation he foresaw he might abandon, leaving him no way of serving a society in which he must continue to live.

A Wall Street lawyer hires Bartleby, a curious, wraithlike figure, as a copyist. Bartleby refuses to mingle with the other employes, and, when asked to do anything besides copying documents, invariably says, 'I would prefer not to.' Some inner dignity or pathos in him prevents his being discharged, even when he ceases to work and uses the office for living quarters. The lawyer moves to another building, and the new tenant has Bartleby arrested. Visited in prison by the lawyer, he is silent and refuses favors. Soon he dies, and the lawyer hears a rumor that Bartleby was formerly a clerk in the Dead Letter Office, whose strange atmosphere affected his attitude toward life to the end.

BARTLETT, JOHN (1820–1905), owner of the University Book Store at Cambridge, made his shop a meeting place for Harvard professors and students. 'Ask John Bartlett' became the customary saying when anyone was searching for a book or quotation, and he justified his reputation in his famous *Familiar Quotations*, first published in 1855.

BARTON, CLARA (1821–1912), organizer of the American Red Cross, began her war service at the outbreak of the Civil War, when without credentials or compensation she organized an agency to get supplies to soldiers in camps and hospitals, and to aid the sick and wounded. She was appointed by Lincoln (1865) to search for missing soldiers and identify graves of unknowns. She was sent to the front by the German Red Cross Society at the outbreak of the Franco-Prussian War. As the result of her long campaign, in 1882 the U.S. joined the Red Cross of the Geneva Convention, and Miss Barton became the American president, holding office until 1904. During these 22 years she directed all activities, usually working in the field herself, and she introduced the amendment under which the society gives relief in calamities other than war. She resigned after an investigation that followed charges that she was arbitrary and lax in keeping accounts.

BARTRAM, JOHN (1699–1777), first native American botanist, established the Philadelphia gardens which are described, along with a sympathetic sketch of their creator, in Crèvecœur's *Letters from an American Farmer*. Before and after his appointment as Botanist to the King, Bartram made several journeys, described in his journals, of which the best known is *Observations on the Inhabitants, Climate, Soil, etc. . . . made by John Bartram in his travels from Pensilvania to . . . Lake Ontario* (1751).

WILLIAM BARTRAM (1739–1823), his son, was also a botanist, and accompanied his father on exploring trips. Although he was a good painter of flora and fauna, and did some important anthropological and ornithological investigation, his fame rests on his *Travels through North and South Carolina, Georgia, East and West Florida, the Cherokee Country, the Extensive Territories of the Muscogulges, or Creek Confederacy, and the Country of the Chactaws* (1791), a travel book which

Coleridge pronounced a work of 'high merit.' In it the Quaker traveler and observer reveals a poetic feeling for nature and a philosophic vision concerning the idea of the 'natural' man, and his rich descriptions influenced, among others, Chateaubriand, Coleridge Wordsworth, and Lafcadio Hearn.

Bass, JETHRO, character in *Coniston* (q.v.).

BASSETT, JOHN SPENCER (1867–1928), founder of the *South Atlantic Quarterly* (1902), and professor of American history at Trinity College (1892–1906), and Smith College (1906–28). His works include *The Writings of Colonel William Byrd* (1901), *The Federalist System* (1906), *Life of Andrew Jackson* (1911), *The Middle Group of American Historians* (1917), and *The Plantation Overseer as Revealed in His Letters* (1925).

BATEMAN, SIDNEY FRANCES (1823–81), actress and playwright, whose plays include the social satire, *Self* (q.v.,1856); the romantic drama, *Geraldine* (1859); and a dramatization of *Evangeline* (1860).

BATES, ARLO (1850–1918), born in Maine, after graduation from Bowdoin (1876) became a Boston newspaper editor and later professor of English at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (1893–1915). He is best known for his novels, which include: *Mr. Jacobs* (1883); *The Pagans* (1884); *A Wheel of Fire* (1885); *The Philistines* (1889), the story of a painter who marries into the rich and self-satisfied society of Boston, and, adopting their values, loses his artistic power; *Albrecht* (1890); *The Puritans* (1898); and *The Intoxicated Ghost* (1908). With his wife, Harriet L. Vose, he wrote a novel, *Prince Vance* (1888), and she is the subject of his dirge, *Sonnets in Shadow* (1887), one of his many books of poetry. He also wrote several textbooks, and a play, *A Mother's Meeting* (1909).

BATES, BLANCHE (1873–), actress best known for her interpretation of Belasco roles, including leading parts in *Madame Butterfly*, *The Darling of the Gods*, and *The Girl of the Golden West*.

BATES, ERNEST SUTHERLAND (1879–1939), professor of English and philosophy at the University of Oregon (1915–25), and literary editor of the *Dictionary of American Biography*. His books include: *The Friend of Jesus* (1928); *This Land of Liberty* (1930); *Hearst, the Lord of Same Simeon* (1936), written with Oliver Cmbia son; and *The Bible Designed to Be Rei* text- *Living Literature* (1936). as *The*

BATES, KATHARINE LEE (1859–192 vols., Massachusetts author, professor at W but lesley (1891–1925), whose writings inclu can scholarly works, children's books, ar ost poems, of which the most famous is th t- patriotic hymn, 'America the Beautiful' e (q.v.,1893).

Battery, THE, southernmost point of Manhattan Island, was originally the site of Dutch fortifications, and later of Castle Clinton (1807), a circular building which was transformed into Castle Garden, the opera house where Jenny Lind made her American debut. It later served as the immigrant receiving station until Ellis Island was established (1892). The park in which the building is situated was a fashionable promenade. The New York City Aquarium is now located there (1941).

Battle Cry of Freedom, The, see *Root, G.F.*

Battle Hymn of the Republic, The, song popular among Union partisans in the Civil War, was written by Julia Ward Howe (q.v.) at the suggestion of J.F. Clarke, when both were members of a party visiting McClellan's troops in December 1861. The words, whose chief message Mrs. Howe described as 'the sacredness of human liberty,' were to be sung to the tune of 'John Brown's Body,' which is ascribed to William Steffe (*c.*1856). James T. Fields is said to have named the 'Battle Hymn,' and he was responsible for its publication in the *Atlantic Monthly* (Feb. 1862).

Battle of Bunkers-Hill, The, blank verse tragedy by H.H. Brackenridge (q.v.), written in 1776 for production at Somerset Academy, Maryland, of which he was a master. Intended primarily as an exercise in oratory, it consists of two conversations, one between Revolutionary leaders, and the other between British officers, with the courage of the Americans as its central theme.

Battle of the Kegs, The, Revolutionary War ballad by Francis Hopkinson (q.v.), was published in 1778, immediately after the Americans under David Bushnell had prepared certain 'infernal machines' that were floated down the Delaware River in the form of kegs, intended to destroy

passish shipping at Philadelphia. The own ish opened a furious cannonade upon ments, hing floating on the water. Hopkin- has w scri rollicking verse the panic of th which itish were thrown, and rev supposed belief that the kegs were (19 d with armed rebels.

(1 ***ttle-Pieces and Aspects of the War,*** ems by Melville (q.v.), published in 866, which deal with events and impressions of the Civil War. An appendix contains a prose supplement pleading for a humane and charitable Northern attitude toward Reconstruction.

BAUM, L[YMAN] FRANK (1856–1919), New York journalist and playwright, best known for his fantasies for children, of which *The Wonderful Wizard of Oz* (1900) was the first of 14 stories dealing with the land of Oz.

BAXTER, JAMES PHINNEY (1831–1921), Maine merchant and scholar, whose historical writings include: *The British Invasion from the North* (1887); *Early Voyages to America* (1889); *Sir Ferdinando Gorges and His Province of Maine* (1890); and *The Pioneers of New France in New England* (1894). He edited 20 volumes of the *Documentary History of Maine.*

JAMES PHINNEY BAXTER (1893–), his grandson, president of Williams College (1937–), is also a historian.

Bay Psalm Book, name generally given to *The Whole Booke of Psalmes Faithfully Translated into English Metre,* the accepted hymnal of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. The translation was made by Richard Mather, John Eliot, and Thomas Weld, with the stated intention of sacrificing elegance to accuracy. The book was published at Cambridge (1640) by Stephen Daye, and with the exception of a broadside and a brief almanac was the first work printed in the English colonies.

Bay State, popular name of Massachusetts, whose early title was the Province of Massachusetts Bay.

BAYLOR, FRANCES COURTENAY (1848–1920), Virginia author, whose most popular novel, *Juan and Juanita* (1888), is concerned with a Mexican boy and girl captured by Comanche Indians. Her novels for adults include *Behind the Blue Ridge* (1887), *Claudia Hyde* (1894), and *Miss Nina Barrow* (1897).

Bayou Folk, 23 stories and anecdotes of Louisiana local color, by Kate Chopin (q.v.), published in 1894.

'A No-Account Creole' is the story of selfish, vain young Placide Santien, whose faults are redeemed by his generous act in giving up his wealthy fiancée, the day before their scheduled marriage, when he learns that she loves another man. 'Désirée's Baby' tells of a proud Louisiana aristocrat who marries an orphan girl of unknown origin. Their son shows evidence of Negroid ancestry, and Armand turns Désirée and the child out of his house. She disappears, and some weeks later he discovers an old letter of his mother, revealing that the Negro blood is in his own family. 'Madame Célestin's Divorce' is a humorous account of the enamored lawyer who urges Madame Célestin to divorce the husband who deserted her long before. Just as he thinks he is successful, she informs him that ' "Célestin came home las' night. An' he's promise me on his word an' honor he's going to turn over a new leaf." ' 'La Belle Zoraïde' tells of a beautiful quadroon slave who goes mad because she is not allowed to marry the Negro father of her child. The child is taken from her, and she transfers her distracted affection to a rag doll, which she refuses to surrender even when an attempt is made to restore her own infant.

BEACH, JOSEPH WARREN (1880–), professor of English at the University of Minnesota, and literary critic, whose works include: *The Comic Spirit in George Meredith* (1911); *The Method of Henry James* (1918); *The Technique of Thomas Hardy* (1922); *Meek Americans* (1925); *The Outlook for American Prose* (1926); *The Twentieth-Century Novel* (1932); and *American Fiction* 1920–1940 (1941).

BEACH, REX [ELLINGWOOD] (1877–), Canadian novelist, spent several years in the Klondike, and wrote a number of novels concerned with the region, including *The Spoilers* (1906), based on a Nome gold mining case; *The Silver Horde* (1909), a tale of the salmon fisheries; and *The Iron Trail* (1913). He later turned to other backgrounds, such as the Canal Zone, in *The Ne'er-do-well* (1911); New York City, in *The Auction Block* (1914); and Florida, in *Wild Pastures* (1935). *Personal Exposures* (1941) is his autobiography.

Beacon Hill, elevation in Boston where a signal was placed (1635) to warn against

possible Indian attacks. In 1795 the State House, designed by Bulfinch, was placed on the summit, and since that period Beacon Hill has been a noted residential district. Beacon Street, one of the most fashionable residential streets in Boston, extends along the slope of the hill skirting the Boston Common.

BEADLE, ERASTUS (1821–94), the most famous publisher of dime novels, began his career in cheap publications by issuing ten-cent song books and game manuals. *Malaeska, the Indian Wife of the White Hunter* (1860) by Ann S. Stephens was the first of his famous series in which he advertised 'a dollar book for a dime.' It is said to have sold 300,000 copies during its first year, and was followed by hundreds of similar works dealing with the desperate adventures of frontiersmen. Among Beadle's writers were 'Bruin' Adams, W.F.Cody, Edward S. Ellis, Mayne Reid, and Fred Whittaker. After 1880, train robbers and detectives supplanted Indians and hunters, and the dime novel acquired the opprobrious reputation that has clung to it.

BEALS, CARLETON (1893–), graduated from the University of California (1916) and became a teacher in Mexico and a newspaper correspondent, gathering materials for his social studies of foreign countries, which include: *Rome or Death—The Story of Fascism* (1923); *Mexico—An Interpretation* (1923); *Brimstone and Chili* (1927); *Mexican Maze* (1931); *Banana Gold* (1932); *The Crime of Cuba* (1933); *Black River* (1934); *American Earth: The Biography of a Nation* (1939) and *Pan America* (1940). *Stones Awake* (1936) is a novel about modern Mexico, and *Glass Houses: Ten Years of Free-Lancing* (1938) is an autobiographical work.

Bear Flag War, California insurrection against the Mexican government (June 1846), was raised by American settlers supposedly fomented by Frémont, who led a small force of U.S. troops. The Bear Flag Republic was proclaimed, but when the Mexican War began, the following month, Sloat took possession of the region for the U.S.

BEARD, CHARLES A[USTIN] (1874–), historian and educator born in Indiana, after graduating from DePauw University (1898) attended Oxford, where he founded Ruskin College (1899) to train labor leaders. Returning to the U.S., he became professor of political science at Columbia (1904–17). He wrote a number of textbooks on European history, such as *The Development of Modern Europe* (2 vols., 1907–8), with J.H.Robinson (q.v.), but about 1909 discovered 'that American history is more interesting.' His most important early books on the U.S., reflecting his belief in economic determinism, are *An Economic Interpretation of the Constitution* (1913) and *Economic Origins of Jeffersonian Democracy* (1915). These carefully documented volumes established him as a liberal historian, and profoundly affected the study of American history, but because of their iconoclasm alienated many traditionalists. In 1917 Beard resigned at Columbia to protest the dismissal of pacifist professors, and the next year he helped to found The New School for Social Research. Except for visits to Tokio and Yugoslavia to advise in governmental reforms, he has been concerned with further historical writing and activities to preserve civil liberties and democratic institutions. *The Rise of American Civilization* (2 vols.,1927), written with his wife, Mary R. Beard (q.v.), is a comprehensive historical analysis of U.S. institutions, with special emphasis on social and economic backgrounds. *America in Midpassage* (1939) is a third volume bringing the chronicle up to date. Other works include *The American Leviathan* (1930), a study of the machine age and industrialism, written with William Beard; *A Charter for the Social Sciences* (1932), a program of social planning for the U.S.; and *The Idea of National Interest* (1934), and *The Open Door at Home* (1934), both written with G.H.E.Smith and arguing for a continental economy to keep America free of the self-interested rivalries of foreign empires.

BEARD, DANIEL CARTER (1850–), a founder of the Boy Scouts of America, who has written and illustrated many books dealing with woodcraft and animal life, as well as illustrating works of other authors, including Mark Twain. *Hardly a Man Is Now Alive* (1939) is his autobiography.

BEARD, MARY R[ITTER] (1876–), in 1900 married Charles A. Beard (q.v.), with whom she has collaborated in writing such books as *The Rise of American Civilization* (2 vols.,1927) and *America in Mid-*

passage (1939). She is prominent in her own right in the suffrage and labor movements, and among the works which she has written and edited are *A Short History of the American Labor Movement* (1920, revised 1925), *On Understanding Women* (1931), *America Through Women's Eyes* (1933), and *Woman: Co-Maker of History* (1940).

Beare and Ye Club, *Ye*, first play performed in English in America, was composed by Cornelius Watkinson, Philip Howard, and William Darby, three citizens of Accomac County, Virginia, in 1665. When brought to trial for performing the play, they reproduced it for the court, which found them 'not guilty of fault,' and acquitted them of licentiousness. The play is otherwise unknown. The title is sometimes given as *Ye Bare and Ye Cubb.*

Beauchamp Case, see *Kentucky Tragedy.*

Beauchampe: *or, The Kentucky Tragedy,* novel by Simms (q.v.), published in 1842 as a complete fictional account of the Kentucky Tragedy (q.v.). In 1856 the first part was expanded into an independent novel, *Charlemont; or, The Pride of the Village.* In this part is told the story of Warham Sharpe, a young attorney, who assumes the name of Alfred Stevens, and the guise of a theological student, to woo Margaret Cooper. After seducing her and failing to keep his promise of marriage, he departs; and she swears an oath to kill him.

The revised *Beauchampe*, constituting the former second part, opens at the time that Margaret, living in seclusion under the name Anna Cooke, accepts the proposal of a young lawyer, Beauchampe. She warns him, however, that he 'clasps a dishonoured hand,' and requires him to kill her seducer. After their marriage, Beauchampe's friend Sharpe visits them. When he again attempts to seduce Margaret, Beauchampe discovers his identity, stabs him, and in the ensuing trial is condemned to death. On the eve of the execution, he and his wife attempt suicide. Although she succeeds, he lives long enough to be hanged, proclaiming at the last, 'Daughters of Kentucky! you, at least, will bless the name of Beauchampe!'

BEAUMONT, WILLIAM (1785–1853), born in Connecticut, began his career as an army surgeon during the War of 1812. In 1822, while stationed at the frontier post of Fort Mackinac, he treated a patient for a severe abdominal wound that left the stomach exposed, and took this opportunity to investigate the processes of digestion. The results of his ten years of research are contained in *Experiments and Observations on the Gastric Juice and the Physiology of Digestion* (1833), which still constitutes the most important single contribution to knowledge of the subject.

BEAUREGARD, PIERRE GUSTAVE TOUTANT (1818–93), Confederate general who opened fire on Fort Sumter, thus beginning the Civil War. He was prominent in the battles of Bull Run and Shiloh.

Beauties of Santa Cruz, The, poem by Freneau (q.v.), written in the West Indies in 1776, and collected in his *Poems* (1786). This romantic piece, in iambic pentameter quatrains, extols the beauties of the tropics and describes the horrors of slavery, which blot the country's native charms.

Beaver, TONY, giant hero of tall tales told by lumberjacks of the Southern forests and mountains, was 'a sort of relative' of Paul Bunyan, whose mythical exploits he equals. In the Cumberland Mountains, one of his camps was located 'up Eel River'; another was 'way up in the Smokies.' His most famous associate was Big Henry, whose axe, when swung, came down 'boo!' Tony Beaver was the author of many ingenious inventions, including that of peanut brittle, which he created when he stopped a dangerous flood by dumping into the stream the surplus crop of peanuts and molasses. His adventures are recorded by Margaret Montague, in *Up Eel River* (1928).

BECKER, CARL [LOTUS] (1873–), professor of history at Cornell University, whose books include: *Beginnings of the American People* (1915); *Eve of the Revolution* (1918); *The Declaration of Independence* (1922); *The Heavenly City of the Eighteenth Century Philosophers* (1932); and *Everyman His Own Historian* (1935).

BECKNELL, WILLIAM (*c.*1790–*c.*1832), 'founder' of the Santa Fé Trail (q.v., 1821–2). His journal of the expedition is printed in the *Collections* of the Missouri Historical Society (July 1906).

BECKWOURTH, JAMES P. (1798–*c.*1867), Virginia-born hunter and adven-

turer in the Rocky Mountains, California, and Missouri, began his career as a 'mountain man' while still a boy, and in 1823 joined the expedition of Ashley which ascended the Missouri River. His daring exploits and his life among the Indians made him a famous hero of frontier tall tales. In 1856 T.D.Bonner wrote 'from his own dictation' the colorful and bombastic book, based on facts but exaggerated and disproportionately heroic, which was published as *Life and Adventures of James P. Beckwourth, Mountaineer, Scout, and Pioneer and Chief of the Crow Nation of Indians.*

Becky Thatcher, character in *Tom Sawyer* (q.v.).

BEDOTT, Widow, pseudonym of Frances M. Whitcher (q.v.).

BEEBE, [Charles] William (1877–) graduated from Columbia (1898), became curator of ornithology of the New York Zoological Society, and is still associated with the institution as director of scientific research. His numerous expeditions to various parts of the world for scientific purposes have been recorded in a long series of popular books. Among these are *Beneath Tropic Seas* (1928), *Nonsuch: Land of Water* (1932), and *Half Mile Down* (1934), describing his ichthyological investigations underseas in a bathysphere, and the earlier *Two Bird-Lovers in Mexico* (1905), *The Log of the Sun* (1906), *Our Search for a Wilderness* (1910), *Tropical Wild Life in British Guiana* (1917), *Jungle Peace* (1918), *Galapagos, World's End* (1924), *Jungle Days* (1925), *The Arcturus Adventure* (1926), and *Pheasant Jungles* (1927).

BEECHER, Lyman (1775–1863), born in New Haven, after graduation from Yale (1797) became a Presbyterian minister on Long Island, at Litchfield, Connecticut, and at Boston, noted for his fiery and vigorous denunciation of liquor and his strongly anti-Catholic sermons. In 1832 he went to Cincinnati to become the first president of Lane Theological Seminary. Here he was the defendant in a noted heresy trial, in which he was acquitted, although he resigned in 1850. His sermons and magazine articles were published in his *Collected Works* (1852). Harriet Beecher Stowe was his daughter.

Catherine Esther Beecher (1800–78), another daughter, founded a women's college at Cincinnati (1832), and in other ways worked for the educational rights of women. Her books include *An Essay on Slavery and Abolitionism* (1837) and *The Evils Suffered by American Women and . . . Children* (1846).

Henry Ward Beecher (1813–87), his son, was a celebrated Congregational minister, moral crusader, and lecturer. At his Plymouth (Congregational) Church in Brooklyn, he became the outstanding pulpit orator of his day, being immensely popular for his sentimental and high-flown rhetoric in sermons on political, social, and religious subjects. He was an ardent champion of antislavery, and during the Civil War delivered a popular series of lectures in England on behalf of the Union cause. His sermons were published in many volumes, and his other books include: *Norwood; or, Village Life in New England* (1867), a sentimental novel; *The Life of Jesus, the Christ* (1871); *Yale Lectures on Preaching* (1872–4); and *Evolution and Religion* (1885). His reputation was permanently injured by the suit (1874) of Theodore Tilton, who accused Beecher of adultery with Mrs.Tilton. Although the jury disagreed, the scandal turned Beecher from a respected to a notorious figure.

BEER, George Louis (1872–1920), retired from business in 1903 to devote himself to historical research, some of which resulted in *The Origins of the British Colonial System* (1908) and *The Old Colonial System* (1912). His historical work was interrupted by the World War, which turned his interest to contemporary problems. *The English-Speaking Peoples* (1917), his most popular book, urges a 'co-operative alliance' between the U.S. and the British Empire.

BEER, Thomas (1889–1940), born in Iowa, graduated from Yale (1911), and devoted himself to writing following his service in the World War. In addition to three novels, *The Fair Rewards* (1922), a story of the New York stage, whose central figure is an impresario constantly divided between his artistic convictions and the commercial aspects of his work, *Sandoval* (1924), 'a romance of bad manners' depicting New York City in 1870, and *The Road to Heaven* (1928), a sophisticated romance praising the virtues of rural living, he wrote such humorous short stories as those collected in *Mrs.*

Egg and Other Barbarians (1933). His biography of Stephen Crane (1923) did much to establish that author's fame, and he also collected Crane's works. *The Mauve Decade* (1926) is an interpretation of American life during the last part of the 19th century, noted for its impressionistic sketching of social aspects of the era, whose politics are considered in *Hanna* (1929), a similar study centered on the figure of Mark Hanna. Both are written in an oblique and urbanely ironic style. *The Agreeable Finish* (1941) is a posthumous collection of short stories.

BEERS, ETHEL LYNN (1827–79), New York poet and author of fiction, was best known for her poem, 'All Quiet Along the Potomac,' originally published as 'The Picket-Guard' (*Harper's Weekly*, 1861), a sentimental account of the death of an unknown soldier during the Civil War. It was reprinted in *All Quiet Along the Potomac, and Other Poems* (1879).

BEERS, HENRY AUGUSTIN (1847–1926), professor of English at Yale (1871–1926), is best known for his *History of English Romanticism* (2 vols., 1899, 1901). He also wrote *A Short History of American Literature* (1906) and *The Connecticut Wits and Other Essays* (1920).

Before Adam, novel by Jack London (q.v.), published in 1906.

The nameless narrator expounds a theory of the dissociation of personality to explain his strange dreams. His dreams, he contends, are memories of a distant ancestor, Big Tooth, who roamed the primordial forests during the mid-Pleistocene era. He describes in a somewhat sentimentalized fashion the life of Big Tooth and his mate, Swift One, their fight with the Fire People, and the processes by which human beings defended themselves against beasts.

Beggar on Horseback, satirical play by George Kaufman and Marc Connelly (qq.v.), with music by Deems Taylor. Produced and published in 1924, it was suggested by a German play, Paul Apel's *Hans Sonnenstössers Höllenfahrt.*

Neil McRae, a penniless composer, is maneuvered by his friend Dr.Albert Rice, and by the rich but vulgar Cady family, into a proposal of marriage to Gladys Cady, although he really loves Cynthia Mason, his neighbor in a New York apartment house. On the verge of a breakdown from overwork, he is given a sedative by the doctor, and in the sleep that follows he dreams of his life with the Cady family as contrasted with that he might have with Cynthia. This dream is enacted on the stage, in the manner of an expressionist drama: Neil goes to work in his father-in-law's 'widget' manufacturing business; surrounded by an atmosphere of vulgarity, he finds creative work impossible; and suddenly he murders the entire family. Brought to trial in a comic-opera court, of which Mr.Cady is judge, Neil defends his action by producing his pantomime, *A Kiss in Xanadu,* but the jury sentences him to hard labor in the Cady Consolidated Art Factory, where he is forced to produce worthless, repetitive songs in colossal numbers. Awakened from his dream, Neil is accepted by Cynthia after Gladys, realizing their incompatibility, releases him.

Beggars of Life, autobiographical narrative by Jim Tully (q.v.).

BEHRMAN, S[AMUEL] N[ATHANIEL] (1893–), studied at Harvard in the 47 Workshop of G.P.Baker, became a newspaper critic, and achieved his first success as a playwright with his comedy of manners, *The Second Man* (1927). Later plays in this form include: *Serena Blandish* (1929), adapted from an anonymous novel about a naïve Mayfair society girl; *Meteor* (1929), a character study of an egoist; *Brief Moment* (1931), recounting the marital difficulties of a young patrician and a night club singer; *Biography* (1932), about a portrait painter and the celebrities she attracts; *Rain from Heaven* (1934), contrasting persons of various social and economic beliefs, gathered at a house party; *End of Summer* (1936), dealing with the complicated love affairs of a mother and daughter; *Amphitryon* 38 (1937), an adaptation of a French play based on the Greek legend of Zeus's love for Amphitryon's wife Alkmena; and *No Time for Comedy* (1939), concerned with a dramatist's attempt to write a serious play while tempted to continue devising successful comedies.

BEIN, ALBERT (1902–) proletarian author, whose plays include *Little Ol' Boy* (1933); *Let Freedom Ring* (1935), adapted from Grace Lumpkin's novel, *To Make My Bread,* dealing with a North Carolina mill strike; and *Heavenly Express* (1940), based on his first-hand knowledge of hobo life, depicting the fantastic after-life

imagined by railroad tramps. His novels are *Road Out of Hell* (1929), from which his first play was adapted; *Love in Chicago* (1929), written under the pseudonym Charles Walt; and *Youth in Hell* (1930), a semi-autobiographical novel about a brutal reform school.

BELASCO, DAVID (1859–1931), born in San Francisco, where he first achieved recognition as actor, playwright, and producer, was intermittently associated with the New York stage during his youth, and after 1882 was constantly identified with it. He was famous not only for his plays, but also for his successful managership, discovery, and development of such actors as David Warfield and Mrs. Leslie Carter, his realistic stage settings, and his ability to obtain novel effects with Edison's newly invented electric lights. Many of his plays were written with collaborators: *Hearts of Oak* (1879), adapted from an English melodrama with James A. Herne (q.v.); *Lord Chumley* (1888), a domestic drama, with Henry C. DeMille; *The Girl I Left Behind Me* (1893) with Franklin Fyles; *The Return of Peter Grimm* (q.v.,1911) with Cecil B. DeMille; *Madame Butterfly* (q.v.,1900), *Adrea* (q.v., 1904), and *The Darling of the Gods* (q.v., 1902) with John L. Long; and many other plays with these and other writers. Belasco's own plays include: *The Heart of Maryland* (1895), a Civil War drama; *Zaza* (1898), a melodrama adapted from the French; *DuBarry* (1901); and *The Girl of the Golden West* (q.v.,1905). Six of his plays were collected and edited by M.J.Moses (1928).

Belfry of Bruges, The, title piece of a volume of poems by Longfellow (q.v.), published in 1845, which contains such poems as 'The Arsenal at Springfield,' 'The Bridge,' and 'The Arrow and the Song' (qq.v.). 'The Belfry of Bruges,' in rimed couplets of eight-stress lines, recalling the ancient glories of the Belgian city, is prefaced by a 'Carillon' in four-stress lines, which describes the chimes in the belfry as the poet heard them during a restless night.

BELKNAP, JEREMY (1744–98), Congregational clergyman and historian, was the author of a *History of New Hampshire* (3 vols.,1784, '91, '92), noted for its research, impartiality, and literary merit. His humorous allegory, *The Foresters* (1792), narrates the founding and growth of the British colonies in America, and his *American Biography* (2 vols.,1794–8) is the prototype of many later works. Belknap's ardent nationalism, enthusiasm for research, and high standard of scholarship led him, with others, to found the Massachusetts Historical Society, the first American organization of its kind.

BELL, ALEXANDER GRAHAM (1847–1922), son of a distinguished Scotch phoneticist, came to the U.S. in 1871 to employ his father's system of visible speech for the deaf. His instruction led him to conceive of the idea of transmitting speech by electric waves. The first demonstration of his apparatus took place in 1876, and in the same year the telephone was publicly exhibited. Bell's later inventions included other means of speech transmission and aids for the deaf, as well as aeronautical devices. In 1883 he founded the magazine *Science*.

BELLAMY, CHARLES (*d.*1717), pirate captain of the New England coast, whose capture and execution are noted in the diary of Samuel Sewall, and occasioned a sermon and a pamphlet, *Instructions to the Living* (1717), by Cotton Mather.

BELLAMY, EDWARD (1850–98), born near Springfield, Massachusetts, had a public school education, toured Europe in 1868, returned to study law, but, though admitted to the bar, never practiced. He entered journalism, edited the Springfield *Union*, and in 1880 founded the Springfield *Daily News*, but he had already begun writing fiction, publishing *The Duke of Stockbridge* as a serial in 1879. This novel, completed after his death by a cousin, and published in 1900, was a sort of proletarian romance dealing with Shays's Rebellion. Other novels included: *Six to One: A Nantucket Idyl* (1878), the result of a voyage to Hawaii that Bellamy made in 1877; and *Dr.Heidenhoff's Process* (1880) and *Miss Ludington's Sister* (1884), romances showing his interest in psychic phenomena. These were overshadowed by the immensely popular *Looking Backward: 2000–1887* (1888,q.v.), a Utopian romance predicting a new social and economic order, which made the author famous and led to the founding of a Nationalist Party that advocated its principles. To aid this cause and further his social theories, he founded the *New Nation* (1891), lectured widely, and wrote *Equality* (1897), a sequel to *Looking Backward*, but much more

of a theoretical tract than its predecessor. Bellamy's only other publication was '*The Blind Man's World*' *and Other Stories* (1898). His early death from tuberculosis ended a career of social reform, in which he set forth a theory of state capitalism that has had a great effect on U.S. economic thinking and the growth of the proletarian movement.

BELLAMY, JOSEPH (1719–90), associate of Jonathan Edwards in the Great Awakening, was the author of several theological pamphlets, notably *True Religion Delineated* (1750).

Belleau Wood, scene of a World War battle (June 6–25, 1918). To preserve previous gains at Château-Thierry (q.v.), it was considered necessary to clear the wooded district northwest of that village. An American attack captured the wood, while the French took neighboring heights.

Bellman, The (1906–19), literary review published at Minneapolis by William C. Edgar. It was characterized by an urbane, conservative, dignified point of view, which led critics to consider it guilty of preciosity and Anglophilia. In addition to foreign authors, its contributors included C.M.Flandrau, Joyce Kilmer, Sara Teasdale, George Sterling, and Carl Van Vechten.

BELLOWS, GEORGE [WESLEY] (1882–1925), Ohio-born painter and lithographer, was a student of Robert Henri, and was greatly influenced by the early realists. He is popularly known for his prizefight scenes, which, though poor in color and often illustrational in content, possess a direct masculine vigor. His facile and energetic talent and his ardent interest in a wide variety of human types were best adapted to the media of lithography and illustration, with which he was mainly occupied during his last ten years.

Bells, The, poem by Poe (q.v.), published in 1849. The four irregular stanzas, of varied metre, depict onomatopoetically, by means of reiterated alliteration, assonance, and phonetic imitation, four ways in which the sounds of bells influence moods: the merry tinkle of sleigh bells; the mellow, golden notes of wedding bells; the terrible shriek of alarm bells; and the solemn, melancholy roll of funeral bells. Poe's first version of this *tour de force* of 'tintinnabulation' consisted of only 18 lines, suggested by his friend Mrs.M.L. Shew, but in its complete form the poem contains 113 lines. Its origin has been traced to a passage in Chateaubriand's *Génie du christianisme*.

BELMONT, AUGUST (1816–90), born in Germany, entered the banking business as an agent of the Rothschilds. In Cuba during the U.S. financial panic of 1837, he seized this opportunity to set up his own banking house in New York City, and soon became one of the leading bankers of the U.S. He was the Austrian consul-general in the U.S. (1844–50) and U.S minister to the Netherlands (1853–7). Although a prominent Democrat throughout his lifetime, he supported the Union cause during the Civil War, which he helped to finance.

BEMIS, SAMUEL FLAGG (1891–), scholar of American diplomatic history, is the author of *Jay's Treaty* (1923) and *Pinckney's Treaty* (1926; Pulitzer Prize, 1927), as well as editor and part author of *The American Secretaries of State and Their Diplomacy* (10 vols.,1927–9).

Ben Bolt, popular ballad by T.D.English (q.v.), was first published in the *New-York Mirror* (1843), and was revived by its introduction into Du Maurier's *Trilby* (1894).

Ben Jonson Entertains a Man from Stratford, blank verse dramatic monologue by E.A.Robinson (q.v.), published in *The Man Against the Sky* (1916).

This witty, jovial, and incisive characterization of Shakespeare is presented in the words of his fellow-poet, supposed to be drinking in a London tavern with a Stratford visitor. Describing him as 'this mad, careful, proud, indifferent Shakespeare,' Jonson says that he is an incomparable genius, but solitary and passion-consumed, 'empowered out of nature' by lacking 'faith, innocence, illusion, Whatever 'tis that keeps us out o' Bedlam,' and saved perhaps only by his incongruous petty thrift and ambition and 'that House in Stratford.'

BENAVIDES, ALONZO DE (*fl.*1600–64), Spanish Franciscan, established missions and made many converts during residences in New Mexico (1604–29, 1633 or 1634). His *Memorial* (1630) to Philip IV is a zealous piece of religious propaganda asking for more churches and missionaries in New Mexico. A revision (1634,

translated 1916) gives a history of the missions and a description of the country.

BENCHLEY, Robert [Charles] (1889–), humorist and dramatic critic, since his graduation from Harvard (1912) has written for New York newspapers and magazines. His humorous sketches of the tribulations of the average man in the activities of daily life are collected in *Of All Things* (1921), *Love Conquers All* (1922), *Pluck and Luck* (1925), *The Early Worm* (1927), 20,000 *Leagues Under the Sea; or, David Copperfield* (1928), *The Treasurer's Report* (1930), *No Poems* (1932), *My Ten Years in a Quandary* (1936), and *After* 1903—*What?* (1938). He has also been featured in motion-picture and radio series.

BENEFIELD, [John] Barry, popular novelist, whose works include: *The Chicken-Wagon Family* (1925); *Bugles in the Night* (1927); *A Little Clown Lost* (1928); *Valiant Is the Word for Carrie* (1935); and *April Was When It Began* (1939), all distinguished by tender sympathy and whimsical fantasy. He has also published a volume of short stories, *Short Turns* (1926).

BENÉT, Stephen Vincent (1898–), brother of W.R.Benét, was born in Pennsylvania, and graduated from Yale (1919). As an undergraduate he wrote two books of poetry, *Five Men and Pompey* (1915), dramatic monologues, and *Young Adventure* (1918); shortly after graduation he wrote his first novel, *The Beginning of Wisdom* (1921), a college story in the vein of F.Scott Fitzgerald. The poems in *Heavens and Earth* (1920), *King David* (1923), *A Ballad of William Sycamore* (1923), and *Tiger Joy* (1925), although characterized by romanticism and decoration, show a growing maturity, and the *Ballad* particularly indicates his interest in the American scene. He reached his full power with *John Brown's Body* (q.v., 1928; Pulitzer Prize, 1929), a long narrative poem of the Civil War. His *Ballads and Poems*, 1915–30, were collected in 1931. In addition to such novels as *Young People's Pride* (1922), *Jean Huguenot* (1923), and *Spanish Bayonet* (1926), he has written librettos for two one-act folk operas, *The Headless Horseman* (1937) and *The Devil and Daniel Webster* (q.v., 1939), whose composer is Douglas Moore. His short stories are collected in *Tales Before Midnight* (1939).

BENÉT, William Rose (1886–), New York poet and critic, whose exuberant romantic verse, in a variety of forms and ranging in subject from Oriental fantasy to cowboy balladry, has been published in *Merchants from Cathay* (1913), *The Falconer of God* (1914), *The Great White Wall* (1916), *The Burglar of the Zodiac* (1918), *Moons of Grandeur* (1920), *Man Possessed* (1927), and other volumes. *Rip Tide* (1932) is a verse novel. Among his anthologies is the *Oxford Anthology of American Literature* (1938), edited in collaboration with N.H.Pearson. He was married to Elinor Wylie, whose works he has collected, and is a brother of Stephen Vincent Benét. *The Dust Which Is God* (1941) is an autobiographical poem.

***Ben-Hur,** a Tale of the Christ*, novel by Lew Wallace (q.v.), published in 1880 and dramatized by William Young in 1899.

Against the background of the life of Jesus is told the story of Judah Ben-Hur, a Jewish patrician youth wrongly accused by his former friend Messala of attempting the life of the Roman governor of Judea. He is sent to the galleys for life, and his mother and sister are imprisoned. Escaping, Ben-Hur returns as a Roman officer, and enters the chariot race in which Messala has wagered heavily on himself. Messala hopes to ruin Ben-Hur, but instead is thrown and seriously injured during the race. His cruelties are discovered, and he is slain by his wife, Isas. Ben-Hur rescues his mother and sister, now hopeless lepers, and all three are converted to Christianity after the disease is cured through the intervention of Jesus.

Benito Cereno, story by Melville (q.v.), published in *The Piazza Tales* (1856). Its source is a chapter in Amasa Delano's *Voyages and Travels*.

In 1799 Captain Delano puts in for water at an uninhabited island off Chile, where he encounters a Spanish merchantman in ruinous condition, commanded by Benito Cereno, a sensitive young Spaniard now gravely ill and enabled to pursue his duties only with the solicitous care of his Negro servant Babo. Cereno tells the American that he sailed from Buenos Aires for Lima, with a crew of 50 and a cargo including 300 Negroes owned by Alexandro Aranda. Off Cape Horn, he

says, many of the crew were lost in a storm, and disease destroyed most of the other whites and Negroes. Delano offers aid, but is uneasy at the insubordination of the slaves and the careless seamanship and seeming ingratitude of Cereno. He is about to return to his ship when Cereno jumps into his boat, precipitating an attack by the Negroes from which they barely escape. Cereno explains that the Negroes had mutinied, led by Babo, and wanted to be carried to Africa. Delano seizes the slave ship, and takes it with his own to Lima, where Babo is executed. Cereno enters a monastery, but soon dies.

BENJAMIN, Judah Philip (1811–84), born in the West Indies, was elected senator from Louisiana (1852) and became an outstanding Democratic champion of slavery, after secession holding three posts in the Confederate cabinet. He escaped to England at the end of the Civil War, to become Queen's Counsel and argue many cases before the House of Lords.

BENJAMIN, Park (1809–64), editor and publisher, is best known for his *New World* (1839–45), a literary journal that reprinted British works without remunerating their authors. Among the American contributions was 'The Wreck of the Hesperus.' Benjamin was notorious for his sensational journalistic devices and vituperation, and was among those successfully sued for libel by Cooper. His verse was prominent in early anthologies, but has never been collected.

BENNETT, Emerson (1822–1905), wrote melodramatic fiction of intrigue and adventure, set for the most part on the frontier. He was the author of more than 50 novels and several hundred short stories. His *Prairie Flower* (1849) and its sequel *Leni-Leoti* (1849) had a sale of 100,000 copies each. He also wrote novels concerned with *The League of the Miami* (1845) and *Mike Fink* (1848).

BENNETT, James Gordon, see *New York Herald.*

BENNETT, John (1865–), born in Ohio, and resident in Charleston, South Carolina, is best known for his boys' book, *Master Skylark* (1897), a historical novel 'of Shakspere's time.'

BENNETT, Richard (1872–), stage and screen actor, noted for his performances in such plays as *Beyond the Horizon, The Hero,* and *They Knew What They Wanted.* His daughters, Constance and Joan, are motion-picture actresses.

Bennington College, women's school in Vermont, founded in 1925 and opened in 1932. Its curriculum is based on theories of progressive education.

Bent Twig, The, novel by Dorothy Canfield (q.v.).

BENTON, Thomas Hart (1782–1858), Democratic senator from Missouri (1820–50), was an ardent supporter of Andrew Jackson, and like him opposed the Bank of the United States, and advocated legislation favoring frontier interests. He was a leader in obtaining federal support for western explorations, including the expeditions of his son-in-law Frémont. Benton edited a 16-volume *Abridgement of the Debates of Congress from* 1789 *to* 1856. *Thirty Years' View* (1854–6) is an autobiography.

Thomas Hart Benton (1889–), his grandson, is a prominent Missouri painter, noted for his depictions of the life and customs of the Midwestern U.S. He has written his autobiography, *An Artist in America* (1937).

Bent's Fort, trading post on the Arkansas River near Rocky Ford, Colorado, was founded (*c.*1829) by the frontiersmen Charles and William Bent. In 1853 a new fort was built a little downstream, and this was leased by the federal government for military purposes (1859).

BERCOVICI, Konrad (1882–), Rumanian-born author, came to the U.S. in 1916, and was inspired by his work for a New York charity organization to write his sociological narrative, *Crimes of Charity* (1917). *Dust of New York* (1919) presents fictional vignettes of the city's foreign quarters, especially the Jewish East Side in which he lived; his other volumes of short stories include the depictions of European gypsy life in *Ghitza* (1921), *Murdo* (1923, published in England as *Love and the Gypsy*), *Ileana* (1924), *Singing Winds* (1926), and *Peasants* (1928). *The Marriage Guest* (1925) and *The Volga Boatman* (1926) are novels, and he has also written a play, *Costa's Daughter* (1923); a romantic biography of *Alexander* (1928); and several descriptive books, including *Around the World in New York* (1924), *On New Shores* (1925), *Story of the Gypsies* (1928), *Nights Abroad* (1928), and *The Incredible Balkans* (1933). *And*

This Is Only the Beginning (1941) is his autobiography.

Berenice, tale by Poe (q.v.), published in the *Southern Literary Messenger* (1835) and reprinted in *Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque* (1840).

Egaeus, gloomy and unhealthy, grows up with his cousin Berenice, who is 'agile, graceful, and overflowing with energy' until she contracts a form of epilepsy that causes frequent trances. The youth's mind becomes diseased, and he has fits of intense maniacal absorption in meaningless objects. Although he never loved Berenice while she was normal, he now madly proposes marriage. As the wedding approaches, he sees her as she is, pale and shrunken, and is appalled, but her white teeth fascinate him, and he feels insanely certain that to possess them would cure his own malady. When she is stricken with epilepsy and entombed as dead, Egaeus, unconscious of what he does, draws her teeth. He returns to the library, and there a servant makes him aware of what he has done, telling him that Berenice has not been dead but in a trance.

BERKELEY, GEORGE (1685–1753), Irish-born bishop of the Church of England, is famous as an idealistic philosopher. By 1723 he had conceived the project of founding a college in Bermuda, and wrote a poem to favor the cause, with the prophetic opening line, 'Westward the course of Empire takes its way.' While waiting to obtain funds for this project, he came to America (1729) and settled at Rhode Island for nearly three years. There he formed a Literary and Philosophical Society, and wrote *Alciphron* (1732), a series of Platonic dialogues opposing deism and finding proof of God's existence in Berkeley's own theory of vision. William Byrd and others pointed out the defects of the Bermuda plan, which failed completely, although King's College (now Columbia) was largely based on Berkeley's model. Berkeley Divinity School at New Haven is named in his honor, as is the city that is the site of the University of California.

BERKELEY, SIR WILLIAM (1606–77), was appointed colonial governor of Virginia in 1642 and served until 1652, when he was unseated by parliamentary order. He served again from 1660 until his death. During the early years of his administration, he improved trade, agricultural conditions, and the colony's defenses, but later he assumed such a dictatorial policy that the colonists under Nathaniel Bacon (q.v.) rose in rebellion. After Bacon's death, Berkeley entered upon a program of executions and confiscations that supposedly led Charles II to remark, 'The old fool has killed more people in that naked country than I have done for the murder of my father.'

BERLIN, IRVING (1888–), Russian-born composer of jazz, was brought to the U.S. in 1893. An innovator of ragtime, he graduated from Tin Pan Alley to national celebrity with such successful pieces as *Alexander's Ragtime Band* (1911), *Everybody's Doin' It* (1911). Later compositions included *Always* (1925), *Remember* (1925), and *What'll I Do?* (1925). His biography was written by Alexander Woollcott (1925).

BERNARD, SIR FRANCIS (1712–79), colonial governor of New Jersey (1758–60) and Massachusetts (1760–69). He sympathized with the feelings of the colonists, but was required by his position to enforce the Stamp Act and quarter troops in Boston. Although his unpopularity led the assembly to prefer charges against him, he was exonerated by the home government after his recall.

BERNARD, WILLIAM BAYLE (1807–75), dramatist who helped popularize the stage type of the eccentric rural American. Among the 100 successful plays that he wrote were: *The Dumb Belle* (1831); *The Kentuckian; or, A Trip to New York* (1833), a revision of Paulding's *Lion of the West; His Last Legs* (1839); and an early dramatization of *Rip Van Winkle* (1832). His *Retrospections of America* (1887) was edited by Brander Matthews.

Bernice, play by Susan Glaspell (q.v.).

Best sellers, term loosely applied to books that achieve remarkable popularity, whether for a brief time or during a period of many years. Seldom of great literary significance, such works are frequently ephemeral and dependent upon contemporary vogues or sensations. Nevertheless, the best-selling book in the U.S., as in other Christian countries, has been the Bible. Such organizations as the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, the American Tract Society, and the Gideon Society have been instrumental in distributing Bibles as well as other religious and moral books. The publications of special sects, like the *Book of Mormon* and

Science and Health, have been widely circulated, and among the best sellers of colonial times were the *New England Primer* and *The Day of Doom*. Almanacs, annuals, and gift books later enjoyed large sales, and among the popular chapbooks was Weems's life of Washington. Dime novels (q.v.) reached sales in the hundreds of thousands during the 19th century, when children's literature (q.v.) began also to furnish best sellers. *Hiawatha* (1855), *Nothing to Wear* (1857), and 'Plain Language from Truthful James' (1870) were among the widely read poems of the 19th century, while Edgar Guest, Robert Service, Ella Wheeler Wilcox, and James Whitcomb Riley have been the poets most generally popular in the U.S. *The Boston Cooking-School Cook Book* (1896) is a famous best seller, as are the Webster and Worcester dictionaries, and such school texts as *Webster's Spelling Book*, Caleb Bingham's primers, and McGuffey's *Eclectic Readers*. The popularity of the novel is the most significant aspect of best-selling literature in America, and a partial list of American fiction which has reached sales in the hundreds of thousands, and sometimes millions, includes: *Charlotte Temple* (1794), *The Sketch Book* (1819–20) *Uncle Tom's Cabin* (1852), *The Lamplighter* (1854), *Ten Nights in a Barroom* (1854), 'The Man Without a Country' (1865), *St.Elmo* (1867), *The Gates Ajar* (1868), *Barriers Burned Away* (1872), *Tom Sawyer* (1876), *Ben-Hur* (1880), *Looking Backward* (1888), *The Story of the Other Wise Man* (1896), *In His Steps* (1897), *Hugh Wynne* (1897), *Soldiers of Fortune* (1897), *When Knighthood Was in Flower* (1898), *David Harum* (1898), *A Message to Garcia* (1899), *Janice Meredith* (1899), *To Have and to Hold* (1900), *The Virginian* (1902), *Ranson's Folly* (1902), *Call of the Wild* (1903), *The Little Shepherd of Kingdom Come* (1903), *The Crossing* (1904), *The Clansman* (1905), *The Trail of the Lonesome Pine* (1908), *The Winning of Barbara Worth* (1911), *Riders of the Purple Sage* (1912), *Penrod* (1914), *Dere Mable!* (1918), *The Covered Wagon* (1922), *Gentlemen Prefer Blondes* (1926), *Anthony Adverse* (1933), and *Gone With the Wind* (1936). Of these, *Uncle Tom's Cabin* was the first American novel to sell more than 1,000,000 copies, *In His Steps* has been the most popular, and *Gone With the Wind* has been the fastest selling. The most popular types of American fiction, although not always represented by single books, are detective stories (q.v.), novels of Western adventure by such authors as Harold Bell Wright and Zane Grey, and sentimental feminine fiction by such authors as Kathleen Norris, the current successor to Fanny Fern, Mrs.E.D.E.N. Southworth, and similar 19th-century writers. Popular plays may be considered in the category of best sellers, and the greatest stage successes in the U.S. have included *The Drunkard*, *A Trip to Chinatown*, *The Old Homestead*, *Our American Cousin*, *Under the Gaslight*, *East Lynne*, *Rip Van Winkle*, *Sherlock Holmes*, *The Squaw Man*, *Lightnin'*, *Abie's Irish Rose*, *The Green Pastures*, and *Tobacco Road*.

Bethel Community, patriarchal agricultural colony (1844–80) of Germans and a few Pennsylvania Dutch, directed by Dr. William Keil, a Prussian immigrant, occupied about 4,000 acres in Missouri. Loosely organized, it insisted on community of goods and labor, but encouraged marriage and maintained strict standards of family life. It was dissolved soon after the death of Keil. The Aurora Community in Oregon (1856–81) was a similar organization founded by Keil.

Better Sort, The, stories by Henry James (q.v.).

BEVERIDGE, ALBERT JEREMIAH (1862–1927), insurgent Republican senator from Indiana (1899–1911), was an organizer of the Progressive party. After the defeat of this organization in his state, he turned to historical writing, producing a *Life of John Marshall* (4 vols.,1916–19; Pulitzer Prize, 1920), which is also a history of the early years of the U.S. Supreme Court. His incomplete *Life of Abraham Lincoln* (2 vols.,1928) is noted for its treatment of Lincoln's career to 1858. C.G.Bowers has written a political history of *Beveridge and the Progressive Era* (1932).

BEVERLEY, ROBERT (*c.*1673–1722), Virginia planter and minor statesman, wrote *The History and Present State of Virginia* (1705, enlarged 1722) with the intention of replacing the work of John Oldmixon and other English historians, whom he regarded as superficial. His work falls into four parts: (1) history to 1706; (2) natural resources; (3) native Indians; and (4) present state of the country. In the section on Indians he ridicules both Hennepin and Lahontan, and throughout he writes in a shrewd, lively manner, with humor play-

ing both on the Southern planter and the foreign critic.

Beyond the Horizon, play by Eugene O'Neill (q.v.), produced and published in 1920, when it won the Pulitzer Prize.

Robert Mayo's poetic nature causes him to dislike work on his father's farm, and he plans to seek adventure as a seaman. His brother Andrew, better adapted to farm life, has been his rival for the love of Ruth Atkins, but, when she reveals that she loves Robert, Andrew goes to sea in his place. In the next three years Ruth's passion fades, and Robert fails as a farmer. Persecuted by the complaints of his wife and her mother, he is consoled only by his daughter and his books, while Ruth sustains the hope that Andrew still loves her and will return. Andrew, home for a day, shows that travel has only made him hard and commonplace, and he reveals to Ruth that his love for her soon passed. Disillusioned and poverty-stricken, the family passes another five years on the farm. Robert's daughter dies, his wife is apathetic, and Andrew returns only when Robert is dying of consumption. Escaping from his bed at the last, he watches the sunrise from a hill: 'It isn't the end. It's a free beginning—the start of my voyage! I've won to my trip—the right of release—beyond the horizon!'

Bianca Visconti, blank verse romantic tragedy by N.P.Willis (q.v.), produced in 1837 and published in 1839. The play, set in 15th-century Italy, concerns the Duke of Milan, Francesco Sforza, and his wife, Bianca Visconti. The Visconti family, jealous of the power of the Sforzas, arranges to have the duke killed, but Bianca, overhearing the plot, substitutes her page Giulio for her husband. After Giulio's death, she discovers that he was her brother in disguise, and though she has won victory for her husband, she dies, half-crazed, of a broken heart.

Bibelot, The, see *Mosher*.

Biblical Repertory (1825–88), Presbyterian periodical, the most important organ of its church until 1878, when it was rechristened *The Princeton Review* and changed from an emphasis on theology to compete with *The North American Review*. After suspending publication in 1884, it was revived two years later as *The New Princeton Review*, an eclectic literary and critical magazine whose contributors included C.D.Warner, Lowell, Theodore Roosevelt, Wilson, C.E.Norton, and Stedman.

BIDDLE, NICHOLAS (1786–1844), Philadelphia financier and scholar, was educated at the University of Pennsylvania and at Princeton, studied law in Philadelphia, and spent several years in Europe before returning to Philadelphia in 1807. There he became associated with Joseph Dennie, edited the *Port Folio* (1812), and, assisted by Paul Allen, compiled and edited the notes and journals of the Lewis and Clark expedition, published as the *History of the Expedition of Captains Lewis and Clark* (1814). The exigencies of the War of 1812 caused Biddle to abandon these interests for public office, and he served in the state senate as well as aiding in financing the war. At the request of his friend, President Monroe, he compiled a digest of international exchange, *Commercial Regulations* (1819), and in the same year became a director of the Bank of the United States (q.v.), of which he was president (1822–39). His conservative administration of the Bank, and his opposition to Jackson's attempt to abolish it, deeply influenced U.S. politics and finance during these years.

BIERCE, AMBROSE [GWINETT] (1842–1914?), born in Ohio, served in the Civil War and became a brilliant and bitter journalist in San Francisco. In England (1872–6) he was on the staff of *Fun*, contributed to *Hood's Comic Almanac*, edited two issues of *The Lantern* for the exiled Empress Eugenie, and published under the pseudonym Dod Grile three collections of his vitriolic sketches and witticisms, *The Fiend's Delight* (1872), *Nuggets and Dust Panned Out in California* (1872), and *Cobwebs from an Empty Skull* (1874). Returning to San Francisco, he again devoted himself to journalism, contributing a column of 'Prattle' to Hearst's *Examiner*, and by his bitter wit and satire established himself as the literary dictator of the Pacific Coast, strongly influencing many writers, including his friend George Sterling. Much of his work was pot-boiling, but in 1891 he issued *Tales of Soldiers and Civilians* (q.v.), a collection of grim, vivid stories, reminiscent of Poe's tales of horror, which are marked by an ingenious use of the surprise ending, a sardonic humor, and a realistic study of tense emotional states. This was

followed by *The Monk and the Hangman's Daughter* (1892), a medieval romance translated with a collaborator from the German of Richard Voss, and *Black Beetles in Amber* (1892), witty satirical verses. Later poems are collected in *Shapes of Clay* (1903). *Can Such Things Be?* (q.v.,1893) is a second volume of tales, also dealing with episodes of the Civil War and the California frontier, with the supernaturalism, horror, and sardonic humor of the earlier volume. In 1897 Bierce went to Washington as correspondent for the Hearst newspapers, and there he collected *The Cynic's Word Book* (1906), retitled *The Devil's Dictionary* (q.v.,1911), a volume of ironic definitions whose temper is elaborated in *Fantastic Fables* (1899), an Æsopian collection concerned with matters of contemporary economics and politics. *The Shadow on the Dial* (1909) is a series of disillusioned essays on contemporary civilization. For several years Bierce was occupied with editing his *Collected Works* (1909–12), 12 volumes of his better prose and verse, interlarded with a good deal of journalism. Tired of American civilization, in 1913 he settled his affairs and disappeared into war-torn Mexico, to seek 'the good, kind darkness.' Although many weird stories have been told concerning his fate, it is probable that in Mexico he found during 1914 the euthanasia he desired.

BIERSTADT, ALBERT (1830–1902), German-born landscape painter of the late Hudson River School, known for his huge, meticulously painted canvases of the Rocky Mountains and Yosemite Valley.

Big Bear of Arkansas, The, story of T.B. Thorpe (q.v.), one of the most famous tall tales of the Southwest, tells of a hunter's adventures in attempting to shoot 'an unhuntable bear,' finally killed because he 'died when his time come.' The tale first appeared in the *Spirit of the Times* (1841), and was reprinted in a collection bearing its title edited by W.T. Porter, and in the author's *The Hive of the Bee Hunter* (1854).

Big Money, The, novel by Dos Passos, published in 1936. It is the last of the trilogy *U.S.A.* (collected 1938), following *The 42nd Parallel* (q.v.,1930) and *1919* (q.v.,1932). Interspersed in the narrative are brief biographies of Frederick Taylor, Ford, Veblen, Isadora Duncan, the Wright Brothers, Valentino, Frank Lloyd Wright, Hearst, and Insull. For critical discussion, see *Dos Passos.*

The war hero Charley Anderson returns to New York to organize an airplane factory, intending to produce better planes and avoid the profit motive. Progressively disillusioned, he joins a large Detroit plane factory, marries the heiress Gladys Wheatley, takes to drink, gambles in the stock market, and is swindled by his associates. In Florida to recuperate, he has an affair with Margo Dowling, is divorced by Gladys, enters a fraudulent land deal, and is killed in an automobile accident.

Margo, after an unhappy childhood, goes to New York, hopes to have a stage career, is seduced by her stepfather, and elopes to Havana with a Cuban dancer. Deserted by her husband, she becomes a New York chorus girl, drifts to Miami, and after her affair with Charley uses the last of his money to go to Hollywood. There she marries a producer, has a brief success in motion pictures, and sinks into obscurity.

Mary French, daughter of a Colorado doctor, attends Vassar, works on a Pittsburgh paper, is discharged for her sympathetic reporting of a steel strike, and aids the strikers. She lives for a time with the dishonest labor leader G.H.Barrow, but leaves him to do union work and aid her Communist lover Ben Compton. Disillusioned by Ben's arrest, the loss of another lover, and the outcome of the Sacco-Vanzetti case, she quits these activities, but refuses Barrow's proposal of marriage. When Eveline Hutchins Johnson, who has devoted herself to a circle of intellectual celebrities, commits suicide over a love affair, Mary realizes the futility of such a life, and plunges again into labor work.

Richard Ellsworth Savage is alone able to cope with the era, accepting its standards and opportunistically serving the 'public relations' firm of J.W.Moorehouse, whose successor he promises to become.

The final character is a 'vag,' hitchhiking across the continent, who thinks of the comfort of the passengers in a plane overhead, and of his youthful beliefs: 'went to school, books said opportunity, ads promised speed, own your own home, shine bigger than your neighbor, the radio crooner whispered girls, ghosts of platinum girls coaxed from the screen, millions in winnings were chalked up on the boards in the offices . . .'

BIGGERS, Earl Derr (1884–1933), born in Ohio, educated at Harvard, became a journalist in Boston and later won fame as a popular novelist and playwright. He is best known for *The Seven Keys to Baldpate* (1913), a melodramatic story set in a lonely mountain inn, and a series of detective novels whose hero is the enigmatic Chinese sleuth, Charlie Chan. Among these are: *The Chinese Parrot* (1926), *Behind That Curtain* (1928), and *The Black Camel* (1929).

Biglow Papers, The, two series of satirical verses in Yankee dialect by Lowell (q.v.), the first written in opposition to the Mexican War and the second in support of the North during the Civil War. The first of the verses appeared in *The Boston Courier* (1846), and the first series was published in book form in 1848, while the second appeared in the *Atlantic Monthly* during the Civil War, and was collected in 1867. Both are purportedly written by the young New England farmer Hosea Biglow, and edited with a complicated pseudo-critical apparatus by Homer Wilbur, 'Pastor of the First Church in Jaalam.'

Of the nine 'letters' in the first series, three represent versified epistles from Hosea's friend, Birdofredom Sawin, 'Private in the Massachusetts Regiment,' who swallows the propaganda of 'manifest destiny' but comes to disappointment and disillusion. ('Nimepunce a day fer killin' folks comes kind o' low fer murder.') The remaining six are: Hosea's satirical portrait of a recruiting sergeant; his satire of a hypocritical politician, 'What Mr. Robinson Thinks'; his parody of an address by a State Street stump speaker; 'The Debate in the Sennit,' burlesquing a speech by Calhoun; the pusillanimous 'Pious Editor's Creed'; and the declaration of principles by a supposed presidential candidate, which leaves him uncommitted, 'frontin' South by North.'

The second series, with a critical introduction over Lowell's signature, includes 'The Courtin',' a humorous narrative in dialect verse, and 11 satirical 'letters,' including two from Birdofredom Sawin, now resident in the South and gulled by Confederate propaganda; 'Mason and Slidell: A Yankee Idyll'; malicious burlesque speeches by Jefferson Davis and a hypocritical man of wealth, 'Honourable Preserved Doe'; an appeal to sentiment, 'Sunthin' in the Pastoral Line'; a demand that the Confederate 'system' be crushed ('Conciliate? it jest means *be kicked*'); 'Kettelopotomachia,' macaronic Latin verses by Parson Wilbur; an idyllic depiction of the approaching peace; and a view of Reconstruction, 'Mr.Hosea Biglow's Speech in March Meeting.'

BILL ARP, pseudonym of Charles H. Smith (q.v.).

Bill of Rights, the first ten amendments to the U.S. Constitution (q.v.), passed in 1791, were framed largely by Madison, Patrick Henry, and R.H.Lee. Their main guarantees are the freedom of worship, of speech, of press, of assembly, of petition for redress of grievances, and against being deprived of life, liberty, or property without 'due process of law.' An important source was the Virginia Declaration of Rights (1776), framed by George Mason.

BILLINGS, Josh, pseudonym of H.W. Shaw (q.v.).

BILLINGS, William (1746–1800), Boston tanner, became a professional composer because he wished to reform the bare and tedious psalmody of the period. He published *The New England Psalm Singer* (1770), his own novel settings of religious poetry, and during the Revolution wrote patriotic hymns and anthems, including the belligerent *Chester* and paraphrases of the Psalms invoking God's grace exclusively for the rebels.

Billy Budd, novelette by Melville (q.v.), was written just before his death and published in 1924.

Billy Budd is the typical Handsome Sailor of 18th-century balladry, and because of his innocence and beauty is hated by Claggart, a dark, demon-haunted petty officer. In his simplicity, Billy cannot understand why Claggart should hate him, why evil should desire to destroy good. Claggart concocts a fantastic story of mutiny, supposedly plotted by Billy, whom he accuses to the captain. Billy, unable to speak, in his only act of rebellion strikes Claggart a fatal blow. Captain Vere, who sympathizes with Billy and recognizes his essential innocence, is nevertheless forced to condemn him, and though Billy is hanged he lives on as a legend among sailors.

BILLY THE KID, sobriquet of William H. Bonney (1859–81), desperado of

the Southwest, who was a leader in the Lincoln County cattle war in New Mexico. His subsequent career of wholesale cattle stealing brought his score of murders to 21 before he was finally killed by a sheriff. The Kid is the subject of many stories and ballads.

Bimelers, see *Zoar.*

BINGHAM, CALEB (1757–1817), author of school texts, whose books, *The American Preceptor* (1794) and *The Columbian Orator* (1797), were constant companions of the Bible and the Psalms in New England schools. He translated Chateaubriand's *Atala* (1802).

BINGHAM, GEORGE CALEB (1811–79), moved to Missouri from Virginia as a boy, and received his early training in painting from Chester Harding. He exhibited a predilection for commonplace American scenes painted in the vigorous manner of a provincial artist, and his hearty, forthright scenes of frontier and river life include the *Jolly Flatboatmen, Raftsmen Playing Cards,* and *Stump Speaking.* The technical suavity he learned while studying at Düsseldorf (1856) lowered the quality of his later paintings.

BINNS, ARCHIE (1899–), novelist of the Northwest, whose books include: *Lightship* (1934), based on his own experiences on a coast vessel; *The Laurels Are Cut Down* (1937), set in his native Puget Sound region; *The Land is Bright* (1939), dealing with the journey over the Oregon Trail in the 1850's, and *Mighty Mountain* (1940), a story of mid-19th century Washington pioneers. *Northwest Gateway* (1941) is a history of the port of Seattle.

Birch, HARVEY, hero of *The Spy* (q.v.).

Birches, blank verse lyric by Robert Frost (q.v.), published in *Mountain Interval* (1916). The poet describes his boyhood pleasure in climbing birch trees, swinging from the tops until the supple trunks bent in a curve to the ground. He dreams of being again 'a swinger of birches,' and finds in this occupation a symbol for his desired surcease from 'considerations,' in which he might

> go by climbing a birch tree . . .
> *Toward* heaven, till the tree could bear no more,
> But dipped its top and set me down again.
> That would be good both going and coming back.

BIRD, ROBERT MONTGOMERY (1806–54), born in Delaware, studied at the University of Pennsylvania (M.D.,1827), and taught at the Pennsylvania Medical College (1841–3), but is famous as a novelist and dramatist. His early romantic tragedies, and comedies of Philadelphia life such as *The City Looking Glass* (1828, published 1933) were followed by *Pelopidas,* an unproduced historical drama about the Theban revolt against Sparta, and *The Gladiator* (q.v.,1831), his most popular play. In 1832 his friend Forrest produced *Oralloossa* (q.v.), a tragedy concerned with the assassination of Pizarro, which he followed with Bird's best play, *The Broker of Bogota* (q.v.,1834). Bird revised *Metamora* (q.v.,1836) for Forrest, but then, discouraged by the actor's failure to keep financial agreements, broke with him and turned to writing fiction. In 1834 he published anonymously *Calavar; or, The Knight of the Conquest,* a tale of the Mexican conquistadors, which was later praised by Prescott. *The Infidel; or, The Fall of Mexico* (1835) is a sequel. *The Hawks of Hawk-Hollow* (q.v.,1835), a romance of the Revolution, deals with a prominent Pennsylvania family's decline because of disloyalty to the patriot cause. *Sheppard Lee* (1836) uses a psychological study of metempsychosis to satirize contemporary social conditions, and reflects Bird's Whig sympathies in regard to slavery. His finest novel, *Nick of the Woods; or, The Jibbenainosay* (q.v.,1837), was followed by *Peter Pilgrim; or, A Rambler's Recollections* (1838), a series of realistic travel sketches, and *The Adventures of Robin Day* (1839), a picaresque novel. Because of ill-health, he wrote no more books, but in 1847, after some years of retirement, became literary editor and part owner of the Philadelphia *North American,* which he helped to edit until his death.

Bird Woman, see *Sacagawea.*

Birds' Christmas Carol, The, story for children by Kate Wiggin (q.v.).

Birds of America, The, collection of color prints of some 500 species of birds by Audubon (q.v.), issued serially in an elephant folio edition (London, 1827–38), as engraved by Robert Havell, Jr. The original drawings by Audubon have disappeared, and it is uncertain how much of the fine artistic quality is due to the work of Havell. The accompanying text, writ-

ten with the more scholarly William MacGillivray, was issued as *Ornithological Biography* (5 vols.,1831–9). An octavo edition of *The Birds of America* (7 vols.,1840–4) was prepared by Audubon for American publication. The *Synopsis of the Birds of North America* (1839) is a methodical catalogue of the birds then known, and was also prepared with the assistance of MacGillivray. The drawings were said by Cuvier to be 'the most magnificent monument yet raised by art to science,' but their scientific basis has been questioned in some instances. Audubon's first-hand acquaintance with his subject and his impressionistic art give the work its high value and wide popularity.

Birds of Killingworth, The, one of the *Tales of a Wayside Inn* (q.v.).

BIRKBECK, Morris (1764–1825), emigrated to Illinois from England (1817), and attracted attention to the prairie region by his *Notes on a Journey . . . to the Territory of Illinois* (1817) and his *Letters from Illinois*. These books were much criticized by Cobbett, who was in the pay of Eastern land speculators.

BIRNEY, James Gillespie (1792–1857), early Southern antislavery leader, set forth his beliefs in a *Letter on the Political Obligations of Abolitionists* (1839), and was later nominated for the presidency by the Liberty Party (q.v.). His *Letters* have been published (2 vols.,1938).

Birth, novel by Zona Gale (q.v.).

Birth of a Nation, The, motion picture written by Thomas Dixon (q.v.) and filmed by D.W.Griffith (q.v.) in 1915. This story of the South during and after the Civil War provided the screen with its first large spectacle.

Birthmark, The, allegorical tale by Hawthorne (q.v.), published in *Mosses from an Old Manse* (1846).

Aylmer, a scientist, marries Georgiana, a beautiful woman whose single physical flaw is a tiny crimson birthmark on her left cheek, resembling a hand. The mark repels Aylmer, who determines to use his scientific knowledge to remove it. Assisted by his rude, earthy servant, Aminadab, he unsuccessfully tries every known method, finally using a powerful potion which, although it causes the birthmark to fade, causes her death also. Aminadab laughs, and the author concludes:

> Thus ever does the gross fatality of earth exult in its invariable triumph over the immortal essence which, in this dim sphere of half-development, demands the completeness of a higher state.

BISHOP, John Peale (1891–), Virginia-born author, resident on Cape Cod, whose poems are collected in *Green Fruit* (1917); *The Undertaker's Garland* (1922), written with Edmund Wilson; *Now With His Love* (1933); and *Minute Particulars* (1935). *Many Thousands Gone* (1931) is a book of stories, and *Act of Darkness* (1935) is a novel. Bishop is said to be the prototype of Tom D'Invilliers in *This Side of Paradise*.

BISHOP, Thomas Brigham (1835–1905), song composer of Portland, Maine, whose works were popular during the Civil War and much used by minstrel shows. He was the author of *When Johnny Comes Marching Home* and *Shoo, fly! don't bodder me!* and has been credited with the words of *John Brown's Body*.

Bitter Creek, novel by James Boyd (q.v.)

Black April, novel by Julia Peterkin (q.v.), published in 1927.

April, giant Negro foreman of a South Carolina cotton plantation and patriarchal leader of the local Negroes, has many illegitimate children, one of whom is the boy Breeze, through whose experiences the story is told. Breeze passes a happy childhood on Sandy Island, acquiring an intimate knowledge of nature and native superstition, but at the age of 12 goes to live with Cousin Big Sue, cook at the 'big house.' April's wife Leah is madly jealous of Big Sue's love for April, and in one of their quarrels Leah is killed. Sherry, April's son by Zeda, is sent away after he grows to manhood and becomes his father's rival. Big Sue's daughter, Joy, recently returned from school, mourns Sherry's absence, but soon elopes with April, and three months later is disgraced when she bears Sherry's son. April contracts gangrene in his legs, which are amputated, and he is returned broken in spirit as well as in body. Boll weevils nearly destroy the crop, and Sherry is recalled to be foreman. He becomes Joy's lover, although he is kind to his despondent father, who declines in health and soon dies, asking pathetically to be buried 'in a man-size box— . . . six feet fo'!'

Black Armour, poems by Elinor Wylie (q.v.).

Black Beetles in Amber, satirical verse by Ambrose Bierce (q.v.).

Black Belt, name applied to a large cotton-growing area in Alabama, mainly populated by Negroes; hence, to Negro districts in other states and cities.

Black Cat, The, story by Poe (q.v.), published in 1843 and collected in *Tales* (1845).

A condemned murderer tells of his crime and its discovery. For years he cherished a pet black cat, Pluto, until intemperate drinking led him to destroy one of its eyes during a fit of malevolence. The cat recovered, but its master's perverse mood continued, and he tied it by the neck to a tree. The same night, his home was destroyed by fire, except for a newly plastered wall that bore the image of a cat with a noose about its neck. Now poverty-stricken and degenerate, the man was haunted by this image, but nevertheless brought home a stray one-eyed cat, which had a single white mark on its black breast, resembling a gallows. He came to hate the animal, and one day attempted to kill it with an axe; murdering his wife when she interfered, he placed her body in a cellar recess that he concealed with plaster. When police came to make a search, they found nothing until a ghastly scream from the walled recess caused them to open it and discover the cat seated upon the head of the corpse.

BLACK HAWK (1767–1838), chief of the Sauk and Fox Indians, who refused to move west of the Mississippi in accordance with a treaty of 1804. Instead he made war on the frontier settlements (1832) in what is known as the Black Hawk War. His *Autobiography* (1833) defends his interpretation of the treaty and his subsequent action, which ended in his temporary imprisonment and the dispersal of his force.

Black Oxen, novel by Gertrude Atherton (q.v.), published in 1923.

Countess Zattiany, who was Mary Ogden, a New York belle, before her marriage to a Hungarian nobleman, is rejuvenated by a glandular operation, through which she resumes her youthful personality of 28, although she is now actually 58. While visiting New York, she falls in love with Lee Clavering, a successful young journalist, who persuades her to marry him, although she tells him the truth about herself. Their marriage is prevented only by the intervention of the Austrian Prince Hohenhauer, who revives her extreme interest in Austrian governmental affairs; and to Clavering's bitter disappointment she marries the prince in order to pursue her diplomatic career.

Black Riders, The, and Other Lines, volume of free verse by Stephen Crane (q.v.), published in 1895. Influenced by reading Emily Dickinson, Crane in these concise, intense unrimed poems foreshadows the work of the Imagists. Elliptical renderings of his naturalistic philosophy, they show his bewildered bitterness of youth buffeted by the great impersonal forces of the world.

BLACKBEARD, name commonly given to the pirate Edward Teach (also Thatch or Thach, *d.*1718), whose audacious cruelty in the West Indies and along the coast of Virginia and the Carolinas is the subject of numerous legends. He is said to have bribed the governor of North Carolina in order to obtain winter quarters from which to carry on his depredations. The situation became so intolerable that the governor of Virginia sent a vessel against the pirate, who in the ensuing sea fight was killed. The mania of searching for his supposed treasure is ridiculed in *The Disappointment* (q.v.,1767).

Blackfoot Indians, group of bison-hunting Algonquian tribes in Alberta and Montana, of which the Blackfoot proper are the most prominent. They once ranged from the Yellowstone River to the Rocky Mountains, and figure in diaries of 19th-century plainsmen, being noted for their constant warfare with the Crows and other tribes, and their unwavering hostility toward the whites. In Irving's *Adventures of Captain Bonneville* and the *Life* of Beckwourth they appear as horse thieves and ruffians, but they are romantically depicted in the operas of Arthur Nevin, whose music is based on a study of native themes. G.B.Grinnell and J.W.Schultz have also written on the Blackfoot.

Blacksmith, The Learned, sobriquet of Elihu Burritt (q.v.).

BLAINE, JAMES GILLESPIE (1830–93), a founder of the Republican party in Maine, later served as congressman (1863–75), senator (1875–81), and secretary of state under Garfield. Several times a candidate

for the presidential nomination, he was proposed for the candidacy in 1876 by Robert G. Ingersoll, who termed him the 'plumed knight' (q.v.), but was passed over in favor of Hayes. In 1884 he was the Republican candidate against Cleveland, and was nearly elected, but lost the influential Irish vote of New York when a tactless supporter referred to the Democrats as the party of 'Rum, Romanism, and Rebellion' (q.v.). Blaine's *Twenty Years in Congress* (2 vols.,1884–6) reviews his political career. The character of Ratcliffe in Henry Adams's *Democracy* is a supposed portrait of Blaine.

BLAIR, James (1655–1743), Scottish-born clergyman, politician, and leader of the Church of England in Virginia, was successful in withstanding the opposition of the governor, Andros, and managed to have him recalled (1697). He acted as governor of the colony (1740–1). He also founded William and Mary College (1693) of which he was president until his death, and with Henry Hartwell and Edward Chilton he wrote *The Present State of Virginia, and the College* (1697).

BLAKELOCK, Ralph Albert (1847–1919), self-taught landscape painter, whose works reflect his life of hardship and struggle. After a trip to the West, he often painted such subjects as the *Indian Encampment.* His brown- and yellow-toned canvases, in which tapestry-like trees are silhouetted against a luminous sky, have been compared with the works of Albert Ryder, whose fantastic imaginative sentiment he shared, but whose sound composition he lacked. He was committed to an asylum (1899), after becoming insane through poverty and worry.

BLAND, James A. (1854–1911), Negro composer born in New York state, was educated at Howard University, and toured the U.S. and England with a minstrel troupe. He wrote some 700 songs, of which the best known are *Carry Me Back to Old Virginny* (1875), *Oh, Dem Golden Slippers,* and *In the Morning by the Bright Light, In the Evening by the Moonlight* (1880).

BLAND, Richard (1710–76), Virginia antiquary and author of *An Enquiry into the Rights of the British Colonies* (1766), which asserted that the colonies owed their existence to the crown alone, and were hence under no obligation of allegiance to Parliament.

BLATCH, Harriot Stanton (1856–1940), daughter of Elizabeth Cady Stanton, was, like her mother, a leader of the woman suffrage movement, both in the U.S. and in England, where she lived for 20 years. Her works include: *Mobilizing Woman-Power* (1918); *A Woman's Point of View* (1920); a biography of her mother (1921); and her own memoirs, *Challenging Years* (1940).

BLAVATSKY, Helena Petrovna Hahn (1831–91), leader of the theosophic movement, was born in Russia and came to America (1874–8) after a wildly romantic and erratic career on the Continent, in the Near East, and in Egypt and India. After a period of spiritualism in America, Mme Blavatsky with the aid of Colonel Henry S. Olcott founded her Theosophical Society and published *Isis Unveiled* (1877), a plagiarized occult work denouncing the spiritualism she had formerly advocated. After leaving the U.S., she continued her theosophic preaching in India, which ended with exposés that drove her to Europe and England. Although afflicted with enough diseases to kill any ordinary person, she lived to see herself venerated as a martyr. The most important of her mystical writings is *The Secret Doctrine* (2 vols., 1888), an involved exposition of Theosophy.

BLEECKER, Ann Eliza (1752–83), born in New York City, after her marriage at the age of 17 lived in Poughkeepsie and later in a frontier village near Albany. Her epistolary novel, *The History of Maria Kittle* (1797), deals with the capture of an American woman by Indians during the French and Indian War. Her melancholy verse was collected in *The Posthumous Works of Ann Eliza Bleecker* (1793), to which was added *A Collection of Essays, Prose and Poetical* by her daughter, Margaretta Faugères (1771–1801).

Bleeding Kansas, see *Kansas-Nebraska Bill.*

Blind Raftery, novel by Donn-Byrne (q.v.).

Blithedale Romance, The, romance by Hawthorne (q.v.), published in 1852. Blithedale was suggested by Brook Farm, and the character Zenobia by Margaret Fuller, while Miles Coverdale is a fictional self-portrait.

Coverdale visits Blithedale Farm, near

Boston, a socialized community for the betterment of mankind. He meets Silas Forster, a lanky, uncouth farmer, and his wife; Zenobia, a passionate and queenly woman; Hollingsworth, a former blacksmith, who brings his sledgehammer method to bear upon the evils of society, but lacks the spark of spiritual light; and Priscilla, a delicate girl said to be a city seamstress. Zenobia and Priscilla both fall in love with Hollingsworth, who, however, loves mankind in the aggregate too fiercely to be gentle or just to individuals. Returning to the city, Coverdale meets the people of the community in a different atmosphere. Zenobia is again a wealthy woman of fashion, and actually Priscilla's half-sister, although this remains unknown. Priscilla falls under the mysterious influence of the mesmerist Westervelt, from whom she is rescued by Hollingsworth, and upon their return to Blithedale Hollingsworth gives his love to Priscilla, although he has previously wooed Zenobia to get money for his philanthropic work. Unable to bear suffering and defeat, Zenobia drowns herself. Hollingsworth marries Priscilla, but his energy and peace of mind are lost with Zenobia, and Priscilla, once the feeble member of the pair, is now the sole prop of his broken spirit. Coverdale, the subtle analyst of character, remains skeptical concerning human progress.

BLITZSTEIN, Marc (1905–), proletarian composer and playwright, whose works, experimental in form, include contributions to Labor Stage's *Pins and Needles* and several musical dramas, of which the best known is *The Cradle Will Rock* (1937), an 'opera' depicting the various elements of decadent capitalism, social injustice, and labor unity, which form the background of a mill strike.

Blix, novel by Frank Norris (q.v.), published in 1899. The story is partly autobiographical.

Condé (Condy) Rivers, a struggling San Francisco journalist, is friendly with Travis (Blix) Bessemer, the spirited daughter of a socially prominent family. They agree in disliking conventional society, frankly decide they are not in love, and become close comrades. While they explore the city together, Blix helps Condy to overcome a fondness for gambling, and encourages his ambition to write books. When they realize that they have fallen in love, they are in despair at Blix's approaching departure for an Eastern school. Just in time to make their marriage possible comes news that Condy's novel, refused for publication, has nevertheless won him a position as editor of an Eastern magazine.

BLOCH, Ernest (1880–), Jewish composer born in Switzerland, came to the U.S. (1916; naturalized 1924), where he has been a prominent teacher, directing conservatories in Cleveland and San Francisco. He has interpreted the ancient Hebrew spirit in a number of vivid and exalted works for orchestra and solo instruments, and later compositions in his mature style include a string quartet, violin sonata, suite for viola and piano, the neoclassical *Concerto Grosso* for piano and strings, and an 'epic rhapsody,' *America* (1927), which celebrates American history in a mood of intense idealism.

Blockade, The, unpublished play by General John Burgoyne (q.v.), was performed in Boston (1775) while the British army occupied the city. It is a farce ridiculing the valor of the rebel soldiers, and making light of the grave situation in which the British found themselves. Shortly after their evacuation of the city, the play was answered (March 1776) by an anonymous farce, *The Blockheads,* at first erroneously attributed to Mercy Otis Warren. *The Blockheads* is a dialogue between British soldiers and Tory refugees from Boston, concerned with Howe's abortive attempt to storm Dorchester Heights.

BLODGETT, Levi, see *Parker, Theodore.*

BLOOD, Benjamin Paul (1832–1919), philosopher, mystic, and poet, whose prosaic external life in upper New York state was contrasted with his rich and vivid inner experience. His principal poetic works are *The Bride of the Iconoclast* (1854), 'a long Shelleyesque poem in Spenserian stanzas,' and *The Colonnades* (1868), a philosophic blank verse epic. *The Philosophy of Justice* (1851) and *Optimism* (1860) are subtly conceived, very unorthodox interpretations of Christianity. Blood's reputation is chiefly based on his mystical belief in pluralism, self-induced through the use of anaesthetics. This philosophic creed he describes in *The Anaesthetic Revelation and the Gist of Philosophy* (1874), whose publication led to an extended correspondence with William James. The

final statement of Blood's pluralism is contained in his *Pluriverse* (1920).

Blood of the Conquerors, novel by Harvey Fergusson (q.v.).

Bloody shirt, to wave the, phrase signifying the reopening of factious strife on party or sectional questions. Its origin is attributed to Senator Oliver P. Morton, a leader of the Reconstruction, and it is generally applied to those who reawakened the bitterness of Civil War feeling by insisting on vindictive Reconstruction policies in the South.

BLOOMER, AMELIA JENKS (1818–94), temperance and suffrage reformer, who published *The Lily* (1848–54), a periodical devoted to these causes. She adopted a reformed trouser dress for women, which was named 'bloomers' in her honor.

Bloudy Tenent of Persecution, The, tract by Roger Williams (q.v.), written primarily as an attack on John Cotton, was published in London (1644). The treatise is in the form of a dialogue between two fugitive angelic characters, Truth and Peace, who, after a long separation, are still unable to find a home in any quarter of the civilized world, and meet in a dark refuge. Their conversation, embracing the entire subject of intellectual freedom in civil and ecclesiastical governments, is an argument for democratic liberty and tolerance, and attacks persecution for cause of conscience. The 'bloudy and slaughterous conclusions' of Cotton and the other persecutors are answered, according to the author, in 'spiritually white milk.' Cotton's reply, *The Bloudy Tenent Washed and Made White in the Bloud of the Lamb* (1647), was answered by another tract on liberty of conscience, *The Bloudy Tenent Yet More Bloudy: by Mr.Cotton's Endeavour to Wash It White in the Bloud of the Lamb* (1652), a second dialogue between Truth and Peace.

Blue and the Gray, popular names respectively for the armies of the North and South during the Civil War, referring to the color of their uniforms. A song bearing this title was composed in 1867 by F.M. Finch. Judson Kilpatrick and J.O.Moore were the authors of *Blue and the Gray; or, War Is Hell*, a play revised and revived by Christopher Morley in 1929. A song with the same title was written by Paul Dresser.

Blue Grass region, the rolling lowland basin in the eastern part of Kentucky, bounded by the Ohio River and a rim of low mountains, and having as its center the town of Lexington. The area, known for its rich soil and bluish grass, is famed as a home of race-horse breeding, which has led to the establishment of the annual Kentucky Derby. It figures frequently in local-color fiction, especially in the works of James Lane Allen. The entire state is popularly called the Blue Grass State.

Blue Hotel, The, see *Monster, The, and Other Stories*.

Blue laws, term applied to colonial legislation, especially in New England, which restricted personal action in order to improve community morality. A collection of such laws was made by the Reverend Samuel Peters in his derogatory *General History of Connecticut* (London, 1781), and he was the first to popularize the term. His hatred of republicanism and nonconformity led him to make gross misrepresentations about the stringency of these laws, but his discredited statements have generally found their way into the popular mind. Such blue laws as the prohibition of sports and work on the Sabbath, and compulsory church attendance disappeared generally following the Revolution, but there are still similar laws in many places, like those in some states prohibiting the use of tobacco or liquor.

Blues, species of ragtime dance-songs, which owes its name to the colloquial term for mental depression. The blues probably originated in the early 1900's among the Negroes of the South, who gave vent to their feelings not in choral treatment, as is common in spirituals, but in brief, individual plaints. W.C.Handy, the 'father of the blues,' adapted the style and the themes born among the nomadic members of his own race in writing such songs as the *Memphis Blues* (1909) and the *St. Louis Blues* (1914), which won him popular fame and founded a new musical manner. The typical blues has a twelve-bar melody and a three-line verse, with a long pause after the first line usually filled by some interpolation. The characteristic harmony of the blues occurs when a seventh is added to a subdominant chord, and flatted. Abhorring by nature the vacuum at the ends of lines, later orchestras filled in with all possible extraneous noises, and it was from these improvisations that the

later jazz (q.v.) was born. Handy edited *Blues: An Anthology* (1926), which reprints works of other composers, including excerpts from the *Rhapsody in Blue* and *Concerto in F* of Gershwin, symphonic adaptations of the blues style.

BLY, NELLY, pseudonym of Elizabeth C. Seaman (q.v.).

BOAS, FRANZ (1858–), German-born anthropologist and professor at Columbia (1899–). Besides making many explorations, he has published books on the ethnology and folklore of several American Indian tribes, and contributed to the *Handbook of American Indian Languages* (2 vols.,1911–12). His original research has resulted in such works as *Changes in Bodily Form of Descendants of Immigrants* (1912) and *Materials for the Study of Inheritance in Man* (1928). Among his general writings are *The Mind of Primitive Man* (1911), *Primitive Art* (1927), and *Anthropology and Modern Life* (revised edition, 1932).

Boat of Longing, The, novel by O.E. Rölvaag (q.v.).

BODENHEIM, MAXWELL (1892–), born in Mississippi, moved to Chicago and then to New York, where he published *Minna and Myself* (1918), a volume of poems using the sharply pictorial technique of Imagism. The attitude in these poems, marked by a highly mannered use of language and the author's posturing as an aesthetic misanthrope sardonically contemplating the world, is also evident in such later verse as *Advice* (1920), *Introducing Irony* (1922), *Against This Age* (1923), *The Sardonic Arm* (1923), *Returning to Emotion* (1927), *The King of Spain and Other Poems* (1928), and *Bringing Jazz* (1930). Bodenheim's novels, including *Crazy Man* (1924), *Replenishing Jessica* (1925), *Sixty Seconds* (1929), and *Naked on Roller Skates* (1931), showed a similar vivacious cynicism, iconoclasm, and jazz-age paganism. He wrote several plays, including *The Master-Poisoner* (1918), with Ben Hecht, with whom he later entered into a literary feud.

Body of Liberties, code of 100 fundamental laws drafted by Nathaniel Ward, adopted by the General Court of Massachusetts (Dec. 1641) as the first written law of the colony. It was based primarily on the English common law and was similar to the Bill of Rights. It was replaced by *The Book of the General Lawes and Libertyes . . .* (1648).

BOGAN, LOUISE (1897–), born in Maine and resident in New York, has published three books of poems: *Body of This Death* (1923); *Dark Summer* (1929); and *The Sleeping Fury* (1937). Her spare sensitive verse, although metaphysical in tone, is distinguished by intense emotion and incisive imagery in expressing personal reactions to the tragic aspects of experience.

BOJER, JOHAN (1872–), Norwegian novelist, visited the U.S. (1923) to gather materials for his novel, *The Emigrants* (q.v.,1925), concerned with the settling of the Middle West by Norwegian farmers. He corresponded and talked with Rölvaag, whose *Giants in the Earth* deals with the same subject and was written at the same time, and each acknowledged the merits of the other's treatment.

BOK, EDWARD WILLIAM (1863–1930), born in the Netherlands, came to the U.S. at the age of seven, and at 26 became editor of the *Ladies Home Journal,* which under his direction became a model for similar publications. *The Americanization of Edward Bok* (1920, Pulitzer Prize) is the best known of his books.

BOKER, GEORGE HENRY (1823–90), Philadelphia playwright, showed his romantic leanings by the medieval Spanish setting of his first blank verse tragedy, *Calaynos* (1849.) He tried his hand at romantic comedy in *The Betrothal* (1850), at social satire in *The World a Mask* (1851), and at blank verse comedy in *The Widow's Marriage,* but his special forte was the dignified romantic tragedy. *Leonor de Guzman* (1853) demonstrated his power in this form, contrasting the character of Leonor, the mistress of Alfonso XII, with that of his wife, Queen Maria. Boker's greatest achievement was *Francesca da Rimini* (1855), a verse tragedy of high literary quality as well as good theater, telling of the love of Paolo and Francesca and their murder by Prince Lanciotto, his brother and her husband. The play was successfully revived (1885–6), and this encouraged the author to write two similar plays, *Nydia* and *Glaucus,* suggested by Bulwer's *Last Days of Pompeii,* but these were never produced. Boker also wrote occasional poems and several narrative poems, some of them published in

his *Plays and Poems* (1856). He served as minister to Turkey (1871–5) and minister to Russia (1875–9). *Nydia* and *Sonnets: A Sequence on Profane Love* were published in 1929.

BOLTON, HERBERT EUGENE (1870–), professor of history at the University of California, whose reputation as an outstanding authority on the history of the Spanish-American frontier rests on such books as *Texas in the Middle Eighteenth Century* (1915), *The Spanish Borderlands* (1921), *Outpost of Empire* (1931), *New Spain and the Anglo-American West* (1933), and *Rim of Christendom* (1936).

Bond and Free, lyric poem in iambic tetrameter, by Robert Frost (q.v.), published in *Mountain Interval* (1916).

Describing love as clinging to earth, and thought as free to cleave 'the interstellar gloom,' the poet appraises thought's 'gains in heaven as what they are,' but suggests:

> . . . some say Love by being thrall
> And simply staying possesses all.

Bonhomme Richard, see *Jones, John Paul.*

Bonifacius, essay by Cotton Mather (q.v.), was published in 1710 with the subtitle *An Essay Upon the Good, That Is to be Devised and Designed . . .* , and therefore is frequently known as *Essays to Do Good,* under which title it was often republished. It was much admired by Franklin, looking forward as it did to his Yankee method of the systematic transaction of good deeds on scientific business principles.

BONNER, SHERWOOD, pseudonym of Katherine MacDowell (q.v.).

BONNEVILLE, BENJAMIN LOUIS EULALIE DE (1796–1878), U.S. army officer stationed at frontier posts, who, during a two-year leave, led an expedition in the Rocky Mountain region. This episode is the subject of Irving's *Adventures of Captain Bonneville, U.S.A.* (1837).

Bonnybel Vane, see *Henry St.John, Gentleman.*

Book of Annandale, The, blank verse narrative by E.A.Robinson (q.v.), published in *Captain Craig* (1902).

After the funeral of his young wife Miriam, George Annandale contemplates the altered life before him, and wonders at his lack of emotion. He thinks mainly of the curious, inspired book that he wrote years before, and becomes drowsy as he thinks of the dead Miriam and the inscrutable meaning of the book, mingling the two in a dream vision: The woman Damaris, in some mysterious place, considers the loss, long before, of her husband Argan, who on his deathbed made her promise never to remarry. She gave her word gladly, but now doubts the wisdom of denying love in life. As the irretrievable promise haunts her, she is like 'one long imprisoned in a twilight cave,' until she finds release through the red-bound book of Annandale, which teaches her 'the triumph and the magic of the soul' and her obligation to love and suffer, thus vindicating 'the truth of what she was.'

Book of Liberties, see *Body of Liberties.*

Book of Mormon, see *Mormon.*

Bookman, The (1895–1933), monthly magazine of literature and criticism. Modeled after the English *Bookman,* it gave special attention to American literature, although prominent English authors were frequent contributors. Until 1902 it was edited by H.T.Peck, with F.M.Colby among the associate editors, and received much adverse criticism from American authors. Its standards continued to be conservative until the editorship of Burton Rascoe (1927–8), who published in it such fiction as Upton Sinclair's *Boston.* Upon the suspension of *The Bookman,* its last editor, Seward Collins, founded *The American Review* (q.v.).

BOONE, DANIEL (1734–1820), born near Reading, Pennsylvania, moved with his parents to North Carolina, and from 1769 to 1771 made an extended exploration of Kentucky. As an agent of the Transylvania Company, he led an armed band of colonists along the Wilderness Road (q.v.) through the Cumberland Gap to the site of Boonesborough, where a fort was erected in 1775. After the region was made a county of Virginia (1776), he held many important local offices, and his activities in behalf of the settlement were interrupted only by a brief captivity (Feb.–June 1778) by the Shawnees. When his improperly registered land tracts were lost by a series of ejectment suits, he moved to Point Pleasant (now West Virginia), and in 1798 or 1799 moved again to a tract granted him by the Spanish in the Femme Osage valley, Missouri. The legend of

Boone as the discoverer of Kentucky and the greatest of frontiersmen was begun with the biography written by John Filson (q.v.), and extended by Byron's seven stanzas in the eighth canto of *Don Juan* (1823), as well as by many laudatory references in contemporary literature and tall tales. Audubon, who met Boone in Missouri, retold one of his adventures in the *Ornithological Biography*. He is a frequent figure in later fiction, as in Churchill's *The Crossing*.

BOOTH, Junius Brutus (1796–1852), British actor, emigrated to the U.S. in 1821. Here, despite attacks of insanity, intemperance, and general irresponsibility, he played in theaters throughout the country, augmenting his already established reputation as a great tragedian.

Edwin Thomas Booth (1833–93), his son, was also a prominent tragedian, being best known for his interpretations of Shakespearean roles. He was the founder and first president of the Players Club. Otis Skinner edited his letters, with a biographical commentary, as *The Last Tragedian* (1939).

John Wilkes Booth (1838–65), another son, was a noted actor. While acting in *Our American Cousin* at Ford's Theatre in Washington (April 14, 1865), he shot President Lincoln, and while escaping shouted '*Sic semper tyrannis*! The South is avenged!' He was discovered a fortnight later at Bowling Green, Virginia, and, after the barn in which he was hiding was set afire, attempted to escape and was shot.

Bootlegging, slang term in the U.S. for the illegal manufacture and distribution of liquor, by extension referring also to other products. During the 19th century, when taxes on alcohol were high, there was frequent smuggling, and 'moonshiners' in the Southern mountains became notorious for their illicit manufacture of corn whisky, described in Southern literature from Joel Chandler Harris to Faulkner. During the era of national prohibition (q.v., 1920–33), the manufacture and sale of alcoholic beverages became a large-scale illegal industry, and the consequent general disrespect for law led to a dangerous increase in criminality. Gangsters organized bootlegging activities without regard for ordinary processes of justice, and Chicago and other cities were victimized by ruthless gang warfare. Leaders like Al Capone became millionaires, and were able to corrupt politicians and police, extending their interests from liquor and narcotics to the enforced 'protection' of many previously legitimate businesses. These conditions were in part responsible for repeal of the 18th Amendment, since which the Federal Bureau of Investigation and other agencies have worked to curb gang activities. The Wickersham Report (1931) is a comprehensive survey of conditions arising from the enforcement of prohibition, which during the 1920's and '30's gave rise to a large body of literature. Criminals and their lives and activities are portrayed in such plays as *Ned McCobb's Daughter*, and in novels such as Burnett's *Little Caesar*, Hemingway's *To Have and Have Not*, Fitzgerald's *The Great Gatsby*, O'Hara's *Butterfield 8*, sections of Dos Passos's *U.S.A.*, and many detective novels. The drinking manners of the 1920's are described in Gilbert Seldes's *The Future of Drinking*, and the literature of protest against prohibition includes Upton Sinclair's *The Wet Parade*.

BORAH, William Edgar (1865–1940), was born in Illinois and moved in 1891 to Idaho, which, following a career as lawyer, he represented in the Senate from 1907 to his death. He was known as 'the great isolationist,' and took a leading part in the opposition to America's entrance into the League of Nations and the World Court. He was also a prominent opponent of monopolies. A selection of his writings was published as *Bedrock* (1936).

BORDEN, Lizzie (1860–1927), accused murderess, whose aged step-parents were hacked to death in their home at Fall River, Massachusetts (Aug. 4, 1892). The trial of the spinster Lizzie was a national sensation the following year. Since there was only circumstantial evidence, she was acquitted, but the fame of her supposed crime won her a place in American popular legend. In addition to ballads and contemporary literature, her trial has been the subject of a scholarly investigation by Edmund Pearson (1924), and of a play by John Colton, *Nine Pine Street* (1933).

Border Beagles, a Tale of Mississippi, romance by W.G.Simms (q.v.), published in 1840. One of his Border Romances, it is a sequel to *Richard Hurdis* (q.v.), based on the activities of John A. Murrell.

Harry Vernon is commissioned by his friend Carter to find and aid the Wilsons,

Wilson having been Carter's successful rival in love years before. He is also commissioned by the governor of Mississippi to find the outlaw Foster and bring him to justice. Accompanied by Harry Horsey, a stage-struck yokel, Vernon encounters many difficulties engineered by Foster, but saves the Wilsons from a highwayman. He is arrested on the false charge of murdering Horsey, who has been detained in the camp of the outlaws, whom he imagined to be a group of strolling players. Upon Horsey's return Vernon is freed, and, together with a posse of honest settlers, captures Foster and rescues the Wilsons' kidnapped daughter Virginia, with whom he falls in love.

Border Romances, series of novels by W.G.Simms (q.v.), dealing with colonial and 19th-century life in the South. The romances are: *Guy Rivers*, *The Yemassee*, *Richard Hurdis*, *Border Beagles*, *Beauchampe*, *Helen Halsey*, *Charlemont*, *The Cassique of Kiawah*, *Voltmeier*, and *The Cub of the Panther*.

Border Ruffians, name applied to proslavery Missourians of the 1850's, who, during the struggle over authority in Territorial Kansas, crossed into that region to influence elections and harass antislavery men.

Border States, name applied to the slave states of Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, Kentucky, and Missouri, and sometimes to North Carolina, Tennessee, and Arkansas. Being adjacent to free states, they were anxious for an amicable settlement of the secession controversy, and originated the Peace Conference of 1861. They remained loyal to the Union, with the exception of the last three named and of Virginia, from which West Virginia separated.

BORGLUM, [JOHN] GUTZON [DE LA MOTHE] (1871–1941), sculptor and painter, trained in San Francisco, Paris, and London, was influenced by Rodin's impressionism to employ sketchy surface modeling, casual poses, and moving contours in his naturalistic treatment of figures. His sculpture, often pictorial rather than plastic, includes the *Sheridan Monument* in Washington,D.C., the *Lincoln Monument* in Newark, the head of Lincoln in the rotunda of the national capitol, and the *Apostles* in New York's Cathedral of St.John the Divine. He is best known, however, for two colossal projects: the memorial to the leaders of the Confederate army, carved on the side of Stone Mountain, Georgia; and the vast portraits of Washington, Jefferson, Lincoln, and Theodore Roosevelt, carved on the side of Mount Rushmore, South Dakota.

Boss, The, play by Edward Sheldon (q.v.), produced in 1911 and first published (1917) in *Representative American Plays* of A.H.Quinn.

Michael Regan, a political boss and contractor, financially ruins the patrician, James Griswold, whose daughter Emily, in order to save her father, makes a bargain to become Regan's wife. The labor organizing activity of her brother Donald and the appeal to the public by Archbishop Sullivan in turn ruin Regan and cause his temporary imprisonment, but upon his release and determination to act honestly, Emily, who had formerly hated him, gives him her love and assistance.

Boston, situated at the head of Massachusetts Bay, is the principal seaport of New England (q.v.) and the capital of Massachusetts, with a population of some 769,000. The present city includes such previously outlying communities as East and South Boston, Brookline, Roxbury, Charlestown, and Dorchester. The region may have been known to the Norsemen, but it was first explored and mapped by John Smith (1614). Individual settlers came from the Plymouth colony (1621), and under Winthrop's leadership the site was colonized by the Massachusetts Bay Company (q.v.,1630), which established fisheries, agriculture, and the lumber trade, so that the town throve as a maritime center. Since it was colonized by Puritans, its early rule was theocratic, and such nonconformists as Anne Hutchinson, Roger Williams, and the Quakers were not tolerated. The Calvinists fostered education, for a literate clergy and laity were needed to understand the Bible, and Boston Latin School was the first American public school (1635), followed by Roxbury Latin School (1645). In 1636 Harvard was founded at Cambridge (q.v.) across the Charles River. The views of the Puritans were further disseminated by such divines and lay authors as John Cotton, Edward Johnson, John Eliot, the Mathers, Benjamin Thompson, Thomas Prince, and Mather Byles. The hold of the church began to decline with the ris-

ing power of the merchant class, and the beginnings of the Yankee attitude of mind may be observed in the writings of the Hell-Fire Club and of such men as Samuel Sewall. The protests of the merchant class against the Stamp Act (1765) and the Townshend Acts (1767) helped foster the Revolution, and the ensuing friction led such Bostonians as Samuel Adams, John Hancock, and James Otis to form the Sons of Liberty, who met at Faneuil Hall. Their actions precipitated the attack on Lieutenant-Governor Hutchinson (1765), the Boston Massacre (1770), and the Boston Tea Party (1773), which was answered by the Boston Port Bill (1774). The closing of the port, which meant commercial ruin, was influential in provoking the outbreak of the war, in whose opening action Paul Revere and Boston members of the Minute Men were prominent. The British laid siege to the town after the Battle of Bunker Hill (q.v.), but upon Howe's evacuation (March 1776) Boston ceased to be a theater of war. During the early years of the republic, the city was a stronghold of Federalism, and its commercial interests led it to oppose the Embargo Act (1807), which crippled maritime development. This led to talk of secession, and to refusal to co-operate actively in the War of 1812. Although the subsequent era of clipper trade brought prosperity, the city now became increasingly industrial, and as it outgrew former limitations its intellectual attitude became more spacious and liberal. Despite 17th-century changes within the church, such as the Half-Way Covenant, the mid-18th-century reforms of such divines as Jonathan Mayhew, and the founding of King's Chapel (1749), the first Episcopal Church and later the first Unitarian church, the shift to Unitarianism was not effected until the beginning of the 19th century, under the leadership of such men as Channing and Parker. Similar expressions of liberalism included the humanitarian activities of Dorothea Dix, Samuel G. Howe, and the antislavery, temperance, and feminist movements, in which Bostonians were leaders. The Brook Farm community was situated in West Roxbury. The democratization of education was fostered by Alcott's Temple School, the work of Horace Mann, the establishment of Lowell Institute (1839), and the growth of the lyceum. The city's supremacy in literary activity was marked by the founding of *The North American Review*, the Anthology Club, the *Atlantic Monthly*, the Saturday Club, and such publishing firms as Ticknor and Fields. Boston literary figures at this peak of New England culture included Parkman, Prescott, Motley, Holmes, Ripley, Palfrey, the elder Henry James, Howells, Aldrich, Mrs.Howe, and E.E.Hale; near by, in Cambridge and Concord, lived Longfellow, Lowell, Hawthorne, Dana, T.W.Higginson, and the Transcendentalists. After the Civil War the idealism of what Holmes had called the intellectual 'Hub of the Universe' cooled somewhat, while State Street, the financial district, directed energy toward making Boston a greater center for the importing of cotton, wool, and leather for the state's textile mills and shoe factories, whose products were shipped throughout the world. This caused a great influx of Irish and Italian workers, and the character of the city was changed, although its financial and social hegemony was still Brahmin. Its intellectual energies were less creative, and were turned to exploiting a pride of heritage, as in the scholarly antiquarianism of such bodies as the Massachusetts Historical Society. Nevertheless the Harvard professors contributed to the maintenance of cultural activities, among them being John Fiske, Agassiz, C.E.Norton, William James, C.W.Eliot, Royce, Barrett Wendell, and Santayana. At the same time, the aristocratic homes on Beacon Hill, under the shadow of Bulfinch's State House, or along the newly reclaimed Back Bay, continued in their serene fashion, despite the advent of such newcomers as Howells depicted in *The Rise of Silas Lapham*. That some of the old stock realized the breakdown of their traditions may be seen in Henry James's novels, and *The Education of Henry Adams*. The new forces made themselves felt, on the other hand, when the growing consciousness of organized labor caused the Boston police to strike for higher wages (1919), and when the social discord was crystallized in the Sacco-Vanzetti Case (q.v.). Recent Boston authors have included Amy Lowell, T.S.Eliot, M.A.DeW.Howe J.P. Marquand, and Ben Ames Williams, in addition to the many scholarly writers associated with such educational institutions as Massachusetts Institute of Technology (1859), Boston University (1869), and Simmons College (1902). Other educational foundations are the Boston Ath-

enaeum (1805), Boston Public Library (1852), Boston Museum of Fine Arts (1870), and Gardner Museum (1902). Leading religious institutions include the Episcopal Trinity Church and the Mother Church of Christian Science. The cultural development of Boston has also partly derived from the influence of the painters, Smibert, Copley, Stuart, Earle, S.F.B.Morse, Chester Harding, Whistler, Homer, Sargent, William Hunt, La Farge, and Edwin Abbey; the sculptors, Greenough, Saint-Gaudens, and French; the architects, McIntyre, Richardson, McKim, and Cram; and such early hymnodists as William Billings, succeeded by the 19th-century musicians, Lowell Mason, J.K.Paine, Chadwick, and MacDowell, and the Handel and Haydn Society (1815), *Dwight's Journal of Music* (1852), the New England Conservatory of Music (1867), and the Boston Symphony (1881), as well as the later composers, Arthur Foote, F.S. Converse, E.B.Hill, and Roger Sessions.

For Boston newspapers other than those prefixed by the name of the city, see *Massachusetts Centinel*, *Independent Chronicle*, *New England Courant*, *Massachusetts Mercury*, *New England Weekly Journal*, and *The Weekly Rehearsal*.

Boston, novel by Upton Sinclair (q.v.), published in 1928.

The story of Sacco and Vanzetti (q.v.) is told through the experiences of Cornelia Thornwall, who, at the age of 60 and after the death of her husband, an ex-governor and industrial magnate, runs away from wealth and respectability to obtain a six-dollar-a-week job in the Plymouth Cordage Factory. Her fellow-boarder is Bartolomeo Vanzetti, and through him Cornelia becomes acquainted with Sacco and other anarchists, witnesses a factory strike, and sees pickets clubbed by police. Piercing the veil of hypocrisy that obscures the inner workings of society, during the next decade she sees the war hysteria, its aftermath of persecution of labor leaders and radicals, the arrest of Sacco and Vanzetti, their two trials, and the appeal to the jury based on patriotic prejudice. With her granddaughter Betty, Cornelia tries to help the doomed men, but a patrioteering judge, the Supreme Court, the governor of Massachusetts, the president of Harvard, and, above all, Boston society, which symbolizes the rule of class sanctified by tradition and privilege, demand and receive the execution of the two anarchists.

Boston Athenaeum, association of Boston literary men, was founded in 1805 as an outgrowth of the Anthology Club (q.v.) and patterned after the Liverpool Athenaeum in England. A corporation was organized (1807), and a library, a museum, and a laboratory were founded. Although the institution underwent trying times, and was criticized as being limited to the wealthy, the library became valuable and in 1845 was provided with its own large building. The society has continued to influence Boston's literary life, and it is mentioned in such journals as Hawthorne's *American Note Books*. It serves as the setting of Hawthorne's posthumous story, 'The Ghost of Doctor Harris.'

Boston Daily Advertiser (1813–1929), the first successful daily newspaper in New England. In 1840 it absorbed both the *Massachusetts Centinel* and the *Massachusetts Mercury*, and by the mid-century it had become nationally prominent, although it was accused of subservience to the interests of the Boston upper class. In 1917 it was purchased by Hearst, who changed it considerably, and in 1921 it became an illustrated tabloid.

Boston Daily Evening Transcript (1830–1941), newspaper representative of the conservative New England tradition, has long been considered a leader in reporting cultural activities in Boston and elsewhere in the U.S. T.S.Eliot has written a witty poem on the stultification of Boston life, making the *Transcript* its symbol.

Boston Evening Post (1735–75), successor of *The Weekly Rehearsal*, was edited by Thomas Fleet with much attention to local news, brief satirical comments being sometimes appended to news items. All sides were allowed to express themselves in controversies, a policy continued by the editor's sons after his death (1758). With the coming of the Revolution, this neutral course was disliked, and the last issue of the paper appeared five days after the battles at Lexington and Concord.

Boston Gazette, The (1719–41), second newspaper in America, printed by James Franklin, became the organ of the conservative element after Franklin left it (1721) to found his *New England Courant*,

which attacked Increase Mather and others behind the *Gazette*. In 1741 it was merged with the *New England Weekly Journal* (q.v.).

Another paper of the same title (1755–98) was the leading New England journal to advocate the cause of independence, and had Samuel Adams as a contributor. In it were published the Hutchinson Letters and the letters of John Adams, written under the pseudonym Novanglus, and attacking Daniel Leonard, as well as other important Revolutionary documents.

Boston Massacre, pre-Revolutionary riot (March 5, 1770), was provoked by British troops, who killed four men during the disturbance resulting from an attempt to silence radical colonials and enforce the collection of objectionable duties. Crispus Attucks, a half-breed Indian-Negro, was the first person killed. Paul Revere made a famous engraving of the incident.

Boston Miscellany of Literature and Fashion (1842–3), monthly magazine, was an outgrowth of *Arcturus* (1841–2), a critical magazine founded by E.A.Duyckinck and Cornelius Mathews. Its contributors included Lowell, E.E.Hale, Hawthorne, Edward Everett, Poe, and N.P.Willis.

Boston News-Letter (1704–76), originally a hand-written account sent to New England colonial governors by John Campbell, the Boston postmaster. The first printed issue appeared in 1704. Local news was gathered from many sources, and foreign news was reprinted in chronological order from English papers, so that the *News-Letter* was sometimes a year behind time in foreign information. Bartholomew Green, the editor (1704–32), adopted a semireligious editorial policy, continued (1733–62) by his son-in-law, John Draper. Richard Draper, the editor (1762–74), changed the title to *The Boston Weekly News-Letter and New-England Chronicle* and later to *The Massachusetts Gazette and Boston News-Letter*, making the journal the mouthpiece of the governor and loyalists. When he purchased the *Boston Post-Boy*, he published the papers separately. In 1768–9 the *Gazette* was the official government organ, and the second half of the paper was alternately composed of the *Post-Boy* and the *News-Letter*. Draper edited the *News-Letter* alone from 1769 to 1774. His widow and others ran the paper until February 22, 1776, when it was the only paper published during the British occupation of Boston.

Boston Port Bill, Parliamentary act passed in 1774, in retaliation for the Boston Tea Party. It provided that the port be closed until the East India Company was paid by the colony for the tea destroyed.

Boston Post-Boy, see *Boston News-Letter.*

Boston Public Library, founded in 1852, is housed in a building designed by McKim, Mead, and White, which contains mural paintings by Sargent, Abbey, and Chavannes. Among its famous collections are those of U.S. colonial and Revolutionary history, feminist writings, newspapers, and the Ticknor collections of Spanish and Portuguese literature.

Boston Quarterly Review, The (1838–42), was founded and edited by Orestes Brownson, whose quest for truth in many fields of thought it reflected. Subscribers saw the magazine change in religion from Presbyterianism to Universalism to Unitarianism. It was at one time associated with the Democratic party, at another with the short-lived Workingmen's party, and a kind of Christian Socialism consistently permeated its thought. Contributors included Brisbane, Bancroft, Ripley, Alcott, Margaret Fuller, and Elizabeth Peabody. In 1842 it merged with the New York *Democratic Review*. When the columns were closed to Brownson after a year, he founded *Brownson's Quarterly Review* (q.v.).

Boston Tea Party, exploit of Boston members of the Sons of Liberty, who were irked by the tax on tea and by Governor Hutchinson's refusal to allow certain East India Company ships to return home without unloading their cargo. Disguised as Indians, these patriots boarded the ships (Dec. 16, 1773) and threw 342 chests of tea into the waters of Boston harbor. The incident was the first act of violence in the disputes that led to the Revolutionary War.

Boston Transcript, see *Boston Daily Evening Transcript.*

Bostonians, The, novel by Henry James (q.v.), published in 1886. Miss Birdseye is believed to represent Elizabeth Peabody (q.v.).

Basil Ransom, a Mississippi lawyer, comes to Boston to seek his fortune, and becomes acquainted with his cousins, the flirtatious widow, Mrs.Luna, and her neurotic sister, Olive Chancellor. He is taken by Olive, a radical feminist, to a suffragette meeting, where he meets Miss Birdseye, an aged, altruistic worker for lost causes. They hear an address by beautiful young Verena Tarrant, whose gift of persuasion interests Olive as an instrument for her own use. Olive removes the girl to her own luxurious home, converts her to the feminist cause, and even urges her to vow that she will never marry. Fleeing the attentions of Mrs.Luna, Ransom attempts to win Verena to his belief that her proper sphere is a home and a salon, not a career as lecturer for a preposterous political movement, and there is open hostility between Ransom and the jealous Olive. Their struggle reaches a climax when Verena is about to begin her lectures, for she loses confidence, especially after the death of Miss Birdseye. Completely unnerved by Ransom's presence at her initial appearance, she consents to marry him, and Olive, who must announce her protégé's defection, is left desolate.

Both Your Houses, play by Maxwell Anderson (q.v.), produced and published in 1933, and awarded the Pulitzer Prize.

Alan McClean, a young Nevada Congressman determined to be an honest legislator, is appointed to the Appropriations Committee because he is considered 'harmless.' Other members include: Simeon Gray, a veteran congressman, whose daughter and secretary, Marjorie, is loved by Alan; Eddie Wister, a fashionable New Yorker subsidized by the steel trust lobby; Sol Fitzmaurice, who exalts graft as the life-principle of representative government; Levering, the wily party whip; and Miss McMurtry, a self-righteous woman representative. Alan clashes with the Committee, contending that its immense appropriations bill, originally meant to provide for the completion of a dam in his own district, is laden with graft. Ridiculed by his corrupt colleagues, he wins the support of the Non-Partisan League and Farmer-Laborites. Meanwhile he and his shrewd secretary, 'Bus,' engage detectives to investigate the private interests of the Committee members in certain parts of the bill, which he finally has the power to defeat. Among the evidence, however, is proof of Gray's unintentional involvement in a questionable bank scheme. Although he refuses to spare Gray, Sol and others manipulate factions and succeed in passing the bill. They offer to overlook Alan's defection, but he announces that he will give his evidence to the newspapers and devote himself to exposing a system of government whose revolution is 'fifty years overdue.'

BOTTA, Carlo Giuseppe Guglielmo (1766–1837), Italian historian and physician, was exiled to France because of his republicanism. His *History of the War of Independence of the United States of America* (1809, translated 1820) was popular in this country as a study of the world-wide significance of the Revolution. Until the publications of George Bancroft it was without equal in its field.

BOUCHER, Jonathan (1738–1804), came to Virginia as a tutor (1759), returned to England (1762) to take orders in the Anglican Church, and the following year returned to Virginia. He became a rector at Annapolis (1770), where he was the first president of the Homony Club (q.v.). Because of his Toryism he fled to England in 1775. He published 13 of his American sermons (1797), with a preface, *A View of the Causes and Consequences of the American Revolution*. He maintained that monarchial government was a divine instrument functioning under God's sanction, and 'unless we are good subjects, we cannot be good Christians . . . To suffer grievances nobly is proper, to disobey the established government is simply to resist the ordinances of God.'

BOUCICAULT, Dion (1820–90), Irish-born dramatist and actor, achieved some success in London both with his own plays and with adaptations from French drama. In 1853 he came to the U.S., where he turned out musical interludes, melodramas, adaptations from the French, dramatizations of Dickens's novels, and *The Poor of New York*, a 'superficial but graphic picture' of the panic of 1857. His melodramatic problem play about slavery, *The Octoroon: or, Life in Louisiana* (1859), adapted from Mayne Reid's *The Quadroon* (q.v.), created a contemporary sensation. With *The Colleen Bawn* (1860), Boucicault began a long series of Irish comedy dramas which brought him his greatest fame, although his collaboration with Joseph Jefferson on *Rip Van Winkle*

(1865) was unusually successful. With the exception of a decade in London (1862–72), and shorter journeys abroad, he continued his declining dramatic career in New York, where most of his 132 plays were produced.

BOUDINOT, ELIAS (1740–1821), New Jersey Revolutionary statesman, member of the Continental Congress, and president of it (1782–3), in which capacity he signed the proclamation for cessation of hostilities and the treaties of peace with Great Britain. He was the first president of the American Bible Society.

ELIAS BOUDINOT (*c.*1803–39), his Cherokee Indian protégé, edited the *Cherokee Phoenix* (1828–35), a bilingual Georgia weekly, and wrote *Poor Sarah; or, the Indian Woman* (1833), a novel in his native language.

Bound East for Cardiff, one-act play by Eugene O'Neill (q.v.), produced and published in 1916.

In mid-Atlantic on the British tramp steamer *Glencairn*, the seaman Yank has been injured in a fall and lies moaning in his bunk. His friend, the Irishman Driscoll, and the other seamen encourage him with rough expressions of good will, but Yank realizes that he is dying. Since he fears to be alone, Driscoll remains with him, and they discuss old adventures and their mean life at sea. Yank considers that 'this sailor life ain't much to cry about leavin',' and refuses to accept his friend's comfortable piety. Before the night fog lifts he dies, with a vision of 'a pretty lady dressed in black.'

BOURNE, RANDOLPH SILLIMAN (1886–1918), while a student at Columbia, from which he graduated in 1913, and during the remainder of his short life, established himself as a spokesman of his generation, through his critical examination of American institutions, attacks on big-business civilization, and criticism of sentimental ideas in literature and elsewhere. His books, *Youth and Life* (1913), *The Gary Schools* (1916), and *Education and Living* (1917), show him to be a disciple of John Dewey although he felt pragmatism failed to direct a war-torn world. His pacifist articles were posthumously collected as *Untimely Papers* (1919), and his philosophical and critical views are summed up in *The History of a Literary Radical* (1920), edited by Van Wyck Brooks.

BOWDITCH, NATHANIEL (1773–1838), navigator and mathematician of Salem, Massachusetts, who corrected Moore's *Practical Navigator*, and after substantial revision issued it under his own name as *The New American Practical Navigator* (1802). More than 60 editions have since appeared, and this standard work is still referred to as *Bowditch's Navigator.*

Bowdoin College for men, founded in 1794, is situated at Brunswick, Maine. It was named for James Bowdoin, governor of Massachusetts when Maine was still a part of the Bay State. Alumni include Seba Smith (1818), Jacob Abbott (1820), C.E.Stowe (1824), Longfellow (1825), Hawthorne (1825), Horatio Bridge (1825), Franklin Pierce (1824), Elijah Kellogg (1840), Arlo Bates (1876), Wilbert Snow (1907), and R.P.T.Coffin (1915).

BOWERS, CLAUDE G[ERNADE] (1878–), historian and journalist, was ambassador to Spain (1933–9). His books include: *The Party Battles of the Jackson Period* (1922), whose Jeffersonianism is further illustrated in *Jefferson and Hamilton* (1925) and *Jefferson in Power* (1936); *The Tragic Era: The Revolution After Lincoln* (1929), a condemnation of the radical Republicans during the Reconstruction; *Beveridge and the Progressive Era* (1932); and *The Spanish Adventures of Washington Irving* (1940).

Bowery, THE, street in New York City, situated in lower Manhattan, whose name derives from the fact that it once ran through Peter Stuyvesant's farm, or *bouwerie*, as it was called by the Dutch settlers. The 19th-century-stage type of the Bowery boy, representing the characteristic exuberant, impudent rascal of the district, in the plug hat, red shirt, and turned-up trousers of the volunteer fire department, was introduced in the play, *A Glance at New York* (1848). The Bowery was long notorious for its dance halls, gambling houses, and other criminal resorts, but has since been famous for the heterogeneity of its population and the multitude of cheap shops. Among novels of its squalid slum life, the best known are Stephen Crane's *Maggie* and *George's Mother.*

Bowie knife, a one-edged blade and guarded hilt, was used by soldiers and frontiersmen of the Southwest. The name supposedly derives from the home-

made knife of Resin P. Bowie, notoriously used by his brother James in a free-for-all fight (1827).

BOWLES, SAMUEL (1826–78), son of Samuel Bowles (1797–1851), founder of *The Springfield Republican* (q.v.), made the family paper one of the most influential in the country, and a spearhead of the liberal Republicans. Incisive letters about his travels were published in his paper, and later collected as *Across the Continent* (1865) and *The Switzerland of America* (1869).

BOWNE, BORDEN PARKER (1847–1910), professor of philosophy at Boston University (1876–1910), was a stanch theist who attacked the skepticism and materialism of science, but stressed above all the reality and freedom of the self, in his philosophy which he called Personalism. His books include: *Theism* (1902); *Personalism* (1908); *Studies in Christianity* (1909); and *The Essence of Religion* (1910).

Boy Emigrants, The, novel for children by Noah Brooks (q.v.).

BOYD, ERNEST (1887–), Irish-born critic and author, who as a member of the British consular service came to the U.S. in 1913, and returned in 1920 to make his home here. He became an important literary figure of the period, and in addition to many magazine contributions and translations, particularly from the French and German, wrote: *Contemporary Drama of Ireland* (1917); *Appreciations and Depreciations* (1918), studies of Irish literature; *Ireland's Literary Renaissance* (1922); *Portraits: Real and Imaginary* (1924), sketches of contemporary authors in the U.S. and abroad; *H.L.Mencken* (1925); *Studies from Ten Literatures* (1925); *Guy de Maupassant* (1926), a biography to accompany his translation of Maupassant's complete works; *Literary Blasphemies* (1927); and *The Virtue of Vices* (1930).

BOYD, JAMES (1888–), born in Pennsylvania, was reared in North Carolina, graduated from Princeton (1910), studied at Cambridge, served in the World War, and returned to North Carolina to write. He is best known for his historical romances, and his two war novels, *Drums* (q.v.,1925) and *Marching On* (q.v.,1927), employ his own knowledge of warfare, though set respectively in Revolutionary and Civil War times, in accordance with his theory that a writer needs 'perspective of years.' His other novels are: *Roll River* (1935), set in his native Harrisburg between 1880 and 1920; and *Long Hunt* (1930) and *Bitter Creek* (1939), concerned with the frontier West.

BOYD, NANCY, pseudonym of Edna St. Vincent Millay (q.v.).

BOYD, THOMAS [ALEXANDER] (1898–1935), born in Ohio, later lived in Vermont, and is best known for his World War novel, *Through the Wheat* (1923), and his realistically treated romance of Ohio before the Revolutionary War, *Shadow of the Long Knives* (1928). *Simon Girty, the White Savage* (1928), *Mad Anthony Wayne* (1929), *Light-horse Harry Lee* (1931), and *Poor John Fitch* (1935) are biographies, and *Points of Honor* (1925) is a collection of short stories of the World War.

BOYESEN, HJALMAR HJORTH (1848–95), Norwegian-born author and educator, emigrated to the U.S. in 1869. As professor of German at Cornell and Columbia, he was considered stimulating rather than scholarly, although his *Goethe and Schiller* (1879) and *Essays on Scandinavian Literature* (1895) were sound treatments of their subjects. He wrote many works of fiction for adults and children, and some poetry, but is best known for four novels. *Gunnar* (1874), a tale of Norwegian life, established his lifelong friendship with Howells, who influenced his later works. Turning against the romanticism of *Gunnar*, Boyesen denounced the subservience of writers to the standards of the young American girl, 'the Iron Madonna who strangles in her fond embrace the American novelist.' Influenced by Howells, Tolstoy, Turgenev, and Björnson, he wrote *The Mammon of Unrighteousness* (1891), a realistic urban study, contrasting two brothers, one a social idealist, the other a ruthless politician. *The Golden Calf* (1892) portrays the disintegration of a young man's ideals when he is tempted by wealth. *The Social Strugglers* (1893) is the best of these novels, although lighter and less incisive in its criticism of the vulgar newly rich, and vague in its social implications.

BOYLE, KAY (1903–), born in Minnesota, has long been an expatriate in France. Her first book of impressionistic short stories, *Wedding Day* (1930), has been followed by three further collections, *First Lover* (1933), *The White Horses of*

Vienna (1936), and *The Crazy Hunter* (1940). Her novels are: *Plagued by the Nightingale* (1931), dealing with an American girl and her French husband, torn between the necessity of having a child in order to receive his legacy, and the desire to avoid transmitting his hereditary disease; *Year Before Last* (1932), concerned with a young French editor faced by a similar problem; *Gentlemen, I Address You Privately* (1933), dealing with perverts; *My Next Pride* (1934), about American expatriates who must choose between love and money; *Death of a Man* (1936), concerned with an American girl's renunciation of the love of a Nazi doctor; *Monday Night* (1938), continuing her psychological probing of character; and *The Youngest Camel* (1939), an allegorical tale. In 1938 she published a volume of poetry, *A Glad Day*, announcing that prose fiction is but an 'adequate finger exercise' for the pure poetic form.

BOYNTON, Percy H[olmes] (1875–), professor of English literature at the University of Chicago (1902–). His books include: *Some Contemporary Americans* (1924) and *More Contemporary Americans* (1927), studies of authors; *The Rediscovery of the Frontier* (1931); *The Challenge of Modern Criticism* (1931); *Literature and American Life* (1936); and *America in Contemporary Fiction* (1940).

Boy's Will, A, poems by Robert Frost (q.v.).

Bozeman Trail, frontier route lying east of the Big Horn Mountains, from Montana through Wyoming to Colorado. The route was discovered by John M. Bozeman (1835–67) in the winter of 1862–3, and he guided emigrant parties over it until he was killed by Indians. James Bridger helped survey the trail.

BOZZARIS, Marco (*c.*1788–1823), Greek hero in his country's war of independence against the Turks. He was the subject of many American poems and plays, including the most famous poem of Halleck (q.v.).

Bracebridge Hall; or, The Humorists: A Medley, 49 tales and sketches by Irving (q.v.), published in 1822 under the pseudonym Geoffrey Crayon, Gent. Resembling its predecessor, *The Sketch Book*, the collection includes stories with English, French, and Spanish settings, but is chiefly remembered for 'Dolph Heyliger' and its sequel, 'The Storm-Ship,' which recount the adventures of a New York lad who undertakes to discredit the legend of a haunted house, but encounters its ghost and recovers a fabulous buried treasure, as well as marrying an heiress. Americanized versions of the Flying Dutchman theme are presented in 'The Storm-Ship,' and other stories in the volume are also based on European folklore.

BRACKENRIDGE, Hugh Henry (1748–1816), born in Scotland, was brought to a Pennsylvania farm at the age of five, and entered Princeton in 1768, where he became intimate with Freneau and Madison, and collaborated with the former on *The Rising Glory of America* (1772), an ardent poetical expression of national consciousness. He studied theology, and in 1774 received his master's degree, writing *A Poem on Divine Revelation.* During the Revolutionary War he served as a chaplain, and wrote two patriotic plays for amateur production. Both of these, *The Battle of Bunkers-Hill* (1776) and *The Death of General Montgomery* (1777,qq.v.), are neoclassical dramas in rather stilted blank verse, and his more pungent contributions to the cause are included in his sermons, *Six Political Discourses* (1778), and in his work as editor of the patriotic *United States Magazine.* Repelled by strict dogma, he gave up the ministry to practice law, and in 1781 settled in the frontier village of Pittsburgh. Here he had an active political career and showed himself to be an aristocratic democrat, attempting to mediate between the federal government and the local insurrectionists during the Whisky Rebellion, as described in his *Incidents of the Insurrection in the Western Part of Pennsylvania* (1795). His satirical contributions to the local paper mirrored his political and social ideas, which are more completely treated in his novel, *Modern Chivalry* (q.v.,1792–1815). In 1799 he was appointed justice of the Pennsylvania Supreme Court, and after his removal to Carlisle (1801) made his chief contribution to legal literature in his *Law Miscellanies* (1814).

Henry Marie Brackenridge (1786–1871), his son, was also a prominent jurist. He wrote of his *Voyage to South America* (1819), and in a pamphlet, *South America* (1817), advocated a policy similar to the later Monroe Doctrine. His *Views of Louisiana* (1814) and *Recollections of Persons*

and Places in the West (1834) afford interesting historical information.

BRADDOCK, EDWARD (1695–1755), became commander-in-chief of the British forces in North America (1754–5), and during the last of the French and Indian Wars proceeded against Fort Duquesne (now Pittsburgh). He attempted to build a road westward over the mountains from Cumberland, Maryland, but was hindered by inadequate transportation and lack of provisions. His British regulars and provincial soldiers, of whom Washington was one, were defeated by the French and Indians in a surprise encounter, in which Braddock showed conspicuous bravery before he received a fatal wound.

BRADFORD, EBENEZER (*fl.*1795), Massachusetts author of a didactic epistolary novel, *The Art of Courting* (1795).

BRADFORD, GAMALIEL (1863–1932), Massachusetts author, who at the age of 50 found his most successful medium when he published *Lee, the American* (1912). This book employed a method he described as 'psychography,' which aims to extract the essential, permanent, and vitally characteristic strands out of the continuous texture of a man's entire life. Applying this subjective, analytical technique, Bradford wrote a great many other sketches, published in such books as: *Confederate Portraits* (1914); *Portraits of Women* (1916); *Union Portraits* (1916); *American Portraits* (1922); *Damaged Souls* (1923), perhaps his best-known book, dealing with such Americans as Aaron Burr, P.T.Barnum, John Randolph, and Thomas Paine; *Wives* (1925); *As God Made Them* (1929); *Daughters of Eve* (1930); and *The Quick and the Dead* (1931). His autobiographical works include *A Naturalist of Souls* (1917), *Life and I* (1928), and his *Journal* (1933), edited by Van Wyck Brooks.

BRADFORD, JOHN (1749–1830), pioneer printer of Kentucky, in 1787 first issued his *Kentucki Gazette*, the earliest newspaper in the territory, in which he published his 'Notes of Kentucky' (1826–9), an important historical source. He printed the first pamphlet in the territory, the *Kentucke Almanac* (1788).

BRADFORD, ROARK (1896–), author of stories about Negroes and their interpretations of the Bible. Among his best-known books are: *This Side Jordan* (1929); *Ol' King David an' the Philistine Boys* (1930); and *John Henry* (1931), an account of the legendary hero, dramatized by the author in 1940. *The Green Pastures* (q.v.,1930) is a play adapted by Marc Connelly from Bradford's book, *Ol' Man Adam an' His Chillun* (1928).

BRADFORD, WILLIAM (1590–1657), as a boy joined the Separatist group of William Brewster, with whom he emigrated to Amsterdam (1609) and then to Leyden. He came to America on the *Mayflower* (1620), and the following April was elected governor of Plymouth Colony, an office to which he was re-elected every year from 1622 to 1656, with the exception of 1633, 1634, 1636, 1638, and 1644, when he was an assistant, having 'by importunity gat off' from the position of leadership. Bradford's life was inseparably bound with the settlement, of which he was long the outstanding authority in all executive, judicial, and legislative matters. In 1627 Bradford and seven leading Pilgrims, with four London merchants, assumed the £1,800 debt to the original merchant adventurers. Although these 'Undertakers' held a monopoly of fishing and trading, the land and cattle were distributed equally among the 'Old Comers.' Bradford willingly aided all common enterprises, including the New England Confederation, but considered his colony as a compact community. About 1630 he began to write his *History of Plimmoth Plantation* (q.v.), which he completed in 1651. A fragment of his letter-book (1624–30), as well as his letters to Winthrop, have been published in the *Collections* of the Massachusetts Historical Society. Other works printed by this organization and the Colonial Society of Massachusetts include his *Dialogue between some young men born in New England and sundry ancient men that came out of Holland*; a long descriptive poem of 1654; *A Word to New Plymouth*; *A Word to New England*; and *Of Boston in New-England*. He is also considered to be the author of the first half of *Mourt's Relation* (q.v.), which chronicles the events from September 6, 1620, to March 23, 1621.

BRADFORD, WILLIAM (1663–1752), established the first press in Philadelphia and the first paper mill in the English colonies. In 1693 he became the official royal printer at New York, and among the 400 items from his press during the next half-century were the first American Book of

Common Prayer; *Androboros*, the first American play to be printed; and the almanacs and pamphlets of Daniel Leeds. He published the first newspaper of the colony, the *New York Gazette* (1725–44).

WILLIAM BRADFORD (1722–91), his grandson, vehemently opposed the Stamp Act in his *Pennsylvania Journal and Weekly Advertiser* (1743–97), the most successful competitor of Franklin's *Pennsylvania Gazette*. He also published *The American Magazine and Monthly Chronicle* (q.v., 1757–8), and was the official printer for the first Continental Congress.

BRADSTREET, ANNE [DUDLEY] (*c.*1612–72), daughter of Thomas Dudley, was born in England, where at the age of 16 she married Simon Bradstreet. Two years later she left her comfortable English home to accompany her husband and father on the voyage of the *Arbella*, settling first at Ipswich and later in North Andover, Massachusetts. In the intervals of arduous household tasks and the care of her eight children, she found time for her literary interests, and in 1650 the first edition of her poems was published in England as *The Tenth Muse Lately Sprung Up in America*, the manuscript having been taken without her knowledge to a London publisher by an admiring brother-in-law. A posthumous second edition, with her own additions and corrections, was issued at Boston (1678), and a scholarly edition with some additional material was published in 1867. Mrs. Bradstreet's literary influences were obvious and acknowledged, for she was enamored of Quarles, Joshua Sylvester's translation of Du Bartas's *Divine Semaine*, Spenser, and Sir Philip Sydney, although she reproaches the latter 'miracle of wit' for his *Arcadia*. Cotton Mather in the *Magnalia* praised her highly, and Nathaniel Ward and others were equally lavish in the commendatory verses that prefaced her poetry. Her longer work consists of poetic discourses on the four elements, the four humors, the four ages of man, the four seasons, and 'A Dialogue between Old England and New.' The long rimed history, 'The Four Monarchies,' is based closely on Ralegh's *History of the World*, and treats the Persian, Greek, and Assyrian kingdoms, and the Roman Commonwealth. Her current fame is based rather on the later and shorter poems, in which she looked into her heart or out upon a real New England world, and was less dependent on stock poetic conventions. These include 'The Flesh and the Spirit'; 'Contemplations,' her nature poem on the transiency of man's life; 'On the Burning of her House'; 'To My Dear and Loving Husband,' showing a moving use of the Donnean conceit; 'On My Son's Return Out of England'; and 'The Author to her Book.' In the prose 'Meditations Divine and Morall,' written for her son, she composed simple, pithy, and sincere aphorisms, and in her short spiritual autobiography, 'Religious Experiences,' she also employs a sweet and simple prose.

SIMON BRADSTREET (1603–97), her husband, held several important administrative positions in the colony, including the governorship (1679–86, 1689–92). He figures in Hawthorne's 'Howe's Masquerade,' 'The Grey Champion,' and *The Dolliver Romance*.

BRADY, CYRUS TOWNSEND (1861–1920), Episcopal clergyman, was the author of some 70 novels, mainly historical romances of the Revolution, the War of 1812, and the Civil War.

BRADY, JAMES BUCHANAN (1856–1917), popularly known as 'Diamond Jim' because of his extravagant taste and display of expensive jewelry, was born in New York City and was for many years an employe of the New York Central Railroad. Later he was associated as a promoter and executive with various manufacturing companies dealing in railroad equipment. One of the most successful and spectacular of 'high pressure' salesmen, he acquired a large fortune and spent it lavishly as a Broadway producer, horse-racing enthusiast, and philanthropist.

BRADY, MATHEW B. (*c.*1823–96), first important American photographer, became acquainted with the new art while studying painting in Paris with S.F.B. Morse, and won great success during the 1840's by his sincere photographic portraits published in a *Gallery of Illustrious Americans* (1850). His famous *National Photographic Collection of War Views* (1869), part of which was purchased by the government, is important as a complete factual record of Civil War battles and camp life, and possesses aesthetic merit because of its simple, literal objectivity.

BRADY, SAMUEL (1759?–96?), Pennsylvania frontiersman and Indian fighter, whose hatred of the Indians and frequent slaughter of them were intended to revenge their scalping of his father and brother. During the Revolution he commanded some forces under Anthony Wayne and was a hardy defender of the frontier.

Bragg, ARISTABULUS, character in *Home As Found* (q.v.).

Brahma, poem by Emerson (q.v.), published in 1857 and reprinted in *May-Day and Other Poems* (1867). In alternately rimed tetrameter quatrains, the poem reflects the author's interest in Hindu religious thought, in which Brahma personifies the universal creative force, embodying his concept of an eternal, all-inclusive divine power.

Brahmins, name humorously applied to upper-class New England society, derived from the name of the highest or priestly caste among the Hindus. In *Elsie Venner,* Holmes speaks of 'the harmless, inoffensive, untitled aristocracy' of New England, and specifically of Boston, 'which has grown to be a caste by the repetition of the same influences generation after generation,' so that it has acquired a distinct organization and physiognomy.

Brain Trust, term popularly applied to those college professors who served as advisers to President Franklin D. Roosevelt, and helped to organize the New Deal (q.v.) of his administration. The membership of this informal group fluctuated during his terms in office, but all held posts in various administrative departments and agencies.

BRAINARD, JOHN GARDINER CALKINS (1796–1828), Connecticut author, was an editor of the *Connecticut Mirror,* from which he reprinted his *Occasional Pieces of Poetry* (1825). His poems were respected in his time for their piety, sentimentality, and gently elegant descriptions of nature. He also wrote a historical romance, *Letters Found in the Ruins of Fort Bradford* (1824). His *Fugitive Tales* were published in 1830, and his literary remains in 1832, with a biographical sketch by Whittier.

BRAINERD, DAVID (1718–47), Calvinist missionary to the Indians in Connecticut, New York, and New Jersey. His mystical experiences, teachings, travels, and methods of work are described in his diary, which was partially published during his lifetime as *Mirabilia Dei Inter Indicos* (1746) and *Divine Grace Displayed* (1746). Jonathan Edwards, to whose daughter Brainerd was engaged, first published the complete journal in *An Account of the Life of the Late Reverend Mr. David Brainerd* (1749).

BRAITHWAITE, WILLIAM STANLEY BEAUMONT (1878–), Negro author and editor in Boston, whose works include *Lyrics of Life and Love* (1904), *The House of Falling Leaves* (1908), and *Sandy Star* (1926), poems; *Going Over Tindal,* a novel; and *Frost on the Green Leaf* (1928), short stories. He is best known for his anthologies, which include an annual *Anthology of Magazine Verse and Year Book of American Poetry* (1913ff.).

BRANCH, ANNA HEMPSTEAD (1874–1937), New York poet, is noted for her metaphysical lyrics published in *The Heart of the Road* (1901), *The Shoes That Danced* (1906), *Rose of the Wind* (1910), *Sonnets from a Lock Box* (1929), and other volumes. Her play, *Rose of the World,* was produced in 1908.

BRANDEIS, LOUIS DEMBITZ (1856–), became known as the 'people's attorney' when, early in his career, he gratuitously defended Boston citizens against local public utilities, and in many later cases proved his right to this sobriquet. His book, *Other People's Money* (1914), greatly influenced Woodrow Wilson, who in 1916 appointed him to the U.S. Supreme Court. His miscellaneous papers, edited as *The Curse of Bigness* (1934), show him to have been continuously devoted to a liberal point of view. After his retirement from the Supreme Court (1939), he concerned himself with aiding Jewish refugees.

Brandywine Creek, near Philadelphia, was the site of Howe's victory over Washington at Chad's Ford (Sept. 11, 1777), after which the British occupied Philadelphia.

BRANN, WILLIAM COWPER (1855–98), journalist and lecturer, whose violent and often unconventional treatment of the moral and social problems of his day rendered him notorious. As editor of the *Iconoclast* of Waco, Texas, he became involved in a quarrel with the local religious college, which resulted in his murder. Among his works are *Potiphar's Wife* (1897) and

Brann's Scrap-Book (1898). A collection of his writings was published after his death as *Brann, the Iconoclast* (1898), and his *Complete Works* appeared in 1919.

BRANT, JOSEPH (1742–1807), Mohawk Indian chief, educated at Eleazer Wheelock's school, was the principal leader of Indian troops for the British during the Revolutionary War, and for his work was cordially received in England. Although he did not participate in the Wyoming Valley Massacre, as is frequently stated, he was responsible for similar outrages. In 1787 he translated into his native tongue the gospel of St.Mark and other portions of the Scriptures. He is the subject of a biography by W.L.Stone, and figures in Hoffman's *Greyslaer.*

Brass Check, The, tract on contemporary journalism by Upton Sinclair (q.v.), published in 1920. The first half of the book describes Sinclair's experiences with the press and contains a scathing denunciation of metropolitan newspapers and news-gathering agencies, which the author contends are sabotaging democracy in industry and government. He suggests as a remedy a national 'truth-telling' weekly to disseminate uncolored news. The second half of the book contains corroborative statements by eminent persons.

Bravo, The, romance by Cooper (q.v.), was published in 1831 and dramatized by R.P.Smith in 1837.

In Venice during the Renaissance, Jacopo Frontoni, attempting to win the freedom of his unjustly imprisoned father, serves as a secret agent of the Senate. In this capacity he pretends to be a 'bravo' or hired assassin, and becomes a public scapegoat for numerous political murders. He also works against the Senate, however, by aiding a Neapolitan, Don Camillo Monforte, to win the hand of Violetta Tiepolo, an heiress and ward of the senators, who wish her to marry a Venetian and keep her wealth in the city. To appease the populace, when unrest follows upon the escape of the lovers and the death of Jacopo's friend Antonio, Jacopo is falsely accused of the murder and executed at the behest of the Senate.

Bread and Cheese Club, formed (*c.*1822) as an informal social club of New York City, growing out of impromptu meetings by Cooper's circle of friends. Cooper was always acknowledged as the leader, and the society included some 35 members, among them being Bryant, Dunlap, James Kent, Verplanck, R.S.A. Durand, Philip Hone, J.G.Percival, J.A. Hillhouse, Halleck, and S.F.B.Morse. It lasted until at least 1827, later dividing to become the Sketch Club and the Literary Club.

Breadwinners, The, novel by John Hay (q.v.), published anonymously in 1883. *The Money-Makers* (q.v.,1885) was a 'reply.'

Maud Matchin, pretty but vulgar daughter of an honest carpenter in 'Buffland' (Cleveland, Ohio), falls in love with wealthy Arthur Farnham, who loves Alice Belding, a girl of his own class. Maud's admirers include Sam Sleeny, her father's slow-witted assistant; Offitt, the villainous labor organizer; and Bott, a radical and spiritualist. She scorns them all, but then, rebuffed by Farnham, becomes interested in Offitt's promises of wealth and travel. Offitt entices Sam into the union ('Brotherhood of Breadwinners'), and makes him the dupe in a scheme to rob and murder Farnham. Meanwhile a strike is called, and agitators try to incite riots, but are foiled by the apathy of the workingmen. Maud is suspicious of Offitt's sudden wealth, after he has robbed but failed to murder Farnham, and she refuses to elope with him. Sam, who has been arrested and has escaped, surprises them and kills Offitt. He is acquitted as temporarily insane and cleared of the robbery charge, after which he marries Maud and Farnham marries Alice.

Breakfast-Table series, see *Holmes.*

BREASTED, JAMES HENRY (1865–1935), professor at the University of Chicago (1894–1935), was a noted student of Oriental archaeology and ancient history. Besides directing research expeditions to the Near East, and heading various historical societies, he wrote many books, including: *A History of Egypt* (1905); *The Development of Religion and Thought in Ancient Egypt* (1912); *Ancient Times—A History of the Early World* (1916, revised 1934); *History of Europe, Ancient and Medieval* (1920), written with J.H.Robinson; *The Conquest of Civilization* (1926); and *The Dawn of Conscience* (1933).

BRECKINRIDGE, JOHN CABELL (1821–75), Kentucky lawyer and statesman, was a congressman (1851–5), and served as

Vice President (1856–60) under Buchanan. Equally opposed to secession and to Congressional intervention in the determination of slave territory, he was the presidential candidate of the Southern Democratic faction in 1860, after his defeat being elected to the Senate. At the outbreak of the Civil War, which he had vigorously opposed, he resigned to join the Confederate army, becoming a major general, and later Confederate secretary of war.

Breitmann, HANS, see *Leland,C.G.*

BREMER, FREDRIKA (1801–65), Swedish novelist, traveled extensively in the U.S. between 1849 and 1861, and wrote a book describing *The Homes of the New World* (1853). Her letters from the U.S. were published as *America of the Fifties* (1924).

Brer Rabbit, character in the Uncle Remus stories (q.v.).

BRERETON, JOHN, see *Brierton, John.*

Brewster's Millions, comic fantasy by G.B.McCutcheon (q.v.), dramatized by Winchell Smith.

Briary-Bush, The, sequel to *Moon-Calf* (q.v.).

Bricks Without Straw, novel by A.W. Tourgée (q.v.), published in 1880. Intended to demonstrate the fallacy of freedom for Southern Negroes without the 'straw' of an adequate social and economic basis for free development, the story is concerned with Reconstruction days on the North Carolina tobacco plantations.

Mollie Ainslie, a Northern school teacher, comes to the Negro community of Red Wing, where the success of her work arouses the fury of the neighboring whites against presumptuous 'niggers' and 'nigger-teachers.' While Mollie is absent at the plantation of Hesden Le Moyne, nursing his dying son and incidentally falling in love with Hesden, a band of 'Ku Kluckers' falls upon the Red Wing settlement. They burn the schoolhouse and church, nearly kill the crippled preacher, Eliab Hill, and drive out the Negro farmer, Nimbus Desmit. Hesden's haughty mother causes a misunderstanding between her son and Mollie, who takes Nimbus's family to the North with her. Later Hesden, who nurses Eliab and helps him to re-establish the Red Wing school, discovers papers which show that Mollie is the rightful heir to his estate. Notified, she declines the inheritance and only visits the plantation at the insistence of Hesden and his repentant dying mother. Reconciled and married, they resume their dangerous work for the betterment of the Negroes.

Bride of the Mistletoe, The, novel by J.L.Allen (q.v.).,

BRIDGE, HORATIO (1806–93), classmate and friend of Hawthorne at Bowdoin, was the author of *Personal Recollections of Nathaniel Hawthorne* (1893). His *Journal of an African Cruiser* (1845), based on his manuscript notes as a naval officer, was frequently attributed to Hawthorne, its editor.

Bridge, The, poem by Longfellow (q.v.), published in *The Belfry of Bruges and Other Poems* (1845). In quatrains of three-stress lines, the poem recalls Longfellow's frequent crossings of the bridge over the Charles River between Boston and Cambridge, when he would stop at night to meditate on the 'care-encumbered' lives of himself and others who cross, and the constant reflection of the moon in the water,

> . . . the symbol of love in heaven,
> And its wavering image here.

Bridge, The, poem by Hart Crane (q.v.).

Bridge of San Luis Rey, The, novel by Thornton Wilder (q.v.), published in 1927 and awarded the Pulitzer Prize.

In 1714 a bridge over a canyon near Lima, Peru, collapses, and five travelers are killed. Brother Juniper, a Franciscan, resolves to help place theology 'among the exact sciences' by proving the catastrophe to be an act of divine providence. He collects the results of his six years of investigation in a great book, which is pronounced heretical. He and his book are burned at the stake, but a copy survives, and from it come these stories of the five who fell with the bridge . . . The Marquesa de Montemayor has devoted her life to her daughter Clara, a brilliant, selfish woman who goes to Spain after her marriage. The Marquesa's wonderful letters are now her only way of showing her affection, but through her companion, the child Pepita, the Marquesa discovers she has not had true love with Clara and decides to reform. Two days later she and Pepita die on the bridge . . . The twins Manuel and Esteban, who feel an intense fraternal bond, become scribes and

lead a solitary life together. The actress La Périchole employs Manuel to write her letters, but, when an infatuation threatens to separate him from his brother, Manuel ends their connection. He dies soon afterward, and the despairing Esteban, prevented from suicide, signs for a voyage as seaman, but is killed on the bridge . . . Through the teaching of the old rogue Uncle Pio, La Périchole is the most celebrated of actresses, and mistress of the Viceroy, to whom she has borne three children. Socially ambitious, she leaves the stage, but her beauty is ravaged by smallpox, and, heartbroken, she retires to seclusion, devoid of interest except in her son Jaimé. Uncle Pio persuades her to let the boy go with him for a year to begin his education, but Pio and Jaimé die in the fall of the bridge.

BRIDGER, James (1804–81), Virginia-born fur trader, frontiersman, and guide in the Far West, was a member of the expeditions of Ashley (1822) and Jedediah Smith (1823), and is the first white man known to have visited the Great Salt Lake (1824 or 1825). He visited the Yellowstone (1830), and his tall tales of that region and the Salt Lake are particularly famous. Though illiterate, he had an unrivaled knowledge of the West and the Indian tongues. He built Fort Bridger (1843) on the Oregon Trail, opened the route through Bridger's Pass (1856), helped to survey the Bozeman Trail, and guided the expedition of Bonneville. Like Beckwourth and Fitzpatrick, with whom he worked, he was the hero of many folk legends, such as the one on which Neihardt based *The Song of Hugh Glass.*

BRIERTON, John (*fl.*1572–1619), English rector, participated in Gosnold's expedition (1602) along the New England coast. His enthusiastic account was published as *A Briefe and True Relation of the Discouerie of the North Part of Virginia* (1602). His name was also spelled Brereton.

BRIGGS, Charles Frederick (1804–77), edited the *Broadway Journal,* of which Poe was then an assistant editor, and *Putnam's Magazine* and *The New York Times.* He later turned against Poe, in the latter's critical controversies with Longfellow and Lowell. *The Adventures of Harry Franco* (1839) and *Working a Passage* (1844) are novels based on Briggs's early life, the first dealing with a financial panic in New York, and the second with his life as a sailor. *The Trippings of Tom Pepper* (2 vols.,1847–50) bears the subtitle, 'The Results of Romancing. An Autobiography by Harry Franco.'

BRIGGS, Le Baron Russell (1855–1934), professor of creative writing at Harvard, who numbered among his pupils John Dos Passos, Robert Hillyer, E.E. Cummings, Conrad Aiken, and Stuart P. Sherman. As Dean Briggs he became something of a legend as a sympathetic and helpful teacher who was also interested in fostering competitive athletics. Among his books on education are *School, College and Character* (1901), *Routine and Ideals* (1904), and *Men, Women, and Colleges* (1925).

Bright Shawl, The, novel by Hergesheimer (q.v.).

Brimming Cup, The, novel by Dorothy Canfield (q.v.).

BRINIG, Myron (1900–), novelist born in Minnesota, whose works include: *Madonna Without Child* (1929), a psychological study of an old maid whose love for her employer's daughter leads her to kidnapping; *Singermann* (1929), a story of a Jewish immigrant family in Montana, and a sequel, *This Man Is My Brother* (1932); *Wide Open Town* (1931) and *Sun Sets in the West* (1935), panoramas of Montana mining life, respectively at the turn of the century and during the depression of the '30's; *Out of Life* (1935), a study of a man's lethargic mind awakened to tremendous sensitivity after a long, unfruitful married life, when he is told that his wife is to have a child; *The Sisters* (1937), the story of the daughters of a Montana druggist, one becoming a conventional banker's wife, another a celebrated beauty, and a third enjoying a quiet life devoted to her one lover; *May Flavin* (1938); *Anne Minton's Life* (1939), and *All of Their Lives* (1941).

BRINTON, Daniel Garrison (1837–99), Philadelphia physician and anthropologist, in 1886 became a professor at the University of Pennsylvania. Among his most important writings are: *Notes on the Floridian Peninsula* (1859); *The American Race* (1891), a pioneer attempt to classify the Indian racial groups; and *Religions of Primitive People* (1897). He edited the *Library of Aboriginal American Literature* (8 vols.,1882–90).

BRISBANE, ALBERT (1809–90), after studying under Charles Fourier in Paris, returned to the U.S. to popularize Fourierism through his column in the New York *Tribune*, which was also instrumental in the formation of more than 40 socialized communities in America. The most famous of these was Brook Farm, and the most successful the North American Phalanx. Brisbane had little to do with the organizations themselves, but defended their general theory in his books, *Social Destiny of Man* (1840) and *General Introduction to the Social Sciences* (1876).

ARTHUR BRISBANE (1864–1936), his son, was a newspaperman associated after 1897 with the publications of W.R.Hearst. His sententious columns, 'Today' and 'This Week,' won him millions of readers.

British Prison Ship, The, poem by Freneau (q.v.), in four cantos of heroic couplets, was published in 1781. In a revision the poem was recast in three cantos. It describes the author's experiences when seized by the British during the Revolutionary War. The first canto tells of his capture; the second describes with bitter satire the horrors of the prison ship, *Scorpion*, where the combination of foul air, rotten food and water, and bad treatment soon made him violently ill; and the third tells of his transfer to a so-called hospital ship, the *Hunter*, where the treatment was equally inhumane.

British Spy, see *Letters of a British Spy*.

Broadway, long a residential street, became the main business thoroughfare of New York City in the mid-19th century. Its most famous section is the theatrical district at 42nd Street (Times Square), known popularly as The Great White Way, a nickname derived from the title of a play by A.B.Paine (1901), referring to its brilliant lighting.

Broadway Journal (1845–6), literary paper of New York City, was founded (Jan. 4, 1845) with Poe as a contributor and one-third owner. By July he was half owner, and by October sole owner. In the *Journal* he carried on his war with Longfellow and the Transcendentalists, accusing the New England poet of plagiarism, and making the paper more notorious than respectable. In it he published for the first time 'Peter Snook' and 'The Premature Burial,' and reprinted many of his short stories and poems. The final issue (Jan. 2, 1846) was partly edited by T.D. English.

BRODIE, STEVE (*fl.*1886), is credited with jumping from the Brooklyn Bridge 140 feet into the East River (July 1886). From the notoriety thus garnered, he became a well-known character as a saloon keeper, and gave his name to such phrases as 'do a brodie' or 'pull a brodie,' meaning to leap, or, by extension, take a chance or commit a blunder.

Broken-Face Gargoyles, free verse poem by Carl Sandburg (q.v.), published in *Smoke and Steel* (1920). The poet apologizes for his imperfect artistry ('All I can give you is broken-face gargoyles'), explaining that the time has not yet come for the creation of masterpieces in his medium:

> Such a beautiful pail of fish, such a beautiful peck of apples, I cannot bring you now.
> It is too early and I am not footloose yet.

Broker of Bogota, The, domestic tragedy by R.M.Bird (q.v.), produced in 1834, and first published in Quinn's *Representative American Plays* (1917).

Baptista Febro is an honest moneylender in 18th-century Santa Fé de Bogota, Colombia. He loves his eldest son, Ramon, despite the fact that he keeps low company. Ramon's friend, Cabrero, urges him to rob his father to obtain money to marry his beloved Juana. The robbery is perpetrated, and Cabrero causes it to appear that Febro has robbed himself of funds deposited with him. Ramon, brought in as a witness, refuses to speak and his father is condemned. After Juana forces her lover to confess his guilt, he is overcome by remorse and kills himself. When Febro learns of this, he dies.

Brom Bones, character in 'The Legend of Sleepy Hollow' (q.v.).

BROMFIELD, LOUIS (1896–), born in Ohio, served in the World War, became a New York journalist and foreign correspondent, and long made his home in France. His first novel, *The Green Bay Tree* (q.v.,1924), is the opening volume of a tetralogy bearing the title *Escape*, containing related characters, and concerned with the efforts of individuals to escape the domination of family and tradition. The three further novels, each set in a different era of American life, are *Possession* (1925), *Early Autumn* (q.v.,1926; Pulitzer Prize, 1927), and *A Good Woman* (1927).

The Strange Case of Miss Annie Spragg (1928) analyzes a dozen unusual characters at a moment of crisis, in relation to the death of an American spinster; *Twenty-Four Hours* (1930) studies a group of New York society figures during a day of emotional tension; and *The Rains Came* (1937) and *Night in Bombay* (1940), both set in India, deal with a variety of personalities in similar states of crisis. *The Farm* (1933) is a novel dealing with a century in the life of an Ohio family, and *Awake and Rehearse* (1929) and *It Takes All Kinds* (1939) are collections of fiction. Bromfield's plays include: *The House of Women* (1927), a dramatization of *The Green Bay Tree; Times Have Changed* (1935), an adaptation of a French play; and *De Luxe* (1935), an original play about expatriates in France.

Bronx, THE, borough of New York City, situated northeast of the Harlem River. Although there is a large industrial area along the river, the Bronx is primarily a residential section, and its northern part is suburban. In the works of Odets, Arthur Kober, and others, it figures as a predominantly Jewish community and the home of middle-class families. Fordham University is located here.

Brook Farm, co-operative community (1841–7) near West Roxbury, Massachusetts, nine miles from Boston. Under the leadership of George Ripley, the Transcendental Club established the community to apply its social, political, and religious theories, forming a joint stock company under the name Brook Farm Institute of Agriculture and Education, and purchasing a farm of 200 acres. Among those interested in the venture were Hawthorne, C.A.Dana, J.S.Dwight, G.P. Bradford, G.W.Curtis, Theodore Parker, Orestes Brownson, Margaret Fuller, Elizabeth Peabody, C.P.Cranch, Alcott, W.E. Channing, and Emerson. Of these, only Hawthorne, who wrote about the community in *The Blithedale Romance*, and Dana and Dwight took up residence there. Among the objectives were the promotion of the great purposes of human culture, and the substitution of a system of brotherly co-operation for that of selfish competition, in order to secure the highest benefits of physical, intellectual, and moral education. The life of the community was simple, all members sharing in the work and the educational and social advantages, and receiving similar pay. Occupations included the tilling of the farm, industrial employments, and school teaching. In 1843 the Institute came under the influence of the Fourierist Albert Brisbane, and after the national Fourierist convention Brook Farm became Brook Farm Phalanx, establishing the three departments of Agriculture, Domestic Industry, and Mechanical Arts. As the center of Fourierist propaganda in the U.S., it published *The Phalanx* (1843–5), and established *The Harbinger* (q.v.,1845). Enthusiasm waned with the loss by fire of an incomplete central phalanstery, and the group finally dissolved (Oct. 1847). An account of the Fourierist period is contained in the *Letters* of Marianne Dwight Orvis.

Brooklyn, borough of New York (q.v.), on the southwestern part of Long Island, was an independent city until 1898, and in 1930 had a population of 2,560,000. First settled by Dutch farmers during the early 17th century, Brooklyn had become an important city by the time of the Revolution, when it was occupied by the British following the Battle of Long Island (q.v., 1776). Whitman and H.W.Beecher are prominent figures in its cultural history. Now a great manufacturing center and place of residence for many Manhattan workers, it is noted as the site of the principal U.S. navy yard, and of such amusement zones as Coney Island (q.v.). The first ferry across the East River was begun in 1642, and Whitman's poem has immortalized the Brooklyn Ferry, but the city is now connected with Manhattan by subway, and by the Williamsburgh, Manhattan, and Brooklyn Bridges. Brooklyn Bridge, the earliest, was designed by J.A. Roebling, who began the work in 1869, and was completed by his son, W.A. Roebling, in 1883. A suspension type, it carries motor, train, and pedestrian traffic, has a span of 1595 feet, and at the center is 133 feet above the water.

BROOKS, MARIA GOWEN (*c.*1794–1845), Massachusetts poet, whose first volume, *Judith, Esther, and Other Poems* (1820), was praised by Southey, who dubbed her 'Maria of the West,' a name she later used as a pseudonym, along with its translation, Maria del Occidente. She removed to Cuba, where she wrote tragic dramas and further poetry, including her epic *Zóphiël* (1833). She was also the author of a ro-

mance, *Idomen; or, The Vale of Yumuri* (1843).

BROOKS, Noah (1830–1903), born in Maine, became a California journalist (1854–62), then a Washington correspondent, and after another period of newspaper editorship in San Francisco continued his journalistic career in New York and New Jersey, until he retired to California in 1892. His knowledge of the West furnished the background for his popular boys' book, *The Boy Emigrants* (1877). Other works include: *Tales of the Maine Coast* (1894); works on Lincoln, whom he knew intimately; and various American historical studies.

BROOKS, Phillips (1835–93), from the pulpit of Trinity Church in Boston, the stronghold of Episcopalianism, won an international reputation as a vigorous leader of his faith, being made a bishop in 1891. Although he published such books as *Lectures on Preaching* (1877), *The Influence of Jesus* (1879), and *Essays and Addresses* (1892), his best-loved contribution is his Christmas hymn, 'O Little Town of Bethlehem.'

BROOKS, Van Wyck (1886–), in a series of biographies and books of criticism, beginning with *The Wine of the Puritans* (1909), developed the thesis that the artistically barren Puritan tradition has crushed American culture and placed an undue emphasis on material values, neglecting the æsthetic side of life. This theory is illustrated in *America's Coming-of-Age* (1915), *Letters and Leadership* (1918), *The Ordeal of Mark Twain* (1920), and *The Pilgrimage of Henry James* (1925). He has strikingly altered this critical belief in his later books, which, in addition to a revision of the Mark Twain study, include the very appreciative analyses of American life, *Emerson and Others* (1927) and *Sketches in Criticism* (1932). *The Flowering of New England* (1936, Pulitzer Prize 1937) and *New England: Indian Summer* (1940) are the opening volumes of a projected series sketching the literary history of the U.S., the former covering the period 1815–65 and the latter continuing the account to 1915. Besides teaching, editing magazines, and helping to found *The American Caravan*, Brooks has translated numerous books and edited such works as the essays of Randolph Bourne and the *Journal* of Gamaliel Bradford. *On Literature Today* (1941) is an appeal to authors to face and attempt to solve contemporary social problems.

Brother Jonathan, sobriquet applied to America and the American people, which has been largely supplanted by the name Uncle Sam. The most commonly accepted origin attributes the term to Washington, who supposedly relied on the advice of Jonathan Trumbull, and once in a moment of perplexity remarked, 'We must consult Brother Jonathan.' The legend is questionable, since no contemporary evidence exists, and the British used the term as early as the 17th century in alluding to the Roundheads or Puritans.

BROUGHAM, John (1810–80), Irish-born actor and playwright, was for many years a member of the company of W.E. Burton. Among his plays were the three burlesques, *Metamora; or, the Last of the Pollywoags* (1847), a parody of Stone's *Metamora; Po-ca-hon-tas! or, Ye Gentle Savage* (1855); and *Columbus* (1857). He dramatized Mrs.Stowe's *Dred* (1856), and wrote other successful plays, including *The Musard Ball; or, Love at the Academy* (1858) and *Temptation, or the Irish Immigrant* (1849).

BROUN, Heywood [Campbell] (1888–1939), New York columnist and critic, was a consistent opponent of social injustice through his articles in the New York *Tribune* and *World*, and in the Scripps-Howard newspapers, *The Nation*, and *The New Republic*, although his successive affiliations were as widely varied as the Socialist party and the Catholic Church. He was the first president of the Newspaper Guild, affiliated with the C.I.O. His books include: *The A.E.F.* (1918), describing his experiences as a correspondent with the American forces in France; *Seeing Things at Night* (1921), a book of theater criticism; *Pieces of Hate, and Other Enthusiasms* (1922) and *Sitting on the World* (1924), selected from his newspaper columns; *The Boy Grew Older* (1922), a novel about a journalist and his rearing of his motherless son; *Gandle Follows His Nose* (1926), a fantasy concerned with the experiences of an 18-year-old; *Anthony Comstock* (1927), a biography written with Margaret Leech; and *Christians Only* (1931), a study of antisemitism, written with George Britt. A *Collected Edition* of the best of Broun's work was issued in 1941.

BROWDER, EARL, see *Communist Party.*

BROWN, ALICE (1857–), New Hampshire author, is best known for her stories of New England local color, collected in such volumes as *Meadow-Grass* (1895), *Tiverton Tales* (1899), *Vanishing Points* (1913), and *Homespun and Gold* (1920). Her novels, mainly portraits of New England characters, although some exhibit her interest in the supernatural, include *Fools of Nature* (1887), *The Day of His Youth* (1897), *Margaret Warrener* (1901), *Rose MacLeod* (1908), *The Story of Thyrza* (1909), *The Prisoner* (1916), *Bromley Neighborhood* (1917), *The Wind Between the Worlds* (1920), *Old Crow* (1922), and *Dear Old Templeton* (1927). In addition to many one-act plays, she wrote *Children of Earth* (1915), a drama dealing with a New England spinster's thwarted desire for love. With Louise Imogen Guiney she wrote a critical study of Stevenson (1895), and in 1921 she wrote Miss Guiney's biography.

BROWN, CHARLES BROCKDEN (1771–1810), after a brief career as a lawyer in his native Philadelphia, moved to New York to become the first professional author of the U.S. Under the influence of William Godwin, he wrote *Alcuin: A Dialogue* (1798), a treatise on the rights of women. Further stimulated by Godwin's *Caleb Williams* and his own critical ideas of fiction, Brown in two frenetic years composed his four best novels, *Wieland* (q.v.,1798), *Arthur Mervyn* (q.v.,1799), *Ormond* (q.v.,1799), and *Edgar Huntly* (q.v.,1799), quickly followed by *Clara Howard* (1801), which was published in England as *Philip Stanley*, and *Jane Talbot* (1801). These Gothic romances were carefully documented in fact and pseudoscience, and influenced by the moral purpose of Godwin, the sentimentalism and psychology of Richardson, and above all the horrors of the school of Mrs.Radcliffe. After this brief burst of fiction, Brown entered business, although he also edited *The Monthly Magazine and American Review* and *The Literary Magazine and American Register* (qq.v.), and did such hack work as the *Memoirs of Carwin* (q.v.). He held high critical standards concerning American literature, believed in using distinctively American materials, and in writing novels whose ideas would stir thinkers while their plots would attract ordinary readers. Although Brown was appreciated by Keats, Shelley, and Scott, and even influenced his own master, Godwin, he failed to achieve his aims because of his haste, immaturity, stilted language, fascination by the pathological, and inability to master completely the Godwinian plot-structure. Despite his failings, his Gothic romances transferred to an American setting have a dark emotional intensity that gives his work more than historical significance. William Dunlap wrote a biography of Brown (1815).

BROWN, HENRY KIRKE (1814–86), sculptor, studied with Chester Harding and was later trained according to Italian neoclassical standards. After his return from Italy and a residence among the Indians, Brown renounced sentimentality and his Italian training to become the first American sculptor to achieve a vigorous and realistic native expression. His most famous work is the dignified and restrained equestrian statue of Washington, in Washington,D.C., completed with the aid of his pupil, J.Q.A.Ward.

BROWN, JOHN (1744–80), Massachusetts lawyer and soldier, is noted for his leadership of campaigns against Canada during the Revolutionary War. He suggested the attack on Ticonderoga and aided in its capture, and later participated in the Quebec campaign. He was killed in the defense of the Mohawk Valley.

BROWN, JOHN (1800–59), Abolitionist leader, in 1855 moved with his five sons from Ohio to Osawatomie, Kansas, following the passage of the Kansas-Nebraska Bill. Believing himself to be the special instrument of God intended to destroy proslavery settlers, he deliberately murdered five of his Southern-minded neighbors, and this and similar acts, together with his previous reputation as an operator of the underground railroad, made him nationally celebrated as 'Brown of Osawatomie.' In 1859 he and his followers moved to Harpers Ferry, Virginia, where, on the night of October 16, he and 21 others captured the U.S. armory, with the intention of establishing a base from which they might free slaves by armed intervention. A force of U.S. marines under R.E.Lee attacked the armory, killed ten of Brown's men, and wounded and captured Brown. With the insurrection quelled, Brown was hanged (Dec. 2, 1859). His sincerity and dignity during his trial caused him to be regarded as a martyr, and Thoreau's 'The

Last Days of John Brown' is typical of many expressions by contemporary liberals. The raid on Harpers Ferry is commemorated in the Civil War song, *John Brown's Body* (q.v.); this is also the title of Stephen Benét's epic poem on the Civil War. Other literature includes Whittier's 'John Brown of Osawatomie,' Stedman's 'How Old Brown Took Harpers Ferry,' and Leonard Ehrlich's novel, *God's Angry Man.*

BROWN, THEOPHILUS (1811–79?), 'the literary tailor,' whose shop in Worcester, Massachusetts, was a literary rendezvous. He was a friend of Thoreau and Emerson, and the excerpts from his letters published in 1879 reflect the cultural life of New England in his time.

BROWN, WILLIAM HILL (1765–93), author of 'the first American novel,' *The Power of Sympathy* (q.v.,1789), long attributed to Mrs.Sarah W. Morton because it deals with her family. Another novel by Brown, *Ira and Isabella; or, The Natural Children* (1807), utilizes virtually the same plot, except that the conclusion is a happy one. He was also the author of some verse fables, a comedy, and *West Point Preserved* (1797), a tragedy about André.

Brown University, a men's college founded under the sponsorship of the Baptists as Rhode Island College (1764), was moved to Providence in 1771. It was given its present name (1804) in honor of its benefactor Nicholas Brown. In addition to the John Carter Brown collection of early Americana, the college library is famous for its collection of American poetry. Graduates include Paul Allen (1793), Adoniram Judson (1807), Horace Mann (1819), G.D.Prentice (1823), John Hay (1858), C.E.Hughes (1881), C.M. Sheldon (1883), and A.Meiklejohn (1893).

BROWNE, CHARLES FARRAR (1834–67), humorist born in Maine, is better known under his pseudonym, Artemus Ward. In 1857 he began to contribute to the Cleveland *Plain Dealer* the series of 'Artemus Ward's Sayings,' a record of the imaginary adventures of an itinerant showman. He capitalized on the traits of backwoods and Down East characters, and attracted attention by comic misspellings, a humorous technique that was frequently copied. He often wrote on current events, and jibed at insincerities and undue sentimentality. For a short time he was editor of *Vanity Fair,* afterward making a highly successful lecture tour of the U.S. and England. He was at the height of his fame as a London lecturer and contributor to *Punch* when he died of tuberculosis. A selection from his books was made by A.J.Nock (1924).

BROWNE, JOHN ROSS (1821–75), born in Ireland, was brought at an early age to Kentucky. After shipping as a common sailor on a whaling voyage, he spent the next quarter-century largely in travel, which furnished material for his semi-humorous books. These include: *Etchings of a Whaling Cruise* (1846); *Yusef . . . a Crusade in the East* (1853); *Crusoe's Island: A Ramble in the Footsteps of Alexander Selkirk; with Sketches of Adventures in California and Washoe* (1864); and *Adventures in the Apache Country* (1869). Browne was later in the government service, writing several important reports, including *Resources of the Pacific Slope* (1869). He was U.S. minister to China (1868), but soon recalled because of differences of interpretation of the Burlingame treaty. In his sketches of the Pacific he belongs to the school of frontier humor that preceded Mark Twain. His *Yusef* parallels *Innocence Abroad* in satirizing travel literature, and the *Adventures in the Apache Country* has the same attitude as *Roughing It.* Browne's first book may have influenced the writing of *Moby-Dick.*

BROWNELL, HENRY HOWARD (1820–72), Connecticut lawyer, served as secretary to Farragut during the Civil War, and was noted for his poems on battles which he witnessed, published in *Lyrics of a Day: or Newspaper-Poetry* (1864) and *War-Lyrics and Other Poems* (1866).

BROWNELL, W[ILLIAM] C[RARY] (1851–1928), literary critic, who, in search for ethical and social standards as measures of value that he felt the frequently provincial U.S. lacked, recommended an understanding of past culture and an attitude similar to that of Matthew Arnold as well as that of the New Humanists, whom he preceded although in a larger sense he was identified with their movement. His learned essays, also distinguished by their fine style, include: *French Traits, An Essay in Comparative Criticism* (1889); *French Art* (1892); *Victorian Prose Masters* (1901); *American Prose Masters* (1909); *Criticism* (1914); *Standards* (1917); *The Genius of Style* (1924); *Democratic Distinction in America* (1927); and *The Spirit of Society* (1927). An anthology of his writings was collected in 1933.

Brownists, name applied by their opponents to those who separated from the Church of England at the beginning of the 17th century. The name was derived from that of Robert Browne (*c.*1550–*c.*1633), who, as a Separatist pastor, felt that some of the rites and ceremonies of the Established Church were superstitious, and that its power should rest in the people. Browne later returned to the Church, and this relapse, with the extreme character of some of his views, made the name Brownist very objectionable to the Congregationalists to whom it was applied.

BROWNLOW, WILLIAM GANNAWAY (1805–77), Tennessee preacher and editor, known as 'the Fighting Parson.' His pro-Union sympathies, voiced in his newspaper, caused him to be imprisoned and later driven from the South. His *Sketches of the Rise, Progress, and Decline of Secession* (1862) had a huge Northern circulation. As governor of Tennessee (1865–9), he disfranchised Confederate veterans and attempted to break the Ku Klux Klan. He served as senator (1869–75).

BROWNSON, ORESTES AUGUSTUS (1803–76), New England clergyman and liberal thinker, originally a Presbyterian, became successively a Universalist, an independent, a Unitarian minister, and a Roman Catholic. He was an ardent advocate of various liberal and socialistic projects, supported the Workingmen's Party, and was interested in Transcendentalism and Brook Farm. His ideas were set forth in the magazines he edited: *The Boston Quarterly Review*, *Democratic Review*, and *Brownson's Quarterly Review* (qq.v.). Some of his books are: *New Views of Christianity, Society and the Church* (1836); *Charles Elwood, or the Infidel Converted* (1840), a semi-autobiographical novel; *The Mediatorial Life of Jesus* (1842); and *The Convert* (1857), an account of his conversion to Catholicism, which created a contemporary sensation. *The Spirit-Rapper* (1854) is subtitled 'An Autobiography,' but is actually a romance concerning spiritualism, which the author attributed to Satanic influence. His works were collected in 20 volumes (1882–7).

Brownson's Quarterly Review (1844–75), founded by Orestes Brownson (q.v.) when the columns of the *Democratic Review*, which he had helped to edit, were closed to him because of its subscribers' complaints. The magazine reflected Brownson's conversion to Catholicism, although it attacked what he called 'radicalism and despotism' in the Church. In 1864 he turned to a chauvinistic interest in American civilization, and then, after a year, returned to Catholicism after the sincerity of his former standards had been questioned.

BRUCE, PHILIP ALEXANDER (1856–1933), Virginia historian, whose works include a *History of Virginia in the Seventeenth Century* (3 vols.,1896–1910) and *The Virginia Plutarch* (1929).

W[ILLIAM] CABELL BRUCE (1860–), his brother, was senator from Virginia (1923–9), and has written *Benjamin Franklin, Self-Revealed* (2 vols.,1918; Pulitzer Prize), *Below the James* (1918), *John Randolph of Roanoke* (2 vols.,1923), *Recollections* (1931), and *Imaginary Conversations with Franklin* (1933).

Brutus; or, The Fall of Tarquin, romantic blank verse tragedy by John Howard Payne (q.v.), produced and published in London (1818) and New York (1819). Based on seven previous plays on the same subject, Payne's work on the whole is nevertheless original. With a careful historical background, it is mainly a characterization of the Roman patriot Brutus and his establishment of the republic. The tragedy is concerned with the treason of his son Titus, who, through love for Tarquinia, aids her escape to the king's army, and is condemned to death by his father.

BRY, THEODOR DE (1528–98), German engraver and publisher, was aided by Hakluyt in beginning his publication of *Collectiones Peregrinationum in Indiam Orientalem et Indiam Occidentalem* (25 folio parts, 1590–1634). This illustrated collection of Latin writings on voyages and travels, whose publication was completed by De Bry's son Johannes (1561–1623) and others, includes important early accounts of explorations of the West Indies and continental North America.

BRYAN, WILLIAM JENNINGS (1860–1925), after representing Nebraska in Congress (1890–4) continued to advocate free silver as a Chautauqua speaker. The greatest statement of his silver policy was in his 'Cross of Gold' speech at the 1896 Democratic national convention at Chicago, when he was nominated for the presidency, although only 36 years old. After a campaign based on the platform of free unlimited coinage of silver as a cure for the

ills of farmers and workers, he was defeated by McKinley, who advocated the gold standard and protective tariff. He lost to McKinley again in 1900. The following year he founded the *Commoner*, a magazine that expounded his reform policies, and until 1912 he was a power in every Democratic convention, winning the name of 'the great commoner.' In 1908 he was again defeated for the presidency, this time by Taft. He served as Wilson's secretary of state, formulating arbitration treaties with foreign nations that were never tested because of the outbreak of the World War, and in 1915 his pacifist sympathies caused him to resign. His militant defense of Fundamentalism reached its greatest prominence when he served as the Tennessee prosecutor in the trial of J.T.Scopes (q.v.). His *Memoirs* were published in 1925.

BRYANT, William Cullen (1794–1878), born at Cummington, Massachusetts, was educated at home, at the district schools, and at Williams College. After an excursion into print at the age of 14 with *The Embargo* (1808), a volume of indignant satires against Jefferson's administration, Bryant wrote *Thanatopsis* and 'To a Waterfowl' (qq.v.), but allowed them to remain unpublished while he occupied himself with his legal career in Plainfield and Great Barrington. His fame as a poet dates from the publication of *Thanatopsis* (1817), and four years later he read 'The Ages' (q.v.) as a Phi Beta Kappa poem at Harvard. Although his first mature book of *Poems* was published in 1821, it was not until 1825 that he gave up his law practice. In 1824–5 he wrote some 20 or 30 poems for the *United States Literary Gazette*, including 'A Forest Hymn,' 'Monument Mountain' (qq.v.), 'Rizpah,' and 'An Indian at the Burial Place of his Fathers,' which established him as the leading poet of the U.S. Early in 1825 he became co-editor of the *New York Review and Athenæum Magazine* and then of the New York *Evening Post* (q.v.), whose full editorship he assumed in 1829 and held for almost 50 years. By 1840 he had become one of the leading Democratic editors of the country, but his vigorous opposition to slavery brought him into the new Republican party. His interest in contemporary affairs and his dignified editorial policy made him a leader of American journalism. In 1832 he published a new collection of *Poems*, containing 89 pieces, which included 'The Death of the Flowers,' 'To the Fringed Gentian,' 'Mutation,' and 'The Song of Marion's Men' (qq.v.). Although new additions and other books continued to appear, this edition contains all of the essential Bryant. Throughout he shows certain ideas growing always out of a limited range of emotional responses, and reporting a few aspects of man and nature. He was a poet of nature, and his work is often compared with that of Wordsworth, who profoundly influenced him, but Bryant's God remained ever a Divine Being distinct from His creation. Nature is simply the visible token of God's transcendent beauty and awful power, and thus nature influences man for good. There is a pervading sense of the transiency of earthly things, but he thinks of the somber certainty of the grave, rather than the earlier Puritan obsession with the terrors of hell. Although Bryant's themes were few and his thought not profound, he possessed a simple dignity and an impeccable restrained style. The Doric nobility and dignity of the poet fitted him well for his translation of the *Iliad* (1870) and the *Odyssey* (1871–2), blank verse renditions plain in style and simple in movement. His other publications include: *The Fountain* (1842); *The White-Footed Deer* (1844); *A Forest Hymn* (1860); *Thirty Poems* (1864); *Hymns* (1869); *The Little People of the Snow* (1873); *Among the Trees* (1874); and *The Flood of Years* (1878). His best prose is found in the discourses on Cooper, Irving, Halleck, and Verplanck, in his *Letters of a Traveller* (1850; 2nd series, 1859), and in the collected *Orations and Addresses*.

BRYCE, James (1838–1922), English historian and diplomat, after a career as an Oxford professor, a member of Parliament, and in various political posts, became ambassador to the U.S. (1907–13). His great work, *The American Commonwealth* (q.v.) was published in 1888, after five visits to this country and wide reading on American history and institutions.

Bryn Mawr College, situated near Philadelphia, was founded (1880) by the Society of Friends. It is an important nonsectarian college for women, and offers graduate work. Its graduates include: Margaret A. Barnes (1907), Marianne Moore (1909), Elinor Wylie, and Katharine Hepburn.

BUCHANAN, JAMES (1791–1868), 15th President of the U.S. (1857–61), practiced law briefly in his native Pennsylvania, was a member of the state legislature at 23, and was elected to Congress (1821–31). At first a Federalist but later a Democrat, he served as minister to Russia (1832–3) and senator (1834–44), and as secretary of state under Polk (1845–9) conducted a vigorous program of imperialism, in which he attempted to purchase Cuba, and handled the Oregon Question, the annexation of Texas, and the Mexican War. While minister to Great Britain (1853–6), he was largely responsible for the Ostend Manifesto (q.v.). He continued this policy as president, and, although claiming he wished to achieve a 'sacred balance' between slave and free states, attempted to acquire additional Southern territory whose status would be determined by local option. Always a believer in 'strict construction' of the Constitution and in state rights, he was a powerful opponent of anti-slavery policies and propaganda. His conservative, legalistic efforts toward compromise between North and South were ineffective, especially during the last few months of his administration, after the election of Lincoln, to whom he left the problems of secession and civil war.

BUCK, PAUL H[ERMAN] (1899–), professor of history at Harvard (1926–), is the author of *The Road to Reunion, 1865–1900* (1937; Pulitzer Prize, 1938), a social history of the Reconstruction in North and South.

BUCK, PEARL [SYDENSTRICKER] (1892–), born in West Virginia, spent her early life in China, where her parents were missionaries. After being educated at Randolph-Macon College and at Cornell, she returned to be a missionary and teacher at Chinese universities. Her best-known writing is *The Good Earth* (q.v., 1931; Pulitzer Prize, 1932), produced in a dramatic version by the Theatre Guild (1932). This story of the lives of Chinese peasants is the first part of a trilogy, *The House of Earth*, which also includes *Sons* (1932) and *A House Divided* (1935). Among her other novels and stories are: *East Wind: West Wind* (1930), *The Young Revolutionist* (1932), *The First Wife and Other Stories* (1933), *The Mother* (1934), *This Proud Heart* (1938), *The Patriot* (1939), *Other Gods* (1940) and *Today and Forever*, a collection of short stories (1941). *All Men Are Brothers* (1933) is a translation from the Chinese. *Fighting Angel* (1936) and *The Exile* (1936), biographies of her father and mother, form together a work entitled *The Spirit and the Flesh*. Mrs. Buck was awarded the Nobel Prize in 1938.

Buck in the Snow, The, poems by Edna St. Vincent Millay (q.v.).

BUCKINGHAM, JAMES SILK (1786–1855), English journalist, founder of the *Athenæum*, and liberal member of Parliament, who made a lecture tour of the U.S. (1837–40), during which time he gathered material for his *America: Historical, Statistic, and Descriptive* (9 vols., 1841–3), an extremely detailed and favorable review of the American scene.

BUCKMINSTER, JOSEPH STEVENS (1784–1812), Boston Unitarian clergyman, was a founder of the Anthology Club. His library became the nucleus of the Boston Athenæum. He was the brother of Eliza Buckminster Lee.

BUDD, THOMAS (*d.*1698), English-born Quaker, came to New Jersey (1678). During a visit to England he published his *Good Order Established in Pennsylvania and New Jersey* (1685), an account of conditions in the region.

BUFFALO BILL, sobriquet of W.F. Cody (q.v.).

Building of the Ship, The, ode in four-stress trochaic verse by Longfellow (q.v.), published in *The Seaside and the Fireside* (1849). A long narrative describes the construction and launching of a great sailing ship, and celebrates the origins of the materials and the beauty of the craftsmanship. The poem concludes with the famous apostrophe to the Federal Union, beginning:

> Thou, too, sail on, O Ship of State!
> Sail on, O Union, strong and great!

BULFINCH, CHARLES (1763–1844), known as the first professional architect in the U.S., did his most distinctive work in his native Boston. He was influenced by the Adam style, and his outstanding achievements, marked by a simple treatment of lightly proportioned classical orders, include the central part of the Boston State House (1795–8), University Hall at Harvard (1815), and the Massachusetts General Hospital (1820). Franklin Crescent (1793), in Boston, was a curved row of homes with the type of exterior known as the Bulfinch front, following the ex-

ample of the Adam brothers in Adelphi Terrace and significant as the first American attempt to create a unified exterior grouping. As architect of the national capitol (1818–30), Bulfinch executed the west portico and its approach, and completed the work of Latrobe.

THOMAS BULFINCH (1796–1867), his son, is best known for his *Age of Fable* (1855), a popular treatment of classical, Scandinavian, Celtic, and Oriental myths.

BULL, OLE (1810–80), Norwegian violinist, made the first of his five tours of the U.S. in 1843. He encouraged nationalism among U.S. composers, and himself created such works as *Grand March to the Memory of Washington*, *Niagara*, and *Solitude of the Prairie*. A friend of Longfellow, he figures as the musician in *Tales of a Wayside Inn*. In 1852 he established the short-lived Norwegian colony, Oleana, in northern Pennsylvania.

Bull Moose Party, popular name of the Progressive party (q.v.) in the 1912 presidential campaign. The name derives from the remark of its candidate, Theodore Roosevelt, who declared, 'I feel as fit as a bull moose.'

Bull Run, about 30 miles southwest of Washington, D.C., was the site of two important battles of the Civil War, sometimes known as the battles of Manassas. On July 21, 1861, when the Union general, Patterson, was attempting to prevent Johnston from joining the forces of Beauregard, Jackson stood like a 'stone wall' against the invading Northerners, who were forced into a disorderly retreat. On August 30, 1862, at the same place, Pope attacked Jackson's troops, who he believed were retreating. The Confederates, however, had merely adopted a more advantageous position, and now caught their opponents by a devastating flanking artillery fire, forcing them to evacuate.

Bumppo, NATTY, see *Leather-Stocking Tales*.

BUNCE, OLIVER BELL (1828–90), New York writer and editor, best known for his plays, *Love in '76* (q.v., 1857), a comedy with a Revolutionary War background; *The Morning of Life* (1848), a rural comedy; and *Marco Bozzaris* (1850), about the recent Greek revolt. A collection of social essays was published as *The Opinions and Disputations of Bachelor Bluff* (1881), reprinted from *Appleton's Journal*, which he edited (1872–81).

Buncombe, county in western North Carolina, whose representative in Congress (1820) insisted that he must 'make a speech for Buncombe,' despite the impatience of his fellow members. The incident is reputedly the source of the colloquial terms 'bunk' and 'bunkum,' which refer to a specious assertion or action done for applause or effect.

Bunker Hill, in Boston, was the approximate site of the first severe engagement of the Revolutionary War (June 17, 1775). The British attacked the newly constructed American fort on Breed's Hill, but were twice routed by the American defenders, who capitulated on the third charge, being out of powder. Although the battle was a British victory, the American morale was strengthened by the favorable demonstration of their small force. The Battle of Bunker Hill is a frequent subject in American literature, as in Cooper's *Lionel Lincoln*. A memorial obelisk has been erected on the site, the cornerstone being laid by Lafayette in 1825 and the monument completed in 1843, famous speeches by Daniel Webster being delivered on each occasion.

Bunkum, see *Buncombe*.

BUNNER, H[ENRY] C[UYLER] (1855–96), edited *Puck* (q.v., 1878–96), to which he contributed much of the familiar verse which appeared in such books as *Airs from Arcady and Elsewhere* (1884), and which was collected in a single volume in 1896. *The Midge* (1886) is a novelette about a New York bachelor and his loving protection of his ward, and *The Story of a New York House* (1887) traces two New York social families through three generations. Bunner's adroit craftsmanship and charming urbanity are best seen in the stories collected in *'Short Sixes'* (q.v., 1891), *Zadoc Pine* (1891), and *More 'Short Sixes'* (1894). His light stories and sketches about New York City foreshadowed the work of O.Henry, but in technique he was so like de Maupassant that, when he adapted some of this French master's work as *'Made in France'* (1893), he was able to insert an original story without detection by contemporary critics. *In Partnership* (1879) contains stories written with Brander Matthews.

BUNTLINE, NED, pseudonym of E.Z.C. Judson (q.v.).

Bunyan, PAUL, giant hero of many tales told by lumberjacks of the Great Lakes region and the Pacific Northwest. Originally, the stories may have described a French Canadian, 'Bon Jean,' but in their later form they are pure mythology. They tell of the exploits of the greatest of all boss loggers, which include such fantastic feats as the creation of the Grand Canyon and Puget Sound, and the invention of the double-bitted axe and of a gigantic hotcake griddle, greased by flunkies who skate on it with sides of bacon strapped to their feet. Paul Bunyan's crews included the one that logged on the Big Onion River during the winter of the blue snow, when it was so cold that cuss words froze in the air, thawing out the next Fourth of July with a great din. Among his companions were Babe the blue ox, who measured 42 axe handles and a plug of Star tobacco between the eyes; Sourdough Slim, the cook; and Johnny Inkslinger, the clerk. A similar hero of the Southern lumber camps is Tony Beaver (q.v.). Tales about Paul Bunyan have been recorded in books by Esther Shepherd, T.G.Alvord, R.L. Stokes, and James Stevens. Robert Frost has written a poem on 'Paul's Wife.'

BURBANK, LUTHER (1849–1926), Massachusetts-born plant breeder, began his career at the age of 21, and two years later produced the Burbank potato. In 1875 he moved to Santa Rosa, California, where in his nursery garden, during half a century, he experimented with flowers and fruits, creating many improved varieties. His most notable work was done with plums, prunes, berries, potatoes, tomatoes, corn, and spineless cacti. These are described in a series of catalogues, *New Creations* (1893–1901), and in the books, *Luther Burbank, His Methods and Discoveries* (1914–15); *How Plants Are Trained to Work for Man* (1921), written with Wilbur Hall; and *The Harvest of the Years* (1927).

BURDETTE, ROBERT JONES (1844–1914), newspaper editor and humorist, whose popular writings for an Iowa paper caused him to be called 'the Burlington Hawkeye Man.' His lecture, 'The Rise and Fall of the Moustache' (printed 1877), is said to have been delivered nearly 5,000 times.

BURGESS, GELETT [FRANK] (1866–), author of humorous stories, verses, and articles, which he illustrated with peculiarly writhing ink sketches. As the leader of the San Francisco literary group, Les Jeunes, he was an editor of *The Lark* (q.v., 1895–7), in which was first published his celebrated quatrain, 'The Purple Cow.' Two of his best known books are *Goops and How to Be Them* (1900) and *Are You a Bromide?* (1906).

BURGESS, THORNTON W[ALDO] (1874–), Massachusetts author of books for children, which are whimsical depictions of nature and animal life. These include *Old Mother West Wind* (1910), *The Burgess Bird Book for Children* (1919), and *The Burgess Sea Shore Book for Children* (1929).

BURGOYNE, JOHN (1722–92), English general, dramatist, and politician, was sent to Boston to reinforce Gage, arriving shortly after the Battle of Lexington. Distressed at the army's inaction and indecision, he returned to England (Nov.1775), but was sent to Canada the following spring. In 1777 he was made commander-in-chief of the northern army, and, although he mustered only half the men he expected, he reoccupied Crown Point and captured Fort Ticonderoga. On his advance to Albany, Arnold cut off his retreat, Schuyler blockaded his advance, and Clinton failed to meet him. He lost men through desertion and in the battle at Bemis Heights (Sept. 24, 1777), where Gates met him with an army three times greater than his own. He surrendered to Gates at Saratoga (Oct. 17, 1777). While in Boston, Burgoyne wrote his play, *The Blockade* (q.v.,1775). He figures in Shaw's play, *The Devil's Disciple*, and in Kenneth Roberts's novel, *Rabble in Arms*.

BURK, JOHN DALY (*c.*1775–1808), Irish-born dramatist, came to America in 1796, and wrote a *History of Virginia* (1804–16). His *Bunker Hill, or the Death of General Warren* (1797) was a bombastic blank verse drama, popular for its spectacular battle scene. *Female Patriotism, or the Death of Joan d'Arc* (1798) is a blank verse tragedy, characterizing Joan as a simple human being, and is untouched by the inflated rhetoric exhibited in Burk's other plays.

BURKE, EDMUND (1729–97), British statesman and author. See *Letter to the Sheriffs of Bristol; Conciliation with the American Colonies*; and *American Taxation.*

BURKE, FIELDING, pseudonym of Olive Tilford Dargan (q.v.).

BURKE, KENNETH [DUVA] (1897–), author of literary and philosophic criticism, whose books include: *Counter-Statement* (1931); *Permanence and Change: An Anatomy of Purpose* (1935), a philosophic investigation of the evolution of ethical ideas; and *Attitudes Toward History* (2 vols.,1937), a psychological interpretation of historical events and characters. *The White Oxen* (1924) is a collection of short stories, and *Towards a Better Life* (1932) contains philosophical 'epistles and declamations.' He has been a contributor to many little magazines, was an editor of *Secession*, and served as music critic of *The Dial* (1927–9) and *The Nation* (1934–6).

Burlesque, popular stage entertainment that originated in New York City during the mid-19th century and derived from such contemporary forms as the minstrel show, variety theater, and travesties of current plays. Although its attractions were always considered to be somewhat illicit, burlesque became widely popular, and from the New York companies grew the Columbia and Mutual circuits ('wheels') throughout the country, as well as the Weber and Fields Music Hall and Minsky's. Typical features were dialect and slapstick comedians who specialized in *double entendre*; travesties of popular drama and of current events; choruses of scantily dressed girls; and song-and-dance acts and spectacles like those of variety and musical comedy. Burlesque shows formed a training ground for such actors and comedians as Weber and Fields, Leon Errol, Fannie Brice, George Jessel, Al Jolson, Montgomery and Stone, Gus Edwards, and W.C.Fields. Like vaudeville, burlesque has been largely replaced by other media of entertainment, and the surviving burlesque bases its appeal on such exploitations of sex as the pornographic strip-tease.

BURNETT, FRANCES [ELIZA] HODGSON (1849–1924), born in England, came to the U.S. (1865) and won her first popular success with *That Lass o' Lowrie's* (1877), a novel of the Lancashire coal mines. This was followed by numerous romantic stories and novels, many of them for children, of which the most famous is *Little Lord Fauntleroy* (q.v.,1886), later dramatized with great success. She wrote a play, *Esmeralda* (1881), with William Gillette, and was the author of such novels as *Sara Crewe* (1888); *Editha's Burglar* (1888), dramatized by Augustus Thomas; *The Making of a Marchioness* (1901); *The Shuttle* (1907); *A Fair Barbarian* (1881), the story of an American girl in England; and *The Secret Garden* (1911) and *The White People* (1917), dealing with the supernatural. *The One I Knew Best of All* (1893) is an autobiography.

BURNETT, W[ILLIAM] R[ILEY] (1899–), author of novels about gangsters, prizefighters, and professional sportsmen, including *Little Cæsar* (1929), *Iron Man* (1930), *Saint Johnson* (1930), *The Silver Eagle* (1931), *Dark Hazard* (1933), and *High Sierra* (1940). *The Giant Swing* (1932) tells of the career of a jazz pianist; *Goodbye to the Past* (1934) is the story of a man's life, beginning with his death and going back to his early years in the wild West; *King Cole* (1936) is an exposé of American politics; and *The Goodhues of Sinking Creek* (1934) and *The Dark Command* (1938) recount episodes of the Civil War.

Burning Daylight, novel by Jack London (q.v.).

BURNSIDE, AMBROSE EVERETT (1824–81), served in the Mexican War and on the frontier, and at the outbreak of the Civil War organized a regiment. He soon rose to the rank of major general, and was several times offered command of the Army of the Potomac, which he accepted (Nov. 1862), leading the unsuccessful attack on Fredericksburg before his resignation (Jan. 1863). He later commanded the Department of Ohio, and in 1864 served in the East in the battles of the Wilderness, Spotsylvania, and Roanoke Island, and in the siege of Petersburg, after which he resigned to become an executive of railroad and steamship corporations. He was governor of Rhode Island (1866–9) and senator (1875–81). The style of side whiskers he wore is popularly known as *burnsides* or *sideburns*.

BURR, AARON (1756–1836), was a distinguished officer in the Revolutionary War, after which he became a New York lawyer, serving as the state attorney general (1789) and as U.S. senator (1791–7). Owing to his unprecedented organization of New York Democrats through the previously nonpolitical Tammany Society, he received an equal electoral vote with Jefferson in the presidential election of 1800.

The House of Representatives, after many ballots, chose Jefferson as President and Burr as Vice President. A candidate for the governorship of New York (1804), Burr was defeated, largely through the enmity of Hamilton. The latter's 'despicable opinion' of Burr led to the duel in which Hamilton was fatally wounded by him. This ended Burr's political career and he next went to the Old Southwest to organize a settlement. Because he was involved in dealings with James Wilkinson (q.v.)., he was apprehended and tried on a charge of treason. Although legally acquitted he was still considered suspect, and now went to England and France, where he concocted many wild schemes, returning to New York and law practice at the age of 56. In 1823 he married Mme Jumel (q.v.). Burr figures as a character in many romances, including *The Conqueror*, *The Minister's Wooing*, Eliza Dupuy's *The Conspirator*, and J.H.Ingraham's *Burton; or, The Sieges*.

BURRITT, ELIHU (1810–79), was called 'the learned blacksmith,' because in New Britain, Connecticut, and Worcester, Massachusetts, he forged metals and Greek verbs with equal ease. Influenced by William Ladd, he conducted a weekly paper, *The Christian Citizen* (1844–51), which became an important organ of pacifism, and he traveled through the U.S. and England to advocate this cause. Besides his *Lectures and Speeches* (1866), he wrote many essays and travel accounts, reminiscent of Cobbett. The erudition of this self-educated blacksmith is also indicated by his translation of Longfellow's poems into Sanskrit.

BURROUGHS, EDGAR RICE (1875–), author of adventure stories concerned with Tarzan, a white boy reared among African jungle animals.

BURROUGHS, JOHN (1837–1921), through keen observation of his native Catskills and under the influence of Emerson and Thoreau, became the greatest writer of nature essays after his two Transcendental masters. Although all his writing is characterized by a distinctive charm and simplicity, his first works, such as *Wake-Robin* (1871) and *Birds and Poets* (1877), are the most poetic in manner. *Locusts and Wild Honey* (1879) and *Squirrels and Other Fur-Bearers* (1900) are products of a period of more scientific observation, which lasted until *c.*1908. During his final years Burroughs held the belief that the salvation of society depends upon 'the great teachers and prophets, poets and mystics,' rather than upon cold scientific reason, and he expressed this creed in such books as *The Breath of Life* (1915) and *Accepting the Universe* (1920). He was a friend of Whitman, and his early appreciation of the poet may be seen in *Notes on Walt Whitman as Poet and Person* (1867), a book written in part by the subject. Burroughs's partial autobiography was published as *My Boyhood* (1922), and *The Heart of John Burroughs's Journals* appeared in 1928.

BURT, [MAXWELL] STRUTHERS (1882–), taught at Princeton, served in the World War, and has since divided his time between Wyoming and North Carolina. *The Interpreter's House* (1924), *The Delectable Mountains* (1927), and *Festival* (1931) are novels, and his shorter fiction is collected in such volumes as *John O'May, and Other Stories* (1918), *Chance Encounters* (1921), and *They Could Not Sleep* (1928). *The Diary of a Dude-Wrangler* (1924) is an autobiographical account, and *Powder River: Let 'Er Buck* (1938) is an informal history of a Wyoming river.

BURTON, WILLIAM EVANS (1804–60), came to the U.S. from England in 1834, to continue his career as a comic actor. He founded the *Gentleman's Magazine* (q.v., 1837), but sold it after failing to agree with his editor, Poe. Meanwhile he wrote the sketches collected in *Waggeries and Vagaries* (1848), and in 1848 opened Burton's Theatre, the most popular playhouse in New York City, where he continued to act. He was the author of two domestic farces, and edited *The Literary Souvenir* (1838–40) and a selection of American humor, *Cyclopædia of Wit and Humor* (1858).

Burwell Papers, manuscript account of Bacon's Rebellion (q.v.), apparently written by a contemporary of Bacon, was given its present name at the end of the Revolutionary War, when it was found among the papers of Captain Nathaniel Burwell. In 1812 Josiah Quincy sent what is evidently an 18th-century copy of the lost original manuscript to the Massachusetts Historical Society, which printed it in its *Collections* (1814) and again, more accurately, in 1866, under the title 'The History of Bacon's and Ingram's Rebellion.' The manuscript was then placed in

the keeping of the Virginia Historical Society. Besides the prose account, the manuscript contains a stately epitaph for Bacon written by 'his man,' and the reply 'Upon the Death of G.B.' These poems, long attributed to one 'Cotton of Acquia Creek,' are now considered, like the body of the manuscript, to be the work of John Cotton, a contemporary of Bacon who lived near Williamsburg, or of his wife, Ann Cotton. The Burwell Papers are believed to be the chief source of the first part of *The Maryland Muse* by Ebenezer Cooke (q.v.).

Bury the Dead, play by Irwin Shaw (q.v.), produced and published in 1936.

During 'the second year of the war that is to begin tomorrow night,' six American privates who have been killed in battle refuse to be buried. The burial detail, at first frightened, then annoyed by the obstinacy of the corpses, is soon converted to their pacifism. The captain then reports the situation to the generals, who attempt to hide the truth ('Wars can be fought and won only when the dead are buried and forgotten'). Their appeals to patriotism and religion fail, as does the intervention of the mothers, wives, and sweethearts of the dead. The rebellion spreads among the living soldiers, and the generals finally attempt to silence the corpses by machine-gun fire, but the intended victims walk calmly off, followed by their living comrades.

BUSHNELL, Horace (1802–76), religious thinker, as pastor of the North Church (Congregational) of Hartford, Connecticut (1833–59), propounded a gospel attacking the harshness of Calvinism, upholding the oneness of deity and the goodness of man, accepting intuition as a basis of theological knowledge, and emphasizing the New Testament. His books include: *Christian Nurture* (1847); *God in Christ* (1849); *The Age of Homespun* (1851), depicting the rural New England of his youth; *Nature and the Supernatural* (1858), attacking Transcendentalism; and *The Vicarious Sacrifice* (1866). His writings were collected (1876–81), and *The Spirit in Man* was published in 1903.

Busy Body Papers, 32 articles in the form of letters contributed to Bradford's *American Weekly Mercury* during 1729. Six of these (1–5, 8) are definitely ascribed to Franklin, and the others are supposed to be the work of his friends. The papers follow the Addisonian form in their homely comments on social, moral, and religious conduct, and other topics. The character Critico is evidently a satirical portrait of Franklin's rival, Samuel Keimer, and the entire series was begun as an attempt to win readers from Keimer's *Pennsylvania Gazette*.

But Yet a Woman, novel by Arthur S. Hardy (q.v.).

BUTLER, Ellis Parker (1869–1937), humorist, of whose 32 books the best known is the sketch, *Pigs Is Pigs* (1906).

BUTLER, James (1755?–1842), English author resident in Pennsylvania, whose romantic novel, *Fortune's Foot-ball; or, The Adventures of Mercutio* (1797–8), deals with the Algerian slave trade, British impressment of sailors, and other melodramatic matters.

BUTLER, Nicholas Murray (1862–), became a professor of philosophy at Columbia (1885), and has been constantly identified with the university, since 1902 as president. During his administration its scope has been enlarged and standards of undergraduate and graduate work have been raised. He has also been prominent in civic affairs and as a leader of the Republican party. His books include: *The Meaning of Education* (1898); *True and False Democracy* (1907); *Education in the United States* (1910); *A World in Ferment* (1918); *The Faith of a Liberal* (1924); *The Path to Peace* (1930); and *Across the Busy Years* (1939, '40), the first two volumes of his autobiography.

BUTLER, Rhett, character in *Gone With the Wind* (q.v.).

BUTLER, William Allen (1825–1902), lawyer, teacher, and leader in New York civic affairs, was noted for his biographies, novels, and society verse. His best known work was the satirical poem, *Nothing to Wear*, published anonymously in *Harper's Weekly* (1857) and reprinted that year in book form without Butler's authorization. It was so popular that several claimants to its authorship appeared, and it was imitated, parodied, and frequently reprinted in the U.S., England, and France. This satire of Flora M'Flimsy, a society lady who claimed she had nothing to wear to parties, captured the public imagination at a time when social climbers were making themselves strenuously felt. Among the books it inspired were *Nothing*

to Do. A Tilt at Our Best Society (1857) by Horatio Alger, and *Nothing to Say: A Slight Slap at Mobocratic Snobbery, Which Has 'Nothing to Do' with 'Nothing to Wear'* (1857) by Mortimer Thompson.

By Blue Ontario's Shore, poem by Whitman (q.v.), first published in the 1856 edition of *Leaves of Grass* as 'Poem of Many in One.' Formed partly from the prose preface of 1855, it was reprinted in 1867 as 'As I Sat Alone by Blue Ontario's Shore,' and under its present title in 1881.

At the command of a Phantom, 'Chant me the poem that comes from the soul of America,' the poet sings of 'These States . . . the amplest poem' and 'the great Idea, the idea of perfect and free individuals . . . that is the mission of Poets.' He calls for poets freed from past conventions, coteries, schools, and religions, celebrates himself 'a man before all—myself, typical before all,' and declares 'These States—what are they except myself?' 'Thrilled with the Power's pulsations and the charm of my theme,' he announces, 'Bards for my own land, only, I invoke.'

BYLES, Mather (1707–88), grandson of Increase Mather, continued the family tradition of pulpit oratory and authorship. His Tory sympathies led to the dissolution of his church, and, though he remained a Congregationalist, he tended towards Episcopalianism. *Poems on Several Occasions* (1744) is a collection of his verse, which is of uneven quality, sometimes witty and urbane, but more frequently imitative and dull. He wrote many theological works and a long poem, *The Conflagration* (1755), and was noted among his contemporaries for his repartee.

BYNNER, Edwin Lassetter (1842–93), Massachusetts lawyer and author, is best known for his novel, *Agnes Surriage* (1886), a dialect romance set in Marblehead during the 18th century. *The Chase of the Meteor* (1892) was a book of stories for children, and his other novels include *Penelope's Suitors* (1884); *The Begum's Daughter* (1890), concerned with Leisler's Revolt; and *Zachary Phips* (1892), dealing with Burr during the War of 1812.

BYNNER, [Harold] Witter (1881–), graduated from Harvard (1902), of which he wrote in *An Ode to Harvard* (1907), revised as *Young Harvard* (1925), but he has lived mainly in California and New Mexico. He developed a melodious lyric style in such books as the *Grenstone Poems* (1917) and *A Canticle of Pan* (1920), and his translation with Dr. Kiang Kang-hu of Chinese poetry, in *The Jade Mountain* (1929), shows a change toward a concentrated simplicity similar to Imagism, which appears also in *Indian Earth* (1929). Bynner published *A Book of Plays* (1922), and under the pseudonym Emanuel Morgan contributed to the satirical hoax *Spectra* (q.v.,1916). *Against the Cold* (1940) is a collection of satirical poems.

BYRD, Richard Evelyn (1888–), a descendant of William Byrd, is known as an aviator and polar explorer, whose most important expeditions include a flight over the North Pole (1926), another across the Atlantic (1927), a long exploration of the Antarctic in 1929 that included a flight over the South Pole, and another Antarctic expedition (1934). His autobiographical books include *Skyward* (1928), *Little America* (1930), and *Alone* (1938).

BYRD, William (1674–1744), Virginia planter, resided at Westover on the James River, and in 1737 had the city of Richmond laid out on his lands. His library of more than 4,000 volumes was reputedly the largest in the English colonies, and his cultural interests resulted in his membership in the Royal Society. He was a colonial agent in England (1697–1705, 1715–26). His commission as a surveyor of the boundary line between North Carolina and Virginia is reported in his *History of the Dividing Line* (q.v.), and other frontier expeditions are described in his *Journey to the Land of Eden* and *Progress to the Mines* (qq.v.), posthumously published journals found among his Westover Manuscripts. *The Secret Diary of William Byrd of Westover* (2 vols.,1940) is a recently discovered diary written in shorthand, covering the years 1709–12, 1739–41. These accounts were merely an avocation of this urbane and witty 18th-century gentleman, and were not intended for publication.

BYRNE, Donn, see *Donn-Byrne*.

C

C.I.O., see *Congress of Industrial Organizations.*

Cabala, The, novel by Thornton Wilder (q.v.).

Cabbages and Kings, novel by W.S. Porter (q.v.).

CABELL, JAMES BRANCH (1879–), born in Virginia, graduated from William and Mary (1898), and began his literary career with *The Eagle's Shadow* (1904), a romance of modern money-worship. With *The Line of Love* (1905), a series of short stories set in medieval times, he began his sophisticated romanticizing of historical themes, continued in *Gallantry* (1907) and *Chivalry* (1909). *The Cords of Vanity* (1909), is a romance of contemporary Virginia, and later novels with similar settings include *The Rivet in Grandfather's Neck* (1915), satirizing the romantic idealism of the South, and *The Cream of the Jest* (q.v.,1917), dealing with a modern writer's search for the ideal of beauty. Cabell is best known for his long series of urbane, highly mannered, pseudo-erudite romances of Dom Manuel, set in the mythical medieval country of Poictesme. The first of these was *The Soul of Melicent* (1913; revised as *Domnei*, 1920), and others are *Jurgen* (q.v.,1919), which won its author a wide reputation because of its attempted suppression on charges of obscenity; *Figures of Earth* (1921), depicting Manuel as a pessimistic individualist striving for an unattainable ideal, who through various amours rebels against convention; *The High Place* (1923); *The Silver Stallion* (1926), dealing with the legends that arise after the death of Manuel, when his followers transform his character into that of a mystical savior; *Something About Eve* (1927); *The White Robe* (1928); and *The Way of Ecben* (1929). He has also published volumes of criticism, including *Beyond Life* (1919), *Joseph Hergesheimer* (1921), *Straws and Prayer-Books* (1924), *Some of Us* (1930), and *Preface to the Past* (1936), which set forth his theory that fiction should be allegorical in interpreting a dream of life, since realism, which he condemns, presents facts out of their relation to the spirit of life. *The Certain Hour* (1916) and *The Music from Behind the Moon* (1926) are collections of short stories on typical themes, while the author's love of the archaic and of elaborate rhythms is also revealed in his poetry, which includes *From the Hidden Way* (1916) and *Sonnets from Antan* (1929). According to his statement in *The Lineage of Lichfield* (1922), *Beyond Life* and *Straws and Prayer-Books* are prologue and epilogue to his Poictesme series, which he arranges in sequence of action as: *Figures of Earth, The Silver Stallion, Domnei, The Music from Behind the Moon, Chivalry, Jurgen, The Line of Love, The High Place, Gallantry, Something about Eve, The Certain Hour, The Cords of Vanity, From the Hidden Way, The Jewel Merchants, The Rivet in Grandfather's Neck, The Eagle's Shadow*, and *The Cream of the Jest*. With the publication of an autobiographical work, *These Restless Heads* (1932), he began to sign his name Branch Cabell, and under this name he has published *Special Delivery* (1933) and *Ladies and Gentlemen* (1934), series of letters, real and fictitious; and a trilogy, *Smirt* (1934), *Smith* (1935), and *Smire* (1937), in which he taunts his critics with urbane audacity, and reasserts the quintessence of his theory of art. That the decapitation of his name has not changed his attitude of mind is further revealed in the novels, *The King Was in His Counting House* (1938), set in Poictesme, and *Hamlet Had an Uncle* (1940).

CABET, ÉTIENNE (1788–1856), French communist, whose Utopian romance, *Voyage et Aventures de Lord William Carisdall en Icarie* (1839), won him many followers. With more than 500 of these Icarians, he came to the U.S., where he became a citizen (1854) after establishing several socialized communities. The most important of these were at Cheltenham, Missouri; Cloverdale, California; and Corning, Iowa (surviving until 1895).

CABEZA DE VACA, see *Núñez Cabeza de Vaca.*

CABLE, GEORGE WASHINGTON (1844–1925), born in New Orleans, served in the Confederate army, studied engineering, and was a warehouse clerk before he turned to writing as a career. His early sketches were published in the New Orleans *Picayune*, and his stories of Louisiana local color appeared in *Scribner's* and *Appleton's* at intervals from 1873 to 1879.

In the latter year he published a collection, *Old Creole Days* (q.v.), which was followed by a novel of 19th-century Louisiana, *The Grandissimes* (q.v.,1880). Other books include: *Madame Delphine* (q.v.,1881), a novelette about a quadroon woman; *Dr.Sevier* (1885), a novel set in New Orleans before and during the Civil War; *Bonaventure* (1888), concerned with a Creole among the descendants of Acadian exiles; *John March, Southerner* (1894), a novel of the Reconstruction, concerned with an amiable old judge and his dealings with Northern intrigues in a small town; *Strong Hearts* (1899), a collection of stories; *The Cavalier* (1901), a story of the Civil War; and *Bylow Hill* (1902), concerned with the unhappy marriage of a New England clergyman with a Southern girl. Cable, who continued to write until 1918, was a leader of the local-color movement, and his stories depicting the charm of New Orleans society, though slight in narrative value, are distinguished by their style and an appreciation of the locality.

CABOT, JOHN (*fl.*1461–98), explorer in the service of England, was born possibly in Genoa, and became a naturalized citizen of Venice in 1476. Under a patent from Henry VII, he sailed for America (May 1497), and landed the following month, possibly near Cape Breton, Nova Scotia. The English based their claim to North America on this, although Vespucci claimed to have landed eight days earlier.

CABRILLO, JUAN RODRIGUEZ (*d.*1543), Portuguese explorer in the service of Spain, was a conquistador in Mexico and Guatemala, and in 1540 sailed as second in command to Alvarado in a voyage to explore the Pacific coast of Mexico. After Alvarado's death he assumed command and continued to California, where he discovered the bays of San Diego, San Pedro, and Monterey. The journal of the expedition, erroneously attributed to Juan Paez, was published in Spanish (1857) and several times translated into English.

CADILLAC, ANTOINE DE LA MOTHE, Sieur (*c.*1658–1730), French soldier and explorer, came to America in 1683. As head of a trade monopoly, he established a colony at Detroit to serve as a military post for the protection of the fur trade. During his governorship of Louisiana (1713–16), his high-handed actions and inability to enter unselfishly into large enterprises, foreshadowed in his Detroit government, led to his recall. Some of his papers have been published in France and in American scholarly collections.

CADMAN, CHARLES WAKEFIELD (1881–), Pennsylvania-born composer, noted for his use of American Indian melodies in such popular songs as *From the Land of the Sky Blue Water*, the operas *Shanewis* (1918) and *The Sunset Trail* (1925), and incidental music for the *Thunderbird* by Norman Bel Geddes. He has also written orchestral and chamber music and operettas, as well as two New England operas, *The Witch of Salem* (1926) and *The Garden of Mystery* (1925), the latter based on Hawthorne's 'Rappaccini's Daughter.'

CAHAN, ABRAHAM (1860–), Russian-born journalist, came to the U.S. (1882) and is noted as the editor of the *Jewish Daily Forward* and author of *The Imported Bridegroom and Other Stories* (1898); *Yekl, a Tale of the New York Ghetto* (1899); *The Rise of David Levinsky* (1917), which has been called America's greatest Yiddish novel, concerned with Jewish life in the U.S.; several other works in Yiddish; and the autobiography, *Bletter von Mein Leben* (5 vols.).

CAIN, JAMES M[ALLAHAN] (1892–), novelist and journalist, whose best known books are *The Postman Always Rings Twice* (1934), a lusty melodramatic novel, which he dramatized in 1936, and *Serenade* (1938), a story concerned with an aging, degenerate baritone.

CAIRNS, WILLIAM B. (1867–1932), professor at the University of Wisconsin, whose books include *On the Development of American Literature, 1815–33* (1897), *Early American Writers* (1909), *History of American Literature* (1912), and studies of the British criticism of American writers. He was an editor of *American Literature*.

Cajun, see *Acadia.*

CALAMITY JANE, sobriquet of Martha Jane Burke (*c.*1852–1903), possibly derived from her threat of 'calamity' to be dealt by her famous guns to anyone who harmed her. A noted character of frontier mining camps, especially Deadwood, S.Dak., she dressed as a man and was a skilled horsewoman and an accurate shot.

Calamus, section of Whitman's *Leaves of Grass* (q.v.), containing 45 poems first published in the 1860 edition. Its theme of the spiritual love of man for man complements that of 'Children of Adam' (q.v.).

The calamus, a plant generally known as the sweet flag, serves as a threefold symbol. Its leaves symbolize mortality; its fascicles, which cling together for support, represent 'adhesive' love or friendship; and its perennial pink-tinged aromatic root is symbolic of immortal life, from which bloom successive transient forms. This mystical group of poems, whose importance according to Whitman 'mainly resides in its Political significance,' is frequently considered a reflection of the author's supposed homosexuality. He declared that it celebrates the 'beautiful and sane affection of man for man,' which would 'make the continent indissoluble' and weld the states into a 'Living Union.'

Calavar, romance by R.M.Bird (q.v.).

CALDWELL, ERSKINE [PRESTON] (1903–), born in Georgia, was reared in the rural districts of this and other states, where he learned Southern folkways and the speech of the poor whites who are the subjects of his books. After studying at the University of Virginia, he produced two novelettes, *The Bastard* (1930) and *Poor Fool* (1930), and a book of short stories, *American Earth* (1931), but he first won wide attention with his novel, *Tobacco Road* (q.v.,1932), which was dramatized with great success by Jack Kirkland (1933). *God's Little Acre* (q.v.,1933) is another novel of poor white sharecroppers, exhibiting Caldwell's rich sense of folk humor as well as his indignation at social inequalities. His other novels are *Journeyman* (1935) and *Trouble in July* (1940), the latter concerned with race hatred in the South. *We Are the Living* (1933), *Kneel to the Rising Sun* (1935), and *Southways* (1938) are books of short stories, the form in which he is considered to be at his best. Other works include: *Some American People* (1935), realistic vignettes of life in the U.S.; *The Sacrilege of Alan Kent* (1936), an early novelette; *You Have Seen Their Faces* (1937), a book about Southern sharecroppers, with photographs by his wife, Margaret Bourke-White; *North of the Danube* (1939), on contemporary Czechoslovakia; and *Jackpot* (1940), a collection of all his short stories.

CALEF, ROBERT (1648–1719), Boston merchant whose rational thinking about the Salem witchcraft trials (1692) led him to write *More Wonders of the Invisible World* (London, 1700), a well documented, bitterly satiric attack on Cotton Mather and others who were responsible. Mather replied in *Some Few Remarks upon a Scandalous Book* (1701), and Increase Mather is said to have ordered Calef's book burned in the Harvard Yard.

CALHOUN, JOHN CALDWELL (1782–1850), born in the South Carolina uplands, graduated from Yale (1804), and after beginning his law practice was elected to the state legislature (1808). There he aided revision of representation to give numerical preponderance in the lower house to the uplands of the state, leaving senatorial control with the lowlands, a device of 'concurrent majorities' or mutual checks which he eventually proposed for the relief of sectional dissensions in the U.S. Subsequently he was elected to Congress, where he was largely responsible for prosecuting the War of 1812; became Monroe's secretary of war (1817–25), and improved army organization; and served as Vice President under J.Q.Adams and Jackson (1825–32). In this capacity he was a champion of the state rights theory, and advocated nullification as a constitutional defense of his state against the oppressive Tariff of Abominations. His 'South Carolina Exposition' (1828) declared that the 'United States is not a union of the people, but a league or compact between sovereign states, any of which has the right to judge when the compact is broken and to pronounce any law to be null and void which violates its conditions.' For this reason, he resigned his post, had a state ordinance passed against the federal tariffs, and had himself elected to the Senate (1831), where he defended the slave system, and battled for the right of minorities to veto encroaching legislation. After a year (1844) as secretary of state, he spent the last five years of his life in the Senate, where one of his most famous speeches, frequently called the 'Fourth of March Speech' (1850), was an attack on Clay's Compromise of 1850. He asked that the South be given an equal right in newly acquired territory, that the North return fugitive slaves, that agitation over slavery be stopped, and that an amendment to the Constitution restore the equilibrium between North and South. This speech was answered by Webster's 'Seventh of March Speech,' favoring Clay's conciliatory policy. Calhoun's political philosophy is

summed up in the posthumously published *Disquisition on Government* and *Discussion on the Constitution and Government of the United States*. The former declares that government must be checked by constitutions, providing apparatus whereby minorities may compel majorities to compromise; and the latter argues for a practical application of this postulate, also advocating a dual executive, representing the two sections, and a dual chief magistracy, both of whom must assent for the validation of acts of Congress. His *Works* appeared in six volumes (1853–5).

California Gold Rush, see *Forty-Niners.*

California, UNIVERSITY OF, coeducational state institution, which has its principal campi at Berkeley (founded 1868) and Los Angeles (founded 1919), and has an enrollment of 15,000 students on the former campus alone. Its library of nearly a million books, including the historical collection assembled by H.H.Bancroft, is among the finest university libraries in the U.S. Leonard Bacon was professor of English at the University (1910–23), and literary figures among its graduates include Josiah Royce (1871), Lincoln Steffens (1889), Frank Norris (1894), Percy Marks (1912), Sidney Howard (1915), Carleton Beals (1916), Genevieve Taggard (1919), and Josephine Herbst (1919).

Call of the Wild, The, novel by Jack London (q.v.), published in 1903.

Buck, offspring of a St.Bernard and Scotch shepherd dog, lives on a California estate until he is stolen and shipped to the Klondike. There he is trained as a sledge dog, and wins the leadership of the team from Spitz. To his master, John Thornton, he gives his entire allegiance, even breaking the ice and dragging a thousand-pound load on a sledge in order to win a wager. After Thornton is murdered by Indians, Buck responds to the call of the wild, and abandons human civilization to lead a wolf pack.

CALLAGHAN, MORLEY (1903–), Canadian-born author, whose novels include: *Strange Fugitive* (1928), the story of a bootlegger; *It's Never Over* (1930) tracing the effects of disgrace upon the family and friends of a murderer; *A Broken Journey* (1932); *Such Is My Beloved* (1934); *They Shall Inherit the Earth* (1935), a study of an average family during the depression; and *More Joy in Heaven* (1937), the story of a reformed prisoner who discovers that the world will not let him pursue his ideals. Callaghan has also written short stories, collected in *A Native Argosy* (1929), *No Man's Meat* (1931), and *Now That April's Here* (1936).

CALLENDER, JOHN (1706–48), Baptist clergyman at Newport, author of *Historical Discourse on the Civil and Religious Affairs of the Colony of Rhode Island* (1739), which emphasizes the subject of religious toleration.

Calliopean Society, New York club (1788–1831) that functioned as a debating forum, library, and social and educational agency. Its members included Peter and William Irving, William Paulding, and C.F.Hoffman. Some of their papers were printed in *The New York Magazine.*

CALVERT, GEORGE (*c.*1580–1632), first Lord Baltimore, received successive grants from King James and King Charles for which was finally substituted the entire province of Maryland. There he was proprietor, captain-general, head of a manorial system, and leader of the Church. In 1632 the rights passed to Cecilius Calvert, who, although a Catholic, adopted the broad principle of religious toleration because he held his charter from a Protestant king. When in 1688 the Catholic James II lost his throne, the Baltimores lost their lucrative colony, and they did not regain it until 20 years later, when Benedict Leonard Calvert abandoned his ancestors' faith for this reason.

CALVERT, GEORGE HENRY (1803–89), descendant of the Baltimore family, was born in Maryland, educated at Harvard and Göttingen, and settled in 1840 at Newport, Rhode Island. He was the author of closet dramas, such as *Arnold and André* (1864); several volumes of poetry in 'a diluted Tennysonian vein'; an essay on manners, *The Gentleman* (1863); critical analyses of the countries through which he traveled; 'biographic aesthetic' studies of English and European authors; a Fourierist *Introduction to Social Science* (1856); and other works. Poe's criticism in *A Chapter on Autography,* 'Essentially a feeble and commonplace writer of poetry, although his prose compositions have a certain degree of merit,' is still considered valid.

CALVERTON, V[ICTOR] F[RANCIS] (1900–40), Marxist literary critic, set forth his

concept of the sociological interpretation of literature in *The Newer Spirit* (1925) and put it into practice in *The Liberation of American Literature* (1932). His other books include: *Sex Expression in Literature* (1926); *For Revolution* (1932); *The Passing of the Gods* (1934); and *The Awakening of America* (1939), a history of early America 'in terms of the ruled instead of the rulers.' Calverton was editor of *The Modern Quarterly: A Journal of Radical Opinion. Where Angels Feared to Tread* (1941) is a posthumously published account of Utopian ventures in the U.S.

Calvinism, system of theological thought found in the doctrinal expressions of the Reformed and Presbyterian Churches, which derives its name from John Calvin (1509–64), the French Protestant reformer. In Calvin's own day, the element of his teaching that involved him in most conflict was his interpretation of Holy Communion, which differed from that of Luther, but his followers have been mainly distinguished by their emphasis upon predestination. The distinctive characteristics of Calvinism were formulated at the Synod of Dort (1618–19), in opposition to the Five Articles (1610) of the Arminians (q.v.), and are known as the Five Points: (1) total depravity, man's natural inability to exercise free will, since through Adam's fall he has suffered hereditary corruption; (2) unconditional election, which manifests itself through God's wisdom to elect those to be saved, despite their inability to perform saving works; (3) prevenient and irresistible grace, that anticipatory grace made available only to the elect; (4) the perseverance of saints, those who are predetermined as elect inevitably persevering in the path of holiness; and (5) limited atonement, man's hereditary corruption being partially atoned for by Christ, and this atonement being provided the elect through the Holy Spirit, giving them the power to attempt to obey God's will as revealed through the Bible. These five dicta were embodied in the beliefs of those whose church polity was Presbyterian, Baptist, and Congregational, and in the beliefs of certain other groups. In New England both Puritans and Pilgrims (qq.v.) agreed with Calvinism in their creation of a theocratic state, but the Covenant theology (q.v.) became as important as the original Calvinist doctrine. New Englanders tended to study Calvin less than such later formulators of Protestant opinion as William Perkins and William Ames. In addition to reading Augustine and other church fathers, they emphasized above all the Bible. Expressions of 17th-century Calvinist thought in New England may be found in such works as *The Wonder-Working Providence of Sions Saviour in New England*, *The Simple Cobler of Aggawam*, the *Magnalia Christi Americana*, and *The Day of Doom*. Later, Calvinism in the Congregational Church was considerably modified and softened by the Half-Way Covenant (q.v.), although under evangelical stress the earlier doctrines were temporarily revived in the Great Awakening (q.v.). The doctrinal framework has been less successful in withstanding the changes in intellectual climate than have the ethical teachings, which have affected both orthodox Calvinists and such diverse thinkers as Franklin and the Transcendentalist writers.

Cambridge (originally Newe Towne), Massachusetts, is situated on the bank of the Charles River opposite Boston (q.v.). It was founded (1636) by members of the Massachusetts Bay Company, and renamed (1638) in honor of the English university town, following the establishment of Harvard College. It has always been an intellectual center, and was the home of the first printing press in the English colonies, established by Stephen Daye. Craigie House, a colonial mansion occupied by Washington (1775) and later the home of Longfellow (1837–82), is situated there, as is Radcliffe College. The present population of Cambridge is more than 110,000, and between the Harvard Yard and the Massachusetts Institute of Technology is situated the district called 'The Unknown City,' which is the third largest manufacturing center in New England. During the 19th century, Cambridge was the home of many literary figures, including Longfellow, Lowell, Dana, Margaret Fuller, Holmes, Howells, John Fiske, C.E.Norton, and John Bartlett. Later authors, in addition to those associated with the university faculties, include Samuel Crothers, Conrad Aiken, Margaret Deland, and David McCord.

Cambridge History of American Literature, The, published in four volumes (1917–20), is a survey 'of the life of the American people as expressed in their

writings rather than a history of *belles lettres* alone,' from colonial times to the end of the 19th century. It provided for the first time an extensive bibliography for all periods and subjects. The editors were W.P.Trent, John Erskine, Stuart P. Sherman, and Carl Van Doren, and among the 64 contributors were J.S.Bassett, V.L.Parrington, P.E.More, Woodbridge Riley, A.H.Quinn, W.E.Leonard, H.C.Lodge, Brander Matthews, F.L.Pattee, Norman Foerster, M.J.Moses, and Mary Austin.

Cambridge Platform, basic statement of New England Congregationalism (q.v.) until the adoption of the Saybrook Platform (1708). The Cambridge Platform was drafted by Richard Mather, amended and adopted by a church synod at Cambridge (1648), and printed as *A Platform of Church-Discipline* (1649).

Camden, BATTLE OF, occurred in South Carolina during the Revolutionary War (Aug. 16, 1780), when the Americans under Gates were routed, and De Kalb was mortally wounded. Simms's *The Partisan* is concerned with this battle.

CAMP, WALTER (1859–1925), author of many books on sports, is called 'the father of American football,' since, from his days as a Yale undergraduate through his career as the University's athletic director, and during almost half a century on the national rules committee, he evolved the rules which govern the game.

CAMPBELL, ALEXANDER (1788–1866), Irish-born clergyman, came with his father, Thomas Campbell (1763–1854), to Pennsylvania, where they split from the Presbyterian Church to turn to a simple form of Christianity, with the Bible the only basis for belief and conduct. Their followers, the Campbellites, were nominally Baptists until 1830, and shortly thereafter united with the followers of B.W.Stone to create the church known as the Disciples of Christ. In 1931 this body united with the Congregational Church, and they now have more than 1,200,000 members.

CAMPBELL, BARTLEY (1843–88), author of popular melodramas, moral and domestic dramas, and a blank verse tragedy. His best play, *My Partner* (1879), shows the influence of Bret Harte in the treatment of California frontier life. *The White Slave* (1882) contains the line, 'Rags are royal raiment, when worn for virtue's sake,' planted for the melodramatic effect that Campbell liked. None of his plays has been published.

CAMPBELL, KILLIS (1872–1937), professor of English literature at the University of Texas (1899–1937), contributed to *The Cambridge History of American Literature,* and was an editor of *American Literature.* His writings include *The Mind of Poe and Other Studies* (1933).

CAMPBELL, THOMAS (1777–1844), English poet, author of *Gertrude of Wyoming* (q.v.,1809). His poems were edited by Irving (1810).

CAMPBELL, WALTER STANLEY (1887–), Oklahoma educator and author, under the pseudonym Stanley Vestal has written fiction and poetry concerned with Kit Carson and the Southwestern frontier, including: *Fandango: Ballads of the Old West* (1927); *Kit Carson, the Happy Warrior of the Old West* (1928); *Happy Hunting Grounds* (1928); *'Dobe Walls* (1929); *Sitting Bull* (1932); *Warpath* (1934), and *King of the Fur Traders* (1940), a biography of Radisson. Under his own name he has edited Garrard's *Wah-To-Yah and the Taos Trail* (1927) and other frontier works.

Campbellites, see *Campbell, Alexander.*

Can Such Things Be?, 24 stories by Ambrose Bierce (q.v.), published in 1893. Mainly concerned with episodes of the Civil War and the California frontier, they are marked by a psychological realism, sardonic humor, and clever use of surprise endings and effects of supernatural horror, exhibited in such titles as 'The Realm of the Unreal,' 'Some Haunted Houses,' 'Bodies of the Dead,' and 'Mysterious Disappearances.'

'My Favorite Murder' is a perversely humorous narrative which concludes: 'Altogether, I cannot help thinking that in point of atrocity my murder of Uncle William has seldom been excelled.' 'The Famous Gilson Bequest,' anticipating Clemens's 'The Man that Corrupted Hadleyburg,' tells of a hanged California horse-thief who leaves his wealth to the man who convicted him, maliciously stipulating that anyone who can prove that Gilson robbed him shall receive the property instead. This results in years of litigation, the wrecking of moral conscience in the community, and the premature

aging and death of his victim. 'One Kind of Officer,' a Civil War story, tells of Captain Ransome's artillery fire on his own troops, owing to the mistaken orders of a general who is killed in battle, leaving Ransome to be punished for his superior's error.

CANBY, HENRY SEIDEL (1878–), professor of literature at Yale and editor of *The Saturday Review of Literature* (1924–36). His books of literary and social criticism include: *Classic Americans* (1931), studies of American authors; *The Age of Confidence* (1934), a survey of American life during the 1890's; *Alma Mater: The Gothic Age of the American College* (1936); and a biography of *Thoreau* (1939). *The Brandywine* (1941) is an informal history of the river.

CANFIELD [FISHER], DOROTHY (1879–), born in Kansas, resident in Vermont since 1907, has written a long series of novels, including: *Gunhild* (1907), set in Norway, and contrasting a Kansas-born Norwegian girl with typical American tourists; *The Squirrel-Cage* (1912), dealing with the married life of an average American couple; *The Bent Twig* (1915), the story of a Midwestern professor's family; *The Brimming Cup* (1921), about a woman torn between her husband and family and her love for another man; *Rough-Hewn* (1922); *Her Son's Wife* (1926), concerned with a mother's attempt to dominate her son's family; *The Deepening Stream* (1930), tracing the growth of a woman's character from her Western youth to her maturity in France after the World War; *Bonfire* (1933); and *Seasoned Timber* (1939). Collections of stories include: *Hillsboro People* (1915); *The Real Motive* (1916); *Home Fires in France* (1918), written in collaboration with her husband, John Redwood Fisher; and *Basque People* (1931).

CANNON, CHARLES JAMES (1800–60), New York author, whose best play was *The Oath of Office* (1850), a tragedy of 15th-century Ireland. He wrote several volumes of poetry and a number of tales, among them *Mora Carmodi; or, Woman's Influence* (1844) and *Ravellings from the Web of Life* (1855).

Canoe and the Saddle, The, sketches by Theodore Winthrop (q.v.).

CANONCHET (or CONANCHET) (*d.*1676), Narragansett chief, signed a treaty with the English during the early part of King Philip's War, but later violated it, was captured by the English, and was executed by the Pequots and Mohicans. He figures in Hubbard's *Narrative of the Troubles with the Indians in New England,* and is the hero of *The Wept of Wish-ton-Wish.*

CANONICUS (*c.*1565–1647), Narragansett chief, granted Rhode Island to Roger Williams, and, because of the influence of Williams, remained friendly to the whites.

Cantigny, BATTLE OF, first major operation of American troops in the World War (May 28, 1918), in which Pershing, under French command, successfully attacked the village of Cantigny, a German observation post about 85 miles north of Paris.

CANTWELL, ROBERT [EMMETT] (1908–), proletarian novelist, whose books include *Laugh and Lie Down* (1931), about life in a lumber mill city of the Northwest, and *The Land of Plenty* (1934), dealing with a strike in a similar setting. He has been associated in an editorial capacity with *The New Republic, The New Outlook,* and *Time.*

Canuck, slang name for a Canadian, especially a French Canadian.

Cape Cod, descriptive work by Thoreau (q.v.), posthumously published (1865) and edited by the younger W.E.Channing, after chapters had been printed in *Putnam's Magazine* (1855) and the *Atlantic Monthly* (1864). Describing the natural environment and people of 'the bare and bended arm of Massachusetts,' the account is based on the author's experiences during three short visits to Cape Cod (Oct. 1849; June 1850; July 1855), and includes ten essays on the history and character of the inhabitants, 'The Highland Light,' Nantucket, the sea, the beach, and other aspects of the Cape.

Cape Cod Folks, novel by Sarah McLean (q.v.).

Capital of the U.S., prior to its location at Washington,D.C. (q.v.), was situated at Philadelphia from 1775 to 1800, with the following exceptions: Baltimore (1776); Lancaster, Pennsylvania (1777); York, Pennsylvania (1777–8); Princeton (1783); Annapolis (1783–4); Trenton (1784); and New York City (1776, 1789–90).

Capitol, seat of federal government at Washington,D.C. (q.v.), on a site selected by the city planner, L'Enfant. The orig-

inal design in the style of the Greek revival was the work of William Thornton, and the cornerstone was laid in 1793. James Hoban assisted Thornton in its construction. Subsequent architects included Latrobe, who was appointed to restore the building after it was burned by British troops during the War of 1812; Bulfinch, who completed the original design (1818–30); and T.U.Walter, who greatly enlarged the structure (1851–65), adding the extensive House and Senate wings at either end, as well as the 288-foot dome that dominates the building. The *Statue of Freedom* surmounting the dome was modeled by Thomas Crawford, and the building contains paintings by John Trumbull, John Vanderlyn, Emanuel Leutze, and others.

Captain Craig, blank verse narrative by E.A.Robinson (q.v.), the title poem of a volume published in 1902.

Captain Craig, aged vagabond, poet, and amateur philosopher, spends his penurious last years in Tilbury Town, where he is protected by a group of young men who, alone among the townspeople, value his wit, courage, and eccentric manners. Tolerating their egotism and frequent incomprehension, he shares with them his recollections of a rich and varied life. The captain is a whimsical transcendentalist, who believes mystically that since 'God's humor is the music of the spheres,' all human striving should be directed toward learning to 'laugh with God.' When one of the young men leaves Tilbury, the captain writes him erudite, self-revealing letters, interspersed with his own romantic sonnets and ballads. On the youth's return, the old man reads to his assembled friends a discursive poetic testament, bequeathing to them the swashbuckling philosophy and heroic humor that underlie his vision of the universe. A few days later he dies, ending his contradictory career with a last request for a brass band at his funeral.

Captain Farrago, character in *Modern Chivalry* (q.v.).

CAPTAIN JACK, see *Crawford, John Wallace.*

Captain Jinks of the Horse Marines, play by Clyde Fitch (q.v.).

Captain of the Gray Horse Troop, The, novel by Hamlin Garland (q.v.).

Captains Courageous, novel by Kipling (q.v.), published in 1897.

Harvey Cheyne, 15-year-old pampered son of a Los Angeles millionaire, is lost overboard from a transatlantic steamer, and picked up by the Gloucester fishing schooner *We're Here*. The schooner is commanded by Disko Troop, a seasoned Bank fisherman of high integrity and strong will, who hires the lad at $10 a month to work as a second boy. At first unwillingly, but later with interest and determination, Harvey learns the arts of sailing and fishing. From a weak, selfish, arrogant child he becomes a strong, self-reliant youth, and after many adventures with the fishing fleet returns home to develop further his interest in sailing ships. He partly repays his debt to Disko Troop by helping the latter's son Dan to become an officer on one of the elder Cheyne's Pacific ships.

Capuchins, branch of the Franciscan Order (q.v.) of the Roman Catholic Church, came to America as missionaries in New England (1630) and in Acadia (1632). In 1722 they were given ecclesiastical jurisdiction in Louisiana, where they founded the earliest churches and schools. Following their jurisdictional dispute with the Jesuits during the 18th century, the Jesuits were expelled from Louisiana. The Carmelites, another monastic order, came to the territory during the early days of French settlement, but were also replaced by the Capuchins, who are still active elsewhere in the U.S.

CÁRDENAS, GARCÍA LÓPEZ DE (*fl.*1540), Spanish captain in Coronado's expedition to New Mexico, was the discoverer of the Grand Canyon of the Colorado.

Cardinal's Snuff-Box, The, romance by Henry Harland (q.v.).

CARDOZO, BENJAMIN NATHAN (1870–1938), after an eminent career at the bar was appointed to the U.S. Supreme Court (1932), where he continued to apply his liberal philosophy of law. His books include *The Nature of the Judicial Process* (1921), *The Growth of the Law* (1924), *The Paradoxes of Legal Science* (1928), and *Law and Literature* (1931).

Careful and Strict Enquiry into the Modern Prevailing Notions of . . . Freedom of Will, see *Freedom of Will.*

CAREY, HENRY CHARLES (1793–1879), son of Matthew Carey, in whose publishing firm he was a partner until he retired to write his *Essay on the Rate of Wages* (1835). This work mainly accepted the

doctrine of *laissez-faire* and that of the wage-fund, but declared that natural laws tend toward a universal harmony of interests. Carey denied Ricardo's theory of rent, which held that the price paid for land in a growing community must constantly increase in relation to labor and capital; disagreed with Malthus by claiming that food increases faster than population, and that distress is a consequence of human ineptitude rather than an inherent characteristic of economy; defined wealth in terms of well-being; and conceived of happiness as being best promoted by considering the nation as a unit of economic activity. In *Principles of Political Economy* (3 vols.,1837–40) he claimed that land derives its value from the capital expended on it, and therefore that rent does not differ from interest. He believed progress to lie in the 'mutual fertilization' of labor and capital, involving an increase for the worker in his share of the joint product. In *Commercial Associations in France and England* (1845) and in *Past, Present, and Future* (1848), Carey championed a protective tariff. His *Harmony of Interests* influenced the high U.S.Tariff Act of 1861. In later works he prescribed manufactures for the South, lamented the low tariff, and reiterated his idea of harmony. *The Principles of Social Science* (3 vols.,1858–9) contains the summation of his doctrines, stressing the analogy between natural and social sciences.

CAREY, MATTHEW (1760–1839), born in Ireland, escaped to France when his pamphlet in defense of Irish Catholics was considered treasonable. After a year in Franklin's printing office at Passy, he returned to Ireland to edit the *Volunteer's Journal*, a paper in which he militated against English rule. His violent editorial policy led to his arrest and later escape to America (1784). He edited the conservative *Pennsylvania Herald, The American Museum* (q.v.), and *The Columbian Magazine* (q.v.). From his Philadelphia publishing house, he issued his various books, which include a vivid pamphlet on the yellow fever epidemic of 1793; *The Porcupiniad; A Hudibrastic Poem* (1796), one of his attacks on William Cobbett; *The Olive Branch* (1814), a plea for reconciliation after the War of 1812; and many addresses before the Philadelphia Society for the Promotion of National Industry. Next to Hamilton's works, these are the most distinguished American arguments of the time in favor of the protective system, and are forerunners of the work of his son, Henry C. Carey. Among his many tracts and books, the *Miscellaneous Essays* (1830) is an outstanding example of his vigorous writing. He published a volume of *Autobiographical Sketches* (1829).

CARLETON, SIR GUY (1724–1808), colonial governor of Quebec, was responsible for the Quebec Act. After the resignation of Gage, the command of the British army in America was divided between Howe and Carleton, who, before he was replaced by Burgoyne (1777), captured Crown Point and successfully defended Quebec. He succeeded Clinton as commander of the British forces (1782), but was ordered to suspend hostilities. He figures in Brackenridge's *Death of General Montgomery*.

CARLETON, HENRY GUY (1865–1910), humorist, and author of farce comedies including *The Gilded Fool* (1892) and *The Butterflies* (1894). His broad humor is further exhibited in the *Thompson Street Poker Club Papers* (1884).

CARLETON, WILL (1845–1912), author of the sentimental *Farm Ballads* (1873), containing his best-known poem, 'Over the Hills to the Poor House.' Other collections include *Farm Legends* (1875) and *City Ballads* (1885).

CARMAN, [WILLIAM] BLISS (1861–1929); Canadian-born poet, after 1888 made his home in New York and Connecticut. He edited *The Chap-Book* and published his first notable poetry in *Low Tide on Grand Pré: A Book of Lyrics* (1893), whose youthful buoyancy and pagan love of nature won it immediate success. In collaboration with Richard Hovey (q.v.), he wrote *Songs from Vagabondia* (1894), which helped to initiate a revolt against the scholarly and anemic poetry of the time, being marked by a carefree gipsy spirit. The collaboration was continued in *More Songs from Vagabondia* (1896) and *Last Songs from Vagabondia* (1901). In his more than 20 subsequent volumes, Carman retained his spontaneity in simple lyrics, although he was occasionally so captivated by rhythm and symbolism that his work contains an undue use of verbal music and coloring. The range of his verse is beyond nationalism, although Canada claimed him as unofficial poet laureate. His later books include: *Behind the Arras: A Book of the Unseen* (1895);

Ballads of Lost Haven: A Book of the Sea (1897); *Sappho* (1904), an imaginative reconstruction of one hundred fragments from the Greek poet; *Pipes of Pan* (1906); *Echoes from Vagabondia* (1912); *The Rough Riders and Other Poems* (1909); *April Airs: A Book of New England Lyrics* (1916); and *Wild Garden* (1929). He also wrote essays on *The Friendship of Art* (1904), *The Making of Personality* (1908), and *The Kinship of Nature* (1913).

Carmel (or Carmel-by-the-Sea), California town one hundred miles south of San Francisco, derives its name from that given to the bay (1602) by Carmelite monks from Palestine, who accompanied the Spanish discoverer Vizcaino. In 1769 the neighboring town of Monterey was founded by Portolá, and its mission established by Serra. Monterey, as capital of the Mexican province of California, is described in *Two Years Before the Mast.* It was captured by Sloat (1846), and later became the capital of territorial California until the admission of the state (1850). Monterey was the home of R.L.Stevenson (1879) and has more recently served as the setting for Steinbeck's *Tortilla Flat.* Carmel became an artist colony (*c.*1904) with the settlement there of Mary Austin, George Sterling, and others. Later residents have included Upton Sinclair, Sinclair Lewis, J.L.Williams, H.L.Wilson, Lincoln Steffens, and Robinson Jeffers.

Carmelites, see *Capuchins.*

CARMEN, Felix, pseudonym of F.D. Sherman (q.v.).

CARMER, Carl [Lamson] (1893–), author and magazine editor, formerly professor of English at the University of Alabama. His writings include: *Deep South* (1930), poetry; *Stars Fell on Alabama* (1934), sketches of Negro and white folklore; *Listen for a Lonesome Drum* (1936), New York state folklore; *The Hudson* (1939), a picturesque history of life along the river; and *Genesee Fever* (1941), a tale of the Genesee country.

CARNEGIE, Andrew (1835–1919), Scottish-born industrialist, began work in a cotton factory after his family moved to Pennsylvania (1848). By 1873 he was engaged in the steel industry, in which he showed remarkable organizing ability and shrewd judgment, as in the selection of such lieutenants as Henry C. Frick. His career was climaxed (1901) when the U.S. Steel Corporation purchased his interests for $250,000,000. During his retirement he wrote an essay, *The Gospel of Wealth* (1889), setting forth the idea that rich men are trustees for the public benefit, which he put into practice in large endowments to educational institutions, including the Carnegie Institute at Pittsburgh, and in gifts for the erection of libraries throughout the U.S. His books include *Triumphant Democracy* (1886), *The Empire of Business* (1902), and an *Autobiography* (1920).

Carolina Playmakers, writing and producing group founded at the University of North Carolina (1918) by Frederick Henry Koch (1877–), who had founded the Dakota Playmakers in 1910. The North Carolina group, in their own theater and during frequent tours through the Southern States, have been influential in the little theater movement as a leader in regional and folk drama. Plays by student writers, including Thomas Wolfe and Paul Green, have been published in a series of *Carolina Folk-Plays.*

Caroline Affair, border incident during the Canadian Rebellion (1837), which nearly led to hostilities between the U.S. and Great Britain. The steamer *Caroline,* owned by Americans, carried men and materials to the Canadians, and loyalist reprisals led to the destruction of the ship and the death of one of her crew. American feeling was aroused, and armed intervention narrowly averted.

CARPENTER, John Alden (1876–), Chicago composer, is best known for his witty symphonic suite, *Adventures in a Perambulator* (1915), a *Concertino* for piano and orchestra, and the three ballets, *The Birthday of the Infanta, Skyscrapers,* and *Krazy Kat.*

Carpet-Bag (1851–3), humorous weekly magazine edited at Boston by B.P.Shillaber, who contributed many of his 'Mrs. Partington' sketches. The edition of May 1, 1852, contained the first published writing of three prominent humorists: 'The Dandy Frightening the Squatter,' by the 16-year-old Clemens; an essay by the 17-year-old Artemus Ward; and drawings and text by G.H.Derby. Other contributors included J.T.Trowbridge, C.G.Halpine, Sylvanus Cobb, C.B.Lewis, Elizabeth Akers, and Louise Moulton.

Carpetbaggers, epithet applied by Southerners, during the Reconstruction, to Northerners who dominated Negro votes in their search for government positions. Because they were transients, the carpetbag that they carried was considered symbolic.

CARROLL, CHARLES (1737–1832), leading Catholic of Maryland, visited Canada (1776) with Franklin and others, in a vain attempt to secure Canadian aid for the Revolution. He was a member of the Continental Congress (1776–8), signer of the Declaration of Independence, and U.S. senator (1789–92).

CARROLL, GLADYS HASTY (1904–), novelist, whose works include: *As the Earth Turns* (1933), a story of Maine farm life; *A Few Foolish Ones* (1935); and *Neighbor to the Sky* (1937).

CARROLL, JOHN (1735–1815), became the first bishop of the Roman Catholic hierarchy in the U.S. (1789). He made his home in his native Maryland, except for 14 years of study in France.

CARRUTHERS, WILLIAM ALEXANDER (*c.*1800–*c.*1846), Virginia novelist, whose works include: *The Kentuckian in New York* (1834), an epistolary romance contrasting Northern and Southern character; *The Cavaliers of Virginia* (1834–5), a romance of Bacon's Rebellion; and *The Knights of the Horse-shoe* (1845), a romance dealing with the career of Governor Spotswood.

CARRYL, CHARLES EDWARD (1842–1920), New York financier, was an author of juvenile fantasies in the tradition of Lewis Carroll. These include *Davy and the Goblin* (1886) and *The Admiral's Caravan* (1892), which are interspersed with such verses as 'The Plaint of the Camel' and 'Robinson Crusoe's Story.'

GUY WETMORE CARRYL (1873–1904), his son, was also an author of light verse, published in such volumes as *Fables for the Frivolous* (1898), *Mother Goose for Grown-Ups* (1900), and *Grimm Tales Made Gay* (1903). *The Transgression of Andrew Vane* (1902) and *Zut and Other Parisians* (1903) are collections of short stories, and *The Lieutenant-Governor* (1903) is considered the best of his three novels.

CARSON, KIT (Christopher) (1809–68), frontiersman and guide, was born in Kentucky, grew up on the Missouri frontier, and in 1826 went to New Mexico, making his home at Taos and becoming a guide on the Santa Fé Trail. He accompanied one of the first overland expeditions to California (1829–31), and took part in many trapping and trading trips, especially in the employ of Thomas Fitzpatrick. Famous as one of the ablest 'mountain men,' Carson in 1842 became the guide of Frémont's Western expeditions, and he was prominent in the taking of California during the Mexican War. He served as a U.S. agent in the Southwest (1853–60), and during the Civil War organized a regiment of New Mexico volunteers, leading them against various Indian forces and rising to the rank of brigadier-general. He was the subject of many frontier legends, and figures in *Death Comes for the Archbishop* and in many works by Stanley Vestal. *Kit Carson's Own Story of His Life* was published in 1926.

CARTER, MRS. LESLIE [LOUISE CARTER] (1862–1937), actress trained by Belasco, appeared in his play *The Ugly Duckling* (1890) and won great popularity in such other Belasco plays as *The Heart of Maryland* (1895), *Zaza* (1898), and *Du Barry* (1901).

Carter, NICK, see *Nick Carter.*

CARTIER, JACQUES (1491–1557), French navigator and explorer, during an expedition to find a northwest passage to Cathay, sighted Newfoundland and Labrador (1534). His reports led to his being dispatched on a second voyage (1535–6), in which he reached the sites of Montreal and Quebec. He visited the region again (1541–2). The French claims to the St. Lawrence valley were based on his first two voyages.

CARTWRIGHT, PETER (1785–1872), Kentucky-born Methodist preacher, an outstanding leader of frontier camp meetings, for some 50 years rode the circuits of Kentucky, Tennessee, Indiana, Ohio, and Illinois. He was an unsuccessful candidate for Congress against Abraham Lincoln (1846). He published three vivid autobiographical works: *Autobiography* (1857); *The Backwoods Preacher* (1858); and *Fifty Years as a Presiding Elder* (1871).

CARUSO, ENRICO (1873–1921), Italian tenor, made his American début in 1903 at the Metropolitan Opera House, and during his subsequent career was the most celebrated operatic tenor in the U.S.

CARVER, JOHN (*c.*1576–1621), helped to secure the financial backing for the *Mayflower* voyage, and was first governor of the Plymouth Colony.

CARVER, JONATHAN (1710–80), served in the French and Indian War, and was sent (1766–7) by Major Robert Rogers to explore the western Mississippi and Great Lakes region and to investigate the Indian tribes. His *Travels through the Interior Part of North America* (London, 1778), a popular work which had more than 30 editions, is noted for its first-hand knowledge of Indian languages and customs and of the geography of the frontier.

Carwin, the Biloquist, see *Memoirs of Carwin.*

CARY, ALICE (1820–71), Ohio poet, prominent in the circle of Horace Greeley, attained an ephemeral literary reputation for hymns and poems. Whittier's 'The Singer' is about her.

PHOEBE CARY (1824–71), her sister, collaborated with her and enjoyed a similar reputation. Her works included *Poems and Parodies* (1854), *Poems of Faith, Hope, and Love* (1868), and a compilation of *Hymns for all Christians* (1869).

Casamassima, PRINCESS, character in *Roderick Hudson* and *The Princess Casamassima* (qq.v.).

CASAS, BARTOLOMÉ DE LAS, see *Las Casas.*

Casey at the Bat, mock-heroic poem by Ernest Lawrence Thayer, first published in the San Francisco *Examiner* (June 3, 1888). The poem, which soon became enormously popular and was a favorite piece in the repertory of DeWolf Hopper, tells of the dramatic defeat of the Mudville baseball team when its hero, the great Casey, struck out.

Casey Jones, see *Jones, Casey.*

Cask of Amontillado, The, tale by Poe (q.v.), published in *Godey's Lady's Book* (1846).

During the excitement of the carnival in an Italian city, Montresor determines to avenge 'the thousand injuries' of Fortunato, a connoisseur of wines who has offended him. He finds Fortunato drunk, but eager to taste the choice Amontillado that Montresor claims to have stored in his underground vaults. Although he has a cough, made worse by the damp air and clinging nitre of the tunnels through which they go, he refuses to turn back when he hears that his rival, Luchresi, may be allowed to try the wine. At last they reach a crypt at the end of a passage, where Montresor shackles the stupefied Fortunato and proceeds to wall him up with stone and mortar. Fortunato cries for help, but there is no one to hear, and Montresor completes his work, the last sound from his victim being a faint jingling of bells on his carnival motley.

Casket, The, see *Graham's Magazine.*

Caspipina's Letters, see *Duché, Jacob.*

CASS, LEWIS (1782–1866), served in the War of 1812, was governor of Michigan (1813–31), and was appointed Jackson's secretary of war (1831–6) because of his knowledge of the frontier and success in dealing with Indian problems. He suppressed the Black Hawk War, suggested moving the Indian tribes beyond the Mississippi, and worked for a peaceful outcome of the Nullification crisis. After serving as minister to France (1836–42), he was elected to the Senate (1845), and there exhibited an imperialist attitude in the debates over the annexation of Texas, the Oregon question, and the Mexican War. He was the Democratic candidate for the presidency (1848), and after his defeat was re-elected to the Senate from Michigan, serving until 1857. As Buchanan's secretary of state, he continued his anti-British and nationalist policies.

Cassandra, poem in iambic tetrameter quatrains, by E.A.Robinson (q.v.), published in *The Man Against the Sky* (1916). This prophetic satire of thoughtless American ideals denounces the modern trinity of 'Dollar, Dove, and Eagle,' and predicts their defeat by 'the merciless old verities,' asserting that 'the power is yours, but not the sight':

> You have the ages for your guide,
> But not the wisdom to be led.

CASSATT, MARY (1845–1926), born in Pittsburgh, from 1874 to her death resided near Paris, and more than any other American painter assimilated the French tradition. She is often numbered with the Impressionists because of her rebellion against academic painting, but her style is closer to that of Dégas. Her natural paintings of mothers and children, done during her later life, are best known, and these are based on fine linear rhythm, sim-

ple modeling, and delightful harmonies of clear color. Her etchings and color prints are distinguished by excellent draftsmanship and a feeling for simple, well-constructed forms.

Cassique of Kiawah, The, romance by Simms (q.v.).

Castilian Days, travel book by John Hay (q.v.), published in 1871. It contains 17 essays on the civilization of Spain and its domination by the Church since medieval times, as well as vivid observations on the conventions, manners, character, and scenery of the country.

Casting Away of Mrs.Lecks and Mrs. Aleshine, The, humorous novel by Frank Stockton (q.v.), published in 1886. *The Dusantes* (1888) is a sequel.

Two middle-aged Pennsylvania housewives are shipwrecked in the Pacific Ocean, and with Mr.Craig, a fellow tourist, paddle their way to a tropical island. There they make themselves at home in a comfortable deserted house, each week depositing in a ginger-jar a sum for board and lodging. Soon they are joined by the scholarly missionary, Mr.Enderton, his daughter Ruth, and three sailors, and after remaining for a time, during which Craig and Ruth fall in love and marry, the party is able to make its way to an inhabited island. In the U.S. again, they start east, but when their stagecoach is wrecked pass through exciting adventures in a fabulous snowstorm, meeting another party that turns out to be the Dusantes, owners of the island home, in search of their erstwhile guests so that they may return the money from the ginger-jar. In Pennsylvania, where Mrs.Aleshine's son marries a daughter of the Dusantes, the sailors settle down to raise onions, and all live together, harmoniously though humorously.

Castle Garden, see *Battery*.

CASTLEMON, HARRY, pseudonym of C.A.Fosdick (q.v.).

Casuals of the Sea, novel by William McFee (q.v.).

CATESBY, MARK (*c.*1679–1749), English naturalist, studied the flora and fauna of the Carolinas and other Southern regions (1710–19), which he described in *The Natural History of Carolina, Florida, and the Bahama Islands* (1731–43), illustrated with more than 200 of his own plates. He returned to America (1722), eventually settling in the South. His *Hortus Britanno-Americanus* (1763–7) is said to have encouraged the introduction of American trees and shrubs into Europe.

Cathedral, The, blank verse poem by Lowell (q.v.), published Christmas 1869. A revised edition (1877) includes the 'Ode Recited at the Harvard Commemoration.'

In this description of a day at Chartres, the poet shows a sympathetic understanding of the spirit of the Middle Ages, and states his answer to the Victorian problem of the relative values of religion and science. Without discrediting science, he attempts to find refuge in a depersonalized deity, 'so far above, yet in and of me,' who is revealed to the inward man in every impulse 'that liberates and lifts, in all that humbles, sweetens, and consoles.'

CATHER, WILLA [SIBERT] (1876–), born in Virginia, as a child moved with her family to Nebraska, where she was reared among the immigrants who are the subjects of many of her novels. After graduation from the University of Nebraska (1895), where her study of Latin may have influenced her graceful Virgilian style, and a period of journalism and high school teaching, she published a book of poems, *April Twilights* (1903, enlarged 1923), and a book of short stories, *The Troll Garden* (1905). She was on the staff of *McClure's* (1906–12), leaving to devote herself to creative writing after the publication of her first novel, *Alexander's Bridge* (1912), the story of an engineer torn between love for his wife and the woman he had loved during his youth. With *O Pioneers!* (q.v., 1913) she turned to the Nebraska prairies, to tell of the heroic and creative qualities of the passing frontier. *The Song of the Lark* (q.v.,1915) is again a study of a woman's character; and *My Ántonia* (q.v., 1918), episodic in construction like her other novels, tells of a Bohemian immigrant girl's life on the frontier, and the pioneer strength that preserves her through numerous adversities. *One of Ours* (1922), which won the Pulitzer Prize although it is not considered to rank with her best work, tells of a young man's escape from his oppressive life on a Midwestern farm to vitalizing experiences as a soldier in France during the World War. *A Lost Lady* (q.v.,1923) differs from Miss Cather's previous studies of women in the Middle West in that the heroine's grace,

charm, and cultivated taste place her above and apart from the new grasping generation that succeeds the era of pioneers. *The Professor's House* (q.v.,1925) is partly the story of an idealistic scholar's adjustment to middle age, and partly that of his favorite student's discovery of an ancient cliff city in New Mexico, the description of which foreshadows the setting of *Death Comes for the Archbishop*. *My Mortal Enemy* (1926) is a short novel concerned with a selfish and strong-willed woman who brings about her own downfall. The author's idealism and love of the past reach a climax in *Death Comes for the Archbishop* (q.v.,1927), her celebration of the spiritual pioneering of the Catholic Church in New Mexico. Catholicism is also at the core of *Shadows on the Rock* (q.v.,1931), which deals with 17th-century Quebec. *Lucy Gayheart* (1935) is the story of a Midwestern girl who gives up an early love affair to study music, then abandons her career to become the mistress of an egotistical concert singer, and meets an accidental death after he deserts her. *Sapphira and the Slave Girl* (q.v.,1940) is a novel based on a story recalled from her Virginia childhood. *Obscure Destinies* (1932) contains three novelettes set in small communities of the Middle West, and *Youth and the Bright Medusa* (1920) is a volume of stories dealing with the careers of artists. *Not Under Forty* (1936) is a collection of essays presenting the author's theory of fiction, and describing literary encounters with such writers who influenced her, as Sarah Orne Jewett.

CATHERWOOD, Mary [Hartwell] (1847–1902), Ohio-born author of fiction, was a school teacher in Illinois and New York, and achieved literary success with *The Romance of Dollard* (1889), the first of a series of historical romances set in French Canada and the Middle West. Others of these are *The Story of Tonty* (1890), *The Lady of Fort St. John* (1891), *Old Kaskaskia* (1893), *The Spirit of an Illinois Town* (1897), *Spanish Peggy* (1899), and *Lazarre* (1901). She also wrote *Heroes of the Middle West: The French* (1898) and other books for children, and published collections of short stories.

Catholic World, see *Hecker, Isaac.*

Catholicism, see *Roman Catholic Church in America.*

CATLIN, George (1796–1872), self-taught painter of Indian life, lived in Pennsylvania until 1832, when he made an eight-year expedition to various Indian tribes from the Yellowstone River to Florida, resulting in a collection of 300 engravings with descriptive text, *Manners and Customs of the North American Indians* (2 vols.,1841). From 1852 to 1857 he traveled in Central and South America and explored the Far West, as recorded in *Last Rambles Amongst the Indians of the Rocky Mountains and the Andes* (1868) and *Life Among the Indians* (1861). He also aroused interest in Indian culture by bringing troupes of Indians to the East and Europe, before the period of the shows of Buffalo Bill and P.T.Barnum. His artistic work, though uneven in quality and primitive in style, possesses the charm, sincerity, and documentary value of authentic records of American Indian life.

CATO, pseudonym of Provost William Smith (q.v.).

Cavaliers, name applied to proprietors of large colonial estates on the south Atlantic coast. They were identified by analogy with the English Cavaliers, royalist supporters of Charles I, and were generally antipathetic to the New England Puritans, American counterparts of the parliamentarian English Roundheads. Tory replaced Cavalier as a designation for royalists and conservatives.

Cavender's House, dramatic narrative in blank verse by E.A.Robinson (q.v.), published in 1929.

After 12 years of wandering, Cavender returns one night to his deserted home. Haunted by doubt, he wishes desperately to learn the truth about the supposed infidelity of his wife, Laramie, which caused him to murder her. His conscience creates a ghostly image of her, remote, serene, and beautiful as in life, parrying his anguished demands with an ironic wisdom and levity. She says that she cannot tell him more than he himself knows, and shows him that his fears are inevitable products of a character marked by egotism, pride, possessiveness, and an inability to comprehend the feelings of others. She may or may not have had a lover; but her marriage had been bitterly disillusioning, for he prized her beauty merely. Cavender grows desperate, while Laramie calmly leads him to the cliff from which he pushed her 12 years before. He might end his distress by leaping from it, she tells him, and vanishes. He turns from the idea of sui-

cide, however, to follow the one hopeful clue in her message: ' "In Cavender's house . . . there are many mansions, And some that he has not so much as opened, Having so much to learn." '

Cawdor, narrative poem by Robinson Jeffers (q.v.), the title piece of a volume published in 1928.

Using a powerful unrimed five- and ten-stress line, the poet sets his story in the farming country of the California coast, in 1909–10. After a fire destroys their farm, Fera Martial and her blind father go to live with their neighbor Cawdor. When Cawdor desires her for her beauty, Fera marries him, but she falls in love with his young stepson Hood. The lad refuses her advances, and for revenge Fera tells her husband that his stepson has raped her. Infuriated, Cawdor quarrels with Hood, and accidentally kills him. Later, after Fera tells Cawdor the truth, he blinds himself in a passion of guilt.

CAWEIN, MADISON [JULIUS] (1865–1914), prolific writer of poems dealing with his native Kentucky, its scenes and its people. Lacking the faculty of self-criticism, he published 36 volumes, in which his occasionally sensitive lyrics are buried under a welter of mediocre verse. *Lyrics and Idyls* (1890) and *Vale of Tempe* (1905) are representative of his work. A selection by Edmund Gosse was published in England as *Kentucky Poems* (1902).

Cayuga Indians, see *Iroquois Indians.*

Cease Firing, novel by Mary Johnston (q.v.).

Cecil Dreeme, novel by Theodore Winthrop (q.v.).

Celebrated Jumping Frog of Calaveras County, The, sketch by Clemens (q.v.), written under his pseudonym Mark Twain, was published in the New York *Saturday Press* (1865) and reprinted as the title piece of a series of sketches that formed his first book (1867). Although his source was an old folk tale that had been in print in California as early as 1853, Clemens was catapulted into fame by his version, which tells of the jumping frog Dan'l Webster, pet of gambling Jim Smiley, which is defeated when a stranger fills its gullet with quail shot while Smiley's attention is distracted.

Celestial Railroad, The, allegorical tale by Hawthorne (q.v.), published in 1843 and collected in *Mosses from an Old Manse* (1846).

The narrator travels the way of Christian in *Pilgrim's Progress*, from the City of Destruction to the Celestial City. Instead of going afoot, he finds that modern achievement has made possible an easy, convenient Celestial Railroad, on which he rides in the company of affable, bluff Mr.Smooth-it-away, who scoffs at the difficult path of old-fashioned pilgrims. The ancient landmarks and institutions are all changed, and on arriving at the end of the line, the passengers expect to cross the river by steam ferryboat. But here Mr.Smooth-it-away deserts them, laughing and showing his identity by breathing smoke and flame. About to drown, the narrator suddenly awakens to 'thank Heaven it was a Dream!'

Central States, see *Middle West.*

Century Association, New York club of writers and artists, was founded (1847) as an outgrowth of the Sketch Club, which in turn had split from the Bread and Cheese Club (q.v.). Early members included Bryant, Irving, F.S.Cozzens, George Bancroft, H.T.Tuckerman, and Verplanck.

Century Illustrated Monthly Magazine, The (1881–1930), continuation of *Scribner's Monthly* (q.v.), was independently published, and edited by R.W.Glider (1881–1909). The early contents included a series of Civil War papers by outstanding generals, and the serialization of Nicolay's and Hay's biography of Lincoln (1887–90). Among the novels serialized at this time were Howells's *A Modern Instance* and *The Rise of Silas Lapham*, James's *The Bostonians*, Hay's *The Breadwinners*, London's *The Sea-Wolf*, and Mitchell's *Hugh Wynne*. Of its short stories, the most popular was 'The Lady or the Tiger,' by the associate editor, Stockton, although Harris's 'Uncle Remus' stories had a wide following. R.U.Johnson was editor (1909–13), when the magazine was known simply as *The Century*. It declined under later editors, and in 1929 became a quarterly. The following year it was merged with *The Forum* (q.v.).

Century of Dishonor, treatise by Helen Hunt Jackson (q.v.).

Certain Rich Man, A, novel by W.A. White (q.v.), published in 1909.

Sycamore Ridge, Kansas, during the post-Civil War period, is controlled by

John Barclay, the town banker and financier, who manipulates politics and the courts to gain local control of the railroads, distributes flour of inferior weight and quality from his monopolistic mills, and even supplies polluted water to the town. During a series of investigations, he ends the romance between his daughter Jeanette and Neal Ward, his secretary, when Neal gives evidence against him, and he blackmails and causes the murder of his friend Bob Hendricks, who advocates municipal ownership of the water supply. After his wife dies of typhoid from the polluted water, Barclay's conscience causes him to give way to public demands, making restitution to those he had swindled, and surrendering his mills to government ownership. Neal and Jeanette are reconciled, and Barclay, performing a last good deed, is drowned in rescuing Trixie Lee, a prostitute, friend of his former henchman, Lige Bemis.

Chactas, character in *Atala*, *René*, and *Les Natchez* (qq.v.).

Chad Newsome, character in *The Ambassadors* (q.v.).

Chad's Ford, see *Brandywine*.

CHADWICK, GEORGE WHITEFIELD (1854–1931), Massachusetts composer and educator, whose early pupils included Horatio Parker, Sidney Homer, and Arthur Whiting. He was director of the New England Conservatory of Music (1897–1931). His compositions, distinguished despite their conservatism for freshness, sincerity, and the introduction of the quality of Yankee humor, include a number of symphonies, string quartets, overtures, and choral works; the operas *Judith* and *The Padrone*; two operettas; and many songs, including a dramatic setting of Lanier's *Ballad of Trees and the Master*.

Chainbearer, The, novel by Cooper (q.v.), published in 1845 as the second part of his Littlepage Manuscripts (q.v.).

Mordaunt, son of Cornelius Littlepage and heir to his New York estates, is educated at Princeton, and in the last year of the Revolutionary War is an ensign in the company of the bluff Dutch surveyor, Andries Coejemans, called Chainbearer, who later goes to Ravensnest and Mooseridge, the Littlepage frontier estates, as chief surveyor. There Mordaunt joins him, and falls in love with his niece, Dus Malbone. Mordaunt and the Indian guide Susquesus are captured while spying on Aaron Thousandacres, a surly squatter who has been plundering the timber at Ravensnest. Susquesus escapes to summon Chainbearer, who comes to parley with Thousandacres. The squatter demands that Dus marry his son, and when the indignant uncle refuses there is an altercation in which he is killed. Thousandacres is killed by a posse while resisting arrest, and members of the Littlepage family arrive in time to learn of the betrothal of Mordaunt and Dus.

Chains, short stories by Dreiser (q.v.).

CHALKLEY, THOMAS (1675–1741), sea-captain, divided his time between trading and missionary voyages and preaching his Quaker gospel in England and the colonies. He appears in Whittier's *Snow-Bound* as the 'gentlest of skippers, rare sea-saint.' His simple *Journal* (1747), recounting both his adventures and his quiet religious life, was widely admired by Quakers.

CHALMERS, GEORGE (1742–1825), Scottish antiquary, historian, and lawyer, resided in Maryland (1763–75). His writings include the *Political Annals of the Present United Colonies* (1780), *An Introduction to the History of the Revolt of the Colonies* (1782), and *Opinions . . . Arising from American Independence* (1784). In the last, he opposes with legalistic thoroughness the constitutional position of the rebellious colonies. A continuation of his *Annals* was posthumously published by the New York Historical Society.

Chambered Nautilus, The, poem by Holmes (q.v.), included in *The Autocrat of the Breakfast-Table* (1858) and in later collections of poems. It consists of five seven-line stanzas, in the pattern of three iambic pentameters, three trimeters, and a final alexandrine: a5a3b3bb5c3c6.

A chambered nautilus is a mollusk that begins life in a small shell and builds larger ones as it grows. In the poem this symbolizes human endeavor, and the reader is exhorted to build a broader and more comprehensive life, growing with his age and experience.

CHAMBERLAIN, JOHN (1903–), journalist and critic, author of *Farewell to Reform* (1932), 'a history of the rise, life, and decay of the progressive mind in America,' and *The American Stakes*

(1940), expressing the liberal social attitude in contemporary affairs.

CHAMBERLIN, WILLIAM H[ENRY] (1897–), born in New York, after graduation from Haverford (1917) became a journalist and foreign correspondent in Russia. His books include: *Soviet Russia* (1930); *The Soviet Planned Economic Order* (1931); *Russia's Iron Age* (1934); *The Russian Revolution* (2 vols., 1935); *Collectivism: A False Utopia* (1937); and his autobiography, *The Confessions of an Individualist* (1940).

CHAMBERS, ROBERT W[ILLIAM] (1865–1933), New York novelist, began his career as a painter and illustrator, but soon turned to the more profitable production of gracefully written pseudo-historical romances. Besides short stories and two plays, he published a long series of popular novels, including: *In the Quarter* (1894); *The Red Republic* (1895); *A King and a Few Dukes* (1896); *Lorraine* (1898); *Ashes of Empire* (1898); *Cardigan* (1901); *The Fighting Chance* (1906); *The Tracer of Lost Persons* (1906); *The Firing Line* (1908); *Police!!!* (1915); *The Restless Sex* (1918); *The Hi-Jackers* (1923); and *The Drums of Aulone* (1927).

Champions of Freedom, The, novel by Samuel Woodworth (q.v.).

CHAMPLAIN, SAMUEL DE (*c.*1567–1635), French explorer and colonial governor, in 1598–1601 commanded a Spanish ship in the West Indies and Central America, and his *Bref Discours des Choses . . . aux Indes Occidentales* (Hakluyt Society, 1859) won him a patent of nobility and the encouragement of Henry IV. He made his first Canadian voyage in 1603, exploring the St.Lawrence, and describing his expedition in his book *Des Sauvages* (1603). The following year he returned with a company of colonists, who in 1605 settled in Nova Scotia. Before the abandonment of this enterprise (1608), Champlain made important explorations on the coast of New England, reaching as far as Martha's Vineyard. He settled colonists at Quebec (1608), founding the first permanent French colony in the New World, and in 1611 established a trading post at Montreal. Many of his explorations of this period were the by-product of military expeditions with the Hurons against the Iroquois, and in 1615 he reached Lake Huron and Lake Ontario, but a severe wound ended these activities, and thereafter he devoted himself to the development of New France. When some British freebooters captured Quebec, Champlain was carried to England for four years of exile (1629–33), where he prepared the final edition of his *Voyages de la Nouvelle France* (1632). Released in 1633, he returned as governor of New France. His *Works* were published at Toronto by the Champlain Society (1922–7).

Champlain, BATTLE OF LAKE, see *Lake Champlain.*

Chan, CHARLIE, hero of a series of detective novels by Earl Derr Biggers (q.v.).

Chance Acquaintance, A, novel by Howells (q.v.), published in 1873.

Kitty Ellison, a pretty New York girl, falls in love with a Boston socialite, Miles Arbuton, during a trip on the St.Lawrence with her cousins, Colonel and Mrs.Ellison. The party is delayed at Quebec because Mrs.Ellison has sprained her ankle, and during this interval Arbuton and Kitty explore the city together and fall in love. Just after their engagement is announced, Arbuton shows himself to be a fatuous prig by ignoring Kitty to pay attention to some fashionable acquaintances. She breaks the engagement and continues her trip.

Chancellorsville, BATTLE OF, Confederate victory during the Civil War (May 2–4, 1863), in which Lee and Stonewall Jackson routed Hooker and the Army of the Potomac. Jackson was fatally wounded, being accidentally shot by his own men. Crane's *Red Badge of Courage* is partly based on accounts of this battle.

CHANDLER, ELIZABETH MARGARET (1807–34), Quaker antislavery poet, at the age of 18 wrote the poem 'The Slave Ship,' which appeared in *The Casket* and, attracting the attention of Benjamin Lundy, led to her regular contributions to his *Genius of Universal Emancipation.* She wrote such antislavery and descriptive verse as 'The Captured Slave' and 'The Sunset Hour.' After her death, Lundy published her *Essays, Philosophical and Moral* (1836) and her *Poetical Works* (1836).

CHANLER, MRS.WINTHROP [MARGARET TERRY] (1862–), born in Rome of American parents, did not come to the U.S. until 1886, after her marriage. She is the niece of Julia Ward Howe and the half-sister of F.M.Crawford. The rem-

iniscences of her youth have been published as *Roman Spring* (1934), and *Autumn in the Valley* (1936) tells of her life in the U.S.

CHANNING, EDWARD (1856–1931), professor of American history at Harvard (1883–1929), whose most important writing was the *History of the United States* (6 vols.,1905–25; Pulitzer Prize, 1925).

CHANNING, EDWARD TYRELL (1790–1856), a founder and editor (1818–19) of *The North American Review.* As professor of rhetoric and oratory at Harvard (1826–50), according to T.W.Higginson he 'probably trained as many conspicuous authors as all other American instructors put together'; his students included Emerson, Holmes, Thoreau, and R.H.Dana, Jr. His *Lectures Read to the Seniors in Harvard College* (1856) was published with a memoir by Dana.

CHANNING, WILLIAM ELLERY (1780–1842), born in Rhode Island, became pastor of a Boston Congregational church (1803). In his sermon at the ordination of Jared Sparks (1819), he clearly indicated his break with orthodox Calvinism, and from this date he was considered the 'apostle' of Unitarianism (q.v.) and the leading opponent of Calvinism. As a stimulating force in the intellectual life of Massachusetts, he did much to prepare the way for Transcendentalism, and other advanced social and cultural movements. His idealism and opposition to dogmatism may be observed in such sermons as the *Baltimore Sermon* (1819); *The Moral Argument against Calvinism* (1820), in which he denies that human nature is essentially depraved; and *Unitarian Christianity Most Favorable to Piety* (1826). In his *Remarks on American Literature* (1830), he asks for a literary Declaration of Independence. His pamphlets on pacifism, antislavery, temperance, public education, and labor conditions are included in his collected *Works* (6 vols.,1841–3).

CHANNING, WILLIAM ELLERY (1818–1901), nephew of the elder W.E.Channing, ran away from Harvard to devote his life to poetry. His first recognition came when Emerson wrote an article on his poetry for *The Dial,* and in order to be near Emerson he moved to Concord with his wife, the sister of Margaret Fuller. Here he became an intimate of Thoreau and wrote the first biography, *Thoreau, the Poet-Naturalist* (1873, enlarged 1902), as well as editing several posthumous volumes of his friend's writings. Channing's own first volume of *Poems* (1843) is said by Lowell in his *Fable for Critics* to plunder the 'orchard' of its editor, Emerson. During succeeding years, Channing wrote his *Poems, Second Series* (1847), *The Woodman* (1849), *Near Home* (1858), *The Wanderer* (1871), *Eliot* (1885), and *John Brown and the Heroes of Harper's Ferry* (1886). Thoreau called Channing's style 'sublimoslipshod,' and other friends deplored his insistence upon native wood-notes wild, which his thoroughgoing Transcendentalism would not let him polish or revise.

CHANNING, WILLIAM HENRY (1810–84), nephew of the elder W.E.Channing, was a Christian socialist and member of the Transcendental Club. He served as pastor of the Unitarian church at Cincinnati (1838–9), and there edited the *Western Messenger* (q.v.). He spent a few months at Brook Farm, was interested in the North American Phalanx, and, becoming converted to Fourierism, headed the Boston Religious Union of Associationists (1847), which included George Ripley and Albert Brisbane. He also edited the socio-religious magazines, *The Present* (q.v., 1843–4) and *The Spirit of the Age* (1849–50). With Emerson and J.F.Clarke he wrote the *Memoirs* (1852) of Margaret Fuller, and his other writings include a *Memoir of W.E.Channing* (1848).

Chantey, sailors' song, whose stanzas, subject to occasional extemporization, were sung by a leader while others joined in the rhythmical refrain, intended to make easier such work as pulling ropes or moving the capstan. Many chanteys originated among American sailors, and others among lumbermen in the forests of Maine and the Northwest. 'The Rio Grande,' 'Shenandoah,' and 'Blow the Man Down' are well-known examples of the type.

Chanting the Square Deific, poem by Whitman (q.v.), published in the *Sequel to Drum-Taps* (1865–66) and added to the 1867 edition of *Leaves of Grass.*

This expression of Whitman's religious thought is presented in four stanzas, each dealing with an aspect of the deity. The first side of the square deific is Jehovah, or the relentless, inexorable laws of nature. The second is Christ, the affectionate 'consolator.' The third is Satan, the spirit of individual freedom in opposition to the omnipotent. The fourth is the feminine

Santa Spirita, the soul which mystically pervades all, giving direction and form to the divine energies.

Chap-Book, The (1894–8), semimonthly little magazine, was founded at Cambridge as a house organ of the publishers, Stone and Kimball. Moved with the firm to Chicago after six months, it had already become a separate publication, printing works by Henry James, Hamlin Garland, Eugene Field, Bliss Carman, and Julian Hawthorne, in addition to contributions from such foreign authors as Wells, Beerbohm, Stevenson, Henley, and Yeats. In typography, illustrations, and literary content, the magazine was faintly suggestive of the English *fin de siècle* publications, and in its turn affected *The Lark* and other American periodicals. It was increased in size (1897) and later lost much of its charm and naïveté.

Chapbooks, pamphlet editions of popular literature, widely distributed in the early U.S., especially during the first quarter of the 19th century. Like the English publications of the same type, they included such various materials as jokes, ballads, marvelous accounts, fables, Gothic tales, biographies of popular heroes, model letters, moral stories, and orations. Mason Weems was an author and peddler of chapbooks, and among the prominent publishers was Isaiah Thomas. Chapbooks shared with almanacs and newspapers the most important place in the dissemination of popular literature in their time.

CHAPLIN, CHARLES [SPENCER] (1889–), English-born actor, after a career in vaudeville in England and the U.S. became a motion picture comedian, known for his brilliant pantomime and creation of the wistful tramp character that he has consistently portrayed. He composes and directs his own full-length pictures.

CHAPMAN, CHARLES EDWARD (1880–), professor at the University of California (1914–), is the author of *The Founding of Spanish California* (1916), *A History of California—the Spanish Period* (1921), and *Colonial Hispanic America* (1923).

CHAPMAN, JOHN (1774–1847), Massachusetts-born orchardist, known as 'Johnny Appleseed' because of the fruit trees he planted for frontier settlers in Pennsylvania, Ohio, Indiana, and Illinois. Many legends and tall tales were told of his remarkable woodcraft and his adventures in aiding pioneers. He is the subject of a ballad by W.H.Venable and of many poems by Vachel Lindsay, including 'In Praise of Johnny Appleseed' (q.v.).

CHAPMAN, JOHN JAY (1862–1933), literary critic, translator, and essayist, was a strong individualist in his eclectic criticism based on an 'essentially aristocratic' and Emersonian appreciation of individualism. His books include: *Emerson, and Other Essays* (1898); *Learning, and Other Essays* (1910); *William Floyd Garrison* (1913, revised 1921); *Memories and Milestones* (1915); *Greek Genius, and Other Essays* (1915); *Letters and Religion* (1924); and *New Horizons in American Life* (1932). He was the author of many plays, including *The Treason and Death of Benedict Arnold* (1910), 'a play for a Greek theatre.' His *Songs and Poems* were collected in 1919, and in 1937 M.A.DeWolfe Howe issued *John Jay Chapman and His Letters.*

CHAPMAN, MARIA WESTON (1806–85), was associated with Garrison as treasurer of the Massachusetts Anti-Slavery Society, and as an editor of the *Liberator.* She wrote many abolitionist articles, and her *Life of Harriet Martineau* (1877) was the result of a long personal friendship. She sponsored the publication of *The Liberty Bell* (q.v.,1839–58).

Chapultepec, fort on a rocky eminence near Mexico City, where Santa Anna's forces were disastrously defeated by Winfield Scott (Sept. 1847).

Character and Opinion in the United States, essays by Santayana (q.v.), published in 1920.

Written several years after the author ceased to live in the U.S., these critical memoirs interpret the temper of the American people and their philosophic thought, in terms of his observations at Harvard and elsewhere. Besides reminiscences of the university and of his fellow professors, William James and Josiah Royce, there is a discussion of the conflict between materialism and idealism, and the moral background embodied in New England Calvinism and the conditions of the frontier, 'the primitive physical emptiness' accompanied by a 'moral emptiness.' The American character is 'cheerfully experimental,' imaginative, optimistic, 'successful in invention, conservative

in reform, and quick in emergencies.' Its attitude is that of a 'moral materialism,' marked by a 'love of quantity,' but inconclusive because 'the American has never yet had to face the trials of Job.' The typical American, though unprovided with opportunities to develop a sense of beauty, is 'wonderfully alive,' youthful, inquisitive, and enthusiastic, and promises much for the future, when older regions of 'romantic Christendom' disintegrate before 'a flood of barbarism from below.'

Characteristics, novel by S.Weir Mitchell (q.v.).

Chardon Street Convention, three meetings (Nov. 1840; March 1841; Nov. 1841) held at Boston, in the Chardon Street Chapel, under the leadership of Edmund Quincy and Bronson Alcott, for the consideration of religious questions. The dominant spirit was one of radical idealism, those who attended wishing to cleave through orthodoxy and ritual to a practical application of Christianity in contemporary American life. The meetings were reported by Emerson in *The Dial.*

Charlemont, see *Beauchampe.*

Charles the Second; or, The Merry Monarch, comedy by J.H.Payne (q.v.), adapted with the anonymous assistance of Irving from a French play. It was produced in London and New York (1824), and published the same year.

The Earl of Rochester, at the instigation of his beloved Lady Clara, attempts to reform Charles II, and takes the king in disguise to a sailors' tavern. There he leaves the monarch without money, to be threatened with arrest by the landlord, until he escapes by a window. Lady Clara wins the king's pardon for Rochester by pretending that she will otherwise expose Charles. Rochester and Lady Clara plan to marry, and the king resolves to mend his ways.

Charleston, seaport and largest city of South Carolina, a center of the cotton trade, had a population in 1940 of 70,869, about half of which was Negro. The city, founded in 1670, was capital of the colony and of the state until 1790, and during the Revolution was an important base, being captured by Clinton in 1780. During the Civil War it was held by the Confederates until their evacuation (Feb. 1865). Among the fortresses in Charleston harbor are Fort Sumter (q.v.) and Sullivan's Island, where Poe set his 'Gold-Bug' and other tales. The severest earthquake in U.S. history occurred at Charleston (1886). Political figures of the city have included Pinckney, Legaré, and Gadsden, while among the authors have been William J. Grayson, the Russell's Bookstore Group (q.v.) including Timrod, Simms, and Hayne, and DuBose Heyward and Hervey Allen. The *Charleston Mercury* (1820–68) was founded as a 'fire-eater' organ of R.B.Rhett, and edited by his son to promote the extremist position of the secessionists. Suspended following the evacuation of the city (1865), the *Mercury* was revived the next year to oppose the Reconstruction. Other Charleston publications included *The Southern Review* (q.v.) of Legaré, and the *Southern Literary Journal* and its successors, edited by DeBow and Simms.

Charlotte Temple: a Tale of Truth, sentimental romance by Susanna Rowson (q.v.), published in England (1791) and in the U.S. (1794). Based on experiences of the author's family, it was 'designed . . . for the perusal of the young and thoughtful of the fair sex.' By 1933 it had gone through 161 editions in the U.S. A sequel, *Charlotte's Daughter* (1828) is usually published as *Lucy Temple.*

At 15 Charlotte is a pupil in Mme Du Pont's school for young ladies. An army officer, Montraville, aided by an unscrupulous teacher, Mlle La Rue, seduces the girl, who elopes with him from England to New York. There he deserts her, to marry an heiress, Julia Franklin. Charlotte gives birth to a daughter, Lucy, but, abandoned even by the heartless Mlle La Rue, now married to Colonel Crayton, she dies in poverty. Her father arrives too late to help her, adopts Lucy, and refuses to punish the repentant Montraville. The latter in a duel kills his former friend Belcour, who had further misled Charlotte, and returns to the tender Julia, although 'to the end of his life [he] was subject to severe fits of melancholy and . . . frequently retired to the church yard, where he would weep over the grave, and regret the untimely fate of the lovely Charlotte Temple.'

Charter Oak, a tree near Hartford, Connecticut, supposedly the place in which the colonial charter was hidden (1687) when it was demanded by Andros, then governor-general of New England. The tree stood until 1856.

CHASE, MARY ELLEN (1887–), professor of English at Smith College, and author of *Mary Peters* (1934) and *Silas Crockett* (1935), popular novels dealing with New England seafaring families. *Dawn in Lyonesse* (1938) is a modern parallel of the story of Tristram and Isolde. *A Goodly Heritage* (1932) and *A Goodly Fellowship* (1939) are autobiographical works.

CHASE, SALMON PORTLAND (1808–73), born in New Hampshire, graduated from Dartmouth (1826) and practiced law in Cincinnati, where he became a prominent antislavery leader, important in both the Liberty and Free-Soil Parties. He was a senator (1848–54), served as governor of Ohio (1855–9), and was then returned to the Senate as a Republican. As secretary of the treasury during the Civil War he established the national banking system. He resigned from the cabinet (1864) and was appointed by Lincoln to be Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, where his attitude was generally conservative in relation to Reconstruction policies.

CHASE, STUART (1888–), after graduation from Harvard (1910), served with the Federal Trade Commission and a labor organization for economic research. His first book, *The Tragedy of Waste* (1925), was followed by other social and economic studies, which include: *Men and Machines* (1929); *Prosperity: Fact or Myth?* (1929); *Mexico* (1931); *The Nemesis of American Business* (1931); *A New Deal* (1932); *The Economy of Abundance* (1934); *Rich Land, Poor Land* (1936); *The Tyranny of Words* (1938), a study of semantics; and *Idle Money, Idle Men* (1940).

CHASE, WILLIAM MERRITT (1849–1916), after studying painting in his native Indiana and at St.Louis, went to Munich (1872), where, with Duveneck, he became the leading American exponent of the Munich manner of painting, with heavily loaded brush strokes and dark brown tones. He settled in New York (1877), making his influence felt through his teaching and paintings of American life.

CHASTELLUX, FRANÇOIS JEAN, *Marquis de* (1734–88), French author, and major-general under Rochambeau in the Revolutionary War, is noted for his account of America in *Travels in North-America, in the Years* 1780, 1781, *and* 1782 . . . (2 vols., 1787).

CHATEAUBRIAND, FRANÇOIS RENÉ, *Vicomte de* (1768–1848), French romantic author, made one visit to the U.S. (July 10–Dec. 10, 1791), which included a trip from Baltimore to Niagara Falls and a brief residence with an Indian tribe. His works with American settings include *Atala*, *René*, and *Les Natchez* (qq.v.).

Château-Thierry, BATTLE OF, occurred (June–July 1918) when Hindenburg's army attacked the town of Château-Thierry on the Marne, attempting to extend its southern gains, pinch off Rheims, and clear the way for a drive on Chalons and Paris. Foch launched a successful counter-attack, aided by the A.E.F., which forced the Germans to retreat. The Battle of Belleau Wood was fought to preserve these Allied gains.

Chattanooga, BATTLE OF, during the Civil War (Nov. 23–25, 1863), included the engagement on Lookout Mountain known as the 'Battle above the Clouds.' Grant, Hooker, and Sherman commanded the Union forces, who routed the Confederates led by Bragg.

CHAUNCEY, CHARLES (1705–87), pastor of the First Church of Boston (1727–87), opposed Jonathan Edwards and the revivalists of the Great Awakening in his *Seasonable Thoughts on the State of Religion in New England* (1743) and other pamphlets. He also published a *Compleat View of Episcopacy* (1771), stating his arguments against an Anglican hierarchy in the colonies, and in other sermons and pamphlets set forth reasons for a distinct break from the mother country. Late in life he proclaimed himself a Universalist in *Salvation for All Men* (1782) and *The Mystery Hid from Ages and Generations* (1784).

Chautauqua movement, an outgrowth of the lyceum movement (q.v.), originated at Lake Chautauqua, New York, where annual Methodist Episcopal camp meetings had been held until they were reorganized (1874) as assemblies for religious study. The program was extended to include other branches of education, as well as musical and dramatic entertainments. The resulting Chautauqua Institution offered correspondence courses, published books, issued *The Chautauquan* (1880–1914), and held an annual summer school. Its success caused other communities throughout the U.S. to imitate the venture, and 'chautauqua' became a generic

name for programs given by troupes of lecturers and entertainers, operated in the manner of traveling theatrical companies, and performing in rural settlements.

CHEETHAM, JAMES (1772–1810), English-born journalist, was part owner of the New York daily, *The American Citizen*, which supported DeWitt Clinton. His vindictive *View of the Political Conduct of Aaron Burr* (1802) involved him in a bitter newspaper battle with Peter Irving and others. He was also the author of a scornful *Life of Thomas Paine* (1809).

Chelsea Rooming House, poems by Horace Gregory (q.v.).

Cherokee Indians, large tribe that formerly occupied the mountains of Georgia, Alabama, Tennessee, and Carolina. They aided the British against the French, as well as in the Revolutionary War, when they attacked frontier settlers. In 1827 they adopted a government modeled on that of the U.S., after which, although the U.S.Supreme Court upheld their autonomy, they were deported by force to Oklahoma. In 1906 they disbanded, and became U.S. citizens. The high state of their culture is represented in such individuals as Sequoyah (q.v.), who created their alphabet. Elias Boudinot, an educated Cherokee, edited the *Cherokee Phoenix* (1828–35), the first newspaper for an Indian tribe, and wrote *Poor Sarah: or the Indian Woman* (1833). The 'Deathsong of a Cherokee Indian,' sometimes attributed to Freneau, appears as a song in Tyler's play, *The Contrast.* Cherokee Indians of the colonial period appear in the novels of Mary N. Murfree, and those of later times in stories by W.G.Simms, who gained first-hand knowledge by a sojourn among them. *The Cherokee Night* is a play by Lynn Riggs.

CHESNUTT, CHARLES WADDELL (1858–1932), Negro author, best known for *The Conjure Woman* (1899), a series of dialect stories about incidents of slavery, told by an old Negro gardener to his Northern employers. This was followed by a biography of Frederick Douglass (1899), and a second collection of stories, *The Wife of His Youth* (1899), dealing with a free Negro's conflicting loyalty to the wife he had married in slavery and the more refined Negress whom he later meets. His less successful novels are: *The House behind the Cedars* (1900), concerned with a light-complexioned Negress who is undecided whether to enjoy comfort as a white man's mistress or the sincere love of a Negro; *The Marrow of Tradition* (1901), about the struggles of Negro and white half-sisters; and *The Colonel's Dream* (1905), telling of an idealist's unsuccessful attempt to root race hatred out of a Southern town.

CHEVALIER, MICHEL, see *Society, Manners, and Politics in the United States.*

Chevalier of Pensieri-Vani, The, novel by H.B.Fuller (q.v.).

Cheyenne Indians, Plains tribe (q.v.) of the Algonquian family, inhabited a region near the Black Hills and then migrated to the headwaters of the Platte River, where in 1830 they divided into northern and southern bands. Treaties with the southern group were constantly violated, and, after an indiscriminate massacre by U.S. troops, there began the bitter war which culminated in Custer's annihilation of a great number of the Cheyenne in 1868, and the revenge of others, who joined Sitting Bull in the battle of Little Big Horn. The Cheyenne are the subject of a study by G.B.Grinnell, and figure in the novels of Hamlin Garland.

Chibiabos, character in *Hiawatha* (q.v.).

Chicago, situated on the southwest shore of Lake Michigan, is the largest city of Illinois and second largest of the U.S., with a population of 3,384,556. Its site on the Chicago River was known to Marquette, Jolliet, and La Salle, and in 1804 became the location of Fort Dearborn. The town was incorporated in 1833, and within 40 years had some 300,000 inhabitants, lake traffic and railway connections making it a commercial center for the grain and livestock trade of the Northwest. After the disastrous Chicago Fire (q.v.,1871) the city was speedily rebuilt, and continued its growth, becoming the central distributing point of trade in the U.S. The influx of immigrants is responsible for the present constitution of the population, which is one-fourth foreign-born, includes some 200,000 Negroes, and has led to serious race riots at various times. During the Gilded Age, Chicago became established as the U.S. center of meat packing, iron and steel industries, railroading, and urban traction (see *Loop*), accounting respectively for the fortunes of Armour and Swift, Gary, Pullman, and Yerkes. Spectacular labor troubles arose toward the end of the century, including the Hay-

market Riot and the Pullman Strike (qq.v.). A civic reform movement began at this time, and during this period Jane Addams founded her Hull House. During the years of prohibition the city became a crime center, with frequent gang warfare over the illicit liquor trade. Chicago is significant for its educational institutions and for its contributions to the arts, as well as for its two great exhibitions, the Columbian Exposition (1893) and the Century of Progress (1933–4). In addition to the University of Chicago, Northwestern (qq.v.), Loyola, and DePaul, the city has a large public library, the Newberry Library of rare books, the fine collection of the Art Institute, a planetarium, the Field Museum of Natural History, and a civic opera building. Contributors to Chicago's cultural history include such architects as H.H.Richardson, John Root, and F.L.Wright; the sculptor Lorado Taft; the conductor Theodore Thomas, and the composer J.A.Carpenter; and such authors as Garland, H.B.Fuller, Frank Norris, Dreiser, W.V.Moody, Sandburg, Lindsay, Masters, Ben Hecht, Sherwood Anderson, Robert Herrick, R.M.Lovett, Harriet Monroe, Lew Sarrett, J.T.Farrell, Albert Halper, Meyer Levin, D.C. Peattie, Margaret A. Barnes, and Janet A. Fairbank. Besides several prominent newspapers,local magazines have included *The Dial*, *The Chap-Book*, *Poetry*, and *The Little Review*, the latter two being the primary organs of the so-called Chicago renaissance (*c.*1912–25).

Chicago, free verse poem by Carl Sandburg (q.v.), published in 1914 and collected in his *Chicago Poems* (1916). This ode to the city, which the poet accepts as 'wicked . . . crooked . . . brutal,' but acclaims as 'proud . . . flinging magnetic curses amid the toil . . . fierce,' is a celebration of its

> Laughing the stormy, husky, brawling laughter of Youth, half-naked, sweating, proud to be Hog Butcher, Tool Maker, Stacker of Wheat, Player with Railroads and Freight Handler to the Nation.

Chicago *Daily News* (1875–) first won wide circulation as the first local paper to print the news of Hayes's nomination (1876). Although it was sensational and frequently issued extras, it was also known for its literary contributions, which included the 'Sharps and Flats' column (1883–95) of Eugene Field. After its purchase (1931) by Colonel Frank Knox, it surrendered its political independence to support the Republican Party.

Chicago Fire (Oct. 8–9, 1871), reported to have originated in a lumberyard on the city's West Side, was spread by a heavy wind over a large part of Chicago, and continued to burn for more than 24 hours. Seventy thousand people were made homeless, some 200 were killed, and the loss in property has been estimated at $200,000,000. The conflagration occasioned grave criminal disorders and destitution, and was responsible for a nation-wide financial panic. Legend attributes the origin of the fire to the upsetting of a lantern by a cow belonging to a Mrs.O'Leary.

Chicago *Times* (1854–), known before and during the Civil War as an exponent of Southern Democracy, because it denounced Lincoln was considered a strong Copperhead paper. After the war, when it established special correspondents in Europe, even those who disliked its opinions read it for its news coverage. The *Times* was sold (1891) to Carter Harrison, and he and his heirs made it a radical Democratic paper. In 1895 it became the *Times-Herald*, merging with the Chicago *Herald*, which had been founded in 1881. Among the contributors was F.P.Dunne, who wrote for it many of his 'Mr.Dooley' papers.

Chicago Tribune (1847–), became prominent under the editorship of Joseph Medill (1855–99), who made it an ardently Republican journal when he became a founder of the party. It continues in the control of his descendants, but has become somewhat more sensational in character than it originally was.

Chicago, UNIVERSITY OF, was founded (1892) with funds supplied by Rockefeller, and is a coeducational, nonsectarian institution supported by private contributions. Its most distinguished presidents have been William Rainey Harper (1892–1906) and Robert M. Hutchins (1929–). The University Press, which was the first of its kind in the U.S., publishes some 20 scholarly journals, and among the many research branches is Yerkes Observatory at Williams Bay, Wisconsin. The plan of holding regular summer sessions originated at the University of Chicago, and under Hutchins's administration several changes in the academic system have been effected, such as abolishing compulsory

attendance and course examinations, substituting comprehensive examinations, and eliminating rigid departmental distinctions. The reorganized University, serving some 8,000 students each quarter, is formed of a College division for general education, and four upper divisions for advanced interdepartmental study and research. Professors have included W.V. Moody, Robert Herrick, John Dewey, R.M.Lovett, and Thorstein Veblen; graduates include Carl Van Vechten (1903), Margaret Wilson (1904), and E.M.Roberts (1921); and among those who have studied at the University for shorter periods are Burton Rascoe (1911–13), Glenway Wescott (1917–19), and J.T.Farrell.

Chickamauga, BATTLE OF, occurred (Sept. 19–20, 1863) when the Union troops under Rosecrans were severely defeated by Bragg's Confederate forces, just south of Chattanooga, Tennessee.

Chickasaw Indians, warlike tribe that originally inhabited northern Mississippi. During the colonial period they sided with the English against the French, and they continued to be friendly with the whites, aiding the U.S. against the Creeks in 1793. They migrated to Oklahoma in accordance with later treaties, and served in the Confederate army.

CHILD, FRANCIS JAMES (1825–96), professor of English literature at Harvard, whose 'Observations on the Language of Chaucer' (1863) led the way to an accurate study of Chaucer's metrics. His scholarship is further illustrated in his edition of Spenser (5 vols.,1855) and his *English and Scottish Popular Ballads* (5 vols.,1883–98).

CHILD, LYDIA MARIA (1802–80), Massachusetts Abolitionist, whose *Appeal in Favor of that Class of Americans Called Africans* (1833) won many to the anti-slavery cause, as did her widely circulated *Correspondence* (1860) with the governor of Viginia. Her fiction, humane and didactic rather than creative, includes: *Hobomok* (1824), dealing with Massachusetts during Endecott's governorship, and glorifying the 'noble savage'; *The Rebels; or, Boston before the Revolution* (1825), concerned with the Stamp Tax agitation; and *Philothea* (1836), a romance of classical Greece. She was a sister of Convers Francis.

Children of Adam, section of Whitman's *Leaves of Grass* (q.v.), first published in the 1860 edition as 'Enfans d'Adam,' and given its present title in 1867. It contains 16 poems, all concerned with physical love, identifying the sexual impulse with the spiritual force of the universe. Among the poems in the section are 'I Sing the Body Electric,' 'Spontaneous Me,' 'Once I Pass'd through a Populous City,' and 'Facing West from California's Shores' (qq.v.). 'Calamus' (q.v.), a section concerned with the spiritual love of man for man, forms a complement.

Children of God, novel by Vardis Fisher (q.v.).

Children of the Night, The, poems by E.A.Robinson (q.v.).

Children's Hour, The, poem by Longfellow (q.v.), published in *Birds of Passage* (1860). Ten jocund quatrains describe the nightly descent upon the poet's study of his three 'blue-eyed banditti' daughters, 'grave Alice, and laughing Allegra, and Edith with golden hair.'

Children's Hour, The, play by Lillian Hellman (q.v.).

Children's literature in America originally consisted of aids to piety, apparently addressed to an audience of miniature adults. The earliest examples include Cotton's *Milk for Babes, Drawn out of the Breasts of Both Testaments* (1646) and the perennial *New England Primer* (1683?). Through the colonial period, however, most of the children's books were imported from England, or, like the popular *Songs from the Nursery* (1719), republished by such American printers as Isaiah Thomas. Since the early 19th century, many books written for adults, particularly humorous fiction and narratives of adventure, have been enthusiastically read by children. Among the earliest of these may be mentioned the treatments of the American scene and character by Irving, Cooper, and Dana. The trend away from the religious toward the generally moral and didactic, and toward an understanding of the child mind, began to manifest itself in the works for children by Hawthorne, and in the 'Peter Parley' books published by S.G.Goodrich. Beginning with the series of novels by Jacob Abbott, the modern period of juvenile literature has been marked by a desire to entertain, as well as instruct, in a manner adapted to the experience and capacities

of the audience. Besides new versions and additions in the realm of Old World fairy tales, folklore, and tales of chivalry, American authors regaled young readers with nursery rimes and narrative verse, of which C.C.Moore's 'A Visit from St.Nicholas' and Mrs.Hale's 'Mary Had a Little Lamb' were famous early examples. Many leading poets, notably Longfellow, wrote poems for children. Separate traditions of literature for boys and girls came into being, but successive generations of both sexes made best sellers of such works as Harris's 'Uncle Remus' stories, Howard Pyle's tales of pirates and medieval heroes, Seton-Thompson's animal books, Palmer Cox's 'Brownies,' Bennett's *Master Skylark*, Baum's 'Oz' books, Gelett Burgess's 'Goops,' the novels of Frank Stockton, and Thornton Burgess's stories of animal characters. Among the most popular books for girls have been Mrs. Dodge's *Hans Brinker*, Louisa Alcott's *Little Women*, Isabella Alden's 'Pansy' series, Frances Baylor's *Juan and Juanita*, Mrs.Lothrop's *Five Little Peppers*, Mrs.Burnett's *Little Lord Fauntleroy*, Mrs.Rice's *Mrs.Wiggs of the Cabbage Patch*, Kate Wiggin's *Rebecca of Sunnybrook Farm*, and Mrs.Montgomery's *Anne of Green Gables*. Boy readers, reputedly enamored of dime novels and adult stories of manly adventure, probably read most of these works, just as girls frequently read such popular books for boys as D.P. Thompson's *The Green Mountain Boys*, Trowbridge's *Cudjo's Cave*, the stories of Mayne Reid, Aldrich's *The Story of a Bad Boy*, Noah Brooks's *The Boy Emigrants*, Eggleston's *The Hoosier Schoolboy*, the popular series of C.C.Coffin and Horatio Alger, Clemens's *Tom Sawyer* and *Huckleberry Finn*, Tarkington's *Penrod*, and the various series concerned with the Rover Boys, Tom Swift, and Frank Merriwell. Juvenile fiction continues to carry on these several *genres*, while recent vogues include those of fantastic heroes, such as Tarzan and other supermen; books exploiting the admiration for scientific and mechanical marvels; historical romances teaching patriotism and other virtues; and an increasingly expert use of simplified prose and photographic illustration for purposes of education. Since the founding of *The Children's Magazine* (1789), there have been many periodicals edited exclusively for children, and these have included: *The Youth's Companion* (1827–1929), *Parley's Magazine* (1833–41), *Merry's Museum for Boys and Girls* (1841–72), *St.Nicholas* (1873–), *American Boy* (1899–), and *Boy's Life* (1911–).

Chillingworth, ROGER, character in *The Scarlet Letter* (q.v.).

Chimes, novel by Robert Herrick (q.v.).

CHINARD, GILBERT (1881–), French-born scholar of American history and literature, has been a professor at Brown University, the University of California, and Johns Hopkins. His books include *Thomas Jefferson* (1928) and *Honest John Adams* (1933).

Chinese Nightingale, The: A Song in Chinese Tapestries, poem by Vachel Lindsay (q.v.), the title piece of a volume published in 1917.

During a night visit to his friend Chang, a Chinese laundryman of San Francisco, the poet dreams of a 'gray small bird' perched on Chang's wrist, and 'a Chinese lady of high degree' who stands 'on the snowy table wide,' singing to the laundryman of their idyllic love in China, ages before. Chang is too busy to reply, but the nightingale sings ('I remember, I remember That Spring came on forever . . .'), evoking a delicate, jeweled picture of romantic ancient China, strongly contrasted with the present squalid surroundings of Chang and the musing poet.

Chingachgook, Indian chieftain also known as John Mohegan, character in Cooper's Leather-Stocking Tales (q.v.).

Chinook language, jargon developed by traders for communication with the Chinook Indians, a Pacific Coast tribe encountered by Lewis and Clark (1805). The vocabulary includes words from English, Canadian French, and Chinook and other Indian languages.

Chippewa, BATTLE OF, see *She Would Be a Soldier.*

Chippewa Indians, see *Ojibway Indians.*

Chisholm Trail, from the Red River in eastern Texas to southern Kansas, was named for a halfbreed Cherokee trader and government agent, Jesse Chisholm. For more than 20 years following the Civil War, it furnished owners of Texas range cattle with an outlet to the Indian Territory and successive railheads of the westward-building railways. *The Old Chisholm Trail* is a famous cowboy ballad.

CHISUM, JOHN SIMPSON (1824–84), Texas cattleman, employed Billy the Kid during the Lincoln County Cattle War in New Mexico. When the Kid became a bandit and indiscriminate killer, Chisum helped to end his career.

Chita: A Memory of Last Island, tale by Lafcadio Hearn (q.v.), published in 1889. A narrative of the destruction of 'Last Island' in the Caribbean by a tidal wave (1856), it is essentially a series of vivid descriptions unified by its account of a lost child.

CHITTENDEN, HIRAM MARTIN (1858–1917), engineer and historian, whose writings include: *Yellowstone National Park* (1895); *The American Fur Trade of the Far West* (1902); *Early Steamboat Navigation on the Missouri River* (1903); and *The Life . . . of Father Pierre Jean de Smet* (3 vols.,1905), the last written with A.T.Richardson.

CHIVERS, THOMAS HOLLEY (1809–58), born in Georgia, early abandoned medicine for a career as author, publishing *The Path of Sorrow* (1832), poems about his unhappy first marriage; *Conrad and Eudora* (1834), a verse drama based on the Kentucky Tragedy; and *Nacoochee* (1837), which has a preface on the transcendental nature of poetry. He is principally known for his association with Poe (1840–49), although the two were never actually friends. Charges of plagiarism followed the publication of Chiver's *Eonchs of Ruby* (1851), to which he replied with counter charges, and critics believe that his previously published 'Isadore' and other poems influenced the writing of 'The Raven' and 'Ulalume.' The title poem of *The Lost Pleiad* (1845) and 'To Allegra Florence in Heaven' are elegies for his daughter, and after the death of three other children Chivers became increasingly interested in various mystical movements, writing a prose work on the *Search After Truth; or, A New Revelation of the Psycho-Physiological Nature of Man* (1848). Several later volumes of poetry exhibit his sentimentality, lack of critical judgment, and finally his unbalanced mind.

CHOATE, RUFUS (1799–1859), Massachusetts lawyer, noted as a court room advocate and classic orator, although he also served as congressman (1830–34) and senator (1841–5).

JOSEPH HODGES CHOATE (1832–1917), his nephew, was also an outstanding jury lawyer and opponent of Tammany Hall, assisting in the defeat of the Tweed Ring. He was ambassador to Great Britain (1899–1905), helped to settle a number of international disputes, and represented the U.S. at the second Hague Conference.

Choctaw Indians, agricultural tribe of southern Mississippi, who served against the British in the French and Indian Wars and in the Revolution. They later aided the U.S. against the Creeks, and after ceding their lands to the national government moved to Oklahoma.

Choir Invisible, The, romance by J.L. Allen (q.v.), published as *John Gray* (1893) and revised under its present title (1897).

John Gray is a young Kentucky schoolmaster of 1795, who desires an ideal wife who will share his stern moral convictions. He falls in love with Amy Falconer, a coquette far inferior to him in purpose and intelligence. Before marrying her he sees his mistake, realizing that her aunt, Jessica, is the fulfilment of his ideal. Jessica, already married, returns his love, but neither ventures to declare his feeling, and Gray moves to Philadelphia, where he marries. It is not until years later, when he sends his grown son to live with Jessica and gain inspiration from her, that both confess their hitherto thwarted love.

CHOPIN, KATE [O'FLAHERTY] (1851–1904), St.Louis author, from her marriage to a Louisiana Creole until his death (1882) lived in New Orleans and on a Louisiana cotton plantation. Returning to her native city, she began to write tales for children and the local-color stories for which she is noted. *At Fault* (1890) is an undistinguished novel of Creole life in the Cane River section of central Louisiana. Her importance in the local-color movement depends primarily, however, on her interpretations of Creole and Cajun life in her collections of short stories and anecdotes, *Bayou Folk* (q.v.,1894) and *A Night in Acadie* (1897). These carefully polished tales are delicately objective in treatment, and marked by a poignant restraint of which perhaps the greatest example is 'Désirée's Baby' in the former volume. Mrs.Chopin's last novel, *The Awakening* (1899), caused a storm of criticism that ended her literary career, because readers of the time were shocked by

the realistic treatment of morbid psychology in this objective account of mixed marriage and adultery.

Chris Christopherson, character in *Anna Christie* (q.v.).

Christadelphians, members of a lay movement, sometimes called Thomasites after their English-born founder John Thomas (1805–71), who repudiated the name Christian as associated with anti-Christian beliefs, and attempted to revive the early apostolic faith, following only the scriptures. They expect a second coming of Jesus, to establish a theocracy centered at Jerusalem.

Christian Disciple, The (1813–69), Boston monthly magazine, became a bimonthly in 1819. The title was retained until 1823, when it became *The Christian Examiner.* Successively edited by Noah Worcester, Henry Ware,Jr., J.G.Palfrey, William Ware, and E.E.Hale, this Unitarian organ was the leading religious review of its time. In 1857 it became more liberal, espousing the Transcendental movement, but after its removal to New York (1866) its theological views were conservative and its influence declined.

Christian Examiner, see *Christian Disciple.*

Christian Philosopher, The, essay by Cotton Mather (q.v.), published in 1721, is a summary of scientific knowledge and an early attempt to reconcile religion and science. Marked not only by scientific observation but by a poetic religious feeling, it argues that the beauty and wonder of the world are proof of an all-powerful benevolent creator, and that scientific research is to be used as a source of understanding these qualities.

Christian Science, religion founded upon principles formulated by Mary Baker Eddy (q.v.) from New Testament teachings, in her book *Science and Health with Key to the Scriptures* (q.v.,1875). According to this text, science is Christ's revelation of the Eternal Mind, the source of all being, and his message is that the power of Mind (Truth, God, Spirit) overcomes illusions of sin, sickness, and death. The followers of Christian Science attempt to end the illusory conflict of mind and body by unceasing prayer and 'the understanding of Truth and Love,' which will dispel the belief in disease or the supposition that any evil can emanate from God. The Church of Christ, Scientist, founded at Boston (1879), since 1892 has been known as the Mother Church. Other churches are self-governing and self-supporting, but all accept Mrs.Eddy's tenets. The churches do not have pastors, and services are conducted by two persons, one reading from the Scriptures, the other from *Science and Health.* The Christian Science Publishing Society issues numerous publications, including a daily newspaper, *The Christian Science Monitor* (1908–). There are now nearly 270,000 members of the church.

Christian Union, see *Outlook.*

CHRISTOPHER CAUSTIC, pseudonym of T.G.Fessenden (q.v.).

Christus: A Mystery, dramatic poem by Longfellow (q.v.), published in 1872, for the first time brought together *The Divine Tragedy, The Golden Legend,* and *The New England Tragedies* (qq.v.), which were now placed in the order suggested in the author's notebook: 'Christus, a dramatic poem, in three parts: Part First. The Times of Christ (Hope). Part Second. The Middle Ages (Faith). Part Third. The Present (Charity).' *The Divine Tragedy* was a reworking in dramatic form of Biblical themes in the structural sequence of a cycle of medieval miracle plays. *The Golden Legend* presented a dramatic miracle cycle of nine parts dealing with the lives of saints. *The New England Tragedies* dramatized two episodes of colonial New England history. Since the final section, dealing with the fanaticism of decadent Puritanism, is not a happy choice of subject, the theme is sometimes considered confused and irresolute.

CHRISTY, EDWIN P. (1815–62), actor and singer, whose minstrel show (q.v.), organized in the early 1840's as the Virginia Minstrels and later known as Christy's Minstrels, toured the U.S. and England, receiving popular acclaim and being widely imitated. Christy himself performed as interlocutor, and his singing of the minstrel songs of Stephen Foster, which were first published under Christy's name, was partly responsible for their early popularity.

Chronicle of the Conquest of Granada, see *Conquest of Granada.*

CHURCH, BENJAMIN (1734–76), Massachusetts author, while supposed to be

working for the Whigs was suspected of writing Loyalist answers to his own political essays. Tried by a Revolutionary court-martial (1775), he was found guilty of 'holding criminal correspondence with the enemy.' Among his publications were *The Times* (1765), a verse satire on the Stamp Act, and *An Oration to Commemorate the Bloody Tragedy of the Fifth of March*, 1770 (1773).'

CHURCH, FREDERICK EDWIN (1826–1900), New York landscape painter, whose study under Thomas Cole led him to specialize in the natural grandeur of such subjects as Niagara Falls, the Andes, northern icebergs, the Aegean Islands, and other overwhelming scenery, which he painted with dramatic atmospheric effects.

CHURCH, THOMAS (1673–1748), was the son of a soldier in King Philip's War, Benjamin Church, from whose notes he wrote *Entertaining Passages Relating to Philip's War . . .* (1716), a frank, vivid, bluff narrative of the adventures of Indian warfare.

Church of England, see *Protestant Episcopal Church.*

Churches Quarrel Espoused, The, controversial work by John Wise (q.v.), was published in 1710 as an answer to the *Questions and Proposals* (1705) propounded by Increase and Cotton Mather in their project to substitute a central association of clergy for the system of lay-controlled independent churches. With earnest logic and annihilating invective, Wise shows the danger or folly of each proposal, which he opposes with the theory of democracy. Because its democratic theme transcends the specific issues, the book was republished (1772) and widely read prior to the Revolution and again before the Civil War.

CHURCHILL, WINSTON (1871–), born in St.Louis, graduated from Annapolis (1894), and during his career as author lived mainly in New Hampshire. *The Celebrity: An Episode* (1898) is an amusing social satire, but with *Richard Carvel* (q.v.,1899), a Revolutionary romance, he began his serious consideration of historic forces and ideals in the nation's background. *The Crisis* (q.v.,1901), set in St.Louis, deals with society and politics before and during the Civil War, while *The Crossing* (q.v.,1904), considered his finest work, is a romance concerned with the settling of Kentucky and the part the frontier played in the Revolution. From this celebration of the romantic aspects of manifest destiny and the heroism of early Americans, Churchill turned to contemporary politics, although his methods continued to be those of the popular romancer, and most of his character portraits were superficial and his handling of plot arbitrary. *Coniston* (q.v.,1906), concerned with ethical conflicts in New England politics of the mid-19th century, has for its central figure Jethro Bass, Churchill's most striking character. *Mr.Crewe's Career* (q.v.,1908) tells of a railroad monopoly's attempt to dominate a state government, and *A Far Country* (1915) is a story of the conflict of private interests with public-spirited idealism in a Midwestern city. This interest also resulted in the author's participation in New Hampshire politics, and he became a member of the state legislature and a candidate for the governorship. His other novels include *A Modern Chronicle* (1910), concerned with the problem of divorce; *The Inside of the Cup* (1913), dealing with the need of religion to adapt itself to modern conditions; and *The Dwelling-Place of Light* (1917), the story of a New England factory strike. *Dr.Jonathan* (1919) is a play set in a New England mill town, intended to show that the World War stimulated the extension of industrial democracy. Churchill's only subsequent writing is *The Uncharted Way* (1940), a profession of religious belief, combining faith in self-abnegating Christian love with an evolutionary hypothesis concerning an afterlife.

Chuzzlewit, Martin, see *Martin Chuzzlewit.*

Cibola, see *Zuñi Indians.*

Cigarette Maker's Romance, A, novel by F.M.Crawford (q.v.).

Cimarron, novel by Edna Ferber (q.v.).

Cincinnati, SOCIETY OF THE, fraternal organization formed by officers of the disbanding Continental army (1783). Washington and Hamilton were the first presidents. It was attacked as being an aristocratic military order, and Tammany societies were founded partly to oppose it. The society figures in contemporary literature, e.g. *Modern Chivalry.* Although it has declined in importance, it continues

to exist as an organization of descendants of the founders.

Cinema, see *Motion pictures.*

Circuit Rider, The, novel by Edward Eggleston (q.v.).

Circumstance, novel by S.Weir Mitchell (q.v.).

Circus, traveling company of acrobats, clowns, and animals, who usually perform in tents. The modern circus originated in the English equestrian troupes of the late 18th century, and the first of these to visit the U.S. was the Ricketts's Circus, which came to New York in 1795. The distinctive American type of traveling tent show had developed by 1850, when American troupes were already touring Europe. Famous clowns and impresarios have included John Robinson, Adam Forepaugh, the Sells brothers, Dan Rice, James A. Bailey, and the Ringling brothers, while P.T.Barnum's 'greatest show on earth,' the most spectacular development of circus showmanship, was founded in 1871 and combined with that of Bailey in 1881. Since the time of Dan Rice, who was the last of the great 'talking clowns' to perform in tents of moderate size, the circus has been devoted to large-scale spectacles, pantomimic humor, equestrian and aerial acrobatics, menagerie and freak exhibitions, and such special features as Wild West shows patterned after that of Buffalo Bill.

City in the Sea, The, poem by Poe (q.v.).

Civil Disobedience, essay by Thoreau (q.v.), originally delivered as a lecture, and first printed as 'Resistance to Civil Government' in Elizabeth Peabody's *Aesthetic Papers* (1849).

Asserting that 'That government is best which governs not at all' and that 'Government is at best but an expedient,' the author points to such injustices and abuses as the prosecution of the Mexican War, the treatment of native Indians, and the institution of slavery. To co-operate with government, even to the extent of paying taxes, he says, is to condone its crimes and participate in them, and an 'honest man' must 'withdraw from this copartnership.' Individual conscience, not law, is the moral arbiter; 'under a government which imprisons any unjustly, the true place for a just man is also a prison.' He cites his own refusal to pay a tithing or poll-tax, in order 'to refuse allegiance to the State, to withdraw and stand aloof from it effectually.' He will participate only in those governmental activities that he approves:

> any man more right than his neighbors constitutes a majority of one already . . . There will never be a really free and enlightened State until the State comes to recognize the individual as a higher and independent power, from which all its own power and authority are derived . . .

Civil Service Reform occurred later in the U.S. than in European countries, because of the firmly intrenched spoils system (q.v.) of patronage. Political scandals of the period of Grant's presidency precipitated the campaign for reform led by such men as Carl Schurz and G.W.Curtis, who founded the National Civil Service Reform League (1881), and were assisted by President Hayes. The movement received added impetus after Garfield's assassination by a disappointed office seeker, and the Pendleton Act (1883) provided for a system of competitive examinations and security of employment in federal positions, with a Civil Service Commission to administer the classified list of positions that now includes the great majority of government employes. The movement has spread to cities and states throughout the country, most of which have established local systems of civil service.

Civil War, the conflict (1861–5) between the Northern states which remained in the Union and the Southern states which seceded to form the Confederacy. The underlying causes became more pronounced after the Missouri Compromise (1820), in the hostility that developed from the two fundamentally different economic and social systems of the U.S. The South, with its large plantations, staple crops, and institution of slavery, inevitably came into conflict with the free industrial and commercial North. State rights doctrines and tariff questions further complicated these differences. Clay, Webster, Calhoun, and others attempted solutions, but after the Compromise of 1850 and the Kansas-Nebraska Bill, each side became more radical. Following Lincoln's election, the Southern states feared a hostile majority in Congress, and resorted to secession. South Carolina seized Fort Sumter (q.v., April 12, 1861), the Confederacy (q.v.) was organ-

ized, and the war began. Northern forces, beginning an advance on Richmond, the Confederate capital, were defeated in the first battle of Bull Run (q.v.), although the Southerners failed to follow up this victory, while the North established a fairly successful blockade of Southern ports. In 1862 each side continued without decisive gains, Grant's forces taking much ground in the West, although at Shiloh (q.v., April 1862) he suffered severe losses. New Orleans (q.v.) was captured (May 1862), and the Union army had some success in eastern Tennessee and Kentucky. McClellan launched the Peninsular Campaign (q.v.) to take Richmond, which ended in failure in the Seven Days' Battles (q.v., June–July 1862) after Stonewall Jackson prevented McDowell from joining McClellan. Under Jackson and Lee, the Confederate forces were again victorious at Bull Run (Aug. 30, 1862). Lee was checked in his march northward at Antietam (q.v., Sept. 1862), but Burnside's Union army was stopped in its advance on Richmond at the Battle of Fredericksburg (Dec. 13, 1862). The Emancipation Proclamation was issued to take effect in January 1863, and the beginning of that year saw the death of Jackson at Chancellorsville (q.v., May 1863), where the new drive on Richmond was stopped. Lee then made a Northern campaign, which ended disastrously at Gettysburg (q.v., July 1863), the most decisive battle of the war. The South was split by Grant's capture of Vicksburg (q.v., July 4, 1863), Rosecrans's seizure of Tennessee, and Banks's victories in Louisiana, although in September the Confederates won the bloody battle of Chickamauga (q.v.). In 1864 Grant became commander-in-chief of the Union forces, continuing in command despite tremendous losses in the Battle of the Wilderness (q.v., May 1864). Sherman (q.v.) captured Atlanta (Sept. 3, 1864) and began his devastating march to the sea. Meanwhile the Southern cruiser *Alabama* was defeated by the *Kearsarge* and the Confederacy was obviously doomed at sea and on land. On April 9, 1865, Lee surrendered to Grant at Appomattox. A few days later Lincoln was assassinated, and the settlement of the effects of the war, the Reconstruction (q.v.), fell into other hands. Those who died as a result of the war included 359,528 Union soldiers and 164,981 Confederates.

Civilization in the United States: First and Last Impressions of America, four essays by Matthew Arnold (q.v.), published in 1888.

'General Grant: An Estimate,' written after reading Grant's memoirs, is a lengthy biographical discussion of 'a man of sterling good-sense as well as of the firmest resolution; a man, withal, humane, simple, modest; from all restless self-consciousness and desire for display perfectly free . . .' 'A Word about America' is concerned with Arnold's conception of the U.S. prior to his visits: 'America has, like us, industry and conduct, and, what we have not, equality; but . . . America has . . . a middle class of stunted religion, intellect, and manners, and American civilization suffers accordingly.' 'A Word More about America,' written after his first visit, is mainly an appraisal of political and social institutions, which, he believes, fit the condition of the people 'like an excellent suit of clothes.' 'Civilization in the United States' deals with the unsatisfactory state of American culture on the 'human' side, due to the absence of what is 'interesting' in civilization. 'The great sources of the interesting are distinction (or the elevated) and beauty.' Despite the 'inflated, self-congratulatory sentiment' of most Americans, their country does not possess these qualities, which must be cultivated if the 'human' possibilities are to be fulfilled.

CLAFLIN, TENNESSEE, see *Woodhull, Victoria.*

Clansman, The, novel by Thomas Dixon (q.v.).

CLAPP, HENRY (1814–75), New York journalist, was the chief figure of the group which gathered at Pfaff's (q.v.), where he was known as 'the king of Bohemia.' He founded and edited the *Saturday Press* (q.v.), and on its staff employed Aldrich, Fitz-James O'Brien, and William Winter. An active champion of Whitman's poetry, he translated Fourier for Albert Brisbane, and among his books is *The Pioneer; or, Leaves from an Editor's Portfolio* (1846). He generally used the pseudonym Figaro.

Clara Howard, novel by C.B.Brown (q.v.).

CLARE, ADA, pseudonym of Jane McElheney (1836–74), whose notoriety as a

beauty, and as the 'queen of Bohemia' at Pfaff's (q.v.), was responsible for the popularity of her passionate poetry and fiction in various New York periodicals. After the decline of the group at Pfaff's, she became an actress.

Clarel: *A Poem and Pilgrimage in the Holy Land*, religious poem by Melville (q.v.), published in two volumes in 1876. Inspired by the author's trip to Palestine (1856), the work presents a detailed account of his experiences and observations, and numerous digressions in the form of dialogues on the problems of an embattled religious faith.

Claret, CAPTAIN, character in *White-Jacket* (q.v.).

Clari; *or, The Maid of Milan*, play by J.H.Payne (q.v.), produced and published at London (1823), was adapted from a French ballet-pantomime. Set in Italy, it was first called *Angioletta*, and deals with the rural maid Clari, seduced by a duke, who lives with him until a longing for home gives her courage to break the tie. At the end, the duke penitently marries her. The play is famous for the heroine's nostalgic song, 'Home, Sweet Home' (q.v.), which Payne wrote to music arranged from a Sicilian air by Sir Henry Rowley Bishop (1786–1855).

CLARK, BARRETT H. (1890–), Canadian-born actor, dramatic director, and critic, whose works include: *British and American Drama of Today* (1915), *A Study of the Modern Drama* (1925), *Eugene O'Neill* (1926), and *Œdipus or Pollyanna* (1927). Among the many works he has edited are: *World's Best Plays* (58 vols., 1915–26), and *America's Lost Plays* (20 vols., 1940–).

CLARK, [CHARLES] BADGER (1883–), South Dakota poet, noted for his use of native folklore and paraphrasing of cowboy songs in such volumes as *Sun and Saddle Leather* (1915), *Grass-Grown Trails* (1917), and *Sky Lines and Wood Smoke* (1935). *Spike* (1923) is a collection of short stories.

CLARK, CHARLES HEBER (1841–1915), Maryland-born journalist in Philadelphia, whose literary reputation rested mainly on his first book, *Out of the Hurly Burly* (1874), farcical sketches of life in a suburban town. *Elbow Room* (1876), a novel without a hero, is in the same vein, but his later novel, *The Quakeress* (1905), the short story collection *By the Bend in the River* (1914), and other works, are more regular in form and depend on local color and character portrayal rather than humor. He used the pseudonym Max Adeler.

CLARK, GEORGE ROGERS (1752–1818), Virginia soldier, served under Lord Dunmore against the Ohio Indians, was a surveyor for the Ohio Company, and helped secure his colony's sovereignty over Kentucky and Ohio. During the Revolutionary War, he led a frontier campaign that captured Kaskaskia and Vincennes from the British (1779), and established American control of the Old Northwest. His own narrative of these events is contained in M.M.Quaife's *The Capture of Old Vincennes* (1927). He figures in such novels as *The Crossing*, D.P.Thompson's *The Rangers*, and Bird's *Nick of the Woods*.

CLARK, LEWIS GAYLORD (1808–73), edited the *Knickerbocker Magazine* (1834–61), which he made the outstanding literary periodical of its time. He edited *The Knickerbocker Sketch-Book* (1845), which contained contributions by Irving, and wrote *Knick-Knacks from an Editor's Table* (1852), an urbane, quietly humorous work.

WILLIS GAYLORD CLARK (1808–41), his twin, was co-editor of the *Knickerbocker Magazine*. His fanciful humorous contributions to the journal were collected as *Literary Remains . . . Including the Ollipodiana* (1844). The *Letters* of the brothers were published in 1940.

CLARK, WILLIAM (1770–1838), served in the U.S. army during campaigns against the Indians, and was commissioned by Jefferson to be co-commander of the Lewis and Clark Expedition (q.v.,1803–6). He later headed independent surveys, notably one of the Yellowstone, and was governor of Missouri Territory (1813–21), serving the rest of his life as Superintendent of Indian Affairs.

CLARKE, JAMES FREEMAN (1810–88), Massachusetts Unitarian and liberal leader, whose first church was at Louisville, Kentucky. There he edited *The Western Messenger* (1836–9). For the following 40 years he was a Unitarian pastor at Boston, where he wrote *The Christian Doctrine of Prayer* (1854), *Ten Great Religions* (1871–83), *Common Sense in Reli-*

gion (1874), *Essentials and Non-Essentials in Religion* (1878), and *Self-Culture* (1883). He collaborated with Emerson and W.H.Channing on a memoir of Margaret Fuller (1852). To his *Hymn Book for the Church of the Disciples* (1844, enlarged 1852), he contributed ten original works.

CLARKE, JOHN (1609–76), was on the side of Anne Hutchinson in the Boston Antinomian dispute (1637), and two years later helped to found Newport, Rhode Island, where he served as physician and Baptist minister. His *Ill News from New England* (1652) attacked the intolerance of the Massachusetts leaders in their suppression of religious liberty, and supplemented the writings of his friend, Roger Williams.

CLARKE, MACDONALD (1798–1842), 'the mad poet' of Broadway, was befriended by Halleck, who made him the subject of his humorous poem, 'The Discarded.' Clarke is remembered for the couplet, 'Now twilight lets her curtain down And pins it with a star.' One of his volumes of verse was *Elixir of Moonshine by the Mad Poet* (1822).

Clark's Field, novel by Robert Herrick (q.v.), published in 1914.

At 14 Adelle Clark inherits Clark's Field, a valuable tract of land in the heart of the city of B. The ward of a trust company, she finishes her education in Paris, where she meets and impulsively marries Archie Davis, a California art student. They live idly and extravagantly, and wealth corrupts Archie, alienating him from Adelle, who devotes herself to the welfare of their son. Tom Clark, a mason on their California estate, is discovered to be her cousin, but not until he makes a heroic though futile attempt to save her son in a fire does she reveal that he is joint-heir to her money. Technicalities prevent the legal division of the estate, but she compensates Tom, aids the estranged Archie, and helps the poor people of the tenements that cover Clark's Field.

Classic Revival, see *Greek Revival.*

CLAVERS, MRS.MARY, pseudonym of Caroline Kirkland (q.v.).

CLAY, HENRY (1777–1852), Virginia-born statesman, moved to Lexington, Kentucky (1797), where he practiced law. He became a member of the state legislature (1803), and in 1806 and 1809 was appointed to fill unexpired terms in the U.S. Senate. Elected to the House of Representatives, he was its first prominent Speaker (1811–20, 1823–5), and with Calhoun was a leader of the 'war hawks' who precipitated the War of 1812. Declining important appointive offices, he continued to campaign in Congress for his 'American System' of self-contained national economy, advocating a high tariff, public works program, and the second Bank of the United States, and leading in the passage of the Missouri Compromise bill. He was first a candidate for the presidency in 1824, and, though defeated, was appointed secretary of state the following year. In this position his most significant policy was the support of the Pan-American Congress. After the election of his enemy, Jackson, to the presidency (1828), Clay retired, but in 1831 he was elected to the Senate, and the next year was nominated by the Whigs to oppose Jackson. Again defeated, he continued in the Senate for the following two decades, although he was a perennial candidate for nomination, and ran against Polk in 1844. He is credited with saying, 'I had rather be right than be President' (1839), when told that his public attack on Abolitionism would injure his political career. The Whig leader in various compromise measures, he abandoned his early expansionist attitude, opposing the annexation of Texas (1844), although in his 'Alabama letters' he asserted that he would agree to annexation if the Northern states consented and war with Mexico could be avoided. In the controversy that followed the war, he opposed the extreme attitudes of slavery and antislavery, and originated the Compromise of 1850 (q.v.). Carl Schurz wrote a biography of Clay (2 vols.,1887), and his writings have been collected (7 vols., 1896).

Claypoole's American Daily Advertiser, see *Pennsylvania Packet.*

CLEMENS, JEREMIAH (1814–65), Alabama novelist, whose historical fiction includes *Bernard Lile* (1856), a story of the Mexican War; *The Rivals* (1860), about Burr and Hamilton; and *Tobias Wilson* (1865), a story of the Civil War.

CLEMENS, SAMUEL LANGHORNE (1835–1910), born in Florida, Missouri, was the son of a Virginian imbued with the frontier spirit and grandiose dreams of easy wealth, who had married in Kentucky,

and spent the rest of his life in a restless search for profits from land speculation. The family settled in Hannibal, Missouri (1839), where Samuel grew up under the influence of this attitude, and passed the adventurous boyhood and youth that he recalls in *Tom Sawyer* and *Huckleberry Finn*. After his father's death (1847), he left school to be apprenticed to a printer, and was soon writing for his brother Orion's newspaper. He was a journeyman printer in the East and Middle West (1853–4), and in 1856 planned to seek his fortune in South America, but gave up this idea to become a steamboat pilot on the Mississippi, a position that he considered the most important discipline of his life. When the Civil War began, the river boats ceased operation, and, after a brief trial of soldiering with a group of Confederate volunteers, Clemens went to Nevada with his brother, who had been appointed secretary to the governor. In *Roughing It* he describes the trip west, and his subsequent adventures as miner and journalist. When he joined the staff of a Virginia City paper (1862), he adopted the pseudonym Mark Twain (q.v.), by which he was thereafter known, and began his career as a journalistic humorist in the frontier tradition. During this period he met Artemus Ward and others who encouraged his work, collaborated with Bret Harte in San Francisco, and wrote 'The Celebrated Jumping Frog' sketch (q.v.,1865), which won him immediate recognition. He increased his popularity with letters and lectures about his trip to the Sandwich Islands, went East to lecture, published *The Celebrated Jumping Frog of Calaveras County and Other Sketches* (1867), and made the tour of the Mediterranean and the Holy Land that he describes in *The Innocents Abroad* (q.v.,1869), a humorous narrative that assured his position as a leading author and shows his typical American irreverence for the classic and the antique. In 1870 Clemens married Olivia Langdon, with whom he settled in Hartford, Connecticut. The effect of this marriage upon his career has been responsible for two divergent interpretations of his work. Mrs. Clemens belonged to a genteel, conservative society, and it has been claimed (mainly by Van Wyck Brooks) that the puritanical and materialistic surroundings into which Clemens was thrust frustrated his potential creative force for fierce revolt and satire. Others (principally Bernard DeVoto) posit the idea that Clemens began as a frontier humorist and story teller, and that his later work shows the unthwarted development of these essential talents. In *Roughing It* (q.v., 1872) he continues the method of *The Innocents Abroad*, seasoning the realistic account of adventure with humorous exaggerations in his highly personal idiom. Next he collaborated with C.D. Warner in *The Gilded Age* (q.v.,1873), a satirical novel of post-Civil War boom times that gave a name to the era. *A Tramp Abroad* (q.v.,1880) is another travel narrative, this time of a walking trip through the Black Forest and the Alps. England during the reign of Edward VI is the scene of *The Prince and the Pauper* (q.v.,1882), while *A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court* (q.v.,1889) is a realistic-satirical fantasy of Arthurian England. During this period, however, Clemens was dealing with the background of his own early life in what are generally considered the most significant of his characteristically American works. In *The Adventures of Tom Sawyer* (q.v.,1876) he presents a nostalgic tale of boyish adventure in a Mississippi town, and in *Life on the Mississippi* (q.v.,1883) and *The Adventures of Huckleberry Finn* (q.v.,1884) he celebrates the flowering of Mississippi frontier civilization, in terms of its own pungent tall talk and picaresque adventure. External events soon interfered with the even flow of Clemens's creative activity. During his residence in Hartford, he had been a partner in the publishing firm of Charles L. Webster and Company, which reaped a fortune through the sale of Grant's *Memoirs* and Clemens's own writings, but bad publishing ventures and the investment of $200,000 in an unperfected typesetting machine drove him into bankruptcy (1894). To discharge his debts he made a lecturing tour of the world, although he had come to dislike lecturing, and the record of this tour, *Following the Equator* (q.v.,1897), has an undercurrent of bitterness not found in his earlier travel books. During this decade, although he wrote *The Tragedy of Pudd'nhead Wilson* (q.v.,1894) and the *Personal Recollections of Joan of Arc* (q.v.,1896), most of his work is uneven in quality, and *The American Claimant* (q.v.,1892), *Tom Sawyer Abroad* (1894), and *Tom Sawyer, Detective* (1896) are

feeble echoes of earlier work. In 1898 he had finished paying off his debts, but his writings show that the strain of pessimism that he had formerly repressed was now coming to dominate his mind. *The Man that Corrupted Hadleyburg* (q.v.,1899), *What Is Man?* (q.v.,1906), and *The Mysterious Stranger* (q.v.,1916) demonstrate this misanthropic attitude. He continued to travel widely, and delivered lectures and wrote articles on contemporary events and such controversial works as *Christian Science* (1907) and *Is Shakespeare Dead?* (1909), but his bitterness was deepened by the loss of his wife and two daughters. His pessimism was perhaps no more profound than the optimism of his own Colonel Sellers, but his feeling that it was too deep and mordant for publication caused him to instruct that certain of his works be published posthumously. Since 1906 he had been engaged in dictating his autobiography to his secretary, A.B.Paine, who issued the *Letters* (1917), the authorized biography (3 vols., 1912), and the *Autobiography* (1924). An important early estimate of his work is *My Mark Twain: Reminiscences and Criticisms* (1910), by his friend and adviser Howells. The prevalent critical attitude has come to consider Clemens's most distinctive work as summing up the tradition of Western humor and frontier realism. Beginning as a journalist, he assumed the method and point of view of popular literature in the U.S., maintaining the personal anecdotal style that he used also in his capacity of comic lecturer. In the travel books, he digresses easily from factual narrative to humorous exaggeration and burlesque. The novels are episodic or autobiographical, and not formed by any larger structural concepts. He wrote in the authentic native idiom, exuberantly and irreverently, but underlying the humor was a vigorous desire for social justice and a pervasive equalitarian attitude. The intensely romantic idealism of *Joan of Arc*, the bitter satire of feudal tyranny in *A Connecticut Yankee*, the creative appreciation of human values in *Huckleberry Finn*, and the sense of epic sweep and movement in *Life on the Mississippi*, establish Clemens's place in American letters as an artist of broad understanding and vital, although uneven and sometimes misdirected, achievement.

Clermont, see *Fulton, Robert.*

CLEVELAND, [STEPHEN] GROVER (1837–1908), twice President of the U.S. (1885–9, 1893–7), was born in New Jersey, and practiced law in Buffalo, New York, of which he became mayor (1881). His reputation as a reform leader in this office and as governor of the state led to his nomination by the Democrats, and his precarious victory over Blaine. During this term as President he refused to follow the spoils system, aided the work of the Civil Service Commission, and vetoed 'pork barrel' legislation, but because of his attitude on the tariff lost the 1888 election to Harrison. His second term was more eventful. At the outbreak of the Panic of 1893, he called a special session of Congress, secured the repeal of the Sherman Silver Purchase Act, and otherwise worked to stabilize the currency. Over the protest of Altgeld, he sent troops to end the stoppage of mails by the Pullman Strike. He also helped to settle the Venezuela Affair (q.v.), opposed the revolution instigated by American planters in Hawaii, and attempted to suppress other filibustering. During his last years he lectured at Princeton and wrote two books: *Presidential Problems* (1904), about his second term; and *Fishing and Hunting Sketches* (1906). He is supposed to be the model for the title character in *The Honorable Peter Stirling.*

Cliff-Dwellers, The, novel by H.B.Fuller (q.v.), published in 1893.

This realistic story centers in the daily activities of the 4,000 workers in a modern Chicago skyscraper. The Clifton Building is owned by Arthur Ingles, whose wife Cecilia occupies a leading position in the city's extravagant upperclass society. Erastus Brainard is the domineering, self-made head of the Underground National Bank, and among his employes is George Ogden, an average well-bred young man, with whom Brainard's daughter Abbie is in love. George marries ambitious Jessie Bradley, who urges him to imitate Brainard, while she considers her goal in life to be the acquaintance of Cecilia Ingles. Her extravagance drives George to steal from the bank, and Brainard, furious at the younger man's treatment of the shy, gentle Abbie, plans to prosecute him. He is saved from disgrace when Marcus, Brainard's degenerate son, murders his father and commits suicide. Another son, Burt, becomes head of the bank, which he

soon brings to ruin; but with his wife Cornelia, who shares his bourgeois ambitions, he determines to rise again. Abbie bears the burden of these misfortunes, but after Jessie's death George returns to marry Abbie, realizing that she would have helped him to avoid his early errors.

CLIFFTON, WILLIAM (1772–99), Pennsylvania poet, whose conservative political views in favor of England and against freethinking France appear in *The Group; or, An Elegant Representation* (1796), a savage attack on Gallatin and defense of Jay's Treaty. His poems were collected in 1800.

CLINTON, DEWITT (1769–1828), served as secretary to his uncle, George Clinton, and had a distinguished career in New York politics, being a member of the state legislature (1797–1802), U.S.senator (1802–3), mayor of New York City (1803–15), and governor of the state (1817–22, 1825–8). He was defeated by Madison for the presidency (1812). An active opponent of Tammany and the Albany Regency, he consistently supported progressive legislation and reforms, and as canal commissioner was the chief sponsor of the Erie Canal and the canal from Lake Champlain to the Erie Canal and the Hudson River.

CLINTON, GEORGE (1739–1812), New York statesman and Revolutionary War general, was the first governor of his state (1777–95, 1800–1804). He opposed the Constitution, which he believed would deprive large states of adequate representation. This view, expressed in the New York *Journal* in seven letters signed 'Cato,' was opposed by Hamilton's 'Caesar' letters in the *Daily Advertiser.* With Livingston and Burr, Clinton helped to organize the Democratic-Republican Party, and was elected Vice President in 1804, and again in 1808, when he had strong support for the presidency. His *Public Papers* have been published (10 vols.,1889–1911).

CLINTON, SIR HENRY (1738?–95), British commander-in-chief during the Revolutionary War, after the resignation of Howe (1778). In 1781 he was in turn succeeded by Sir Guy Carleton, and returned to England to write a *Narrative* (1783) of his campaigns, which had included the Battle of Bunker Hill, the Long Island campaign, the occupation of Rhode Island, the Battle of Monmouth, and the siege of Charleston. He figures in Brackenridge's *Battle of Bunkers-Hill.*

Clipper ships, speedy wooden vessels built in New England and at Baltimore (*c.*1830–60) for trade in tea and other commodities with China and California. In the rivalry between merchants, longer and sharper vessels, with loftier canvas, were constantly desired to obtain greater speed. The clippers were also famous for carrying many gold seekers to California and Australia. Donald McKay (q.v.) surpassed all records when his *Flying Cloud* (built 1851) made the New York-San Francisco run in 89 days and 8 hours. After the Civil War the clipper trade declined, and the vessels were gradually superseded by steamships. Recently the name has been applied to the large American flying boats on Atlantic, Pacific, and South American routes.

Clithero Edny, character in *Edgar Huntly* (q.v.).

Clockmaker, The; or, The Sayings and Doings of Samuel Slick, of Slickville, humorous sketches by T.C.Haliburton (q.v.), published in three series (1837,'38,'40). The hero, Sam Slick, is a Yankee peddler in Nova Scotia, whose wide acquaintance shrewd sagacity, and dry humor win him success on his circuit among the people of the Canadian farms. A thread of plot connects the sketches, in which the clockmaker encounters a 'Squire,' with whom he travels in Nova Scotia and later in Connecticut, but the principal interest is in the humorous folk-wisdom of the Yankee character. Sam Slick is responsible for such sayings as 'Now, Marm Pugwash is like the minister's apples, very temptin' fruit to look at but desperate sour . . . '; 'We can do without any article of luxury we have never had, but . . . it is not in human natur' to surrender it voluntarily'; 'Time is like a woman and pigs; the more you want it to go, the more it won't.'

COATES, ROBERT M[YRON] (1897–), after graduation from Yale (1919) became an expatriate in France, where he wrote his first book, *The Eater of Darkness* (1929), described as a surrealist novel. Returning to the U.S., he turned to an interest in the American background, writing *The Outlaw Years* (1930), a history of the land pirates of the Natchez Trace, and *Yesterday's Burdens* (1933), a novel of a 'modern Everyman' in New York City.

COATSWORTH, Elizabeth J. (1893–), New York poet, whose travels have provided the subjects of *Fox Footprints* (1921), employing Oriental themes in the manner of Imagism, and *Atlas and Beyond* (1924) and *Compass Rose* (1929), verses about many lands. The most popular of her books for children is *The Cat Who Went to Heaven* (1930), set in Japan. *Here I Stay* (1938) is a novel for adults, set in Maine.

COBB, Howell (1815–68), Georgia jurist, was a Democratic member of Congress (1843–51), where he championed the Compromise of 1850 and other attempts to maintain the Union. Elected on the platform of the Constitutional Union Party to the governorship (1851), he returned to Congress (1855), and in 1857 became Buchanan's secretary of the treasury. After Lincoln's election ended his hopes for compromise, he became a leader of the secession movement and served in the Confederate army.

COBB, Irvin S[hrewsbury] (1876–), born in Paducah, Kentucky, after newspaper work in his home town became noted as a New York journalist and humorous columnist. He has written serious fiction, but is best known for his many books of humor, including *'Speaking of Operations—'* (1916), *Cobb's Anatomy* (1912), *To Be Taken Before Sailing* (1930), and *Incredible Truth* (1931). The most prominent character in his short stories of Kentucky local color is Judge Priest, a kindly, hospitable old Confederate veteran, given to the frequent drinking of mint juleps and to active sympathy for those in distress. He figures in *Old Judge Priest* (1915) and many later collections. *Exit Laughing* (1941) is Cobb's autobiography.

COBB, Joseph B[eckham] (1819–58), Mississippi author, whose works include: *The Creole: A Story of the Siege of New Orleans* (1850), a romance about Laffite's pirates; *Mississippi Scenes* (1851), a collection of sketches; and *Leisure Labors* (1858), literary essays and political discussions, in which he criticizes Longfellow, N.P.Willis, and others, for their insipid style and want of indigenous subject matter.

COBB, Sylvanus,Jr. (1823–87), New England novelist, said to have been the first to undertake the wholesale production of popular fiction. He is credited with the authorship of over 300 novelettes and 1,000 short stories, whose morality and adventure were suited to contemporary public taste. His novels include: *The King's Talisman* (1851); *The Patriot Cruiser* (1859); *Ben Hamed* (1864); and *The Gunmaker of Moscow* (1888).

COBB, Ty[rus Raymond] (1886–), Detroit baseball player (1905–26), noted for his long record in the game and for his batting skill.

COBBETT, William (1763–1835), British journalist, served in the army in Nova Scotia and New Brunswick, and fled to the U.S. (1792) to escape litigation resulting from his unsubstantiated exposés of army frauds. In Philadelphia he opened a bookstore, published *Porcupine's Gazette* (q.v.,1797–9), and with delightful effrontery got into one scrape after another, reflected in his vituperative Federalist pamphlets against the Republican friends of France. These include: *A Bone to Gnaw for the Democrats* (1795); *A Kick for a Bite* (1795); *The Scare-Crow* (1796); and a scurrilous *Life of Tom Paine* (1796). He also attacked Joseph Priestley as a radical and infidel, in *Observations on Dr.Priestley's Emigration* (1794). This period is described in good homespun prose, in the *Life and Adventures of Peter Porcupine* (1796). After accusing Dr.Benjamin Rush of killing Washington by poor medical attention, and writing scurrilously of the judge who convicted him of this libel, Cobbett found the U.S. too hot for him, and returned to England, where his earlier Tory attitude was replaced by a radical one. When the 'Gagging Bills' were passed (1817), he again came to the U.S. For two years he was a farmer on Long Island, deeply interested in agrarianism, and his leading dispute of the moment was with Morris Birkbeck concerning Western colonization. During this second sojourn, Cobbett wrote his *Grammar of the English Language* for working-class students, as well as the graphic *Journal of a Year's Residence in the United States* (1818), incorporating the *Journal* of Thomas Hulme, a radical Englishman resident in the U.S. who protested vigorously against British economic and social conditions resulting from the industrial revolution. Cobbett's later life was devoted to agitation for parliamentary reforms in behalf of workers and farmers. Some information about his life in America is also recorded

in the *Political Register* (English), which he edited (1802–35), *The American Gardener* (1821), and *Advice to Young Men* (1829).

COCHRANE, Elizabeth, see *Seaman, Elizabeth.*

CODDINGTON, William (1601–78), official of the Massachusetts Bay Company, championed the Antinomianism of Anne Hutchinson, and emigrated to Rhode Island (1638) because of his liberal religious beliefs. He founded Newport, was elected its governor (1640), and refused to recognize Roger Williams's patent (1644) for the Providence Plantations (q.v.), but after the two colonies were reunited (1654) served three terms as governor.

Code, The, blank verse dramatic narrative by Robert Frost (q.v.), published in *North of Boston* (1914).

An experienced farmhand tells a 'town-bred farmer' of the pride his fellows take in their competence, and the resulting code:

> The hand that knows his business won't be told
> To do work better or faster—those two things.

For illustration he describes an incident that took place when he worked for a certain Sanders, of Salem, a prodigious worker himself. They were engaged in unloading a wagon of hay, and Sanders made the mistake, while standing below to pile the load, of saying to the hand on the wagon, 'Let her come!' Offended at this breach of the code, the hand dumped the entire load down on the helpless farmer, regardless of the danger of suffocating him. Sanders extricated himself, and showed that he recognized the justice of his employe's act:

> 'Discharge me? No! He knew I did just right.'

CODY, William Frederick (1846–1917), known by his sobriquet Buffalo Bill, served as a frontier scout during the Civil War, and again from 1868 to 1872, as well as in the battles against the Sioux. In 1883 he started his famous 'Wild West' show, the prototype of many later ones, and he had previously acted in Western melodramas. The dime novels of Ned Buntline and Prentiss Ingraham are partially responsible for his popular reputation. He acted for two years in Buntline's play, *The Scouts of the Plains* (1873). His autobiography (1904) is unreliable.

Coeur d'Alene, novel by Mary H. Foote (q.v.), published in 1894.

An unfavorable criticism of organized labor, the story tells of the dramatic struggle between union and non-union miners in the Coeur d'Alene region of Colorado (1892). Darcie Hamilton, disguised son of a British proprietor, and Mike McGowan, a humorous rough Irishman, oppose the efforts of the unionists and succeed in controlling the Big Horn mine until the arrival of militia. Darcie's love for Faith Bingham is frowned upon by her father, the cowardly manager of the mine, but ends happily when Bingham deserts during the struggle, after which Darcie and Faith marry and remain to manage the property.

COFFIN, Charles Carleton (1823–96), New England newspaper correspondent, whose experiences during the Civil War provided information both for autobiographical accounts and such popular children's books as *The Boys of '61* (1881). *The Boys of '76* (1877), concerned with the Revolution, was his most popular work, and he covered much of American history in his series, *Drum-Beat of the Nation* (1887–91).

COFFIN, Robert P[eter] Tristram (1892–), Maine author, graduated from Bowdoin (1915), was a Rhodes Scholar at Oxford, and became professor of English at Wells College (Aurora, New York) in 1921. His honest, hearty pastoral poetry of Maine life, published in such books as *Ballads of Square-Toed Americans* (1933) and *Strange Holiness* (1935, Pulitzer Prize 1936), was gathered in *Collected Poems* (1939). He has also written novels, including *Lost Paradise* (1934), in which a homesick boy imaginatively recreates his home on the Maine coast, *John Dawn* (1936), a story of 19th-century ship-building days, and *Captain Abby and Captain John* (1939), based on the diaries of a 19th-century Maine family who lived aboard a sailing ship; essays, including a *Book of Crowns and Cottages* (1925) and *An Attic Room* (1929); a regional history, *Kennebec, Cradle of Americans* (1937); and biographies of Laud (1930) and the dukes of Buckingham (1936), and *Portrait of an American* (1931). *New Poetry of New England: Frost and Robinson* (1938) is a series of lectures delivered at Johns Hopkins.

COGGESHALL, William Turner (1824–67), born in Pennsylvania, was a

noted Ohio journalist and publisher. His novels, including *Oakshaw* (1855), are only slightly above the level of popular works of the time, but his citicism is valuable. *The Protective Policy in Literature* (1859) is a plea for regionalism that foreshadowed his *Poets and Poetry of the West* (1860), an anthology with biographical sketches, meant to correct the neglect of Western literature in the books by Griswold and the Duyckincks.

COHAN, GEORGE M[ICHAEL] (1878–), New York comic actor, composer of such popular songs as *Over There* of the World War, and author of plays that include *Forty-five Minutes from Broadway* (1906), *The Talk of New York* (1907), and *The Song and Dance Man* (1923).

COHEN, MORRIS R[APHAEL] (1880–), Russian-born professor of philosophy, brought to the U.S. (1892), after graduation from the College of the City of New York (1900) and graduate work at Harvard became a teacher of mathematics at the College of the City of New York (1906–12) and a professor of philosophy there (1912–38). His writings concerned with logic of the natural and social sciences and jurisprudence include *Reason and Nature* (1931) and *Law and the Social Order* (1933).

COLBY, FRANK MOORE (1865–1925), professor of history, political science, and economics, at Amherst, Columbia, Barnard, and New York University, who in addition to editing the *New International Year Book* and the *New International Encyclopedia*, was the author of many polished and witty essays, the best of which were collected as *The Colby Essays* (1926).

Cold Harbor, BATTLE OF, occurred near Richmond, Virginia (June 1–12, 1864), between the Union forces under Grant and the Confederates under Lee, during the Wilderness Campaign. Grant was repulsed with heavy losses.

COLDEN, CADWALLADER (1688–1776), born in Scotland, came to America (1710), and after a long political career became lieutenant-governor of New York (1761–76). His *History of the Five Indian Nations* (1727) was the first careful and well-documented study of the Iroquois confederacy. Among his many treatises on medicine, moral philosophy, and natural science is the *Plantae Coldenghamiae* (1749, 1751). He attracted much attention by his implied criticism of Newton in the *Explication of the First Causes of Action in Matter, and, of the Causes of Gravitation* (1745, frequently revised).

COLE, THOMAS (1801–48), English-born painter, came to Ohio (1819), and with Asher Durand is considered the founder of the Hudson River School of landscape painting. Trips to Europe (1821–31, 1841) led to his interest in the allegorical subjects popular abroad, and such later canvases as *The Course of Empire*, *The Cross and the World*, and *The Voyage of Life* forsake his earlier poetic transcriptions of nature for theatrical, story-telling delineations.

Colgate University, men's college at Rochester, New York, was founded (1819) by Baptists as Hamilton Literary and Theological Seminary. It was renamed for the soap manufacturer, William Colgate, who in 1890 gave a large sum of money to the institution. C.E.Hughes studied there (1876–8), and graduates include M.DeL.Landon (1861), H.E.Fosdick (1900), and Maurice Hindus (1915).

Coliseum, The, poem by Poe (q.v.), interpolated in his tragedy, *Politian* (q.v.).

College of the City of New York, The, coeducational public college founded in 1848, situated since 1920 in Washington Heights. Upton Sinclair is a graduate (1897), and others who have attended include Alfred Stieglitz (1879–81) and Lewis Mumford.

Collier's (1888–), weekly magazine founded by Peter F. Collier to promote his instalment plan for selling books. It soon became an illustrated literary and critical journal, and under the editorship of Norman Hapgood (1903–12) and Mark Sullivan (1914–17) was a leading liberal and muckraking publication. After the editorship of F.P.Dunne (1918–19), it was less concerned with influencing social opinion, and more with furnishing light fiction and articles for the average reader. Although it participated in new crusades, e.g. against the 18th Amendment, it concentrated on fiction, cartoons, and popular articles on current events written by famous persons, together with discussions of Hollywood, Broadway, and athletic events. Under this policy, the circulation has risen to more than 2,500,000.

COLMAN, BENJAMIN (1673–1747), minister of the Brattle Street Church in Bos-

ton (1699–1747) and prominent among liberal Congregationalists, was active in civil and religious affairs, and a minor leader in the Great Awakening. Most of his more than 90 books are sermons, and these include *God Deals with Us as Rational Creatures* (1723), *The Government and Improvement of Mirth* (1707), and *Discourses upon the Parable of the Ten Virgins*, as well as works concerned with his defense of inoculation. His poetry includes *Elijah's Translation* (1707), a neoclassical work on the death of the Reverend Samuel Willard. He is the subject of a biography by Ebenezer Turell (1749), who married his daughter, Jane Turell (q.v.).

COLON and **SPONDEE,** pseudonyms respectively of J.Dennie and R.Tyler (qq.v.) in their journalistic collaboration.

Colonel Carter of Cartersville, novelette by F.Hopkinson Smith (q.v.), published in 1891, was successfully dramatized by Augustus Thomas (1892). *Colonel Carter's Christmas* (1903) is a sequel.

The colonel, a Virginian expatriated in New York City after the decline of his fortunes, is 'frank, generous, tender-hearted . . . proud of his ancestry, proud of his State, and proud of himself; believing in states' rights, slavery, and the Confederacy . . .' With his Negro servant Chad, he lives on credit and occasional 'loans' from his beloved Aunt Nancy. His friends Fitzpatrick and 'the Major' humor his stock scheme for a railroad in Fairfax County, and he spends his days as a hanger-on in a Wall Street office. Later a British syndicate becomes interested, when the Carter lands are found to contain coal, and though the railroad scheme is dropped the colonel receives a fortune for a part of his estate.

Colonel Sellers, play by Clemens and Howells (qq.v.), featuring the hero of *The Gilded Age* (q.v.). Unsuccessfully produced in 1886, it was the basis of Clemens's story, *The American Claimant* (q.v.).

COLONEL SURRY, pseudonym of J.E. Cooke (q.v.).

Colt Revolver, revolving-cylinder breech pistol, patented in 1835 by Samuel Colt (1814–62), who also invented a rifle of this type. The U.S. army adopted the Colt revolver in 1847, and this use, along with that on the Plains and southwestern frontier, made the 'six shooter' pistol so famous that Colt's name is frequently used as a generic term for revolver. As the first firearm that could be effectively employed by a man on horseback, the Colt revolver played a part in history even more important than its role in cowboy and gunman legendry.

COLTON, JOHN (1889–), New York dramatist, whose plays include: *Nine Pine Street* (1933), written in collaboration with others, and based on the Borden murder case; *Rain* (1922), in collaboration with Clemence Randolph, based on Somerset Maugham's short story, 'Miss Thompson,' and telling of the prostitute Sadie Thompson's arrival on a South Sea island, where she is frightened into confessing to the Reverend Mr.Davidson, but returns to a defiant cynicism after he reveals his lust for her; and *The Shanghai Gesture* (1926), a sensational play depicting a Chinese brothel and the vengeance of its keeper on the Britisher who betrayed her, by placing his two daughters in her establishment.

COLTON, WALTER (1797–1851), author of *Ship and Shore* (1835), the account of his cruise as naval chaplain, and *Deck and Port* (1850), about his voyage to California (1845) with Commodore Stockton. He remained in California, became *alcalde* of Monterey, and founded *The Californian*, the territory's first newspaper. His *Three Years in California* (1850) is an important historical source.

Columbia Centinel, see *Massachusetts Centinel.*

Columbia, DISTRICT OF, see *Washington, D.C.*

Columbia, the Gem of the Ocean, patriotic song attributed variously to Thomas à Becket and David T. Shaw, English actors, and said to have been written for a Philadelphia benefit (1843). It is sometimes asserted that Shaw wrote it for à Becket in England, under the title 'Britannia, the Pride of the Ocean,' and later adapted it for American performance.

Columbia University, in New York City, was founded under a grant by George II as King's College (1754), and became Columbia College (1784) when it was reopened after the Revolution. It was founded as an Episcopal institution, but designed to widen its scope beyond conventional classical and religious education, so that a medical school was soon established (1767). The presidents have included Samuel Johnson (1755–63), Myles Cooper (1763–75), Charles King (1849–

64), F.A.P.Barnard (1864–89), and Seth Low (1889–1901). Columbia became a university (1891), and in 1897 moved to its present site in Morningside Heights. Under Nicholas Murray Butler, president since 1902, the graduate schools have been increased and expanded, and the total enrolment now exceeds 10,000. Barnard College, an affiliated women's school, was founded in 1889, and its graduates include Babette Deutsch (1917) and Leonie Adams (1922). Among the authors who have graduated from Columbia are: Gouverneur Morris (1768), John Jay (1764), Alexander Hamilton (non-grad., 1773–5), J.B. Linn (1795), C.C.Moore (1798), Gulian Verplanck (1801), R.C.Sands (1815), C.F. Hoffman (non-grad., 1821–4), Laughton Osborn (1827), E.A.Duyckinck (1835), Edgar Fawcett (1867), H.T.Peck (1881), Brander Matthews (1871), J.K.Bangs (1883), J.E.Spingarn (1895), William Beebe (1898), John Erskine (1900), Henry S. Harrison (1900), R.S.Bourne (1913), and Matthew Josephson (1919).

Columbiad, The, epic poem in heroic couplets by Joel Barlow (q.v.), was published in 1807, and is a revision of *The Vision of Columbus* (1787). It is a tedious and turgid work modeled on Milton, and influenced by Shenstone and Timothy Dwight.

According to the preface, Barlow's purpose is 'to inculcate the love of national liberty, and to discountenance the deleterious passion for violence and war; to show that on the basis of republican principle all good morals, as well as good government and hopes of permanent peace, must be founded.' The poem is concerned with the vision revealed by a 'radiant seraph' to Columbus, an old man dying in prison. Columbus sees the future glories of America, and a distant vision of a league of all nations, 'assembled to establish the political harmony of mankind.'

Columbian Lady's and Gentleman's Magazine (1844–9), monthly literary journal, was published at New York as a competitor of *Graham's Magazine*. Its contributors included Poe, Paulding, and C.F.Hoffman.

Columbian Magazine, The (1786–92), monthly periodical published at Philadelphia by a literary group that included Matthew Carey and Francis Hopkinson. Its format was the most attractive of all American magazines of its time, and it featured agricultural and mechanical subjects, with an unusual amount of fiction. In its pages were first printed Belknap's *The Foresters*, William Byrd's description of the Dismal Swamp, and C.B.Brown's 'The Rhapsodist.' In 1790 the magazine was altered, afterward appearing as *The Universal Asylum and Columbian Magazine*, with Benjamin Rush as the leading contributor.

COLUMBUS, CHRISTOPHER (*c.*1446–1506), whose name in Italian is Cristoforo Colombo, and in Spanish Cristóbal Colón, was probably born in Genoa, to whose authorities he is said to have first proposed his expedition of discovery. He is supposed to have been influenced toward exploration by his older brother Bartholomew, an expert chart maker, and by his marriage (1477) to the daughter of a Portuguese navigator. After repeated rebuffs at the Portuguese and Spanish courts, he received the aid of Ferdinand and Isabella of Spain, and set sail (Aug. 3, 1492) with three small ships, the *Santa Maria* under his own command, the *Niña* under Vicente Pinzón, and the *Pinta* under Martin Pinzón. He landed in the Bahamas (Oct. 12) at an island that he named San Salvador, now generally identified with Watling Island. After discovering Cuba and Hispaniola (Haiti), he returned to Spain. For these discoveries he was made 'admiral of the ocean' and governor-general of all new lands. On his second voyage (1493) his discoveries included the Leeward Islands, St.Christopher, and Puerto Rico. On the third expedition (1498), he discovered Trinidad and the mouth of the Orinoco. His poor administration caused his popularity to wane, and greater attention was given to Vespucci and other navigators. In 1502 he left Spain for a fourth time, in the hope of sailing past his discovered islands to Marco Polo's Cathay, for which he had constantly searched. This expedition suffered terrible hardships, and he was forced to abandon his plans and return to Spain, where he was discredited. As the founder of American history, he is the subject of many biographies, notably Irving's *Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus* (3 vols.,1828). His journal, letters, and other documents have appeared in several scholarly editions.

Comanche Indians, warlike tribe of the southern Plains, related to the Shoshone. Ranging from the Platte River to the

Mexican border, they harried Spanish and American settlers until recent times. They now live on an Oklahoma reservation.

Come Home, Father, song by H.C. Work (q.v.).

Come-outers, name applied to those 19th-century New Englanders who, believing that ministers and creeds were unnecessary, found the only source of divine truth in what God said directly to their hearts. Members of this vigorous mystic movement came originally from Cape Cod.

Command, novel by William McFee (q.v.).

Commemoration Ode, see *Ode Recited at . . . Harvard University*.

Commentaries on American Law, see *Kent, James*.

Commercial Advertiser, see *American Minerva*.

Committee for Industrial Organization, see *Congress of Industrial Organizations*.

Committees of Correspondence, extra-legal secret committees formed to maintain colonial unity and state the rights of the colonists. The first of these bodies was formed by Samuel Adams at a Boston town meeting (1772), and they soon arose in other towns and colonies. They aided in calling the first Continental Congress.

Committees of Safety, chosen by Revolutionary legislatures to act as general executives. Like the Committees of Correspondence, they originated in Massachusetts, but spread to other colonies during the recess of assemblies and conventions. They were also called Councils of Safety.

Common Lot, The, novel by Robert Herrick (q.v.).

Common Sense, pamphlet by Thomas Paine (q.v.), published anonymously at Philadelphia (Jan. 10, 1776). At a time of rising passion against the British government, the work was the first unqualified argument for complete political independence, and turned colonial thought in the direction that, six months later, culminated in the Declaration of Independence. Over 100,000 copies were sold by the end of March, and the pamphlet is generally considered the most important literary influence on the movement for independence.

The argument is presented in four parts entitled: 'Of the Origin and Design of Government in General; with Concise Remarks on the English Constitution'; 'Of Monarchy and Hereditary Succession'; 'Thoughts on the Present State of American Affairs'; and 'Of the Present Ability of America . . .' The most cogent points of the closely reasoned discussion may be summarized in these extracts:

> Here then is the origin and rise of government; namely, a mode rendered necessary by the inability of moral virtue to govern the world; here too is the design and end of government, viz. freedom and security . . . Of more worth is one honest man to society, and in the sight of God, than all the crowned ruffians that ever lived . . . We have boasted the protection of Great Britain, without considering, that her motive was *interest* not *attachment* . . . I challenge the warmest advocate for reconciliation to show a single advantage that this continent can reap by being connected with Great Britain . . . Our corn will fetch its price in any market in Europe, and our imported goods must be paid for buy them where we will . . . Everything that is right or reasonable pleads for separation. The blood of the slain, the weeping voice of Nature cries, 'TIS TIME TO PART . . . The republican form of government is the best because it is founded on the most natural principles . . . 'Tis not in numbers but in unity that our great strength lies; yet our present numbers are sufficient to repel the force of all the world.'

Common Sense (1932–), monthly liberal review of political, economic, and social affairs, whose contributors have included Dos Passos, MacLeish, Upton Sinclair, Norman Thomas, Louis Adamic, John Dewey, and Max Eastman.

Commoner, magazine edited by William Jennings Bryan (q.v.).

COMMONS, JOHN ROGERS (1862–), professor of economics at the University of Wisconsin (1904–34) and director of the American Bureau of Industrial Research. His books include *The Distribution of Wealth* (1905), *Industrial Goodwill* (1919), *Legal Foundations of Capitalism* (1924), *Races and Immigrants in America* (1911), and *Myself* (1934). He has contributed to such works as *A Documentary History of American Industrial Society* (11 vols., 1910–11) and *History of Labor in the United States* (4 vols., 1918–35).

Commonweal, The (1924–), weekly review of current events, literature, and art, expressing the point of view of Cath-

olic laymen, although admitting contributions from writers of other faiths.

Communist Party of the U.S. originated in the Communist Party of America and the Communist Labor Party, both formed in 1919 by leftist elements which seceded from the Socialist Party (q.v.). The two groups, allied with the Communist International, had a combined strength of about 35,000, but after their amalgamation in the United Communist Party (1920), renamed the Workers' Party in 1921, the number soon decreased. This was partly due to the Palmer raids and other antiradical campaigns. Forced into undercover activity, party members engaged in propagandizing workers, agitating for increased labor organization and strikes, and preparing for an ultimate seizure of economic and political control by the proletarian class. In 1924 William Z. Foster, the Workers' Party candidate for President, received 30,000 votes. Factional disputes began to disrupt the party, the most important resulting in the expulsion of those who supported Trotsky in his opposition to the Third International (1928), and of some thousand followers of the 'right renegade,' Jay Lovestone (1929). In 1928 the name was changed to Communist Party of the U.S.A., Section of the Third International, and Foster, again the presidential candidate, polled 48,000 votes in 1928 and 55,000 in 1932. In the latter year he was displaced as secretary by Earl Browder, who was the presidential candidate in 1936, and in 1938 claimed a party membership of 75,000. *The Masses* and *The New Masses* (qq.v.) have been the leading Communist magazines; *The Daily Worker* was formerly the party's official newspaper; and a striking result of party activity has been the rise of proletarian literature (q.v.).

Compensation, essay by Emerson (q.v.), published in *Essays, First Series* (1841); also, a poem by Emerson, published the same year.

The idea of compensation is implicit in Emerson's optimistic thought, and involves his concept of the 'Over-Soul' (q.v.): 'An inevitable dualism bisects nature, so that each thing is a half, and suggests another thing to make it whole.' Although the criminal and the malicious are apparently rewarded rather than punished, the conventional view that justice will be meted out in an after-life is erroneous, for it 'is not postponed . . . What we call retribution, is the universal necessity by which the whole appears wherever a part appears . . . Every act rewards itself.' The necessary conditions that life involves may not be avoided: 'Our action is overmastered and characterised above our will by the law of nature . . . Our strength grows out of our weakness.' But the author does not counsel indifference. 'Under all this running sea of circumstance . . . lies the aboriginal abyss of real Being.' Wisdom and virtue involve no penalty, but are qualities of being; 'in a virtuous action, I properly *am*.' The individual, trusting instinct, acts in accord with a divinely balanced justice, and 'the changes which break up at short intervals the prosperity of men, are advertisements of a nature whose law is growth.'

Compromise of 1850, the result of the conflict between proslavery and antislavery factions in Congress following the Mexican War, concerning an equitable balance of power in the representation of newly acquired territories. Clay proposed that California be admitted as a free state; that New Mexico and Utah be territories, and determine their status upon achieving statehood; the settlement of Texas claims by paying $10,000,000 on the debt contracted in the period of the Lone Star Republic; the abolition of slave trade in the District of Columbia; and a more stringent fugitive slave law. Calhoun, in his 'Speech on the Slavery Question' (March 4, 1850), asked that the South be given equal rights in the acquired territory; that the North return fugitive slaves; that agitation over slavery be stopped; and that an amendment to the Constitution be enacted to restore equilibrium between North and South. Webster, in his 'Seventh of March Speech' (q.v.), attacked Calhoun's argument, and supported Clay's conciliatory policy, so that the measures eventually passed Congress as separate bills.

COMPTON, ARTHUR H[OLLY] (1892–), Ohio-born physicist, professor at the University of Chicago (1923–), is noted for his researches on X-rays and cosmic rays. He is the author of *X-Rays and Electrons* (1926), and in 1927 was awarded the Nobel Prize.

KARL TAYLOR COMPTON (1887–), his brother, was professor of physics at Princeton (1915–30), and has since been

president of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology.

COMPTON, FRANCIS SNOW, pseudonym of Henry Adams (q.v.).

COMSTOCK, ANTHONY (1844–1915), moral censor, was successively head of a Y.M.C.A. campaign against obscene literature, special agent for the Post Office Department, founder of the Society for Suppression of Vice, and a leader of Boston's Watch and Ward Society. He was the father of the so-called Comstock law enacted by Congress (1873) to exclude vicious matter from the mails. In his various campaigns, he caused the arrest of more than 3,000 persons, destroyed 50 tons of books, 28,400 pounds of stereotyped plates for printing objectionable books, and nearly 4,000,000 pictures. He wrote several books on immorality in art and literature. *Anthony Comstock: Roundsman of the Lord* (1927) is a biography by Heywood Broun and Margaret Leech.

Comstock Lode, silver deposit discovered by H.T.P.Comstock on the site of Virginia City, Nevada (1856). By 1863 the settlement had mushroomed to 40,000 inhabitants, and the mines were producing twenty to thirty million dollars annually. Large quantities of ore continued to be milled throughout the 1870's. For a time Clemens helped to edit *The Territorial Enterprise*, the local newspaper, and other authors of the region included Dan De Quille and Fred H. Hart.

CONANCHET, see *Canonchet.*

Conception of God, The, philosophic work by Josiah Royce (q.v.).

Concerning the End for which God Created the World, see *Edwards, Jonathan.*

Conciliation with the American Colonies, On, speech by Burke, delivered before the British Parliament (March 1775). Intending to prevent the defection of the colonies, Burke submitted 13 resolutions affirming the principle of autonomy for them, based on four fundamental assumptions: Happiness is the true end of government; political expediency is the means to that end; the criterion for judging the end is the wisdom of the past; and the end must be obtained through the medium of the British Constitution.

Concord, MASSACHUSETTS, village 20 miles northwest of Boston, was settled in 1635. It was the scene of the colony's first provincial congress (1774–5), and as a military supply depot was the objective of the British expedition that fought the Battle of Lexington (q.v.) and then proceeded to Concord (April 19, 1775), where it fought in an encounter with 500 minutemen who had been warned by Paul Revere and Rufus Dawes. This event is commemorated by French's monument, *The Minute Man,* and by Emerson's 'Concord Hymn':

> . . . Here once the embattled farmers stood
> And fired the shot heard round the world.

During the middle decades of the 19th century, Concord was the home of the Transcendentalist movement, whose leaders included Emerson, Thoreau, Hawthorne, Alcott, and the younger W.E. Channing. The 'Old Manse' is noted as the residence at various times of the Emerson family and of Hawthorne, and 'Orchard House' was Alcott's home during the period of his Concord School of Philosophy (1879–88).

Condensed Novels, parodies by Bret Harte (q.v.).

Conduct of Life, The, essays by Emerson (q.v.) published in 1860, based on lectures delivered in 1851. The author's ethical ideas are developed in nine essays: 'Fate,' 'Power,' 'Wealth,' 'Culture,' 'Behavior,' 'Worship,' 'Considerations by the Way,' 'Beauty,' and 'Illusions.'

Conestoga wagon, see *Covered wagon.*

Coney Island, a Brooklyn seaside resort off the southwest shore of Long Island, famous as a popular beach and amusement park since the early 19th century.

Confederacy, name commonly given to the Confederate States of America, those Southern states that, by the ordinance of secession, withdrew from the Union to set up their own government in 1861. These included Virginia, North and South Carolina, Georgia, Alabama, Tennessee, Louisiana, Arkansas, Mississippi, Florida, and Texas. Jefferson Davis was president of the Confederacy, which existed until the end of the Civil War.

Confederation, ARTICLES OF, see *Articles of Confederation.*

Confederation, CONGRESS OF, see *Congress of the Confederation.*

Confession; or, The Blind Heart, a Domestic Story, novel by Simms, (q.v.) published in 1841.

Edgar Clifford, melancholy and suspicious, marries his cousin Julia, to whom he introduces William Edgerton, who shares her interest in art and falls in love with her. Believing that his wife is encouraging William, Edgar moves to Alabama, where he and Julia are happy for a time, until the arrival of William, who remains to be nursed through an illness by Julia. Edgar, again suspicious, challenges his rival to a duel, poisons his wife, and after her death discovers letters that reveal her innocence. He threatens to commit suicide, but is dissuaded and decides to begin a new life in Texas.

Confidence-Man, The: His Masquerade, unfinished satirical novel by Melville (q.v.), published in 1857. This was the author's last work of fiction, written just before the long silence of his later life, and expresses a pessimistic view best described by the title of a handbill which figures in the story: 'Ode on the Intimations of Distrust in Man, Unwillingly Inferred from Repeated Repulses, in Disinterested Endeavors to Procure His Confidence.'

A deaf-mute boards the Mississippi steamboat *Fidèle*, bound from St.Louis for New Orleans, and displays to the passengers a slate on which he writes: 'Charity thinketh no evil; suffereth long, and is kind; endureth all things; believeth all things; and never faileth.' This is regarded as a proof of lunacy, although the passengers consider the barber's 'No Trust' sign as wise and well expressed. Optimistic faith-seeking mankind then appears in a variety of other disguises, as the 'Masquerade' continues, and distrust replaces confidence in the course of each episode or anecdote.

Congo, The (A Study of the Negro Race), poem by Vachel Lindsay (q.v.), published in *The Congo and Other Poems* (1914). With a sensational use of varied syncopated rhythms, occasional rimes, and frequent alliteration, the poet presents this 'roaring, epic, rag-time tune' on the traits he enumerates as characteristic of the blacks: 'Their Basic Savagery'; 'Their Irrepressible High Spirits'; and 'The Hope of Their Religion.'

Congregationalism, system of church government in which each congregation is autonomous and democratic. No hierarchy exists, since Christ is in principle the head of each church, and the various congregations are related as fellow-participants in the common family of God. This form of church polity in America was inaugurated by the Pilgrim Fathers, who were Separatists (q.v.), and by the later stream of Puritan colonists (q.v.). It was virtually the established religion in New England (*c.*1631–1833), and its basic statement was the Cambridge Platform (1648). The increasing liberalism and relative cooling of religious fervor during the 17th century caused the adoption of the Half-Way Covenant (q.v.). In 1705, the proposal that higher church assemblies be created, similar to those of the Presbyterians, failed to be accepted in Massachusetts, largely because of the democratic opposition of John Wise (q.v.), but the Saybrook Platform (1708) in Connecticut tended toward Presbyterianism. The Great Awakening (q.v.,1734ff.) revitalized the religious life of New England for a time, but eventually led to the breakdown of Congregationalism and the rise of Unitarianism during the mid-19th century. Most of the New England Congregationalists who went west became Presbyterians. In 1871 a National Council was formed, although local churches still remain independent. The influence of Congregationalism in American culture is so broad that it may be seen throughout art and literature, and in many political institutions and social attitudes. Virtually all the New England authors have been conditioned by Congregationalism, which is responsible for the founding of such colleges as Harvard, Yale, Williams, and Amherst.

Congress of Industrial Organizations, federation of labor unions founded (1935) by John L. Lewis (q.v.) as the Committee for Industrial Organization, representing eight unions affiliated with the A.F.of L., and intended to organize in one union all the workers employed to produce a single commodity. The C.I.O., thus opposed to the A.F.of L.'s policy of craft unionism, in 1938 adopted its present name and assumed the aspect of a permanent federation outside the parent body. Claiming a membership of some 4,000,000, it has been successful in unionizing some steel, automobile, coal, and glass industries.

Congress of the Confederation, see *Continental Congress*.

Congressional Library, see *Library of Congress.*

Congressional Record (1872–), report of the proceedings of the Senate and House of Representatives, which contains all debates, proceedings, and enactments. It was preceded by the *Annals of Congress* (1789–1824), the *Register of Debates* (1824–37), and the *Congressional Globe* (1837–72). The *Journals of the Continental Congress* were first collected in 34 volumes (1904–37).

Coniston, novel by Winston Churchill (q.v.), published in 1906.

From the presidency of Jackson to that of Grant, Jethro Bass is a politician in Coniston, a small New England town. Eccentric, vigorous, and unscrupulous, he desires neither office nor graft, but only power. As a young man he loves Cynthia Ware, but she rejects him because she cannot tolerate his lack of principle. He becomes the state's unofficial 'boss' during the years when Cynthia marries, has a child, and dies. Her widower brings the child Cynthia to live in Coniston, and Jethro protects the father and becomes the girl's closest friend. To please her, he withdraws from his lifelong conflict with Isaac Worthington, who represents corporation rule, and whose son Bob loves Cynthia. He re-enters the campaign to protect her interests, however, finally compromising and retiring when Worthington consents to Bob's marriage.

Conjure Woman, The, stories by C.W. Chesnutt (q.v.).

CONKLE, E[LLSWORTH] P[ROUTY] (1899–), playwright and professor at the University of Iowa, whose plays include: *Two Hundred Were Chosen* (1936), concerned with the farmers from the Midwest dust bowl area whom the government reestablished on Alaskan farms; *Prologue to Glory* (1937), presenting the youth of Abraham Lincoln and his romance with Ann Rutledge; and numerous one-act plays depicting characters and legends of the Middle West, published as *Crick Bottom Plays* and *Loolie and Other Short Plays.*

CONKLING, GRACE HAZARD (1878–), professor of English at Smith College, is known for her gentle nature poetry, published in such volumes as *Afternoons of April* (1915) and *Wilderness Songs* (1920).

HILDA CONKLING (1910–), her daughter, won a reputation as a prodigy for her *Poems by a Little Girl* (1920) and *Shoes of the Wind* (1922).

CONKLING, ROSCOE (1829–88), Republican political leader of New York, represented his state in Congress (1859–63, 1865–7) and as senator (1867–81). He championed a third term for Grant, who had given him control of federal patronage, and declared of Grant (1880) that 'He will hew to the line of right, let the chips fall where they may,' but failed to win his party to the plan. After Hayes opposed his influence by his Civil Service reforms, Conkling blocked the nomination of Blaine and Sherman, causing the selection of Garfield as a compromise candidate, with Arthur, a Conkling lieutenant, as Vice President. Garfield's refusal to give Conkling the distribution of patronage led to his resignation from the Senate in protest.

Connecticut Courant (1764–), weekly newspaper published at Hartford, was a patriotic journal during the Revolution, and later supported the Federalist party. Becoming a daily, it continued to be the leading news organ of its state, and since 1837 has been known as the *Hartford Daily Courant,* claimed to be the oldest continuously published newspaper in the U.S.

Connecticut Wits, literary group of the late 18th century, centered at Hartford (known also as the Hartford Wits), whose origin is ascribed to the quickening interest in literature at Yale during this period, when most of the group were tutors or students there. They patterned themselves after the Augustan wits, at the same time preserving the intellectual and spiritual conservatism of Connecticut. Aiming to modernize the rigidly scholastic curriculum of Yale, they also wished to supply their country with poetry that would celebrate America's literary independence by extolling native history and society. Although they copied London modes, the Connecticut Wits clung after the Revolution to their orthodox Calvinism and Federalism, bitterly opposing French atheism and the doctrine of equalitarianism. Their collaborations included: *The Anarchiad* (1786–7); *The Echo* (1791–1805); and *The Political Greenhouse* (1799, qq.v.). Members of the group included John Trumbull, Timothy Dwight, Joel Barlow, Lemuel Hopkins, David Hum-

phreys, Richard Alsop, Theodore Dwight, E.H.Smith, and Dr.Mason F. Cogswell.

Connecticut Yankee, A, in King Arthur's Court, novel by Clemens (q.v.), published in 1889 under his pseudonym Mark Twain.

An ingenious Yankee mechanic, knocked unconscious in a fight, awakens to find himself at Camelot, in Arthurian England, in A.D.528. Imprisoned by Sir Kay the Seneschal and exhibited before the knights of the Round Table, he is condemned to death, but saves himself by posing as a magician like Merlin, predicting an eclipse, and becoming minister to King Arthur. He increases his reputation and power by applying his 19th-century knowledge of gunpowder, electricity, and industrial methods; but when he attempts to better the condition of the oppressed peasantry he meets opposition from the church, the knights, Merlin, and the sorceress Morgan le Fay. He accompanies the king in disguise on an expedition among the common people, and, when they are captured and enslaved, they are rescued by the Yankee's trained troop of 500 knights on bicycles. His daughter Hello-Central becomes ill, and with his wife Alisande (Sandy) he takes her to France to recover. Returning to England, the Yankee finds his work undone, Arthur killed, and the kingdom disrupted by civil war. In a cave with modern armed defenses, he gathers his friends, declares a republic, and fights off an attack, but is wounded. Merlin pretends to nurse him, but actually puts him in a sleep that lasts until the 19th century.

CONNELLY, Marc[us Cook] (1890–), Pennsylvania-born journalist and playwright, is best known for his play *The Green Pastures* (q.v.,1930, Pulitzer Prize), based on Roark Bradford's stories of the Negro's conception of Old Testament history. Connelly earlier collaborated with George S. Kaufman in such plays as *Dulcy* (1921), a satirical study of a stupid, well-meaning woman who jeopardizes her husband's opportunities; *To the Ladies* (1922), presenting a woman whose brilliance saves her husband from his stupidities; *Merton of the Movies* (1922), a dramatic version of the novel by H.L.Wilson (q.v.); and *Beggar on Horseback* (q.v.,1924), satirizing the repression of the artist by a bourgeois society.

CONNER, Charlotte, see *Barnes, Charlotte.*

CONNOR, Ralph, pseudonym of C.W. Gordon (q.v.).

Conqueror, The, novel by Gertrude Atherton (q.v.), published in 1902. The purpose of this 'dramatized biography' of Alexander Hamilton is 'to throw the graces of fiction over the sharp hard facts that historians have laboriously gathered,' and the author claims to have kept within the 'probabilities,' but the motivation and the portraits of Hamilton, Jefferson, and Madison are considered distorted.

Conqueror Worm, The, poem by Poe (q.v.), published in *The Raven and Other Poems* (1845), and later included in the tale 'Ligeia.' It consists of five eight-line stanzas, rimed *ababcbcb*, the metre being extremely free though most frequently iambic and anapaestic. The final lines convey the subject:

> . . . the play is the tragedy, 'Man,'
> And its hero, the Conqueror Worm.

Conquest of Canaan, The, epic poem in 11 books of conventional heroic couplets, by Timothy Dwight (q.v.), published in 1785. Written between 1771 and 1773, the work is claimed by the author to be 'the first epic poem to have appeared in America.' Shuttling with sonorous declamation between Canaan and Connecticut, it is an obvious allegory, in which Joshua's conquest of Canaan suggests the struggle under Washington. Although contemporary events and characters are frequently mentioned, the epic is intended 'to represent such manners as are removed from peculiarities of any age or country, and might belong to the amiable and virtuous of any period.'

Conquest of Canaan, The, novel by Tarkington (q.v.).

Conquest of Granada, A Chronicle of the, history by Irving (q.v.), published in 1829 and revised in 1850. Praised by Prescott and others for its careful documentation, the work is the result of research in Spanish archives and in the library of Obadiah Rich, but is presented within a frame of humorous and romantic fiction, and purports to be based on a work by the fictitious 'Fray Antonio Agapida,' who is 'intended as a personification of the monkish zealots' of its period (1478–92). Through this chronicler, Irving emphasizes the bar-

barity of the Christian conquerors, the prejudices and ignorance of the court, and the heroism of the Moorish leaders in their hopeless struggle to retain Granada.

Conquest of Mexico and ***Conquest of Peru***, histories by Prescott (q.v.).

Conquistador, narrative poem by Archibald MacLeish (q.v.), published in 1932 and awarded the 1933 Pulitzer Prize. An epic employing a free terza-rima form, the work is based mainly on the account by Bernal Díaz, but the poet has 'altered and transposed and invented incidents,' and his account of the topography derives from his own experience.

Following the Prologue and 'Bernal Díaz' Preface to His Book,' picturing the aged warrior as he was when he recorded these experiences of his youth, is presented the narrative of the Spanish conquerors under Cortés, who, against the orders of his rival, Governor Velázquez, sailed from Cuba in 1519, landed on the Mexican coast, and began the long march across mountains and deserts to the Aztec capital. The tale of Cortés's struggles with the natural environment, the Indians, the troops of Velázquez, and insurgents among his own men, is presented in heroic terms, with a powerful use of sensuous imagery to evoke the beauty and brutality of the scenes and events. The climax is the rout of the Spaniards by Montezuma's men during the *Noche triste* (1520), and the narrative concludes with a brief account of the barbarous conquest of the capital the following spring, and of the colonization:

> And none of us all but had his heart foreknown the
> Evil to come would have turned from the land. . .

CONRAD, ROBERT TAYLOR (1810–58), Philadelphia journalist and dramatist, author of such tragedies as *Conrad, King of Naples* (1832) and *Jack Cade* (q.v.,1835). He was chairman of the committee which in 1843 awarded a $100 prize to Poe's 'The Gold-Bug' as the best story submitted to the *Dollar Magazine*. He was mayor of the city (1854–6).

CONROY, JACK (1899–), proletarian author, whose works include *The Disinherited* (1933), a panoramic novel of America during and after the World War, and *World to Win* (1935), a study of the contemporary American worker.

Conscience Whigs, see *Whig Party*.

CONSIDÉRANT, VICTOR PROSPER (1808–93), French Fourierist editor, author, and politician, made two visits to the U.S. (1852,1854). During the second visit, under the influence of Albert Brisbane, he founded a phalanstery at San Antonio, Texas.

Conspiracy of Pontiac, The, history by Parkman (q.v.).

Constance Trescot, novel by S.Weir Mitchell (q.v.).

Constantia Dudley, heroine of *Ormond* (q.v.).

Constitution, see *Old Ironsides*.

Constitution of the United States, framed by the Federal Constitutional Convention (q.v.,1787) to create the system of federal government, which began to function in 1789, superseding the Articles of Confederation. Madison has been called 'the father of the Constitution,' since he was secretary and spokesman for the signers. *The Federalist* (q.v.) played an important role in securing the adoption of the Constitution, and remains the most important commentary. Opposed views of constitutional interpretation have always existed. Article I, section 8, after expressly enumerating the powers of Congress, supplements them by the grant 'to make all laws which shall be necessary and proper for carrying into execution the foregoing powers and all other powers vested by this Constitution in the government of the United States or in any department or officer thereof.' The loose construction of the document, allowing a liberal use of these implied powers, and consequently favoring a strong central government, was advocated by Hamilton and the Federalist Party. Those anti-Federalists like Jefferson, who wished the state governments to retain power, believed in a strict or limited interpretation of the implied powers. Marshall's judicial interpretations, from the point of view of loose construction, did much to establish the principle of elaborating and expanding federal regulation, and since his time the Supreme Court has enjoyed a great growth of power by declaring certain legislation unconstitutional. The struggle between strict and loose constructionists was most pronounced during the mid-19th century conflict over state rights.

The original seven articles of the Con-

stitution are concerned respectively with the legislative, executive, and judicial branches of the government; the regulation of state and territorial governments; the method of amendment; the validity of previous debts and engagements; and the supreme authority of the Constitution, as well as the method of ratification. The first ten amendments are generally known as the Bill of Rights (q.v.). Subsequent amendments are the Eleventh, denying the judicial power of the U.S. in suits brought against any of the states by citizens of other states or nations; the Twelfth, concerning the election of Presidents and Vice Presidents; the Thirteenth, abolishing slavery; the Fourteenth (q.v.); the Fifteenth, prohibiting the denial of the franchise 'on account of race, color, or previous condition of servitude'; the Sixteenth, authorizing an income tax; the Seventeenth, concerning the popular election of senators; the Eighteenth (q.v.); the Nineteenth, giving the franchise to women; the Twentieth, setting the dates for presidential inaugurations and the convening of Congress, and providing for the contingency of a President's death in office; and the Twenty-first, repealing the Eighteenth.

Constitutional Convention, see *Federal Constitutional Convention.*

Constitutional Courant, The (Sept. 21, 1765), newspaper issued by James Parker to attack the Stamp Act, appeared in a single issue published at three separate places. It contained three articles and reproduced the *Pennsylvania Gazette* cartoon that represented a snake, symbolizing the colonies, divided into eight parts, and bearing the motto 'Join or die.'

Constitutional Union Party, composed of former Whigs, Know-Nothings, and local Southern parties, prevailed in Georgia for several years before it became a national organization (1860). It recognized no political principle except the Constitution and the union of the states. The Civil War ended this unrealistic party.

Contentment, poem by Holmes (q.v.).

Continent, The, see *Tourgée, A.W.*

Continental Army, regular American army in the Revolutionary War, as distinguished from militia and guerilla companies. Created in June 1775, it was enlisted and paid by the second Continental Congress, with Washington as commander-in-chief.

Continental Association, organized (1774) by R.H.Lee, as an extension of his Westmoreland Association, to oppose the importation, exportation, or consumption of English goods. Fostered by the Continental Congress, it was an important step in the direction of a federal union.

Continental Congress, legislative and executive body of the U.S., which waged the Revolutionary War and constituted the federal government until the adoption of the Constitution. The first Continental Congress, with delegates from all colonies except Georgia, appointed by the Committees of Correspondence, convened (Sept.–Oct. 1774) to express colonial grievances against the mother country, and formed the Continental Association. The second Continental Congress convened in May 1775, organized the Continental army with Washington as commander-in-chief (June 1775), drew up the Declaration of Independence (July 4, 1776), sent diplomatic representatives abroad, adopted the Articles of Confederation (1778), and continued to govern the U.S. under the Articles, after their ratification (1781). Although the Congress of the Confederation passed the Ordinance of 1787 and some other significant legislation, it was ineffective as compared with the regular U.S. Congress, which succeeded it (1789). Dependent upon the state governments for its funds and the execution of its decrees, it did little more than reconcile various state policies. The *Journals of the Continental Congress* were first collected in 34 volumes (1904–37).

Continental Currency, paper money, designed by Paul Revere, was issued by the second Continental Congress. When it depreciated to the scale of 40 to 1, it became obvious that it was backed by printing presses rather than by gold or silver, hence the phrase, 'not worth a Continental.'

Contrast, The, social comedy by Royall Tyler (q.v.), produced in 1787 and published in 1790.

Maria is affianced by her American father, Van Rough, to wealthy Billy Dimple, Anglomaniac disciple of Chesterfield. Dimple meanwhile flirts with the coquettes, Letitia and Charlotte. The latter's brother, Colonel Manly, a serious-minded Revolutionary officer, loves Maria,

but honorably forswears her. Losing his fortune by gambling, Dimple decides to break with Maria and marry the wealthy Letitia. When Van Rough discovers Dimple's duplicity and the noble filial sentiment of his daughter, who really loves Manly, he favors the officer's suit. Finally Dimple is foiled by the disclosure that he is simultaneously courting both Letitia and Charlotte, and Manly and Maria are united. The subplot is concerned with Jonathan, Manly's servant, whose homespun shrewdness is contrasted with the wiliness of the popinjay Jessamy, servant of Dimple. Jessamy educates Jonathan in the ways of the world and teaches him to court the maid Jenny, hoping to turn her affections toward himself by the Yankee's annoying blunders. Jenny, learning of the scheme, rejects both of them.

Convention of 1787, see *Federal Constitutional Convention.*

CONVERSE, Frederick S[hepherd] (1871–1940), Massachusetts composer and teacher at Harvard and the New England Conservatory of Music. He composed operas and choral music, and symphonic music, which includes *The Mystic Trumpeter* (1905), a fantasy based on Whitman's poem; three symphonies; *California* (1927), a tone poem; and *Flivver Ten Million,* a humorous suite which satirizes industrial America.

CONWAY, Moncure Daniel (1832–1907), Massachusetts Unitarian clergyman and liberal leader, whose more than 70 books include biographies of Emerson, Carlyle, and Hawthorne; novels; studies of Oriental religions and demonology; and pamphlets which, like his *Autobiography* (1904), show his very individual mind and extreme changes of opinion. *Pine and Palm* (1887) is a novel about the North and South prior to the Civil War, as seen by Harvard friends from the two sections. Conway was editor of the Cincinnati *Dial* (q.v.,1860). He edited *The Writings of Thomas Paine* (1894–6), of whom he also wrote a biography (1892).

Conway Cabal, during the Revolutionary War, was an alleged plot to replace Washington by General Horatio Gates, in the command of the Continental army. There was a movement in favor of Gates, who had been victorious at Saratoga while Washington had been defeated at Brandywine and Germantown, and a misunderstanding involving a letter by General Thomas Conway temporarily caused accusations of treason against Gates, who was later cleared. The intrigue figures in the plot of *Valley Forge.*

CONWELL, Russell Herman (1843–1925), Philadelphia Baptist minister, founded Temple University (1888) and was its first president. His book, *Acres of Diamonds* (1888), was delivered thousands of times as a lecture, and set forth his gospel of the reconciliation of orthodox Christianity with the dominant capitalist spirit, stressing individual initiative and the Christian responsibility of the wealthy class to society.

COOK, Ebenezer (*fl.*1708), author of the satirical poem, *The Sot-Weed Factor* (q.v.,1708), of whom nothing definite is known. According to the poem, he was an Englishman who visited Maryland, but he is now considered to have been an American. *Sotweed Redivivus* (1730), a serious verse treatise on the overproduction of tobacco, is probably by him, and elegies on Nicholas Lowe and William Lock bear Cook's name, with the title 'Laureat,' which may have been granted by Lord Baltimore. To Cook is also attributed 'The History of Colonel Nathaniel Bacon's Rebellion,' a burlesque poem in the collection *The Maryland Muse* (1731), thought to be based on the Burwell Papers.

COOK, Frederick Albert (1865–1940), New York physician and explorer, accompanied Peary (q.v.) to the Arctic in 1891, and participated in other expeditions in the Antarctic, Greenland, Alaska, India, and Borneo. In 1908 he led an Arctic expedition, which he asserted reached the North Pole. Peary's counter claim of being the first to reach the Pole in 1909 aroused a bitter controversy which has not yet been satisfactorily settled, although the honors have generally gone to Peary.

COOK, George Cram (1873–1924), founder and leader of the Provincetown Players (q.v.). Despite the success of this theater, he felt his creative impulses to be frustrated, and turned to a new outlet by making a pilgrimage to Greece. Here he was accepted as a seer, and is said to be honored in current legends and songs of the peasants. *The Road to the Temple* (1926) is a romantic biography of Cook

by his third wife, Susan Glaspell, with whom he collaborated in writing the one-act plays, *Suppressed Desires* (1914) and *Tickless Time* (1918). His own books include: *Evolution and the Superman* (1906); *The Chasm* (1911); and *Battle-Hymn of the Workers* (1912).

COOKE, Jay (1821–1905), born in Ohio, moved to St.Louis and then to Philadelphia, where he entered the banking business, and in 1861 founded Jay Cooke and Company. His firm became one of the leading banking houses of the U.S., and, through his friendship with Salmon P. Chase, Lincoln's secretary of the treasury, capitalized on the government's need of funds during the Civil War. Jay Cooke and Company, as 'fiscal agent' of the Treasury, is known as the 'financier of the Civil War.' After Chase's resignation, his successors continued to deal with Cooke, who retained his prominence in U.S. finance until his overly ambitious scheme for a railroad from Duluth to Tacoma brought him to disaster. His firm's suspension of business (Sept. 18, 1873) precipitated one of the worst financial panics in U.S. history. He later recovered some of his wealth and prestige by mining and other speculations in the West.

COOKE, John Esten (1830–86), Virginia author, brother of Philip Pendleton Cooke. His reputation mainly derives from his romances of colonial Virginia, *Leather Stocking and Silk* (q.v.,1854), *The Virginia Comedians* (q.v.,1854), and *Henry St.John, Gentleman* (q.v.,1859). He served in the Confederate army throughout the Civil War, and in the intervals of campaigning wrote a *Life of Stonewall Jackson* (1863). The war also prompted his military biography of Lee (1871), two volumes of essays on military subjects, and a series of romances, including *Surry of Eagle's Nest* (1866), *Hilt to Hilt* (1869), and *Mohun* (1869), in which the Civil War is seen through the eyes of Surry, a fictitious aide of Stonewall Jackson. *The Heir of Gaymount* (1870), a novel pleading for agrarianism as the salvation of the post-bellum South, also has a basis in Cooke's war experiences, although its story of buried treasure and a cryptogram are reminiscent of 'The Gold-Bug.' Other romances, showing Cooke's indebtedness to Irving, certain English novelists, and most of all to Cooper, include: *Fairfax* (1868), a romantic account of Washington's youth, *Her Majesty the Queen* (1873), a story of the Cavaliers; *Canolles* (1877), a romance of Virginia during the Revolution; *Fanchette* (1883), a novel of contemporary Washington life; and *My Lady Pokahontas* (q.v.,1885). All of his work exhibits an idealization of the past, sentimentality, and dependence upon literary conventions of the day; his principal aim, however, was to entertain, and in this he was eminently successful.

Philip Pendleton Cooke (1816–50), his brother, was also an author, best known for his poem, 'Florence Vane,' published in *Burton's Gentleman's Magazine* (1840), which was long a parlor favorite in the then popular sentimental vein. His only volume of poetry, *Froissart's Ballads* (1847), contains versified transcripts from the French chronicler. Cooke contributed several prose romances to the *Southern Literary Messenger*, but these have not been reprinted.

COOKE, Philip St.George (1809–95), uncle of J.E.Cooke and Philip P. Cooke, was a military leader in the West and in the Mexican War, and served on the Union side in the Civil War, although others of his family were prominent in the Confederate army. He became a major general (1865). His early experiences form the basis of *Scenes and Adventures in the Army* (1857) and *Conquest of New Mexico and California* (1878).

COOKE, Rose Terry (1827–92), Connecticut short-story writer and poet, whose best tales, collected in *Root-Bound* (1885), *Somebody's Neighbors* (1881), *The Sphinx's Children* (1886), and *Huckleberries Gathered from New England Hills* (q.v.,1891), are homely incidents of New England rural life, told in a simple, spontaneous, humorous manner. In her 50 years of writing, one may trace the development of the short story in America, from unlocalized, leisurely, sentimental tales to simple histories of commonplace people set in a real locale.

Cool Tombs, free verse poem by Carl Sandburg (q.v.), written in 1915 and collected in *Cornhuskers* (1918). Meditating upon death's negation of human ambition and turmoil, the poet concludes:

> . . . tell me if the lovers are losers . . . tell me if any get more than the lovers . . . in the dust . . . in the cool tombs.

COOLBRITH, Ina Donna (1842–1928), California poet laureate, mainly identified with San Francisco, where she helped Bret Harte edit the *Overland Monthly* and was associated with the literary group which also included Clemens, C.W.Stoddard and Joaquin Miller. Her simple lyric poems were published in *A Perfect Day* (1881), *The Singer of the Sea* (1894), and *Songs from the Golden Gate* (1895).

COOLIDGE, Archibald Cary (1866–1928), professor of history at Harvard, director of its library, and editor of *Foreign Affairs* (1922–7), was the author of *The United States as a World Power* (1908), *Origins of the Triple Alliance* (1917), and *Ten Years of War and Peace* (1927).

COOLIDGE, Calvin (1872–1933), 30th President of the U.S. (1923–9), was born in Vermont, graduated from Amherst (1895), and practiced law in Massachusetts, where he had a long political career culminating in his governorship (1919–20). He became known nationally for his suppression of the Boston police strike (1919). Elected Vice President under Harding, he succeeded to the chief magistracy on the latter's death, and was re-elected the following year. His administration was marked by a cautious *laissez-faire* attitude in domestic affairs, an isolationist policy in relation to Europe, and an imperialist policy in Latin America. Because of the general business prosperity of the period, which made possible governmental economies, Coolidge was popular in 1928, and might have been re-elected except that he did not 'choose to run.' During his retirement he wrote an autobiography.

COOLIDGE, Dane (1873–1940), Massachusetts-born novelist and naturalist, after graduation from Stanford (1898), became a field collector of animals, birds and reptiles in the western U.S. and elsewhere for various institutions, and lived most of his life in California where he wrote some 50 books. Among his novels concerned with the West are: *Hidden Water* (1910), *The Fighting Fool* (1918), *The Fighting Danites* (1925), and *Hell's Hip Pocket* (1938).

COOPER, Frank, pseudonym of Simms (q.v.).

COOPER, James Fenimore (1789–1851) was born at Burlington, New Jersey, the son of William Cooper (q.v.), who in 1790 removed his family to Otsego Hall, a manorial estate at Cooperstown on Otsego Lake, 62 miles west of Albany, N.Y. Educated at the local school and in Albany, Cooper went to Yale, from which he was dismissed (1805). During the next five years he served at sea as a foremast hand, was a midshipman in the navy (1808–11), and left to marry and settle as a country gentleman at Mamaroneck. He moved to Cooperstown (1814), but in 1817 moved again to a farm at Scarsdale. At 30 he was suddenly plunged into a literary career, when his wife challenged his claim that he could write a better book than the English novel he was reading to her. The result was *Precaution* (1820), a conventional novel of manners in genteel English society. His second book, *The Spy* (q.v.,1821), was an immediate success and established Cooper's typical attitude toward plot and characterization, being significant for its use of the American scene as the background of a romance. In *The Pioneers* (q.v.,1823) he began his series of 'Leather-Stocking Tales' (q.v.), but in his rapid quest for unusual subjects he turned to the sea in *The Pilot* (q.v.,1823), intending to prove that a sailor could write a better novel than the landsman Scott had done in *The Pirate* (1822). Established as a leading American author, he moved to New York City, where he founded the Bread and Cheese Club (q.v.). To further his position as the outstanding American novelist, he planned to write 13 national romances, one for each of the original states, but wrote only *Lionel Lincoln* (q.v.,1825), dealing with Revolutionary Boston. Encouraged by the success of *The Pioneers* and the growing interest in the clash between savagery and civilization on the frontier, he continued his history of the pioneer scout Natty Bumppo in *The Last of the Mohicans* (q.v.,1826) and *The Prairie* (q.v., 1827). While traveling abroad (1826–33), nominally as U.S. consul at Lyons, he published *The Red Rover* (q.v.,1827), *The Wept of Wish-ton-Wish* (q.v.,1829), and *The Water-Witch* (q.v.,1830), romances about America and life on American ships. In addition, he wrote *The Bravo* (q.v., 1831), *The Heidenmauer* (q.v.,1832), and *The Headsman* (q.v.,1833), a trilogy intended to dispel the glamor of feudalism and to show its decline before the rise of democratic liberalism. *A Letter . . . to General Lafayette* (1831) champions re-

publics against monarchies, and *Notions of the Americans* (1828) is an answer to English critics of U.S. society and government. Upon his return, Cooper in turn was repelled by the absence of what he considered to be public and private virtue, the abuses of democracy, and the failure to perceive the best elements of the life he had conjured up in his novels. *A Letter to His Countrymen* (1834), petulantly expressing his conservatism, was followed by his satire, *The Monikins* (q.v.,1836), and four volumes of *Gleanings in Europe* (1837–8), containing brilliant descriptions and pungent social criticism. *The American Democrat* (q.v.,1838), a full statement of his aristocratic social ideals, was followed by *Homeward Bound* (q.v.,1838) and *Home As Found* (q.v.,1838), fictional statements of these themes. During the ensuing years, the press attacked his books and personal character, and he brought suits for libel against various Whig papers, arguing his own cases so successfully that he was regularly victorious. He returned to live at Cooperstown, where his favorite companion and amanuensis for the rest of his life was his daughter Susan, whose books describe their home. Here he carried his war with the press over to a war with the people concerning property rights, in which, although he was consistently vindicated, he stood alone and unpopular. Meanwhile he wrote a scholarly *History of the Navy* (1839), whose simplicity and gusto were overlooked in a controversy centering on his treatment of the Battle of Lake Erie. With the publication of *The Pathfinder* (q.v.,1840) and *The Deerslayer* (q.v.,1841) he completed the epical Leather-Stocking series, and in a burst of creative energy wrote 16 works of fiction, a great amount of controversial literature, and some scholarly and factual works. *Mercedes of Castile* (1840) deals with the first voyage of Columbus; *The Two Admirals* (1842) is a story of the British navy before the Revolutionary War; and *Wing-and-Wing* (q.v.,1842) is concerned with a French privateer in the Mediterranean. *Ned Myers* (1843) is the fictional biography of a former shipmate, and the *Lives of Distinguished American Naval Officers* (1846) supplements the *History of the Navy*. *Afloat and Ashore* (q.v.,1844) and its sequel *Miles Wallingford* (q.v.,1844) seem to present a self-portrait of Cooper. *Wyandotté* (1843) deals with the outbreak of the Revolution in New York; *Le Mouchoir* (1843), republished as the *Autobiography of a Pocket-Handkerchief*, is a short romance of New York society and class distinctions; *The Crater* (1848) is a Utopian social allegory; and *Jack Tier* (1848), *The Oak Openings* (q.v.,1848), and *The Sea Lions* (1848) are all swift-moving historical romances. Cooper's last novel, *The Ways of the Hour* (1850), concerned with the perversion of social justice, is a forerunner of the modern mystery novel. Another late work is an unpublished comedy, *Upside Down, or Philosophy in Petticoats*, produced in New York. Of the novels written after 1840, the most important are those in the trilogy known as the Littlepage Manuscripts (q.v.): *Satanstoe* (q.v.,1845), *The Chainbearer* (q.v.,1845), and *The Redskins* (q.v.,1846), tracing the growing difficulties between propertied and propertyless classes in New York. Cooper's achievement, although uneven and the result of brilliant improvisation rather than a deeply considered artistry, is thus shown to be sustained almost to the close of a hectic, crowded career. His world-wide fame attests his power of invention, for his novels, after their didactic significance is past, are popular principally for their variety of dramatic incident and vivid depiction of romantic backgrounds. Perhaps for this reason, the historical novels of manners, of which the finest example is *Satanstoe*, have come to be neglected by a public accustomed to seek entertainment and vicarious adventure in Cooper. Recent critical studies tend to look beyond this phase of his work to the writing that expresses his conservative attitude toward 19th-century society in the U.S. and Europe, in lively portrayals of historical and contemporary scenes.

COOPER, Myles (1735–85), English-born Anglican clergyman, came to America (1762), where he was president of King's College (1763–75). His Loyalist writings include *The American Querist* and *A Friendly Address to All Reasonable Americans* (1774), which urged moderation on the part of the patriots, and became a favorite target for rebel replies. He fled to England (1775).

COOPER, Peter (1791–1883), New York inventor, financier, and philanthropist, designed and built the first steam locomotive, *Tom Thumb* (1830), rolled the first structural steel, and invented a cloth-

shearing machine. He founded Cooper Union (q.v.) and circulated millions of documents against the growing financial hierarchy of his time. In *Ideas for a Science of Good Government* (1883) he advocates a national monetary system based on legal tender, a protective tariff, and an effective civil service.

COOPER, Susan Fenimore (1813–94), daughter of J.F.Cooper (q.v.), to whose works she added biographical prefaces. She was the author of *Rural Hours* (1850), journal jottings on nature and life at Cooperstown, and *William West Skiles: A Sketch of Missionary Life* (1890).

COOPER, Thomas (1759–1839), born in England and educated at Oxford, emigrated to Pennsylvania (1794) because of disputes arising from his sympathy with the French Revolution. Allying himself with the Jeffersonian opponents of the Federalist administration, he wrote many pamphlets and a volume of *Political Essays* (1799). After a brief political career, he became a professor of chemistry and then president of South Carolina College (1820–33). An early advocate of nullification and champion of free trade, he wrote many controversial pamphlets, showing his hostility to tyranny, whether clerical, political, or legal, and was the author of scholarly works on law and science.

COOPER, William (1754–1809), father of J.F.Cooper (q.v.), settled on the shores of Otsego Lake in central New York (1790) and founded the town which bears his name. At one time his land holdings aggregated more than 750,000 acres, and he prospered as a land agent. He adopted a policy of instalment payments for his tenants, and kept his land free of the 'Anti-Rent Wars' (q.v.). A stanch Federalist, he was a member of Congress (1795–7, 1799–1801), and often left his magnificent home to show his prowess as a wrestler in some neighboring shanty. He died as the result of a blow struck by a political opponent. His son's *Chronicles of Cooperstown* (1838) is an account of his settlement, and he himself vigorously describes it in *A Guide in the Wilderness* (1810).

Cooper Union (Cooper Institute), free school for adults founded at New York City (1859) by Peter Cooper, emphasizes education in the sciences and engineering, but is also famous for courses in oratory and debating. Among the important speeches delivered in its auditorium was Lincoln's first address in the East (Feb. 27, 1860) as a potential presidential candidate, when he spoke against the extension of slavery in the territories.

COPELAND, Charles Townsend (1860–), born in Maine, after graduation from Harvard (1882) became a professor of English literature there (1893) and during his long period of teaching influenced many later authors, including Cowley, John Reed, Dos Passos, and Hillyer. His wit and his beautiful reading voice charmed generations of students. He has edited an anthology, *The Copeland Reader* (1926) and other works.

COPLEY, John Singleton (1738?–1815), Boston portrait painter, known for his attention to detail and uncompromising truth in depicting his sitters. He went to England (1774), and his Tory leanings kept him there for the rest of his life except for a year in Italy, where he studied the works of the old masters. In England he executed successful portraits and large historical canvases, showing a greater facility, grace, and technical skill than in the firmer and more honest New England portraits on which his reputation rests.

Copperheads, epithet applied during the Civil War to Northern sympathizers with the Confederacy, or to the Peace Democrats, who opposed the waging of the war. The name is derived from that of the deadly snake that gives no warning before it discharges its venom. In earlier times, the name was applied to Indians and to the Dutch colonists. The most prominent of the Peace Democrats was C.L.Vallandigham (q.v.), Ohio politician who in 1864 became president of the Knights of the Golden Circle, a secret society of Copperheads, powerful in the Middle West until the end of that year. This organization, which had originated in the South during the 1850's, was also known as the Order of American Knights and the Sons of Liberty. Harold Frederic's *The Copperhead* (1893) is a story of a New York farmer who opposes Abolitionism.

COPWAY, George (1818–*c.*1863), Ojibway chief, became a Wesleyan missionary, and wrote several volumes of reminiscences and Indian history, including *Life, History, and Travels* (1847), *Traditional History of the Ojibway Nation* (1850), and a poem, *The Ojibway Conquest* (1850). His

style is said to be 'an amalgam of Washington Irving, St.Luke, and elements derived from Methodist exhorters.'

Coquette, The, epistolary novel by Hannah Foster (q.v.), anonymously published in 1797. The story, suggested by the life of the author's distant relative, Elizabeth Whitman, concerns the love of Eliza Wharton for Pierpont Edwards, her seduction, their elopement, and her death in childbirth. The seducer of Miss Whitman has never been identified, and Mrs. Foster has no justification for representing him as the son of Jonathan Edwards. The novel is conventionally moral, but has less of the sensationalism and sentimentalism that marked its predecessors, and is superior in character portrayal.

CORBETT, James J[ohn] (1866–1933), heavyweight boxing champion of the world after his defeat of John L. Sullivan (1892), until he in turn lost to Fitzsimmons (1897). Because he popularized the ethical pugilistic style of the Marquis of Queensberry, he was called 'Gentleman Jim.'

CORBIN, Alice, see *Henderson, Alice.*

COREY, Giles (*d.*1692), Salem resident, was pressed to death for witchcraft when his wife was hanged for the same crime. An account of this folk hero appears in Calef's *More Wonders of the Invisible World*, and he is the subject of the second of Longfellow's *New England Tragedies* and of a play by Mary Wilkins Freeman.

COREY, Lewis (1894–), Marxist critic, whose books include: *The House of Morgan: A Social Biography of the Masters of Money* (1930); *The Decline of American Capitalism* (1934); and *The Crisis of the Middle Class* (1935), which contended that the current depression indicated an imminent change that would end in a proletarian dictatorship.

Corey, Tom, character in *The Rise of Silas Lapham* (q.v.).

CORNELL, Katharine (1898–), actress who made her debut with the Washington Square Players (q.v.), and whose later successes have included leading roles in *Candida, The Green Hat, The Age of Innocence, Saint Joan, The Wingless Victory, The Barretts of Wimpole Street,* and *Alien Corn.*

Cornell University, coeducational institution founded (1865) by Ezra Cornell at Ithaca, New York, and organized by Andrew D. White (q.v.), its first president. It is noted as a liberal nonsectarian college, and for the activities in experimental farming of the affiliated state college of agriculture. Among Cornell professors have been Bayard Taylor (1870–77) and C.E.Hughes (1891–3), and noted graduates are D.S.Jordan (M.S.,1872), G.J. Nathan (1904), H.W.Van Loon (1905), Kenneth Roberts (1908), and Pearl Buck (M.A.,1926).

Cornhuskers, poems by Carl Sandburg (q.v.).

CORNWALLIS, Charles Cornwallis (1738–1805), British marquess and general in the American Revolution, was victorious at Brandywine (1777) and defeated Gates at Camden (1780), but was forced to surrender to Washington and Lafayette at Yorktown (1781), virtually the last action of the war.

CORONADO, Francisco Vásquez de (*c.*1500–54), Spanish explorer, came to Mexico (1535), was appointed governor of Nueva Galicia (1538), and in 1540–42 commanded an expedition in search of the fabled Seven Cities of Cibola. One of his lieutenants, Cárdenas, led a group that discovered the Grand Canyon, and another, Alarcon, explored the Gulf of California and the Colorado River, while Coronado himself captured the Zuñi Indian settlements in New Mexico, visited Arizona and the Rio Grande country, and is believed to have crossed the Texas Panhandle to Oklahoma and Kansas. His failure to discover the supposed wealthy civilization in the North led to the loss of his governorship and to his personal discredit and early death.

CORTÉS, Hernando (1485–1547), Spanish conquistador, arrived in Hispaniola in 1504, and served with Velázquez in the conquest of Cuba (1511). In 1519 he sailed with 10 vessels, 600 foot soldiers, 18 horses, and some artillery, to conquer Mexico. During the ensuing years he had not only to fight the Indians, but also to oppose the forces sent against him by the hostile Velázquez. Although well received by Montezuma, over whom he exerted great influence, Cortés and his men were driven from the Aztec capital in bloody confusion on the *Noche triste* (July 1, 1520) by Montezuma's successor. The following year, aided by Indian allies, Cortés captured the city, broke the power of the

Aztecs, and through his expeditions and those of his lieutenants extended his conquests in Central America and as far as Lower California. He was honored during a visit to the Spanish court (1528–30), but on returning to Mexico was bested in the struggle for power by his rival, the viceroy Mendoza. He died in obscurity in Spain. His five letters on the conquest, to Charles V, have been published in English (1908). The eyewitness account of Bernal Díaz (q.v.) has served as the source of such works as Prescott's *Conquest of Mexico* and MacLeish's *Conquistador.*

CORYELL, J.R., see *Nick Carter.*

Cosmopolitan (1886–), monthly magazine founded at Rochester, New York, as a conservative journal for family reading. It was moved to New York City (1887), and under the editorship of John B. Walker (1889–1905), who had such assistants as Howells and A.S.Hardy, it entered into competition with *McClure's* and *Munsey's.* Among its contributors at this time were Clemens, Henry James, Kipling, and Conan Doyle. Articles on popular education led to the founding of Cosmopolitan University (1897), an outstanding correspondence school for a few years. After the turn of the century, the *Cosmopolitan* entered the muckraking movement, and later it turned to featuring popular fiction and noncontroversial articles on the drama and notable personalities. This policy has continued since its purchase by Hearst (1925).

COSTANSÓ, Miguel (*fl.*1769–1811), Spanish cartographer and army engineer, accompanied Portolá to California (1769–70). His account of the terrible 110-day voyage from Lower California to San Diego is contained in his *Diario histórico* . . . (1770, translated 1901).

COTTON, John (1584–1652), as dean of Emmanuel College, Cambridge, became interested in Puritanism and the Massachusetts Bay Colony. Arriving in New England (1633), he became the religious leader of the colony, and was instrumental in the banishment of Anne Hutchinson. He wrote many pamphlets, treatises on the church, and a catechism for children, *Milk for Babes, Drawn out of the Breasts of Both Testaments* (1646). *The Keyes of the Kingdom of Heaven* (1644) was the standard Congregational guide in New England until the publication of the Cambridge Platform (1648). *The Way of the Churches of Christ in New England* (1645) and *The Way of the Congregational Churches Cleared* (1648) tended to identify the New England church with the aristocratic aspects of Calvinism. Cotton also wrote a second volume of *A Survey of the Summe of Church-Discipline* (1648), continuing the work of Thomas Hooker (q.v.). His autocratic views on civil and religious government provoked Roger Williams to write *The Bloudy Tenent of Persecution* (q.v.,1644), which was answered by Cotton's *The Bloudy Tenent Washed and Made White in the Bloud of the Lamb* (1647). He was the father-in-law of Increase Mather.

COTTON of Acquia Creek, see *Burwell Papers.*

Cotton Boll, The, ode by Timrod (q.v.), published in his *Poems* (1873). Written during the Civil War, it embodies the author's observations on the 'small sphere' of a single boll of cotton, which symbolizes the cotton fields of the South in their 'soft white fibres,'

> That, with their gossamer bands,
> Unite, like love, the sea-divided lands

Cotton Whigs, see *Whig Party.*

Council for New England, see *Gorges.*

Councils of Safety, see *Committees of Safety.*

Count Frontenac and New France under Louis XIV, history by Parkman (q.v.).

Count Julian, romance by Simms (q.v.).

Country Doctor, A, novel by Sarah Orne Jewett (q.v.).

Country of the Pointed Firs, The, local-color sketches by Sarah Orne Jewett (q.v.), published in 1896.

A woman who spends her summers in the isolated seaport town of Dunnet, Maine, describes the region in these portraits and anecdotes. She lives as a boarder with kindly Mrs.Almira Todd, through whose gossip she comes to know the lives and idiosyncrasies of the people. On a visit to Green Island, she meets Mrs.Todd's charming old mother, Mrs. Blackett, and her shy brother, William. Other acquaintances are aged Captain Littlepage, who tells a fantastic story of discovering Purgatory in the Arctic; Abby

Martin, the 'Queen's Twin,' born in the same hour as Victoria, who devotes herself to finding other resemblances in their lives; old Mrs.Fosdick, 'the best hand in the world to make a visit,' who tells of her childhood on her father's ship; and the gentle shepherdess, Esther Hight, who, though courted by William Blackett for 40 years, continues to live with her invalid mother. At the annual Bowden family reunion, Mrs.Todd tells of her cousin, 'Poor Joanna,' who became a hermit on Shell-Heap Island because she was 'crossed in love.' The volume concludes with the death of old Mrs.Hight and the happy marriage of William and Esther.

Country People, novel by Ruth Suckow (q.v.).

Couranteers, see *Hell-Fire Club.*

COURNOS, JOHN (1881–), born in Russia, has lived in the U.S. since 1891, except for a period in England (1912–30). His experiences provided the background for his novels of immigrant life, *The Mask* (1919) and *The Wall* (1921). Later novels include *Babel* (1922); *The New Candide* (1924), satirizing American foibles; *Miranda Masters* (1926); *O'Flaherty the Great* (1927); and *Wandering Women* (1930), set in Connecticut. *Sport of Gods* (1925) is a play based on an episode in *Babel.* Cournos has also written *A Modern Plutarch* (1928), biographical sketches, and his *Autobiography* (1935), as well as many translations from the Russian.

Courtin', The, dialect verse narrative by Lowell (q.v.), published in *The Biglow Papers.*

Courtship of Miles Standish, The, narrative poem in unrimed English hexameters by Longfellow (q.v.), published in 1858. The central theme is apocryphal, although material is drawn from early New England histories and from traditional information concerning John Alden.

Miles Standish, captain of the Plymouth colony, calls upon his better-educated friend, John Alden, to woo the maid Priscilla for him. Alden, also in love with the girl, yields to the duty of friendship and blurts out Standish's message, at which Priscilla makes her famous arch inquiry, 'Why don't you speak for yourself, John?' Infuriated by Alden's failure, which he attributes to a betrayal of trust, Standish leaves on an Indian campaign without bidding farewell to his friend. During his absence, Alden and Priscilla are constantly together, and, receiving news of his death, plan to marry. The news proves to be false, Standish returns to attend the wedding and beg forgiveness for his anger, and the three are reunited as friends.

Covenant Theology (or Federal Theology), elaboration of the doctrines of Calvinism (q.v.), which became as important in New England as the original teaching. Developed in the writings of the English Puritans William Perkins and William Ames, and in those of early New England ministers, the Covenant Theology held that God promised Adam and his posterity eternal life, in return for obedience to moral law. After Adam broke this covenant of grace, a new one was made with Abraham, indicating that men must still have reason and the ability to struggle toward moral perfection. Although this doctrine does not deny that God rejects or elects souls according to His pleasure, it softens the Calvinist statement of predestination by substituting for the divine decree a juridical relationship between man and God. Punishment for sin is considered not an inherent pollution but a judicial sentence of expulsion. Having stood as the agent, or 'federal' head of the race, Adam broke a covenant, and punishment was imputed to his constituents as a legal responsibility. During the Great Awakening, Jonathan Edwards repudiated the Covenant Theology to return to orthodox Calvinism.

Coverdale, MILES, character in *The Blithedale Romance* (q.v.).

Covered wagon, large freight-carrying vehicle, which originated in the Conestoga wagon of colonial Pennsylvania. This original type had a raised bed at either end to prevent spilling of contents. Trains of covered wagons, or prairie schooners, were used to cross the plains during the westward migrations of the 19th century. The covered wagon differed from the Conestoga wagon in having an ordinary wagon-box, but resembled it in having a curved canvas cover that rose up and out at each end, with a poke-bonnet effect.

Cowboy, name given during the Revolution to lawless marauders who pillaged neutral territory, and were supposedly favorable to the English. Those who favored the rebels were known as Skinners. The term cowboy has since been applied,

particularly in the West, to cattle herders, and there are distinctive cowboy ballads and tall tales (qq.v.). (See *Plains region* and *Southwest.*)

COWL, JANE (1887–), actress, early appeared in Belasco productions such as *The Music Master*, *Rose of the Rancho*, and *The Easiest Way*. She has since been noted for her interpretations of Juliet and Cleopatra, and has had leading roles in *The Road to Rome* and other plays.

COWLEY, MALCOLM (1898–), born in Pennsylvania, served in the World War, returned to graduate from Harvard (1920), and later became an expatriate in France. *Blue Juniata* (1929) is a semi-autobiographical poem tracing his mental and emotional development during this period, to his final facing of the American scene. Since 1930 he has been an editor of *The New Republic*, and his writings are concerned with the study of social and intellectual forces in contemporary society. *Exile's Return: A Narrative of Ideas* (1934), partly autobiographical, analyzes the mind of the post-war generation. Cowley is also known as a translator of many French books, and has edited *After the Genteel Tradition: American Writers Since 1910* (1937).

Cowperwood, FRANK, central figure in *The Financier* and *The Titan* (qq.v.).

COX, PALMER (1840–1924), author and illustrator of books for children, was born in Quebec, and came to the U.S. in 1876. Beginning with *The Brownies: Their Book* (1887), he published a long series of verse and pictorial treatments of this race of good-natured elves.

COX, WILLIAM (*d.*1851), English author, lived for a time in New York City, where he was a frequent contributor to the *New-York Mirror*. A selection of his light satirical tales was published anonymously by T.S.Fay as *Crayon Sketches* (1833).

Coxey's Army, the most publicized of many bands of unemployed men who marched to Washington, D.C. (1894), following the Panic of 1893, to present to Congress a 'petition in boots' for relief measures. Although the mission of the Army's leader, Jacob Sechler Coxey (1854–), was unsuccessful, he led another group to Washington in 1914, and was prominent in further agitation during the depression after 1929.

COZZENS, FREDERICK SWARTWOUT (1818–69), under the pseudonym Richard Hayward contributed burlesques and humorous articles to *The Knickerbocker Magazine* and other periodicals. These were collected in *The Sparrowgrass Papers* (1855), *The Sayings of Dr.Bushwhacker and Other Learned Men* (1867), and *Sayings, Wise and Otherwise* (1880).

COZZENS, JAMES GOULD (1903–), Chicago-born novelist, whose books include: *Confusion* (1924), the story of a beautiful French girl who is shown to be a victim of over-education; *Cock Pit* (1928), set on a Cuban sugar plantation; *The Son of Perdition* (1929), also set in Cuba, concerned with the despotic character of an American company official; *S.S.San Pedro* (1931), based on the tragic end of the *Vestris; The Last Adam* (1933), published in England as *A Cure of Flesh*, the story of a doctor in a Connecticut town; *Castaway* (1934), a realistic fantasy set in New York after an imaginary disaster, when the only surviving man finds himself in a great department store; *Men and Brethren* (1936), a character study of a liberal clergyman; and *Ask Me Tomorrow* (1940).

CRABTREE, LOTTA (1847–1924), New York-born actress, was a popular child star in California mining camps, where she acted in melodramas especially written for her. After successful appearances in New York, she retired in 1891.

Cracker, name applied to one of the class of poor white inhabitants of the backwoods of Georgia and Florida, supposedly because their chief article of diet is cracked corn. The Georgia cracker has appeared frequently in fiction, from A.B.Longstreet to Erskine Caldwell.

CRADDOCK, CHARLES EGBERT, pseudonym of Mary N. Murfree (q.v.).

Cradle of Liberty, see *Faneuil Hall.*

Cradle Will Rock, The, proletarian music-drama by Marc Blitzstein (q.v.).

CRAFTS, WILLIAM (1787–1826), South Carolina lawyer and orator, contributed essays, poems, and dramatic criticism to the Charleston *Courier*. His collections include *The Raciad and Other Occasional Poems* (1810) and *Sullivan's Island and Other Poems* (1820).

Craigie House, see *Cambridge.*

Craig's Wife, play by George Kelly (q.v.), produced in 1925 and published in 1926, when it won the Pulitzer Prize.

Harriet Craig, interested only in her personal security, makes a career of her immaculate, luxurious home, and tolerates her husband Walter only because he is necessary. After two years of marriage, Walter still holds to his romantic conception of their love, which is not shared, however, by his aunt, Miss Austen, or by the servants, over whom Harriet maintains a despotic rule. Returning from a trip, she advises her niece, Ethel, against marrying, because her fiancé has only his income as a college professor. Her rage at finding Miss Austen entertaining a neighbor prompts the older woman to announce her departure from this 'house—with furniture in it—that can only be used under highly specified conditions.' Miss Austen reveals to Walter her idea of Harriet's nature and of the vicious web in which he is entangled. Disturbed, he does not fully realize her meaning until, that evening, they learn of the mysterious deaths of Fergus Passmore and his wife, with whom Walter spent the previous evening. Harriet's hysterical attempts to prevent his reporting to the police nearly involve Walter in suspicion. It is found that Passmore murdered his wife and committed suicide, but during the crisis Harriet shows her hand, and consequently loses all but her precious house. Walter departs to seek a divorce; Miss Austen sets out on a world tour; Ethel leaves with her fiancé; the servants go; and Harriet, shocked, suddenly realizes her desolation.

CRAM, Ralph Adams (1863–), architect and author, was associated (1891–1914) with B.G.Goodhue, with whom he created a medieval style of architecture to replace Richardson's Romanesque and the Renaissance classicism of McKim, Mead, and White. This English Gothic style was successfully used in many ecclesiastical and university buildings, and in the U.S.Military Academy at West Point. Cram's books include *Church Buildings* (1901), *Ruined Abbeys of Great Britain* (1905), *The Gothic Quest* (1907), and *The Substance of Gothic* (1916).

CRANCH, Christopher Pearse (1813–92), Unitarian minister and member of the Transcendentalist movement, contributed poems to *The Dial*, *The Western Messenger*, and other magazines, which were collected in 1844. A second volume was published as *The Bird and the Bell* (1875). Cranch translaced the *Æneid* (1872), became known as a painter, and wrote and illustrated such children's books as *The Last of the Huggermuggers* (1856) and its sequel *Kobboltozo* (1857).

CRANE, [Harold] Hart (1899–1932), Ohio-born poet, although he published only two books during his lifetime is recognized as an outstanding poet of his era. *White Buildings* (1926), despite its lack of a single theme to synthesize the author's experience of the American scene, is distinguished by a sonorous rhetoric and concrete imagery, revealing by tangential suggestion an acute mystical perception. The promise of this early work is fulfilled in *The Bridge* (1930), a long mystical poem concerned with the American background and the modern consciousness to which it gives rise. Crane finds in America a principle of unity and absolute faith, through the integration of such symbols as Columbus, Pocahontas, Rip Van Winkle, Poe, Whitman, the subway, and, above all, Brooklyn Bridge, an image of man's anonymous creative power unifying past and present. The lack of discipline in the poet's personal existence, and his belief that his creative ability had been dissipated, caused him to commit suicide by jumping from a ship that was bringing him home from a year's residence in Mexico. His *Collected Poems* (1933) incorporate previously unpublished West Indian sketches and other new poems.

Crane, Ichabod, hero of 'The Legend of Sleepy Hollow' (q.v.).

CRANE, Nathalia [Clara Ruth] (1913–), created a critical stir when she published *The Janitor's Boy* (1924), because it contained not only light, facile rimed poems unusual for a child, but even verses verging on the metaphysical, which suggested a mature intellect. Her subsequent books, *Lava Lane* (1925), *The Singing Crow* (1926), and *Venus Invisible* (1928), are increasingly serious, but her first adult book, *Swear by the Night* (1936), is considered less remarkable. She also published an account of the Children's Crusade, *The Sunken Garden* (1926), and a novel, *An Alien from Heaven* (1929).

CRANE, Stephen (1871–1900), born in New Jersey, spent most of his youth in upstate New York, where he attended

Lafayette College and Syracuse University, each for a year, before moving to New York City to become a struggling author and do intermittent reporting for the *Herald* and *Tribune*. His first book, *Maggie: A Girl of the Streets* (q.v.,1893), was too grim to find a regular publisher, and remained unsold even when Crane borrowed from his brother to issue it privately. Early in 1893, with no personal experience of war, deriving his knowledge primarily from reading Tolstoy and *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War*, he wrote *The Red Badge of Courage* (q.v.,1895), his great realistic study of the mind of an inexperienced soldier trapped in the fury and turmoil of battle. The success of this book led to the reissue of *Maggie*, and Crane's reputation was established. In quick succession appeared his book of free verse, influenced by Emily Dickinson, *The Black Riders* (q.v.,1895); *The Little Regiment* (q.v.,1896), naturalistic Civil War stories, issued in England as *Pictures of War; George's Mother* (1896), the story of the dull lives of a young workingman and his mother in New York City; and *The Third Violet* (1897), a conventional novelette about the romance of a young artist. Because of his successful treatment of war in his masterpiece, Crane was thrust for most of his remaining life into the field of war reporting. After a period as a correspondent in the Southwest and in Mexico, he was sent with a filibustering expedition to Cuba at the end of 1896. The sinking of the ship and his subsequent 50-hour struggle with the waves furnished the theme of his best-known short story, 'The Open Boat.' Inexperience and illness made his trip to Greece, to report the Turkish war, almost futile. Following a short residence in England, he went to Cuba to report the Spanish-American War, and his journalistic sketches and stories of this period are collected in *Wounds in the Rain* (1900). His observation of the Greco-Turkish War resulted in *Active Service* (1899), a satirical novel about a war correspondent. Upon his return to New York, Crane's health was already broken by the hardships he had endured, and, possibly owing to his early treatment of squalor in *Maggie*, a myth now arose to the effect that he was a drunk, a drug addict, and generally depraved. Disgusted by unpleasant notoriety, he returned to England, having meanwhile published two collections of short stories, *The Open Boat* (q.v.,1898) and *The Monster* (q.v.,1899), and a second volume of free verse, *War Is Kind* (1899). *Whilomville Stories* (q.v.,1900) is a collection of tales concerned with typical childhood incidents in a small New York town. Crane's last work shows a decrease in power, for he was broken in health, and soon died of tuberculosis in Germany, where he had gone to seek a cure. Posthumously published volumes include: *Great Battles of the World* (1901), an uninspired historical study; *Last Words* (1902), a collection of his early tales and sketches; *The O'Ruddy* (1903), an unfinished romance, completed by Robert Barr; and *Men, Women, and Boats* (1921), a selection, including several stories never before published. His *Collected Works* appeared in 12 volumes (1925–6).

CRAPSEY, Adelaide (1878–1914), author of a slender volume of *Verse* (1915), written in the last year of her brief life. Of her fastidious poetry, the best-known pieces are her *cinquains*, a stark metrical form of her own invention, resembling the Japanese *hokku*. The *cinquain* is a precise five-line stanza, the lines having respectively two, four, six, eight, and two syllables. Her *Verse* was edited by Jean Webster (q.v.), whose fictional heroines are said to be patterned after the poet.

Crater, The, novel by Cooper (q.v.).

CRAWFORD, Francis Marion (1854–1909), son of Thomas Crawford and nephew of Julia Ward Howe, was born in Italy. Educated in the U.S. and abroad, he began his career as an author of romantic novels of cosmopolitan life with *Mr. Isaacs, A Tale of Modern India* (1882), the story of a diamond merchant. This was followed by more than 40 novels dealing with the various countries in which the author resided. Among those set in Rome are: *A Roman Singer* (1884), a story of artist life; *To Leeward* (1884), concerning the unhappy marriage of an English girl and an Italian *marchese; Marzio's Crucifix* (1887), about an Italian silversmith's struggle between love for his religious art and hatred of his brother, a priest; *Saracinesca* (1887), a story of love in high Italian society, and its sequels, *Sant' Ilario* (1889), *Don Orsino* (1892), and *Corleone* (1896); *Pietro Ghisleri* (1893), the love story of an Italian gentleman and an English girl; *Casa Braccio* (1895), about an Italian nun's elopement

with a Scottish nobleman, and the unhappy life of their daughter; and *The White Sister* (1909), dealing with a nun torn between devotion to her vows and her passion for a former lover. The novels set in Germany include: *Greifenstein* (1889), a story of German university life; *A Cigarette-Maker's Romance* (1890), about an impoverished Russian count, and his love for a Polish girl who works with him in a tobacco shop; and *Dr.Claudius* (1883), the story of a Swedish doctor in Germany. Crawford's seven novels set in the U.S. include: *An American Politician* (1884), concerned with political corruption and reform during the Gilded Age; *The Three Fates* (1892), about the love affairs of a young author; *Katherine Lauderdale* (1894), dealing with wealthy New York society, and its sequel, *The Ralstons* (1895). He also wrote such historical romances as *Zoroaster* (1885), set in Persia at the time of Cyrus; *Via Crucis* (1898), the story of an English nobleman in the Second Crusade; *In the Palace of the King* (1900), set in Philip II's Spain; *Marietta* (1901), the story of a 15th-century Venetian glass-worker; and *Arethusa* (1907), about 14th-century Constantinople. In addition to his short stories of the supernatural, *Wandering Ghosts* (1911), he wrote several plays adapting his novels for the stage, as well as *Francesca da Rimini* (q.v.,1902), written for Sarah Bernhardt. In *The Novel—What It Is* (1893), and implicitly in his work, Crawford set forth his concept of fiction, which he said is to be devoted exclusively to entertainment, for which purpose he preferred the historical novel or romantic narrative of cosmopolitan life, and avoided moralizing or any photographic representation of life.

CRAWFORD, JOHN WALLACE (1847–1917), known as Captain Jack, was a frontier scout and Indian agent of the Black Hills, popular for lecturing and reciting his own verses. Among his published works are *The Poet Scout* (1879) and *The Broncho Book* (1908).

CRAWFORD, THOMAS (1814–57), neoclassical sculptor, trained in Italy. His monumental bronze figure of *Freedom* on the dome of the national Capitol, his group of figures in its north pediment, and a pair of bronze doors for the Senate wing comprise his most important work, which is considered more significant historically than æsthetically. He was the father of F.M.Crawford.

CRAYON, GEOFFREY, pseudonym of Irving (q.v.). *The Crayon Miscellany* is a series of three volumes published under this pseudonym (1835). The books are: *A Tour on the Prairies* (q.v.), *Legends of the Conquest of Spain*, and *Abbotsford and Newstead Abbey*.

CRAZY HORSE (*c.*1849–77), chief and military leader of the Sioux and Cheyenne Indians, aided Sitting Bull (q.v.) in annihilating the forces of Custer in the Battle of the Little Big Horn (1876). He figures in *The Song of the Indian Wars*.

Cream of the Jest, The, novel by Cabell (q.v.), published in 1917 and revised in 1920.

The author Felix Kennaston, tired of his monotonous marriage, one day discovers a hieroglyphic disk that he believes to be the sigil of Scoteia. Through it he escapes into the dream world of the past, which parallels a supposed earlier incarnation in mythical Storisende, where, as Horvendile, he had loved Ettarre. His various experiences in connection with great events of history, and his many amours, leave him unsatisfied, yearning for Ettarre, 'that ageless, lovable and loving woman of whom all poets had been granted fitful broken glimpses.' His dream is destined to end when he touches Ettarre, and he awakes to discover that his sigil is but the cover of his wife's cold cream jar. Realizing the nature of this talisman, he returns to his own life, and discovers in his wife a realization of the ideal Ettarre.

Crédit Mobilier, construction company controlled by certain stockholders of the Union Pacific Railroad, who made a contract with it (1867) that involved an excess profit of some $20,000,000, and exploited congressional grants for the building of the railroad. Later, fearing investigation, the manipulators of the deal presented shares to influential congressmen, and a great scandal resulted from the publication of this information by C.A.Dana, during the presidential campaign of 1872.

Cree Indians, Algonquian tribe of the Canadian forests, ranging from northern Quebec westward to Alberta. They were guides for many famous explorers, and are called the Plains Cree because their

culture was based originally on bison hunting.

Creek Indians, confederacy of tribes, also called Muscogulges, were once located in Georgia and Alabama. Because the Spaniards mistreated them, they became allies of the English. Their rebellion (1814) was quelled by Andrew Jackson. Later the tribe moved to Oklahoma. J.R.Swanton has written a *History of the Creek Indians,* and they figure in the works of Chateaubriand.

Creole, name applied to American-born descendants of the French and Spanish settlers of Latin America. The term did not originally mean persons of mixed white and Negro blood, although this is one of its various connotations in popular usage. In Louisiana it is used to distinguish descendants of the original French settlers from the 'Cajun' heirs of the exiles from Acadia (q.v.). Creole life in Louisiana has been depicted by such local-color authors as Cable, Hearn, Grace King, and Kate Chopin.

CRESPI, JUAN (1721–82), Spanish missionary and explorer, a pupil of Serra, came to Mexico in 1749. Accompanying the expedition of Portolá, he discovered San Francisco Bay, and later participated in major explorations of the Pacific Coast. He kept diaries of all his journeys, and these have been translated and edited by H.E.Bolton.

CRÈVECŒUR, MICHEL-GUILLAUME JEAN DE (1735–1813), known as J.Hector St.John de Crèvecœur, was born in France, and emigrated to Canada during the last of the French and Indian Wars. He served under Montcalm, and later seems to have explored near the Great Lakes and the Ohio River. He landed at New York (1759), took out naturalization papers (1765), traveled extensively in Pennsylvania and New York, and settled with his American wife in Orange County, New York. His travels are described in his later book, *Voyage dans la Haute Pennsylvanie et dans l'état de New-York* (3 vols., 1801). He spent idyllic years on his New York farm until the Revolution, when, as a Loyalist, he was forced to flee to New York and then to France (1780). During the quiet decade prior to the Revolution, he probably wrote most of the charming *Letters from an American Farmer* (q.v., 1782) on which his reputation rests. Other informative and vivid essays written during this period have been published in *Sketches of Eighteenth Century America* (1925), which also includes a play, 'Landscapes,' six scenes showing the hypocrisy, inhumanity, cupidity, and abuse of power which underlay the Revolution. In 1783 Crèvecœur returned to America only to discover that his wife was dead, his home burned, and his children had disappeared, as a result of an Indian raid. Eventually he found his children, and settled in New York, where as French consul he attempted to cement the friendly relations of the two countries. He returned to France (1790), where he passed the rest of his life. Although he did not consider himself a man of letters, the French thought of him as a true 'man of feeling,' and when his *Lettres d'un Cultivateur Américain* appeared in France (1783), it was adulterated with artificial sentimentality and redundant rhetoric. For this and other reasons, Crèvecœur has often been considered merely a sentimental Rousseauistic romancer, but recent criticism looks upon him as being a fresh and vigorous recorder of events and scenes in early American rural life.

Crisis, The, magazine edited by W.E.B. Dubois (q.v.).

Crisis, The, novel by Winston Churchill (q.v.), published in 1901.

This narrative of life and issues in the South, before and during the Civil War, centers at St.Louis, and among the characters are descendants of Richard Carvel (q.v.). Stephen Brice comes from Boston to practice law in the office of Judge Whipple, who, though a Republican and Abolitionist, is a close friend of Colonel Carvel, a typical Southern Democrat. Stephen is attracted by Carvel's daughter Virginia, but she spurns him because of his Northern sympathies, and becomes engaged to the romantic cavalier, Clarence Colfax. Stephen is wounded in the Union cause, and later becomes an aide to Lincoln, while Colfax fights with the Confederates. In spite of the machinations of the Yankee carpetbagger, Eliphalit Hopper, Virginia breaks with Colfax, who is captured as a spy, and she finally marries Stephen.

Crisis, The American, series of 13 regular and three specially issued pamphlets by Thomas Paine (q.v.), published between Dec. 19, 1776, and April 19, 1783. The first pamphlet appeared at a time of

gloom and uncertainty, when the Revolutionary army faced defeat because of its retreat across New Jersey and the imminent defection of some of the colonies, and Washington the day before had written '. . . if every nerve is not strained to the utmost to recruit the new army with all possible expedition, I think the game is pretty near up.' Paine's direct, incisive style, and his stirring opening, 'These are the times that try men's souls,' created an immediate reaction in favor of the patriotic cause, and Washington had the pamphlet read before every regiment. The subsequent crossing of the Delaware and the victories at Trenton and Princeton were partly credited to its influence. Later issues continued to oppose defeatism and compromise, and were influential in maintaining morale and a unified spirit in the colonies.

Critic, The (1881–1906), weekly literary magazine and review, published by Jeannette and Joseph Gilder. It is remembered as one of the first magazines to welcome Whitman's writing, and as the first to publish the *Uncle Remus* stories outside of the author's native town. Other contributors included J.L.Allen, Julia Ward Howe, Stedman, R.W.Gilder, E.E.Hale, and Aldrich.

Critical Fable, A, humorous critical verse on contemporary poets, by Amy Lowell (q.v.), published anonymously in 1922. The idea, the eccentric rhythms, and the ludicrous rimes are patterned after James Russell Lowell's *Fable for Critics*. An elder poet (presumably J.R. Lowell) and a contemporary poet (Amy Lowell) meet to discuss modern American poetry, displaying in their conversation some common sense, some humor, and some malice. Of the 21 authors mentioned, emphasis is given to Frost, Robinson, Sandburg, Lindsay, H.D., and Amy Lowell, while T.S.Eliot and Ezra Pound are classified as 'odds and ends.'

Crittenden Resolutions, compromise plan to prevent secession, proposed (Dec. 1860) by the Kentucky senator and former Attorney-General, John Jordan Crittenden (1787–1863). His five suggested irrevocable amendments to the Constitution were essentially a return to the Missouri Compromise (q.v.). The amendments provided: (1) that slavery be permitted south of 36° 30′ and prohibited north of that line for land with territorial status; (2) that Congress be forbidden to abolish slavery in regions under its jurisdiction that lay within slave states; (3) that Congress be allowed to abolish slavery in the District of Columbia only after it was abolished in Maryland and Virginia; (4) that Congress be given no power to hinder the transportation of slaves from one state to another, or to a territory where slavery was legal; and (5) that Congress provide compensation for escaped slaves, recovering damages from any county in which an illegal rescue was made. The resolutions were defeated in a Senate committee.

Croaker Papers, name given to a series of satirical poems on current topics by Drake and Halleck (qq.v.). The authorship of these popular verses was never acknowledged, and they were sent with elaborate secrecy to the New York *Evening Post* and *National Advertiser* between March and July 1819. Of the initial series of 35 poems, 14 are attributed to Drake (Croaker); 13 to Halleck (Croaker,Jr.); and eight to their collaboration (Croaker and Co.). The pseudonym was suggested by the name of a character in Goldsmith's *The Good-Natured Man*. The first (unauthorized) collection was published in 1819, and contained 24 selections; the first complete edition was published in 1860.

Croatan, see *Roanoke*.

CROCKER, HANNAH MATHER (1752–1829), granddaughter of Cotton Mather, was an early Massachusetts advocate of women's rights. Her *Series of Letters on Free Masonry* (1815) deals with her educational attempts in connection with women's Masonic lodges. She also wrote *Observations on the Real Rights of Women* (1818).

CROCKETT, DAVY (David) (1786–1836), born in Tennessee, spent a shiftless youth until his political career began (*c.*1816) with his appointment as justice of the peace. He boasted that none of his decisions was ever reversed, because of his dependence on 'natural-born sense instead of law learning.' After being twice elected to the state legislature, he accepted a humorous proposal that he run for Congress, and to his surprise was elected, serving from 1827 to 1831, and again from 1833 to 1835. Because of his opposition to Jackson, the Whigs adopted him as a convenient tool through whom to draw the backwoods democracy to its standard.

Davy was soon turned by skilful politicians into a frontier hero, whose picturesque eccentricities, backwoods humor, tall tales, shrewd native intelligence, and lusty pioneer spirit were all aggrandized. Whig journalists were soon at work, and in short order turned out such books, attributed to Davy, as *Sketches and Eccentricities of Col. David Crockett* (1833), *An Account of Col. Crockett's Tour to the North and Down East* (1835), *The Life of Martin Van Buren* (1835), and *Col. Crockett's Exploits and Adventures in Texas* (1836). With the exception of the last, which is posthumous, he may have had a hand in all these works, and he gladly claimed the *Tour* and life of Van Buren. Swallowing the Whig bait, he enjoyed his sudden rise to fame, and was glad to aid in propagating the myth, which, however, removed him from office, since his constituents would not tolerate his desertion of Democratic principles. Piqued, he left Tennessee to participate in the war for Texan independence, and a few months later died in the heroic defense of the Alamo, adding a final dramatic chapter to his career. *A Narrative of the Life of David Crockett, of the State of Tennessee* (1834) passes as his autobiography, although the claim has often been disputed. In any case the book has the robust manner attributed to Crockett, and contains fine examples of the farce and exaggeration of the tall tale.

Crockett almanacs, popular pamphlets issued irregularly by various publishers under the name of Davy Crockett or his 'heirs.' About 50 appeared between 1835 and 1856. In addition to the usual features of almanacs, these publications, printed at Nashville, New York, Boston, Philadelphia, and other cities, contain tall tales based mainly on legends of oral tradition, concerned with Crockett, Mike Fink, Daniel Boone, and Kit Carson, as well as such mythical figures as the sea-serpent of Cape Cod. The historical Crockett, before his death, may have been involved in the original enterprise, and the almanacs, capitalizing on his spectacular death at the Alamo, contributed largely to his widespread popularity in contemporary folklore.

CROKER, Richard (1841–1922), Irish-born politician of New York City, held several minor offices, but is famous as a leader of Tammany (q.v.) after the period of 'Boss' Tweed. Although accused of crimes ranging from murder to graft, he was only once imprisoned. During an investigation (1894), he retired to his estate in England, and during a subsequent investigation (1900) left to live permanently in England, his power being broken by the reform administration of Seth Low. A.H. Lewis's *The Boss* (1903) is supposedly based on his life.

CROLY, Jane Cunningham (1829–1901), English-born journalist, came to New York in 1841, where she later married the author and editor, David Goodman Croly (1829–89). Under the pseudonym Jenny June, she wrote feature articles for New York newspapers. Besides founding and presiding (1868–82) over Sorosis, the first professional women's club in the U.S., she helped found the Federation of Women's Clubs. She edited *Demorest's Illustrated Monthly* (1860–87), was part owner of *Godey's Lady's Book*, and was a professor at Rutgers. Her books include *For Better or Worse: A Book for Some Men and All Women* (1875) and *The History of the Woman's Club Movement in America* (1898).

Herbert [David] Croly (1869–1930), her son, was a New York editor and social critic. He edited the *Architectural Record* (1900–1906), remaining on its staff until 1913, and publishing two books on American architecture. In 1914 he founded *The New Republic* (q.v.), which he edited until his death. His books include: *The Promise of American Life* (1909), a consideration of democratic principles in view of changing economic and social conditions; a biography of Mark Hanna (1912); *Progressive Democracy* (1914), a study of the evolution of democracy since the time of Hanna; and *Willard Straight* (1924), a biography of a friend who was a writer and adventurer in the Far East. Croly sometimes used the pseudonym William Herbert.

CROMWELL, Gladys (1885–1919), New York poet, committed suicide because she was obsessed by the horror of the wartime and post-war world. This feeling may be seen in her sensitive, austere lyrics, posthumously published as *Poems* (1919).

CROSS, Wilbur L[ucius] (1862–), dean and professor of English at Yale, editor of the *Yale Review* since 1911, and author of such critical works as the *Life and Times of Laurence Sterne* (1909)

and the *History of Henry Fielding* (1918). He was governor of Connecticut (1930–39).

Cross of Gold Speech, see *Bryan.*

Crossing, The, historical romance by Winston Churchill (q.v.), published in 1904.

Until he is 10, David Ritchie lives with his puritanical Scotch father on the North Carolina frontier. His father joins the rebel army at the outbreak of the Revolution, and sends him to live with the Temple family at Charleston. Here David finds a friend in Nick Temple, a quick-tempered lad of his own age, but, when news comes of his father's death, he returns to the frontier as a farmhand. He is befriended by Polly Ann Ripley, who marries Tom McChesney, and he accompanies the couple to a Kentucky settlement. Soon Tom becomes a soldier under George Rogers Clark, and precocious David, though only 11, goes along as Clark's drummer and trusted aide. Historical figures portrayed in the ensuing scenes of the Wilderness campaign include John Sevier, Boone, and Simon Kenton. After capturing Kaskaskia, Cahokia, and Vincennes, Clark turns back, realizing his goal of Detroit to be impracticable. David returns to grow up on the McChesney farm, goes to Richmond to study law, and at 21 begins his practice in Kentucky, where he is joined by his boyhood friend, Nick, who discloses that they are cousins, and both grandsons of a Scottish earl. After helping to prosecute the treasonable activities of James Wilkinson, David goes with Nick to New Orleans, where the Temples, former Loyalists, live in exile, and there he marries Helène d'Ivry-le-Tour, an aristocratic French exile, with whom he returns to the Kentucky frontier.

Crossing Brooklyn Ferry, poem by Whitman (q.v.), published in the 1856 edition of *Leaves of Grass* as 'Sun-Down Poem,' and given its present title in 1860. Based on the author's reminiscences of life in Brooklyn and the trip across the East River to Manhattan, it is a rhapsody of the daily crowds and of the panorama of the city as seen from the river, in which he mystically identifies himself with everybody and everything: 'great or small, you furnish your parts toward the soul.'

CROTHERS, RACHEL (1878–), Illinois-born playwright and director, had her first New York success with *The Three of Us* (1906), a play set in a Nevada mining camp. *A Man's World* (q.v.,1909) was her first play concerned with contemporary morality and with the position of women in the modern world, and later plays concerning these subjects include: *He and She* (q.v.,1911); *Ourselves* (1913); *Young Wisdom* (1914); *Nice People* (1920); *Everyday* (1921); *Mary the Third* (1923); *Expressing Willie* (1924); *A Lady's Virtue* (1925); *Let Us Be Gay* (1929); *As Husbands Go* (1931); *When Ladies Meet* (1932); and *Susan and God* (1938). She has also written one-act plays and other full-length dramas, frequently sentimental in their treatment of character. She dramatized *Mother Carey's Chickens* (1917) in collaboration with Kate D. Wiggin.

CROTHERS, SAMUEL MCCHORD (1857–1927), Presbyterian minister, later a Unitarian minister at Cambridge (1894–1927) and preacher to Harvard University. His volumes of mellow essays in the manner of Lamb include *The Gentle Reader* (1903), *The Pardoner's Wallet* (1905), *By the Christmas Fire* (1908), *Among Friends* (1910), *Humanly Speaking* (1912), *The Pleasures of an Absentee Landlord* (1916), and *The Dame School of Experience* (1920). He also wrote a book on Emerson (1921).

Crow Indians, Plains tribe of the Sioux family, which once ranged along the upper Yellowstone and Big Horn Rivers of Wyoming and Montana. The Crows were nomadic hunters and warriors, conducted a constant warfare with the Blackfoot, and aided the U.S. army against the Sioux. They are described as predatory ruffians in *The Adventures of Captain Bonneville* and in Beckwourth's *Life,* but F.B.Linderman's *American* gives a more favorable view of them.

CROWFIELD, CHRISTOPHER. Pseudonym of Harriet Beecher Stowe (q.v.).

Crown Point, site on Lake Champlain near Ticonderoga, a strategic point on the route from New York to Canada, on which the French built a fort (1731), which was captured by the British (1759) during the French and Indian War. During the Revolution it was captured (1775) by the Green Mountain Boys under Seth Warner, but was abandoned (1777) at the

approach of the superior forces of Burgoyne.

Cub of the Panther, The, romance by Simms (q.v.).

Cudjo's Cave, antislavery novel by J.T. Trowbridge (q.v.), published in 1864.

In seceding Tennessee, at the outbreak of the Civil War, Penn Hapgood is a young Quaker schoolmaster whose Abolitionist sympathies arouse the enmity of the Confederate slaveholders and their poor white allies, who tar and feather him. He is aided by Carl, a friendly German boy, and the blind minister, Mr. Villars, whose daughter Virginia he loves. When Villars is threatened by the people of the community, led by Augustus Bythewood, a wealthy planter, and Silas Ropes, a drunkard, Penn flees to a great cave in the backwoods, occupied by Cudjo, a deformed runaway slave, and another runaway, Pomp, a dignified 'lion of a man.' During the developing conflict, the cave becomes a place of refuge for Union sympathizers, including the Villars family, and it is besieged by Bythewood and his men. The planter offers to end the struggle if Virginia will accept his proposal of marriage, but she refuses. Her sister Salina is killed, and Cudjo and Ropes die while fighting each other, but Bythewood is captured and the Confederates are routed. Penn and Virginia, who intend to marry, escape with Villars and Pomp to safety in Ohio.

CULLEN, COUNTÉE (1903–), Negro poet, educated at New York University (A.B., 1925) and Harvard (M.A., 1926). His poems have been published in *Color* (1925), *Copper Sun* (1927), *The Ballad of the Brown Girl* (1927), *The Black Christ* (1929), and *The Medea* (1935), the last containing a translation of Euripides's tragedy. In their lyrical quality, Cullen's poems show the influence of Keats, and they lack deep racial feeling in either idiom or rhythm. *Caroling Dusk* (1927) is an anthology of Negro verse, and *One Way to Heaven* (1932) is a novel. Some of his poems have been the basis of song cycles by Emerson Whithorne.

Culprit Fay, The, poem by J.R.Drake (q.v.), the title piece of his first collection (1835). The basic metre is iambic, but the metrical principle, based on Coleridge's *Christabel*, is that each line has four primary stresses, irrespective of the number of syllables. More than 600 lines in length, it was written in three days in August 1816, according to Drake's friend, Halleck. Delicately imaginative, with a background of Hudson River scenery, the poem is concerned with the adventures of a fairy who loves a mortal maid. As punishment he is ordered to catch a drop of the water raised by a sturgeon's leap in the bright moonshine, and the last faint spark of a shooting star.

Cumberland Road, see *National Road.*

CUMMINGS, E[DWARD] E[STLIN] (1894–), Massachusetts-born writer and painter, graduated from Harvard (1915). He served with an American ambulance corps in France, and in 1917 was confined for several months in a French concentration camp, on an unfounded charge of treasonable correspondence. This experience was the basis of his first and best-known book, *The Enormous Room* (q.v., 1922). He next published several volumes of poems, exhibiting a combination of sentimental emotion and cynical realism, with a technique that depends, to a great degree, on typographical distortion. His unconventional spacing, verse lengths, punctuation, and sudden juxtaposition of several words or divisions of single words have often been criticized as destructive to communication, although they are probably intended to startle the reader into a renewed sentience. Although he has a natural lyric gift, he frequently attempts to avoid romantic tenderness by employing jazz rhythms and a slang dialect. His books of poetry include *Tulips and Chimneys* (1923), *XLI Poems* (1925), *& (1925), is 5* (1926), *ViVa* (1931), and *No Thanks* (1935). Other works are: *him* (1927), a drama in verse and prose, with kaleidoscopic scenes dashing from comedy to tragedy; a book which bears no title (1930); *Eimi* (1933), a travel diary utilizing the technique of his poetry, and violently attacking the regimentation of individuals in the U.S.S.R.; *Tom* (1935), a satirical ballet based on *Uncle Tom's Cabin*; and *CIOPW* (1931), a book of drawings and paintings, indicating his ability in the five media of *c*harcoal, *i*nk, *o*il, *p*encil, and *w*atercolor. His poems were collected in 1938.

CUMMINS, MARIA SUSANNA (1827–66), Massachusetts author, contributor to the *Atlantic Monthly*, wrote the popular moralistic romance, *The Lamplighter*

(1854), concerned with the life of a Boston orphan girl who is befriended by the lamplighter, Trueman Flint, grows up under his protection, and is rewarded for her goodness and purity when she marries a childhood sweetheart. The author's later novels included *Mabel Vaughan* (1857), *El Fureidis* (1860), and *Haunted Hearts* (1864).

Curfew Must Not Ring Tonight, popular ballad by Rose Hartwick Thorpe (q.v.).

CURRIER AND IVES, firm of lithographers and print publishers, during the second half of the 19th century became famous for their depictions of phases of American life, ranging from sporting events and caricatures to favorite homely and sentimental subjects. Nathaniel Currier, who established the New York firm (1835), became associated with J.Merritt Ives in 1850, and after 1857 the prints were signed by their two names. Widely circulated, crudely colored, and naïvely drawn, the prints are topically interesting, but have little artistic value despite their rarity as collectors' items.

CURRY, JOHN STEUART (1897–), Kansas painter, is known for his vigorous murals and oil paintings of the rural American scene, dealing with such subjects as *Baptism in Kansas* and *Tornado over Kansas*. He is Artist-in-Residence at the College of Agriculture of the University of Wisconsin.

CURTIS, GEORGE TICKNOR (1812–94), Massachusetts lawyer, defended Dred Scott, and wrote biographies of his acquaintances, Daniel Webster and James Buchanan, as well as a *Constitutional History of the U.S. . . . to the Close of the Civil War* (1889–96). *John Charaxes* (1889) is a historical novel of the Civil War.

CURTIS, GEORGE WILLIAM (1824–92), Rhode Island-born writer, spent some time at Brook Farm, and later traveled in the Near East as correspondent for the New York *Tribune*. His amusing impressions of his travels were published as *Nile Notes of a Howadji* (1851) and *The Howadji in Syria* (1852). *Lotus Eating* (1852) is a collection of letters written to the *Tribune* from various spas. *Potiphar Papers* (q.v.,1853) and *Prue and I* (q.v., 1856) contain essays contributed to magazines, and *Trumps* (1861) is a novel of New York society and Washington politics. Curtis's oration, *The Duty of the American Scholar to Politics and the Times* (1856), marked his transition to serious thought on contemporary affairs, and he became a noted editor and lyceum lecturer in the struggles for antislavery, women's rights, civil service reform, and industrial harmony. He was an official of many reform organizations, being president of the National Civil Service Reform League from its founding to his death. He was editor of *Harper's Weekly* after 1863, and three of his books are collections of Editor's Easy Chair papers for *Harper's Magazine*.

CURWOOD, JAMES OLIVER (1878–1927), Michigan journalist and novelist, won immense popularity for his many stories of adventure in the North Woods, which he termed 'God's Country.' Following the conventions of Jack London's robust fiction of the elemental struggle for survival by men and beasts, these novels include: *The Courage of Captain Plum* (1908); *The Grizzly King* (1916); *Nomads of the North* (1919); and *The Valley of Silent Men* (1920).

CUSHING, CALEB (1800–79), Massachusetts statesman, served in Congress (1835–43), and was then sent to China, where he secured important commercial treaties. At the Democratic national convention of 1852 he was responsible for the nomination of Franklin Pierce, after whose election he received the post of Attorney-General. He worked for conciliation until the secession, after which he supported Lincoln. Continuing to be a prominent Republican, he later received several diplomatic posts. His books include a *History of Newburyport* (1826), *Reminiscences of Spain* (1833), and *The Treaty of Washington* (1873).

CUSHING, FRANK HAMILTON (1857–1900), ethnologist and archaeologist, in 1879 accompanied a scientific expedition to New Mexico and lived among the Zuñi Indians for several years. During his association with the Bureau of American Ethnology he made many explorations in the pueblo regions of the Southwest, locating the 'Seven Cities of Cibola,' and making other important discoveries. His writings include a translation of the Zuñi epic, published as *Myths of Creation* (1882) and *Outlines of Zuñi Creation Myths* (1896), as well as volumes on *Zuñi Fetiches* (1881),

The Arrow (1895), *Primitive Motherhood* (1897), *Zuñi Folk Tales* (1901), and other subjects.

CUSHING, HARVEY (1869–1939), prominent surgeon, professor successively at Johns Hopkins, Harvard, and Yale, was the author of such books as *The Life of Sir William Osler* (1925, Pulitzer Prize 1926); *From a Surgeon's Journal* (1936), his memories of the World War; and *The Medical Career* (1940).

CUSHMAN, CHARLOTTE [SAUNDERS] (1816–76), Boston-born actress, began her career in 1835 as an opera singer, but soon won a great reputation as an interpreter of both male and female parts in legitimate drama. She was best known for her Shakespearean roles and the part of Meg Merrilies in an operatic dramatization of *Guy Mannering*.

CUSTER, GEORGE ARMSTRONG (1839–76), youthful major-general in the Civil War, distinguished himself at the battles of Gettysburg and Winchester and in the Shenandoah campaign. He led an expedition into the Black Hills (1874), beginning a long campaign against the Sioux, who, under the direction of Sitting Bull (q.v.) and Crazy Horse, annihilated Custer and his force in the Battle of Little Big Horn (1876). Custer's graphic account, *My Life on the Plains*, was published in 1874. *Boots and Saddles* (1885), by his wife Elizabeth, is an account of their life in Dakota.

CUSTIS, GEORGE WASHINGTON PARKE (1781–1857), grandson of Martha Washington, was a Virginia planter who wrote historical plays as an avocation, and as a so-called kindness to 'poor rogues of actors.' Some of his works are: *The Indian Prophecy* (1827), *Pocahontas* (1830), *The Railroad* (1830), *North Point* (1833), and *The Eighth of January* (1834). He also wrote his *Recollections and Private Memoirs of Washington* (1860).

Custom of the Country, The, novel by Edith Wharton (q.v.).

CUTICLE, SURGEON, character in *White-Jacket* (q.v.).

Cytherea, novel by Hergesheimer (q.v.).

D

Daisy Miller: A Study, novel by Henry James (q.v.), published in 1878 and dramatized by the author in 1883.

Frederick Winterbourne, an American expatriate visiting at Vevay, Switzerland, meets commonplace, newly rich Mrs.Miller, from Schenectady, New York, her mischievous small son Randolph, and her daughter Daisy, an 'inscrutable combination of audacity and innocence.' The Millers have no perception of the complex code that underlies behavior in European society, and Winterbourne is astonished at the girl's innocence and her mother's unconcern, when Daisy accompanies him alone to the Castle of Chillon. Some months later he meets the family in Rome, where Daisy has aroused suspicion among the American colony by being seen constantly with Giovanelli, a third-rate Italian. Ostracized by former friends, who think her 'intrigue' has gone too far, Daisy denies to Winterbourne that she is engaged to Giovanelli, with whom the American meets her one night in the Colosseum. When he comments on her indiscretion in exposing herself to the danger of 'Roman fever,' Giovanelli says, 'but when was the Signorina ever prudent?' A few days later she falls ill with malaria, and a week afterward dies. At her funeral Giovanelli tells Winterbourne that Daisy was 'the most beautiful young lady I ever saw, and the most amiable . . . and the most innocent.' He says that he had hoped to marry her, but believes she would not have accepted him.

Dakota Indians, see *Sioux.*

DALY, [JOHN] AUGUSTIN (1838–99), author or adapter of more than 90 plays, most of which were radically altered from the original French or German, and often given an American setting. His own best plays were *Horizon* (1871), a romantic drama of the West; and *Divorce* (1871), a problem play; but he was also the author of melodramas such as *Under the Gaslight* (1867), in which heroes were tied to logs about to be sawed in two, or bound to railroad tracks in the path of onrushing trains. The most successful of his ventures as a producer was in the theater that bore his name in New York City, and here he produced many of his own adaptations, several of the leading English comedies of manners, and superb productions of Shakespeare.

DALY, THOMAS AUGUSTINE (1871–), Philadelphia poet and journalist. He is best known for his humorous, sympathetic treatments of Irish and Italian immigrants, in such dialect verse as *Canzoni* (1906), *Carmina* (1909), *Madrigali* (1912), *McAroni Ballads* (1919), and *McAroni Medleys* (1931).

Damaged Souls, biographical sketches by Gamaliel Bradford (q.v.).

DAMIEN, FATHER (JOSEPH DAMIEN DE VEUSTER) (1840–89), Belgian missionary priest, went to Hawaii (1846), where he worked among the natives, and in 1873 went to the leper colony, where he ministered to the sick until he himself contracted leprosy, from which he died. His work was brought to public attention when Stevenson published a defense (1890) against a minister who had slandered Damien. C.W.Stoddard, who wrote about Damien in *The Lepers of Molokai* (1885), probably attracted the attention of Stevenson to the subject.

Damnation of Theron Ware, The, novel by Harold Frederic (q.v.), published in 1896. Its English title is *Illumination.*

Theron Ware, simple, handsome, and eloquent, is a Methodist preacher at Octavius, New York. Desiring wealth and fame, and being ignorant of his own limitations, he plans to write an epoch-making book. His damnation occurs through his growing enlightenment, which makes him conscious of his ignorance and of the mean emotionalism of his church, as well as of his inability to enter into the saner and wider outlook of those he admires. He is attracted by Celia Madden, daughter of a rich Irish immigrant, who, with her pastor, Father Forbes, and her agnostic friend, Doctor Ledsmar, makes him realize a fullness of life he has never imagined. Misled by his passion for Celia, Ware wrongly accuses her of illicit relations with Father Forbes, and she dismisses him, telling him he is a fool and a bore. He is at last saved from complete ruin by the emotional revivalist, Sister Soulsby, whose common sense he can understand.

DAMROSCH, Leopold (1832–85), German-born conductor and composer, came to New York (1871), where he was a founder and the first conductor of the New York Oratorio Society (1874) and of the Symphony Society (1878).

Walter Johannes Damrosch (1862–), his son, was an assistant director at the Metropolitan Opera and succeeded to the conductorship of the Oratorio and Symphony Societies (1885). Under the influence of Wagner, he composed an opera, *The Scarlet Letter* (1894), with a libretto based on Hawthorne's romance. He composed two other operas, *Cyrano* (1913) and *The Man Without a Country* (1937), but was most significant as a conductor and educator, especially in his direction of the New York Symphony (1896–1927), and in his use of radio for musical instruction.

Damsel of Darien, The, romance by Simms (q.v.).

DANA, Charles Anderson (1819–97), born in New Hampshire, was associated as a young man with the Brook Farm community, but left this group to work on the New York *Tribune*, of which he was managing editor under Greeley (1849–62). Although he opposed militant labor, Dana's point of view was generally liberal, and he was a brilliant editorial and business manager. His chauvinistic policy at the outbreak of the Civil War led to his dismissal, after which he became a special investigator for the War Department, and assistant secretary of war (1864). In 1867 he became editor and part owner of the New York *Sun* (q.v.), and, though his paper showed a personal and perverse social and political policy, Dana satisfied his credo, which he said was 'to study condensation, clearness, point, and . . . the most luminous and lively manner.' He edited the *American Cyclopædia* (1858–64) with George Ripley, and wrote his *Recollections of the Civil War* (1898).

DANA, James Dwight (1813–95), professor of natural history at Yale (1836–92), succeeded to the chair held by his father-in-law, Benjamin Silliman, and to his editorship of *The American Journal of Science*. An outstanding American geologist, he wrote such standard works as the *System of Mineralogy* (1837) and *Manual of Geology* (1862).

DANA, John Cotton (1856–1929), director of the public library of Newark, New Jersey (1902–29), made this institution one of the finest in the U.S., with the first children's library and the first business branch libraries in the country. For the Newark Museum, which he founded (1909), he assembled America's first exhibition of industrial arts, and emphasized the work of native artists. His books include: *The Museum of Interest and the Museum of Awe*, *A Library Primer* (1899), *American Art* (1914), and *Art Is All in Your Eye* (1927).

DANA, Richard Henry, Sr. (1787–1879), Massachusetts poet and journalist, was a founder of the *North American Review*. When his romantic criticism alienated many of this magazine's subscribers, he began his own journal in New York, *The Idle Man* (1821–2), modeled upon Irving's *Salmagundi*. Because of Dana's perpetual procrastination, he was satirized by Lowell as being 'so well aware of how things should be done, that his own works displease him before they're begun.' His slight literary production was collected in the two-volume *Poems and Prose Writings* (1833, enlarged 1850), but his famous lectures on Shakespeare have never been printed, and he was overshadowed during his last 40 years by his son.

DANA, Richard Henry, Jr. (1815–82), son of R.H.Dana, Sr., was born at Cambridge, where he was reared according to conventional New England standards. He suffered serious eye trouble as a sophomore at Harvard, and to regain his health sailed for California as a common sailor (1834). On the Pacific coast he worked for more than a year gathering hides, after which he returned to Boston, and completed his education at Harvard law school. In fulfilment of his vow 'to redress the grievances and sufferings of that class of beings with whom my lot had so long been cast,' his first publication was an article in the *American Jurist* (1839) on 'Cruelty to Seamen.' In 1840, the year of his admission to the bar, he published the famous account of his voyage, *Two Years Before the Mast* (q.v.), which won immediate popularity, created many imitators and followers of its realistic approach, and permanently influenced the literature of the sea. His second book, *The Seaman's Friend* (1841, called in England *The Seaman's Manual*), was de-

signed to show common sailors their legal rights and duties, and constitutes a reference book of sea terms, customs, and laws. Dana early became active in Free Soil politics, and provided legal assistance without charge to slaves captured under the Fugitive Slave Law, thereby antagonizing those of his own class in Boston, whose cotton mills were dependent on the Southern plantations. During the Civil War he was U.S. attorney for the district of Massachusetts, and succeeded in convincing the U.S. Supreme Court, despite its Democratic leanings, that the Northern blockade was legal. Although he held several minor offices, he never attained the diplomatic heights of which he was ambitious. His edition of *Elements of International Law by Wheaton* (1866) made him the object of an invidious and protracted suit for plagiarism, and the slanders involved in the action caused the Senate to refuse his appointment as minister to England (1876). Wearied by many abortive attempts to obtain public office, he declared bitterly, 'My life has been a failure compared with what I might and ought to have done,' and, when he realized that fame was singling him out for the accomplishments he thought least important, he said sadly, 'My great success—my book—was a boy's work, done before I came to the Bar.' He went to Europe (1878) to seek rest and to write further books, but he died before completing any of his proposed writings on international law, which he hoped might establish his reputation in this field. One of his several later voyages is described in *To Cuba and Back* (1859), which lacks, however, the qualities for which his first book is admired. Some of his addresses were collected as *Speeches in Stirring Times* (1910).

Danbury News Man, see *Bailey, J.M.*

Daniel Jazz, The, poems by Vachel Lindsay (q.v.).

Danites, alleged secret organization of Mormons, to whom many crimes were attributed. They are the subject of Joaquin Miller's play, *The Danites in the Sierras* (1877).

DARE, VIRGINIA, see Roanoke.

DARGAN, OLIVE TILFORD, began her literary career as a writer of poetic dramas, published as *Semiramis and Other Plays* (1904), *Lords and Lovers and Other Dramas,* (1906), and *The Mortal Gods and Other Plays* (1912). These were followed by collections of lyric poetry, including *Path Flower and Other Poems* (1914); *The Cycle's Rim* (1916), a sonnet sequence; and *Lute and Furrow* (1922). In 1925 she published *Highland Annals,* a collection of short stories dealing with the mountain life of her native Kentucky, and she has written two proletarian novels under the pseudonym of Fielding Burke: *Call Home the Heart* (1932), dealing with Southern mill workers; and *A Stone Came Rolling* (1935).

Daring Young Man on the Flying Trapeze, The, short stories by William Saroyan (q.v.).

Dark Horse, political term applied to a candidate for office chosen by his party as being relatively unknown but a satisfactory compromise, when the factions of his more prominent opponents are unable to agree. Presidents of the U.S. who became candidates in this way include Polk, Pierce, Hayes, Garfield, and Harding.

Dark Laughter, novel by Sherwood Anderson (q.v.), published in 1925.

John Stockton, a Chicago reporter, after submitting for years to uncongenial routine, drifts apart from his wife Bernice, and decides suddenly to leave his irksome life. He travels in an open boat down the Illinois and Mississippi Rivers, dreaming of the epic Mark Twain might now write, 'of song killed, of laughter killed, of men herded into a new age of speed, of factories, of swift, fast-running trains,' and his story is accompanied by a chorus of 'dark laughter' and song by the unrepressed Negroes, contrasted with the spiritual sterility of machine civilization. In his childhood home, Old Harbor, Indiana, as Bruce Dudley, he becomes a factory hand, painting wheels with old Sponge Martin, who is an expert craftsman, happily married, and satisfied by his pattern of life. The shop's owner is Fred Grey, a World War veteran who met his wife Aline in the Bohemian quarter of Paris, where she was under the influence of post-war cynicism and disillusion. Although she had little in common with this conventional American businessman, she married him because of her need for love and stability. Bruce and Aline become lovers, and after the birth of their child they elope, leaving Fred bewildered by

his wife's preference for an irresponsible common laborer.

DARLEY, Felix Octavius Carr (1822–88), is best known for his vigorous pen-and-ink illustrations for books, which show both a technical facility and a sense of humor. Among the many works he illustrated were *The Library of Humorous American Works* (29 vols.,1846–53), and books by Cooper, Irving, Parkman, Simms, as well as by English authors. His own books include *Scenes in Indian Life* (1843) and *Sketches Abroad with Pen and Pencil* (1869).

Darling of the Gods, The, tragedy by David Belasco and John L. Long (qq.v.), produced in 1902 and published in 1928. Yo-San, daughter of the Prince of Tosan, not wishing to marry the man to whom she is betrothed, stipulates that he must capture the notorious outlaw, Prince Kara. Kara, who had once rescued the princess, when she did not know who he was, now comes to the palace and is hidden by her. When they are discovered, she temporarily saves his life by revealing the hiding-place of his followers, and he makes his way to them to die honorably among his samurai.

DARROW, Clarence Seward (1857–1938), Ohio-born lawyer, mainly associated with Chicago, was noted for his defense of labor organizations, acting as counsel for Debs, in the case resulting from the Pullman strike; for William D. Haywood, in his trial for instigating the murder of the governor of Idaho; and for the McNamara brothers, who were accused of dynamiting the Los Angeles *Times* building. He was also known as a criminal lawyer, in such cases as the trial of Loeb and Leopold (1924) and the Fortescue-Massie case in Honolulu. His agnosticism was most strikingly revealed in the Scopes Trial (q.v.). Darrow wrote several books, including: *A Persian Pearl* (1898), literary essays; *An Eye for an Eye,* a novel concerned with the fallacy of the Mosaic law; *Farmington* (1905), a novel about his own youth in Ohio; *Crime, Its Cause and Treatment* (1925); and *The Story of My Life* (1932).

Dartmoor Massacre occurred in Dartmoor Prison, England, where some 1700 American naval prisoners were confined during the War of 1812. On April 6, 1815, a guard killed and wounded several of these prisoners, contending that they were attempting to escape.

Dartmouth College, founded at Hanover, New Hampshire (1769), under a charter issued by George III, although it had been preceded by the Indian school established (1754) by Eleazar Wheelock (q.v.). The Dartmouth College Case (1816–19) was caused by the legislature's attempt to make the college a state institution. Webster, representing the trustees, convinced the U.S. Supreme Court that the royal charter was a contract, and that a state may not pass laws impairing a contract. Among the literary figures who graduated from Dartmouth are: Thomas Odiorne (1791), T.G.Fessenden (1796), Webster (1801), George Ticknor (1807), Rufus Choate (1819), G.P.Marsh (1820), J.H.Noyes (1830), C.F.Richardson (1871), Richard Hovey (1885), F.L. Pattee (1888), and Ben Ames Williams (1910).

Daughter of the Middle Border, A, autobiographical narrative by Hamlin Garland (q.v.), published in 1921 as a continuation of *A Son of the Middle Border* (q.v.). This volume deals with his later life, especially his marriage.

Daughters of the American Revolution, society founded in 1890 for the purpose of preserving national relics and perpetuating a spirit of patriotism. The present membership is numbered at 147,000. It has frequently been accused of reactionary chauvinism, and has been particularly zealous in the hatred of Germany during the World War and of Russia after the World War.

DAVENPORT, John (1597–1670), born in England, graduated from Oxford(1625), and came to America in 1637 with Theophilus Eaton (q.v.), after his nonconformist views had caused him to leave England and Holland. In 1638 he founded the colony at New Haven, becoming its pastor and most prominent leader next to Eaton. He wrote many devotional works, and a defense of theocracy, *A Discourse about Civil Government in a New Plantation whose Design is Religion* (1663), erroneously attributed on the title page to John Cotton. Davenport's *Letters* were published in 1937.

David Harum, *A Story of American Life,* novel by Edward Noyes Westcott (q.v.), posthumously published in 1898.

David is a country banker in the New England town of Homeville, where he is noted as a crusty old widower, an oracle of pithy humor, and a sly horsetrader. Unlearned and commonsensical, he holds that 'The's as much human nature in some folks as th' is in others, if not more,' and, unwilling to accept any but an optimistic philosophy, he contends that 'A reasonable amount of fleas is good for a dog—they keep him f'm broodin' on bein' a dog.' He proves his kindliness by aiding John Lenox, a cultured young New Yorker who comes to Homeville as David's assistant at the bank. Lenox through a misunderstanding has broken his engagement with Mary Blake, but they meet again and marry, and live in Homeville where they are understood to be David's heirs, and name their son for him.

DAVIDSON, Donald [Grady] (1893–), Tennessee author, professor of English at Vanderbilt University, is one of the exponents of regionalism (q.v.) who founded *The Fugitive*, and has contributed to the symposia, *I'll Take My Stand* (1930), *Culture in the South* (1934), and *Who Owns America?* (1936). His own books include *The Tall Men* (1927), a blank verse poem contrasting early and modern Tennessee; *The Attack on Leviathan* (1938), essays opposing the centralization of political and economic power in the North; and *Lee in the Mountains* (1938), short narrative poems on Southern heroes.

DAVIDSON, Thomas (1840–1900), Scottish-born philosopher and scholar, after graduation from Aberdeen University and teaching in Scotland and England, moved to Canada (1866) and shortly thereafter to the U.S., where as a public school teacher in St.Louis he fell under the influence of the idealistic philosophy of W. T.Harris. In 1875 he settled in Boston, though making annual trips abroad during which he absorbed the teachings of Rosimini and developed his philosophy of pluralistic idealism. In London he founded the Fellowship of the New Life (1883), a precursor of the Fabian Society, and later instituted a branch in New York and a summer school variously situated in New Jersey, Connecticut, and the Adirondacks. In association with the People's Institute and the Educational Alliance of New York he organized a 'Bread-Winner's College' for East Side workers. His writings include: *The Philosophical System of Antonio Rosimini-Serbati* (1882), *Aristotle and Ancient Educational Ideals* (1892), *Education of the Greek People* (1894), and *Rousseau and Education According to Nature* (1898).

DAVIES, Arthur (1862–1928), New York painter, whose poetic canvases of fragile figures floating in an unreal landscape preclude any close connection with 'The Eight' (q.v.) with whom he was associated, except a common opposition to academic painting. He was instrumental in the organization of the Armory Show.

DAVIS, Andrew Jackson (1826–1910), known as the 'Poughkeepsie Seer,' after a shiftless childhood fell under the influence of a mesmerist, who found him to be an ideal subject for hypnotism. In 1845, with his own hypnotist and reporter, Davis began a series of lectures delivered ostensibly in states of trance. From the verbatim reports he compiled his *Principles of Nature, Her Divine Revelations, and A Voice of Mankind* (1847), an odd mixture of mysticism, philosophy, science, and occult history, which seems to have influenced Poe's *Eureka* and Chivers's *Search After Truth*. His transition from mesmerism to spiritualism is shown in *The Great Harmonia* (1850) and 26 subsequent works, written without the aid of magnetism.

DAVIS, Charles Augustus (*fl.*1833–4), New York merchant and journalist, was the most popular imitator of Seba Smith, and employed his character, 'Jack Downing,' for similar bold and caustic satire of Jackson's administration. *Letters Written During the President's Tour, 'Down East,' by Myself, Major Jack Downing, of Downingville* (1833) was a pirated work containing a few original letters by Smith, and others by Davis and other imitators, while Davis's own popular book, collecting his newspaper contributions, was *Letters of J.Downing, Major, Downingville Militia . . . to Mr.Dwight of the New York Daily Advertiser* (1834).

DAVIS, Clyde Brion (1895–), author of novels which include: *The Anointed* (1937), the story of a sailor who considers himself divinely inspired, but, ironically, becomes a grocery clerk when caught in the web of marriage; *The Great American Novel* (1938), about a roving newspaper

man who dreams vainly of the novel he means to write, unaware that his own life is the great American novel; and *Nebraska Coast* (1939), the story of a typical, unheroic pioneer. *The Arkansas* (1940) is a history of the river and its region.

DAVIS, H[AROLD] L[ENOIR] (1896–), Oregon poet and novelist, author of *Honey in the Horn* (1935, Pulitzer Prize 1936), a novel of Oregon frontier life.

DAVIS, JEFFERSON (1808–89), born in Kentucky, after his graduation from West Point (1828) served with the army on the Northwest frontier, after which he retired for ten years to his plantation in Mississippi. During the Mexican War, he commanded a regiment of Mississippi Rifles. He was a U.S. senator from Mississippi (1847–51), but after an unsuccessful campaign for the governorship retired again to his plantation, until he was called by Pierce to serve as secretary of war (1853–7). In this position he advocated the Gadsden Purchase and further territorial expansion in the Southwest. Again in the Senate (1857–61), he retired upon the secession of his state. As President of the Confederacy (q.v.) throughout the Civil War, he was widely criticized for his dictatorial policies, although these were the result of the pressure of events rather than of his personal attitude. After the Northern victory, in which Lee surrendered without his approval, Davis was imprisoned for two years at Fort Monroe, Virginia, and spent part of his later life in Canada and Europe. He wrote *The Rise and Fall of the Confederacy* (2 vols.,1881) and *A Short History of the Confederate States of America* (1890).

DAVIS, JOHN (1775–1854), English sailor, whose writings based on his voyages to America include the novel, *The Post Captain* (1805), and *Travels of Four Years and a Half in the United States* (1803). *The First Settlers of Virginia* (1805), a novel, contains the first fictional treatment of Pocahontas. He wrote three other novels about America, *Walter Kennedy* (1808), *The Farmer of New Jersey* (1800), and *The Wanderings of William* (1822). Much of the background for these works was derived from Davis's walking trip through 15 states.

DAVIS, OWEN (1874–), born in Maine, graduated from Harvard (1893), and, after failing to achieve success with serious verse tragedy, turned to the writing of some hundreds of melodramas with conventional Western or New York backgrounds, of which the most famous was *Nellie, the Beautiful Cloak Model.* His later serious plays include *The Detour* (q.v.,1921) and *Icebound* (q.v.,1923, Pulitzer Prize), character studies; and adaptations of *The Great Gatsby* (1926), *The Good Earth* (1932), and *Ethan Frome* (1936). He has written an autobiography, *I'd Like to Do It Again* (1931).

DAVIS, REBECCA [BLAINE] HARDING (1831–1910), lived most of her life in Philadelphia, which is the background of several of her books. She first came into prominence with the publication of her realistic story 'Life in the Iron Mills' (*Atlantic Monthly*, 1861). *Margaret Howth* (1862), a novel of life in a mill town, is somewhat marred by an undue stress on moral contrasts, but clearly shows her purpose 'to dig into this commonplace, this vulgar American life, and see what is in it.' *Waiting for the Verdict* (1868) is a novel laden with pro-Negro propaganda, and *John Andross* (1874), a novel about the Whiskey Ring and Pennsylvania corporation lobbying, shows the effect of political corruption on a weak character. Mrs. Davis was the author of several other novels, an autobiography, and many short stories, some of which are collected in *Silhouettes of American Life* (1892). Some of her later writing drifts into sentimentality and prevailing literary conventions, but, though her plots are weak, she is adept at character portrayal.

DAVIS, RICHARD HARDING (1864–1916), son of Rebecca H. Davis, was born in Philadelphia, where in 1886 he began the journalistic career that was to make him the leading reporter of his time. His reporting and 'specials' for the New York *Sun* (1889–90), and such short stories for *Scribner's* as that about Gallegher the newspaper office boy, attracted wide attention. In 1890 he became managing editor of *Harper's Weekly*. The letters reporting his various journalistic tours of this period were collected in *The West from a Car Window* (1892), *The Rulers of the Mediterranean* (1894), *Our English Cousins* (1894), *About Paris* (1895), and *Three Gringos in Venezuela and Central America* (1896). As correspondent for New York and London papers, he re-

ported the Spanish war in Cuba, the Greco-Turkish War, the Spanish-American War, the Boer War, the Russo-Japanese War, and the World War. From his observations came the following books: *Cuba in War Time* (1897), *A Year from a Reporter's Note-Book* (1898), *The Cuban and Porto Rican Campaigns* (1898), *With Both Armies in South Africa* (1900), *Notes of a War Correspondent* (1910), *With the Allies* (1914), and *With the French in France and Salonika* (1916). As a correspondent, Davis was a vivid and picturesque writer, always dramatizing the bare facts of his stories. After the publication of *Gallegher and Other Stories* (q.v.,1891), he collected more than 80 other short stories in eleven volumes, all of which show adept craftsmanship but are considered journalistic, with more stress on effect and form than on substance. *Van Bibber and Others* (1892) contains anecdotes of New York life, concerning the popular character, Courtlandt Van Bibber, a rich young clubman who quixotically breaks laws with one hand while befriending the weak and poor with the other. The title story of *The Exiles* (1894) deals with moral contrasts in a colony of American outcasts at Tangier. *The Lion and the Unicorn* (1899), *Ranson's Folly* (q.v.,1902), and *The Scarlet Car* (1907) are among the other popular collections of tales. His vivid but superficial novels include such treatments of the international scene as *Soldiers of Fortune* (q.v.,1897), *The White Mice* (1909), *The King's Jackal* (1898), *Captain Macklin* (1902), *The Bar Sinister* (1903), and *Vera the Medium* (1908). From Davis's facile pen also came 25 plays, of which the most popular were *Ranson's Folly* (1904), *The Dictator* (q.v.,1904), and *Miss Civilization* (1906).

DAVIS, William Stearns (1877–1930), Massachusetts novelist and scholar, taught at the University of Minnesota (1909–27), and was the author of such scholarly works as the *Influence of Wealth in Imperial Rome* (1910), *A Short History of the Near East* (1922), *Life on a Medieval Barony* (1923), and *Life in Elizabethan Days* (1930). His romantic novels, based on careful historical study, include: *A Friend of Cæsar* (1900); *God Wills It* (1902), about the First Crusade; *Falaise of the Blessed Voice* (1904), concerned with Louis IX; *Friar of Wittenberg* (1912); *Gilman of Redford* (1927), a story of the American Revolution; and *The Whirlwind* (1929), about the French Revolution.

Davis Cup, trophy donated in 1900 by Dwight F. Davis, and awarded annually to the winning men's team in the tennis competition between England and the U.S.

DAWSON, William (1704–52), English-born poet who, after graduation from Oxford (1725), emigrated to America, where he became a professor at William and Mary and later (1743–52) its president. His *Poems on Several Occasions* (1736), which appeared anonymously as 'By a Gentleman of Virginia,' were mostly written in England and show the strong influence of Pope and a frequent use of anacreontics.

DAY, Benjamin Henry (1810–89) was associated with the Springfield *Republican* and later founded the *Sun* (q.v.,1833), New York's first penny daily newspaper. He was the grandfather of Clarence Day, and the father of Benjamin Day (1838–1916), who invented the Benday process of shading plates in the printing of illustrations.

DAY, Clarence [Shepard] (1874–1935), essayist, best known for his autobiographical works, *God and My Father* (1932), *Life With Father* (1935), *Life With Mother* (1937), and *Father and I* (1940), in which, with affectionate humor, he characterizes his family's Victorian traditions and typical upperclass life in 19th-century New York. *Life With Father* was dramatized (1939) by Howard Lindsay and Russel Crouse. Day was also noted for his genial, witty considerations of such matters as *This Simian World* (1920), satirizing human traits by speculating on possible evolutions from other animal families, and *Scenes from the Mesozoic and Other Drawings* (1935). Other books include: *The Crow's Nest* (1921), enlarged as *After All* (1936); *Thoughts Without Words* (1928); and *In the Green Mountain Country* (1934).

Day of Doom, The, theological poem in ballad meter, by Michael Wigglesworth (q.v.), published in 1662. The subject is indicated by the subtitle, *A Poetical Description of the Great and Last Judgment.* Few stanzas approach the poetic, and the work is now interesting only as a historical document, but in its own day it was immensely popular both in America and

England. It is estimated that a copy was sold for one in every 20 persons then in New England, or one in every 45 in the colonies. Other versified theology of the same nature is annexed to the work as preface and postcript, while 'Vanity of Vanities' serves as a 'Song of Emptiness To Fill Up the Empty Pages Following.'

DAYE, STEPHEN (*c.*1594–1668), came to Boston (1638) under contract to the man who brought the first printing press to the English colonies. The owner died during the voyage, and Daye set up the press at Cambridge. Although untrained in typography, he became the first printer of New England. His first piece of printing was a broadside, the *Oath of a Free-man* (q.v.,1639), and during the next decade he issued more than 20 other items, of which the most famous is the *Bay Psalm Book* (1640).

Days, blank verse poem by Emerson (q.v.), published in the *Atlantic Monthly* (1857) and reprinted in *May-Day and Other Pieces* (1867). When the Days come to offer gifts 'to each . . . after his will,' the poet hastily chooses only 'a few herbs and apples,' realizing too late the scorn of the departing Day.

Days Without End, play by Eugene O'Neill (q.v.).

Deacon's Masterpiece, The; or, The Wonderful 'One-Hoss Shay,' poem by Holmes (q.v.) in *The Autocrat of the Breakfast Table,* was first published in the *Atlantic Monthly* (1858). In its rimed four-stress couplets, anapaests are frequently substituted for iambs, and a humorous effect is derived from the monotonous rime and absurd rhythm. A parable of the breakdown of Calvinism, the poem tells of a deacon who wanted a carriage that would never break down, so that he built all of its parts with equal strength. Exactly a century after the construction of this masterpiece, the whole work fell apart at once.

Dead End, play by Sidney Kingsley (q.v.), produced in 1935 and published in 1936.

At the 'dead end' of a New York street, the scene includes squalid tenements, a wharf over the East River, and an exclusive apartment building, whose rear entrance is in use because of repairs at the front. The tenants, among whom are Jack Hilton and his mistress Kay, and Mr. Griswald and his son Philip, are affronted by the sight of the 'kids,' who swim in the filthy river, and play and fight in the streets. The five kids, Tommy, Dippy, T.B., Angel, and Spit, are shown to have developed a vicious antisocial attitude, despite the interference of Tommy's sister Drina, and Gimpty, an unemployed crippled young architect, who has grown up in the neighborhood and draws futile plans for its abolition. Gimpty and Kay, in love, are unable to face a penniless marriage. 'Baby-Face' Martin, a gangster, returns to the street to visit his mother, and Gimpty wins a reward for betraying him to police, who kill Martin. Even this wealth does not assure his future, and Kay leaves to marry Hilton. Tommy is arrested for abusing Philip and attacking Mr. Griswald. Drina, fearing that her brother will be permanently 'bad' after reform school, appeals to Gimpty, whom she loves, and he promises to use his 'blood-money' for Tommy's defense.

DEADWOOD DICK, sobriquet of Richard W. Clarke (1845–1930), English-born frontiersman in South Dakota, noted as an Indian fighter and express guard of Black Hills gold shipments. A series of dime novels was written about his exploits, mainly by Edward L. Wheeler, although they were later attributed to Clarke.

DEANE, SILAS (1737–89), Connecticut delegate to the Continental Congress (1774–5), was colonial agent in France (1776–8), where he successfully negotiated for arms, supplies, money, and the enlistment of such officers as Lafayette, De-Kalb, Pulaski, and von Steuben. With Franklin and Arthur Lee, he concluded the treaty of alliance and commercial treaty between France and the U.S., but was recalled because of Lee's ill-founded allegations against him.

Dear Judas, narrative poem by Robinson Jeffers (q.v.).

Death Comes for the Archbishop, novel by Willa Cather (q.v.), published in 1927.

Bishop Jean Latour, and his vicar, Father Joseph Vaillant, together create pioneer missions and organize the new diocese of New Mexico. Youthful friends in France, they are lifelong comrades, united by a love of their native country, as well as by their common purpose, but their characters are sharply contrasted. Latour

is an intellectual and a patrician, highly sensitive but tolerant and possessed of an indomitable resolution and courage, remaining solitary in the midst of his people's love and his friend's devotion. Vaillant is practical, humane, companionable, and vigorous. The two combine to triumph over the apathy of the Hopi and Navajo Indians, the opposition of corrupt Spanish priests, and adverse climatic and topographic conditions. They are assisted by Kit Carson and by such devoted Indians as the guide Jacinto. When Vaillant goes as a missionary bishop to Colorado, they are finally separated, but Latour dies soon after his friend, universally revered and respected, to lie in state in the great Santa Fé cathedral that he himself created.

Death in the Afternoon, discursive work by Hemingway (q.v.), published in 1932. In it he describes the rearing and fighting of bulls in Spain, and depicts the bullfight as a kind of microcosmic tragedy, in which the death of the bull is inevitable, but must be achieved by the observance of ritual, which gives the animal a maximum chance to destroy the matador. The discussion includes lengthy digressions, in the form of conversations between the author and an old lady, presenting his philosophy through the discussion of various aspects of life and death.

Death of General Montgomery, The, blank verse tragedy by H.H.Brackenridge (q.v.), written in 1777 for production at Somerset Academy, Maryland, of which he was a master. Intended primarily as an exercise in oratory, it deals with the ill-fated attack of General Montgomery on Quebec.

Death of the Flowers, The, threnody by Bryant (q.v.) on the death of his sister, published in 1825 and collected in his *Poems* (1832). In six-line stanzas of rimed seven-stress lines, the poem expresses Bryant's restrained but profound grief, identifying the passing of the woman with the decay of summer's beauty in

> The melancholy days . . . the saddest of the year.

Death of the Hired Man, The, blank verse dramatic narrative by Robert Frost (q.v.), published in *North of Boston* (1914).

Warren and Mary, a farmer and his wife, discuss the return of Silas, an aged farmhand who has worked for them often in the past, always wandering off when other employment offered itself, and coming 'home' at times of difficulty. Warren wants to dismiss him, but Mary describes the poignant contrast between his former proud competence and his present broken health, loneliness, and pitiful eagerness to serve. She tells of his infirm mind, which she thinks a sign of approaching death, and her husband is moved to reconsider. When he enters the house to talk with Silas, he discovers the old man dead.

DE BOW, JAMES DUNWOODY BROWNSON (1820-67), born at Charleston, first won prominence as editor of the *Southern Quarterly Review* (q.v.), which he left to found his own monthly, *DeBow's Review* (1846–80), issued with differing titles from New Orleans, Columbia, Nashville, and Washington. Mainly written by the editor, the magazine was influential in molding Southern opinion in ante-bellum days, through its violently partisan championing of Calhoun, the protective tariff, and slavery. After the Civil War, it was sympathetic to the Reconstruction. DeBow's *Industrial Resources of the Southern and Western States* (3 vols.,1853) reprints important articles from the *Review*.

DE BRY, THEODOR, see *Bry*.

DEBS, EUGENE VICTOR (1855–1926), born in Indiana, became a railway worker (1871), and in 1880 became secretary-treasurer of the Brotherhood of Locomotive Firemen and editor of the organization's magazine. He organized the American Railway Union (1893), and as its first president was an outstanding advocate of industrial unionism. The strike against the Pullman Company (1894) brought him national prominence, and a six-months' jail sentence for conspiracy to obstruct the mails. He emerged from jail a convert to Socialism, and as the leading Socialist of the U.S. was five times a candidate for the presidency (1900, '04, '08, '12, '20), polling 402,321 votes in 1904 and 901,062 in 1912. Meanwhile he helped edit the party paper, *The Appeal to Reason*, was an organizer of the I.W.W., from which he later withdrew, and led in pacifist protest of the World War. In 1918 he was sentenced to jail for ten years, as a violator of the Espionage Act, because he had assailed the administration's prosecution of persons charged with sedition. While still in the Atlanta penitentiary (1920), he polled 919,799 votes for the

presidency. He was released (1921) by order of Harding, but his citizenship was not restored. In 1925–6 he edited the *American Appeal*, organ of the combined Socialist and La Follette forces. His *Speeches* were collected in 1929, and he was the author of such books as *Liberty* (1895), *Unionism and Socialism, a Plea for Both* (1904), *The American Movement* (1904), *Industrial Unionism* (1905), *The Growth of Socialism* (1910), *The Children of the Poor* (1911), and *Walls and Bars* (1927).

DE CASSERES, BENJAMIN (1873–), Philadelphia-born journalist, critic, essayist, and poet, resident in New York City. His iconoclastic works, frequently reminiscent of the *fin de siècle* style, include: *The Shadow-Eater* (1915), poems; *Chameleon—Being the Book of My Selves* (1922); *James Gibbons Huneker* (1925), *Forty Immortals* (1925), essays; *The Superman in America* (1929); *Mencken and Shaw* (1930), critical studies; and *Fantasia Impromptu; the Adventures of an Intellectual Faun* (1937).

DECATUR, STEPHEN (1779–1820), naval officer, famous for his recapture and demolition of the U.S. frigate *Philadelphia* in the harbor of Tripoli (1804) after its seizure by the Tripolitans. He participated in the bombardment of the city in the same year, and in 1815 commanded the squadron against the Tripolitan pirates that forced a treaty ending the payment of American tribute to Algiers. Decatur died as the result of a duel with James Barron, a naval captain whom he had helped suspend from the service. At a dinner in his honor after the second Tripolitan expedition, he gave the famous toast, 'Our country! In her intercourse with foreign nations may she be always right; but our country, right or wrong.'

Declaration of Independence, formal proclamation of the thirteen colonies, announcing their separation from Great Britain, was adopted July 4, 1776. In the second Continental Congress on June 7, Richard Henry Lee, a Virginia delegate, proposed a resolution of independence, and four days later Jefferson, Franklin, Adams, Roger Sherman, and Robert Livingston were appointed as a committee to draft the declaration. The actual writing was done by Jefferson, although corrections were made by Franklin, Adams, and the Congress at large. The document is based on the natural-rights theory of government, derived from Locke and 18th-century French philosophers, and proclaims that the function of government is to guarantee the inalienable rights with which men are endowed. These include 'Life, Liberty, and the pursuit of Happiness.' The declaration contended that, since George III had wilfully violated these rights, revolution was justifiable and necessary. The document was signed (Aug. 2) by 56 colonial representatives.

Declaration of Rights, protest against taxation without representation, issued by the Stamp Act Congress (1765). A similar declaration was issued by the first Continental Congress.

Déclassée, play by Zoë Akins (q.v.).

Deepening Stream, The, novel by Dorothy Canfield (q.v.).

Deephaven, local-color sketches by Sarah Orne Jewett (q.v.), published in 1877.

Deephaven, described by Helen Denis, who accompanies her friend Kate Lancaster on a summer visit to the Maine seaport town, is isolated and poor because of the decline of its port since the early 1800's. Its peculiar distinction, deriving from its decayed grandeur and fading memories, makes the place seem 'more like one of the lazy little English seaside towns . . . It was not in the least American.' The population mainly consists of poor fishermen and farmers, and retired sea-captains and their families, except for such relics of aristocracy as old Miss Chauncey, the lonely, half-insane resident of East Parish, whose mind dwells still in her distant youth. 'The Captains' are usually to be found 'sunning themselves like turtles on one of the wharves,' exchanging anecdotes of seafaring days. Life moves in a slow rhythm of reminiscence, and perhaps the busiest of the townspeople are such shrewd, methodical housewives as Mrs. Kew, wife of the lighthouse keeper, 'peart' old Mrs. Bonny, and the Widow Jim, tenderly faithful to the memory of her brutal husband.

DEERING, NATHANIEL (1791–1881), Maine editor and dramatist, whose works include *Carabasset* (1831), a tragedy; *Bozzaris* (1851), a romantic blank verse drama on the Greek revolt; and *The Clairvoyants*, a comedy first published in 1934.

Deerslayer, The, romance by Cooper (q.v.), published in 1841. An anonymous dramatization was produced the same year. The romance is the first in plot se-

quence of the Leather-Stocking Tales (q.v.).

At Lake Otsego, during the French and Indian Wars, lives the trapper Thomas Hutter, with his daughters Judith and Hetty. The frontiersmen, giant Hurry Harry, and Natty Bumppo, known as Deerslayer among the Delaware Indians, help Hutter to resist an Iroquois attack and return to his log fortress. There Deerslayer is joined by his friend, the Mohican chief Chingachgook, and they attempt to ransom Hutter and Hurry Harry, who have been captured. Feeble-minded Hetty slips away to the Iroquois camp, where she is unharmed because of the Indians' veneration for the demented, and before her return she sees her father and Harry, as well as Chingachgook's bride Hist, also a captive. The trapper and Harry are released, but Deerslayer, who helps his friend rescue Hist, is captured, and Hutter is later killed. Judith, who discovers that she and Hetty are not Hutter's children but are actually of noble birth, tells Deerslayer, when he is released on parole, that she loves him. She tries to prevent his return to the Iroquois, but he keeps his word, returns, and is about to be tortured. Judith appears, delaying the executioners until Chingachgook arrives with a troop of British soldiers. Hetty is killed, and Judith disappears. Although Deerslayer later learns that Judith married one of the titled British officers, he always treasures romantic memories of the affair.

DEFOREST, JOHN WILLIAM (1826–1906), Connecticut-born novelist, utilized his experiences as a Civil War captain to write the first realistic novel of that conflict, *Miss Ravenel's Conversion from Secession to Loyalty* (q.v.,1867), which gives a vivid picture of a soldier's feelings in battle, the sordid corruption and inefficiency during the war, and the subtleties of the feminine mind. *Kate Beaumont* (1872) is a realistic study of South Carolina life and manners, which DeForest had observed as a district commander of the Freedmen's Bureau. Further examples of his vigorous realism and study of character are *Honest John Vane* (1875) and *Playing the Mischief* (1875), political novels set in the corrupt Washington of Grant's administration. His other books include a scholarly *History of the Indians in Connecticut* (1851); *Witching Times* (1857), a novel of the Salem Witchcraft Trials; *Seacliff; or, The Mystery of the Westervelts* (1859), a novel of domestic tragedy in contemporary Connecticut; *Overland* (1871), a story of frontier New Mexico and California; *The Wetherell Affair* (1873), a mystery story; *Irene the Missionary* (1879), a novel set in Syria, where the author had traveled in the 1850's, and which had formed the background of his *Oriental Acquaintance: in a Series of Letters from Asia Minor* (1856); *The Bloody Chasm* (1881), a novel of North and South immediately after the Civil War; and *A Lover's Revolt* (1898), a romance of the Revolutionary War.

Deformed, The; or, Woman's Trial, verse drama by R.P.Smith (q.v.), produced and published in 1830. Indebted to Dekker's *The Honest Whore* and Dunlap's adaptation, *The Italian Father*, the play is concerned with Adorni, a misshapen man who wonders why his wife Eugenia should love him, and urges his friend Claudio to test her fidelity. Then, suddenly moved by jealousy, he divorces Eugenia and has Claudio condemned to death. Convinced later of his wife's fidelity, he substitutes himself in the position of Claudio, only to have the execution stopped by order of the duke.

Degradation of the Democratic Dogma, The, see *Adams, Henry*.

Deism, trend of religious thought, characterized by belief in the existence of a God who rules natural phenomena by established laws, not by miracles, and in the rational nature of men, who are capable of understanding these laws and of guiding their lives by them. In America, deism evolved in part as a protest against Calvinism, partly as an attempt to reconcile religious belief with scientific thought. The former attitude appears in the writings of Charles Chauncey and Jonathan Mayhew, and the latter in Cotton Mather's *The Christian Philosopher* (q.v., 1721), which attempts to give proof of benevolent design in the universe. A more positive deism, advocating a belief in a natural universal religion, and having a more utilitarian basis, appears in the writings of Franklin and the eclectic philosophy of Jefferson. The political liberalism of the Revolution was related to the attitude exhibited in such deistic works as Ethan Allen's *Reason the Only Oracle of Man*, and the books of Elihu Palmer (1764–1806), who attempted to establish

a republican religion. The most extreme expression of deism is Paine's *The Age of Reason* (q.v.,1794–5). By about 1810 the force of this movement was arrested by the emotional reaction of revivalism. The emphasis on the perfectibility of man and of human institutions, engendered by the Revolution, gave way to renewed concern with the preparation of the soul for immortality. Deism thus declined as a movement, but its views continued to appear sporadically, in such authors as Abner Kneeland, the two Owens, Orestes Brownson, and Frances Wright, and it is a source of later rational and skeptical philosophic thought, as well as of the religious liberalism of Unitarianism, Universalism, and other movements.

DE KALB, BARON (Johann Kalb) (1721–80), German general in the American Revolution, after long service with the French army came to America as a French secret agent (1768). In 1776, with Lafayette, he joined the Continental army, and took part in the Philadelphia campaign, wintering at Valley Forge. He fought gallantly as second in command to Gates at Camden, where he was fatally wounded.

DE KOVEN, [HENRY LOUIS] REGINALD (1859–1920), Connecticut-born composer and critic in Chicago and New York, founded and conducted the Washington Philharmonic Orchestra (1902–05). He wrote about 150 songs and instrumental works, and two operas with librettos by Percy MacKaye, *The Canterbury Pilgrims* (1917) and *Rip Van Winkle* (1920), but is best known for his operettas, of which the most famous is *Robin Hood* (1890).

DE KRUIF, PAUL (1890–), was born in Michigan, at whose state university he taught bacteriology until he served in the First World War. He is noted for his popular books on scientific subjects, including *Microbe Hunters* (1926), the stories of 14 pioneers of bacteriology; *Hunger Fighters* (1928), about men who have worked to increase the North American food supply; *Men Against Death* (1932), concerned with modern microbe hunters; and *Why Keep Them Alive?* (1936), recounting scientific improvements that are not in use because of lack of money. His other books include *Our Medicine Men* (1922) and *Seven Iron Men* (1929). De Kruif provided background materials for Sinclair Lewis's *Arrowsmith* and Sidney Howard's *Yellow Jack.*

DE LA ROCHE, MAZO (1885–), Canadian novelist, best known for her *Jalna* (1927), the story of three generations of a tempestuous family ruled by a strong-willed matriarch. This was the first of a series of novels constituting the family chronicle of an Ontario estate, including also *Whiteoaks of Jalna* (1929), *Finch's Fortune* (1931), *The Master of Jalna* (1933), *Young Renny* (1935), *Whiteoak Harvest* (1936), and *Whiteoak Heritage* (1940). *Jalna* was dramatized by the author as *Whiteoaks* (1936), and her other works include *Growth of a Man* (1938), a novel.

DE LA WARR, THOMAS WEST, *Baron* (1577–1618), first colonial governor of Virginia (1610–18), personally supervised the activities of the early settlement, and encouraged further colonization by writing a *Relation . . . of the Colonie, Planted in Virginia* (1611).

DELAND, MARGARET[TA WADE CAMPBELL] (1857–), novelist born in a small Pennsylvania town that forms the background of many of her books and has been described as being 'not so much a place as a number of people and a state of mind.' Her first novel, *John Ward, Preacher* (1888), was set in such a town, and concerned a 19th-century Calvinist minister, who was torn between his doctrines and his love for his wife, a liberal thinker. Her next novels, *Sidney* (1890) and *Philip and His Wife* (1894), were also character studies. Her greatest works in this vein are considered to be *The Awakening of Helena Richie* (1906) and its sequel *The Iron Woman* (1911), portraying the life of a selfish woman and her gradual growth in realizing her own limitations. Later works include: *The Rising Tide* (1916), a novel dealing with the suffrage movement; *The Vehement Flame* (1922), the story of the love of a young boy and a mature woman; *The Kays* (1926), a study of a flinty New England woman; and *Captain Archer's Daughter* (1932), a historical novel of Maine, contrasting the old families, the summer visitors, and the newly rich. Her short stories, which are also primarily character studies, have been collected in several volumes, including: *Old Chester Tales* (1898); *Dr. Lavendar's People* (1903); *R.J.'s Mother and Some Other People* (1908); and *Around Old Chester* (1915). *New Friends in Old Chester* (1924) con-

tains three novelettes, and *If This Be I* (1935) is an account of her childhood.

DELANO, Alonzo (1802?–74), California author, wrote under the pseudonym The Old Block. Besides a play, *A Live Woman in the Mines* (1857), and a serious volume, *Life on the Plains and Among the Diggings* (1857), he wrote many humorous sketches and stories, marked by a frontier humor ranging from the absurd to the pathetic. These were collected in *Pen-Knife Sketches, or Chips of the Old Block* (1853), *Old Block's Sketch Book* (1856), and *A Sojourn with Royalty* (1936).

DELANO, Amasa (1763–1823), Massachusetts sea captain, whose autobiographical *Narrative of Voyages and Travels* (1817) served as the source of Melville's story, 'Benito Cereno' (q.v.).

Delaware Indians, confederacy of Algonquian tribes, were given their present name by colonists who found them in the Delaware River Valley. Their tribal chronicle, *Walum-Olum*, claims that their original home was in the northwest. In 1682 they made their famous treaty with Penn, which they retained for 50 years. Defeated by the Iroquois (1720), they moved west into Ohio, where they sided with the French in the French and Indian War, and against the Americans in the uprising of Pontiac and the Revolutionary War. The whites attacked a peaceful Delaware settlement in 1782, causing the remainder of these Christian Indians to flee to Ontario. Others ceded their lands to the U.S. and moved to Oklahoma. The Delaware figure as noble, wise, and just in the Leather-Stocking Tales, and appear also in Freneau's 'Prophecy of King Tammany,' Brown's *Edgar Huntley*, Paulding's *Koningsmarke*, and Irving's *Tour of the Prairies*. The most comprehensive early account of the Delaware was Schoolcraft's six-volume *History, Conditions, and Prospects of the Indian Tribes in the United States*, which was used as a source by Thoreau and Longfellow.

De Leon, Daniel (1852–1914), born in Curaçao, graduated from Columbia University, and became a leader of the Socialist Labor Party, editing its journal, *The People*. After the affiliation of this group with the Socialist Party (1899), he assisted in the organization of the I.W.W., and later promoted a rival group that worked for industrial unionism. The most important of his many pamphlets is *Socialist Reconstruction of Society* (1905).

Delight Makers, The, novel by Adolph Bandelier (q.v.).

Delineator, The (1873–1937), New York monthly magazine of women's fashions, founded by Ebenezer Buttrick, in 1894 began the broader policy of printing articles and fiction of interest to women. Its success was so great that special editions were published for England, France, Germany, and Spain. Under the editorship of Dreiser (1907–10), the magazine dealt with such current problems as divorce and woman suffrage, and began crusades for improved living conditions in homes and public institutions, with many prominent contributors. During the World War, when Honoré Morrow was editor (1914–19), *The Delineator* was violently anti-German, and it was later much concerned with post-war morality and radical activities, but after 1926 returned to its emphasis on feminine fashions. Although the most popular of women's magazines, with a circulation of more than 2,000,000, it lost its identity by a merger with the *Pictorial Review*.

DELL, Floyd (1887–), born in Illinois, after a career in Chicago journalism moved to New York (1913), and for the next ten years was a prominent radical, serving as an editor of *The Masses* and *The Liberator*. He wrote one-act plays for little theaters, such as *The Angel Intrudes* (1918), and at this time also wrote a study of child psychology, *Were You Ever a Child?* (1919). His first novel, *Moon-Calf* (q.v., 1920), won great acclaim as a representative document of the disillusioned post-war generation. This was followed by its sequel, *The Briary-Bush* (1921), and by *Janet March* (1923), *Runaway* (1925), and other novels concerned with the hopelessness of youth in a confused world, the spirit of the jazz age, and the revolt against convention typified by the residents of Greenwich Village. Dell's many later works include: *Intellectual Vagabondage—An Apology for the Intelligentsia* (1926); *An Old Man's Folly* (1926), a novel about World War pacifists; *The Outline of Marriage* (1926); *An Unmarried Father* (1927), a humorous novel, dramatized by the author with Thomas Mitchell as *Little Accident* (1928); *Upton Sinclair* (1927); *Love in the Machine Age* (1930); and his autobiography, *Homecoming* (1933).

DELMAR, VIÑA (1905–), New York author, whose novels, *Bad Girl* (1928) and *Kept Woman* (1929), were sensations of the day for their sleek, hard-boiled treatments of jazz-age girls. Her first novel was dramatized in 1930, and other works include *Loose Ladies* (1929), a collection of sketches.

Delphian Club, Baltimore literary association, founded in 1816, whose membership included John Neal, Francis Scott Key, and Samuel Woodworth. Its literary organ was *The Portico* (q.v.).

DE MILLE, JAMES (1833–80), Canadian author and professor, was extremely popular during his lifetime as a writer of books for boys, and of such sensational novels as *The Martyr of the Catacombs* (1858), *The American Baron* (1869), *The Cryptogram* (1871), *A Comedy of Terrors* (1872), and *A Strange Manuscript in a Copper Cylinder* (1888).

DEMING, P[HILANDER] (1829–1915), New York author, whose realistic accounts of life in upper New York state were published as: *Adirondack Stories* (1880); *Tompkins and Other Folks* (1885); and *The Story of a Pathfinder* (1907).

Democracy: *An American Novel,* by Henry Adams (q.v.), was published anonymously in 1880. 'Old Granite' is believed to represent President Hayes.

Madeleine Lee, a young New York widow, moves to Washington to investigate 'the tremendous forces of government, and the machinery of society, at work. What she wanted was POWER.' With her sister Sybil, she opens a house, attends Senate debates, and entertains legislators and diplomats. Through her admirer John Carrington, a lawyer, she captures as her guest the political boss, Senator Ratcliffe of Illinois, whose party has just elected the new President, 'Old Granite.' The President-elect, an unsophisticated Indiana lawyer, is lost among the capital's intrigues, and, though he hates and distrusts Ratcliffe, is forced to place control of patronage in his hands, and to appoint him secretary of the treasury. During the months before the inauguration, Ratcliffe falls in love with Madeleine, who is first repelled by his coarse vanity, then fascinated by his self-command and position. Carrington, who undertakes with Sybil a secret campaign against the senator, is sent to Mexico on business, but through Sybil he reveals to Madeleine that Ratcliffe is guilty of selling his influence. Disillusioned, she now refuses his proposal, at which Ratcliffe calls her a heartless coquette and departs wrathfully. Having learned enough of the mechanism and instruments of power, Madeleine deserts Washington for a tour of Europe, and Sybil writes Carrington that he may yet hope to win her sister's hand.

Democratic Party, originated as the Jeffersonian, anti-Federalist Democratic Republican party, distinguished from its conservative opposition by its sympathy with the principles of the French Revolution and its championing of the interests of farmers and laborers, doctrines of individualism, and the theory of state rights. First victorious in the election of 1800, the Democratic Republicans (or Democrats, as they began to be called early in the 1800's) remained in power until 1849, although frequently divided between conservative and radical groups (see *Locofoco*). The accession of Jackson, leader of the frontier faction, caused conservatives to form the Whig party (q.v.), temporarily victorious under W.H.Harrison (1840–41). Pierce and Buchanan were Democratic Presidents (1853–61), but the party was subject to further splits during the ante-bellum period, as in sectional disputes over questions of slavery and territorial extension, and such schisms as that of the Hunkers and Barnburners (qq.v.) in New York. In the campaign of 1860, Lincoln's opponents included a Northern Democrat (Douglas) and a Southern Democrat (Breckinridge), and the former party was completely transformed with the rise of the Republicans and the Civil War. Almost without exception, the Democratic party has since maintained control of the 'solid South,' resulting from opposition to Republican Reconstruction policies, and the Democratic program has been traditionally agrarian and opposed to a protective tariff. Tilden, the Democratic candidate, lost a closely contested election in 1876, after which the party constituted a powerful minority opposition, except for the administrations of Cleveland (1885–9, 1893–7). Bryan's defeat on the popular Free Silver platform (1896) appeared to indicate the final failure of the Democrats, but the Republican-Progressive split of 1912 made possible the election of the liberal Wilson. Reac-

tion following the World War brought the Republicans again into control, until the administration of Franklin Roosevelt.

Democratic Review, see *United States Magazine.*

Democratic Vistas, prose pamphlet by Whitman (q.v.), published in 1871, incorporating earlier essays. It was reprinted in *Two Rivulets* (1876).

The main themes are the ideals of democracy and individualism, which the author does not consider to be incompatible, and he outlines a new cultural order for the U.S. He condemns the degradation of democracy and the growth of cankerous wealth during the post-Civil War period, prophesies a future greatness, and announces that there must be a declaration of cultural independence to achieve a truly national indigenous literature.

Demos and Dionysus, blank verse dialogue by E.A.Robinson (q.v.), published in *Dionysus in Doubt* (q.v.,1925).

Personifying in Dionysus his own passion for individualistic self-development, the poet expresses his contempt for the spirit of democracy, and for the 'illegitimate twins' of Demos, Reason and Equality. Dionysus inquires how Demos plans to have, in his 'attractive prison,' the satisfactions of love and art, 'the music of the world and of the stars.' Denying the concept of a prison, as well as the ultimate goods mentioned by Dionysus, Demos forecasts a world in which

> . . . every little bee
> Will have his little task, and having done it,
> His time to play.

The ancient god of joy replies, 'I beg your mechanistic leave to shudder,' and prefers to 'stay in Hell,' but predicts his return, after the temporary triumph of his rival.

DEMPSEY, Jack [William Harrison Dempsey] (1895–), heavyweight boxing champion of the world (1919–26), until he was defeated by Gene Tunney. He was nicknamed 'the Manassa Mauler.'

DENNETT, Tyler (1883–), scholar of American history and international relations, connected with Columbia, Princeton, and the Department of State, was president of Williams College (1934–7). His works include: *Roosevelt and the Russo-Japanese War* (1924); and *Biography of John Hay* (1933, Pulitzer Prize 1934).

DENNIE, Joseph (1768–1812), born in Boston and educated at Harvard, after a brief legal career turned to writing. At Walpole, New Hampshire, he became the leader of a group of conservative Federalist literati, and edited the *Farmer's Weekly Museum* (q.v.,1796–8), for which he wrote the graceful 'Lay Preacher' essays. Under the pseudonym Colon, he collaborated with Royall Tyler, who adopted the name Spondee, in contributing satirical prose and poetry to various newspapers. His later life was spent in Philadelphia, where he founded the Tuesday Club (q.v.) and edited *The Port Folio* (q.v.,1801–9), for which he wrote further Lay Preacher essays, and for which he obtained original manuscripts from Thomas Moore, Leigh Hunt, and Thomas Campbell. Forty of his earlier essays were published in book form (1796), and another selection in 1817, but Dennie's reputation as an 'American Addison' was eclipsed by that of Irving. His *Letters* were published in 1936.

DENTON, Daniel (*d.*1696), planter and public official of Jamaica, New York, was the author of *A Brief Description of New-York* (London, 1670), the first separate work in English relating to the province, intended 'for the encouragement of many that have a desire to remove themselves' and 'for the satisfaction of others that would make a trade thither.'

DENYS, Nicolas (1598–1688), French trader in Nova Scotia, founded various settlements, purchased a grant on the coast of Nova Scotia and New Brunswick, and from 1654 to 1687 governed this region and Newfoundland. His account, an important source on Acadian history, was published in 1672, and translated as *The Description and Natural History of the Coasts of North America* (1908).

DERBY, George Horatio (1823–61), Massachusetts-born army officer and author, was famous as a wit and practical joker, but his writing was done chiefly for his own amusement, appearing in various newspapers and magazines, especially during his residence in California (1849–56). His friends collected these scattered pieces in two volumes, the popular *Phoenixiana* (1855) and *Squibob Papers* (1865), named from his pseudonyms, John Phoenix and Squibob. Although he is usually classed as a 'Western humorist,' Derby was a well-educated gentleman with an innate love of fun, who wrote in a spirit of satire, irony, and burlesque. To some extent he carries on the tradition of urbane

humor represented by Irving and the *Knickerbocker Magazine*, but his boisterous quality is in the new Western spirit. His burlesques of contemporary subjects are somewhat dated, but modern readers can appreciate such *jeux d'ésprit* as 'A New System of English Grammar' and 'Musical Review Extraordinary.'

DERLETH, AUGUST [WILLIAM] (1909–), Wisconsin author, after graduation from the state university (1930), produced 19 books in 7 years. His prose works, concerned with Wisconsin and showing a sensitive appreciation of the country, include: *Place of Hawks* (1935), *Still Is the Summer Night* (1937), *Wind Over Wisconsin* (1938), *Any Day Now* (1938), *Restless Is the River* (1939), *Atmosphere of Houses* (1940), *Country Growth* (1940), *Bright Journey*, and *Village Year: A Sac Prairie Journal* (1941). His poems, *Hawk on the Wind* (1937), *Man Track Here* (1939), and *Here on a Darkling Plain* (1940) are also concerned with his native countryside. He has also written detective novels. Since 1940 he has given a course on regional literature at the University of Wisconsin.

Descent into the Maelström, A, story by Poe (q.v.), published in *Graham's Magazine* (1841) and reprinted in *Prose Tales* (1843).

A Norwegian sailor and his brother are trapped in their fishing boat, when a hurricane draws it into the fearful Moskoeström, a whirlpool that periodically forms and subsides. Whirled about the inner verge of the gulf, they face death, and the elder brother becomes insane. The other sees that of the many objects in the grasp of the whirlpool, small cylindrical ones are least likely to be destroyed, and, lashing himself to a cask, he jumps into the sea. When the Moskoe-ström subsides he floats to safety, and is rescued by fellow fishermen. They do not recognize him or believe his story, for his hair has turned white and his expression is completely altered.

Descent to the Dead, elegy by Jeffers (q.v.).

Description of New England, A, autobiographical narrative by John Smith (q.v.).

Deseret, name given to the present state of Utah at its founding by the Mormons. Derived from the *Book of Mormon*, the name means 'the land of the working bee.'

Desire Under the Elms, play by O'Neill (q.v.), produced and published in 1924.

Ephraim Cabot, in his elm-shaded New England farmhouse in 1850, is a decadent Puritan, harsh and miserly. He acquired the farm from his dead second wife, mother of his son Eben, who works it with his elder half-brothers, Simeon and Peter. Eben, who resembles his gentle mother, hates Ephraim for having mistreated her, and the other sons are kept from joining the gold rush to California only by their avaricious interest in inheriting the farm. When Ephraim, despite his 75 years, takes a third wife, Simeon and Peter sell their shares to Eben and leave for California. Ephraim's third wife is Abbie Putnam, a young widow, greedy and sensual, whose only purpose is to gain his wealth, and she seduces Eben in order to have a child that will inherit it. Ephraim exults over the birth of his supposed son, and, when he reveals that the new child will inherit the property, Eben repudiates Abbie's love, which is by now genuine. She kills the child, and in a rage confesses her crimes. Eben informs the police, but, overcome by love for Abbie, admits a part in the murder, and is arrested with her.

DE SMET, PIERRE JEAN (1801–73), Belgian Jesuit missionary among the Indians of the Northwest, erected many missions and won the confidence of his people, to whom he made many journeys. After the white immigration of the mid-century made Indian relations difficult, he often acted as intermediary and arbitrator, and was chiefly responsible for the eventual peace between the Sioux and the Americans. His missionary work was supplemented by his books, *Letters and Sketches* (1843), *Oregon Missions and Travels* (1847), *Western Missions and Missionaries* (1859), and *New Indian Sketches* (1863).

DE SOTO, HERNANDO (*c.*1500–42), Spanish conquistador and explorer, was an officer under Pizarro in the conquest of Peru, after which he was appointed governor of Cuba, with rights to the territory of Florida. In 1539, with almost 1,000 men, he began his explorations in search of treasure, marching from the coast of Florida through the South to the Mississippi River, which he is credited with discovering. He crossed the river and continued as far as northern Texas, but during the return journey he died. His men, fearing discovery by hostile Indians, buried him in the Mississippi.

Detective story, form of fiction, essentially a puzzle with its logical solution, whose main structural characteristic is a

reversal of the sequence of events: The catastrophe, generally a murder, is typically presented first, followed by the introduction of a number of suspected criminals, and of a series of clues whose significance the reader is not supposed to grasp until the story is ended by a climax of explanation, in which the detective hero shows how the crime was committed, the motives for it, and finally the identity of the criminal. Poe's 'The Murders in the Rue Morgue,' 'The Purloined Letter,' and 'The Mystery of Marie Rogêt' (qq.v.) are considered the first modern detective stories, but the detective novel did not become widely popular until the work of such European authors as Gaboriau, Wilkie Collins, and Conan Doyle. In the U.S. the first important detective novels were those of Anna K. Green, the most popular being *The Leavenworth Case* (1878). The immense vogue of detective fiction during the 20th century has been supplied by English and French authors, and by such Americans as Dashiell Hammett, Earl D. Biggers, J.P.Marquand, S.S.Van Dine, Ellery Queen, and Frances Noyes Hart. The many detective plays of the American theater have included Gillette's *Sherlock Holmes*, Elmer Rice's *On Trial*, and Mary Roberts Rinehart's *The Bat*.

DE TOCQUEVILLE, see *Tocqueville*.

Detour, The, play by Owen Davis (q.v.), produced in 1921 and published in 1922.

Helen Hardy, who gave up her dream of an artistic career when she married Steve, a Long Island farmer, has cherished the same hope for her daughter Kate, and carefully saved money to send her to a New York art school. When Steve demands the money to buy more land, they quarrel, and she decides to leave with Kate for New York. Kate, overhearing a professional artist's criticism of her painting, realizes that she has no talent, gives the money to her father, and plans to marry a local youth. The play ends with Steve looking forward to expanding his farm, and Helen still clutching her dream, beginning to save for the career of a possible grandchild.

DEUTSCH, Babette (1895–), New York poet, noted for her sensitive intellectual verse, which is highly charged with emotion and increasingly concerned with social questions and current attitudes. Her reputation was established by her early volumes, *Banners* (1919), *Honey Out of the Rock* (1925), and *Fire for the Night* (1930). *Epistle to Prometheus* (1931) is a poem on the Promethean spirit throughout the ages, and *One Part Love* (1939) is a protest against the spiritual darkness of the present time. Besides two novels, *A Brittle Heaven* (1926) and *In Such a Night* (1927), and two books of criticism, *Potable Gold*, *Some Notes on Poetry in This Age* (1929) and *This Modern Poetry* (1935), she has edited anthologies of Russian and German poetry.

Devil and Daniel Webster, The, one-act folk opera by Stephen Vincent Benét and Douglas Moore (qq.v.), produced in 1939. It is based on a short story by Benét, published in *Thirteen O'Clock* (1937).

Jabez Stone, a New Hampshire farmer, sells his soul to the devil in return for ten years of prosperity. When the devil comes to his wedding to collect his due, Jabez appeals to a guest, Daniel Webster, to defend him before the devil's jury of American villains. Appealing to them not as demons but as men, Webster's eloquence touches their memories of freedom, and wins an acquittal.

Devil's Dictionary, The, by Ambrose Bierce (q.v.), was first published as *The Cynic's Word Book* (1906) and retitled in 1911. Collected from newspaper contributions (1881–1906), and addressed to 'enlightened souls who prefer dry wines to sweet, sense to sentiment, wit to humor, and clean English to slang,' the volume contains witty, concise 'definitions' reflecting Bierce's bold social criticism, pessimism, and skeptical philosophy. Characteristic entries are: 'Mugwump, *n.* In politics one afflicted with self-respect and addicted to the vice of independence. A term of contempt'; 'Edible, *adj.* Good to eat, and wholesome to digest, as a worm to a toad, a toad to a snake, a snake to a pig, a pig to a man, and a man to a worm'; 'Wit, *n.* The salt with which the American humorist spoils his intellectual cookery by leaving it out'; 'Brain, *n.* An apparatus with which we think that we think . . .'; and 'Piracy, *n.* Commerce without its folly-swaddles, just as God made it.'

DE VINNE, Theodore Low (1828–1914), advanced the art of printing in the U.S. by the high quality of workmanship at his New York press, and by his writings, which include *The Invention of Printing* (1876), *Historic Printing Types* (1886), *The Practice of Typography* (1900–1904),

and *Notable Printers of Italy during the Fifteenth Century* (1910).

DE VOTO, BERNARD [AUGUSTINE] (1897–), professor of English literature at Northwestern University (1922–7) and at Harvard (1929–36). He also served as editor of *The Saturday Review of Literature* (1936–8), and has occupied the editor's 'Easy Chair' of *Harper's* since 1935. He is best known for his critical study of American life in articles contributed to these magazines, and for his books, *Mark Twain's America* (1932), *Forays and Rebuttals* (1936) and *Minority Report* (1940), the latter two consisting of forthright and frequently bitter essays on education, history, and social movements. He is also the author of the novels, *The Crooked Mile* (1924), *The Chariot of Fire* (1926), *The House of Sun-Goes-Down* (1928), and *We Accept with Pleasure* (1934). *Mark Twain in Eruption* (1940) is the first volume he has edited from the uncollected manuscripts of Clemens.

DEWEY, GEORGE (1837–1917), naval officer, commanded the Asiatic squadron during the Spanish-American War (q.v.). On May 1, 1898, he entered the harbor of Manila, destroyed eight enemy ships, and within 24 hours controlled the city, which was formally captured (Aug. 13) upon the arrival of land troops, thus gaining U.S. possession of the Philippines. For these actions he became a national hero, and was given the rank of admiral. His *Autobiography* was published in 1913.

DEWEY, JOHN (1859–), Vermont-born philosopher and educator, graduated from the University of Vermont (1879) and Johns Hopkins (Ph.D. 1884). Before 1904 he taught at the Universities of Minnesota, Michigan, and Chicago, and since that year has been at Columbia. While director of the School of Education at the University of Chicago, he founded an experimental school for children to test new theories of educational technique, and his manifold influence on modern education and thought has been exercised also through his books, his teaching, his leadership of many learned societies, connection with the Socialist Party, and work as adviser to foreign governments. Dewey's most important writings on education, following his *Psychology* (1887), include *The School and Society* (1899); *The Child and the Curriculum* (1902); *Moral Principles in Education* (1909); *Interest and Effort in Education* (1913); and *Experience and Education* (1938). In these works, he emphasizes the changes in educational needs due to the industrial revolution, the democratic point of view, and the concept of man as a biological entity required to adjust himself to his natural environment, as well as to the complex structure of modern society. Scientific realism, the basis of this attitude, springs from Dewey's thinking as a pragmatist, and he has been the leading exponent of this school since the death of William James. Shifting the emphasis of pragmatic thought from religion and the will to believe to practical problems of social reconstruction, Dewey has called his philosophy 'instrumentalism,' and in it he holds that, since reality changes and grows, truth consists in the success with which ideas, hypotheses, and beliefs are framed for the achievement of set purposes. That is, the only reality is experience, and knowledge is necessarily functional, not abstract or theoretical. The natural sciences have advanced through their devotion to observation, experiment, and revision in light of experience; the great need is now for social sciences, disciplined in the same ways, to advance to a commensurate point, at which they may direct all knowledge to human ends, enabling intelligence to control the human and extra-human environment. These ideas have been developed in a long series of influential books, which include: *Outlines of a Critical Theory of Ethics* (1891), *Studies in Logical Theory* (1903), *How We Think* (1909), *The Influence of Darwin on Philosophy and Other Essays in Contemporary Thought* (1910), *Essays in Experimental Logic* (1916), *Democracy and Education* (1916), *Reconstruction in Philosophy* (1920), *Human Nature and Conduct* (1922), *Experience and Nature* (1925), *The Quest for Certainty* (1929), *Impressions of Soviet Russia and the Revolutionary World, Mexico—China—Turkey* (1929), *Individualism, Old and New* (1930), *Philosophy and Civilization* (1931), *Art as Experience* (1934), *A Common Faith* (1934), *Liberalism and Social Action* (1935), *Logic, the Theory of Inquiry* (1938), and *Freedom and Culture* (1939). *Intelligence in the Modern World* (1939), edited by Joseph Ratner, is a selection from Dewey's writings.

DEWEY, MELVIL (1851–1931), as librarian of Amherst College (1874–6)

evolved his Dewey Decimal Classification system of cataloguing. He later founded the *Library Journal* (1876), and established the first school of librarianship at Columbia (1887).

DEXTER, Henry Martyn (1821–90), Massachusetts clergyman, edited the *Congregationalist* (1851–90) and *Congregational Quarterly* (1859–66), and wrote histories of his sect that included: *Congregationalism* (1865), *The Church Policy of the Pilgrims* (1870), *A Handbook of Congregationalism* (1880), *Early English Exiles in Amsterdam* (1890) and *The England and Holland of the Pilgrims* (1905), the latter in collaboration with his son.

DEXTER, Timothy (1747–1806), eccentric merchant of Newburyport, Massachusetts, who dubbed himself 'Lord' Timothy Dexter. He gained his wealth by unusual, though shrewd, business transactions, and spent part of it for a curious mansion in his native town. His book, *A Pickle for the Knowing Ones* (1802), is an amusing expression of his idiosyncrasies, famous for its lack of punctuation except in the second edition, which had a page of punctuation marks at the end so that readers could 'pepper and solt it as they plese.' J.P.Marquand has written a biography of Dexter (1925).

Dial, The (July 1840–April 1844), quarterly magazine of literature, philosophy, and religion, was the organ of the New England Transcendentalist movement, and grew out of the informal meetings of the Transcendental Club (q.v.). Although Alcott, who gave the magazine its title, thought it insufficiently transcendental, it was considered obscure by the general public, and savagely attacked by the press. Margaret Fuller, the editor, was assisted by George Ripley, but she failed to give the magazine unity, admitting many contradictory articles. Among the early contributions were Thoreau's 'Friendship'; Emerson's 'The Problem' and 'Man the Reformer'; Alcott's 'Orphic Sayings'; Miss Fuller's 'Gœthe'; Theodore Parker's 'German Literature'; Elizabeth Peabody's 'Christ's Idea of Society'; and writings by George Ripley, C.P.Cranch, and W.H. Channing. Emerson succeeded as editor (July 1842), and gave *The Dial* a more unified attitude, publishing extracts from Oriental religious writings entitled 'Ethnic Scriptures,' his own 'Lectures on the Times,' and further writings by W.H. Channing, Miss Fuller, Parker, Charles Lane, Jones Very, J.F.Clarke, Lowell, and C.A.Dana.

Dial, The (1860), monthly literary and philosophic magazine, the Western organ of Transcendentalism, was edited from Cincinnati by Moncure Conway. Patterned after the Boston Transcendentalist magazine, it printed similar material, although individual contributions were less distinguished. The authors included Emerson, Alcott, Howells, and O.B.Frothingham.

Dial, The (1880–1929), monthly journal of literary criticism, was founded at Chicago as a conservative review. In 1892 it became a fortnightly, continuing the original policy until 1916, when it was moved to New York, and a new group of editors, including Conrad Aiken, H.E.Stearns, Randolph Bourne, and Van Wyck Brooks, made it a radical journal of opinion, publishing such previously taboo authors as Dewey, Veblen, Laski, Beard, and R.M. Lovett. Under Scofield Thayer, after 1920, *The Dial* became the most distinguished literary monthly in the U.S. to champion modern artistic movements. It drew contributors from many nations and had as associates Thomas Mann, T.S.Eliot, James Stephens, and Paul Morand. It printed virtually all the distinguished authors of the period, and was noted also for its fine reproductions of modern graphic art. Marianne Moore was editor after 1926.

Dialogues in Limbo, ten Platonic discourses by Santayana (q.v.), published in 1926.

The speakers include six 'shades,' Democritus, Alcibiades, Aristippus the Cyrenaic, Dionysius the Younger, Socrates, and Avicenna, and 'the Spirit of a Stranger still living on the Earth.' In the course of their discussions of ethics, æsthetics, and the nature of the world and of experience, Democritus asserts the author's belief that 'in the sphere of nature the whole life of the mind is a normal madness . . . Reason dawns upon mortals only in the last thought of all, when seeing that nothing is real save the atoms and the void (not as fancy may picture them but as they truly are), the mind . . . lays down all its flowering illusions upon the altar of truth.' The dialogues include a 'Vivisection' of Santayana's own mind, studies of individual and social human nature, an analysis of the 'normal madness' of thought, considerations of various philo-

sophic positions, and a criticism of the theory of self-government, which according to the author is eminently desirable, but could exist only among 'a race of philosophers.'

Diamond Lens, The, story by Fitz-James O'Brien (q.v.).

DÍAZ del CASTILLO, BERNAL (*c.*1492–*c.*1593), Spanish conquistador and colonial governor, came to Cuba in 1514, and served under Cortés in the conquest of Mexico. His eyewitness account, *The True History of the Conquest of Mexico* (3 vols., 1632), was written during his old age, when he was an official in Guatemala, and has been important as the source of such works as *The Conquest of Mexico* and *Conquistador.*

DICKENS, CHARLES (1812–70), English novelist, whose first tour of the U.S. (Jan.–May 1842) is described in his *American Notes for General Circulation* (q.v.,1842), and furnished the background for portions of *Martin Chuzzlewit* (q.v.,1843–4). He visited the U.S. again (Nov. 1867–Apr. 1868), when he presented a popular series of readings in Eastern cities.

DICKINSON, EMILY [ELIZABETH] (1830–86), the daughter of Edward Dickinson, a prominent lawyer of Amherst, Massachusetts, was educated at Amherst Academy and for one year at Mount Holyoke Female Seminary, under Mary Lyon. Her life was outwardly eventless, for she lived quietly at home, and for the last 25 years secluded herself from all but the most intimate friends. Though never married, she cultivated intense intellectual companionships with several men in succession, whom she quaintly called her tutors. The first was Benjamin F. Newton, a law student in her father's office, who introduced her to stimulating books, and urged her to take seriously her vocation as poet. Religious questionings prompted by his early death led her to appeal for guidance to the Reverend Charles Wadsworth of Philadelphia, whom she met in 1854. She soon came to regard him as her 'dearest earthly friend,' and for purposes of poetry created in his image the 'lover' whom she was never to know except in imagination. From the time of Wadsworth's removal to San Francisco, in the spring of 1862, may be dated her withdrawal from village society and her increasing preoccupation with poetry. She initiated a literary correspondence with T.W.Higginson, whom she knew only through his papers in the *Atlantic Monthly*, and his kindly encouragement was a support to her through years of loneliness. Besides Higginson, the circle of friends to whom she occasionally showed a few of her poems included Samuel Bowles, Dr.J.G.Holland, and Helen Hunt Jackson. For the most part, however, she wrote in secret and guarded her poems even from her family. Before her death, she had composed well over 1,000 brief lyrics, her 'letter to the world,' records of the life about her, of tiny ecstasies set in motion by mutations of the seasons or by home and garden incidents, of candid insights into her own states of consciousness, and of speculations on the timeless mysteries of love and death. Her mind was charged with paradox, as though her vision, like the eyes of birds, was focused in opposite directions on the two worlds of material and immaterial values. She could express feelings of deepest poignancy in terms of wit. Like Emerson, her preference for the intrinsic and the essential led her not infrequently to a gnomic concision of phrase, but her artistry in the modulation of simple meters and the delicate management of imperfect rimes was greater than his. Her daringly precise metaphors made her seem to Amy Lowell a precursor of the Imagist school. Publication, in Emily Dickinson's unworldly view, formed no part of a poet's business. Only two of her poems, not counting an early verse valentine, were printed during her lifetime, and neither with her consent. From the chaotic mass of manuscripts found after her death, some carefully revised, others carelessly jotted down on odd scraps of paper, six volumes have been selected: *Poems* (1890) and *Poems: Second Series* (1891), edited by Mabel L. Todd and T.W.Higginson; *Poems: Third Series* (1896), edited by Mrs.Todd; *The Single Hound* (q.v.,1914), edited by Emily's niece, Martha Dickinson Bianchi; *Further Poems* (1929) and *Unpublished Poems* (1936), edited by Mrs.Bianchi and Alfred Leete Hampson. A collection was issued as *Poems: Centenary Edition* (1930). The circumstances of posthumous publication have prevented a systematic arrangement of the poems in a chronological or any other effective order. Unfortunately, too many trifling pieces, fragments, and hasty poem-notes have been included without discrimination among the better lyrics. Furthermore

the text prepared by her later editors is often demonstrably inaccurate, badly punctuated, or freakishly displayed on the printed page. Emily Dickinson is considered to be the prototype of Alison Stanhope in *Alison's House* (q.v.), and of the heroine of Helen Hunt Jackson's *Mercy Philbrick's Choice* (1876).

DICKINSON, JOHN (1732–1808), wealthy Philadelphia lawyer, led the conservative group in the Pennsylvania legislature during the debates on proprietary government. He wrote a *Protest against the Appointment of Benjamin Franklin* (1764), and the Sugar Act and proposed Stamp Act caused him to write on *The Late Regulations Respecting the British Colonies on the Continent of America . . .* (1765). When England continued to assert its rights of taxation, he began to publish in the *Pennsylvania Chronicle* his *Letters from a Farmer in Pennsylvania* (q.v., 1768), whose thesis is that England's claims and acts were contrary to her own constitutional principles. These letters established Dickinson as the leading conservative opponent of English policy, for his methods differed from those of the more radical Patrick Henry and Samuel Adams. A member of both Continental Congresses, he wrote an *Essay upon the Constitutional Power of Great Britain . . .* (1774), *A Declaration by the Representatives of the United Colonies* (1775), and other addresses and petitions. Although he supported military measures, and wrote 'A Song for American Freedom' (the Liberty Song), Dickinson still hoped for reconciliation, and voted against the Declaration of Independence. After the war, he represented Delaware in Congress, and wrote two series of *Letters of Fabius* (1788, '97) in favor of the adoption of the Constitution.

DICKINSON, JONATHAN (1688–1747), founder and first president of the College of New Jersey (now Princeton), was, next to Jonathan Edwards, the outstanding opponent of orthodox Calvinism during the Great Awakening. Jonathan Odell was his grandson.

Dictator, The, play by R.H.Davis (q.v.), produced in 1904 and published in 1906.

Brooke Travers and his valet Simpson, believing they have killed a cabman in a street fight, escape from New York on the steamer *Bolivar*. Also on board are Colonel John Bowie and his bride, on their way to Porto Banos, a Central American capital. Bowie has engineered a revolution that makes him dictator of the republic, and has had himself appointed U.S. consul. Arriving at Porto Banos, they find that a second revolution has occurred, and Bowie sends the unknowing Travers to take his place. Travers, Simpson, and Hyne, a wireless operator, live at the consulate, investigate local politics, and plan a counterrevolution. Meanwhile the American is pursued by Juanita, the real Bowie's former fiancée, and Duffy, a secret service detective. Cornered by President Campos, Travers and Hyne bluff their way to safety by simulating a wireless message, and to their surprise actually summon the battleship *Oregon*. It is explained that Duffy had been intending merely to question Travers, since the cabman did not die, and the play ends with the success of the counterrevolution.

Dictionaries, see *Worcester* and *Webster*.

Dictionary of American Biography, collection of biographies of outstanding Americans, published in 20 volumes (1928–36), and based on the plan of the English *Dictionary of National Biography*. Published under the auspices of the American Council of Learned Societies, and financed mainly by *The New York Times*, the work was under the supervision of an editorial staff headed (1928–31) by Allen Johnson, and after his death by Dumas Malone, who edited volumes VIII–XX. The work, which includes no accounts of persons living at the time of publication, contains sketches of 13,633 persons by 2,243 contributors, and totals 11,000,000 words.

Dictionary of American English, based on historical principles, is being compiled at the University of Chicago, under the editorship of Sir William Craigie, co-editor of the Oxford English Dictionary, and James R. Hulbert. The project was begun in 1926, and the first section was published in 1936. When completed, the work is intended to include four or five volumes. It contains words, phrases, and usages originating in this country, invented words, and English importations whose meanings are distinctive in the U.S.

Dictionary of American History, reference work written by some 1,000 historians under the general editorship of James Truslow Adams, the managing editorship of R.V.Coleman, and an advisory council of 17 scholars. It was be-

gun in 1936 with the compilation of a list of 6,000 topics, and published in six volumes (1940). Each of the brief articles deals with a separate aspect of American history, but there are many 'covering' articles presenting broader subjects in orderly summary, and cross references indicate collateral information.

DIEDRICH KNICKERBOCKER, see *Knickerbocker.*

Diff'rent, play by Eugene O'Neill (q.v.).

DIGGES, THOMAS ATWOOD (1741?–1821?), an intimate of Washington, Jefferson, Franklin, and Madison, while residing in Lisbon during the American Revolution was active in the patriot cause. To him has been attributed *Adventures of Alonso: Containing Some Striking Anecdotes of the Present Prime Minister of Portugal* (1775), a novel 'by a native of Maryland, some years resident in Lisbon,' which was published in England. If actually by Digges or another American, it is the first novel by an American, since it precedes *The Power of Sympathy* by 14 years. It is a romantic, picaresque story of a young Portuguese merchant, and includes passages on the evils of despotic government.

DILLON, GEORGE (1906–), born in Florida and reared in Kentucky and the Middle West, while an undergraduate at the University of Chicago became an editor of *Poetry.* The poems in *Boy in the Wind* (1927), published the year of his graduation, have a soft musical quality. *The Flowering Stone* (1931), a more vigorous work, won the Pulitzer Prize (1932).

Dime novel, popular name for cheap thrilling tales of history, romance, warfare, or any violent action, many of which were set in America during the Revolution, Civil War, or frontier period. They attained an immense popularity in the U.S. from the publication of *Malaeska: the Indian Wife of the White Hunter* (q.v., 1860) to about 1895, when they began to be superseded by pulp magazines (q.v.) and such series as those concerning Frank Merriwell, the Rover Boys, and Tom Swift. Although the development of plot closely followed conventional moral patterns, stern critics mistakenly called dime novels immoral. They probably fostered a nationalistic attitude, emphasizing as they did the democratic vigor and individualism of the American people. Among the most famous authors were E.Z.C.Judson, Prentiss Ingraham, Edward L. Wheeler, who created 'Deadwood Dick,' and J.R.Coryell, who created 'Nick Carter.' Their leading publisher was Erastus Beadle.

Dimmesdale, ARTHUR, character in *The Scarlet Letter* (q.v.).

Dinner at Eight, play by George S. Kaufman and Edna Ferber (qq.v.).

Dinsmore, ELSIE, character in novels for children by Martha Finley (q.v.).

Dionysus in Doubt, poems by E.A. Robinson (q.v.), published in 1925, including 'Demos and Dionysus' (q.v.).

In the title poem, Robinson denounces modern tendencies toward collectivism, standardization, and equalitarianism. 'Freedom,' Dionysus vouchsafes in an imagined conversation with the poet, 'becomes a prodigy for men to fear' when 'herd-servitude' thoughtlessly exalts it. Democracy is 'an unransomed kidnapped juvenile,' and the sole hope for humanity is that it may hide 'intelligence . . . much as a tree's unguessed immensities are hidden in a seed.' The concept of social equality is a snare, for 'Humbug is no less himself in his best dress,' and men dream of a Utopia impossible on earth, in their 'confused assumptions of a state Not yet prepared' for them.

Disappointment, *The; or, The Force of Credulity,* comic opera by Andrew Barton (presumably a pseudonym of Colonel Thomas Forrest), published in 1767. It was arranged for production a few days before *The Prince of Parthia,* the first professionally produced American play, but was withdrawn because of its personal satire. It is concerned with the contemporary mania of searching for the supposed treasures of the pirate Blackbeard, and ridicules various Philadelphians involved in such undertakings. A song set to the tune of *Yankee Doodle* is included.

Disciples of Christ, see *Campbell, Alexander.*

Discourses in America, three lectures by Matthew Arnold (q.v.), delivered during a tour of the Eastern states in 1883, and published in 1885.

'Numbers: or, The Majority and the Remnant,' a discussion of national traits, shows the danger of assuming that what is popular or widespread need be praiseworthy. The author indicates the fallacy

of the American pride in size and numbers: 'in a democratic community like this, with its newness, its magnitude, its strength, its life of business, its sheer freedom and equality, the danger is in the absence of the discipline of respect; in hardness and materialism, exaggeration and boastfulness; in a false smartness, a false audacity, a want of soul and delicacy.' 'Literature and Science' is an argument against the tendency in modern schools to supplant literary education by scientific studies. The essay on Emerson states that the American author is not a great poet, writer, or philosopher, but rather occupies a position like that of Marcus Aurelius, 'the friend and aider of those who would live in the spirit.' Emerson's 'insight is admirable, his truth is precious'; but his most valuable quality is his 'hopeful, serene, beautiful temper,' which makes him, together with Franklin, 'the most distinctively and honourably American of your writers.'

Discovery, see *Hudson, Henry.*

Discovery of the Great West, The, history by Parkman (q.v.).

Disko Troop, character in *Captains Courageous* (q.v.).

Dismal Swamp, on the coast of southeast Virginia and northeast North Carolina, was formerly extensive and almost impenetrable. William Byrd mentions it in his *History of the Dividing Line.* It is the setting of Mrs.Stowe's *Dred,* and is frequently mentioned in literature as a place of refuge for the fugitive slave, e.g., Longfellow's 'The Slave in the Dismal Swamp.'

DISNEY, WALT[ER] (1901–), creator of animated cartoons, produced the first of his *Mickey Mouse* series in 1928. Other works, noted for their fantastic humor and technical brilliance, include the *Silly Symphony* series and the full-length pictures, *Snow White and the Seven Dwarfs* (1938), *Pinocchio* (1940), and *Fantasia* (1940).

District of Columbia, see *Washington, D.C.*

Dividing Line, see *History of the Dividing Line.*

Divina Commedia, sequence of six Petrarchan sonnets by Longfellow (q.v.), written (1864–7) to precede and follow each of the three parts of his translation of Dante's *Divine Comedy* (1867). In the first sonnet, the *Divine Comedy* is likened to a cathedral that the poet enters, from day to day, for prayer and sanctuary from the cares which he leaves outside. This figure is continued in the succeeding sonnets, which are concerned with the variety of themes and emotional attitudes in 'this medieval miracle of song,' Dante's benignant religious influence on the reader, his love for Beatrice, and a comparison of the emotional effect of his work with that of the Catholic Mass. The sixth sonnet deals with Dante's place in history as 'forerunner of the day that is to be.'

Divine Tragedy, The, dramatic poem by Longfellow (q.v.), published in 1871 and later included in *Christus* (q.v.,1872).

This reworking of Biblical themes is divided into three parts, or Passovers. The first deals with John the Baptist, proclaiming the advent of the divine figure, with a colloquy between Christus and Lucifer, the marriage in Cana, the Pharisees' denial of Christ, and the revelation of Mary Magdelene. The second deals with Salome and her demand for the head of John, with the restoration of the eyesight of Bartimeus, and the dialogue of Simon Magus and Helen of Tyre. The third deals with the entry into Jerusalem, the Last Supper, the vigil in the Garden of Gethsemane, Peter's denunciation of Christ, the betrayal of Judas and his repentance, and the judgment of Christus. The concluding episode of the three crosses is accompanied by an epilogue of the apostles, which is the Christian creed verbatim.

Divinity School Address, name commonly given to the address delivered by Emerson (q.v.) before the senior class of Divinity College, Harvard (July 15, 1838), published that year, and reprinted in *Nature, Addresses, and Lectures* (1849). The discourse provoked a strong reaction among the faculty, and Andrews Norton attacked it as irreverent and atheistic in *On the Latest Form of Infidelity* (1839). Received with enthusiasm by such men as W.E.Channing and Theodore Parker, the address had no immediate effect on the church, but caused Emerson's virtual ostracism from strict Unitarian circles.

In 'The American Scholar,' the author appeals for a return to original intellectual experience; here he appeals for a return to original spiritual experience. Truth is at-

tainable only through intuition, 'it cannot be received at second hand.' Since historical Christianity has fallen into errors, its influence is baneful. By emphasizing past revelation, it limits and discourages the direct exploration of Moral Nature, which alone communicates spiritual greatness and the divine spirit. The formal church is dry, false, and moribund; the 'great and perpetual office of the preacher is not discharged.' Young men entering the ministry must disregard models and teachers, and search their own hearts, preach their own message:

> speak the very truth, as your life and conscience teach it, and cheer the waiting, fainting hearts of men with new hope and new revelations.

DIX, Dorothea Lynde (1802–87), Massachusetts teacher, pioneer in American prison reforms and the creation of almshouses and insane asylums. Her study of institutional conditions resulted in a *Memorial to the Legislature of Massachusetts* (1843). She was superintendent of women nurses during the Civil War.

DIX, Dorothy, pseudonym of Elizabeth Meriwether Gilmer (1870–), author of a column of advice to the lovelorn, begun (1896) in the *New Orleans Picayune* and later syndicated and distilled in such books as *How to Win and Hold a Husband* (1939).

Dixie, patriotic song probably composed by Dan Emmett (q.v.,1859), member of Dan Bryant's minstrel troupe. Its greatest popularity has been in the South, where it was sung by Confederate soldiers. Dixie signifies 'de land ob cotton,' but the origin of the name is uncertain. It is sometimes supposed to be a corruption of the name of Jeremiah Dixon, who with Charles Mason (1763–7) surveyed the boundary which later separated slave and free states.

DIXON, Roland Burrage (1875–1934), professor of anthropology at Harvard, was an authority on the ethnology and folklore of American Indian tribes, about whom he wrote many books. He was also the author of *Oceanic Mythology* (1916), *The Racial History of Man* (1923), and *The Building of Cultures* (1928).

DIXON, Thomas (1864–), born in North Carolina, was a Baptist minister and popular lyceum lecturer until he became an author. *The Leopard's Spots* (1902) and its sequels, *The Clansman* (1905) and *The Traitor* (1907), are novels dealing with the Reconstruction period in the South, favoring the activities of the Ku Klux Klan. *The Flaming Sword* (1939) tells of the conflict between Negroes and whites in contemporary America. Dixon wrote other novels, as well as the motion picture, *The Birth of a Nation* (q.v.,1915), based on *The Clansman.*

DOBIE, J[ames] Frank (1888–), Texas educator and author, since 1922 has edited the publications of the Texas Folk-Lore Society, of which he is secretary. His books on Southwestern history and folklore include: *A Vaquero of the Brush Country* (1929), based on the reminiscences of the cattleman John Young; *Coronado's Children* (1931), tales of lost mines and buried treasures; *On the Open Range* (1931); *Tongues of the Monte* (1935), about northern Mexico; *Tales of the Mustangs* (1936); *Apache Gold and Yaqui Silver* (1939), stories of lost mines; and *The Longhorns* (1941).

Dr.Grimshawe's Secret, romance by Hawthorne (q.v.), posthumously edited from an unfinished manuscript by his son Julian and published in 1882.

In a New England town during the early 19th century lives Dr.Grimshawe, an aged, eccentric recluse, and two orphans, Ned and Elsie. The children are involved in a mysterious secret related to an estate in England, whence the doctor originally came. This estate has lacked a direct heir since the reign of Charles I, when the incumbent disappeared, leaving a bloody footprint on the threshold. After their guardian's death, the children are separated, and do not meet again until years later, in England. Ned, now Edward Redclyffe, is accidentally injured while investigating the estate, and is befriended by Colcord, his boyhood tutor. Lord Braithwaite, the estate's present owner, invites Edward to live at the Hall, where he meets Elsie, who warns him of a presentiment of danger. He finds the secret hiding place of an incredibly old man who 'haunts' the Hall, and recognizes him as the Sir Edward Redclyffe of the time of the bloody footprint. When the old man dies, Colcord produces a locket that proves Edward to be heir to the estate.

Dr.Heidegger's Experiment, allegorical tale by Hawthorne (q.v.), published in *Twice-Told Tales* (1837).

The doctor, an aged physician and scientist, invites four of his venerable,

eccentric acquaintances to take part in a test of some water from the Fountain of Youth. Medbourne, an impoverished former merchant, Gascoigne, a ruined politician, Colonel Killigrew, a gouty old wastrel, and the Widow Wycherly, a faded beauty, see the doctor restore a dried rose by applying the water, and are eager to try it. Dr.Heidegger, declares he merely wishes to see the results, and does not drink, but serves his guests full glasses. They become increasingly younger until they reach gay and reckless youth, when the three men vie for the favors of the Widow. They accidentally upset the table, and spill the water. Then the doctor notices that his rose has faded again, and gradually his guests resume their aged appearances. He says that he has learned from the experiment not to desire the delirium of youth, but his friends draw another moral, resolving to make a pilgrimage to Florida in search of the Fountain.

Dr.Johns, novel by D.G.Mitchell (q.v.).

Dr.North and His Friends, novel by S.Weir Mitchell (q.v.).

Doctor's Christmas Eve, The, novel by J.L.Allen (q.v.).

DODD, WILLIAM EDWARD (1869–1940), historian, was ambassador to Germany (1933–7). His books include *Statesmen of the Old South* (1911), *The Cotton Kingdom* (1919), and *Lincoln or Lee* (1928). With R.S.Baker, he edited *The Public Papers of Woodrow Wilson* (1925–7). His *Diary* of the years 1933–8 was published in 1941.

DODDRIDGE, JOSEPH (1769–1826), frontier clergyman, author of *Notes on the Settlement and Indian Wars of the Western Parts of Virginia and Pennsylvania from* 1763 *to* 1783 (1824). He also wrote an unproduced prose drama, *Logan* (1821), based on the story of the Mingo chief.

DODGE, MARY ABIGAIL (1833–96), Massachusetts author, edited with J.T. Trowbridge and Lucy Larcom *Our Young Folks* (1865–7). Her essays, some of which attack woman suffrage, include: *Country Living and Country Thinking* (1862); *A New Atmosphere* (1865); *Woman's Wrongs: A Counter-Irritant* (1868); and *Our Common School System* (1880). She wrote a biography of her kinsman, J.G.Blaine (1895), and her own reminiscences, *Gail Hamilton's Life in Letters* (1901). She wrote under the pseudonym Gail Hamilton.

DODGE, MARY [ELIZABETH] MAPES (1831–1905), New York author and editor of juvenile fiction, is best known for her popular *Hans Brinker: or, The Silver Skates* (1865), a story of youthful adventures in a Dutch setting. She became editor of the magazine *St.Nicholas* in 1873, and in this position was the most important influence of the time on children's literature. Her other writings include: *Irvington Stories* (1864); *A Few Friends and How They Amused Themselves* (1869); *Donald and Dorothy* (1883); *The Land of Pluck* (1894); and *Rhymes and Jingles* (1874).

Dodge, STEADFAST, character in *Homeward Bound* (q.v.).

Dodsworth, novel by Sinclair Lewis (q.v.), published in 1929, was dramatized by Sidney Howard and the author (1934).

Samuel Dodsworth, automobile manufacturer of the Midwestern city of Zenith, retires to devote himself to cultural pursuits and a trip to Europe. During 23 years of married life, he has adored his frivolous, pampered wife Fran, but he is soon disillusioned after abandoning his absorption in business. On the transatlantic ship she assumes an air of worldliness, and flirts with an Englishman, Major Clyde Lockert; in Paris she joins the extravagant set of Renée de Pénable, and has an affair with Arnold Israel. Sam quickly tires of this life, and returns alone to America, but, fearing that Fran may be harmed by Israel, he rejoins her in Europe. Fran breaks with her lover, and visits Germany with Sam, where she falls in love with an impoverished aristocrat, Kurt von Obersdorf. She asks Sam for a divorce, and he spends lonely months touring southern Europe. He is happy again only after he meets Edith Cortright, an American widow, in whose mature tolerance he finds companionship. Through Edith he learns to appreciate European traditions and art, and she encourages his plans for a building enterprise in Zenith. They intend to marry, but when Kurt's mother forbids him to marry Fran, Sam is persuaded to return to America with his wife. During the voyage he finds Fran still childish and egotistical, and he cables Edith that he will return to her by the next ship.

Doesticks, What He Says, 36 sketches by Mortimer Thomson (q.v.), published under the pseudonym

Doesticks in 1855. The foibles of New York society are described by the humorous and sometimes gently satiric gay blade, Doesticks, and his companions, Damphool and Bull Dogge. Subjects of the sketches include Barnum's Museum, boarding houses, 'modern witchcraft,' patent medicine, politics, fire companies, theaters, churches, the Millerites, inebriation, and Kentucky Negroes.

Do-Good Papers, essays in the manner of the *Spectator*, contributed by Franklin (q.v.) to *The New England Courant* (March–Oct. 1722). Published anonymously when the author was only 17, they were not ascribed to him until the publication of Parton's biography (1864). The 14 papers purport to have been written by Silence Do-Good, widow of a parson, and their range of subjects is indicated by such titles as 'Pride and Hoop Petticoats,' 'Freedom of Thought,' 'Drunkenness,' and 'Receipt for a New England Funeral Elegy.'

DOLE, NATHAN HASKELL (1852–1935), Massachusetts author, editor, and translator of Tolstoy and Daudet. His original works include: *Not Angels Quite* (1893), a novel concerned with the romantic misadventures of two ill-matched couples, and their eventual change of partners and happy marriages; *The Hawthorn Tree and Other Poems* (1895); *Omar, the Tent-Maker* (1899); and *Six Italian Essays* (1907).

Dollar, The Almighty, expression first used by Irving, in *Wolfert's Roost* (1855), where he speaks of the dollar as 'that great object of our universal devotion throughout our land.' Another phrase, 'dollar diplomacy,' indicating the management of international relations for the benefit of U.S. commercial interests, was first applied (1910) to the policies of Secretary of State Philander Knox.

Dolliver Romance, The, unfinished novel by Hawthorne (q.v.), posthumously published in the *Atlantic Monthly* (1864, '71), and in book form in 1876. The author's last work, it was an attempt to develop the theme of the elixir of life also essayed in *Septimius Felton*.

In a New England town lives an aged apothecary, with the sole remaining member of his family, his great-granddaughter Pansie. One day he tries a cordial presented to him by a stranger seven years before, and when the potion rejuvenates him he takes further doses. Colonel Dabney, an impetuous, sensual old man, comes to demand the cordial, which he says is rightfully his. When he threatens the apothecary with a pistol, he is given the drink. Swallowing a large amount of it, he rises to his feet, shrieks, and falls dead. The apothecary sees that for a moment the colonel's face becomes that of a young man, but then it is aged and withered in death. An inquest pronounces the death to have occurred 'by the visitation of God.'

Dolph Heyliger, see *Bracebridge Hall*.

Domain of Arnheim, The, descriptive tale by Poe (q.v.), published in 1847. It incorporates 'The Landscape Garden' (1842), and 'Landor's Cottage' (q.v.) is a 'pendant.'

A fabulously beautiful estate is created by Ellison, a millionaire enthusiast of landscape gardening. After spending years in searching for the perfect site, he chooses Arnheim, and carries out a huge plan for disposing the waterways, landscape, and vegetation so as to make it the ideal setting for the 'semi-Gothic, semi-Saracenic' architecture of his elaborate home.

Domestic Manners of the Americans, descriptive work by Frances Trollope (q.v.).

Dominion of New England, see *Andros*.

Domnei, romance by Cabell (q.v.).

Donatello, character in *The Marble Faun* (q.v.).

DONIPHAN, ALEXANDER WILLIAM (1808–87), Missouri lawyer and soldier, first attained prominence as commander of the state militia in the campaign against the Mormons (1838), when he disobeyed orders to execute Joseph Smith and other Mormon officials. During the Mexican War he organized a volunteer regiment, which he led under Kearney in the capture of Santa Fé. Kearney left him in command of New Mexico, where he negotiated the difficult peace with the Navajos, and then led his regiment in one of the most celebrated military expeditions of U.S. history, capturing El Paso and Chihuahua, and continuing to Saltillo and the mouth of the Rio Grande, a march of some 3,600 miles, which required more than a year and assured the success of the campaign in northern Mexico.

DONN-BYRNE, BRIAN OSWALD (1889–1928), Irish-American novelist, wrote un-

der the pseudonym Donn-Byrne. Educated in Dublin, he returned to his native New York City (1911), where he wrote romantic poems and stories tinged with Celtic mysticism. *The Stranger's Banquet* (1919), a novel concerned with problems of industrialism, gave him little opportunity for the romanticism in which he excelled. *The Foolish Matrons* (1920), character studies of four women, was followed by his first popular book, *Messer Marco Polo* (1921), the story of Marco Polo's journey to China and his love for the daughter of Kubla Khan, told with Gælic wistfulness by a venerable Ulsterman. *The Wind that Bloweth* (1922) tells of an Irish sailor's life, and *The Changeling* (1923) contains short stories of quaint places and people. In *Blind Raftery* (1924), a tale of an 18th-century itinerant Gælic poet and his Spanish wife, Donn-Byrne expresses his consistent attitude, that what the world accounts good is often but vulgar and selfish, for kindness, needed in this 'apart, dark place,' is unknown to the shallow, soulless people who have never died in life. His other books include: *Hangman's House* (1926), a tender love story set in 19th-century Ireland; *Brother Saul* (1927), a fictional account of Saul of Tarsus; *Crusade* (1928), the story of an Irish crusader who loves a Saracen girl; *Destiny Bay* (1928), stories of a romantic Irish family; *Field of Honor* (1929, published in England as *Power of the Dog*), a novel of Napoleonic times; and several posthumous collections of short stories.

DONNELLY, IGNATIUS (1831–1901), born in Pennsylvania, moved to Minnesota (1857), where he became a lawyer, and was elected lieutenant-governor, congressman (1863–9), and state senator (1873–8). He was a leader of liberal third-party movements, and of the agricultural and reform groups whose views he expounded in his weekly *Anti-Monopolist* (1874–9), and was the Populist candidate for President when he died. His novel, *Cæsar's Column: A Story of the Twentieth Century* (1891), is a Utopian work comparable to *Looking Backward*, whose popularity it temporarily rivaled. His other books include *Atlantis: The Antedeluvian World* (1882), *Ragnarok: The Age of Fire and Gravel* (1883), *The American People's Money* (1895), and *The Great Cryptogram* (1888), and *The Cipher in the Plays and on the Tombstone* (1899), two studies attempting to prove Bacon's authorship of Shakespeare's plays.

Donner Party, wagon-train of emigrants who set out across the plains for California (1846). Taking a new cut-off south of the Great Salt Lake, they suffered great hardships, and were so delayed that they were blocked by early snows in the Sierra Nevada. They camped at what is now called Donner Lake, and during the winter about half their number died of starvation. Rescue parties from California brought out survivors in the spring, after most of them had resorted to cannibalism. The gruesome yet heroic nature of these adventures has led to their figuring in many novels and poems, e.g. the opening of Harte's *Gabriel Conroy*.

Dooley, MR., character in a series of books by F.P.Dunne (q.v.), is an Irish saloonkeeper who satirizes current events with a native shrewdness and wit.

DOOLITTLE, HILDA (1886–), known by her initials, was born in Pennsylvania, and went abroad in 1911, where she has since lived and written her poetry. An early member of the school of Imagism, she is frequently considered the outstanding poet consistently employing its principles. *Sea Garden* (1916), her first collection, shows the classically chiseled, objective method for which she is famous, and *Hymen* (1921) indicates her constant interest in the Hellenic tradition. Her later volumes, *Heliodora and Other Poems* (1924) and *Hippolytus Temporizes* (1927), a drama in classic form, foreshadowed her translation of the *Ion of Euripides* (1937). *Palimpsest* (1926), *Hedylus* (1928), and *The Hedgehog* (1936) are works of fiction. Her *Collected Poems* appeared in 1925.

Dorchester Company of Adventurers, joint stock company which attempted to establish a permanent fishing and farming colony on Cape Ann (1623). The organizers, who included John White, were identified with the Puritan party, but had no intention of establishing a Puritan refuge. When their colony failed, the settlers came under the temporary rule of John Endecott, but were reorganized as the New England Company for a Plantation in Massachusetts Bay, which in turn became the Massachusetts Bay Company (q.v.).

Dorothy Vernon of Haddon Hall, novel by Charles Major (q.v.).

Dorr's Rebellion, occurred in Rhode Island (1841), when a People's Party elected Thomas Wilson Dorr (1805–54) as governor, and framed a constitution to replace the former charter, which had made no extension of suffrage since the Revolution. The legislature, refusing to recognize the action, framed a second constitution and elected a second governor, Samuel King, thus bringing into existence two separate governments. King's government proclaimed martial law, precipitated armed clashes, and had Dorr sentenced to life imprisonment for treason. He was pardoned after 12 months, and his civil rights were restored (1851) after a third constitution, granting general male suffrage, was accepted by both parties.

DORSEY, George Amos (1868–1931), anthropologist associated with the Field Museum at Chicago, taught at the University of Chicago and the New School for Social Research. His studies of the American Indians include *Traditions of the Arikara* (1904), *The Mythology of the Wichita* (1904), *Traditions of the Caddo* (1905), and *Pawnee Mythology* (1906). Among his later popular works are *Why We Behave Like Human Beings* (1925), *The Evolution of Charles Darwin* (1927), and *Man's Own Show: Civilization* (1931).

DOS PASSOS, John [Roderigo] (1896–), born in Chicago, was educated abroad and in the U.S. After graduation from Harvard (1916), he went to Spain, nominally to study architecture, but he soon entered the World War as a member of the French ambulance service, later joining the U.S. medical corps. Experiences of this period furnished the material for his first book, *One Man's Initiation—1917* (1920), a semi-autobiographical novel about an ambulance driver. This was followed by another war novel, *Three Soldiers* (q.v.,1921), showing the effects of war service on three types of character. After publishing a volume of poetry, *A Pushcart at the Curb* (1922), and *Rosinante to the Road Again* (1922), essays on the art and culture of Spain, he returned to fiction with *Streets of Night* (1923), which has been characterized as a typical 'art novel' of the time, and deals with a sensitive boy's attempt to escape from the crass conventions of his world. With *Manhattan Transfer* (q.v.,1925), a collective portrait in hundreds of fictional episodes of the sprawling, diversified life of New York City, Dos Passos reached maturity both in his outlook upon the world and in his stylistic technique. His next book, *Orient Express* (1927), a travel diary, also shows a broadening point of view and a greater interest in social problems, as do the works collected as *Three Plays* (1934): *The Garbage Man* (q.v.,1926), produced as *The Moon Is a Gong,* and dramatizing the distressed lives of a representative New York couple; *Airways, Inc.* (q.v., 1929), contrasting the atmosphere of big business with the oppressed lives of workers, and showing the background of a building trades strike; and *Fortune Heights* (1933), showing a real-estate development during boom times, and its ruin in the depression. In 1930 Dos Passos published *The 42nd Parallel* (q.v.), the first novel in his *U.S.A.* trilogy (collected 1938), which also includes *1919* (q.v.,1932) and *The Big Money* (q.v.,1936). These novels, which tell the story of the first three decades of the 20th century in the U.S., have as their protagonist the social background of the nation, and as their major theme the vitiation and degradation of character in a decaying civilization based on commercialism and exploitation. The trilogy employs several distinctive fictional devices. Its basis is a number of episodes from the lives of diverse characters, whose actions either converge or run parallel. The panoramic background is the 'Newsreel,' a selection from contemporary headlines, advertisements, popular songs, and newspaper articles, which suggest the general atmosphere at the time of each episode. Among the narrative episodes are also interspersed brief biographies of prominent Americans of the period, whose lives form a counterpart, often ironic, of the lesser figures of the fiction. A third device is 'The Camera Eye,' presenting the author's point of view toward the subject matter, through impressionistic stream-of-consciousness passages. The wide panorama of American life is interpreted as being marked by corruption, futility, frustration, and defeat. This view of the contemporary world is also exhibited in a travel book of this period, *In All Countries* (1934), which deals with such subjects as the Sacco-Vanzetti case, Communism in Russia, and Mexican agrarian socialism. Excerpts from this book and from his two previous

travel books are combined with new material on the Spanish civil war in *Journeys Between Wars* (1938). A more conventional narrative technique, as well as an altered point of view, may be observed in his later novel, *Adventures of a Young Man* (1939), the story of a naïve, idealistic Communist, who is betrayed by the party because he does not blindly follow its immediate program. *The Ground We Stand On* (1941) is an analysis of the foundations of democracy.

DOUGHTY, THOMAS (1793–1856), self-taught Philadelphia painter of meticulous, somber landscapes. He was a forerunner of the Hudson River School.

DOUGLAS, LLOYD C[ASSEL] (1877–), Lutheran clergyman and author, whose novels include: *Magnificent Obsession* (1929); *Forgive Us Our Trespasses* (1932); *Precious Jeopardy* (1933); *Green Light* (1935); *White Banners* (1936); *Disputed Passage* (1939); *Doctor Hudson's Secret Journal* (1939); and *Invitation to Live* (1940). In fictional form, and with a garb of sweetness and light, these stories set forth the preachment of self-enrichment through serving others and the creation of a divinely inspired universal amity.

DOUGLAS, STEPHEN ARNOLD (1813–61), Vermont-born statesman, practiced law in Illinois, where he early became a prominent Democrat and state official. He was a congressman (1843–7), and thereafter served in the U.S.Senate. As chairman of the Committee on Territories, he drafted bills for the government of New Mexico and Utah expressing his doctrine of 'popular sovereignty,' which allowed the territorial governments to decide all legislative policies, including those concerned with slavery. He was largely responsible for the Kansas-Nebraska Bill, based on the same principle. He was an outstanding candidate for the Democratic presidential nomination in 1852 and 1856, but failed to be nominated when his attempts at compromise between Northern and Southern factions within the party were unsuccessful. Pitted against Lincoln in the campaign for the Senate (1858), he participated in the famous series of seven debates, in which he maintained his 'popular sovereignty' principle of reconciliation, while Lincoln by careful analysis upheld his declaration that 'A house divided against itself cannot stand.' Although Douglas won the election, his power in the Democratic Party waned because he opposed intervention in behalf of territorial slaveholders. He was the Democratic presidential candidate in 1860, but Southern delegates bolted in favor of Breckinridge, and the resulting schism won the election for Lincoln. Douglas continued to work for compromise, but from the outbreak of the Civil War gave his whole-hearted support to Lincoln's policies. Because he combined slight stature with great personal vigor, Douglas was popularly known as the Little Giant. He figures frequently in literature, as in Masters's novel, *Children of the Market Place*, and Sherwood's *Abe Lincoln in Illinois*.

DOUGLASS, FREDERICK (1817–95), born into slavery in Maryland, escaped to Massachusetts (1838), where he was successfully employed as a lecturer by anti-slavery societies. He published a *Narrative of the Life of Frederick Douglass* (1845, revised 1892). Fearing capture as a fugitive slave, he spent several years in England and Ireland, returning to purchase his freedom and establish the antislavery newspaper, the *North Star* (q.v.). Since he favored political methods for freeing the slaves, he became a follower of J.G.Birney rather than of Garrison. He organized two colored regiments in Massachusetts during the Civil War, and continued to labor for his people during the Reconstruction, later serving as secretary of the Santo Domingo Commission (1871), marshal of the District of Columbia (1877–81), recorder of deeds for the District (1881–6), and minister to Haiti (1889–91). Booker T. Washington wrote his biography.

DOUGLASS, WILLIAM (*c.*1691–1752), Scottish-born physician in Boston, opposed the theory of inoculation for smallpox, and wrote *The Practical History of a New Epidemical Eruptive Military Fever* (1736), describing scarlet fever. *A Summary, Historical and Political . . . of the British Settlements in North-America* (2 vols.,1749–51) contains information on a variety of subjects, including medicine and botany, but is marred by historical inaccuracies. In *A Discourse Concerning the Currencies of the British Plantations in America . . .* (1739), he wrote a trenchant work on the principles of exchange. He was a member of the Hell-Fire Club.

Down East, popular name for Maine, or for other districts on the New England

and Nova Scotia coast. The Down East character, with his shrewd Yankee wit, was well defined in the humor of American almanacs and newspapers, prior to the creation of Seba Smith's Jack Downing (1830), who was followed by a great many similar characters, including Sam Slick, Hosea Biglow, Mrs.Whitcher's Widow Spriggins and Widow Bedott, and Shillaber's Mrs.Partington.

Down-Easters, The, novel by John Neal (q.v.), published in 1833.

Following a scene aboard a Long Island Sound steamship, in which a comic Yankee is introduced, the story becomes a Gothic romance. Two rivals, the argumentative Gage and Middleton, a young Byronic Southerner, fall in love with a widow, who elopes with Middleton and then dies. Middleton's own unhappy past is revealed, and he dies in the arms of his earlier betrayed 'wife,' who takes poison. The main plot is melodramatic and overfurnished, but the Yankee descriptions are realistic.

DOWNING, Major Jack, pseudonym of Seba Smith (q.v.).

Draft Riots, New York City outbreak of violence (July 13–15, 1865) in opposition to Lincoln's conscription proclamation. Among the forces that precipitated the violence were the many Southern sympathizers, the local Democratic administration, the questioning of the proclamation's constitutionality by several judges, and the resentment of the poor at realizing the rich draftees could hire substitutes. Some 50 buildings, including draft headquarters, were burned, a great property damage was incurred, some 1000 people lost their lives, including many Negroes who were lynched. The riots were quelled by troops from Pennsylvania and West Point after local police and firemen were overpowered and the draft was suspended until August.

DRAKE, Daniel (1785–1852), born in New Jersey, reared in Kentucky, became a physician, educator, and civic leader, mainly in Cincinnati. He founded the Ohio Medical College (1819), and was the founder and editor of the *Western Medical and Physical Journal.* His books include *Picture of Cincinnati in* 1815 (1815), describing the region's natural and social history; *Practical Essays on Medical Education and the Medical Profession in the U.S.* (1832); a *Systematic Treatise . . . on the Principal Diseases of the Interior Valley of North America* (2 vols.,1850–54); and *Pioneer Life in Kentucky* (1870). His antislavery letters in the *National Intelligencer* (1851) were republished as *Dr.Daniel Drake's Letters on Slavery* (1940).

Benjamin Drake (1795–1841), his brother, was also a pioneer resident of Cincinnati. His books, valuable as sources, include *Cincinnati in* 1826 (1827), *Tales and Sketches in the Queen City* (1838), *The Life and Adventures of Black Hawk* (1838), and *Life of Tecumseh and His Brother* (1841).

DRAKE, Sir Francis (*c.*1540–96), English navigator and admiral, in 1577 sailed with five ships to raid Spanish possessions in the Pacific. After plundering Valparaiso and other settlements, he lost or abandoned four of his ships, and continued alone in the *Golden Hind* to search for a northeast passage to England. He may have sailed as far north as the present state of Washington, before returning to the California bay named in his honor to repair his ship. He named the northwest coast New Albion, and took possession in the name of Queen Elizabeth.

DRAKE, Joseph Rodman (1795–1820), born in New York City, studied medicine and after a trip abroad conducted a drugstore for a year, prior to his early death from consumption. His only writing published during his lifetime was the 'Croaker Papers' (q.v.), satirical verses written with his friend, Fitz-Greene Halleck. On his deathbed, Drake instructed his wife to destroy the manuscript of his 'trifles in rhyme,' but the work was preserved, and in 1835 a selection was published as *The Culprit Fay and Other Poems* (q.v.). Of these, the best known are the title poem and 'The American Flag,' an effusively patriotic lyric first unfurled in the Croaker series. Drake was an early member of the Knickerbocker Group, whose pretensions to fame were riddled by Poe's devastating reviews in 'The Literati,' but he received a compensating tribute from Halleck, whose poem 'On the Death of Joseph Rodman Drake' is considered to be one of the finest elegies in American literature. Drake's *Works* were collected in 1935.

DRAYTON, William Henry (1742–79), South Carolina jurist, educated at Oxford, who boldly attacked the policies of Parliament in his *Letter from Freeman of South Carolina,* consequently losing his judicial

positions. As Chief Justice of South Carolina he declared, two months before the Declaration of Independence, that the king had no authority in his colony. Drayton was the first important advocate of political autonomy for America. *Memoirs of the American Revolution* (1821) was edited from his papers by his son.

Dream Life, essays by D.G.Mitchell (q.v.).

Dream Within a Dream, A, poem by Poe (q.v.).

Dred, A Tale of the Great Dismal Swamp, novel by Mrs.Stowe (q.v.), published in 1856. It complements her first antislavery novel, *Uncle Tom's Cabin*, by showing the demoralizing influence of slavery on the whites. There were three dramatizations of *Dred*, including one by Brougham.

Nina Gordon places the management of her deceased father's North Carolina estate in the hands of Harry, a mulatto half-brother. On her sudden death by cholera, her brother Tom comes into possession of the property, and cruelly forces Harry to flee. Seeking refuge in the Swamp, Harry is protected by Dred, a Negro religious fanatic, who is killed when Tom comes to search for his half-brother. A subplot tells a parallel story of a worthless trader, John Cripps, whose cruelty drives his slave, Old Triff, to take Cripps's children to the Swamp among other refugees. Through Edward Clayton, Nina's former fiancé, the fugitives are transported to Canada and safety.

Dred Scott Case, concerned with Dred Scott (*c.*1795–1858), a Negro slave taken to Illinois and Wisconsin Territory, which was considered free under the terms of the Missouri Compromise. He later sued for his freedom, claiming that several years of residence in free territory entitled him to this status. In the Supreme Court, which had five Southern judges, the decision was against Scott (1856–7). The case tested the constitutionality of the Missouri Compromise, and the question whether a Negro could become a citizen with standing in the courts.

DREISER, THEODORE [HERMAN ALBERT] (1871–), born at Terre Haute, Indiana, of a poor and intensely religious family, who taught him to shun many human experiences as degrading or destructive. He early developed a yearning for wealth, society, and the kind of life which he later gave to his hero Cowperwood, an unscrupulous magnate of big business, who is the subject of an exhaustive character study in *The Financier* (q.v.,1912) and *The Titan* (q.v.,1914). After a period of newspaper reporting in St.Louis, Chicago, Pittsburgh, and New York, stimulated by reading Balzac, and released from his crass success-worship by studying Huxley, Tyndall, and Spencer, he came to see life as a strangely magnificent composite of warring energies, having no plan or purpose. His journalism and hack-work were temporarily interrupted by the writing of *Sister Carrie* (q.v.,1900), the story of a working girl and her life as the mistress of a man who descends the social scale as she rises to success as an actress. Since the book was withheld from circulation, Dreiser was not able to retire from commercial activities, including the editing of pulp magazines and women's fashion journals, until the publication of *Jennie Gerhardt* (q.v.,1911), the story of a woman who sacrifices her own interests rather than jeopardize her lover's social and economic security by opposing his marriage. In *The 'Genius'* (q.v.,1915), the story of a gifted but weak artist, and *An American Tragedy* (q.v.,1925), the story of a youth of unstable character trapped by circumstances that lead to his execution for murder, Dreiser sets forth his naturalistic concept of American society. This view, developed in the four previous books, concludes that, since the chaotic nature of life precludes spiritual satisfactions, it is normal and right to take the most one can from the economic grab-bag. Dreiser has been acclaimed for this sincere and profound consciousness of the tragedy of life as he saw it in America, despite the ugliness of his heavy style, and his structural incompetence, chaotic verbosity, and sometimes confused character drawing. Often bogged down by clumsy writing, his books nevertheless are endowed with power by sheer force and an honest massing of details. In *Dreiser Looks at Russia* (1928) and *Tragic America* (1931), he expresses a hopeful belief in socialism, as opposed to his former confused naturalism. His many other writings include: *Plays of the Natural and Supernatural* (1916); *The Hand of the Potter* (1918), a tragedy; *Free* (1918), *Chains* (1927), and *A Gallery of Women* (2 vols.,1929), short story collections; *Moods, Cadenced and Declaimed* (1926, enlarged 1928), a book of poetry; *Hey*

Rub-a-Dub-Dub (1920), essays setting forth his philosophic views; *The Color of a Great City* (1923) and *My City* (1929), vignettes of New York; *Twelve Men* (1919), studies of actual persons, including one of his brother, Paul Dresser, whom he is said to have assisted in writing *On the Banks of the Wabash*; and the autobiographical works, *A Traveler at Forty* (1913), *A Hoosier Holiday* (1916), *A Book about Myself* (1922), which was republished as *Newspaper Days* (1931), and *Dawn* (1931).

DRESSER, Paul (1857–1911), composer of *The Blue and the Gray*, *On the Banks of the Wabash Far Away*, which was popular during the Spanish-American War period, and many other songs for Tin Pan Alley. His surname was originally spelled like that of his brother, Theodore Dreiser, who is said to have collaborated in writing *On the Banks of the Wabash.*

DREW, Daniel (1797–1879), reared on a New York farm, served in the War of 1812, and established himself in New York and on the Western frontier as a trader in horses and cattle. In 1834 he founded a steamboat system on the Hudson, competing successfully with the Vanderbilt lines. When he entered Wall Street finance, ten years later, he continued the rivalry with Vanderbilt, which reached its climax in the 'Erie War' (1866–8). Drew, then treasurer of the Erie Railroad, manipulated the line's stock in collaboration with Jay Gould and Jim Fisk, printing hundreds of thousands of watered shares and defying court injunctions obtained by Vanderbilt, who wished to gain control for himself. Drew and his associates won millions by these transactions, incidentally causing a financial panic and widespread distress, and ruining the financial structure of the railroad. In 1870 Gould and Fisk turned on Drew, enriching themselves by manipulations that began his ruin. After his bankruptcy (1876) he never regained wealth or prominence. One of the most notorious of Gilded Age financiers, Drew was noted for his mixture of Methodist piety, which prompted him to found the Drew Theological Seminary (New Jersey), with illiteracy, extreme thrift, and a grasping and unscrupulous nature.

DREW, John (1827–62), Irish-born American actor, father of Georgiana Barrymore (q.v.) and John Drew (1853–1927), was outstanding in Shakespearean comedy and society drama.

DREXEL, Francis Martin (1792–1863), born in Austria, was a portrait painter until the age of 45, although he also acquired wealth as a trader in foreign currency. In 1838 he founded the Philadelphia banking and brokerage business, which became Drexel and Company. With his sons, Anthony Joseph (1826–93) and Joseph William (1833–88), he made the firm an important factor in 19th-century finance. Joseph, who became a partner of J.P.Morgan, is also known as a philanthropist and patron of music and painting. Anthony, more important as a banker and one of President Grant's intimate advisers, was part-owner of the Philadelphia *Public Ledger*, and in 1892 founded the Drexel Institute.

D'ri and I, novel by Irving Bacheller (q.v.).

Drums, historical novel by James Boyd (q.v.), published in 1925.

Johnny Fraser, son of a former Scottish rebel who has married the daughter of an aristocratic colonial family, grows up on a pioneer North Carolina plantation. At home his close companion has been Sally Merrillee, daughter of a neighbor, but in Edenton, where he completes his education, he turns to Eve Tennant, daughter of a British officer. At the outbreak of the Revolutionary War, the Tennants are forced to flee, while Johnny is recalled to his home, where his father discourages his interest in the patriot cause, reminding him of the failure of the Scottish rebellion. He goes to London to work in the exporting business, and renews his affair with Eve, but she is forced to abandon him for a wealthier match. Through an Edenton friend, Johnny becomes involved in the plans of John Paul Jones, takes part in the battle between the *Bonhomme Richard* and the *Serapis*, returns home wounded, and fights again in the troops of Daniel Morgan. At the close of the war, he is crippled but optimistic because of the patriot victory and his love for Sally, which she returns.

Drum-Taps, poems by Whitman (q.v.), published in 1865, containing descriptive scenes at the front and in Washington hospitals during the Civil War, as well as 'Pioneers! O Pioneers!' (q.v.). A small supplement, issued after Lincoln's assassination as *Sequel to Drum-Taps* (1865–6),

contained 'When Lilacs Last in the Door Yard Bloom'd,' 'O Captain! My Captain!,' 'Chanting the Square Deific' (qq.v.), and other poems. Both volumes were incorporated in the 1867 edition of *Leaves of Grass*.

Drunkard, The; or, The Fallen Saved, popular melodrama by W.H.Smith, was produced in 1844 as a sentimental plea for temperance, but has recently been revived for purposes of burlesque.

DUANE, WILLIAM (1760–1835), journalist in the U.S., India, and England, was associated with B.F.Bache in the editorship of the Philadelphia *Aurora*, and after Bache's death was sole editor of this Jeffersonian paper (1798–1822, 1834–5). Arrested under the Sedition Law, he was acquitted with a *nolle prosequi* by Jefferson. He was the author of *The Mississippi Question* (1803), *A Military Dictionary* (1810), *An Epitome of the Arts and Sciences* (1811), and *A Visit to Colombia* (1826).

DUBOIS, WILLIAM E[DWARD] B[URGHARDT] (1868–), Negro editor and author, received his Ph.D. from Harvard (1895), taught economics and history at Atlanta University (1896–1910), and has been an active worker for social reforms in the interests of his race. His books include: *The Souls of Black Folk* (1903) and *Darkwater* (1920), sketches and verses of Negro life; *John Brown* (1909); *The Negro* (1915), *The Gift of Black Folk* (1924), and *Black Reconstruction* (1935), sociological studies; and a novel, *The Dark Princess* (1928). He edited *The Crisis* (1910–34), a magazine devoted to the social betterment of Negroes. *Dusk of Dawn* (1940) he describes as 'not so much my autobiography as the autobiography of a concept of race.'

DU CHAILLU, PAUL BELLONI (1835-1903), explorer and author, probably born in France and reared in Africa, came to the U.S. (*c.*1852), and received the backing of the Philadelphia Academy of Natural Sciences for his African explorations (1856–9), described in his *Explorations and Adventures in Equatorial Africa* (1861). Because of its seemingly fantastic tales, this work won him notoriety and ridicule rather than scientific fame. A second expedition (1863–5) resulted in his *Journey to Ashangoland* (1867), *Stories of the Gorilla Country* (1868), *Wild Life Under the Equator* (1869), *Lost in the Jungle* (1869), *My Apingi Kingdom* (1870), and *The Country of the Dwarfs* (1871). A trip to Sweden, Norway, and Lapland (1871) was the source of his *The Land of the Midnight Sun* (1881) and *The Viking Age* (1889). He died in Russia.

DUCHÉ, JACOB (1737–98), Philadelphia-born Anglican clergyman, preached to the Revolutionary soldiers (1775–6), his most famous sermon being 'The Duty of Standing Fast in our Spiritual and Temporal Liberties,' delivered after the Battle of Bunker Hill. Military reverses affected his allegiance, and he later supplicated God in behalf of the Loyalists with equal zeal. *Discourses on Various Subjects* (1779) are a product of his clerical career in Philadelphia, and his *Observations* (1774), better known as *Caspipina's Letters*, are descriptions of the American scene, supposedly written by a young Englishman to friends at home, which show an unswerving deference to the Church and aristocracy.

DUDLEY, THOMAS (1576–1652), a member of the English congregation of John Cotton, was a colonist in the expedition of the *Arbella* (1630). He served 13 terms as deputy-governor of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, and four terms as governor, besides being a member of the council and a founder and overseer of Harvard. Anne Bradstreet was his daughter.

JOSEPH DUDLEY (1647–1720), his son, graduated from Harvard (1665), served in King Philip's War, and was one of the agents sent to England to protest the threatened loss of the colony's charter. He became governor, until the appointment of Andros, and at the fall of the latter's administration went to England, returning to the colonies as Chief Justice of New York (1690–92). He became a member of Parliament, and was governor of Massachusetts (1702–15), but his stringent administration was extremely unpopular.

DUGANNE, AUGUSTINE JOSEPH HICKEY (1823–84), author of poetry, a tragedy, dime novels, and popular economic and political treatises. *A Sound Literature the Safeguard of our National Institutions* (1853) and *Art's True Mission in America* (1853) are chauvinistic works; *Parnassus in Pillory* (1851) is an imitation of Lowell's *Fable for Critics*; and *Camps and Prisons* (1865) is a vivid account of the

author's experiences in the Civil War. His *Poetical Works* were collected in 1855.

Duke of Stockbridge, The, novel by Edward Bellamy (q.v.).

Duke University, coeducational institution founded at Durham, North Carolina (1883), as Trinity College, was renamed (1925) on the receipt of a large endowment from the tobacco manufacturer James B. Duke, which makes it one of the wealthiest universities in the South. *American Literature* and *The South Atlantic Quarterly* are published at Duke.

Dukesborough Tales, local-color sketches by R.M.Johnston (q.v.), four of which were published under the pseudonym Philemon Perch as *Georgia Sketches* (1864), and republished with additions and the present title in 1871. Studies of Georgia provincial life before the coming of the railroad, they belong in the tradition of Longstreet's *Georgia Scenes* and are sympathetically humorous stories emphasizing character and native setting, with little attention to plot.

DULANY, Daniel (1722–97), Maryland lawyer, author of *Considerations on the Propriety of Imposing Taxes in the British Colonies* (1765), opposing the Stamp Act on legal grounds. He lost his colonial popularity when, in a newspaper controversy with Charles Carroll (1773), he defended the exacting of fees by government officials.

Dulcy, play by Marc Connelly and George S. Kaufman (qq.v.).

DULUTH (or Du Lhut), Daniel Greysolon, *Sieur* (1636–1710), French explorer, left Canada in 1678 to settle the Ojibway-Sioux war, and during this expedition claimed the upper Mississippi region for France. His plans for further explorations were interrupted by army service and calls to settle disputes among the Indians. His conquests and the loyalty that he won from the tribes were of major importance in establishing the French empire in the Northwest. The Minnesota city that bears his name is built on the site of a trading post that he established (1678).

DUMMER, Jeremiah (*c.*1679–1739), colonial agent for Massachusetts and Connecticut, wrote a closely reasoned *Defence of the New England Charters* (1721) to answer the Parliamentary attacks of the time. He was instrumental in persuading Elihu Yale to found Yale University.

DUNBAR, Paul Laurence (1872–1906), Negro poet, whose *Lyrics of Lowly Life* (1896), containing the best work from his *Oak and Ivy* (1893) and *Majors and Minors* (1895), exhibit a lyric faculty in the use of Negro refrains, blended with a typical pathos and humor. The *Lyrics of the Hearthside* (1899) and *Lyrics of Love and Laughter* (1903) further illustrate his graceful use of Negro dialect and folk material, but the *Lyrics of Sunshine and Shadow* (1905) are more sentimental, and echo his favorites from Burns to Riley. He also wrote four novels, of which the best is considered to be *The Sport of the Gods* (1902). His *Complete Poems* were published in 1913.

DUNCAN, Isadora (1878–1927), dancer born in San Francisco, developed her theories of interpretative dancing, based on classic forms and such modern aesthetic thought as that of Whitman, during her long residence in Europe. Her autobiography, *My Life* (1927), is noted for its frank revelations of an eventful career.

Dunce Boy, The, play by Lula Vollmer (q.v.).

Dunkers, Baptist sect, officially called the Church of the Brethren, had its origin in the German Pietist movement. The first congregation (1708) was organized by Alexander Mack, and when persecution drove the movement from Germany a group settled at Germantown, Pennsylvania (1719), under Peter Beck. The following year, Conrad Beissel caused a schism by his ascetic teachings, observance of the seventh day as sabbath, and certain Old Testament ideas concerning food. He led his followers to found the Ephrata Community (q.v.), where they became known as Seventh Day Baptists. The Dunkers, sometimes called Dunkards and Tunkers (dippers) derive their name from their method of baptism by triple immersion, once for each member of the Trinity. They preserve the primitive simplicity of the apostolic church, and enjoin plainness of dress, settlement of disputes without recourse to oaths or law, and opposition to tobacco, alcohol, and war. They have a membership of more than 128,000, while the Seventh Day Baptists have some 8,000 members.

DUNLAP, William (1766–1839), born in New Jersey, began his versatile career at 16 as a professional portrait painter, among his early subjects being George and

Martha Washington. He returned to New York after three years of study in London under Benjamin West, but had only a moderate success as a painter. Inspired by the success of *The Contrast*, he wrote *The Father; or, American Shandyism* (q.v., 1789), which was so successful that he continued to focus his attention on the drama. New plays from his pen appeared on the New York stage at least once a year, and these included: *Darby's Return* (1789); *Fatal Deception* (1794), which was published as *Leicester* (q.v.,1807); *Fontainville Abbey* (1795); and an opera, *The Archers* (1796). In 1796 he purchased a share in New York's Old American Company, and two years later became the sole owner of this unprofitable theatrical enterprise. He translated many popular French and German dramas, and his version of Kotzebue's *The Stranger* (1798) began a tremendous vogue for this dramatist, of which Dunlap took advantage by translating more than a dozen of his plays. His adaptations were frequently based on Schiller and other German dramatists, and he also drew heavily on French playwrights. Although these works were popular, and although during this period he produced some of his own best plays, such as *André* (q.v.,1798) and *The Italian Father* (q.v.,1799), his theater failed and he went into bankruptcy (1805). After a season as an itinerant miniaturist, five years as a theatrical manager, and an attempt to publish a magazine, *The Monthly Recorder* (1813), he returned to his career as a painter. Meanwhile he wrote a *Life of Charles Brockden Brown* (1815), poorly organized, but the primary source of biographical information about the novelist. In 1821 Dunlap began a series of large show canvases much indebted to Benjamin West, and he helped found the National Academy of Design (1826), where for a time he served as professor of historical painting. His *History of the Rise and Progress of the Arts of Design in the United States* (2 vols.,1834) is an indispensible authority, much of its information being based on first-hand knowledge. The *History of the American Theatre* (1832), the first account of our stage, is important for furnishing personal information about actors as well as material about early theaters and plays. Dunlap also wrote a temperance novel, *Thirty Years Ago; or, The Memoirs of a Water Drinker* (1836); a dialogue *History of New York for Schools* (1837), dealing with events up to 1789; and a *History of the New Netherlands, Province of New York, and State of New York* (2 vols.,1839–40), a careful work about the period before the adoption of the Constitution. He was the first American to make a serious business of writing for the stage, and of the 65 plays listed in his bibliography, 30 are original. Several of them have been republished by the Dunlap Society.

DUNMORE, John Murray, *Earl of* (1732–1809), colonial governor of New York (1770) and Virginia (1770–76), led a successful campaign against the Indians in Pennsylvania, generally known as Dunmore's War (1774). At the outbreak of the Revolution, he removed himself and his powder stores to a ship of war, declared martial law in Virginia, and sent out Loyalist troops. When these were defeated (Jan. 1776), he was forced to return to England.

DUNNE, Finley Peter (1867–1936), Chicago journalist, editor of *Collier's* (1918–19), is best known as the author of a series of books in which Mr.Dooley, an Irish saloon keeper, criticizes current events, leaders, and aspects of the social scene, with a rich brogue and shrewd native humor. *Mr.Dooley in Peace and in War* (1898) was the first of this series, which concluded with *Mr.Dooley on Making a Will* (1919).

DUNNING, William Archibald (1857–1922), professor of American history at Columbia, whose *Essays on the Civil War and Reconstruction* (1898) and *Reconstruction, Political and Economic* (1907) were the first scientific investigations of a period whose history he and his students virtually rewrote. His *History of Political Theories* (3 vols.,1902,'05,'20) is a brilliant survey of political philosophy related to the general history of ideas.

DUNTON, John (1659–1733), English bookseller, came to Boston (March 1686) to collect a debt. He remained two or three months, making excursions into neighboring towns to sell books, which, he said, 'were most of them practical, and well suited to the genius of New England.' His *Life and Errors of John Dunton* (1705) gives a glimpse of this visit, and eight fictional *Letters from New England* have been published by the Prince Society (1867).

Dupin, C.Auguste, detective hero of 'The Murders in the Rue Morgue,' 'The Purloined Letter,' and 'The Mystery of Marie Roget' (qq.v.).

DU PONCEAU, Pierre Étienne [Peter Stephen] (1760–1844), born in St.Martin, Île de Ré, France, came to America (1777) as secretary to Baron Steuben, and served in the Continental army until illness forced him to retire (1780). As a U.S. citizen he was admitted to the Pennsylvania bar. In addition to works on international law he wrote philological treatises that include *English Phonology* (1817) and *Grammatical System of Some of the Languages of the Indian Nations of North America* (1838). He also wrote books on Pennsylvania history and on the Constitution.

DUPUY, Eliza Ann (1814–81), Southern author, whose historical romances include *The Conspirator* (1850), based on the life of Aaron Burr, and *The Huguenot Exiles* (1856).

Duquesne, Fort, see *Pittsburgh.*

DURAND, Asher Brown (1796–1886), New Jersey-born landscape painter, with Thomas Cole was a founder of the Hudson River School (q.v.). In depicting the Hudson River and Catskill Mountain scenery, he adopted the then unusual practice of painting directly from nature, meticulously transcribing every detail in a monochromatic silvery gray tone. Failing to correlate the details with the larger masses, he does not achieve a harmonious composition.

DURANT, Will[iam James] (1885–), popularizer of the history of ideas, whose books include: *The Story of Philosophy* (1926); *The Mansions of Philosophy* (1929); *Adventures in Genius* (1931); *On the Meaning of Life* (1932); and *Our Oriental Heritage* (1935) and *The Life of Greece* (1939), two volumes of a projected five-volume *The Story of Civilization.*

DURANTY, Walter (1884–), English-born newspaper correspondent in Russia, author of *I Write as I Please* (1935), an account of his work; *Duranty Reports Russia* (1934); *One Life, One Kopek* (1937), a novel; and a book of stories, *Babies Without Tails* (1937).

Dust Bowl, see *Plains region.*

Dutch Reformed Church, see *Reformed Church in America.*

Dutch West India Company, see *New Netherland.*

Dutchman's Fireside, The, novel by J.K.Paulding (q.v.), published in 1831.

Catalina Vancour, daughter of a Dutch patroon living near Albany, is loved by her adopted cousin, Sybert Vancour, a bashful youth, who, despairing of her love, leaves for a hunting trip. He meets Sir William Johnson, who befriends him and restores his self-confidence. On Sybert's return home, he is able to save Catalina from death at the hands of a degenerate Indian, whom he kills after a desperate struggle. Soon Catalina, although in love with Sybert, goes to New York and becomes the belle of the city. Following her there, the youth is overcome by shyness. At the outbreak of the French and Indian War, he becomes a scout for Johnson, in company with Timothy Weasel (Lewis Wetzel, q.v.). Sybert is seriously wounded in an engagement. Catalina hears that he has been killed, and his sudden return causes consternation and joy. The story concludes with their marriage.

DUVAL, William Pope (1784–1854), Virginia-born frontiersman, practiced law in Kentucky, fought in the War of 1812, was a congressman (1813–15), and became territorial governor of Florida (1822–34). He is said to be the prototype of Nimrod Wildfire in Paulding's *The Lion of the West.*

DUVENECK, Frank (1848–1919), was a typical exponent of the Munich school of painting in his emphasis on bold brushwork, bituminous backgrounds, and heavily applied paint, especially in such canvases as the *Whistling Boy.* After long residences abroad, he settled permanently in America (1889), and practically abandoned painting to teach at the Cincinnati Art Academy. He was also known for his etchings of Venice and his sculptures, which include the bust of C.W.Eliot and the seated statue of Emerson at Harvard, and the memorial to his wife in the English cemetery at Florence.

DUYCKINCK, Evert Augustus (1816–78), with his brother, George Long Duyckinck (1823–63), edited the New York *Literary World* (1847–53), the leading weekly literary review of the period. Prominent in literary society, they were acquainted with Irving, Cooper, Halleck, Bryant, and Melville, and were instru-

mental in the first publication of many writers. The brothers continued their collaboration in the *Cyclopaedia of American Literature* (1855, revised 1866), the most comprehensive scholarly work of its kind at that date. Although no longer a standard reference, it is still valuable for students. E.A.Duyckinck edited other periodicals and many books, and assembled a large and important library, now in the New York Public Library. With Cornelius Mathews, he founded and edited the literary journal *Arcturus* (q.v.).

DVOŘÁK, Antonin (1841–1904), Bohemian composer, had already achieved international fame when he came to New York (1892–5) to direct the National Conservatory of Music. Besides the effect of his teaching, he was significant for urging the use of Negro and Indian themes to create an indigenous American music. His famous symphony *From the New World* (Opus 95, 1893) contains adaptations of such themes, as do some of his later compositions.

DWIGGINS, W[illiam] A[ddison] (1880–), book designer and calligrapher, known for his striking type design and arrangement, in harmony with the subject matter of the text. His own writings include *Towards a Reform of the Paper Currency Particularly in Point of Its Design* (1932).

DWIGHT, John S[ullivan] (1813–93), Boston music critic, helped found the influential Harvard Musical Association (1837). After a few years as a Unitarian minister, he became one of the first members of the Transcendental Club, and later taught music and Latin at Brook Farm. He contributed to *The Dial* and *The Harbinger*, making the latter a leader in U.S. music criticism, and founded and edited *Dwight's Journal of Music* (1852–81), as well as establishing a professorship of music at Harvard. Through his criticism, in the orthodox romantic tradition of the time, he had a profound influence on American musical taste.

Marianne Dwight (1816–1901), his sister, joined him at Brook Farm, and there in 1846 married John Orvis. Her *Letters from Brook Farm*, 1844–1847 (1928) give an interesting and sprightly account of daily life under the Fourierist regime.

DWIGHT, Theodore (1764–1846), Massachusetts lawyer, grandson of Jonathan Edwards and brother of Timothy Dwight, is remembered as one of the Connecticut Wits (q.v.), of whom he was probably the most vehemently Federalist member. Democracy was anathema to him, as appears in his speeches and in his *History of the Hartford Convention* (1833) and *The Character of Thomas Jefferson* (1839). He also wrote *Sketches of Scenery and Manners in the United States* (1829), *The Northern Traveller* (1825), and a *History of Connecticut* (1841). His crisp Federalist verse, in *The Echo* and *The Political Greenhouse*, shows a mastery of Hudibrastic verse. From 1815 to 1817 he conducted the Albany *Daily Advertiser*, and thereafter edited the *New York Daily Advertiser*.

Theodore Dwight (1796–1866), his son, edited an independent journal, *Dwight's American Magazine* (1845–52), and wrote several books about his travels.

DWIGHT, Timothy (1752–1817), born in Massachusetts, was a grandson of Jonathan Edwards and brother of Theodore Dwight. He showed precocious brilliance by entering Yale at the age of 13, and as a tutor there (1771–7) worked and studied so excessively that he precipitated a physical breakdown. To recuperate, he turned to an equally disproportionate amount of hiking and horseback trips, and his observations furnished much of the material for his later *Travels in New England and New York* (4 vols.,1821–2). His literary interests at Yale and his attempts with John Trumbull to introduce contemporary English literature into the curriculum may be considered the genesis of the Connecticut Wits (q.v.). After a brief period as an army chaplain and in local politics, he became pastor (1783–95) of the Congregational church at Greenfield Hill, Connecticut. Preacher, author, community leader, and proprietor of a coeducational school, Dwight established himself as a leading Calvinist and stalwart Federalist. His literary reputation as a leader of the Wits was based mainly on his poems, *The Conquest of Canaan* (q.v.,1785), *Greenfield Hill* (q.v.,1794), and *The Triumph of Infidelity* (q.v.,1788). His stanch belief in theocracy and Federalism appears in such works as *The True Means of Establishing Public Happiness*, *Two Discourses on the Nature and Danger of Infidel Philosophy* (1798), and *The Duty of Americans, at the Present Crisis* (1798). As guardian of public morality, he wrote and preached on many sub-

jects, including even a sermon on the *Folly, Guilt, and Mischiefs of Dueling* (1805), following the duel between his cousin Burr and Hamilton. He was president of Yale (1805–26), where, despite his narrow political, social, and religious views, he proved a great teacher and college leader. The beginnings of Yale's modern importance are attributed to his enlargement of the curriculum and employment of prominent scholars. His series of 173 sermons delivered at Yale, *Theology, Explained and Defended* (5 vols.,1818–19), is a complete exposition of his theological system. The *Travels*, his most famous prose work, are a thorough record of scenery, history, social and religious conditions, and statistical information. The best known of his short poems is the patriotic song, 'Columbia, Columbia, to glory arise.'

Dynamo, play by Eugene O'Neill (q.v.).

E

E Pluribus Unum, Latin motto ('One out of many') of the U.S. Seal and most American coins, was suggested (1776) by Franklin, Adams, and Jefferson, the Committee on the Great Seal of the second Continental Congress.

Each and All, poem by Emerson (q.v.), published in 1839 and reprinted in his *Poems* (1847). In couplets of four-stress verse, it expresses his apprehension of the beauty of complete nature, 'the perfect whole,' despite passing disappointments and the realization that isolated facts may be ugly:

> All are needed by each one;
> Nothing is fair or good alone.

Eagle, The; or Dartmouth Centinel (1793–9), country newspaper of Dartmouth, New Hampshire, which had a distinctly literary character. During its first two years, many of the contributions came from Joseph Dennie and Royall Tyler. After 1796 it became an unimportant local journal.

Eagle That Is Forgotten, The, poem in five-stress anapestic metre, by Vachel Lindsay (q.v.), published in *General William Booth Enters into Heaven and Other Poems* (1913). This elegy on the memory of J.P.Altgeld (q.v.), liberal governor of Illinois, celebrates him as a 'brave hearted . . . wise man' who 'kindled the flame' and served 'the mocked and the scorned and the wounded, the lame and the poor,' concluding that

> To live in mankind is far more than to live in a name.

EAKINS, Thomas (1844–1916), born in Philadelphia, prepared for his artistic career by studying at the Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts, attending physicians' courses in anatomy, training in Paris (1866–8), and studying the technique of the Spanish masters. The uncompromising truth of his portraits won him few patrons in Philadelphia, and as a result he became an instructor (1876–86) at the Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts, but was forced to resign when his instruction from the nude model was disapproved by the trustees. His life was a continual struggle for recognition, for the rugged sincerity of his paintings was disliked except by a few persons such as Whitman, who declared, 'Eakins is not a painter, he is a force.' In *The Pair-Oared Shell*, *Chess Players*, *The Writing Master*, *The Thinker*, and *The Clinic of Professor Agnew*, he showed a cross section of American life with sober objectivity. About the mid-1880's, he turned almost exclusively to portraiture, done in drab colors with solid, structural forms laid in with strong brush strokes.

EAMES, Wilberforce (1855–1937), bibliographer of the New York Public Library, editor of *Sabin's Dictionary* (q.v.), was a scholar of many interests, although he was primarily distinguished for his bibliographical knowledge of American history and literature.

EARL (or Earle), Ralph (1751–1801), Massachusetts painter, was at first an itinerant limner and is believed to have painted the originals of Amos Doolittle's popular engravings of the battles of Lexington and Concord. His early portraits are straightforward, with a stiff primitive charm, but his style became more graceful after he studied in London (1783–6) with Benjamin West.

EARLE, Alice Morse (1853–1911), Massachusetts scholar whose works include: *The Sabbath in Puritan New England* (1891), *Customs and Fashions in Old New England* (1893), *Colonial Days in Old New York* (1897), *Child Life in Colonial Days* (1899), and *Two Centuries of Costume* (1903).

Early Autumn: A Story of a Lady, novel by Louis Bromfield (q.v.), published in 1926, won the 1927 Pulitzer Prize.

The narrative is concerned with the force of tradition in the Pentland family, whose ancestors settled Durham, Massachusetts, now a wealthy mill town. The central character is the gracious 'outsider,' Olivia, whose loveless marriage with pedantic Anson Pentland has produced two children: Sybil, now 18, and Jack, an invalid youth. The household also includes bitter old John Pentland, who retains command of the family fortune because he despises his weak son; John's insane wife, imprisoned in the house; and his sister Cassie, who enforces their rigidly conventional conduct. Among their neighbors are old Mrs.Soames, whom John loves; Sabine Callendar, who returns to Durham from Europe, with her daughter

Thérèse, to observe the Pentlands with shrewd malice and undermine their complacent orthodoxy; and Michael O'Hara, a self-made political figure who is not accepted by Durham society. Olivia and O'Hara fall in love, and she hopes to escape with him from this unhappy environment. After Jack dies, she decides to delay only until autumn, when Sybil intends to marry Jean de Cyon. Through old John's intervention, however, she is trapped by responsibilities, and dismisses her lover, accepting the bleak prospects of a life circumscribed by Pentland views.

Earth Horizon, autobiography by Mary Austin (q.v.).

East Lynne, sentimental melodramatic novel by the English author, Mrs.Henry Wood, published in 1861. Its dramatic version was extremely popular on the American stage during the later part of the century.

East Side (Lower), section of New York City bounded by the East River, the Bowery, and the fringe of the uptown area. This densely populated slum district, largely inhabited by recent immigrants from eastern and southern Europe, has long been known for its poverty and inadequate housing, and hence as a center of crime, ill-health, and radicalism. Although a redistribution of population is changing the character of the East Side, it retains such features as pushcart markets, tenements, and picturesque foreign customs. Alfred E. Smith was reared in the district, as were Edward MacDowell and the more representative composers, Irving Berlin and George Gershwin. Writers about the East Side include Jacob Riis, Ernest Poole, Konrad Bercovici, James Oppenheim, Michael Gold, and Alfred Kreymborg. Its life has frequently been painted by George Luks.

EASTBURN, James Wallis (1797–1819), born in England, was brought to New York (1803), graduated from Columbia (1816), and became a clergyman of the Protestant Episcopal Church in Virginia. He collaborated with R.C.Sands in writing *Yamoyden* (q.v.,1820), a romantic poem about King Philip's War, and was the author of several hymns.

Eastern states, region including New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, and Delaware, although the last was long considered part of the South. Originally the Middle Colonies, these states were first explored by Verrazano, who visited New York bay (1524); Hudson, who discovered the Hudson River (1608); Champlain, who discovered Lake Champlain (1608); and De la Warr, who is said to have entered Delaware Bay (1610). The Dutch soon settled New Netherland (q.v.), and in 1655 they captured the colony of New Sweden (q.v.). The early history of these colonies figures in the works of Irving and Paulding. The English seized New Netherland (1664), while the French controlled central and northern New York, and further impetus was provided for English colonization by Penn's grant (1681) for a Quaker refuge in Pennsylvania, which was also widely colonized by the German immigrants later called 'Pennsylvania Dutch' (q.v.). The political, economic, and cultural history of the region during the 18th century centered in Philadelphia and New York City (qq.v.), while on the northwestern frontier were fought the battles of the French and Indian Wars (q.v.). The first Plan for Union was presented at the Albany Congress (q.v.), and, in the years prior to the Revolution, the Middle Colonies were active in the growing controversy. Among the patriot leaders were Franklin, Dickinson, Hopkinson, Hamilton, Paine, Seabury, Gouverneur Morris, and Robert Morris, while the Loyalist pamphleteers included Odell and Stansbury. The whole region was within the theater of the Revolutionary War (q.v.), following which these states increasingly asserted their importance, partially owing to their intermediate position between the South and New England. New York City and Philadelphia were the first capitals of the U.S., and New York grew to become a great port, during the 1830's surpassing Boston as an importing and exporting center. Although commerce was disturbed by the War of 1812, when the British entered Delaware and attacked on the Great Lakes, the region advanced rapidly in trading and manufacturing. The Erie Canal (q.v.) connected the seaboard with the West, the old manorial system of New York was overthrown in the Anti-Rent War, and the mining of coal and iron in Pennsylvania resulted in the growth of Pittsburgh (q.v.). These three subjects have been treated in fiction respectively by W.D.Edmonds, Cooper, and Hergesheimer. Such events shaped the character of the region in two ways: they furthered

the growth of great fortunes, like those of Astor, Belmont, and Biddle, causing the East to agitate for high protective tariffs; and they created an influx of immigrants, so that the region became a stronghold of non-English elements, opposed by waves of nativist antipathy expressed by such parties as the Know-Nothings, and making possible the political domination of the Albany Regency and Tammany (qq.v.). During these years the Eastern states were affected by the social, religious, and humanitarian movements that were sweeping New England, and central New York was the home of such various manifestations as the furore over spiritualism, the early meetings favoring woman suffrage, and the socio-religious plans of the Mormons, Shakers, and Oneida Community. Bethel Community was only one of many communal experiments among the Pennsylvania Dutch. During the Civil War, which reached Northern soil in such battles as that at Gettysburg, Delaware became increasingly affiliated with the industrial East, and after the war the region became more than ever the keystone of American big business, as marked by the growth of Wall Street and such financiers as Cooke, Vanderbilt, and Morgan, accompanied by political corruption in such notorious instances as the malpractices of the Tweed Ring and Tammany Hall in New York, and the Cameron-Quay-Penrose machine in Pennsylvania. The East has remained dominant as the nation's financial and manufacturing center, but it is also the great center of the media of culture, through its virtual monopoly of book and periodical publishing and the theater, and its important museums, orchestras, opera houses, and libraries. Musicians, painters, and authors have thus been attracted to the Eastern cities from all parts of the country. The region is the home of many fine preparatory schools, and among its numerous colleges and universities are Barnard, Bryn Mawr, Colgate, College of the City of New York, Columbia, Cornell, Fordham, Hamilton, Haverford, New York University, Princeton, Rutgers, Swarthmore, University of Pennsylvania, Vassar, and West Point.

EASTMAN, Charles Alexander (1859–1939), South Dakota physician and author, of mixed Sioux Indian and white parentage, graduated from Dartmouth (1887) and received his M.D. (1890) from Boston University. His works include: *An Indian Boyhood* (1902); *Red Hunters and the Animal People* (1904); *Old Indian Days* (1907); *Wigwam Evenings* (1909); *The Soul of the Indian* (1911); *From the Deep Woods; Chapters in the Autobiography of an Indian* (1916); and *Indian Heroes and Great Chieftains* (1918).

EASTMAN, Max [Forrester] (1883–), Marxist critic, whose writings are devoted to literary criticism, the relation of art to life, and problems of economic inequality. He is best known for his social criticism, although his first book, *Enjoyment of Poetry* (q.v., 1913), has had a success unsurpassed by any of his later works. He was a founder and editor of *The Masses* and *The Liberator*. Among his later books are: *Marx, Lenin, and the Science of Revolution* (1926); *The Literary Mind, Its Place in an Age of Science* (1931); *Artists in Uniform* (1934); a translation of Trotsky's *History of the Russian Revolution* (3 vols., 1932–3); *Enjoyment of Laughter* (1936); and *Stalin's Russia* (1940).

EATON, John Henry, see *O'Neale*.

EATON, Theophilus (*c.*1590–1658), emigrated to America (1637) with John Davenport, and with him founded New Haven, Connecticut. He was governor of the colony for the rest of his life and maintained rigid control both through limitation of church membership and by his own laws, which replaced the Mosaic code under which the colony was previously governed.

Nathaniel Eaton (*c.*1610–74), his brother, was the first headmaster of Harvard (1637–9), but was removed from office because he bullied and starved the students and squandered the legacy of John Harvard.

Eben Holden, *a Tale of the North Country*, novel by Irving Bacheller (q.v.), published in 1900.

William, an orphan, is left in the care of the kindly, resourceful hired man, Eben Holden, with whom he travels from Vermont to upper New York, and after several adventures finds a home with a farmer, David Brower, and his wife Elizabeth. The Browers adopt William, who takes the place of their lost son Nehemiah. He attends college, becomes a reporter on Greeley's New York *Tribune*, and serves in the Civil War. During these years, Eben remains to help and advise the Browers, becoming celebrated for his pointed anec-

dotes and pithy sayings. He engineers the return of Nehemiah, who in disguise has watched over the family fortunes for years, and the Browers' happiness is complete when William marries their daughter, Hope.

Echo, The, verse satire by the Connecticut Wits (q.v.), published in 20 numbers in the *American Mercury* (1791–1805) and collected in 1807. With a strong Federalist bias, the work satirizes the fury and rodomontade of the opposing party's orators and press. The first number is a mere travesty of a newspaper description of a thunder storm, but the poem passes on to a satire of democracy in this period when metaphors ran as high as politics. The last number is a travesty of Jefferson's inaugural address of 1805. Theodore Dwight was the author of the more acid satire, and Alsop of the humorous pleasantry, while other contributions were made by Lemuel Hopkins, E.H.Smith, and Mason Cogswell.

Eclectic Magazine, The (1819–1907), literary journal published from New York, Philadelphia, and Boston. It began as *The Philadelphia Register and National Recorder*, a weekly reprint of American newspaper material, and became successively *The National Recorder* (1819–21); *The Saturday Magazine* (1821–2), republishing writings from British literary magazines; *The Museum of Foreign Literature and Science* (1822–42); and *The Eclectic Museum* (1843–4). All these magazines were edited and published by Eliakim Littell, but when it became *The Eclectic Magazine* (1844), a monthly reprint of foreign writings, he sold it to publish the rival *Living Age*.

EDDY, MARY BAKER (1821–1910), founder of Christian Science (q.v.), was born in New Hampshire, and had little formal education. She was married three times, although a chronic invalid, subject in later life to paroxysms. In 1862 she became a disciple of Dr.Phineas P. Quimby (q.v.), a mental healer of Portland, Maine, and after some years of disseminating his teachings she began to work out her own metaphysical system. Her students and followers increased rapidly after the publication of *Science and Health* (q.v.,1875). The following year the Christian Science Association was formed, and in 1879 the various associations were merged in the Church of Christ, Scientist. She founded (1883) and for a time edited the *Journal of Christian Science*, which won more recruits to her Metaphysical College and church. Although she retired in 1889 to a secluded home at Concord, New Hampshire, Mrs.Eddy continued to write books and carefully governed the Mother Church in Boston, the national organization, its doctrine, and its financial properties. At her death, her religious organization numbered 100,000 members, her book had sold 400,000 copies, and her estate was valued at $2,500,000.

EDDY, SHERWOOD (1871–), Y.M.C.A. leader in the Orient, the Near East, and Russia, is the author of *India Awakening* (1911), *The New World of Labor* (1923), *Religion and Social Justice* (1928), and *The Challenge of Russia* (1930). His autobiography is contained in *A Pilgrimage of Ideas* (1934) and *I Have Seen God Do It* (1940). *The Kingdom of God and the American Dream* (1941) is an account of American religious and secular ideals.

Edgar Huntly; or, Memoirs of a Sleep-Walker, epistolary romance by C.B.Brown (q.v.), published in 1801.

Edgar, in his letters to Mary Waldegrave, tells of startling occurrences in a Pennsylvania town, and his investigation of morose Clithero Edny, whom he has observed sleep-walking at the site of the recent murder of Mary's brother. Clithero confesses that he has escaped from Ireland, believing that he killed his benefactress, Mrs.Lorimer; then, his mind evidently unbalanced, he runs away to a near-by cave. One night, after Edgar has visited Clithero in his retreat, he finds himself lying in an underground pit, unable to account for his being there. He is soon involved in a number of adventures, barely escaping death in the pit, killing a panther that is about to leap on him, killing five Indians in a series of battles, and spending several days in the woods in a state of near collapse. When he finds shelter, he unexpectedly meets his former tutor, Sarsefield, who has returned to America after marrying Mrs.Lorimer. Sarsefield discovers that Edgar is a sleep-walker, and that he fell into the pit while unconsciously in search of Clithero. The latter is disclosed to be a maniac, and takes his own life after attempting to kill Mrs.Sarsefield. It is then found that Indians, not Clithero, caused the death of Mary's brother.

EDGARTON, SARAH CARTER (1819–48), Massachusetts poet, writer of juveniles,

and editor (1839–48) of *Rose of Sharon*, the longest-lived American literary annual (1839–57).

Edict by the King of Prussia, satire by Franklin (q.v.), published in the Philadelphia *Public Advertiser* (1773). It is written in the form of a royal proclamation, claiming that England belongs to Prussia because of its original settlement by Anglo-Saxons from that country. Having established English dependence upon Prussia, the king imposes a long list of political and legal restrictions upon the English people. In this fashion, Franklin satirizes the British attitude toward the American colonies.

EDISON, THOMAS ALVA (1847–1931), born in Ohio, was a railroad newsboy and later became a telegraph operator. He early invented the successful quadruplex telegraph system, for transmitting four messages simultaneously, and improved the telegraphic stock-ticker. From his laboratories in Newark (1876–87) and Menlo Park, New Jersey (1887–1931), came the carbon telephone transmitter, the phonograph, improvements on the electric light and power devices, the electric automobile, and many motion-picture inventions. At his death, when he was attempting to develop a synthetic rubber, he held more than 1200 U.S. patents and had become the greatest American figure in the practical application of scientific principles.

EDMONDS, WALTER D[UMAUX] (1903–), New York author, graduated from Harvard (1926), and is best known for his historical novels about his native state. These include: *Rome Haul* (1929), a story of the great days of the Erie Canal; *The Big Barn* (1930); *Erie Water* (1933); *Drums Along the Mohawk* (1936), a novel of the American Revolution and its effect on Mohawk Valley farmers; and *Chad Hanna* (1940), about a boy's adventures in a circus of the 1830's. *Mostly Canallers* (1934) is a book of short stories. *Rome Haul* was dramatized (1934) by Marc Connelly and F.B.Elser as *The Farmer Takes a Wife*.

Edny, CLITHERO, character in *Edgar Huntly* (q.v.).

Education of Henry Adams, The, autobiography of Henry Adams (q.v.), privately printed (1907) and posthumously published (1918). Subtitled 'a Study of Twentieth-Century Multiplicity,' the work complements *Mont-Saint-Michel and Chartres* (q.v., 1905), in which Adams interprets the 13th century in Europe as 'the point of history when man held the highest idea of himself as a unit in a unified universe.' Here, embodying his theory of the acceleration of historical force, he describes the modern world as a 'multiverse,' leading to a metaphysics and science of multiple aspects and reactions. Using himself 'for purpose of model, to become a manikin on which the toilet of education is to be draped in order to show the fit or misfit of the clothes,' he describes his own experiences in relation to this complex world, and asserts that his formal education, at Harvard and elsewhere, failed to prepare him for the conflicts he had to meet. The narrative is incomplete, for it omits any mention of his marriage, or other events between 1871 and 1892, but there are vivid descriptions of his encounters with Harvard education, both as student and teacher; with diplomacy in England during the Civil War; with the theories of Darwin; and with other intellectual influences. A chapter on 'The Dynamo and the Virgin' expresses his view that the mechanical dynamo, symbol of electrical energy, corresponds to the central symbol of the Virgin that unified the thought of medieval Europe. The concluding chapters are a more explicit discussion of the dynamic theory of history and the law of acceleration.

EDWARDS, HARRY STILLWELL (1855–1938), Georgia journalist and author, whose books include a novel, *Sons and Fathers* (1896), and two popular Negro stories, *Æneas Africanus* (1919) and *Æneas Africanus, Defendant* (1921).

EDWARDS, JONATHAN (1703–58), born in Connecticut, entered Yale before he was 13, and graduated in 1720. His interest in scientific observation was manifested at the age of 12 in an account 'Of Insects,' on phenomena related to the flying spider (*Andover Review*, Jan. 1890), and a group of acute comments on 'The Soul,' 'The Rainbow,' 'Being,' and 'Colours.' While at Yale he read Locke *On the Human Understanding* with more delight than a 'greedy miser' finds in 'some newly discovered treasure,' and began to combine reflections on the mind with his observations of natural science. He made a precocious venture into Berkeleyan idealism, evidently without knowing Berkeley, and, in his 'Notes on the Mind,' decided: 'That which truly

is the substance of all Bodies, is the infinitely exact, and precise, and perfectly stable Idea, in God's mind, together with his stable Will, that the same shall gradually be communicated to us, and to other minds, according to certain fixed and exact established Methods and Laws.' After two additional years of theological study at Yale, and a year of tutoring there, he became (1726) the colleague of his grandfather, Solomon Stoddard, in the Congregational pastorate at Northampton, Massachusetts. He had made a series of formal 'Resolutions' for his spiritual progress, but it is in his 'Personal Narrative' (written *c.*1740) that he rehearses his spiritual autobiography. Here one sees his intense absorption in the idea of God's infinite will throbbing through the universe. Edwards married Sarah Pierpont (1727), whom he had described four years earlier in a famous lyrical passage. Upon the death of his grandfather (1729), he became the sole pastor of the Northampton church. With stern discipline and exalted fervor he fought the growing Arminianism and the weakening of Congregational churches through the Half-Way Covenant, writing a *Treatise Concerning Religious Affections* (1746) and *A Vindication of the Gospel Doctrine of Justifying Faith* (1746). His discourse, *God Glorified in . . . Man's Dependence upon Him* (1731), attacked those who relied for salvation solely on moral effort, and his sermon on *Divine and Supernatural Light* (1734) argued that saving grace came solely from the mind's supernatural illumination by the loveliness of divine holiness. There ensued a tremendous revival of religious fervor, the Great Awakening (q.v.), in which the community, lacking its pastor's iron will, gave way to a wave of emotionalism and morbid belief in God's absolute justification in condemnation. Edwards's sermons ranged from those on *Charity and Its Fruits* (1738) to the notorious *Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God* (q.v.,1741). Although he criticized the hysterical excitement that accompanied the Awakening, he defended it as a vitally important crisis in *A Faithful Narrative of the Surprising Work of God* (1737), *The Distinguishing Marks of a Work of the Spirit of God* (1741), *Some Thoughts Concerning the Present Revival of Religion in New England* (1742), and *An Humble Attempt to Promote Visible Union of God's People* (1747). He explained that the two activities of the mind—understanding and inclination or will—are indispensible for true religion. Man wills what he loves, and, instead of depending upon mere understanding of God and obedience to worldly morality, he shares directly in the divine light. When Edwards applied this criterion to admission to the Lord's Supper, excluding those who wished to ally themselves to the church without supernatural conversion, his parishioners grew resentful, and this and other matters led to his dismissal (1750). After preaching his dignified *Farewell Sermon* (published 1751), he became a missionary to the Housatonic River Indians and pastor of a small congregation at Stockbridge. He had meanwhile published his apologia, *An Humble Inquiry into the Rules of the Word of God* (1749), and *An Account of the Life of the Late Reverend Mr.David Brainerd* (1749), an example of piety. In his next attack on Arminianism, Edwards reverted to the youthful 'Notes on the Mind,' developing his ethical point of view in *A Careful and Strict Enquiry into the Modern Prevailing Notions of . . . Freedom of Will* (q.v.,1754), his greatest work, which became a primary document in Calvinistic theology. In *The Great Christian Doctrine of Original Sin Defended* (1758), Edwards argues that depravity is inevitable, since an identity of consciousness and a continuity of divine action make all men as one with Adam. 'The Nature of True Virtue,' in *Two Dissertations* (1765), upholds virtue as moral beauty, which, in the form of love, seeks the highest good of all being. Since God is the supreme object, truly disinterested love will be directed toward Him. The lower form of natural virtue rests on self-love, and those who have not been enlightened by saving grace will only perceive and approve justice and benevolence, rather than the essential and primary beauty of virtue. In the second of the *Dissertations*, 'Concerning the End for which God Created the World' (written 1755), he returned to the mystic pantheism of his youth, declaring the world to be an emanation of God's infinite fullness, created to express His glory. Since He is the supreme excellence, He loves the world as He is infused into it. In this, Edwards's tendency to negate the direct, personal, Hebraic concept of God, and to view Him as an infinite being, somewhat foreshadows Transcendentalism. After his work in Stockbridge, he became president of the College of New Jersey, an office he held

from January 1758 until his death in March.

JONATHAN EDWARDS (1745–1801), his son, edited his works, propagated his doctrines, and continued his career as a pastor in New Haven, where he was dismissed (1795) because of a similar objection to the Half-Way Covenant.

Effingham, surname of characters in *Homeward Bound, Home As Found,* the Leather-Stocking Tales (qq.v.), and other novels by Cooper.

EGGLESTON, EDWARD (1837–1902), born in Indiana, received a strict Methodist rearing, and was educated in country schools. Both of these influences are important in his later writing. He was successively a Bible agent, a circuit-riding Methodist minister in Indiana, a pastor of small churches, and a writer and editor of various Sunday school and juvenile magazines. By 1874 he had abandoned Methodism and founded a Church of Christian Endeavor in Brooklyn, New York. He was pastor of this 'creedless' congregation until 1879, when he retired to devote himself to writing. He was already famous for his novels, particularly *The Hoosier Schoolmaster* (q.v.,1871), marked by a pious sentimentalism that shows itself in all his writing, but distinguished for its sincere realism in depicting the backwoods country of Indiana. Other fiction of the same period includes: *The End of the World* (1872), an Indiana love story, whose background is concerned with the fanatic belief of the Millerites in an approaching day of doom; *The Mystery of Metropolisville* (1873), a melodramatic novel concerned with a real-estate boom in Minnesota; *The Circuit Rider* (1874), about a Methodist preacher in southern Ohio during the early 19th century, a novel distinguished for its realistic exposition of the lawlessness of the unsettled frontier society; and *Roxy* (q.v., 1878), considered his best novel, which is set in Indiana during the same period, and vividly contrasts pioneer and 'poor white' types. Although he considered his fiction to be 'a contribution to the history of civilization in America,' Eggleston believed didactic historical works to be of greater value, and now wrote a series of juvenile biographies of such Indian figures as Tecumseh (1878), Pocahontas and Powhatan (1879), and Montezuma (1880), as well as several history texts. His later novels include: *The Hoosier Schoolboy* (1883), a boys' story condemning conditions in rural schools; *The Graysons* (1887), a historical romance of Illinois, featuring Lincoln's successful defense of an accused murderer; and *The Faith Doctor* (1891), a satire on wealthy devotees of Christian Science. He also published short stories and much juvenile fiction, and completed two volumes of a posthumously published history of life in the U.S. (1904).

EGGLESTON, GEORGE CARY (1839–1911), brother of Edward Eggleston, was born in Indiana, and at 16 began teaching in a back-country district school, where his experiences furnished the material for *The Hoosier Schoolmaster.* After serving with the Confederates during the Civil War, he practiced law briefly, then entered an editorial career on newspapers and magazines, with some free-lance writing. For some time he was the literary editor of Bryant's New York *Evening Post,* and he served for 11 years on the editorial staff of Pulitzer's *World.* Meanwhile he wrote a number of books for boys, the autobiographical *A Rebel's Recollections* (1874), some biography and history, and several novels. Some of these, such as *A Man of Honour* (1873) and *Juggernaut* (1891), written with Dolores Marbourg, are based on Indiana life, but others, like *Dorothy South* (1902), *The Master of Warlock* (1903), and *Evelyn Byrd* (1904), are romantic tales of the pre-war South.

Eight, The, loosely organized group of American artists, too individualistic to have much in common except their opposition to sentimentalism and academism. They were organized in 1910 by Robert Henri, and also included John Sloan, William Glackens, Maurice Prendergast, George Luks, Arthur Davies, Everett Shinn, and Ernest Lawson.

Eighteenth Amendment, see *Prohibition.*

Eighth of January, The, play by R.P.Smith (q.v.), produced and published in 1829. It contrasts the loyal American soldier, Charles Bull, with his father, John Bull, an Englishman who will fight against neither his native nor his adopted country, and centers around Jackson's victory at New Orleans (Jan. 8, 1815). Smith wrote the play to laud the success of popular government achieved by the election of Jackson to the presidency (1828). Another play with the same title was written by G.W.P.Custis (1834).

EINSTEIN, ALBERT (1879–), German physicist, professor at Zurich, Prague, and Berlin, achieved international fame as the discoverer and chief exponent of the theory of relativity. In 1933, dispossessed and expatriated by the Nazi regime in his native country, he emigrated to the U.S. to join the newly organized Institute for Advanced Study at Princeton. He is also known as an exponent of Zionism and pacifism, and his translated writings include: *The Meaning of Relativity* (1923); *Sidelights on Relativity* (1923); *About Zionism* (1931); *On the Method of Theoretical Physics* (1933); *Why War?* (1933), written with Sigmund Freud; and *The World As I See It* (1934).

El Dorado (Spanish: the Gilded Man), mythical land of great wealth sought by explorers and conquistadors during early American history. The legend is believed to have derived from a custom of the Chibcha Indians in Colombia, who anointed their chief, rolled him in gold, and ceremonially washed him in a lake, while sacrifices of gold and precious stones were also thrown into the lake. Among the famous expeditions inspired by this story were those of Pizarro, Ralegh, Cabeza de Vaca, and Coronado. It was vaguely attributed to many Indian peoples, including the Zuñi, and El Dorado became a figurative name for any promised land of wealth. Bandelier's book, *The Gilded Man* (1893), is concerned with the Indian legend. Poe's poem, 'Eldorado,' was written in 1849, the year of the California gold rush, to which it has reference. Bayard Taylor's book of this title (1850) describes his visit to California in 1849.

Eleonora, story by Poe (q.v.), published in *The Gift* (1842).

This brief, fantastic romance is concerned with a passionate youth who grows up with his cousin Eleonora amid the beauty of the Valley of the Many-Colored Grass. They fall in love, but the lovely Eleonora dies after the youth promises never to 'bind himself in marriage to any daughter of Earth.' The beauties of the Valley fade, paining him through memories of his beloved, and he leaves the Valley for a strange city, where he serves at the gay court of the king. There he falls deeply in love with 'the seraph Ermengarde' and marries her. Only once he is disturbed by a 'familiar and sweet voice' in the night, saying: 'Sleep in peace!—for the Spirit of Love reigneth and ruleth, and, in taking to thy passionate heart . . . Ermengarde, thou art absolved, for reasons which shall be made known to thee in Heaven, of thy vows unto Eleonora.'

ELIOT, ALICE, pseudonym of Sarah Orne Jewett (q.v.).

ELIOT, CHARLES W[ILLIAM] (1834–1926), president of Harvard (1869–1909), made the University the leading American institution of higher learning, through his improvement of the graduate and professional schools, the distinguished scholars he attracted, the raising of undergraduate academic standards, and such reforms as the 'elective system.' After his resignation, he interested himself in civil service reform, peace organizations, and public affairs. He edited *The Harvard Classics* (1910), a 50-volume selection from world literature, popularly known as 'Dr. Eliot's Five-Foot Shelf of Books,' and intended to assist in the self-education of persons without college training. Eliot's ethical views are stated in *The Religion of the Future* (1909) and *The Durable Satisfactions of Life* (1910). Many of his papers are collected in M.A.DeWolfe Howe's *A Late Harvest* (1924) and W.A.Neilson's *Charles W. Eliot, the Man and His Beliefs* (1926).

ELIOT, JOHN (1604–90), English-born missionary, educated at Cambridge University, came to Boston (1631), where, as the first to preach to the Indians in their native tongue, he obtained the sobriquet 'Apostle to the Indians.' In 1651 he established the first of his 14 villages of Praying Indians, numbering 1,100 converts, but mainly destroyed in King Philip's War. By the pamphlets known as 'Eliot's Indian Tracts,' he aroused interest that led to the formation of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel (1649). His translation of the Bible into the language of the Massachusetts Indians (New Testament, 1661; Old Testament, 1663) was the first complete Bible printed in the English colonies. His other works include a *Catechism* in the Indian language (1654); *The Christian Commonwealth* (1659); *The Indian Primer* (1669); and a part of the *Bay Psalm Book* (q.v., 1640). Cotton Mather wrote a biography of Eliot (1691), and his correspondence with Richard Baxter was published in 1931.

ELIOT, T[HOMAS] S[TEARNS] (1888–), born in St.Louis, graduated from Harvard

(1910) and studied at the Sorbonne and at Merton College, Oxford. For a year he was an instructor in philosophy at Harvard, and his first articles were on this subject. In 1914 he went to Europe, and he did not return to the U. S. until 1932, when he held a lectureship at Harvard. In the intervening years, he was engaged in teaching, then banking, and in 1923 he became editor of the quarterly review, *Criterion*. In 1927 he became a British subject, because of his interest in the English church and state. His first volume of criticism, *The Sacred Wood* (1920), emphasizes the importance of tradition, both in creative writing and in criticism, and through further critical work he is partly responsible for a revival of interest in Donne and Dryden, in whom he found a fusion of thought and feeling that gave a unified sensibility to their poetry. *For Lancelot Andrewes* (q.v.,1928) shows that in the Church of England he found the symbol and expression of meaningful form and discipline that he judged necessary to adequate fulfilment of his own life and service to letters. In *After Strange Gods* (1934), lectures delivered at the University of Virginia, he revealed his increasing preoccupation with tradition as it relates to the expression of moral problems in contemporary literature. His poetry has given a growing evidence of harmony with his critical standards, and he has skilfully adapted the tradition and technical skill of older poets to his own purposes. His first volume of verse, *Prufrock and Other Observations* (1917), had a tone of flippant despair but employed the rhythms and technique of ironic contrast of some of the French *Symbolistes*. A second volume, *Poems* (1919), contained a brilliant series of quatrains, including 'Sweeney Among the Nightingales,' 'Sweeney Erect,' 'The Hippopotamus,' and 'Mr. Eliot's Sunday Morning Service,' in which he further indicates that he feels life to be ignoble, sordid, or stultifying, while it had once been otherwise. In this volume, he showed distinctly a more serious attitude in the poem, 'Gerontian,' and he reached the fulness of his poetic expression during this period of despair in *The Waste Land* (q.v.,1922). After some slighter poems, which indicated his trend, he published *Ash-Wednesday* (q.v.,1930), and made clear his allegiance to the Church of England. Since the beginning of this association, he has written *The Rock* (1934), a pageant representing the past and present difficulties of the Church and its ultimate triumph, and *Murder in the Cathedral* (q.v.,1935), a latter-day morality play concerning the assassination of Thomas à Becket and clearly affirming the value of the Church as a medium for social action. His poetry has also given evidence of two critical formulæ expressed in his prose. In *The Sacred Wood* he declares, 'The only way of expressing emotion in the form of art is by finding an "objective correlative"; in other words, a set of objects, a situation, a chain of events which shall be the formula of that particular emotion,' and in 'Tradition and the Individual Talent,' an essay from *The Sacred Wood*, he declares, 'Poetry is not a turning loose of emotion, but an escape from emotion; it is not the expression of personality, but an escape from personality.' His other works include *Ezra Pound: His Metric and Poetry* (1917); *Ara Vos Prec* (1919); *Homage to John Dryden* (1924); *Shakespeare and the Stoicism of Seneca* (1927); *The Journey of the Magi* (1927); *A Song for Simeon* (1928); *Dante* (1929); *Animula* (1929); *Marina* (1930); *Triumphal March* (1931); *John Dryden, the Poet, the Dramatist, the Critic* (1932); *The Use of Poetry and the Use of Criticism* (1933), his Harvard lectures; a later play in verse, *The Family Reunion* (q.v., 1939); *Practical Cats* (1939); and *The Idea of a Christian Society* (1940).

Elizabeth the Queen, blank verse drama by Maxwell Anderson (q.v.), produced and published in 1930.

Elizabeth and her favorite, Lord Essex, are the protagonists in this historical tragedy, set at the British court during the years from 1599 to 1601. Essex was nearly 40 years younger than his royal mistress, although this difference and his extreme distaste for his degraded position are minimized in the play. The queen, afraid of the effects of age, is shown to be jealous, ill-mannered, and quick-tempered, but determined to place government and national power before personal interests. Ralegh, Bacon, Cecil, Burghley, and other courtiers participate in the intrigue that causes Essex to volunteer as commander of an army of invasion in Ireland. There his letters to and from Elizabeth are intercepted, prompting him to return angrily to England and attempt a rebellion. The queen tricks him into dismissing his troops, imprisons him in the Tower, and sentences him to death. She gives him an

opportunity to sue for pardon, but he declines, believing that his ambition and hers must necessarily conflict, and that death is preferable to a second place in the kingdom.

Elks, BENEVOLENT AND PROTECTIVE ORDER OF, founded in 1867 as a society for actors and literary men, but now a social and charitable organization that includes a membership of over 500,000, with clubs throughout the U.S.

ELLIOTT, MAUD HOWE (1854-), daughter of Samuel Gridley Howe and Julia Ward Howe, is the author of several books on Italy, where she resided for a time, and of such biographies as *Life and Letters of Julia Ward Howe* (1915, Pulitzer Prize 1917), written with her sister, Laura E. Richards, and *My Cousin, F.Marion Crawford* (1934).

ELLIOTT, SARAH BARNWELL (1848–1928), born in Georgia, lived most of her life in Tennessee, of whose mountain people she wrote in her realistic novel, *Jerry* (1891). Her other works, which did not achieve the popularity of this book, include: *The Felmeres* (1879); *A Simple Heart* (1889); *John Paget* (1893); *The Durket Sperret* (1898); and a biography of Houston (1900).

ELLIS, EDWARD S[YLVESTER] (1840–1916), born in Ohio, came to New York, where, after serving for some time as a teacher, he became one of the most popular authors of dime novels. His best known work was *Seth Jones; or, The Captives of the Frontier* (1860), which is said to have sold 450,000 copies within six months.

Ellis Island, immigrant receiving station, situated on three islands in New York harbor, joined by causeways. Ellis Island replaced Castle Garden in this capacity (1892), and during subsequent years was the place of entry into the U.S. of as many as 15,000 immigrants in one day. Its importance ended in 1924, when its functions were largely assumed by U.S. officials in foreign countries.

ELLSLER, FANNY (1810–84), Austrian dancer, who was considered the foremost ballerina of her time. Her grand tour of the U.S. (1841) with her sister Thérèse was enormously successful.

Elmer Gantry, novel by Sinclair Lewis (q.v.).

Elsie Dinsmore, character in novels for children by Martha Finley (q.v.).

Elsie Venner: A Romance of Destiny, novel by Holmes (q.v.), published in 1861. It was previously serialized as *The Professor's Story*. The partial prototype of the heroine is supposed to be Margaret Fuller. The author's intention was 'to test the doctrine of "original sin" and human responsibility,' and he spoke of the work as 'a medicated novel,' since it was an early instance of scientific analysis of character traits and of the concept of a pattern of heredity.

A professor of medicine tells the story of Elsie Venner, a New England girl whose snakelike nature is traced to the prenatal influence of a snakebite that her mother received. Elsie loves Bernard Langdon, one of the professor's students, but Bernard does not return her affection, though she saves his life when he is almost killed by a rattlesnake. Her peculiar quality, which sets her apart from others and causes her to exert a fascination over Helen Darley, a school teacher in the academy where Bernard teaches temporarily, is lost during her illness following Bernard's rejection, but she dies as a result.

ELSON, LOUIS CHARLES (1848–1920), Boston-born music critic and teacher, was music editor of the Boston *Advertiser* (1886–1920) and for forty years a teacher at the New England Conservatory of Music. His books included: *Curiosities of Music* (1880), *The National Music of America* (1899), *The History of American Music* (1904), and editorship of the *University Encyclopaedia of Music* (1912).

ELY, RICHARD THEODORE (1854-), professor of political economy at Johns Hopkins (1881–92), the University of Wisconsin (1892–1925), and Northwestern (1925–33), and founder of the Institute for Economic Research and School of Land Economics in New York (1920). Among his students was Woodrow Wilson, whom he is considered to have influenced, and he is said to have directed much of the progressive legislation of La Follette in Wisconsin. His many books include: *Taxation in American States and Cities* (1888); *Socialism and Social Reform* (1894); *Monopolies and Trusts* (1900); *Studies in the Evolution of Industrial Society* (1903); *Hard Times—The Way in and the Way Out* (1931); and *Outlines of Land Economics* (1937).

Emancipation Proclamation, issued by Lincoln in preliminary form after the

battle of Antietam (q.v.,Sept. 1862) to take effect on the following January 1. The first draft, read to the Cabinet (July 22, 1862), declared all slaves in rebellious territory to be free, while those in loyal or conquered states were to be freed by other legislation. As it was actually ineffective in those areas controlled by the Confederacy, the proclamation was largely an announcement of Lincoln's aims and policies. It was later reinforced by the 13th Amendment.

Emancipator, The Great, sobriquet of Lincoln (q.v.).

Embargo Act, Congressional act (1807) that forbade all international trade with American ports, intended as retaliation for English and French interference with neutral shipping. Inspired by Jefferson, it was extremely unpopular in New England, and its repeal was forced in 1809, when it was succeeded by the Nonintercourse Act (q.v.). Bryant's poem, *The Embargo*, is a typical expression of contemporary feeling in New England.

Embarrassments, tales by Henry James (q.v.).

EMBURY, Emma Catherine (1806–63), New York author, whose conventional feminine novels, including *Guido* (1828) and *Constance Latimer; or, The Blind Girl* (1838), were popular in her time. A selected volume of her popular poems was published in 1869, and selected *Prose Writings* in 1893.

EMERSON, Ralph Waldo (1803–82), born in Boston, the son of a Unitarian minister who was a member of an old Puritan family. After his father's death, he was raised by his mother and an aunt, Mary Moody Emerson, a zealously pious woman who expressed her sardonically critical mind in a style her nephew admired and imitated. At Harvard in 1820 he began to keep the voluminous journals that he continued throughout his life, and that formed the basis of most of his essays and poems. After graduation (1821), he took over his brother's Boston school for young ladies, although with some misgivings, and when he moved to Canterbury with his family in 1823 he expressed his relief at returning to the natural beauties of the countryside in the poem, 'Good-bye' (q.v.). He taught for two more years, then entered the Divinity School at Harvard, where ill health and doubts on dogma made him a desultory student. Although approved as a candidate for the Unitarian ministry (1826), he had to go to Georgia and Florida for the winter because of a pulmonary disease. He married in 1829, but his wife died in 1831, and a year later came the great turning point in his life: he resigned his pastorate of the Second Church of Boston, where he had been an effective and popular preacher, because he could not conscientiously administer the Lord's Supper. During a tour of Europe (1832–3), he met Carlyle, Wordsworth, and Coleridge, through whom he became intimately associated with the transcendental thought and its sources in German idealism. Other influences on Emerson's later thinking included his own Unitarian-Yankee background, his admiration for Plato and the neo-Platonists, his study of the sacred books of the East, the skepticism of Montaigne, the new republican tradition, the line of British philosophy that ran through Berkeley, Hume, and Locke, and the mystical metaphysics of Swedenborg. On his return to Boston, he did some preaching, but turned more and more to lyceum lecturing, for which he drew materials from his journals. His addresses, presented in such series as 'The Philosophy of History,' 'Human Culture,' 'Human Life,' and 'The Present Age,' in turn furnished the basis for his later essays, which, without formal unity, are bound together by pithy, stimulating sentences that contain the quintessence of his philosophy. Among these are 'Self-Reliance,' 'The Over-Soul,' 'Compensation' (qq.v.), 'Spiritual Laws,' 'Love,' and 'Friendship.' In 1835 Emerson remarried and settled in Concord (q.v.), the home of his forefathers, which was thereafter the center of his own activity. Here he was intimate with Thoreau, Alcott, Jones Very, Margaret Fuller, Brownson, Hawthorne, and others who shared in the movement of Transcendentalism (q.v.). His first book, *Nature* (q.v.,1836), is the fundamental document of his philosophy, and expresses also his constant, deeply felt love for the natural scenes in which he passed so much of his time. His Transcendental ideas were next applied to cultural and national problems in his oration, *The American Scholar* (q.v.,1837). A year later, in his 'Divinity School Address' (q.v.), he attacked formal religion and championed intuitive spiritual experience. As a result, it was 30 years before he was

again invited to speak at Harvard. To promulgate his ideas further, in 1840 he joined with other Transcendentalists in publishing *The Dial*, and, though he did not sympathize with the communal experiments at Brook Farm and Fruitlands, he became interested in many contemporary reform movements, and extended the sphere of his lecturing. These lectures received their final form in the first series of *Essays* (1841), which, with the second series that appeared three years later, established his reputation throughout the U.S. and abroad. In 1845 he delivered the series of lectures published as *Representative Men* (q.v.,1850). His first volume of *Poems* (1847), together with *May-Day and Other Pieces* (1867), included such poems as 'Threnody,' 'Compensation,' 'Each and All,' 'The Rhodora,' 'The Sphinx,' 'Days,' 'The Humble-Bee,' 'Voluntaries,' 'Concord Hymn,' 'May-Day,' and 'Brahma' (qq.v.). His poetry is intellectual, gnomic, and metaphysical. During 1847–8 he visited England and France, renewed the friendship with Carlyle that had been maintained in their notable correspondence, and made new friends among the most distinguished European thinkers and writers. His lectures on England the following season formed the basis of his book, *English Traits* (q.v.,1856). A collection of *Addresses and Lectures* was published in 1849, and *The Conduct of Life* (1860) and *Society and Solitude* (1870, qq.v.) contained the materials of the lectures in his lyceum circuit, which took him as far west as the Mississippi. He contributed, with Channing and Clarke, to the *Memoirs* of Margaret Fuller (1852), and in 1855 helped found the Saturday Club. During the 1850's, Emerson's journals exhibit his great interest in antislavery, and he was an active sympathizer with the Northern struggle in the Civil War, but by 1866 realized that his career had nearly ended. In the poem 'Terminus' he declared:

> Fancy departs: no more invent;
> Contract thy firmament
> To compass of a tent.

Thereafter, although in 1870 he gave a series of lectures at Harvard, published as *Natural History of Intellect* (1893), and continued to lecture and write, issuing *Letters and Social Aims* (1876), his mental capacities showed a slow but sure decline. He made journeys to California (1871) and to Europe (1872), but gradually slipped into a serene senility in which his mind finally became a calm blank. His son, Edward Waldo Emerson (1844–1930), edited his *Complete Works* (1903–4), along with the *Journals* (10 vols.,1909–14), and several collections of correspondence. A complete edition of *Letters*, except for those previously published, was edited by R.L.Rusk (6 vols.,1939). Emerson, whose thought is often considered the core of Transcendentalism, stood apart from much of the activity of the movement, and, though he summed up the major development of romanticism in America, his philosophy is rooted in the Puritan background, and tempered by the many systems of thought that converged in him. He had no complete philosophical system, but with a style now vibrant, now flinty, preached the great doctrine of a higher individualism, the spiritual nature of reality, the importance of self-reliance, the obedience to instinct, the obligation of optimism and hope, and the existence of a unifying Over-Soul which explains the many diverse phenomena of life.

EMERY, GILBERT, pseudonym of Emery Bemsley Pottle (1875–), New York playwright, who graduated from Amherst, served in the World War, and in 1921 wrote his first and most successful play, *The Hero* (q.v.). His later plays include: *Queed* (1921), a dramatization of the novel by H.S.Harrison; *Tarnish* (1923), concerned with the triumph of a girl's love over her hatred of her fiancé's weakness; *Episode* (1925), a domestic drama in which a man submits to his wife's indiscretions because he does not wish to disturb their placid social life; and *Love-in-a-Mist* (1926), a comedy written in collaboration with Amélie Rives.

Emigrant Aid Company, society of New England antislavery adherents, organized by Eli Thayer (1854) to settle Kansas, when the struggle for control of the territorial government was precipitated by the Kansas-Nebraska Bill. It sent some 2,000 colonists to Kansas, and after the Civil War helped to colonize Oregon and Florida.

Emigrants, The, novel by Johan Bojer (q.v.), translated from the Norwegian (1925) by A.G.Jayne.

After seven years in the U.S., Erik Foss returns to his native farm at Dyrendal, Norway. He speaks enthusiastically of rich land and free opportunity, and gath-

ers a company of emigrants, including Ola Vatne, an ex-convict who once worked for the Colonel of Dyrendal, and Else, the colonel's daughter, who loves Ola and joins him to be married at sea; Morten Kvidal, who leaves his mother and large family; Per Föll and his bride Anne; and Kal and Karen Skaret, with their children. In America, the group stays in Wisconsin for a time, then moves on to Dakota. Led by Erik, they set out in a wagon train for the farm community that they name Nidaros. Although discouraged by the bare level prairie and the absence of familiar things, the colonists persevere, plow the rich soil, build sod houses, and conquer their hostile environment. Erik dies, and Morten, who takes his place as leader, is overcome by nostalgia for Norway, to which he returns. There he finds that his interest is all in the new country, and he returns to Dakota with his bride Bergitta, to resume his leadership of the now flourishing community.

EMMETT, Daniel Decatur (1815–1904), song-writer and early minstrel, was probably the author of *Dixie* (q.v.). Among his other songs are *Old Dan Tucker*, *The Road to Richmond*, *Walk Along, John*, and *Here We Are; or, Cross Ober Jordan.*

Emperor Jones, The, expressionist play by O'Neill (q.v.), produced in 1920 and published in 1921. An operatic version by Louis Gruenberg was produced in 1932.

The giant Negro, Brutus Jones, former Pullman porter and ex-convict, becomes in two years the feared, autocratic 'emperor' of a West Indian island. Exploiting the superstition of the primitive Negroes, claiming that only a silver bullet can kill him, he enriches himself at their expense, and brags to a cockney trader, Smithers, that when the inevitable rebellion comes he will escape to France, where he has sent a fortune. The uprising suddenly begins, but he is unable to locate his hidden supplies in the forest, where he loses his way. The incessant thumping of a tomtom undermines his courage, and a series of brief, symbolic scenes shows his mental return to earlier phases of his own and his race's history: his murder of the Negro Jeff in a gambling altercation; his escape from a prison chain-gang; the slave auction-block; the slave ship; the witch-doctor and crocodile god in the Congo jungle. In each episode he fires a shot from his pistol, the last silver bullet being fired at the sacred crocodile. During this imaginative retrogression to a savage state, he circles through the forest; emerging where he had entered, he falls riddled by the silver bullets of the rebel tribesmen.

Empire State, popular name of New York.

Encantadas, The, or Enchanted Isles, sketches by Melville (q.v.), published under the pseudonym Salvator R. Tarnmoor in *Putnam's Magazine* (1854) and reprinted in *The Piazza Tales* (1856). Seven of the ten sketches are descriptions of the uninhabited Galápagos Islands in the Pacific, 'a group rather of extinct volcanoes than of isles; looking much as the world at large might, after a penal conflagration.' The remaining three are narratives of people who lived temporarily in the islands. These include a Creole adventurer from Cuba, who acquires title to Charles's Isle, brutally rules his colonists, and is overthrown and banished by them; a half-breed woman who is stranded on Norfolk Isle, while searching for tortoise oil, and finally rescued by an American ship; and the hermit of Hood's Isle, who enticed and then enslaved deserting sailors, until he in turn was imprisoned by their captains.

Encyclopaedia of the Social Sciences, The, edited by E.R.A.Seligman and Alvin Johnson, published in 15 volumes (1930–35). It contains articles by outstanding scholars dealing with the primary materials of social study.

End for which God Created the World, see *Edwards, Jonathan.*

ENDECOTT, John (*c.*1589–1665), emigrated from England (1628), and was governor of the Massachusetts Bay Colony (1629–30) until the arrival of Winthrop. He held other important posts in the colony and was several times governor. Although an able administrator, he was stern and intolerant, and persecuted Quakers, followers of Thomas Morton, and others who differed in creed. In 'Endicott and the Red Cross' (q.v.), Hawthorne tells the story of his cutting the sign of the cross from the British ensign because he considered it to smack of popery. The first of Longfellow's *New England Tragedies* (q.v.) deals with his persecution of Quakers. Endicott is a variant spelling.

Endicott and the Red Cross, story by Hawthorne (q.v.), published in *Twice-Told Tales* (1837). It is a brief account of the rebellious gesture of the Puritan gov-

ernor, John Endecott, who, when Charles I decided to send an Anglican governor to New England, tore the Red Cross from the British ensign, because he wished to demonstrate the dislike of the Massachusetts Bay colonists for 'the idolatrous forms of English Episcopacy.' A passage in the tale describes the punishment of an adultress, which later became the main theme of *The Scarlet Letter*.

ENGLE, PAUL [HAMILTON] (1908–), Iowa poet, whose *American Song* (1934) won acclaim as the heir of the tradition of *Leaves of Grass*, more because the poet aimed at Whitman's vitality and American quality than because he approached his achievement. While at Oxford as a Rhodes Scholar, Engle wrote *Break the Heart's Anger* (1936), protesting against American materialism, in verse similar to that of his first book. With *Corn* (1939) his thought and technique has become more controlled, and, turning from a negative to a positive view, he is content to express the simple life of Iowa farmers. *Always the Land* (1941), a novel, deals with the conflict of two generations of farmers, the older being individualists, the younger favoring government aid and new methods.

ENGLISH, THOMAS DUNN (1819–1902), ballad writer, whose most famous poem, 'Ben Bolt' (q.v.), has been set to music 26 different times, once by the author himself. Popular during the Civil War, it was revived by its introduction into Du Maurier's *Trilby*. English was the author of many poems about the Civil War, and wrote some 50 plays, including *The Mormons* (1858). He is ridiculed as 'Thomas Dunn Brown' in Poe's 'The Literati' (q.v.).

English Traits, lectures by Emerson (q.v.), delivered in 1848 and published in 1856. Although he sketches his visits to Coleridge, Wordsworth, and Carlyle, the author devotes most of his attention to a keen analysis of the fundamental characteristics of the English people and nation, which he strongly admired.

Enjoyment of Poetry, critical study by Max Eastman (q.v.), published in 1913 and revised in 1921.

Drawing his thesis from a distinction between poetic and practical attitudes, which he claims to be fundamental in human experience, the author states that his purpose is 'to increase enjoyment.' 'That the poetic in every-day perception and conversation should be known for what it is, and not separated from the poetic in literature, is . . . essential to the full appreciation of either.' Poetic and practical attitudes dominate different types of people, but prevail in the childhood of all. The artist and the scientist differ in this way, as is evident in the history of words, which are poetic when newly applied, but lose their connotative value through repetitive and exacting use. The poetic impulse is defined as the impulse to realize, and rhythms, figures of speech, and other poetic techniques are shown to be valuable in attaining this end. Finally 'the knowledge of poetry' is related 'to the art of enjoying it' and to the supreme aim of life, 'an enthusiastic welcome of the world as it is or as it may be . . .'

Enormous Room, The, autobiographical narrative by E.E.Cummings (q.v.), published in 1922.

As members of an American ambulance corps in France during the World War, the author and a friend are erroneously suspected of treasonable correspondence, and imprisoned by the French (Aug. 1917–Jan. 1918), in a concentration camp at La Ferté Macé, 100 miles west of Paris. Their fellow prisoners include the hyper-refined Count Bragard, the belligerent Fighting Sheeney, the tragic gypsy Wanderer and his family, the inarticulate but expressive Zulu, the servile clownish Surplice, and the childish giant Jean le Nègre. All suffer under the needlessly cruel stresses of captivity, inhumane treatment by the officials and *plantons* (jailers), and the extremely filthy surroundings. Nevertheless they maintain the idiosyncratic beauties and humors of individual character, which the author exalts as the highest human values. The narrative is set in the form of a pilgrimage, and the intended resemblance to Bunyan's *Pilgrim's Progress* appears in the presentation of the *Directeur* as the fiend Apollyon, and of certain remarkable prisoners as the Delectable Mountains.

Ephrata, community established in 1732 in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, by seceders from the Dunkers (q.v.), under the leadership of Conrad Beissel. The monastic settlement declined after his death (1768), but a congregation of the German Seventh Day Baptists still exists.

Epic of the Wheat, The, see *Norris, Frank.*

Episcopal Methodist Church, see *Methodism.*

Episcopalians, see *Protestant Episcopal Church.*

EPSTEIN, JACOB (1880–), New York-born sculptor of Russian-Polish descent, studied under Rodin in Paris and has lived most of his life in London. His monumental austere works possessing a strongly architectural character and distorted for the sake of conveying powerful emotion have been scornfully attacked by academic critics and the general public. His works include: *Oscar Wilde Memorial* (Père Lachaise Cemetery, Paris); the bronze *Christ*; the W.H.Hudson Memorial, *Rima*; *Day* and *Night*, the colossal figures in the Underground Railways Building, London; and the marble *Genesis*, representing in the figure of a pregnant woman the eternal motherhood of humanity.

Equality, novel by Edward Bellamy (q.v.).

Era of Good Feeling, see *Monroe, James.*

ERIC THE RED and **ERICSSON, LEIF**, see *Leif Ericsson.*

Erie, LAKE, see *Lake Erie, Battle of.*

Erie Canal, from Albany to Buffalo, connects the Hudson River with Lake Erie. Gouverneur Morris first conceived the idea (1777), and Washington approved a plan suggested in 1783, as a means of unifying the nation. Governor Clinton authorized a thorough survey (1791), and work was begun two years later, but progress was slow until DeWitt Clinton made the canal an issue in the gubernatorial campaign of 1817. The canal was opened in 1825, after an expenditure of more than $7,000,000 to create its length of 352 miles. Largely responsible for the commerce of New York state, it also did much to unify the interests of seaboard communities and the western country. During a later enlargement of the channel, politics entered into the management, and a fraudulent 'canal ring' was disclosed in the mid-19th century. The novels of W.D.Edmonds deal with the great days of the Erie Canal, before the growth of railroads, and there was a famous 'Erie Canal Ballad.'

Erie War, see *Drew, Daniel.*

Erik Dorn, novel by Ben Hecht (q.v.), published in 1921.

Erik Dorn, a cynical sophisticate, becomes a successful journalist and editor in his native Chicago, noted for his superficially brilliant conversation. He endures the devotion of his wife Anna, until he falls in love with Rachel Laskin, a poetically minded young artist, whom he follows to New York. There they live happily for a year, amid the whirl of pre-war radical activity. Erik finds a friend in the Midwestern novelist, Warren Lockwood, who is contrastingly slow-thinking, vernacular, and sincere. Other associates include the radical Emil Tesla, who is imprisoned after being nearly killed by a chauvinistic mob; Rachel's prudish admirer, George Hazlitt, a young attorney; and Frank Brander, a degenerate artist. After the war Rachel deserts Erik, to live in turn with Tesla and with Brander, and Erik goes to Germany, where he becomes famous as an author of contemporary history, and is involved in revolutionary intrigue with the ardent Marxist, Baron von Stinnes. His mistress of this period is Mathilde Dohmann, a Communist. He accidentally meets Hazlitt, who blames him for his loss of Rachel, and attacks him, at which Erik kills him in self defense. Von Stinnes falsely confesses that he committed the crime, and kills himself as a 'Don Quixote of disillusion.' Erik returns to Chicago journalism, and learns that Anna has divorced him and is about to remarry.

Erring, Jo, character in *The Story of a Country Town* (q.v.).

ERSKINE, JOHN (1879–), critic, musician, professor of English literature at Columbia (1909–), is best known for such novels as *The Private Life of Helen of Troy* (1925), *Galahad* (1926), *Adam and Eve* (1927), and *The Brief Hour of François Villon* (1937), humorous modern versions of the famous legends. He is also the author of serious poetry, essays on literary and musical subjects, *A Musical Companion* (1935), other novels, a play, and scholarly works including the co-editorship of the *Cambridge History of American Literature*. His historical novels include *The Start of the Road* (1938), telling of Whitman's youth, and *Give Me Liberty* (1940), dealing with Patrick Henry.

Esmond, see *Henry Esmond.*

ESQUEMELING, see *Exquemelin.*

Essays to Do Good, see *Bonifacius*.

Essex Junto, Federalist group led by Theophilus Parsons, with a membership mainly resident in Essex County, Massachusetts. When Massachusetts was preparing for statehood, the Junto formulated the principles, embodied in the state constitution, of strong powers for the governor, a property basis for the senate, and the establishment of Congregationalism as a virtual state religion. They supported Hamilton against Adams, and were later prominent opponents of the Embargo Act and the War of 1812. The Junto was attacked in a play by J.Horatio Wilson, *The Essex Junto* (1802).

Established Church of England, see *Protestant Episcopal Church*.

Esther, novel by Henry Adams (q.v.), published in 1884 under the pseudonym Francis Snow Compton. The character of the heroine is modeled on the author's wife, and that of Wharton on the sculptor Saint-Gaudens.

Esther Dudley, a young painter, is introduced to Stephen Hazard, preacher at St.John's in New York City, whom she at first dislikes because he is absorbed in religious work, while she shares the freethinking of her invalid father. When Esther is commissioned to work on the decorations at St.John's, under the direction of the prominent artist Wharton, she uses as a model her friend Catherine Brooke. During the progress of the work, Wharton falls in love with Catherine, whom he plans to marry, and Esther becomes friendly with Stephen, who is enthusiastic about her painting and visits her father. After the latter's death, she marries the clergyman, but, soon realizing that their views of life are incompatible, leaves him. In spite of their love, attempts at reconciliation fail, and Stephen announces that he will not trouble her again until she stands in need of his and the church's consolations.

Eternal Goodness, The, poem by Whittier (q.v.).

Ethan Brand: A Chapter from an Abortive Romance, story by Hawthorne (q.v.), published in *The Snow Image* (1851).

Ethan Brand, formerly a lime-burner, has sought the Unpardonable Sin, and now returns to his New England home, announcing that he has found it in his own soul, in intellectual pride and the separation of mind and heart. The townspeople do not understand him, and consider him mad. He takes the place of his successor at the lime-kiln, and during the night lies down to perish in the furnace. When the other lime-burner returns in the morning, he finds the lime all burnt snow-white, and on its surface a human skeleton within whose ribs is a piece of marble in the shape of a heart.

Ethan Frome, novelette by Edith Wharton (q.v.), published in 1911. It was dramatized by Owen and Donald Davis (1936).

This grim story is told by a middle-aged engineer, who pieces together the history of the inhabitants of a bleak Massachusetts farm. Zenobia (Zeena) is a whining slattern who hugs imaginary ailments to her barren breast, and spends upon quacks and patent medicines the scant substance her husband, Ethan Frome, manages to wring from the grudging earth. Her cousin, Mattie Silver, is left destitute and comes to live with them. The friendship of Ethan and Mattie arouses Zeena's jealousy, and after a year Mattie is ousted to make way for a strong hired girl. On their way to the railroad station, Ethan and Mattie realize that they cannot bear to part, and when they are coasting down their favorite snow slide he purposely steers their sled into a great elm. Instead of being killed, they are crippled for life, and spend the remainder of their unhappy days on the barren farm under Zeena's surveillance.

Ethnogenesis, ode by Timrod (q.v.), written in 1861 during the meeting of the first Confederate Congress, and published in his *Poems* (1873). It enthusiastically hails the new nation, optimistically proclaiming its inevitable victory in the war, and celebrates the character of the Southern people and the perfection of soil and climate in the South.

Eureka: A Prose Poem, metaphysical work by Poe (q.v.), published in 1848.

Based on the author's reading in Newton, Laplace, and others, the work accepts intuition, as well as induction and deduction, among legitimate paths to knowledge. Unity and diffusion are truths, because they are felt to be so, and 'irradiation, by which alone these two truths are reconciled, is a consequent truth—I perceive it.' The universe, composed of atoms radiated outward from a primary divine unity to an almost infinite variety, is conceived to be

governed by the complementary laws of attraction and repulsion, in terms of which all phenomena are explicable. This is shown by mathematical proof, and by reference to the principles of heat, light, and electricity. This view of a harmoniously ordered, perfect universe is then extended in a discussion of literary criticism, especially applied to fiction. 'In the construction of plot . . . we should aim at so arranging the incidents that we shall not be able to determine, of any one of them, whether it depends from any one other or upholds it.' The view has also an ethical application: 'God—the material *and* spiritual God—*now* exists solely in the diffused Matter and Spirit of the Universe,' and the regathering of these elements will reconstitute 'the *purely* Spiritual and individual God,' so that the operations of 'Divine Injustice' or 'Inexorable Fate' may at last be understood. We 'no longer rebel at a *Sorrow* which we ourselves have imposed upon ourselves,' and 'in this view alone the existence of Evil becomes intelligible . . . it becomes endurable.'

Europeans, The: A Sketch, novel by Henry James (q.v.), published in 1878.

Eugenia, Baroness Münster, an expatriated American, is the morganatic wife of a German prince, who is about to repudiate her in favor of a state marriage. With her artist brother, Felix Young, she goes to Boston to visit relatives whom she has never before seen, in hopes of making a wealthy marriage. Mr.Wentworth, their uncle, establishes Eugenia and Felix in a near-by house, and his children, Gertrude, Charlotte, and Clifford, soon become intimate with them. Felix, gay and debonnaire, enriches himself by painting flattering portraits of the Bostonians, and is involved in a love affair with Gertrude. Mr.Acton, a friend of the Wentworths and himself somewhat a man of the world, is attracted to Eugenia, who also makes a near-conquest of Clifford, an awkward youth suspended from Harvard for drunkenness. She overplays her hand with Acton, who realizes her deceitfulness and attempts to stay away from her. Clifford, too, is not to be snared, and becomes engaged to Acton's sister Lizzie. Gertrude weds Felix, after refusing the minister, Mr.Brand, who marries Charlotte. Eugenia returns to Europe, feeling that her fortune-hunting scheme is impractical in unsusceptible America.

Eutaw, novel by Simms (q.v.), published in 1856 as a sequel to *The Forayers* (q.v.), one of his Revolutionary Romances.

The British face defeat in their attempt to hold the Carolinas, and the Tory villain, Inglehardt, tortures his prisoners, Henry Travis and his father, to force their consent to his marriage with Henry's sister Bertha. The elder Travis slowly loses his mind under the strain. Inglehardt's desperate confederate, Hell-fire Dick, is converted to religion by Henry. Colonel Sinclair, Tory planter, leaves home in an attempt to reach safety with his daughters, Carrie and Lottie, and joins the British troops, only to witness their defeat. At the home of the 'Widow Avinger,' really Mrs.Travis, the Sinclairs become friendly with Bertha, whose marriage to the colonel's son Willie they have formerly opposed. Bertha is kidnapped, however, by Hell-fire Dick, who takes her to Inglehardt. After the indecisive Battle of Eutaw Springs, Willie is guided to the camp by a wandering, half-mad girl, Nelly Floyd, who is killed while seeking her brother. The elder Travis, insanely attempting to kill Inglehardt, is himself killed, but Willie rescues Bertha and they are married.

Eutaw Springs, BATTLE OF, Revolutionary War action in South Carolina (Sept. 8, 1781), in which the Americans under Greene unsuccessfully attacked a British force. The British failed to secure their gains, fell back to Charleston, and gave the Americans a strategic victory. The battle is described in a romance by Simms, a play by William Ioor, and poems by Simms and Freneau.

Eva St.Clare (LITTLE EVA), character in *Uncle Tom's Cabin* (q.v.).

Evangeline, A Tale of Acadie, narrative poem in unrimed English hexameters, by Longfellow (q.v.), published in 1847. Material was drawn from works by T.C.Haliburton, Schoolcraft, and possibly Chateaubriand, while Goethe's *Hermann und Dorothea* was a strong influence on the verse and manner of treatment.

Evangeline, daughter of Benedict Bellefontaine, is about to be married to Gabriel Lajeunesse, son of Basil, the blacksmith of the Acadian village of Grand Pré, when, during the French and Indian War, the English exile the French residents to safer British colonies. The lovers are separated, and Gabriel and Basil make their way to

Louisiana, while Evangeline continues to seek them. Finding Basil, she goes with him to the Michigan woods, but their search is fruitless. After years of wandering, which cause her to become prematurely old, she settles in Philadelphia as a sister of mercy. There, during a pestilence, she recognizes a dying old man as her former lover. The shock of his death kills her, and, united at last, they are buried together in the Catholic cemetery.

EVANS, Augusta Jane (1835–1909), Alabama author of sentimental, moralistic novels, which include: *Inez: A Tale of the Alamo* (1854); *Beulah* (1859); *Macaria; or, Altars of Sacrifice* (1864); and the enormously popular *St.Elmo* (q.v.,1867).

EVANS, Charles (1850–1932), born in Boston, was a librarian at the Boston Athenaeum, the Public Library of Indianapolis, and the Enoch Pratt Free Library (Baltimore). He is best known as the editor of *American Bibliography* (12 vols., 1903–34), a catalogue of books printed in America (1639–1799), chronologically listing 35,854 titles.

EVANS, George Henry (1805–56), editor of the *Working Man's Advocate* and other newspapers devoted to the interests of labor. His *History of the . . . Working Men's Party* (1840) opposed Fourieristic ideas of association, and based its theories on Paine's individualism and Jefferson's agrarianism. In his agitation for 'free homesteads,' Evans foreshadowed Henry George's 'single tax.'

EVANS, Nathaniel (1742–67), born in Philadelphia, graduated from the University of Pennsylvania, and became a clergyman of the Church of England. He edited the works of his friend Godfrey (1765), and his own *Poems on Several Occasions, with Some Other Compositions* was posthumously published (1772).

Eve Effingham, English title of *Home as Found* (q.v.).

EVERETT, Alexander Hill (1790–1847), Boston diplomat, essayist, editor, and educator, whose diplomatic experience in Russia, Holland, and Spain (1809–29) furnished the basis of books on *Europe* (1822) and *America* (1827). As an editor of *The North American Review,* he contributed translations from European and Oriental literatures that influenced the Transcendental movement, as well as the material collected in *Essays, Critical and Miscellaneous* (1845–6).

Edward Everett (1794–1865), his brother, as a young man distinguished himself as a Unitarian minister, professor of Greek at Harvard (1819–26), and editor of *The North American Review* (1820–24), before entering upon his political career. After serving in Congress (1825–35), he became governor of Massachusetts (1836–9), and, despite much Northern opposition because of his careful conciliatory stand on slavery, he was appointed minister to England (1841–5). He was president of Harvard (1846–9), but returned to politics to complete Webster's term as secretary of state (1852–3) and was U.S. senator from Massachusetts (1853–4). Throughout his career he was criticized for his policies of compromise, but he was widely admired for his florid orations, collected in four volumes (1836–68).

Everglades, Florida swamp area of nearly 5,000 square miles, in the southern part of the peninsula, of which 3,000,000 acres have been reclaimed.

Every Saturday (1866–74), eclectic weekly magazine, edited at Boston by Aldrich. Its literary contributions were mainly pirated from foreign authors, but it specialized in original pictorial material.

Everybody's (1899–1928), founded as a house organ of Wanamaker's Department Store, but became an independent magazine (1903). This was during the muckraking period, and *Everybody's* enthusiastically entered the movement, publishing T.W.Lawson's series on 'Frenzied Finance' (1904–5) and articles by Upton Sinclair, Ben Lindsey, Lincoln Steffens, and others. After 1910 it turned to popular fiction, and soon became a widely circulated journal featuring stories and general articles. This policy was continued until it was absorbed by *Romance.*

Evolution Trial, see *Fundamentalism* and *Scopes Trial.*

Excelsior, poem by Longfellow (q.v.), Published in *Ballads and Other Poems* (1841). In four-stress iambic couplets, with the title as a refrain, the poem figuratively depicts the life of a man of genius, as he maintains his individualistic purpose, resisting temptations and ignoring warnings. Climbing the mountain of his career, he passes beyond the village and the monastery, repeating his idealistic

motto, until he is found dead on the highest glacier. Even then a voice is heard from the sky, proclaiming the motto as a promise of immortality.

Excelsior State, popular name for New York, from the motto 'Excelsior' on its shield.

Excursions, essays by Thoreau (q.v.), posthumously collected in 1863, with a biographical preface by Emerson. The pieces had appeared in various magazines during Thoreau's lifetime, being expanded from journal notes on such subjects as 'Natural History of Massachusetts,' 'A Walk to Wachusett,' 'The Succession of Forest Trees,' 'Walking,' 'Wild Apples,' 'May Days,' and 'Days and Nights in Concord.'

Expressionism, aesthetic movement in which the artist expresses his inner experience through the free representation of objective facts. Since it emphasizes the creator's mood and attitude, the movement is a development of Impressionism (q.v.), from which it differs by being more concerned with individual intellectual conceptions, and less with the structure of exterior facts. Both movements belong to the later phase of Romanticism. Expressionism originated in European painting, and was brought to the U.S. by painters. Although exemplified in literature by T.S. Eliot and other poets, it has been more influential in the theater, in the work of such stage designers as R.E.Jones, and in the dramatic technique of such plays as *The Hairy Ape, The Emperor Jones, The Adding Machine,* and *Beggar on Horseback.*

EXQUEMELIN, ALEXANDER OLIVIER (1645–1707), Fleming who entered the service of the French West India Company, was sold into slavery at Tortuga Island, and eventually became a surgeon to the buccaneers. He served with Morgan through his Panama expedition, but was later deserted by the pirate. Returning to Europe (1674), he recorded his experiences in *The Bucaniers of America* . . . , published in 1681 in his native Dutch, and translated into English in 1684. He is also known as John Esquemeling.

F

F.P.A., see *Adams, Franklin P.*

Fabius, the American, sobriquet of George Washington, applied to him because his military tactics resembled those of Fabius in opposing Hannibal, avoiding direct engagements and harassing the enemy in minor engagements.

Fable for Critics, A, verse satire by Lowell (q.v.), published anonymously in 1848. Its eccentric 'slap-dash' rhythm has been characterized as a 'genial anapestic gait,' and the rimes are equally careless, but besides the humor there are shrewd critical estimates of such contemporary authors as Holmes ('His are just the fine hands, too, to weave you a lyric Full of fancy, fun, feeling, or spiced with satiric'); Emerson ('A Greek head on right Yankee shoulders'); Alcott ('. . . I believe no man ever talked better; Each sentence hangs perfectly poised to the letter'); Longfellow ('Why, he'll live till men weary of Collins and Gray'); Bryant ('A smooth, silent iceberg, that never is ignified'); Margaret Fuller ('She always keeps asking if I don't observe a Particular likeness 'twixt her and Minerva'); Irving ('To a true poet-heart add the fun of Dick Steele, Throw in all of Addison, *minus* the chill'); Whittier ('A fervor of mind which knows no separation 'Twixt simple excitement and pure inspiration'); Poe ('. . . with his raven, like Barnaby Rudge, Three-fifths of him genius, and two-fifths sheer fudge'); Hawthorne ('His strength is so tender, his wildness so meek . . . He's a John Bunyan Fouqué, a Puritan Tieck'); Cooper ('He has drawn you one character, though, that is new . . . He has done naught but copy it ill ever since'); and Lowell himself ('. . . who's striving Parnassus to climb With a whole bale of *isms* tied together with rhyme . . .'). A disputed passage concerning two anonymous authors is considered to deal with Thoreau and W.E.Channing ('Fie, for shame, brother bard; with good fruit of your own, Can't you let Neighbor Emerson's orchards alone?') The fable in which these comments are set deals with a gathering of the gods on Olympus, whereat a critic, worshipper of Apollo, attempts to satisfy the god's desire for a lily. The critic searches assiduously, passing the various authors in review, and at last produces a thistle. Apollo is disgusted, speaks of the happy period before the advent of critics, and the gods disperse. A similar plan is followed by Amy Lowell in her *Critical Fable*.

Fables in Slang, sketches by George Ade (q.v.).

Facing West from California's Shores, poem by Whitman (q.v.), published in the 'Children of Adam' section of *Leaves of Grass* (1860), and given its present title in the 1867 edition.

The poet, 'a child, very old . . . long having wander'd,' represents himself as symbolic of mankind looking backward 'towards the house of eternity,' the mystic Orient, from the vigorous utilitarian West, and questioning where he is to find fulfilled his search for the complete man. The poem thus foreshadows the theme of 'Passage to India' (q.v.). Its being placed in the 'Children of Adam' section indicates that Whitman believed the instinct of sex to be both the physical and spiritual force of creative progress in man and nature.

Fair God, The; or, The Last of the Tzins, romance by Lew Wallace (q.v.), was published in 1873, although it had been begun in 1843, under the influence of reading Prescott. Based on research and on the author's knowledge of Mexico, the romance is concerned with the invasion of the Aztec empire by Cortés and his defeat by the prince Guatamozin, who kills his weak uncle Montezuma in a vain attempt to save his country.

Fair Oaks, Battle of (also Battle of Seven Pines), Civil War engagement near Richmond (May 31-June 1, 1862). McClellan's Union forces were driven back by Longstreet's Confederates, and, although McClellan recovered the lost ground on the second day, he failed to follow up his gains.

FAIRBANK, Janet Ayer, Chicago novelist, sister of Margaret Ayer Barnes. Her books include *Idle Hands* (1927), a collection of short stories, and the novels: *The Cortlandts of Washington Square* (1923); *The Smiths* (1925); *The Lion's Den* (1930); *The Bright Land* (1932), the story of a woman of the mid-19th century, from her girlhood in New Hampshire to her later life on the Illinois frontier; and *Rich Man,*

Poor Man (1936), about the suffragette movement and the reforms of the early Progressive party.

FAIRBANKS, DOUGLAS (1883–1939), stage and screen actor, noted for his athletic performance of dashing romantic roles. His second wife was Mary Pickford, and his son, Douglas Fairbanks,Jr., is also a motion-picture star. *Laugh and Live* (1917) was the first of Fairbanks's several 'inspirational' books.

Faith Doctor, The, novel by Edward Eggleston (q.v.).

Faith Healer, The, play by William Vaughn Moody (q.v.).

Fall of British Tyranny, The; or, American Liberty Triumphant, unproduced tragicomedy, attributed to John or Joseph Leacock of Philadelphia, was published in 1776. It was the first American chronicle play, covering the period from the Battle of Lexington to the evacuation of Boston.

Lord Catspaw (Lord North) plots with Judas (Governor Hutchinson) to mislead the cabinet concerning the purpose and strength of the American colonists, while Lord Justice (Camden), Lord Patriot (Wilkes), Bold Irishman (Burke), and Lord Wisdom (Pitt) show themselves to be friends of the Americans. The scene is then shifted to America, with a similar argument between a Whig and a Tory. The Battle of Lexington and the progress of the Revolution in Virginia are described, and, after a scene in which Lord Boston (Gage), Elbow Room (Howe), and Mr.Caper (Burgoyne) upbraid each other for the failure of the royal cause, there is a scene at the Cambridge camp of the patriots, with flattering portrayals of Washington, Charles Lee, and Putnam.

Fall of the City, The, radio play by Archibald MacLeish (q.v.).

Fall of the House of Usher, The, story by Poe (q.v.), published in 1839, and reprinted in *Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque* (1840). It contains the poem, 'The Haunted Palace' (q.v.).

A childhood companion of Roderick Usher, who has not seen him for many years, is summoned to the gloomy House of Usher to comfort his sick friend. The decayed mansion stands on the edge of a tarn, and is fungus-grown and dreary. Roderick and his twin Madeline are the only surviving members of the family, and both suffer serious physical and nervous maladies. Roderick entertains his friend with curious musical and poetic improvisations, indicating his morbid tastes by his choice of reading. Madeline, in a cataleptic trance, is thought to be dead, and her body is placed in the family vault. During a storm, Roderick is overcome by a severe nervous agitation, and his friend reads aloud from a medieval romance, whose horrifying episodes coincide with strange sounds from outside the room. Finally Madeline appears, enshrouded, and she and her brother fall dead together. The friend rushes from the house, and, as he looks back in the moonlight, sees the whole House of Usher split asunder and sink into the tarn.

Family Portrait, A, novel by Glenway Wescott (q.v.).

Family Reunion, The, verse play by T.S.Eliot (q.v.), produced and published in 1939.

Harry, Lord Monchensey, returns to his English country home, after eight years abroad following the death at sea of his young wife. The occasion is the birthday of his mother, Amy, imperious matriarch of the family, which also includes her sisters, Ivy, Violet, and Agatha, the last being principal of a women's college; her brothers-in-law, Gerald and Charles Piper; and the penniless cousin, Mary. Harry does not conceal his contempt for the others, and shows his neurotic, guilt-ridden condition by a blurted confession that he murdered his wife. He has returned in search of inner peace, but the avenging spirits (Eumenides) now become visible, even to Agatha and Mary, although not to the others. Anxious for her son's sanity, Amy summons Dr.Warburton, and the doctor warns Harry that any sudden emotion may kill his mother. Harry and Agatha have a talk, and he discovers the basis of their sympathy when she reveals that his father had loved her, not Amy, who had used him merely to have the children and home she desired. The father's frustrated desire to murder his wife seems to have been inherited by the son, whose sense of guilt is part of the fated atonement. Harry departs to complete his 'pilgrimage of expiation,' and the shock kills Amy, at which the family unity she has sustained is destroyed.

Faneuil Hall, Boston public market and town meeting-place, named for its donor, the merchant Peter Faneuil. During the

Revolutionary period it became known as 'the cradle of American liberty,' because it was the scene of many patriotic meetings. Originally designed by John Smibert (1740), it was reconstructed in accordance with his plans after a fire, and in 1806 was enlarged by Bulfinch. It has since served as a political auditorium.

Fanny, satirical poem by Halleck (q.v.).

FANNY FERN, pseudonym of Sara P. Willis (q.v.).

Fanshawe, romance by Hawthorne (q.v.), published anonymously in 1828. It was probably written during the author's college years, and the background resembles Bowdoin.

Ellen Langton comes to live with a friend of her father, Dr.Melmouth, orthodox minister and head of Harley College. Her principal suitors are Edward Walcott, a healthy, normal young gentleman, and Fanshawe, a scholarly ascetic who now begins to lead a more worldly life, although he realizes that he can never have much in common with Ellen. The three are walking one day in the woods, when an enemy of Ellen's father attempts to kidnap her. Fanshawe rescues the girl, and the kidnapper is killed in a fall from a precipice. Mr.Langton arrives, but Fanshawe refuses his offer of money. When Ellen offers to marry him, Fanshawe refuses because of their incompatibility. He goes away, devotes himself more and more to his studies, and soon dies. A few years later, Ellen and Edward marry.

Fantastic Fables, stories by Bierce (q.v.).

Far Country, A, novel by Winston Churchill (q.v.).

Far North, see *North Woods*.

Far West, region bounded by the Rocky Mountains, the Pacific Ocean, and the Northwest and Southwest regions (qq.v.), includes the states of California, Nevada, and Utah, as well as parts of Idaho, Montana, Wyoming, and Colorado. The character of the region varies from the desert wastes of Nevada to the forested Sierra Nevada and fertile valleys of California, and there are rich areas devoted to cattle raising, mining, and agriculture. Industrial activities are associated with the principal cities, San Francisco and Los Angeles (qq.v.). The earliest explorers on the Pacific coast were Cabrillo and Drake, but the Spanish did not effect their occupation until Serra began founding the California missions (1769). The Mission Indians figure in such romances as *Ramona* and *Isidro*, and California life during the Spanish period, described from personal observation by Dana in *Two Years Before the Mast*, is also depicted in the histories of H.H.Bancroft and the novels of Gertrude Atherton and Stewart Edward White. During the Mexican War, the province was seized by the U.S., following the declaration of the Bear Flag Republic. The gold rush of the forty-niners (q.v.) marks the initial development of Far Western resources. Besides such factual accounts as the journals of Captain Sutter and Dame Shirley, and Bayard Taylor's *Eldorado*, these events gave rise to the frontier school of authors, which included Bret Harte, Clemens, and Joaquin Miller. Later gold rushes took place at Virginia City and Pike's Peak, and silver and copper were also discovered, but the principal development of the Far West was now in cattle and sheep ranching on the plains and deserts, and irrigated agriculture in California and in Utah, where the Mormons (q.v.) founded their colony in 1847. Vardis Fisher and Bernard De Voto have written of Utah and Idaho; mining life in Colorado has been described by Mary Hallock Foote; John Muir and Clarence King are noted for their writings on the Sierra Nevada; and noteworthy California authors have included Frank Norris, Mary Austin, Jack London, Ambrose Bierce, George Sterling, Upton Sinclair, Robinson Jeffers, and John Steinbeck.

Farewell Address, issued by Washington (q.v.) to the people of the U.S. on his retirement from the presidency, was first published in *Claypoole's American Daily Advertiser* (Sept. 17, 1796). This monument of American policy, probably written with the aid of Hamilton and Madison, explains Washington's course as President, emphasizes the need for a firm central government, warns against party strife, and inveighs against 'entangling alliances' with foreign governments.

Farewell to Arms, A, novel by Hemingway (q.v.), published in 1929, and dramatized by Laurence Stallings (1930).

Frederic Henry, an American lieutenant in the Italian ambulance service during the World War, falls in love with an Eng-

lish nurse, Catherine Barkley. She returns his feeling, and when Henry, wounded during a bombardment, is sent to a hospital at Milan, Catherine comes to nurse him. They spend a happy summer together while he recuperates, and in the autumn Catherine confesses that she is pregnant, but will not marry him, fearing to be sent back to England. Henry returns to his post, finds his comrade Rinaldi depressed by the monotonous horrors of the war, and shares the suffering during the disastrous retreat from Caporetto. He deserts, learns that Catherine has been transferred to Stresa, and joins her there. Although he is in civilian clothes, he is suspected, and forced to flee with Catherine to Switzerland. They go to Lausanne for the birth of their child, but, despite excellent care, both mother and baby die; and the idyl ends, leaving Henry desolate and alone in a strange land.

FARLEY, HARRIET (1817–1907), factory worker of Lowell, Massachusetts, who edited the *Lowell Offering* (1842–5), later published as the *New England Offering* (1847–50), a periodical made up of the writings of the woman mill hands. A collection of these pieces appeared as *Mind Among the Spindles* (1844). Her own articles and essays were published as *Shells from the Strand of the Sea of Genius* (1847) and *Happy Nights at Hazel Nook* (1852).

Farmer in Pennsylvania, see *Letters from a Farmer in Pennsylvania.*

Farmer-Labor party, organized in 1920, favors public ownership and operation of utilities, the introduction of state and federal banks, agricultural relief measures, and liberal labor laws. It dissolved temporarily, to assist a united front for LaFollette (1924), but when reorganized became the dominant power in Minnesota, with strength also in the Dakotas, Iowa, and Nebraska. In Wisconsin it is closely allied with the Progressive movement.

Farmer's Almanack (1793–), Massachusetts almanac, founded by Robert Bailey Thomas (1766–1846), and still published with his name as editor. It has later been called *The Old Farmer's Almanac,* to distinguish it from its many imitators. Its importance as a source of information on New England life and manners appears in G.L.Kittredge's *The Old Farmer and Hts Almanack* (1904).

Farmer's Weekly Museum (1793–1810), newspaper of Walpole, New Hampshire, was founded by Isaiah Thomas. Among its literary contributions were essays by T.G.Fessenden, John Davis, and Joseph Dennie and Royall Tyler, who wrote under the pseudonyms Colon and Spondee. Dennie was sole editor (1796–8), and continued to be associated with the paper, for which he wrote his 'Lay Preacher' essays.

FARQUHARSON, MARTHA, see *Finley, Martha.*

Farrago, CAPTAIN JOHN, character in *Modern Chivalry* (q.v.).

FARRAGUT, DAVID GLASGOW (1801–70), served with his foster father David Porter (q.v.) in the Pacific during the War of 1812, but first distinguished himself in the Civil War, as the hero of the Battle of New Orleans, in which he defeated the Confederate fleet and caused the city to surrender (April 28, 1862). Assisted by D.D.Porter, he captured Mobile in a subsequent naval battle, and for these victories the ranks of vice-admiral and admiral were created for him.

FARRELL, JAMES T[HOMAS] (1904–), Chicago proletarian novelist, spent three years at the University of Chicago, and held several jobs as clerk, salesman, and newspaper reporter. His early experiences as a baseball enthusiast and pupil of Catholic schools on the city's South Side are the basis of *Young Lonigan* (q.v.,1932), This naturalistic stream-of-consciousness study of an adolescent in a squalid urban environment shows Farrell's chief influences to be Dreiser, Joyce, and Proust, but also exhibits his powerful interest in the common facts of modern U.S. life, and his indignation at social and economic inequalities. *Gas-House McGinty* (1933) depicts the daily activities of employees in a city express office, but *The Young Manhood of Studs Lonigan* (q.v.,1934) follows the hero through his moral disintegration as the result of contact with the Chicago underworld, and *Judgment Day* (q.v., 1935), completing the trilogy, tells of his defeat and death, due to the depression and his criminal environment. Besides these novels, Farrell has published three volumes of short stories, similar to them both in method and in subject matter: *Calico Shoes* (1934), *Guillotine Party* (1935), and *Can All This Grandeur Perish?* (1937).

A new series of novels was begun with *A World I Never Made* (1936), the story of Danny O'Neill, a sensitive youth with a background like that of Studs Lonigan. *No Star Is Lost* (1938) and *Father and Son* (1940) continue Danny's story through his adolescent years. Farrell's digressions from his main preoccupations include *A Note on Literary Criticism* (1936), describing his æsthetic approach as that of a Marxist, although he decries the 'crass and oversimplified' concept of Marxism which is commonly applied in criticism; and *Tommy Gallagher's Crusade* (1939), the story of a youth who joins the vicious antisemitic campaign of a priest who spreads doctrines of American fascism.

Fashion: *or, Life in New York,* comedy of manners by Anna Mowatt (q.v.), produced in 1845 and published in 1850.

Mrs.Tiffany, a newly rich society woman, and her daughter Seraphina set their caps for Count Jolimaitre, who is attracted by Seraphina's potential fortune. Mr.Tiffany, however, is forced to promise his daughter to Snobson, a confidential clerk who discovers his use of forgery. Jolimaitre is disclosed to be a fraudulent count, actually the lover of Mrs.Tiffany's maid Millinette. He and Seraphina plan to elope, but wait until they can obtain her jewels, which are held because of Tiffany's financial troubles. Finally Tiffany's friend, Adam Trueman, frees him from the grasp of Snobson, and Seraphina from that of Jolimaitre.

Fashion and Famine, novel by Ann S. Stephens (q.v.).

Fatal Deception, *The,* see *Leicester.*

Fatal Interview, sonnet cycle by Edna St.Vincent Millay (q.v.).

Father, *The; or, American Shandyism,* comedy of manners by William Dunlap (q.v.), produced and published in 1789. It was revised (1806) as *The Father of an Only Child.*

Mr.Racket is a gay young merchant whose neglected wife consoles herself with the attentions of Captain Haller's servant, Ranter, who masquerades as a British officer. Ranter hopes to marry Mrs.Racket's sister, Caroline Felton, in order to possess her fortune. At this point, Colonel Duncan, guardian of Caroline and Mrs.Racket, appears to rescue the girls from Ranter. He assents to the betrothal of Caroline to Haller, who turns out to be Duncan's long-lost son. In addition to the main characters, there are two comedy parts: Cartridge, Colonel Duncan's servant; and the doctor, who is variously called Quiescent and Tattle.

Father Abbey's Will, humorous verse by John Seccomb (q.v.).

Father Abraham's Speech, see *Poor Richard's Almanack.*

Father, dear Father, see *Work,H.C.*

Father Mapple, see *Mapple, Father.*

Father of an Only Child, see *Father, The.*

Father of His Country, sobriquet of Washington, probably first appeared in print in Francis Bailey's *Nord Americanische Kalender* (Lancaster, Pennsylvania, 1779). It was in common usage in Pennsylvania in 1778.

Father of the Constitution, see *Madison, James.*

Father of Waters, see *Mississippi River.*

FAUGÈRES, MARGARETTA, see *Bleecker, Ann Eliza.*

FAULKNER (or FALKNER), WILLIAM [HARRISON] (1897–), grew up in Oxford, Mississippi, the son of a genteelly poor family whose background parallels that of the Sartoris family in his novels about the town of 'Jefferson.' After desultory education he joined the Canadian Flying Corps, was transferred to the British Royal Air Force, spending some spare time attending courses at Oxford, and then was sent to France, where he was wounded in a crash. After the Armistice he returned to Mississippi. Following a brief period at the state university, and the publication of *The Marble Faun* (1924), pastoral poems, he drifted to New Orleans. There, while working on a newspaper, he became friendly with Sherwood Anderson, who strongly influenced him both in style and subject matter. In 1926 he published *Soldier's Pay* (q.v.), a novel about the homecoming of a dying soldier. *Mosquitoes* (1927), a satirical novel set in New Orleans, was followed by *Sartoris* (1929), written after Faulkner's return to Oxford. This was the first of his novels dealing with the social history of Jefferson, which constitute a bitter comedy of the decadence of the Compson and Sartoris families, representatives of the Old South, and the rise of the Snopes family, representing the unscrupulous newcomers who displace them. The degeneracy of genteel society is traced

through three generations, from the feudal illusions of the Civil War period to the bitter disillusion after the World War. *The Sound and the Fury* (q.v.,1929) shows the decadence of such a family, as seen through the eyes of an idiot son. *As I Lay Dying* (q.v.,1930), a novel revealing the psychology of a subnormal poor-white family, makes a sensational use of naturalism to show the dominance of the irrational in human nature. *Sanctuary* (q.v.,1931) is a sadistic horror story, written to earn the money that Faulkner's more sincere writing had failed to bring him, and *These* 13 (1931) is a collection of macabre short stories. *Light in August* (1932) is more balanced in its contrast of positive and negative aspects of the life force, seen in its story of a pregnant girl who undergoes horrible adventures during her search for the lover who promised to marry her. *Idyll in the Desert* (1931), *Miss Zilphia Gant* (1932), and *Dr.Martino* (1934) are collections of short stories; *Salmagundi* (1932) reprints early essays and poems; and *A Green Bough* (1933) is a collection of later poems. Other books include: *Pylon* (1935), a novel concerned with a group of barnstorming aviators at a New Orleans Mardi Gras, which reflects the author's personal interest in flying; *Absalom, Absalom!* (1936), a novel set in Jefferson during the early 19th century, whose plot of horrors centers in the tragic downfall of an ambitious planter; *The Unvanquished* (1938), stories of the Sartoris family; *The Wild Palms* (1939), a novel about a Mississippi flood, showing its effects on the lives of a hillbilly convict and a New Orleans doctor and his mistress; and *The Hamlet* (1940), a novel concerned with the rise to influence of the Snopes family in Jefferson.

Fauntleroy, see *Little Lord Fauntleroy.*

FAWCETT, Edgar (1847–1904), prolific author of satirical novels and plays ridiculing New York society. Among them are the novel *Purple and Fine Linen* (1873) and such plays as *The False Friend* (1880), *Our First Families* (1880), and *Americans Abroad* (1881). *The Buntling Ball* (1884) is a lively verse play not intended for the stage, while the others were produced but unpublished. Fawcett also wrote poetry typical of his era, such as *Songs of Doubt and Dream* (1891), and *Agnosticism and Other Essays* (1889).

FAY, Sidney Bradshaw (1876–), born in Washington, graduated from Harvard (1896), studied abroad, and became a professor of history at Dartmouth, Smith, and since 1929 at Harvard. His best known book is *Origins of the World War* (2 vols., 1928), and he has compiled a *Guide to Historical Literature* (1931).

FAY, Theodore Sedgwick (1807–98), New York author, an editor of the *New-York Mirror* (1828–33), after 1837 held various diplomatic posts in England, Germany, and Switzerland. His early essays in the *Mirror* were collected in *Dreams and Reveries of a Quiet Man* (2 vols.,1832), and among his other books are: *Norman Leslie: A Tale of the Present Times* (1835); *Sydney Clifton; or, Vicissitudes in Both Hemispheres* (1839), a Gothic romance in a modern setting; *The Countess Ida: A Tale of Berlin* (1840); *Hoboken* (1843), a moralistic romance of New York life; and *Ulric; or, The Voices* (1851), a romantic poem of the Reformation in Germany.

FEARING, Kenneth (1902–), born in Chicago, after graduation from the University of Wisconsin moved to New York, where he has published three books of poetry, *Angel Arms* (1929), *Poems* (1935), and *Dead Reckoning* (1938), all lively intellectual satires of contemporary middle-class standards that refuse to recognize their own disintegration. His *Collected Poems* were published in 1940. *The Hospital* (1939) is a realistic novel about life in a large urban hospital.

Feathertop, story by Hawthorne, dramatized by Percy MacKaye as *The Scarecrow* (q.v.).

Federal Constitutional Convention, called at Philadelphia (May 1787) to draw up a new plan of government rectifying the weaknesses of the Articles of Confederation. All the states except Rhode Island sent representatives, and Washington presided. The principal struggle was over the new apportionment of power, the great difference being between the small states, who wished to retain equal power (the Paterson Plan), and the large ones, who wished leadership to fall where wealth and population lay (the Virginia or Randolph Plan). The convention was in session until September 17, when a compromise was reached and the Constitution (q.v.) was sent to the states for ratification.

Federal Orrery (1794–6), semiweekly Federalist journal, founded at Boston by R.T.Paine. Joseph Dennie and Mrs.S.W.

Morton were among those who contributed poetry, satire, and criticism, usually leveled at the anti-Federalists.

Federal States, name given during the Civil War to the states that remained in the Union, as opposed to the Confederate States.

Federal Theatre Project, operated (1936–9) by the Works Progress Administration as a measure for the relief of unemployed actors and other workers in the theater. Directed by Hallie Flanagan, who had been active in the little-theater movement, the Project's activities were stimulated by little-theater developments. Production units were established throughout the U.S., employing as many as 13,000 workers at one time. Some 1200 plays, by both foreign and native authors, were produced, and the aim was to supplement commercial theaters with groups presenting legitimate drama at low prices, often to audiences that had grown unaccustomed to the living theater. Perhaps the most important achievement was the development of an experimental form, 'The Living Newspaper,' created in New York under the editorship of Arthur Arent. Among these plays, dramatizing contemporary social and political problems by the use of quotations from newspapers and public addresses, and employing new mechanical devices, were *Triple A Plowed Under* (1936), *Injunction Granted* (1936), *Power* (1937), and '. . . *one-third of a nation* . . .' (1938). Other successful productions included T.S.Eliot's *Murder in the Cathedral*, Marlowe's *Dr.Faustus*, marionette plays for children, Sinclair Lewis's *It Can't Happen Here*, and Negro stylized productions of such works as *Macbeth* and *The Mikado*. Two series of *Federal Theatre Plays* were published (1938) and *Arena* (1940) by Hallie Flanagan is a history of the Project.

Federal Theology, see *Covenant Theology*.

Federal Writers' Project, operated (1935–9) by the Works Progress Administration as a measure for the relief of unemployed writers, journalists, editors, and research workers. Directed by Henry G. Alsberg, the Project employed as many as 6,600 workers at one time, in state and local branches throughout the U.S. Its main program was concerned with the compiling and editing of the 'American Guide Series,' a 'series of books which would give the Nation a detailed portrait of itself.' Their scope ranges from geographical and travel information to folklore, architecture, and other phases of cultural and ethnological history, and the plan included volumes not only for the forty-eight states but also for cities, towns, and highway routes. Among the by-products of the vast research this involved were school texts on local history, studies of racial groups in special regions, biographies, social histories, and books on animal life. Three hundred books and pamphlets had been issued by 1938.

Federalist, The, 85 essays in support of the Constitution (q.v.), signed by the pseudonym Publius, and written mainly by Hamilton (q.v.), assisted by Madison and Jay (qq.v.). First printed (1787–8) in the form of letters to the New York *Independent Journal*, *Packet*, and *Daily Advertiser*, they were collected and revised by Hamilton (2 vols.,1788). There are many critical editions, including those of P.L. Ford and H.C.Lodge. The latter summarizes the long controversy over the authorship by attributing 51 essays to Hamilton, 14 to Madison, 5 to Jay, 3 to Hamilton and Madison in collaboration, and 12 to either Hamilton or Madison.

At the time of writing, the purpose was principally to persuade New York voters to accept the Constitution, but the collected essays have come to be considered an authority on abstract principles of American government, and many Supreme Court decisions have been based in part on statements in *The Federalist*. The first paper, written by Hamilton, outlines the intention of numbers 1 to 51: 'to discuss the following interesting particulars:—The utility of the UNION to your political prosperity—The insufficiency of the present Confederation to preserve that Union—The necessity of a government at least equally energetic with the one proposed, to the attainment of this object—The conformity of the proposed Constitution to the true principles of republican government—its analogy to your own State constitution—and lastly, The additional security which its adoption will afford, to the preservation of that species of government, to liberty, and to property.' Specific subjects include 'Dangers from Foreign Force and Influence' and 'from Dissensions between the States'; 'The Union as a Safeguard against Domestic Faction and Insurrec-

tion'; 'Commercial Relations and a Navy'; 'Revenue'; 'Economy in Government'; 'The Powers Necessary to the Common Defense'; 'Militia'; 'Power of Taxation'; and 'Restrictions on the Authority of the Several States.' Numbers 52 to 83 proceed to a detailed analysis of the governmental functions as defined by the Constitution, while the last two essays refute objections and summarize the general argument.

Federalist party, originated in the Federal Constitutional Convention among those who championed the adoption of the Constitution, and organized as the first U.S. political party early in the administration of Washington, who sympathized with its program. Led by Hamilton and John Adams (qq.v.), it represented commercial and nationalistic interests, and advocated a strong central government, liberal construction of constitutional powers, a national financial system, and a neutral attitude toward European wars. Opposition to these policies resulted in Jefferson's creation of the anti-Federalist Democratic Republican party, which replaced the Federalist party in power after 1801. Among the causes of difference was Hamilton's hostility toward the French Revolution, which led to a party schism when Adams insisted on maintaining U.S. neutrality, at the same time that the Jeffersonians sympathized with the French. The conflict between Hamilton and Adams, the extension of the frontier, the growth of a laboring class to which the Federalists did not appeal, and the superior organizing ability of Jefferson were causes of the party's loss of influence. After Hamilton's death, the party lost power everywhere except in New England, where, as in the Essex Junto (q.v.), it championed the doctrine of state rights, the Democrats having become increasingly nationalistic. There was no Federalist candidate after the election of Monroe (1816), and the position of the party was later occupied successively by the Whigs, Free Soilers, and Republicans.

FEKE, ROBERT (*c.*1705–50), New York portrait painter, who, although probably self-taught, is considered the most forceful artist of the early 18th century in the colonies. While his figures are rigid and lack individuality, they are well placed on the canvas, and show a fine feeling for textures and flesh tones.

FELIX CARMEN, pseudonym of F. D. Sherman (q.v.).

Female Patriotism, tragedy by John D. Burk (q.v.).

Female Quixotism: *Exhibited in the Romantic Opinions and Extravagant Adventures of Dorcasina Sheldon,* novel by Tabitha Tenney (q.v.), published in 1801. This satire of sentimental fiction is obviously indebted to Charlotte Lennox's *The Female Quixote.*

Dorcas Sheldon, only daughter of a rich family, is addicted to the reading of sentimental novels, and determines to pattern her behavior on that of a typical heroine. Transforming her simple name into Dorcasina, she rejects a suitor because he fails to propose in approved fictional fashion. Accompanied by her maid Betty, a female Sancho Panza, she spends her time reading novels in a romantically situated arbor, and reaches the age of 34 without finding the romance she desires. After being nearly seduced, because an adventurer proposes to her in a sentimental manner, she is wooed by Philander, a student given to practical jokes, who imposes on her credulity. Finally despairing of finding a lover, she reads *Roderick Random,* and discovers that the hero, a serving-man, fell in love with his employer, at which she forces her hired man, John Brown, to do likewise. Her friends rescue her, and at last, completely disillusioned, Dorcas settles down to a quiet spinsterhood.

Feminism, reform movement aiming at the social, educational, and political equality of women with men, which arose during the late 18th century. The first great document of feminism was the *Vindication of the Rights of Women* (1790), by the English author Mary Wollstonecraft. American women, including Abigail Adams and Mercy Otis Warren, were just as early in agitating that the Constitution specifically state the rights of women. Later prominent leaders in America included Emma Willard, who wrote a *Plan for Improving Female Education* (1819); Margaret Fuller, who wrote *Woman in the Nineteenth Century* (1845); and Harried Farley, who edited the *Lowell Offering.* As an early result of feminist agitation, Oberlin College was the first institution of higher learning to grant degrees to women (1837). After the convention led by Elizabeth Stanton, Lucretia Mott, and others (1848), the movement became a predominantly political one for

woman suffrage (q.v.), but it continues to exert an important influence, with such current leaders as Katherine Anthony and Mary R. Beard.

FENNO, JOHN, see *Gazette of the United States.*

FENOLLOSA, ERNEST FRANCISCO (1853–1908), was an American pioneer in the study of Oriental literature and art. After 12 years of teaching in Japan, he returned to the U.S. to become a curator of the Boston museum. His writings include *East and West: The Discovery of America and Other Poems* (1893), *The Masters of Ukioye* (1896), and *Epochs of Chinese and Japanese Art* (1911). His literary executor, Ezra Pound, edited from his notes *Certain Noble Plays of Japan* (1916); *Noh—or, Accomplishment* (1916); and *Cathay* (1915), translations of Chinese poetry.

FERBER, EDNA (1887–), Michigan-born novelist and playwright, resident in New York. After her first novel, *Dawn O'Hara* (1911), she wrote the short stories concerned with the business woman Emma McChesney, collected in *Roast Beef, Medium* (1913), *Personality Plus* (1914), and *Emma McChesney and Co.* (1915). Besides other collections of short stories, including *Mother Knows Best* (1927), she is the author of a number of successful novels: *Fanny Herself* (1917); *The Girls* (1921), a study of three generations of women; *So Big* (1924), concerned with Selina, a truck gardener, and her sacrifices for her son Dirk, who becomes an architect; *Show Boat* (1926), the romantic story of Magnolia Hawks, leading lady of her father's showboat troupe, who marries Gaylord Ravenal, a debonair gambler, and after he deserts her becomes a successful singer; *Cimarron* (1930), about the 1889 land rush in Oklahoma, and the region's later development; *American Beauty* (1931), concerned with Polish immigrants in Connecticut; and *Come and Get It* (1935), a story of the Wisconsin logging industry. She collaborated with Jerome Kern in the operetta version of *Show Boat* (1927), and with George S. Kaufman in such plays as *Minick* (1924), based on one of her stories; *The Royal Family* (1927), reputedly lampooning the Barrymores; *Dinner at Eight* (1932); and *Stage Door* (1936), concerned with the ambitions of Broadway actresses. *A Peculiar Treasure* (1939) is her autobiography.

FERGUSSON, HARVEY (1890–), New Mexico novelist, whose *Followers of the Sun* is a trilogy dealing with life on the Santa Fé Trail, and includes *Blood of the Conquerors* (1921), showing the degeneration of the original Spanish landowners; *Wolf Song* (1927), dealing with the period of American settlement; and *In Those Days* (1929), a panorama of the Southwest, built around the life of a pioneer who comes in the days of wagon trains, and lives on into contemporary times. *Capitol Hill* (1923) is a realistic novel of life in Washington, D.C., while *Footloose McGarnigal* (1930) tells of a young boy's wanderings through the artist colonies of Santa Fé and Taos, and *Rio Grande* (1933) is an informal history of the Southwest, from the pueblo builders to the present.

FERN, FANNY, pseudonym of Sara P. Willis (q.v.).

FERNALD, CHESTER BAILEY (1869–1938), born in Boston, lived in San Francisco (1889–93), where he obtained the material for his best known books, *The Cat and the Cherub* (1896) and *Chinatown Stories* (1899), both collections of stories about the city's Chinese quarter. *Under the Jack-staff* (1903) contains dramatic tales of life at sea, based on Fernald's travels in Alaska, Europe, and the Orient. After 1907 he lived in England, where he became known as a dramatist.

FESSENDEN, THOMAS GREEN (1771–1837), New Hampshire author, whose varied career included law practice, invention, and the editing of newspapers in New York, Brattleboro, and Boston. His Hudibrastic satire, *Terrible Tractoration* (1803), was aimed at English critics of Elisha Perkins's 'metallic tractors,' an invention for which Fessenden was the agent. *Democracy Unveiled* (1805) is a virulent attack on Jefferson and the Democrats. His *Original Poems* (1804) include 'The Country Lovers,' which is thought to have suggested Lowell's 'The Courtin'.' He used the pseudonym Christopher Caustic.

Few Figs from Thistles, A, satirical poems by Edna St. Vincent Millay (q.v.).

FICKE, ARTHUR DAVISON (1883–), Iowa-born poet, whose early romantic volumes included *From the Isles* (1907), *The Happy Princess* (1907), *The Earth Passion* (1908), *The Breaking of Bonds* (1910), *Sonnets of a Portrait Painter* (1914), *The Man on the Hilltop* (1915), and *An April Elegy*

(1917). *Mr.Faust* (1913), later revised for stage production, presents the legendary Faustus as a modern New Yorker who enlists Satan's aid in hope of overcoming his disillusion, and finally attains a spiritual peace beyond petty human striving. Ficke's objection to modernism in poetry may be seen in the satirical hoax, *Spectra* (q.v.,1916). His later poems show him to be 'homesick in modernity,' and terrified by the natural beauty of the world, as in *Out of Silence and Other Poems* (1924) and *Mountain Against Mountain* (1929). *Mrs. Morton of Mexico* (1939) is a novel.

FIELD, Cyrus West (1819–92), brother of Stephen Field, was a New York merchant, and promoted the laying of the first Atlantic cable (1858), as well as its successor (1866).

FIELD, Eugene (1850–95), born in St. Louis, always considered himself a Westerner, and, in his writings for the Denver *Tribune* and his column 'Sharps and Flats' in the Chicago *Daily News* (1883–95), showed his special province to be the journalization of literature. He filled his column with whimsical humor, and with verse—often in real or imaginary dialects—that appealed to the popular taste in humor and sentiment. Among his best-known poems are the sentimental 'Little Boy Blue' and the 'Dutch Lullaby,' ('Wynken, Blynken, and Nod,') both set to music by Reginald DeKoven and also by Ethelbert Nevin. His collections of newspaper contributions include *A Little Book of Western Verse* (1889), *A Little Book of Profitable Tales* (1889), *With Trumpet and Drum* (1892), *A Second Book of Verse* (1892), *The Holy Cross and Other Tales* (1893), *The Love Affairs of a Bibliomaniac* (1896) and *The House* (1896).

Roswell Martin Field (1851–1919), his brother, had a parallel career as journalist and music and dramatic critic. The two collaborated on a volume of paraphrases of Horace, *Echoes from the Sabine Farm* (1892).

FIELD, Joseph M. (1810–56), St.Louis actor, theatrical manager, and journalist, whose newspaper and magazine sketches were collected in *The Drama in Pokerville* (1847). None of his many plays was published, but he is remembered for such tales of frontier humor as 'Mike Fink, the Last of the Boatmen.'

FIELD, Marshall (1834–1906), began his career as a Chicago merchant in 1856. A pioneer in the development of the department store, he built his own business into a tremendously valuable property, its sales amounting in 1868 to $12,000,000, and in 1906 to $68,000,000. Field's most noteworthy philanthropies include donations to the University of Chicago and the founding of the Field Museum of Natural History (1893).

FIELD, Rachel [Lyman] (1894–), Massachusetts author of such children's books as *Hitty, Her First Hundred Years* (1929), and novels for adults, including *Time Out of Mind* (1935) and *All This, and Heaven Too* (1938), the latter about a woman's struggle against her scandalous reputation.

FIELD, Stephen Johnson (1816–99), New York lawyer, brother of Cyrus W. Field, emigrated to California (1849), where he drafted codes of civil and criminal procedure and established the basis of Western mining law. He was chief justice of the state supreme court (1859–63), resigning to become a member of the U.S. Supreme Court, in which he served until 1897. In the Slaughterl ouse cases (1873), concerned with a monopoly granted to New Orleans butchers, he delivered a dissenting opinion contending that the 14th Amendment protected business against legislative interference, an interpretation followed by the majority in later cases. His *Reminiscences of Early Days in California* was published in 1880.

FIELDS, James T[homas] (1817–81), partner of W.D.Ticknor (q.v.) in a prominent Boston publishing firm, was editor of the *Atlantic Monthly* (q.v., 1861–71). He wrote several volumes of poetry, including *A Few Verses for a Few Friends* (1858), which contains the lines, '"We are lost!" the captain shouted, As he staggered down the stairs.' *Underbrush* (1877) is a collection of essays and sketches, and *Yesterdays with Authors* (1872) is one of his several reminiscences.

Annie Adams Fields (1834–1915), his wife, established a literary *salon* in their home, and also wrote poetry, a biography of her husband (1881), *Authors and Friends* (1896), and a diary from which M.A.DeW. Howe edited *Memories of a Hostess* (1922).

Fiesta, see *The Sun Also Rises.*

Fifth Column, The, play by Hemingway (q.v.).

Fifty Grand, short story by Hemingway, in *Men Without Women* (q.v.).

Fifty-four forty or fight, campaign slogan of the Democrats in the election of Polk (1844), expressing the view that U.S. rights extended over the entire Oregon territory to latitude 54° 40′, a boundary which the British at first would not recognize (see *Oregon Question*). The slogan is the title of a book by Emerson Hough, which deals with the controversy.

FIGARO, pseudonym of Henry Clapp (q.v.).

Figs and Thistles, novel by Albion W. Tourgée (q.v.).

Figure in the Carpet, The, tale by Henry James (q.v.), collected in *Embarrassments* (1896).

Considered to be a self-revelation of the author, this is the narrative of an earnest young critic's study of the works of the brilliant novelist, Hugh Vereker,—his search for 'the figure in the carpet,' which Vereker tells him cryptically is the key to an appreciation of his books, although no one has yet understood it. The young man repeats this to his friend Corvick, an experienced critic, who dedicates himself to discovering the secret figure, and claims to have done so when he marries Gwendolyn Erme, who has been equally anxious to know the solution. Corvick is accidentally killed before writing his projected essay, and the young critic can urge from Gwendolyn only the assertion that her husband told her the secret. Later she marries another critic, Drayton Deane. After both Gwendolyn and Vereker have died, the young man meets Deane, and implores him to divulge the secret. The astonished Deane knows nothing of it, and the disappointment of the young man is mitigated by the torment of the second husband, who thinks his wife may have considered him unworthy of sharing the sacred confidence.

Figures of Earth, romance by Cabell (q.v.).

FILLMORE, MILLARD (1800–74), 13th President of the U.S. (1850–3), was born in New York, and practiced law at Buffalo, from which he was elected to the state legislature (1829–31). He had the support of Thurlow Weed in his election to Congress (1832), and two years later joined the Whig party, in 1841 becoming its leader in the House. Elected Vice President under Zachary Taylor (1848), he was notably fair in presiding over the heated debates on slavery questions, and at Taylor's death succeeded him as chief executive. Fillmore signed the Fugitive Slave Act and other legislation of the Compromise of 1850, approved the move to inaugurate trade with Japan, and insisted on U.S. neutrality in regard to wars abroad. He was a leader of compromise efforts to reconcile North and South, and was the Know-Nothing candidate for the presidency (1856), but exercised little influence on later events.

FILSON, JOHN (*c.*1747–88), author of the *Discovery, Settlement, and Present State of Kentucke* (1784), the first history of the state. The most famous passage in the book is the 'Adventures of Col. Daniel Boon' (*sic*), probably based on the scout's dictation, which was primarily responsible for the beginning of Boone's legendary reputation. Filson also drew a *Map of Kentucke* in the same year.

Financier, The, novel by Dreiser (q.v.), published in 1912 and revised in 1927. The story and its sequel, *The Titan* (q.v.), are based on the career of C.T.Yerkes (q.v.).

Frank Algernon Cowperwood, son of a steady, unimaginative Philadelphia bank clerk, grows to manhood in the years before the Civil War, and early demonstrates shrewdness, personal magnetism, self-command, and ability at leadership. By the outbreak of the war, he is operating a successful note-brokerage business, is married to Lillian Semple, an attractive widow several years his senior, has a son and daughter, and a few years later seems firmly established as a millionaire business leader and art collector. His ambition is unsatisfied, however, and he becomes associated with Edward Butler, a wealthy contractor, one of the 'Big Three' in local politics, with whom he manages deals in stocks and traction construction. Butler's daughter Aileen, ten years younger than Cowperwood, attracts him by her beauty, intelligence, and spirit, and the two form a liaison that they conceal for a period of years. Although he now has prestige, power, and personal happiness, the financier overreaches himself in manipulations with city money, and is caught short in the panic of 1871. When Butler refuses to aid him, Cowperwood is indicted for grand larceny, and imprisoned. His father, now president of his bank, is ruined by the scandal, but

Cowperwood remains calm and confident. Released a year later, he obtains a divorce, and marries Aileen, whose father has died. The panic of 1873 enables him to acquire millions by clever trading, and he leaves Philadelphia for a wider field of activities in Chicago.

FINCH, Francis Miles (1827–1907), born in Ithaca, N.Y., graduated from Yale (1849), became a prominent lawyer and judge, lecturer and dean and professor of law at Cornell's College of Law. His posthumously published writing, *The Blue and the Gray and Other Verses* (1909) was done as an avocation but is remembered today for the title piece, the poem 'Nathan Hale,' and some college songs.

FINEMAN, Irving (1893–), author of novels which include *This Pure Young Man* (1930), a story of adolescent development; *Lovers Must Learn* (1932), concerned with American expatriates in Paris; *Hear Ye, Sons* (1933), the story of a Polish Jew who emigrates to New York and becomes a successful lawyer; and *Doctor Addams* (1939), about the problems of a woman doctor who must reconcile the demands of her career with those of her domestic life.

FINK, Mike (1770?–1823?), keelboatman on the Ohio and Mississippi Rivers, noted for the tall tales of his exploits, which made him as fabulous as Paul Bunyan. Accounts of his adventures began to appear as early as 1829, when tales derived from oral sources found their way into print. There are 11 versions of his death, and his daughter Sal is probably an entirely mythical creation. He figures in works by many writers, including Emerson Bennett, T.B.Thorpe, J.M.Field, and John Neihardt.

FINLEY, Martha Farquharson (1828–1909), who wrote under the name Martha Farquharson, was the author of some hundred novels for children. Her character, Elsie Dinsmore, who appeared in the 28 Elsie books (1867–1905), and similar figures in other pious tales, were very popular.

Fire Bringer, The, poetic drama by William Vaughn Moody (q.v.).

Fire-eaters, name applied, before the Civil War, to Southerners who vehemently defended the doctrine of state rights and the general Democratic and regional point of view.

Fireside Travels, literary essays by Lowell (q.v.).

First Book of the American Chronicles of the Times, The, anonymous burlesque, probably written by a Philadelphian, and published serially (1774–5). It is a satirical account, in the manner of the Scriptures, of American history leading up to the Revolution.

First Flight, play by Maxwell Anderson and Laurence Stallings (qq.v.).

First in War, First in Peace, and First in the Hearts of His Countrymen, description of Washington in the memorial by R.H. Lee (q.v.).

FISHER, Dorothy Canfield, see *Canfield.*

FISHER, Vardis [Alvero] (1895–), Idaho author, best known for his tetralogy concerned with the life of Vridar Hunter, his not too subtly named *alter ego.* The first of these novels, *In Tragic Life* (1932) published in England as *I See No Sin* (1934), is the story of the boyhood and adolescence of the hypersensitive Vridar, who is terrified by the hardships of life on a Western farm, and by the Puritan rigidity of family standards. *Passions Spin the Plot* (1934) deals with his disillusion at failing to discover the meaning of life through attending college at Salt Lake City, and his marriage to the half-Indian girl, Neloa. *We Are Betrayed* (1935) tells of his attempt to escape inner confusion by going to war, his return to college, and the conflicts between his Mormon background and the newly discovered doctrines of Freud. In this state of mind, his mental cruelty drives Neloa to suicide. *No Villain Need Be* (1936) shows Vridar as a professor in a Mormon college and as a struggling author among New York bohemians, and his eventual discovery that there can be no peace for the individual until all men reach 'a splendid fellowship.' Fisher's other works, some of them written while he was teaching English at the University of Utah (1925–8) and at New York University (1928–31), include: *Sonnets to an Imaginary Madonna* (1927); *Toilers of the Hills* (1928) and *Dark Bridwell* (1931), novels dealing with the repressive effects of frontier life; *The Neurotic Nightingale* (1935), a collection of essays; *April, A Fable of Love* (1937), about a girl's escape from the monotony of Idaho ranch life; *Forgive Us Our Virtues* (1938), the story of

a psychology professor's discovery of the way lives are affected by unhealthy sexual inhibitions; *Children of God* (1939), a historical novel of Joseph Smith, Brigham Young, and the Mormon movement; and *City of Illusion* (1941), a story of the Comstock Lode. Fisher was head of the state Federal Writers Project, which prepared the Idaho *State Guide* (1937).

FISK, JAMES (1834–72), notorious 'robber baron' of the Gilded Age, was born in Vermont, and gained his first wealth as a jobber and contractor for a Boston syndicate during the Civil War. In 1866 he became associated with Daniel Drew and Jay Gould, and the three engaged in various exploits of financial piracy that brought them tremendous fortunes, but wrecked U.S. finance and led to the panic of Black Friday (1869). Fisk's remaining years were spent in steamboat and railroad transactions, and in a lurid and spectacular career as *bon vivant*, colonel of militia, Hudson River 'admiral,' and producer of opera and drama. He was killed by a rival for the love of his current mistress, the actress Josie Mansfield.

Fisk University, Negro institution founded at Nashville, Tennessee (1866), by the American Missionary Association, but independent of it since 1917. The Fisk Jubilee Singers have been influential in arousing interest in Negro spirituals.

FISKE, JOHN (1842–1901), Connecticut-born author, lecturer at Harvard, and professor of American history at Washington University (St.Louis). As a young man he was an ardent follower of Comte and Herbert Spencer, and, through such works as *The Outlines of Cosmic Philosophy* (1874), *Darwinism and Other Essays* (1879), and *The Destiny of Man Viewed in the Light of His Origin* (1884), became the chief popularizer of Victorian science and philosophy in the U.S. After 1879 he was principally known as a lecturer and author on American history, but his importance was that of a popularizer, not of an original thinker. In *The Critical Period of American History*, 1783–1789 (1888) and *The Beginnings of New England* (1889), he attempted to apply Comtean ideas of sociological evolution to American history. He helped edit *Appleton's Cyclopædia of American Biography* (1887–9), and his later works include *Civil Government in the United States* (1890), *The Mississippi Valley in the Civil War* (1900), *Essays: Historical and Literary* (1902), and *New France and New England* (1902). His *Letters* were published in 1940.

FISKE, MINNIE MADDERN (1865–1932), prominent actress, first appeared on the stage at the age of three, and was famous for her child parts. Her career spanned a half-century, and her adult roles were in such diverse plays as *Frou-Frou*, *Hedda Gabler*, and *The Rivals*.

FISKE, NATHAN (1733–99), Massachusetts clergyman, was the author of *The Moral Monitor* (1801), a collection of essays following the plan of the *Spectator*. His *Historical Discourse* (1776) of his native town of Brookfield contains an account of the conflicts with the savages and the English.

FITCH, CLYDE [WILLIAM] (1865–1909), author of more than 30 popular plays, which were usually constructed for a specific star. Thus *Barbara Frietchie* (1899) was written for Julia Marlowe, *Nathan Hale* (1899) for Nat Goodwin, *Beau Brummel* (1890) for Mansfield, and *Her Great Match* (1905) for Maxine Elliott. Fitch was extremely versatile, writing farces, society dramas, historical plays, and problem plays, always with an understanding of what would be effective on the stage. Serious studies of the social, financial, and political aspects of New York City are contained in *The Climbers* (1901) and *The City* (1909). His popular farce, *Captain Jinks of the Horse Marines* (1901), was revised in 1925 as a musical comedy. *The Girl with the Green Eyes* (q.v.,1902), a psychological study of jealousy, is generally considered to be his most important work. His collected plays were edited by M.J. Moses (1915).

FITCH, JOHN (1743–98), inventor of a steamboat that antedated Fulton's *Clermont* by two decades. In 1787 he launched his first boat on the Delaware, propelling it by the steam-driven operation of a number of oars. Its commercial failure led to his suicide.

FITZGERALD, F[RANCIS] SCOTT [KEY] (1896–1940), born in Minnesota, before serving in the World War studied at Princeton, the scene of his first novel, *This Side of Paradise* (q.v.,1920), an expression of jazz age cynicism and the bewilderment of youth who revolt for revolt's sake, and for the superficial titillation of toying with violent philosophies. The book's brilliance

and wit established Fitzgerald's reputation, but it now appears more significant as a historical record than as an artistic triumph. His next works included two books of short stories in the same vein, *Flappers and Philosophers* (1920) and *Tales of the Jazz Age* (1922), a second novel, *The Beautiful and Damned* (1922), and a satirical play, *The Vegetable; or, From President to Postman* (1923). *The Great Gatsby* (q.v., 1925), considered to be his finest novel, portrays the fantastic post-war era, in which the shoddy successful career of Gatsby and his Petronian orgies stand as symbols for the dream of a decade, which was bound to end in death and disenchantment. With the stories in *All the Sad Young Men* (1926), Fitzgerald began to depict the ultimate dissolution, in which his later novel, *Tender Is the Night* (1934), and the stories in *Taps at Reveille* (1935) seem to indicate that he himself became trapped.

FITZHUGH, George (1806–81), Virginia lawyer and author, whose books, including *Sociology for the South; or, The Failure of Free Society* (1854) and *Cannibals All! or, Slaves Without Masters* (1857), are arguments for slavery and the plantation system, contending that laissez-faire capitalism and northern industrialism had proven a failure.

FITZPATRICK, Thomas (*c.*1799–1854), Irish-born frontiersman and guide in the Far West, was a member of Ashley's expedition up the Missouri (1823), and with Jedediah Smith helped establish the South Pass route to the Green River Valley. He guided the first emigrant trains to California and Oregon, and was employed by Frémont and Kearny for similar tasks, later becoming an Indian agent. He was known among the Indians as 'Broken Hand.'

Five Little Peppers and How They Grew, story for children by Harriet Lothrop (q.v.).

Five Nations, see *Iroquois.*

Five-Foot Shelf, see *Eliot, C.W.*

FLAGG, James Montgomery (1877–), popular painter and illustrator of fiction, is best known for his patriotic posters and idealized interpretations of American youth.

FLAGLER, Henry Morrison (1830–1913), principal partner of Rockefeller in the early Standard Oil Company, is also known for his development of the tourist and citrus industries of Florida, where he built railroads and hotels, and became the state's leading citizen.

Flags, see *Stars and Stripes* and *Stars and Bars.*

Flammonde, poem in iambic pentameter couplets, by E.A.Robinson (q.v.), published in *The Man Against the Sky* (1916). It describes the mysterious elderly citizen of Tilbury Town, Flammonde, who plays 'the Prince of Castaways,' and who, although outwardly a failure, is a constant source of sympathy for the town's troubled and needy.

FLANDRAU, Charles Macomb (1871–1938), Minnesota author and journalist, was a Harvard graduate, and wrote many magazine stories about undergraduate life. These were collected in three volumes, *Harvard Episodes* (1897), *The Diary of a Freshman* (1901), and *Sophomores Abroad* (1935). He also wrote two volumes of witty and perceptive essays, *Prejudices* (1911) and *Loquacities* (1931), and a notable book of sketches, *Viva Mexico!* (1908), based on the years he spent on his brother's coffee plantation in Mexico.

Flathead Indians, name applied to several Northwestern tribes that practiced occipital flattening on their children, and even to such other tribes as the Nez Percé. The Salish of western Montana, the only tribe now known by the name, never practiced this malformation.

FLETCHER, John Gould (1886–), Arkansas author, has been strongly influenced by Southern traditions, although from 1908 to 1933 he lived mainly in Europe. In England he was a leader of the Imagists, whose poetic theory is exemplified in *Irradiations* (1915) and *Goblins and Pagodas* (1916), and like Amy Lowell he experimented with polyphonic prose. His later work, beginning with *Breakers and Granite* (1921) and including *Branches of Adam* (1926), *The Black Rock* (1928), *XXIV Elegies* (1935), and *The Epic of Arkansas* (1936), shows a return to the American scene, a more mystical tone, and a tendency toward classic forms. Since his return to Arkansas, he has been a leader of the Agrarians (q.v.), and has won the Pulitzer Prize for his *Selected Poems* (1938). His prose works include *Paul Gauguin* (1921); *John Smith—Also Poca-*

hontas (1928); *The Two Frontiers* (1930), about Russia and the U.S.; *The Crisis of the Film* (1929); and his autobiography, *Life Is My Song* (1937).

FLINT, TIMOTHY (1780–1840), Massachusetts missionary, whose *Recollections of the Last Ten Years* (1826), an account of his preaching pilgrimages in the Mississippi Valley, shows a first-hand acquaintance with the scenes used in his later novels. *Francis Berrian; or, The Mexican Patriot* (1826) is a romantic story of a New England Puritan in the Mexican revolution of 1822. *George Mason, the Young Backwoodsman* (1829) is a historical romance, and *The Life and Adventures of Arthur Clenning* (1828) is a fantastic tale of castaways in the South Seas and their later life on the Illinois frontier. *The Shoshonee Valley* (1830) tells the story of a New England mariner and his Chinese wife, who abandon civilization to live among the Indians. Flint was a professed follower of Chateaubriand, but, although he generally romanticizes the background, some of his writing on the Far West has a claim to realism. He also published *The Western Monthly Review* (1827–30), a literary and critical journal that attempted to interpret the West to the East.

Flowering Judas, short stories by Katharine Anne Porter (q.v.).

Flowering of New England, The, literary history by Van Wyck Brooks (q.v.).

Flush Times of Alabama and Mississippi, The, 26 sketches by J.G.Baldwin (q.v.), published in 1853, dealing with the bench and bar of the Old Southwest during the early years of settlement, and ranging from comic anecdotes to careful biographies of legal notables. The work is vivid both as satire and as a realistic picture of the period, due to the bluff humorous exaggeration with which Baldwin presents backwoods lawyers, spread-eagle orators, liars, crooked gamblers, boasters, and tellers of tall tales.

Flute and Violin, short stories by J.L. Allen (q.v.).

Flying Cloud, see *Clipper Ships.*

FOERSTER, NORMAN (1887–), leader of the New Humanism (q.v.), professor of American literature at the University of North Carolina (1914–30), has since been director of the School of Letters at the University of Iowa. He has edited such works as *A Reinterpretation of American Literature* (1928), and is the author of *Nature in American Literature* (1923), *American Criticism* (1928), *The American Scholar* (1929), *Toward Standards* (1930), and *The American State University* (1937).

FOLGER, PETER (1617–90), grandfather of Benjamin Franklin, was a pioneer of Nantucket. His *A Looking-Glass for the Times* (1676), in homespun quatrains of ballad metre, cried out for religious liberty, and asserted that the Indian wars were intended by God to punish the bigotry of Massachusetts.

Folger Shakespeare Memorial Library, at Washington,D.C. (dedicated 1932), is the gift of Henry Clay Folger (1857–1930) and his wife, and contains the greatest collection in the U.S. of Shakespearean materials.

Folklore of the U.S., see *Ballad, Spiritual, Tall Tale, Frontier, Uncle Remus, Paul Bunyan, Tony Beaver, Casey Jones, Mike Fink, Davy Crockett, Daniel Boone, Yankee Doodle, John Henry, Frankie and Johnny, Jesse James, Billy the Kid, Kit Carson, Jim Bridger, Sam Bass, Pacing Mustang, 'Big Bear of Arkansas,' 'Celebrated Jumping Frog of Calaveras County,'* and *American Folk-Lore Society.*

Folks, The, novel by Ruth Suckow (q.v.).

Folkways, study of social institutions by W.G.Sumner (q.v.).

FOLLEN, CHARLES (1796–1840), born in Germany, emigrated to the U.S. because of his republican sympathies, and became Harvard's first professor of German literature. He was a leader of Abolitionism and other liberal movements, some of his lectures on these subjects being included in his *Works* (1841–2), edited by his wife, Eliza Lee Cabot Follen (1787–1860), who was also influential in Massachusetts liberal movements, and was the author of *Hymns for Children* (1825) and *Poems* (1839).

Following the Equator, autobiographical narrative by Clemens (q.v.), published in 1897 under his pseudonym Mark Twain. Describing the Australasian section of his lecture tour around the world (1895), he works up, in a rather pedestrian way, second-hand materials concerning the aborigines, early settlers, and local animals. Although there are witty interludes, vivid accounts such as the one of

the Sepoy Mutiny, and satirical disquisitions on the Boer War and imperialistic morality, the book has little of the inspiration that distinguishes Clemens's other travel accounts. In India, he is oppressed by the over-population, superstition, plagues, famines, and disasters, and by the disillusioned society resigned to the constant repetition of barren and meaningless processes. Here he foreshadows the pessimism of the books he wrote in 1898.

FONT, PEDRO (d.1781), Franciscan missionary, accompanied Anza's expedition (1776) up the California coast to San Francisco Bay. His diary, giving a graphic account of the expedition, was translated in the *Publications of Pacific Coast History* (1913).

FONTANNE, LYNN, see *Lunt, Alfred.*

Fool's Errand, A, semi-autobiographical novel by Albion W. Tourgée (q.v.), published in 1879 with the signature, 'By One of the Fools.' It was dramatized by Steele MacKaye (1881).

The 'Fool,' Comfort Servosse, is a Union colonel during the Civil War, and afterward buys a plantation near Verdenton (Greensboro, North Carolina), to which he brings his family. His actions as an influential Republican, and his sale of land to the Negroes, whom he befriends, win him many enemies, including General Gurney, whose son Melville falls in love with Servosse's daughter, Lily. He consistently fights both carpetbaggers and the Ku Klux Klan, and advances a plan to abolish state boundaries in the South, so that it might be readmitted to the Union on a territorial basis. His life is endangered by an infuriated mob, but he is saved by a timely message from General Gurney, who thereby wins Lily's gratitude. When Melville proposes marriage, Servosse accepts for his daughter, but she refuses unless the general will agree. This makes the marriage impossible until years later, when Servosse is dying of a fever contracted during a trip to Central America, and Gurney, with the rest of the 'Fool's' enemies, is reconciled with his sincere and honorable opponent.

FOOTE, ARTHUR WILLIAM (1853–1937), Boston composer, organist, pianist, and teacher, is considered the most important 19th-century composer to have been educated entirely in the U.S. He is best known for his many instrumental works, and for such Longfellow settings for chorus and orchestra as *The Farewell of Hiawatha* (1886), *The Wreck of the Hesperus* (1888), and *The Skeleton in Armor* (1893).

FOOTE, MARY HALLOCK (1847–1938), New York-born novelist, married a civil engineer (1876), and spent her later life in Colorado, Idaho, and California. Her stories of Western life include *The Led-Horse Claim* (q.v.,1883), *The Chosen Valley* (1892), and *Coeur d'Alene* (q.v., 1894). Among her later fiction are *Edith Bonham* (1917) and *Ground-swell* (1919).

For Lancelot Andrewes, critical essays by T.S.Eliot (q.v.), published in 1928. The title essay is an examination of the style and thought of the 17th-century Anglican bishop, whom Eliot finds to be not only important in the history of the church, but also distinguished for his prose and his vital thought. Other subjects include Bramhall, Machiavelli, Bradley, Baudelaire, Middleton, and Crashaw. In 'The Humanism of Irving Babbitt,' Eliot questions the possibility of a long life or significance for the New Humanism, since it is presented as an alternative to religion. He demonstrates that Babbitt's faith in civilization must have as discipline a center of dogmatic moral reference, derived from religious authority.

For Whom the Bell Tolls, novel by Hemingway (q.v.) published in 1940. The title is derived from a sermon by Donne: 'No man is an *Iland,* intire of it selfe; every man is a peece of the *Continent* . . . And therefore never send to know for whom the *bell* tolls; It tolls for *thee.*'

Robert Jordan, formerly a young instructor of Spanish at the University of Montana, has entered the Loyalist army during the Spanish Civil War and has been sent to join a group of guerillas in the mountains near Segovia to blow up a strategic bridge at the exact minute that will most help a Loyalist advance. During the little more than three days and three nights that he spends with the *partizans* in their cave, there is a constant feeling that 'Something is preparing,' and with an intensely romantic opposition to heroism he heroically awaits what he suspects will be his own destruction and that of his companions. He falls instantly in love with Maria, the daughter of a Republican mayor, who has seen her parents killed and was herself raped by the Falangists.

Her close-cropped hair remains as a symbol of her tortures, but his courage helps her to regain her spirit and she lives only to love and serve him. Their passionate love is both abetted and envied by the monumentally powerful woman, Pilar, who dominates the group by her force of character, rages, sudden compassion, love of the Republic, gusto for life, and peasant love of the land. Her man Pablo is wily, but without courage or belief. The revolution has crushed his strength and left him desirous of staying 'in the eddy of his own weakness.' The others, who trust the American, include the foul-mouthed Augustín; the pedantic, dignified Fernando; the unreliable gypsy Rafael; and the adoring Andrés. As they wait for the beginning of the bombardment there is a sense of impending disaster. A late spring snowstorm occurs inopportunely; a lack of men is felt; Jordan's unlucky predecessor in demolition jobs constantly crops up in their minds—Pilar tells how she smelled the 'smell of death' on him—; dignified and smoldering opposition occurs within the group; the guerilla leader El Sordo is attacked on the opposite hill and cannot be aided; Pablo throws Jordan's detonators and exploder box into the river and apologizes by bringing needed recruits whom he can later shoot so that his own band can escape on their horses; Andrés, sent by Jordan with a note to headquarters to say that the advance will almost certainly fail, is impeded by the bureaucracy and suspicion of the Communists; but Jordan retains his ability 'not to ignore but to despise whatever bad ending there could be.' Although the generals finally realize that the attack should be cancelled, it is too late to stop the enormous machinery that has been set in motion. Leaving the isolated mountain retreat, Jordan goes about his business like an artist and successfully blows up the bridge, but in the attempt to flee, his horse is shot, his leg is smashed, and he forces the others to go ahead and leave him. As he lies on the hillside almost delirious, restraining himself from suicide so that he may first shoot the leader of the pursuing Fascists, he thinks, 'I have fought for what I believed in for a year now. If we win here we will win everywhere. The world is a fine place and worth the fighting for and I hate very much to leave it . . . I wish there was some way to pass on what I've learned, though.'

Forayers, The; or, The Raid of the Dog Days, novel by Simms (q.v.), published in 1855. Its sequel in the Revolutionary Romances is *Eutaw* (q.v.).

In Carolina during 1781, Willie Sinclair, a rebel officer, loves Bertha Travis, whose weak-willed father falls into the power of the Tory soldier, Inglehardt. Willie's father is Colonel Sinclair, an ardent Tory, whose home is nevertheless raided by a band of Tory irregulars, led by rough, villainous Hell-Fire Dick. Willie arrives, drives off the raiders, then learns of a plan to attack the Travis plantation. He hides his men in ambush, and drives off Inglehardt, but old Travis and his son Henry are captured. Fearing further raids, Bertha and her mother hurry to safety.

FORBES, JAMES (1871–), New York dramatist, whose early farces were succeeded by the more important social comedies, *The Famous Mrs.Fair* (1919) and *The Endless Chain* (1922), concerned with 20th-century standards in New York City.

FORCE, PETER (1790–1868), born in New Jersey, after serving in the War of 1812, became a Washington printer, publishing the *National Journal* (1823–31), a Whig newspaper, and was drawn into politics, becoming mayor (1836–40). He is best remembered for his historical works including: *National Calendar and Annals of the United States* (1820-24, 1828–36), an annual compilation of historical and statistical information; *Tracts and Other Papers, Relating Principally to the Origin, Settlement, and Progress of Colonies in North America* (4 vols.,1836–46), reprinting scarce early pamphlets; and *American Archives* (9 vols.,1837–53), a supplementary collection of rare official and private manuscript material covering the period 1774–6. He planned to publish at least 36 volumes of the latter work covering the period from the 17th century to 1789, having received authorization from the State Department and Congress. When Secretary of State Marcy refused to sanction further publications, he was forced to quit and to sell his collection of 22,000 books and 40,000 pamphlets to the Library of Congress. His several special historical studies include the first refutation (1855) of the authenticity of the Mecklenburg Declaration.

FORD, HENRY (1863–), born on a farm near Detroit, Michigan, became a machinist's apprentice as a boy, built a gasoline automobile in 1892, and, after serving as an engineer for an automobile company, founded the Ford Motor Company (1903). In 1909 he built his first Model T Ford, whose low price is credited with inaugurating the gasoline age in America. His manufacturing system, built on the principle of mass production, in which each worker performs a single operation in the construction of the machines that move past him on a conveying belt, has been a primary force in creating modern methods of large-scale manufacture. Ford was also an innovator in setting a $5 minimum wage for a maximum eight-hour day (1914), and in devising a profit-sharing system for his employes. The company, with its allied corporations and sources of raw materials, is controlled by him and his son Edsel, and he is a leading advocate of the concept of rugged individualism, as well as an opponent of the banking interests of Wall Street. He changed to new types of design (1928) after building 15,000,000 cars of the Model T type. In 1915 he ingenuously fostered a 'Peace Ship' in a personal attempt to end the World War, and 'get the boys out of the trenches by Christmas.' Although his automobile revolutionized the standards of modern life and ended the era of quiet rural isolation, he is an ardent admirer of the former horse-and-buggy civilization, and, in attempts to preserve its relics, has purchased the Wayside Inn (q.v.) and brought to his birthplace, Greenfield Village, a conglomeration of historic buildings. With Samuel Crowther he wrote *My Life and Work* (1925), *Today and Tomorrow* (1926), and *Moving Forward* (1931).

FORD, PAUL LEICESTER (1865–1902), novelist, scholar, and bibliographer, at the age of 11 precociously began the work on his father's library of Americana, which resulted in his many scholarly editions, making available historical materials which had long been unknown. These include *The Writings of Thomas Jefferson* (10 vols., 1892–4) and *The True George Washington* (1896), a series of essays presenting the first President's human traits, but without detracting from his greatness. Ford's versatility and great energy caused him also to become a popular novelist, and his best-known works of fiction, *The Honorable Peter Stirling* (q.v.,1894) and *Janice Meredith* (q.v.,1899), reflect his knowledge of American life and history. While at the height of his activities, he died tragically at the hands of a disinherited brother.

WORTHINGTON CHAUNCEY FORD (1858–1941), another brother, has been associated with the Library of Congress, the Boston Public Library, and the Massachusetts Historical Society. His editorial work includes *Winnowings in American History* (15 vols.,1890–91), in collaboration with his brother, and a complete edition of George Washington's writings (12 vols.,1899), and a two-volume edition of *Letters of Henry Adams* (1930 and 1938).

Ford, The, novel by Mary Austin (q.v.), published in 1917.

This realistic account of economic inequality and social unrest is set in a central California valley, Tierra Longa, where Kenneth Brent, his sister Anne, Frank Rickart, and Virginia Burke grow up together on their parents' ranches. Steven Brent and his ambitious wife struggle to retain their heavily mortgaged ranch; Timothy Rickart is a wealthy proprietor and speculator, whose vast holdings make him admired and almost superstitiously feared throughout the region; and Cornelius Burke is Rickart's overseer. Their lives are transformed when Tierra Longa becomes the scene of an oil rush, manipulated secretly by Rickart, who alone profits by it, for Brent, Burke, and others lose their land. Mrs. Brent dies, and the others endure poverty and dependence on Rickart's bounty. Frank becomes a selfish sophisticate, spoiled by wealth. Kenneth is a clerk and later a lawyer in Rickart's San Francisco office, where he observes the heartless, unproductive methods of the capitalist. Anne is a shrewd trader in real estate, loyal to her father whom she reinstates on the ranch, and to Frank whom she loves in spite of his indifference. Virginia, after a brief unhappy marriage, becomes an impassioned social and æsthetic radical. Anne and her father organize a project to irrigate Tierra Longa, and, when Rickart attempts to control water rights for his own gain, Kenneth resigns to lead the fight of the organized ranchers. Rickart's interests are ousted, and Kenneth proceeds with a co-operative scheme. Meanwhile he has passed through an infatuation with Virginia, and, after her

elopement with André Trudeau, a radical playwright, he falls in love with Trudeau's gentle, capable sister Ellis, with whom he settles in Tierra Longa.

Fordham University, coeducational Catholic institution, situated in the Bronx borough of New York City, was established as St.John's College (1841), and rechartered (1907) under its present name.

Foregone Conclusion, A, novel by Howells (q.v.), published in 1875.

Florida Vervain and her invalid mother, American expatriates in Venice, meet Henry Ferris, a young American painter. He recommends Don Ippolito, an Italian priest, as Florida's tutor. Ippolito confesses his agnosticism to the girl, and she, in a spirit of friendship, advises him to give up the sacerdotal life and emigrate to America. He mistakes her interest for love, and confesses his own feelings for her. Ferris, believing Florida to be in love with Ippolito, leaves Venice. Ippolito dies of a broken heart, and on his deathbed reveals the truth about his relations with Florida, but Ferris is unconvinced, and roams through Europe for years before he returns to America to marry Florida.

Foreign Affairs (1922–), quarterly magazine, was founded as the successor of *The Journal of Race Development* and *The Journal of International Relations.* Its purpose is to encourage discussion of matters of international interest, historical, political, and economic, and it prints contributions by noted statesmen and scholars, both American and foreign.

Forest Hymn, A, blank verse poem by Bryant (q.v.), published in 1825, and reprinted as the title piece of a volume (1860).

Expressing a concept of nature akin to that of Wordsworth, Bryant proclaims, 'The groves were God's first temples,' where He raised shrines for beauty before the advent of human religion, and the flower still seems 'an emanation of the indwelling Life' which pervades all things. The poet communes in the forest with 'the perpetual work of thy creation, finished, yet renewed forever,' and prays that men, in meditation there, may

> . . . to the beautiful order of thy works
> Learn to conform the order of our lives.

Forest Rose, The; or, American Farmers, melodrama by Samuel Woodworth (q.v.), produced and published in 1825. It is distinguished for its comic Yankee character, Jonathan, and revived interest in this type.

FORESTER, pseudonym of Thomas Paine (q.v.).

FORESTER, FANNY, pseudonym of Emily C. Judson (q.v.).

FORESTER, FRANK, pseudonym of H.W. Herbert (q.v.).

Foresters, The, humorous allegory by Jeremy Belknap (q.v.).

Forgotten Man, term popularized by Franklin Roosevelt, which he first used (April 7, 1932) in an address during his presidential campaign. It referred to 'the unorganized but indispensible units of economic power . . . at the bottom of the economic pyramid.' The term had previously been used by W.H.Page (1897), and as the title of a book (1883) by W.G. Sumner.

FORREST, EDWIN (1806–72), tragedian noted for his Shakespearean roles and for his performances in Bird's *Metamora, The Gladiator,* and *The Broker of Bogota.* Owing to his failure to reimburse Bird fully, the two friends quarreled, and Forrest's unfortunate jealousy was again exhibited in his treatment of his English rival, Macready, leading to the Astor Place riots (q.v.,1849). Forrest's fear of rivalry caused him to forbid the publication of plays written for him, so that they exist either in manuscript or in modern scholarly editions.

FORREST, THOMAS, see *Disappointment, The.*

Forrester, MARIAN, heroine of *A Lost Lady* (q.v.).

Fort Barthold Indians, see *Arikara* and *Mandan.*

Fort Duquesne, see *Pittsburgh.*

Fort Necessity, see *French and Indian Wars.*

Fortune (1930–), monthly magazine of business, finance, and industry, founded by the publishers of *Time.* Materials for its lengthy articles are gathered by a large research staff and written by its associate editors, who have included Archibald MacLeish, John Chamberlain, and James Rorty. *Fortune's* approach to industry is inclined to be more technological than so-

ciological, although its careful surveys are enlivened by a more dignified use of the same technique that characterizes *Time* and *Life*. Approximately half of the articles deal with subjects on the fringes of business, such as café society, analyses of great cities, the raising of orchids, debutantes' budgets, and boys' preparatory schools.

Fortune Heights, play by John Dos Passos (q.v.).

Fortune's Foot-ball, novel by James Butler (q.v.).

Forty-niners, emigrants to California in the gold rush of 1849, which followed the discovery of gold by James Marshall (q.v., Jan. 1848). By June 1848, the local rush to the gold fields was in full course, and President Polk's message to Congress (Dec. 5), incorporating news of the possibilities of great wealth, inaugurated the international excitement. Ships were diverted from their usual routes to carry gold seekers from European countries, China, Australia, and the South Seas. Many Mexicans came by overland routes, and it is believed that a total of nearly 100,000 persons had entered the territory by the end of 1849. The thousands of emigrants from the eastern U.S. used three principal routes: by ship around Cape Horn; a combination of sea and land travel, crossing Central America by the Panama or Nicaragua route; and in wagon trains across the Plains. The common goal was the Mother Lode region (q.v.). Poe's poem 'Eldorado,' written in 1849, was suggested by the gold rush. Innumerable diaries, letters, and other writings of the period have been published, and the forty-niners figure frequently in literature. (See *Far West*.)

42nd Parallel, The, novel by Dos Passos, published in 1930. It is the first of the trilogy *U.S.A.* (collected 1938), including *1919* (q.v., 1932) and *The Big Money* (q.v., 1936). Interspersed in the narrative are brief biographies of Debs, Burbank, Haywood, Bryan, Minor Keith, Carnegie, Edison, Steinmetz, and La Follette. For critical discussion, see *Dos Passos*.

Fainy ('Mac') McCreary, imbued with social idealism by his uncle Tim O'Hara, works for a book distributing company, whose proprietor defrauds him. With a socialist friend he bums across the continent, works for an anarchist printer in San Francisco, edits an I.W.W. paper, marries, deserts his wife and children, and goes to Mexico with a revolutionist.

J.Ward Moorehouse, son of an Ohio station agent, becomes a shrewd, ruthless trader, marries and moves to Paris with Annabelle Strang, divorces her, and enters Pittsburgh journalism and advertising. He marries a steel heiress, Gertrude Stagle, and fosters a plan of 'co-operation' between capital and labor at the outbreak of the World War.

Eleanor Stoddard and Eveline Hutchins become interior decorators in Chicago; Eleanor alone continues the business, decorates the Moorehouse home, and becomes intimate with the capitalist.

Janey Williams, left friendless when her brother Joe enlists in the navy, has an unhappy affair with Jerry Burnham, who becomes a war correspondent, and gets a job with G.H.Barrow, a dishonest labor leader, through whom she meets Moorehouse. Becoming the latter's secretary, she accompanies him to Mexico in a vain attempt to 'buy' Mac; again in New York, she quarrels with her brother over U.S. participation in the war, which he denounces as the plot of munitions makers. She becomes intimate with Barrow, when Moorehouse concentrates his ardor on Eleanor. His wife is jealous until she feels her position assured when they go to Washington, where he aids in the impending entrance into the war.

Charley Anderson, a poor North Dakota boy, is attracted to socialism and the I.W.W., travels through the U.S., meets Ben Compton, brother of Janey's roommate Gladys, and learns of Moorehouse's big business propaganda. Disillusioned by the suppression of socialism, and craving action, he and his friend Doc Rogers join a French ambulance corps.

47 Workshop, see *Baker, George P.*

Forum, The (1886–), monthly magazine concerned with the discussion of contemporary problems. W.H.Page was its editor (1891–5), and the original policies have been continued by most of his successors, although the magazine was a quarterly (1902–8), and published fiction as well as articles (1925–36). Since 1923, H.G.Leach has been editor, and his policies have made *The Forum* also a magazine of controversy, actively debating national and international questions. In 1930 it absorbed *The Century*, and was called *Forum and Century* until it merged with *Current*

History to become *Current History and Forum* (1940).

FOSDICK, CHARLES AUSTEN (1842–1915), known by his pseudonym Harry Castlemon, wrote some 58 popular novels for boys, many of them based on his own youthful adventures or on experiences on gunboats during the Civil War. The works (1864–1904) were written in series: The Boy Trappers Series (hunting); The Sportsman's Club Series (sports); War, Afloat and Ashore Series (war); and Pony Express and Rocky Mountain Series (Western adventure).

FOSDICK, HARRY EMERSON (1878–), New York Baptist minister, ordained in 1904, has become a prominent Protestant liberal, through his teaching at the Union Theological Seminary, preaching at Riverside Church (New York City), and his writings, which include: *The Manhood of the Master* (1913), *Twelve Tests of Character* (1923), *The Modern Use of the Bible* (1924), *As I See Religion* (1932), and *The Hope of the World* (1933).

FOSTER, ABBY KELLEY (1811–87), Massachusetts leader in the struggles for Abolitionism and woman suffrage, who held so strongly to her beliefs that her home was sold when she refused to pay taxes until granted the right to vote.

FOSTER, HANNAH WEBSTER (1759–1840), wife of a Massachusetts clergyman, was the author of *The Coquette* (q.v., 1797), a popular sentimental novel, and *The Boarding School; or, Lessons of a Preceptress to her Pupils* (1798), a series of didactic lectures to young ladies.

FOSTER, STEPHEN COLLINS (1826–64), song writer and composer, was born near Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, and educated in local schools and at home. He early showed an interest in music, and although he received no formal training composed his first song, *Sadly to Mine Heart Appealing*, when he was 13. In 1846 he went to Cincinnati, and while working as a bookkeeper wrote a number of songs, making a present of them to a local publisher, who issued them without Foster's name as *Songs of the Sable Harmonists* (1848). This collection, which included 'Oh! Susannah' (q.v.), 'Uncle Ned,' and other popular pieces, was so successful that Foster gave up bookkeeping to make a business of composing songs. The works of the following years included some 175 songs, among them *Old Folks at Home* (Swanee River), *Old Black Joe*, *My Old Kentucky Home*, *Nelly Was a Lady*, *Camptown Races*, *Nelly Bly*, *Massa's In de Cold, Cold Ground*, *Old Dog Tray*, *Hard Times Come Again No More*, *Jeannie With the Light Brown Hair*, and *Come Where My Love Lies Dreaming*. Some of these were sentimental ballads of the conventional kind, although distinguished for melodic content, but most of them were 'Ethiopian songs' intended for performance by the popular Negro minstrel shows. In 1851 Foster made an agreement with E.P.Christy whereby his songs were to be first performed by Christy's Minstrels, and published with Christy's name as composer. The various editions of *Ethiopian Melodies*, in which many of Foster's songs appeared, bore the minstrel's name. Although these works capture the spirit of the Negroes so perfectly that they are often considered folk songs, Foster had never visited the South until he made a brief journey to New Orleans in 1852. His knowledge of the South and its people was derived mainly from minstrel shows and Negro camp meetings. His few instrumental compositions are seldom heard, but his songs have become popular classics, and he has been called 'one of the greatest *melodists* we have ever produced.' The tradition that he spent his life in dire poverty is untrue, for he was well paid for most of his early works, but an unhappy family life and an extremely sensitive temperament led him to become addicted to drink, and during his last years he was reduced to want, finally dying as the result of an accidental fall in his room in a Bowery lodging house.

FOSTER, WILLIAM Z., see *Communist Party*.

Fountain, The, play by Eugene O'Neill (q.v.), produced in 1925 and published in 1926.

Juan Ponce de Léon, in love with a married woman, Maria de Cordova, is rejected by her and leaves Spain to accompany Columbus on his second voyage to the New World. Twenty years later, as governor of Porto Rico, he is disillusioned, weary, and rapidly aging, when Beatriz, Maria's daughter, comes to live with him as his ward. She inspires him with youthful passion, and he seeks desperately to win her love by finding Cathay and the fountain of youth. He disregards the wise advice of the priest Luis, and to gain infor-

mation even tortures Nano, a captive Indian prince. Nano guides Juan's expedition to a fountain on the Florida coast, where the white men are killed by Nano's tribesmen. Juan is wounded, and left as dead. In the fountain he sees a vision of beauty and life everlasting, and hears the recurrent song: 'Love is a flower Forever blooming; Life is a fountain Forever leaping . . .' Rescued, he is brought to Cuba, and Beatriz comes to him with her lover, his nephew Juan. The older man seems at last to comprehend: 'One must accept, absorb, give back, become oneself a symbol!' He dies with an ecstatic vision of eternal youth, saying: 'I have found my Fountain! O Fountain of Eternity, take back this drop, my soul!'

Four Hundred, The, term applied to the leaders of fashionable society in the U.S. The number is supposed to have referred originally to the exclusive group invited to an elaborate entertainment of Mrs. William Astor in New York City (1892), when Ward McAllister cut her list of guests to 400 because her ballroom would accommodate no more.

Four Million, The, 25 short stories by W.S.Porter (q.v.), published in 1906 under his pseudonym O.Henry. A preface explains the title: 'Not very long ago some one invented the assertion that there were only "Four Hundred" people in New York City who were really worth noticing. But a wiser man has arisen—the census taker—and his larger estimate of human interest has been preferred.'

'The Gift of the Magi' is a tale of two young New Yorkers who sell their most valued possessions to buy Christmas gifts for each other. Unknown to her husband, the wife sells her beautiful long hair in order to purchase a chain for his fine watch, while he secretly sells the watch to buy her a valuable pair of combs. 'Of all who give and receive gifts, such as they are wisest. . . . They are the magi . . .' 'The Furnished Room' tells of a cheap boarding-house room haunted by the 'ghosts' of unfortunate residents. An attractive girl, penniless and despairing of her career as a singer, commits suicide in the room. A week later her former sweetheart rents it. His search for her has been unsuccessful, and, when he scents a trace of the mignonette she used to wear, but can find no clue of her presence, he too commits suicide.

Fourierism, communistic Utopian system for the reorganization of society, devised by Charles Fourier (1772–1837), French socialist author. He argued that the universe was so created that there is a harmonious connection between the organic and inorganic, between man and God, man and the world, and the world and the universe. Human passions are unchangeable, but, with due allowance for the variety of individual aptitudes and abilities, they may be brought to an equilibrium or harmony. For this purpose, Fourier wished to create phalansteries, social units of some 1,600 persons, who would divide their labor according to their natural inclinations and abilities. Thereby the artificial restraints of ordinary civilized life would be destroyed, while a systematic agricultural society would be created in which all could live as one family, and yet retain many individual rights. Albert Brisbane, Horace Greeley, and Parke Godwin were the principal figures in developing Fourierism in the U.S. The best-known colony was the North American Phalanx (q.v.). Brook Farm (q.v.) was for a time Fourierist, and a colony was founded in Texas by Fourier's chief disciple, Victor Considérant (q.v.). The movement had a temporary vogue among U.S. reform groups, but declined after the 1850's.

Fourteen Points, peace program formulated by Woodrow Wilson (q.v.) in an address before both houses of Congress (Jan. 8, 1918). This framework for peace discussions gave Wilson a position of moral leadership among the Allies, which was, however, weakened in the actual Treaty of Versailles (q.v.). The 14 points were: (1) 'open covenants openly arrived at'; (2) freedom of the seas; (3) removal of economic barriers; (4) reduction of armaments; (5) adjustment of colonial claims with concern for the inhabitants as well as the claimants; (6) evacuation and restoration of conquered Russian territories; (7) preservation of Belgian sovereignty; (8) settlement of the Alsace-Lorraine question; (9, 10, and 11) establishment of the Austro-Hungarian, Italian, and Balkan boundaries in conformance with nationalities; (12) freedom of the Dardanelles, and control by the Turks only of their own people; (13) establishment of an independent Poland with a seaport; (14) 'a general association of nations . . . under specific covenants.'

Fourteenth Amendment, Constitutional amendment (1868), which, with the Thirteenth (1865) and Fifteenth (1870), abolished slavery and guaranteed civil rights to Negroes. It decrees that no state may 'deprive any person of life, liberty, or property, without due process of law.' Since it makes the Supreme Court the final arbiter of state government, it has been interpreted to guarantee the civil rights of all persons, and even of corporations, following the dissenting opinion in the Slaughterhouse cases (1873) of Justice Field. Whittier's poem, 'Laus Deo!' expresses his feelings upon hearing the bells that proclaimed the passage of the Fourteenth Amendment.

Fourth of July (Independence Day), anniversary of the adoption of the Declaration of Independence (1776).

Fourth of March Speech, see *Calhoun.*

FOX, DIXON RYAN (1887–), professor of history at Columbia, in addition to his own books has been co-editor with A.M. Schlesinger of *A History of American Life* (12 vols.,1927), a social, economic, and cultural analysis.

FOX, GEORGE, see *Quakers.*

FOX, JOHN [WILLIAM],JR. (1863–1919), was born at Stony Point, Kentucky, and spent part of his youth among the mountaineers of the Cumberlands, whose way of life is the main subject of his fiction. As early as 1895, with the publication of *A Cumberland Vendetta,* he began his series of novelettes about stereotyped pure mountain girls, savage villains, and the grimly beautiful mountains. Such works include *'Hell-fer-sartain'* (1897), *The Kentuckians* (1898), and *A Mountain Europa* (1894). As a correspondent for *Harper's Weekly* during the Spanish-American War, Fox gained knowledge that was transferred into fiction in *Crittenden* (1900), the story of a Southerner whose patriotism for the Union is aroused by a foreign war. Although the author continued to use the material of his early novelettes, and was still steeped in sentiment, his greatest recognition came with his later novels, *The Little Shepherd of Kingdom Come* (q.v., 1902) and *The Trail of the Lonesome Pine* (q.v.,1908). *Erskine Dale, Pioneer* (1920) is a romance of Kentucky and Virginia during the Revolution.

FOX, MARGARET (1836–93), with her sisters Katherine and Leah conducted a sensational series of spiritualistic seances, and, although they were later discredited, inaugurated the vogue of spiritualism in the U.S. Her affair with the Arctic explorer Kane was the subject of an anonymous book, *The Love-Life of Doctor Kane* (1856).

Fox Indians, agricultural Algonquian tribe of the Great Lakes region, were allied with the Sauk, and aided the British in the Revolution and the War of 1812.

Francesca da Rimini, title of plays by G.H.Boker and F.M.Crawford (qq.v.).

FRANCIS, CONVERS (1795–1863), Unitarian minister at Watertown, Massachusetts (1813–36), professor at Harvard Divinity School (1842–63), and member of the Transcendental Club. He influenced the Transcendentalist movement mainly through his teaching of German idealistic philosophy. Lydia M. Child was his sister.

Franciscan Order, founded (1208) by St.Francis of Assisi, who gathered a group of disciples bent on imitating the public life of Christ, ministering to the poor and sick, converting the heathen, and vowing absolute poverty. In North America, Franciscan friars founded missions in Florida (1573ff.), became pioneers of Roman Catholicism throughout the South, and were particularly active in California, where Serra (q.v.), after serving in Mexico with Palou (q.v.), founded a series of missions (1769ff.). The Capuchins (q.v.) are a branch of the Franciscans.

FRANCO, HARRY, pseudonym of C.F. Briggs (q.v.).

FRANK, WALDO [DAVID] (1889–), New Jersey-born novelist and critic, graduated from Yale (1911), spent some time abroad, and in 1916–17 was a founder and editor of *The Seven Arts* (q.v.). His novels, marked by mysticism, poetic style, and introspective analysis, include: *The Unwelcome Man* (1917), the story of a sensitive, unloved child; *The Dark Mother* (1920); *Rahab* (1922), the story of a woman's descent to prostitution, while ever striving after God and spiritual truth; *City Block* (1922); *Holiday* (1923), concerned with race problems in the South; *Chalk Face* (1924), a fantastic horror tale; *The Death and Birth of David Markand* (1934), about an American businessman who deserts his commonplace life to seek faith and understanding; and *The Bridegroom Cometh* (1939), a mystical Marxist novel, concerned with a woman who discovers a re-

ligious faith in her work for social reform. Frank, who calls himself a 'philosophical social revolutionary,' is also noted for his contributions to periodicals, his lectures, and his translations from the French. Besides an expressionistic play, *New Year's Eve* (1929), he has written essays and social studies, including: *Our America* (1919), an analysis of U.S. society; *Salvos* (1924), essays and sketches; *Virgin Spain* (1926), an impressionistic travel account; *The Re-Discovery of America* (1928), an analysis of the national background and contemporary trends; *America Hispaña* (1931), a panorama of South American history and ideals; *Dawn in Russia* (1932), about his travels in Russia, and the mystical idealism he found there; *In the American Jungle* (1937), essays and sketches on industrial America; and *Chart for Rough Water* (1940), analyzing the 'humiliation' of modern Europe, and outlining a plan for idealistic leadership by the Americas in a post-war world.

Frank Leslie's Popular Monthly (1876–1906), popular miscellany of fiction and articles, was founded by Frank Leslie (q.v.). Although it passed out of the hands of his family (1904), it was continued with similar policies as *Leslie's Monthly Magazine* until 1906, when it was sold and became *The American Magazine* (q.v.).

FRANKFURTER, Felix (1882–), born in Austria, was brought to the U.S. (1894), and after graduation from Harvard Law School (1906) became a professor there (1914–39). During the World War he held such offices as assistant to the secretary of war, assistant to the secretary of labor, and chairman of the War Labor Policies Board. An important liberal adviser to the New Deal administration of Franklin Roosevelt, he was appointed to the U.S. Supreme Court (1939). His writings include: *The Case of Sacco and Vanzetti* (1927); *The Business of the Supreme Court* (1928), in collaboration with J.M. Landis; and *The Public and Its Government* (1930). His 'occasional papers' (1913–38) were edited as *Law and Politics* (1939).

Frankie and Johnny, folk ballad of uncertain origin, first known in the middle of the 19th century and first printed in 1912. It is believed that the ballad describes the actual murder of a St. Louis Negro (Johnny) by his mistress, a prostitute (Frankie). Early versions called the lovers Frankie and Albert, and there are some 300 variants of the music and verses. A play of this title, based on the ballad, was written in 1930 by John Huston.

FRANKLIN, Benjamin (1706–90), born in Boston, was a grandson of Peter Folger. At the age of 10 he began to work with his father, a tallow chandler and soap boiler, and from 12 to 17 was apprenticed to his half-brother, James Franklin, to whose *New England Courant* he contributed his Do-Good Papers (q.v., 1722). He had little formal education, but read widely, being particularly influenced by Locke, Shaftesbury, Xenophon, the *Spectator*, and some of Cotton Mather's works. After a quarrel with his brother (1723), he ran off to Philadelphia, and entered the printing shop of Samuel Keimer. Under the patronage of Governor Keith, he was sent to England to buy equipment for his own press, but, failing to receive the necessary money, he worked in a London printing house. While abroad he wrote *A Dissertation on Liberty and Necessity, Pleasure and Pain* (1725) to refute Wollaston's *Religion of Nature Delineated*, which he had set up in type. He returned to Philadelphia (1726), and four years later had his own press, from which he issued *The Pennsylvania Gazette* (q.v., 1729–66), contributing such pieces as the letters of Anthony Afterwit and Alice Addertongue, and 'A Witch Trial at Mount Holly.' He also wrote, at this time, the Busybody Papers (q.v.) and 'Dialogues between Philocles and Horatio' (1730). He made a common-law union (1730) with Deborah Read, daughter of his first landlady, by whom he had two children. He was also the father of two illegitimate children. By frugality, industry, and native shrewdness he established a successful business. His *Poor Richard's Almanack* (q.v., 1733–58) was immediately popular, and his personal prestige was enhanced by his association with the Junto Club (q.v.), a debating society that he had founded. In his pragmatic way, he devised at 22 a 'religion' for the attainment of useful virtues, holding firmly to the belief that the most acceptable service to God is doing good to men. When he had kept his shop so well that it kept him, he became a leader in philanthropic, scientific, and political affairs. He initiated projects for establishing city police, for paving, cleaning, and lighting the streets, and for the first circulating library. He also founded the American Philosophical Society, a city hospital, and

an Academy for the Education of Youth, which was the forerunner of the University of Pennsylvania. For a time he published the second monthly magazine issued in America, *The General Magazine* (q.v.,1741), and some of his diverse interests are reflected in *A Proposal for Promoting Useful Knowledge* (1743), *Plain Truth, or Serious Considerations on the Present State of the City of Philadelphia* (1747), and *Proposals Relating to the Education of Youth in Pensilvania* (1749). He was interested in every sort of natural phenomenon, and made many scientific experiments, including his famous kite experiment to show the identity of lightning and electricity (reported in *Experiments and Observations on Electricity*, 1751–4). He had already invented the Franklin Stove (described in his *Account of the New Invented Pennsylvania Fire Place*, 1744), as well as a new kind of clock. After holding minor public offices, he was made deputy postmaster-general for the colonies (1753–74), and was Pennsylvania's representative at the Albany Congress (q.v., 1754), where his 'Plan of Union' was seriously considered. In 1757 he was sent to England, to attempt to secure better governmental conditions for the colony, and he remained abroad, with brief interruptions, until 1775. There he was intimate with Burke, Hume, Adam Smith, Chatham, and other thinkers; received degrees from three British universities; continued his scientific interests; wrote a pamphlet that anticipated the Malthusian theory of population; and published *An Historical Review of the Constitution and Government of Pennsylvania* (1759) and an influential argument for the retention of Canada, *The Interest of Great Britain Considered with Regard to Her Colonies* (1760). He protested against the Stamp Act, and in his examination before the House of Commons (1766) increased his prestige by his lucid replies, which showed that the tax was contrary to custom. When Georgia, New Jersey, and Massachusetts joined Pennsylvania in designating him as their agent, Franklin's position assumed virtually ambassadorial importance. Meanwhile he published his *Cool Thoughts on the Present Situation of our Public Affairs* (1764) and a *Preface to the Speech of Joseph Galloway* (1764), asking for the replacement of the proprietary government of Pennsylvania by a royal charter. He demanded no colonial rights except those already possessed by all British subjects, and his admiration for England lessened in proportion to his increasing loyalty to the colonies. He strongly opposed the Townshend Acts, and expressed his feeling in two satires, the 'Edict by the King of Prussia' (q.v.,1773) and 'Rules by which a Great Empire may be reduced to a Small one' (q.v.,1773). Because of his connection with the affair of the Hutchinson Letters (q.v., 1772), he was dismissed from his postal position. Feeling that Lord North was driving the colonies into rebellion, he returned to America to serve in the Continental Congress, become postmaster-general, and aid in drafting the Declaration of Independence, after which he was sent to France to negotiate a treaty. Enthusiastically welcomed by the French as a witty and benign backwoods sage, a sort of Rousseauistic Socrates who was going to restore the Golden Age, he succeeded in securing a treaty of commerce and defensive alliance (Feb. 1778), after Burgoyne's surrender inspired confidence in America's prospects. In this year he was appointed plenipotentiary to the French court, obtained repeated loans from France, and negotiated commercial treaties with Sweden and Prussia. He also found time for scientific matters, for a frivolous correspondence with Mme Helvetius and Mme Brillon, and for amusing his friends by such urbane bagatelles from his private press at Passy as *The Ephemera* (1778), *The Morals of Chess* (1779), *The Whistle* (1779), and *The Dialogue between Franklin and the Gout* (1780). He was a member of the commission that signed the Treaty of Paris (q.v.,1783), and in 1785 returned home. After serving three years as president of the executive council of Pennsylvania, he became a member of the Federal Constitutional Convention, in which capacity he signed the Constitution, although he did not entirely approve it. His last public act was the signature of a memorial to Congress for the abolition of slavery, and less than a month before his death he wrote an ironic letter 'On the Slave Trade' to *The Federal Gazette*, as brilliant as the similar 'Edict by the King of Prussia,' which he had composed 17 years before. His *Autobiography*, commenced in 1771, was never finished, and breaks off abruptly during the account of the year 1757, with a few random comments on the years 1757–9. It was published in England, France, and Germany before the American edition of

1818, but the complete work did not appear in English until 1867. This account is the epitome of Franklin's spirit. In it one sees him as a typical though great example of 18th-century enlightenment, a Yankee-Puritan who could agree with Rousseau and Voltaire, and use the language of Defoe and Addison with a genial homely twang. His style, perfectly adapted to the ends to which he devoted it, is lucid, precise, and salty, revealing both his mental and moral temper. His mind was pragmatic, and, though his greatest enthusiasm was reserved for science, he had a mellow tolerance for all types of thought. With candor and common sense, he relished the various turns in his life and took them easily, understanding and sharing the Gallic spirit while remaining pungently American.

FRANKLIN, JAMES (1697–1735), Boston printer, issued *The Boston Gazette* (q.v.) from his press (1719–21), until the contract was taken from him to be given to another printer. He then founded *The New England Courant* (q.v.,1721–6), a Yankee version of the *Spectator*, which, after his imprisonment for libelous remarks, appeared (1723–6) under the name of his half-brother and apprentice, Benjamin Franklin. In 1726 he moved to Rhode Island, bringing with him the first press to be used in that colony, and printing on it *The Rhode Island Almanack* and the *Rhode Island Gazette* (1732–3). While associated with the *Courant*, he was the founder of the Hell-Fire Club (q.v.). His son, James,Jr., founded the *Newport Mercury* (q.v.).

FRANKLIN, WILLIAM (1730?–1813), son of Benjamin Franklin, grew up in Philadelphia, where he was comptroller of the general post office and clerk of the provincial assembly until 1757, when he went to England as his father's companion and secretary. He was royal governor of New Jersey (1763–76), but his Tory attitude led to his arrest and imprisonment during the Revolution, and after 1782 he lived in England. His father's *Autobiography* was written for his benefit.

WILLIAM TEMPLE FRANKLIN (1760–1823), his son, was Benjamin Franklin's secretary in later years, and edited his works.

Franklin, STATE OF, was organized in 1784 as the first American state on the western side of the Alleghenies, and existed for about four years. Situated in the northeastern counties of the present Tennessee, it consisted of land ceded by North Carolina to the federal government, which neither protected nor governed it. It was settled mainly by emigrants from Virginia and North Carolina, and constituted a well-planned land seizure by an openly self-seeking government. Congress refused to recognize the state, which with the expiration of its officials' terms passed out of independent existence, to be admitted to statehood only in 1796 as a part of Tennessee. John Sevier, governor of Franklin, was the first governor of Tennessee.

Franklin Evans, temperance tract by Whitman (q.v.).

Fraunces Tavern, New York City inn, was established in 1762 by the Negro, Samuel Fraunces, who later became Washington's steward. It was celebrated as a meeting place of the Sons of Liberty before the Revolution, of British officers during their occupation of the city, and of patriots after the British evacuation. Washington made his farewell speech to his officers here (1783). The building still stands and is used as a restaurant.

FRAZEE, JOHN (1790–1852), New York sculptor, whose works include portrait busts of Webster and Marshall. His marble bust of John Wells in St. Paul's Church is called the first work of its kind by an American.

FRÉCHETTE, LOUIS HONORÉ (1839–1908), French-Canadian author, was acknowledged in his time to be the leading poet of Quebec. His works include: *Les Oiseaux de neige* (1880); *La Légende d'un peuple* (1887); and *La Noël au Canada* (1900), a prose idyll. He married a sister of Howells.

FREDERIC, HAROLD (1856–98), New York author, at 19 was a reporter on the *Utica Observer* and three years later became its editor. He was later editor of the *Albany Evening Journal* and London correspondent of *The New York Times*. His first novel, *Seth's Brother's Wife* (1887), is a realistic picture of New York farm life, local politics, and the less glamorous aspects of journalism. The *Lawton Girl* (1890) is the story of a girl who tries to live down a tarnished reputation in her native New York town. After a fantasy, *The Return of the O'Mahoney* (1892), he

wrote *The Copperhead* (1893), his first significant work, depicting the intolerant attacks upon Abner Beach, a New York farmer who opposes Abolitionism when this movement is sweeping the North during the Civil War. *The Damnation of Theron Ware* (q.v., 1896), a realistic story of the fall of a Methodist minister, was his most popular work. He also wrote a historical novel, *In the Valley* (1890), dealing with the Revolution, and *Marsena and Other Stories* (1894), about the Civil War. *March Hares* (1896), *Gloria Mundi* (1898), and *The Market Place* (1899) are romantic stories based on his knowledge of English life.

Free Enquirer, see *New-Harmony Gazette.*

Free Religious Association, founded (1865) by liberal religious thinkers as a nonsectarian faith for people of intelligence, was a communion of various religions with no fetters of church, creed, or nation. Its supporters included O.B. Frothingham, R.D.Owen, T.W.Higginson, Alcott, and Emerson. *The Index* (q.v., 1870–86) was an affiliated magazine.

Free Silver, term applied to the policy of free coinage of silver, recurrently proposed in the U.S. since the Civil War. The political ascendancy of the agricultural and mining states of the West, supported by the South during the hard times of the 1880's, caused the passage of the Sherman Silver Purchase Act (1890), replacing the Bland-Allison Act (1877) and increasing the circulation of coined silver. Generally favored by debtor classes, 'free silver' was the main plank in the platform of Bryan (q.v.) in his presidential campaigns of 1896 and 1900. The more recent free-silver campaigns have been unsuccessful.

Free Soil, see *Free-Soil Party.*

Free verse (*vers libre*), poetry without a fixed metrical pattern, depending for rhythm primarily upon cadence. It may be found in such earlier American authors as Whitman, Emily Dickinson, Stephen Crane, and others, but is best known in its common employment since the World War by many poets, notably the Imagists (q.v.), T.S.Eliot, MacLeish, Conrad Aiken, and Gertrude Stein.

Freedmen's Bureau, federal agency established during the Reconstruction (q.v.), to aid and protect Southern Negroes. The bureau existed until 1872, but after the first years was little more than a Republican political machine.

Freedom of Will, treatise by Jonathan Edwards (q.v.), published in 1754. The full title is: *A Careful and Strict Enquiry into the Modern Prevailing Notion, of that Freedom of Will which is supposed to be Essential to Moral Agency, Vertue and Vice, Reward and Punishment, Praise and Blame.* Written to uphold the doctrine of necessity against Arminianism (q.v.), the work was frequently translated and reprinted, became a primary document in Calvinistic theology, and won Edwards eminence among American philosophers.

Defining the will as 'that by which the mind chooses anything,' and freedom or liberty as 'the power, opportunity, or advantage, that any one has to do as he pleases, or conducting in any respect, according to his pleasure,' the author bases his case for predestined necessity on the postulate that every event must have a cause. 'That whatsoever begins to be which before was not, must have a Cause why it then begins to exist, seems to be the first dictate of the common and natural sense which God hath implanted in the minds of all mankind . . .' Since volitions are events, they must have causes: 'It is that motive, which, as it stands in the view of the mind, is the strongest, that determines the Will.' Human motives impel us in the direction of what seems most agreeable, and this direction is determined entirely without independent activity on the part of the individual will. There is, then, no liberty of choice; liberty consists in the ability to act as one chooses. Having established this fundamental position, the author proceeds to refute the fallacies of 'the Arminian notion of Liberty of Will,' to answer possible objections, and to assert that his necessitarian position is the incontrovertible and fundamental basis of Calvinistic doctrine.

FREEMAN, DOUGLAS SOUTHALL (1886–), editor of the Richmond *News Leader* (1915–), professor of journalism at Columbia, and author of *R.E.Lee* (4 vols., 1934–5), a biography that won the Pulitzer Prize, and *The South to Posterity* (1939), a collection of lectures on the Confederacy.

FREEMAN, JOSEPH (1897–), proletarian author, whose works include: *The Soviet Worker* (1932); *Voices of October: Soviet Literature and Art* (1930); a critical intro-

duction to *Proletarian Literature in the United States* (1935), an anthology; and *An American Testament: A Narrative of Rebels and Romantics* (1936), an autobiographical account of his intellectual development.

FREEMAN, Mary E[leanor] Wilkins (1852–1930), was born in Randolph, Massachusetts, and spent most of her life there until her marriage in 1902, when she moved to New Jersey. The scenes she knew in eastern Massachusetts form the background for most of her tales of New England rural life. Her early work is a dispassionate observation of local character and constitutes an important contribution to the local-color school by its study of repressed people in a decaying social system and its capturing of their spirit through their dialect. Her first collections of tales, *A Humble Romance* (q.v.,1887) and *A New England Nun* (q.v.,1891), established her reputation and contain her finest work. The novels, *Jane Field* (1893), *Pembroke* (1894), and *Jerome, A Poor Man* (q.v., 1897), show that her forte was the short tale revealing a dominant characteristic, and not the novel that demands a synthesis of many characters. Mrs.Freeman was also the author of works in other forms, including: *Giles Corey, Yeoman* (1893), a play; *The Heart's Highway* (1900), a historical novel; *The Portion of Labor* (1901), a social novel; and *The Wind in the Rose Bush* (1903), stories of the supernatural. Her later novels were less important, but *Edgewater People* (1918) is a collection of short stories of the type and nearly of the calibre of her early work.

Freeman, The (1920–24, 1930–31), weekly magazine of political and æsthetic criticism, edited with a liberal point of view, was founded by Van Wyck Brooks, A.J.Nock, and others. Financial failure caused its suspension, but it was revived as *The New Freeman* under the editorship of Suzanne LaFollette.

Freeman's Oath, see *Oath of a Free-man.*

Freemasonry, doctrine of the Free and Accepted Masons, a secret fraternity that claims great antiquity. Consolidated in England (1717) the order was preceded by organizations that are traced to itinerant 14th-century stone workers, and these in turn were probably based on long-established customs and secret oaths. The modern Free Masons have an intricate system of symbolic ritual, but, despite the similar beliefs and practices of the order in many lands, there is no international organization, and each group teaches obedience to the laws of its own country. Higher degrees include those of the Knights Templar and the Scottish Rite Masons, while the Shriners (q.v.) are an affiliated social group, and there are many separate orders that imitate Masonic forms and ritual. Freemasonry came to the American colonies prior to the formation of the first 'regular' lodge at Boston (1733), and after the Revolution separate grand lodges were created, each confining itself to the boundaries of its own state. Political activity and sectarianism are prohibited, among other special American doctrines, but the Catholic Church is strongly opposed to the order. A general spread of feeling against secret fraternities, and particularly against the Free Masons, resulted in the rise of the Anti-Masonic Party (q.v.). Among early American Masons were Washington, Franklin, and Paul Revere. Joseph Smith and Sidney Rigdon were Masons, and the doctrine is said to have influenced Mormon ritual. There are now more than 3,000,000 Masons in the U.S.

Free-Soil Party, political organization that originated (1847–8) in opposition to the extension of slavery to territories acquired by the Mexican War. The party was composed of Barnburners (until 1850), antislavery or 'conscience' Whigs, and members of the former Liberty party. It nominated VanBuren for the presidency and C.F.Adams for the vice presidency (1848). In 1854 it was in turn absorbed by the Republican party.

FRÉMONT, John Charles (1813–90), born in Georgia, made several explorations in the Rocky Mountains and Far West, and first achieved fame when, with Kit Carson as guide, he led an expedition across the Sierra Nevada to California (1843–4). In 1845 he returned to California, where he supported the independent American faction during the Bear Flag rebellion, and was appointed governor by Commodore Stockton. When Frémont refused to recognize the authority of Kearny, who had been sent to organize the local government, he was found guilty of mutiny, and resigned after being saved by order of President Polk. During the gold

rush he became extremely wealthy, and he was one of the first two senators from California. In 1856 he was the first presidential candidate of the Republican party, and during the Civil War he held important but brief commands. His fortune was lost (1870) when he attempted to construct a transcontinental railroad. He wrote a *Report of the Exploring Expedition to the Rocky Mountains . . . and to Oregon and North California . . .* (1845) and *Memories of My Life* (1887).

JESSIE BENTON FRÉMONT (1824–1902), his wife, a daughter of T.H.Benton, assisted him with his writings and was the author of several books, including the autobiographical *Story of the Guard* (1863), about the Civil War; *A Year of American Travel* (1878), about California; and *Far West Sketches* (1898).

FRENCH, ALICE (1850–1934), born in Massachusetts, lived most of her life in Arkansas and Iowa, which provided the settings for her fiction written under the pseudonym Octave Thanet. A conventional figure in the local-color movement, she added nothing to its traditions except a certain interest in labor problems in the West. She is best known for her short stories, which are collected in such volumes as *Stories of a Western Town* (1893), *A Captured Dream, and Other Stories* (1897), and *Stories that End Well* (1911). Among her novels are *Knitters in the Sun* (1887), *Expiation* (1890), *The Missionary Sheriff* (1897), *The Man of the Hour* (1905), and *A Step on the Stair* (1913).

FRENCH, DANIEL CHESTER (1850–1931), New Hampshire sculptor, was reared at Concord, where at the age of 24 he created his famous statue, *The Minute Man.* After study with J.Q.A.Ward and William Rimmer, and a trip to Paris (1886), he produced many monuments. Even such important works as *Death and the Young Sculptor* and the Melvin memorial, *Mourning Victory,* show obvious literary symbolism and structurally weak, indefinite surfaces. His most impressive and dignified works are the marble *Memory* in the Metropolitan Museum, New York, the equestrian statue of *Washington* (1893), and the great statue of the seated Lincoln in the *Lincoln Memorial* at Washington,D.C. (1922–31).

French and Indian Wars, name applied to the conflicts over Canada and the West involved in the territorial rivalry of France and Great Britain, and related to their larger imperial struggles abroad. King William's War (1690–97), roughly the American counterpart of the War of the Grand Alliance, had as its most important result the capture of Port Royal (Annapolis, Nova Scotia) by Sir William Phips and his Massachusetts troops, who failed in their campaign against Quebec. The Treaty of Ryswick (1697) restored all captured towns and districts. During Queen Anne's War (1701–13), which corresponded to the War of the Spanish Succession, several New England towns were sacked, but, by the Peace of Utrecht (1713), Acadia (q.v.), Newfoundland, St.Kitts, and the Hudson's Bay territory were given to England. King George's War (1745–8), part of the War of Jenkins's Ear and the War of the Austrian Succession, was signalized by Pepperell's capture of Louisburg, which was restored to France by the Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle (1748). Rivalry now centered about the Ohio Valley, which was captured by the British during the French and Indian War (1754–60), the American counterpart of the Seven Years' War. Washington defeated the French at Fort Necessity (Great Meadows, 1754), but was shortly forced to surrender, and Braddock was unsuccessful (1755) in his attempt to take the neighboring Fort Duquesne (Pittsburgh). In the ensuing battles, Sir William Johnson obtained the assistance of the Iroquois, Amherst captured Louisburg (1758) and Ticonderoga (1759), and Fort Duquesne was seized by the British (1758). Montcalm (q.v.), the leading French general, had captured Fort Ontario (Oswego) and Fort William Henry (Lake George) in 1757, and was pitted against Wolfe (q.v.) in the battle for Quebec at the Plains of Abraham (1759). Both generals died in action, but the British gained Quebec and in 1760 took Montreal. In the Treaty of Paris (1763), France ceded her colonial empire in the St.Lawrence Valley, as well as all territory west to the Mississippi. The best-known historical works on the wars are those of Parkman, and Cooper wrote many romances concerned with these events.

French Libertine, The, see *Richelieu.*

FRENEAU, PHILIP [MORIN] (1752–1832), born in New York of Huguenot ancestry, was educated privately and at the College of New Jersey (Princeton). There he was

Frescoes for Mr.Rockefeller's City

a classmate of Madison and Brackenridge, and with the latter wrote the poem, *The Rising Glory of America*, which was read at the graduation exercises (1771) and published the following year. While at college he also wrote 'The Power of Fancy' and other poems. After assisting Brackenridge in teaching in Maryland (1772), at the outbreak of the Revolution he wrote eight biting satirical poems, which included *General Gage's Soliloquy* (1775) and *General Gage's Confession* (1775). He discovered poetry to be a poor profession, however, and turned to a secretaryship in the home of a prominent planter on the island of Santa Cruz in the West Indies, where he wrote 'The Beauties of Santa Cruz,' 'The Jamaica Funeral,' and 'The House of Night' (qq.v.), romantic poems inspired by the lush tropical atmosphere. On his voyage home (June 1778) he was captured by the British, but was soon set free. After a short stay at home, he set out again for the West Indies (1780), only to be captured, and after a questionable trial, remanded to the British prison-ship *Scorpion* in New York harbor. After a period of brutal treatment and starvation, he was exchanged as a prisoner of war (July 1780). His experiences inspired the poem, *The British Prison Ship* (q.v.,1781). During the next three years he was employed in the Philadelphia post office, and in his leisure poured forth a steady stream of satirical poetry that confirmed his title of 'the poet of the American Revolution.' In 1784 he sailed as master of a brig bound for Jamaica, and during the following six years led a stormy life on the Atlantic and Caribbean. Meanwhile he wrote poems of life at sea, and published his first collection, *Poems* (1786), as well as a volume of *Miscellaneous Works* (1788). After his marriage in 1790 he abandoned the sea to become editor of the New York *Daily Advertiser*, and later, after an appointment by Jefferson as translating clerk of the State Department, on October 31, 1791, began the publication of his *National Gazette*, a sparkling Jeffersonian paper that particularly attacked Hamilton. During the two years of his editorship and his government appointment, Freneau was accused by Hamilton of being Jefferson's anti-Federalist mouthpiece, and even Washington called him 'that rascal Freneau.' He published a volume of *Poems Written between the Years* 1768 *and* 1794 (1795), and after a brief editorship of the *Jersey Chronicle* edited the New York *Time-Piece* (1797–9). On retiring to his plantation at Mount Pleasant, he issued a series of essays entitled *Letters on Various Interesting and Important Subjects* (1799). His last years were spent in New Jersey, although from 1803 to 1807 he was driven by poverty to serve again as a master of coast-line freighters. In 1809 he published a two-volume edition of his collected poems, and in a final edition of 1815 included the patriotic and satirical poems prompted by the War of 1812. A scholarly edition of his poems was edited by F.L. Pattee (3 vols.,1902–7), and a selection of his prose, edited by H.H.Clark as *The Philosopher of the Forest*, appeared in 1939. Among his best-known short poems of freedom are 'Libera Nos, Domine' (q.v.), the ode 'God Save the Rights of Man,' 'To the Memory of the Brave Americans,' 'On the Memorable Victory of John Paul Jones,' and 'To My Book,' while among his noteworthy poems of romantic fancy are 'The Indian Burying Ground,' 'The Wild Honey Suckle,' 'The Indian Student' (qq.v.), 'On a Honey Bee,' 'On Retirement,' and 'To a Caty-did.'

Frescoes for Mr.Rockefeller's City, poems in free verse by Archibald MacLeish (q.v.), published in 1933. In six 'panels' for the walls of Rockefeller Center in New York City, from which the murals of Diego Rivera had been removed, the poet celebrates the American land and its people, contrasting the vigorous laboring millions with the handful of capitalists ('It was all prices to them: they never looked at it: why should they look at the land').

'Landscape as a Nude' describes the American natural environment ('She has brown breasts and the mouth of no other country'). 'Wildwest' tells of the defeat of the Indians before the drive of the railroad builders. 'Burying Ground by the Ties' is the plaint of the immigrant laborers who built the tracks ('Not for this did we come out—to be lying here Nameless under the ties in the clay cuts'). 'Oil Painting of the Artist as the Artist' satirizes expatriates and escapists. 'Empire Builders' contrasts the manipulations of financiers with the constructive realities of the Lewis and Clark expedition. 'Background with Revolutionaries,' although satirizing doctrinaire radicals, expresses the poet's

faith that the land and the people will be able to adjust social errors and correct abuses ('She's a tough land under the oak-trees mister: It may be she can change the word in the book . . .').

FRICK, HENRY CLAY (1849–1919), Pennsylvania capitalist, was associated at various times in his career with Mellon, Carnegie, Morgan, and Rockefeller, and by purchase and merger organized one of the leading coke and steel manufacturing combinations of the world. His aggressive attitude toward organized labor was largely responsible for the Homestead Strike (q.v.,1892). His great art collection, together with a reference library formed by his daughter in their New York home, has been given to the public with a $15,000,000 endowment.

Friend of Peace, see *Worcester, Noah.*

Friendly Club, literary group of Hartford (*c.*1785–1807), whose members included John Trumbull, Timothy Dwight, Joel Barlow, Richard Alsop, and E.H.Smith, the Connecticut Wits (q.v.) who contributed to *The Anarchiad* and *The Echo* (qq.v.,1785–1807).

Friendly Club of New York, organized some time after 1789 as an outgrowth of the Philological Society (q.v.). It was strongly patriotic, and, aiming to further the literature of the new nation, sponsored *The Monthly Magazine and American Review* (q.v.). Members included James Kent, William Dunlap, C.B.Brown, Elihu H. Smith, and Richard Alsop.

Friends, RELIGIOUS SOCIETY OF, see *Quakers.*

Friendship Village, 20 sentimental stories in the local-color tradition, by Zona Gale (q.v.), published in 1908. The narrator is a woman who moves from a large city to a Midwestern village, which she depicts as representative of 'The little real home towns, their kindly, brooding companionship, their doors to an efficiency as intimate as that of fairy fingers.'

'The Debut' describes the busy intrigue when Mrs.Ricker, who takes in washing, invites her patrons to a 'coming out reception' for her daughter Emma Ella, 30 years old and engaged to be married. Mrs. Postmaster Sykes deliberately holds a reception the same evening; Emma Ella does not appear, having eloped; but all ends well when Mrs.Sykes brings her guests to join the other party. 'The Grandma Ladies' is a Christmas story about Calliope Marsh, who cannot afford material gifts, but entertains the 'grandma ladies' of the Old Ladies Home, whom she gratifies by bringing a little child to join the celebration. 'The Tea Party' tells of Mrs.Merriman, two years a widow, who will not appear at parties because she wishes to wear out her mourning costume before buying a new 'best' dress. She solves her problem by appearing after a tea party has begun, and accepting refreshment apart from the other guests.

Fringed Gentian, see *To the Fringed Gentian.*

FROHMAN, CHARLES (1860–1915), New York theatrical manager, head of the theatrical trust of the 1890's, extended his operations to London after 1897 and created a system of exchange productions between the two cities, bringing to New York the works of Barrie, Galsworthy, Shaw, and Granville Barker.

DANIEL FROHMAN (1851–1941), his brother, was also famous as an impresario, and was the author of *Memories of a Manager* (1911), *Daniel Frohman Presents* (1935), and *Encore* (1937).

From Death to Morning, short stories by Thomas Wolfe (q.v.).

Front Page, The, play by Ben Hecht and Charles MacArthur (qq.v.).

FRONTENAC, LOUIS DE BUADE, *Comte de* (1620–98), French governor of New France (1672–82, 1689–98), whose attempts to obtain political independence for Canada were restrained by the home government. He was frequently in conflict with the sovereign council, the intendant or royal tax collector, and the Jesuits, and was recalled in 1682, only to be returned in 1689 to suppress uprisings of the Iroquois and cause their final submission (1696). He aided the explorations of Joliet, Marquette, and LaSalle, established military posts, repulsed the attack on Quebec by Sir William Phips and made war on the New England coast. He is the subject of a work by Parkman, and figures in *Shadows on the Rock.*

Frontier, in America the wilderness region marked by the farthest advance of white colonization. The accepted analysis of the significance of the frontier is based on the theory of F.J.Turner (q.v.), who contended that 'the existence of an area of free land, its continuous recession, and the

advance of American settlement westward, explain American development...' This development has exhibited not merely an advance along a single line, but a return to primitive conditions on a continually advancing frontier, which is the meeting point of savagery and civilization. American democracy, according to Turner, came out of the American forest, whence it gained strength each time it touched a new frontier.

> . . . To the frontier the American intellect owes its striking characteristics. That coarseness and strength, combined with acuteness and acquisitiveness; that practical, inventive turn of mind, quick to find expedients; that masterful grasp of material things, lacking in the artistic but powerful to effect great ends; that restless, nervous energy; that dominant individualism, working for good and for evil, and withal that buoyancy and exuberance which comes with freedom—these are the traits of the frontier, or traits called out elsewhere because of the existence of the frontier.

This historical influence left its impress upon American literature in such distinctive forms as the ballad and tall tale (qq.v.), as well as in the local-color movement (q.v.). Its less direct influence upon writing in previously established literary forms is so great as to defy concise summary. The physical frontier, which began at the Atlantic coast and moved westward until free land was exhausted (*c.*1890), during its progression may be said to have had some influence on virtually every American author, and especially formed the attitude and manner of such writers as Crèvecœur, William Byrd, Timothy Flint, Mrs.Kirkland, Irving, Cooper, Simms, Longstreet, Crockett, Edward Eggleston, Clemens, Harte, Joaquin Miller, Garland, Frank Norris, E.W.Howe, Rölvaag, Jack London, E.L.Masters, Sinclair Lewis, and Willa Cather. Successive frontiers likewise had their folk idols, among whom may be named Samuel Brady (Pennsylvania), Simon Kenton (Ohio), Lewis Wetzel (West Virginia), Davy Crockett (Tennessee and Texas), Sam Houston (Texas), Billy the Kid (New Mexico), Hugh Glass (Missouri), Kit Carson and Jim Bridger (the Great Plains), Wild Bill Hickok (Kansas), Daniel Boone (Kentucky), Mike Fink (the Mississippi River), and Paul Bunyan (the lumber frontier).

Frontier, The (1920–39), regional literary magazine, founded by Professor H.G. Merriam of Montana State University in connection with a class in creative writing. The first issue was called *The Montanan*, but its scope as a magazine of the Northwest brought about a change of title. Its contents included fiction, poetry, and criticism, as well as source materials relating to the early history of the Northwest. In 1933 the magazine merged with *The Midland* to become *Frontier and Midland*. *The Midland* (1915–33), published from Iowa City, was also a regional magazine, and included among its 'discoveries' MacKinlay Kantor, Paul Engle, and Phil Stong.

FROST, A[RTHUR] B[URDETT] (1851–1928), illustrator and cartoonist, noted for his subtly humorous pen-and-ink interpretations of such rural American types as the farmer, the plantation Negro, and the sportsman. He illustrated the *Uncle Remus* stories.

FROST, ROBERT [LEE] (1875–), member of a New England family, was born in San Francisco and taken at the age of ten to the New England farm country with which his poetry is identified. After a brief attendance at Dartmouth, where he disliked the academic attitude, he became a bobbin boy in a Massachusetts mill, and a short period at Harvard was followed by further work, making shoes, editing a country newspaper, teaching school, and finally farming. This background of craftsmanship and husbandry had its effect upon his poetry in more than the choice of subjects, for he has demanded that his verse be as simple and honest as an axe or hoe. After a long period of farming, he moved to England (1912–15), where he published his first book of poems, *A Boy's Will* (1913), whose lyrics, including 'Into My Own,' 'Revelation,' 'Mowing,' and 'Reluctance,' are marked by an intense but restrained emotion, and the characteristic flavor of New England life. He returned to the U.S. to settle on a New Hampshire farm, having achieved a reputation as an important American poet through the publication of *North of Boston* (1914), described by the author as 'a book of people,' and showing a brilliant insight into New England character and the background that has formed it. Among the poems in this volume are 'Mending Wall,' 'The Death of the Hired Man,' 'The Code,' 'The Wood-Pile,' 'Home Burial,' and 'A Servant to Servants' (qq.v.). The

same expressive idiom and brilliant observation appear in *Mountain Interval* (1916), containing such characteristic poems as 'The Road Not Taken,' 'Birches,' 'Bond and Free' (qq.v.), 'A Time to Talk,' 'Snow,' 'Putting in the Seed,' and 'An Old Man's Winter Night.' The shrewd humor and Yankee understatement that distinguish such poems as 'The Cow in Apple Time,' 'A Hundred Collars,' and 'Brown's Descent' are exhibited also in Frost's witty self-critical remarks, as when he said, 'I might be called a Synecdochist; for I prefer the synecdoche in poetry—that figure of speech in which we use a part for the whole.' In both emotion and language he is restrained, and conveys his messages by implication. Although his blank verse is colloquial, it is never loose, for it possesses the pithy, surcharged economy indigenous to the New Englander. His genre pieces, in the form of dramatic idyls or monologues, capture the vernacular of his neighbors north of Boston. Frost explains his realism by saying, 'There are two types of realist—the one who offers a good deal of dirt with his potato to show that it is a real one; and the one who is satisfied with the potato brushed clean . . . To me, the thing that art does for life is to clean it, to strip it to form.' His next book, *New Hampshire* (1923, Pulitzer Prize, 1924), shows his ability to deal with genial, informal subjects, as in 'The Star-Splitter,' 'Maple,' 'The Axe-Helve,' 'New Hampshire' (qq.v.), and 'Paul's Wife,' and to concentrate emotional impact into a few clean-stripped lines, as in 'To Earthward,' 'Two Look at Two,' 'Stopping by Woods on a Snowy Evening' (qq.v.), 'Gathering Leaves,' 'Fire and Ice,' and 'Fragmentary Blue.' In 1928 he issued a fifth new volume, *West-Running Brook*, with the same warm lyric quality that had characterized his first book. His *Collected Poems* (1930, Pulitzer Prize, 1931) assembled in one volume the work that has a lifelong continuity in its rhythms, its clear focusing on the individual, and its observation of the native New England background. Although the collecting of his poems and his position as an affiliated teacher at Amherst, Michigan, and Harvard seemed to imply that his literary career had ended, in 1936 he published *A Further Range* (Pulitzer Prize 1937), whose lyrics, though more pronouncedly playful in blending fact and fantasy, have beneath their frivolous surface a deep seriousness. A new edition of the *Collected Poems* appeared in 1939.

FROTHINGHAM, Octavius Brooks 1822–95), Unitarian minister, chief disciple of Theodore Parker, was the author of a biography of Parker (1874), *Transcendentalism in New England* (1876), and several religious works.

Fruit of the Tree, The, novel by Edith Wharton (q.v.).

Fruitlands, co-operative community established by Alcott (q.v.,1842–3) at Harvard, Massachusetts. In his original plan for a 'Concordium,' Alcott proposed an institution in the country, where members would labor on the land and live a simple vegetarian life, basing their unity on religious love, with education and mutual labor leading to 'the harmonic development of their physical, intellectual, and moral natures.' The experiment died mainly because of the conflict between Alcott's love of family life and his admiration for the ideas of the English 'Alcott House' of Charles Lane, who desired to submerge the family and the individual in a communistic society. Louisa May Alcott's *Transcendental Wild Oats* is a fictional account of Fruitlands.

FUESS, Claude Moore (1885–), headmaster of Phillips Academy, Andover, and author of *An Old New England School* (1917), *The Life of Caleb Cushing* (1923), *Rufus Choate* (1927), *Daniel Webster* (1930), *Carl Schurz* (1932), and *Calvin Coolidge* (1940).

Fugitive, The (1922–5), monthly little magazine published at Nashville, Tennessee. It contained poetry and criticism championing regionalism (q.v.) and iconoclastically attacking 'the highcaste Brahmins of the Old South.' Most of the contributors were associated with Vanderbilt University, among them being J.C.Ransom, Allen Tate, Donald Davidson, Laura Riding, R.P.Warren, and Merrill Moore. A collection from the magazine was issued as *Fugitive Anthology* (1928).

Fugitive Slave Laws, Congressional acts of 1793 and 1850, providing for the return of escaped Negro slaves to their owners. After the abolition of slavery in the Northern states, opposition arose to the return of fugitive slaves to the South, so that state laws were passed and the underground railroad (q.v.) came into existence. After the passage of the severe laws

in the Compromise of 1850, Northern sentiment was further aroused, and several notable trials, including the Dred Scott Case (q.v.), resulted from the attempt to prevent the return of runaway Negroes to slavery.

FULLER, GEORGE (1822–84), Massachusetts painter, studied with H.K.Brown at the National Academy of Design, was influenced by the Pre-Raphaelites during a tour abroad (1860), and settled in Boston (1875). There he produced such paintings as *The Romany Girl*, *Winifred Dysart*, *Nydia*, and *The Quadroon*, in which there is little color, the forms being generally engulfed in brown tones, and romantic wistfulness often overbalances solid workmanship.

FULLER, HENRY BLAKE (1857–1929), Chicago novelist whose writing varied between the two genres of realistic depiction of the Middle West and fanciful portrayals of courtly Europe, which he knew through his travels. His first novel, published under the pseudonym Stanton Page, was *The Chevalier of Pensieri-Vani* (1890), an episodic work contrasting American and European cultures, and *The Châtelaine of La Trinité* (1892) is in the same cosmopolitan spirit. His most successful realistic work, *The Cliff-Dwellers* (q.v.,1893), was followed by *With the Procession* (q.v.,1895), a story of social strivings in Chicago. *The Last Refuge* (1900) is an idealistic and fanciful Sicilian romance, while *Under the Skylights* (1901) contains stories about Chicago artist life, one of which, 'The Downfall of Abner Joyce,' is a fictional treatment of Hamlin Garland. After *Waldo Trench and Others* (1908), stories set in Italy and contrasting American and continental standards, he returned to the Chicago scene in *On the Stairs* (1918), portraying two men who go up and down the stairs of economic and social life. *Bertram Cope's Year* (1919) deals with a University of Chicago instructor. *Gardens of This World* (1929), a continuation of his first book, and *Not on the Screen* (1930), a satire on motion pictures as well as a realistic account of Chicago, were both posthumously published, and showed Fuller to be still preoccupied with two contrasting types of fiction.

FULLER, [SARAH] MARGARET (1810–50), born at Cambridgeport, Massachusetts, was educated by her father, read Ovid at the precocious age of eight, and as a young woman developed friendships with the Transcendentalists, who accepted her as their intellectual equal. From 1839 to 1844 she held a series of conversational classes at Elizabeth Peabody's home, and had a strong influence on the most cultivated circle of Boston society. In her discussions with this group originated the material of her book, *Woman in the Nineteenth Century* (q.v.,1845), the first mature consideration of feminism by an American, touching every aspect of the subject, intellectual, economic, political, and sexual. She edited *The Dial* (q.v.,1840–42), and in 1844 published her *Summer on the Lakes in* 1843, an optimistic view of Western life based on a visit to Chicago. During her two years in New York, on the staff of the *Tribune*, she established a wide reputation as a critic, and in the summer of 1846 she visited Europe, writing letters which appeared on the front page of the *Tribune*. She had intended to publish a book on the Roman revolution of 1848–9, but the only complete works resulting from this trip were *Papers on Literature and Art*, *Life Without and Within*, and *At Home and Abroad*, published in 1846 from her *Tribune* contributions, and reissued (1869) as *Literature and Art*. In Italy she was an ardent adherent of Mazzini, and married one of his followers, the Marquis Angelo Ossoli. The ship that brought them to the U.S. was wrecked in a storm off Fire Island, near New York. The body of her child was the only one recovered, and her manuscript on the Roman revolt was lost. Her *Memoirs* (1852) were written by Emerson, W.H.Channing, and J.F.Clarke. Because of her dynamic personality, she figures frequently in literature, being probably the prototype of *Elsie Venner*, and of Zenobia in *The Blithedale Romance*. In Lowell's *Fable for Critics*, as Miranda,

> She always keeps asking if I don't observe a
> Particular likeness 'twixt her and Minerva.

FULTON, ROBERT (1765–1815), Pennsylvania-born inventor, civil engineer, and artist, designed guns during the Revolution, and his inventions include canal-dredging machines, a double inclined plane for transporting canal boats, and the improvement of torpedoes for submarine warfare. His most important contributions were the 'diving boat' *Nautilus*, which propelled itself at a depth of 25 feet, and the first commercially successful

steamboat, the *Clermont*. In 1807 the *Clermont* made her round-trip voyage up the Hudson from New York to Albany in the running time of 62 hours, attaining a speed of nearly five miles an hour. His *Treatise on the Improvement of Canal Navigation* (1796) was a brilliant prophecy of the economic and political advantages which would accrue from inland canal systems.

Fundamentalism, conservative religious movement of various Protestant denominations during the 20th century, embodying a protest against the incursions of science into revelation. Its object is to maintain traditional interpretations of the Bible and fundamental doctrines of Christian faith. The five points of doctrine whose literal acceptance is demanded are the Virgin birth, physical resurrection of Christ, inerrancy of the Scriptures, vicarious atonement, and the physical second coming of Christ. The struggle against the teaching of evolutionary theories, which are considered to threaten orthodoxy, became a national issue in the Scopes Trial in Tennessee (1925), in which Clarence Darrow defended J.T. Scopes, a public school teacher who expounded evolution, while Bryan upheld the Fundamentalist point of view, winning the case for the prosecution.

FURNESS, HORACE HOWARD (1833–1912), ranks as one of the most important Shakespeare scholars of the U.S., because of the *New Variorum* edition that he began in 1871, and which was completed by his son and namesake.

Furnished Room, The, short story in *The Four Million* (q.v.).

Further Range, A, poems by Robert Frost (q.v.).

G

G.A.R., see *Grand Army of the Republic.*

G.O.P. ('Grand Old Party'), sobriquet of the Republican party (q.v.).

Gabriel Conroy, novel by Bret Harte (q.v.).

Gadsden Purchase, area of some 45,000 square miles in the present Arizona and New Mexico, purchased from Mexico (1853) for $10,000,000, which settled all claims arising out of the Mexican War. The Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo (1848) gave an inadequate description of the U.S.-Mexican boundary, and James Gadsden, U.S. minister to Mexico, secured the purchase in order to insure the possession of this tract for a projected southern railway to the Pacific.

GAGE, THOMAS (*c.*1596–1656), English priest, became a Roman Catholic missionary for Spain and traveled through Mexico, Guatemala, and other parts of Central America (1625–37). His book, *The English-American: His Travail by Sea and Land* (1684), stimulated English exploration because of its account of the wealth and defenseless condition of Spanish possessions. After repatriating himself and becoming an Anglican chaplain, he accompanied the expedition that seized Jamaica, where he died.

GAGE, THOMAS (1721–87), British general, served in the French and Indian War, was commander-in-chief of the British forces in North America (1763–75), and in 1774 succeeded Hutchinson as governor of Massachusetts, in this capacity attempting to suppress the growing rebellion of the colony. On April 18, 1775, he ordered an expedition to Lexington and Concord to secure ammunition and stores, an act that began the military phase of the Revolutionary War. In October of that year he returned to England.

GAIL, HAMILTON, see *Mary A. Dodge.*

Galaxy, The (1866–78), monthly literary magazine, published at New York and intended to counteract the supposed provincialism of the *Atlantic Monthly*. Clemens was one of its assistant editors, conducting a department of 'Memoranda' (1870–71) devoted to humorous sketches. Other contributors included Henry James, J.W.DeForest, Rebecca H. Davis, H.H. Boyeson, Mrs.Cooke, Whitman, Hayne, and E.C.Stedman. In addition to fiction, the magazine was distinguished for its literary criticism, historical and political articles, and scientific essays. Financially unsuccessful, it sold its subscription list to the *Atlantic Monthly*.

GALE, ZONA (1874–1938), Wisconsin author, known for her short stories in the local-color tradition, collected in such volumes as *Friendship Village* (q.v.,1908), *Yellow Gentians and Blue* (1927), and *Bridal Pond* (1930). She won the 1921 Pulitzer Prize for her dramatization of her novel, *Miss Lulu Bett* (q.v.,1920), a study of a woman repressed by the bleak life of the Middle West. Other novels include: *Birth* (1918), dramatized as *Mr.Pitt* (1924), the story of a similarly repressed man, whose simple honesty is scorned by the wife who deserts him and the son who is ashamed of his insignificance; *Faint Perfume* (1923), a character study of a poor relation; *Preface to a Life* (1926), dealing with the frustrated life of a businessman; *Borgia* (1929), the story of a morbid girl who thinks herself a modern Lucrezia Borgia; and *Papa La Fleur* (1933), the story of a country girl whose ideas of liberty for the younger generation hurt the feelings of both her father and her sweetheart. *The Secret Way* (1921) is a book of poems, *Magna* (1939) is a posthumously published novelette, and *Portage, Wisconsin* (1928) completes the autobiographical narrative begun in *When I Was a Little Girl* (1913).

GALLAGHER, WILLIAM DAVIS (1808–94), Ohio frontier editor, whose poetry, imitative in technique but original in its descriptions of nature, is among the region's best. It is contained chiefly in his *Erato* (3 vols.,1835–7) and *Miami Woods* (1881).

GALLATIN, ALBERT (1761–1849), born in Switzerland, emigrated to America at the age of 19 and became a frontier political leader, after 1797 being the recognized spokesman for the Republican minority, whose criticism of the Federalist management of the Treasury resulted in the Alien and Sedition Acts, partially aimed at him. As Jefferson's secretary of the treasury, he severely curtailed army and navy appropriations, and materially reduced the public debt. He was later blamed for the in-

adequate preparation of the U.S. for the War of 1812, which he bitterly opposed. He was primarily responsible for the Treaty of Ghent, held the posts of minister to France and minister to England, and upon his retirement founded the bank that bears his name. He wrote on *The Oregon Question* (1846), but considered his most important work to be the *Synopsis of the Indian Tribes . . . of North America* (1836), which led to his reputation as 'the father of American ethnology.'

Gallegher: *A Newspaper Story*, title story of a collection by R.H.Davis (q.v.), published in 1891.

Gallegher is a young newsboy, educated only on the streets, in whom 'the detective element was abnormally developed.' When Richard F. Burrbank, a wealthy lawyer, is murdered, Gallegher's instinct finds pertinent clues, and he aids a detective and a reporter in tracing the murderer to the scene of a championship prize-fight. There the criminal is taken into custody. By various subterfuges Gallegher eludes police and other obstacles, rushes the reporter's 'copy' to the newspaper office, and arrives exhausted but triumphant with his 'scoop.'

GALLOWAY, JOSEPH (*c.*1731–1803), Loyalist writer and statesman of Philadelphia, attacked the policy of the English ministry toward the colonies, while opposing the extremism of radical colonists. In his *Plan of a Proposed Union between Great Britain and the Colonies* (1774), he outlines a scheme for home-rule that anticipated 19th-century British policies. *A Candid Examination of the Mutual Claims of Great Britain and the Colonies* (1775) proposes redress through a liberal constitutional union with England. His logic could not delay the current of more violent forces, and Galloway abandoned argument to serve in the British army, later becoming an efficient adviser to the crown.

Game, The, novel by Jack London (q.v.), published in 1905.

Joe Fleming is asked by his fiancée, Genevieve, to give up his career as a prizefighter, since she is jealous of the attraction which 'the game' exerts over her lover. To convey an idea of the fascination of the sport, Joe proposes that she watch him fight. She witnesses his bout with John Ponta, a brutal, bull-like pugilist. While Joe is hammering Ponta to the canvas, he slips and is simultaneously hit by his opponent. Hurled to the floor with a crushed skull, he dies in a few moments.

Game Cock of the Wilderness, see *Marble.*

Gamesters, The, novel by Caroline Warren (q.v.).

Gangsters, see *Bootlegging.*

Gant, EUGENE, hero of *Look Homeward, Angel*, and *Of Time and the River* (qq.v.).

Garbage Man, The: A Parade with Shouting, play by John Dos Passos (q.v.), produced in 1925 as *The Moon is a Gong*, and published under the present title in 1926. Experimental in form, the play is a poetic arraignment of oppressive forces in contemporary society.

Tom and Jane, average young New Yorkers, love each other, but they are separated under the stress of economic difficulties. Pursued by the relentlessly malevolent 'Garbage Man,' who appears also in the guise of 'The Family Practitioner,' 'The Man in Black Overalls,' and 'The Man in the Stovepipe Hat,' Tom sinks lower and lower, finally participating in a robbery and murder. Jane achieves a tawdry success as a musical comedy star, but when they meet again they discover that life has meaning only when they are together, and make their escape to a more vital existence, 'Somewhere very high. Where the wind is sheer whiteness . . .'

GARCÉS, FRANCISCO TOMÁS HERMENEGILDO (1738–81), Spanish missionary and explorer, established missions on the Gila and Colorado Rivers, and accompanied Anza to California (1774–5). He was killed by Indians. His diaries were published in Elliott Coues's *On the Trail of a Spanish Pioneer* (2 vols.,1900).

Garcia, *Message to*, see *Message to Garcia.*

GARDINER, SIR CHRISTOPHER (*fl.*1630–32), arrived in Massachusetts (1630), bringing with him, according to Bradford, 'a comly yonge woman, whom he caled his cousin, but it was suspected, she (after ye Italian maner) was his concubine.' He was a mysterious figure, and was left undisturbed until it was discovered that he had deserted two wives, was a Papist, and was an agent of Ferdinando Gorges. Gardiner and his mistress, Mary Grove, were apprehended but released. For a time thereafter, he lived in Brunswick, Maine, where his 'known harlot' married one Thomas Purchase. In 1632 he turned up

in Bristol, England, as the star witness before the Privy Council in Gorges's attempt to break the Massachusetts charter. After that the knight and his lawfully wedded wives disappear from history. He has frequently figured in fiction and poetry, as in *The Tales of a Wayside Inn* and Motley's *Merry Mount.*

GARFIELD, James Abram (1831–81), 20th President of the U.S. (1881), was born on the Ohio frontier, commanded a volunteer regiment in the first two years of the Civil War, and was then elected to Congress, where he continued to serve as a conservative Republican member (1863–80). He followed the party line during the Reconstruction, and in such important debates as those concerning the tariff, deflation, and civil service reform. In 1880 he supported the candidacy of Sherman for the Republican nomination, but was chosen as a 'dark horse' candidate. His failure to give patronage to the faction led by Roscoe Conkling caused an important split in the Republican party. During the consequent unrest, he was assassinated by Charles J. Guiteau, a disappointed office-seeker.

GARLAND, [Hannibal] Hamlin (1860–1940), born in Wisconsin, after sharing the oppressive labor of farm life there and in Iowa and South Dakota went to Boston, where he came under the influence of Howells. Returning to the farmland of the Middle Border, he chose the hardships of the farmer for the subject of his short stories, which are characterized by a combination of objective realism and ethical romanticism. They were collected in *Main-Travelled Roads* (q.v.,1891) and *Other Main-Travelled Roads* (1910), the latter volume containing stories from two previous books, *Prairie Folks* (1893) and *Wayside Courtships* (1897). The writing of these stories, all of which were completed before 1890, led Garland to believe that something besides realistic fiction was needed to ameliorate agricultural conditions. Accordingly, he wrote *Jason Edwards: An Average Man* (1892) as propaganda for the Single Tax theories of Henry George, and *A Spoil of Office* (1892), a novel that, in exposing political corruption, also campaigned for the Populist party. After *A Member of the Third House* (1892), a novel showing the legislative power of the railroads, he wrote *A Little Norsk* (1892), depicting the bleak life of a Dakota farm girl, and *Rose of Dutcher's Coolly* (q.v.,1895), telling of a girl's revolt against this life. *Crumbling Idols* (1894), a book of essays, sets forth the author's theory of 'veritism,' combining realism for a democratic purpose with individualism, stemming from Whitman and flavored by local color. *The Captain of the Gray-Horse Troop* (1902) deals with the unjust treatment of the Indians by greedy frontiersmen and cattlemen, and *Cavanagh, Forest Ranger* (1910) is concerned with the conflict between the cattle ranchers and representatives of the government who are attempting to conserve natural resources. After the force of his youth and the immediate contact with reality had partially been spent, he wrote his comparatively mellow autobiography, *A Son of the Middle Border* (q.v.,1917), continued in *A Daughter of the Middle Border* (q.v., 1921; Pulitzer Prize, 1922), and the thinner, semifictional works, *Trail-Makers of the Middle Border* (1926) *and Back-Trailers from the Middle Border* (1928). Subsequent volumes, *Roadside Meetings* (1930), *Companions on the Trail* (1931), *My Friendly Contemporaries* (1932), and *Afternoon Neighbors* (1934), dwindled into the category of garrulous memoirs. His last books were concerned with spiritualism.

GARRARD, Lewis H. (1829–87), author of *Wah-to'-yah, and the Taos Trail* (1850), an autobiographical account of his journey as a 17-year-old boy along the Santa Fé Trail to Taos. The work is valuable not only as a source of information, but also as a well-written narrative.

GARRISON, William Lloyd (1805–79), spearhead of New England Abolitionism (q.v.), was born in Newburyport, Massachusetts. During 1829–30 he edited *The Genius of Universal Emancipation* with Benjamin Lundy at Baltimore, but, after an imprisonment for libel, he returned to his home to pursue policies that were too radical for Lundy. In 1831 he began to publish *The Liberator* (q.v.), which he continued for 34 years. An ascetic, moralist, pacifist, and noble agitator, Garrison constantly demanded immediate and complete emancipation of the slaves. Although the circulation of his paper was small, it drew wide attention because of the direct, forcible expression of its owner's passionate beliefs. He attacked the moderate elements who opposed him, disliked the actions of the Anti-Slavery Society, which

he split asunder, and his own vituperation was equalled only by that of the slaveholders. He outdid the Southerners in advocating secession, since the Constitution, which permitted slavery, was to him a 'Covenant with Death and an Agreement with Hell.' After the Civil War, he retired from public activity. His books include *Thoughts on African Colonization* (1832), *Sonnets* (1843), and a *Selection* (1852) from his speeches and writings. He was the subject of many works, including one of Whittier's finest poems.

Garth, novel by Julian Hawthorne (q.v.).

GARY, ELBERT HENRY (1846–1927), Illinois lawyer and capitalist, was an associate of J.P.Morgan, and organized and headed both the Federal Steel Company and the United States Steel Corporation. He founded Gary, Indiana, a company town. An attempt was made to dissolve his corporation as a monopoly, but the U.S.Supreme Court decided in his favor (1919). His antagonism toward labor unions led to a general strike in the steel industry, which, though suppressed, forced him to revise working conditions. Ida M. Tarbell wrote a biography of Gary (1925).

Gas-House McGinty, novel by James T. Farrell (q.v.).

Gastonia Strike, occurred at Gastonia, North Carolina, in 1929. In this unsuccessful strike of workers in the textile mills, several lives were lost, and some of the strikers were arrested and convicted for homicide. The strike has frequently been the subject of fiction and drama, as in Mary Heaton Vorse's novel, *Strike!* (1930).

GATES, HORATIO (*c.*1729–1806), British soldier in the French and Indian War, returned to England (1765–72), where he retired from the army. Urged by Washington, he moved to a West Virginia plantation, and at the outbreak of the Revolution became a patriot officer. In 1776, promoted to major-general, he began to hold important commands, and the following year led the campaign against Burgoyne, which ended with the victory at Saratoga. His popularity at this time led to the Conway Cabal (q.v.), a frustrated attempt to replace Washington by Gates as commander-in-chief. He continued in high commands until 1780, when, after the rout of his soldiers at Camden, he was replaced by Greene. A Congressional investigation of his actions was ordered, and he retired for two years. In 1782 the ordered inquiry was cancelled, and Gates served again at the close of the war.

GATES, LEWIS E[DWARDS] (1860–1924), graduated from Harvard (1884) and became an instructor in forensics (1884–7) and a professor of English (1890–1924) there. Among the students he strongly influenced was Frank Norris. Gates wrote *Three Studies in Literature* (1899) and *Studies and Appreciations* (1900), the latter revealing his doctrine of impressionism based on scholarship.

GATES, SIR THOMAS (*fl.*1585–1621), leader in early Virginia colonization, whose vessel, the *Sea Adventure*, was wrecked in the Bermudas (1609). An account of this voyage by one of his officers, William Strachey, is said to have suggested Shakespeare's *The Tempest*. The ship finally reached Jamestown, and Gates, after returning to England for more colonists and provisions, became governor of the colony for three years.

Gates Ajar, The, novel by Elizabeth Ward (q.v.), published (1868) under her maiden name, Elizabeth Stuart Phelps.

A New England girl, Mary Cabot, is overcome by grief at the death of her brother Royal in the Civil War, and remains inconsolable until her aunt, Winifred Forceythe, comes to visit her, accompanied by her daughter Faith. Mary finds comfort in the little girl, and a great source of solace in the series of long conversations with her aunt, which she records in her journal. Slowly her aunt persuades her of the validity of a future life in which she will meet Royal, and presents convincingly her conception of Heaven.

Gatling machine gun, which fired 1200 times per minute, was invented (1861) by Richard Jordan Gatling (1818–1903), and was adopted by the U.S.army in 1866.

Gatsby, JAY, see *The Great Gatsby* (q.v.).

GAYARRÉ, CHARLES ÉTIENNE ARTHUR (1805–95), New Orleans historian who, at the age of 30, was forced by ill-health to resign his newly won seat in the U.S.Senate, and spent seven years in France, where he did much historical research. After returning to American politics, he retired in 1853 to become a leader of Louisiana literary circles, and wrote a monumental *History of Louisiana* (4 vols., 1851–66), which, though it began under the popular influence of Scott's romances, ended as a vivid and accurate narrative.

He was also the author of a brilliant psychological study of *Philip II of Spain* (1866); a humorless satirical novel, *The School for Politics* (1845); *Fernando de Lemos* (1872), an autobiographical novel; and other fiction.

Gazette of the United States (1789–1847), weekly newspaper founded at New York by John Fenno (1751–98) as a Federalist journal, was moved to Philadelphia the following year, and became a daily in 1793. It was financed by Hamilton, who used it to attack Jefferson and the Jefferson-controlled *National Gazette* (q.v.) of Freneau. After Fenno's death, his son became editor. In 1804 the title was changed to *United States Gazette*. The paper later merged with another Philadelphia paper to become the *North American and United States Gazette*.

GEDDES, Norman Bel (1893–), New York stage designer and creator of designs for advertising displays and industrial products. He is noted for his striking abstract sets, in which he employs a few powerful sculptural forms and lighting effects to achieve the appropriate mood. The best known of these was the setting for the Reinhardt spectacle, *The Miracle*. Among his books is *Magic Motorways* (1940), setting forth his original plan for a system of national highways.

General Advertiser, see *Aurora*.

General History of Virginia, New England, and the Summer Isles, narrative by John Smith (q.v.).

General Magazine, The (Jan.–June 1741), subtitled a 'Historical Chronicle for All the British Plantations in America,' was edited and published by Franklin (q.v.). It was the first American magazine to be projected, but the second to be published, since John Webbe, the proposed editor, betrayed the publisher, and with Andrew Bradford issued *The American Magazine* three days earlier. During the six months of publication, attention was given mainly to the war with Spain, the French and Indian alliance, international trade, the Whitefield controversy, extracts from the histories of Robert Beverley and Patrick Tailfer, and reprints of poetry. Franklin does not mention the enterprise in his *Autobiography*.

General Repository and Review, The (1812–13), Boston quarterly journal, affiliated with Harvard. Under the editorship of Andrews Norton, it championed Unitarianism.

General William Booth Enters into Heaven, title poem of a volume by Vachel Lindsay (q.v.), published in 1913. Intended to be sung to the music of the hymn, 'The Blood of the Lamb,' its vigorous drum-beat rhythms describe the apotheosis of the Salvation Army founder, who enters the gates of Paradise at the head of a troop of criminals and slum dwellers:

Christ came gently with a robe and crown
For Booth the soldier, while the throng knelt down.

GENÊT, Edmond Charles Édouard (1763–1834), minister of republican France to the U.S. (1793), known as Citizen Genêt. He attempted to raise troops against Canada and Spanish Florida and Louisiana, and to commission privateers against British ships, despite the neutrality of the U.S. His undiplomatic controversies with the President and the Congress led to demands that he be recalled. When his party, the Girondists, fell from power, he was ordered back to France under arrest. Washington declined the requested extradition, however, and Genêt remained in the U.S., becoming an American citizen.

'Genius,' The, novel by Dreiser (q.v.), published in 1915.

Handsome Eugene Witla, son of a middle-class family in an Illinois town, cherishes his bent toward drawing and writing, and is looked upon as a dreamer. He has the earliest of many amours at the age of 17, when he begins to work for the local newspaper. Then, ambitious and curious about the world, he goes to work in Chicago, spending his spare time in art study. Engaged to Angela Blue, a school teacher older than himself, he is employed in the art department of a Chicago paper, after which he goes to New York to achieve fame as an illustrator. Sincere but restless, he has affairs with several women, including Christina Channing, a concert singer, who ends their liaison because she considers her career more important. He marries Angela, who is unsuited to him, being prudent and conventional and incapable of understanding his tastes or his essential amorality. Eugene's paintings make him famous, but he suffers a nervous collapse, due to overwork and an intemperate sexual life. His savings gone, he is unable to paint even after a year's rest, and works for some time as a laborer.

Then he rapidly climbs the ladder of business success, to become managing director of a great publishing firm. Angela, jealous of his philanderings, attempts to win him back by becoming pregnant. He falls in love, however, with the society girl, Suzanne Dale, whose mother ends the affair by causing Eugene to lose his position. Angela dies at the birth of their daughter, and Eugene, belatedly penitent, devotes himself to the care of the child and to his true vocation of realistic painting.

Genius of Universal Emancipation, see *Lundy, Benjamin.*

Genteel Tradition at Bay, The, essay by Santayana (q.v.), published in 1931.

This criticism of the New Humanism (q.v.), from the point of view of a rational naturalism, characterizes the movement as being a product of the attenuation and decay of the 'genteel' cultural tradition of Western democratic society. The opening 'Analysis of Modernity' discusses the progressive loss of spiritual ideals in modern history. In terms of this analysis, Santayana finds that the program of the New Humanists must be 'to reinstate a settled belief in a supernatural human soul and in a precise divine revelation.' Supernaturalism he defines as 'simply a completed naturalism . . . into which certain ulterior facts and forces, hidden from our near-sighted and imperfect science, have been duly admitted'; and he dismisses specific concepts of the supernatural, of Platonism and Christianity, as being 'clearly human postulates, made by ignorant mortals in sheer desperation or in poetic self-indulgence.' Finally he argues for an impartial, uninhibited facing of universal truth: 'In the moral life, reason is a harmony of the passions, a harmony which perceptions and impulses may compose in so far as they grow sensitive to one another, and begin to move with mutual deference and a total grace.' The 'absolutism' of the New Humanism is condemned as falsifying and unperceptive, the fruit of a decadent attitude, since 'only a morality frankly relative to man's nature is worthy of man . . .'

Gentle Art of Making Enemies, The, see *Whistler.*

Gentle Grafter, The, short stories by W.S.Porter (q.v.).

Gentle People, The: A Brooklyn Fable, comedy by Irwin Shaw (q.v.), produced and published in 1939.

Jonah Goodman and Philip Anagnos, middle-aged, poverty-stricken New Yorkers, find their only pleasure in fishing from their rowboat below Coney Island's Steeplechase Pier. They have saved a small amount toward the purchase of a boat in which they hope to fish off the Florida coast. Jonah's wife, Florence, is an ill-tempered invalid, and his pretty daughter, Stella, is a stenographer, certain that she is 'different,' and dissatisfied with her commonplace suitor, Eli Lieber, a barker at Coney Island. Philip is the Greek chef in the restaurant of Angelina Esposito, who employs her enormous energy to persuade him to marry her, although he fears and dislikes her. The companions are hopeful of achieving their ambition, despite these hindrances, until a gangster, Harold Goff, forces them to pay for 'protection' and tries to seduce Stella. Eli announces his intention of killing Goff, but Jonah and Philip dissuade him. They carry the gangster out to sea, take his money, drown him, and, escaping detection, are at last able to make their dream come true.

Gentleman from Indiana, The, novel by Tarkington (q.v.).

Gentleman's Magazine, The (1837–40), monthly Philadelphia periodical, founded by W.E.Burton (q.v.), who later added his name to the title. Its contents were light and entertaining, with attention to art and literature, sports, the theater, and reprints and translations from English and foreign magazines, as well as tales of frontier adventure. Poe was the editor (July 1839–June 1840), and his contributions included 'William Wilson,' 'The Fall of the House of Usher,' and 'The Journal of Julius Rodman.' The different temperaments and editorial aims of Poe and Burton made their collaboration impossible, and Burton, tiring of the enterprise, sold it to George R. Graham, who merged it with *Atkinson's Casket* to create *Graham's Magazine* (q.v.).

Gentlemen Prefer Blondes, novel by Anita Loos (q.v.).

GEORGE, Henry (1839–97), left his middle-class, devoutly Episcopalian Philadelphia home (1855) to sail as a foremast boy to Calcutta, where he was

struck by the contrast between poverty and wealth. In 1857 the promise of work drew him to San Francisco, where he struggled against want intermittently for ten years, as printer, gold-hunter, publisher, and free-lance editor and author, observing the rich new country come gradually under the control of a few land-hungry speculators. His first article in the *Overland Monthly* (Oct. 1868) anticipated his later thesis, contending that the railroads would bring riches to a few and poverty to many. His first separate publication, *Our Land and Land Policy* (1871), a pamphlet, urged that we 'charge the expenses of government upon our land,' thus stating the essence of the single-tax idea. During the depression and labor troubles of 1877 he began writing his great work, *Progress and Poverty* (q.v., 1879), which attributes poverty to rent, and proposes a tax on land as the remedy for social ills. This doctrine, developed in six other books, numerous periodicals, and his own weekly, *The Standard* (1886–92), won national prominence for its author, as well as the support of labor in his two unsuccessful New York mayoralty campaigns. *The Irish Land Question* (1881) extends his basic tenets to the subject of Irish distress, which he saw at first hand for a year. *Social Problems* (1884) applies the principles of *Progress and Poverty* to various social maladjustments. *Protection and Free Trade* (1886) is a discussion of tariffs and free trade, stating George's belief that poverty would continue under either system, and that a single tax on land would furnish the only solution. *Science of Political Economy* (1897) is a general restatement of his principles. George lectured extensively in the U.S. and abroad, and in England influenced the circle of intellectuals who later founded the Fabian Society. In Germany and Austria his theories contributed to the introduction of increment taxes, while in the U.S. they have led to an increasing concern with problems of wealth distribution.

George's Mother, novelette by Stephen Crane (q.v.).

Georgia Scenes, Characters, Incidents, &c. in the First Half Century of the Republic, 18 humorous sketches by A.B. Longstreet (q.v.), published in 1835. The author's aim 'was to supply a chasm in history which has always been overlooked—the manners, customs, amusements, wit, dialect, as they appear in all grades of society to an eye and ear witness of them.' The style is frequently Addisonian, but the best passages are derived from the oral anecdotes of the Old Southwest, distinguished by a genial humor, an eye for detail, and an ear for dialect, as well as a genuine, sympathetic realism. One of the sketches, 'Georgia Theatrics,' was used in Crockett's *Autobiography*.

German Mercenaries, see *Hessians*.

German Reformed Church, see *Reformed Church in the U.S.*

Germantown, near Philadelphia, site of a Revolutionary War battle (Oct. 1777) in which Washington attacked Howe's encampment. The attack was proceeding successfully when Greene, confused in the fog, charged some of his own troops, causing a panic that lost the battle, after which the Americans retreated to Valley Forge.

GERONIMO (1829–1909), Apache warrior who led his tribe in several bloody attacks on the whites of the Southwest, his last and fiercest campaign being fought against an army commanded by General George Crook (1885–6). Following his capture and escape, Geronimo finally surrendered, on the condition that his men be sent to their families in Florida. Imprisoned instead, they were later taken to Alabama and then to Oklahoma, where Geronimo died. In 1906 he dictated *Geronimo's Story of His Life*.

GEROULD, KATHERINE FULLERTON (1879–), teacher of English at Bryn Mawr, and author of novels and short stories in the vein of Henry James and Edith Wharton. Her stories have been collected in such volumes as *Vain Oblations* (1914), *The Great Tradition* (1915), and *Valiant Dust* (1922). Among the novels are *A Change of Air* (1917); *Lost Valley* (1922), set in New England; *Conquistador* (1923), the story of a Scottish covenanter in Mexico during the time of Pancho Villa; and *The Light That Never Was* (1931).

GORDON HALL GEROULD (1877–), her husband, has been a professor of English at Bryn Mawr and Princeton, and in addition to many scholarly works is the author of the novels, *Peter Sanders, Retired* (1917); *Youth in Harley* (1920),

set in Vermont; and *A Midsummer Mystery* (1925).

GERRY, ELBRIDGE (1744–1814), Massachusetts patriot during the Revolution, later a prominent member of the Continental Congress. His *Observations on the New Constitution* (1788) state objections which were later satisfied by the Bill of Rights. He was a member of the first two Congresses and of the commission that ended in the XYZ Affair, was twice governor of Massachusetts, and served as Vice President under Madison. His rearrangement of electoral districts gave rise to the term Gerrymander.

Gerrymander, political term applied to the rearrangement of voting districts to favor the party in power. Elbridge Gerry in 1812 employed this practice to form an arbitrary alignment of towns in Essex County, Massachusetts. Their boundaries suggested to a contemporary cartoonist the shape of a mythical salamander, and the resulting geographical caricature gave rise to the term.

GERSHWIN, GEORGE (1898–1937), born in the lower East Side of New York City, began his musical career as a Tin Pan Alley composer, writing many popular jazz songs, and from the age of 20 composing musical comedies, among his greatest successes being *Show Girl*, *Of Thee I Sing*, and *Let 'em Eat Cake*. Although he continued to write popular music, he became interested in serious composition, and after study under Rubin Goldmark began to produce works illustrating his belief in jazz 'as an American folk-music' that 'can be made the basis of serious symphonic works of lasting value.' The *Rhapsody in Blue* for piano and orchestra was composed for Paul Whiteman's Concert of Jazz Music (1923), and the orchestral poem, *An American in Paris* (1928) was commissioned by Damrosch. Other major works include the *Concerto in F* for piano (1925) and the *Second Rhapsody* (1931), utilizing in classic forms the rhythms previously identified with ephemeral dance music. Gershwin's most ambitious composition is the folk opera, *Porgy and Bess* (1935), interpreting the Negro spirit in an adaptation of DuBose Heyward's *Porgy*.

IRA GERSHWIN (1896–), his brother, wrote lyrics for *Of Thee I Sing*, *Let 'em Eat Cake*, and other musical comedies, as well as for *Porgy and Bess*.

GERSTÄCKER, FRIEDRICH (1816–72), German adventurer and author, arrived in the U.S. in 1837, and spent several years wandering about the country in various capacities, writing about his adventures after his return to Germany. In 1849 he went to South America, California, the Sandwich Islands, and Australia; in 1860 to South America; and in 1867–8 to the U.S., Mexico, Central America, and the West Indies. His books are reminiscent of those of Sealsfield, whose creative ability he lacked, but whom he surpassed in popularity. Translations of his works include *The Wanderings and Fortunes of Some German Emigrants* (1848), *Narrative of a Journey Round the World* (1853), *The Regulators of Arkansas* (1857), *The Daughter of the Riccarees* (1851), and *The Young Gold-Digger* (1860).

Gertrude of Wyoming, narrative poem in Spenserian stanzas, by the English poet Thomas Campbell (q.v.), published in 1809.

Gertrude, tutored only by nature in idyllic Wyoming Valley (Pennsylvania), grows up to be a beautiful and cultivated woman. Albert Waldegrave, whom she had known as an orphan child, returns a handsome youth, and the two marry, only to die together, after three months of happiness, in the Massacre of Wyoming Valley.

Gettysburg, BATTLE OF, fought in southern Pennsylvania (July 1–3, 1863), is considered the turning point of the Civil War. Lee was defeated by the more numerous forces of Meade, and on July 5 the Confederates began their retreat into Virginia. 2,592 Confederates were reported dead, 12,709 wounded, and 5,150 missing; and 3,155 Union soldiers were reported dead, 14,529 wounded, and 5,365 missing.

Gettysburg Address, delivered by Lincoln at the dedication of a national cemetery on the site of the Pennsylvania battlefield (Nov. 19, 1863). Lincoln's speech of three brief paragraphs, following a two-hour address by the principal orator, Edward Everett, was considered unimportant at the time, but has come to be viewed as one of the noblest and most significant expressions of American democracy. Calling for 'increased devotion to that cause' for which the Gettysburg dead 'gave the last full measure of devotion,' he stated that the aim of the Civil War was to make possible 'a new birth of freedom . . .

that government of the people, by the people, for the people, shall not perish from the earth.'

Ghent, TREATY OF, was signed in Belgium by the U.S. and Great Britain (Dec. 24, 1814), ending the War of 1812 (q.v.).

Ghost of the Buffaloes, The, poem by Vachel Lindsay (q.v.), published in *The Chinese Nightingale and Other Poems* (1917). It describes the poet's dream-vision of the primitive Plains region before the coming of white civilization, and a mystic procession of Indians, eagles, and stampeding 'royal old buffaloes,' celebrated as the 'far golden splendors' of a romantically superior world.

Giants in the Earth: A Saga of the Prairie, novel by Rölvaag (q.v.), published in Norway (1924–5) and in translation in the U.S. (1927). *Peder Victorious* and *Their Fathers' God* (qq.v.) are sequels.

In 1873 a small company of Norwegian farmers treks from Minnesota to settle in Dakota Territory. There are four families in this Spring Creek settlement: Per Hansa, his wife Beret, and their two sons and daughter; Hans Olsa, his wife Sörine, and their daughter; Syvert Tönseten and his wife Kjersti; and the brothers, Sam and Henry Solum. They erect rude sod huts and break the virgin surface of the prairie to plant their first crop; as years pass they make improvements, but their hold remains insecure, and the environment seems to seek ways of showing malevolence. Winter blizzards terrify them, destroying cattle and crops, and for five years a plague of locusts despoils their grain, but they persist. Per is a daring, ambitious fellow, but his schemes are often thwarted by the fears and melancholy of his pious wife, who cannot feel at home in this wilderness. Hans Olsa, equally strong and purposeful, is steadier; while Tönseten is a craven braggart, although he conceives plans for a school and church, and persuades newcomers to join the community. Beret nearly dies at the birth of a third son, whom Per names Peder Victorious, and later she has periods of insanity, in which her fear of the evil powers of the land is accentuated. Per ages under the strain of violent labor and family difficulties, but Beret is cured when a visiting minister reassures her and consecrates Peder to a holy life. During a phenomenally hard winter, Hans Olsa is fatally stricken by pneumonia, and Beret, concerned over his spiritual welfare, asks Per to bring a minister. He sets out on this errand, but dies in a bitter snowstorm.

GIBBONS, JAMES SLOAN, see *We Are Coming, Father Abraham.*

GIBBS, JOSIAH WILLARD (1839–1903), professor of mathematical physics at Yale (1871–1903), is significant for his contributions to the science of thermodynamics. His *Scientific Papers* were collected in 1906, and his works were collected in 1928.

GIBSON, CHARLES DANA (1867–), New York illustrator, obtained a great vogue during the 1890's for his so-called 'Gibson girl' drawings, glorifying American womanhood and reflecting the refined gaiety of fashionable society. He was a regular contributor to *Life,* which he edited for a time, and to *Collier's* and other magazines. The Gibson girl was featured in his series on *The Education of Mr.Pipp,* which inspired a popular play of the same name. He published several books of his drawings, and appealed to the period's romantic and sentimental tastes in his drawings for books by Richard Harding Davis and other popular authors.

Gideon Society, which places copies of the Bible in hotel rooms throughout the U.S. for the use of travelers, was founded in Wisconsin (1899).

Gift Books, annual miscellanies widely distributed (*c.*1825–65), contained stories, essays, and poems, usually with a polite or moral tone, and were lavishly printed and adorned for use as Christmas or New Year gifts. Beginning with *The Atlantic Souvenir* (1825–32), the gift books contained some of the best art and literature of the period, when the popular monthly magazine was not yet fully developed. With the coming of the Civil War, some organizations employed the gift book as a medium of propaganda, e.g. *The Liberty Bell* (q.v.). *The Token* (q.v.) was important for introducing many distinguished authors. Before the vogue spent itself, it was responsible for the publication of more than 1,000 different volumes, ranging in format from muslin-bound 32mos. at 37½¢ to magnificent folios at $20.

Gift from the Grave, A, novelette by Edith Wharton (q.v.).

Gift of the Magi, The, short story in *The Four Million* (q.v.).

GILBERT, Cass (1859–1934), Ohio-born architect of the Woolworth Building in New York City (1911–13), for a few years the tallest building in the world. Conceived in a Gothic style, which an eclectic period considered suitable to the lofty quality of skyscraper construction, topped by a tower, and with medieval decoration, it achieved originality through a fine use of vertical lines. Gilbert's other works include public libraries at Detroit and New Haven, the Minnesota state capitol, Army Supply Base (Brooklyn), New York Life Insurance Company Building, U.S.Chamber of Commerce, U.S.Treasury Annex, and U.S.Supreme Court Building.

GILBERT, Sir Humphrey (1539?–83), half-brother of Sir Walter Ralegh, and like him an explorer and colonizer. In 1583 he took possession of part of Newfoundland, but he was lost in a wreck on the return voyage. The Prince Society has published a narrative of this voyage by Edward Haies, *Sir Humphrey Gilberte and His Enterprise of Colonization in America* (1903). Later accounts include a poem by Longfellow.

Gilded Age, The: A Tale of To-day, novel by Clemens and C.D.Warner (qq.v.), published in 1873 but dated 1874. It was dramatized by G.S.Densmore (1874), and Clemens revised the play the same year. The theme is that of unscrupulous individualism in a world of fantastic speculation and unstable values, and the title has become a popular name for the era depicted in the book, the boom times of post-Civil War years, when unbridled acquisitiveness dominated the national life.

'Squire' Si Hawkins moves from Tennessee, with his wife and family, to a primitive Missouri settlement, the current speculative project of his visionary friend, Colonel Beriah Sellers. During the journey, Hawkins adopts two unrelated orphans, Clay and Laura. Ten years pass, Seller's optimism costs Hawkins several fortunes, and the children grow up in constant expectation of great wealth. When the Squire dies, his family moves to Sellers's new promotion center, Hawkeye, where Laura is seduced by Colonel Selby. Harry Brierly, a New York engineer, collaborates with Sellers in a railroad land speculation scheme, which fails, bankrupting them. Brierly falls in love with Laura at this time, but, hardened by her experience, she considers him a mere tool for her advancement. Her beauty impresses Senator Dilworthy, who invites her and her foster-brother to come to Washington, and there they and Sellers are involved in the intrigues and financial deals of the unscrupulous senator. When Selby reappears, Laura resumes her liaison with him, later murdering him when he attempts to desert her again. She is acquitted after a spectacular court trial, but dies of heart failure when her career as a lecturer is a failure. A subplot is concerned with the love affair of Philip Sterling, a friend of Brierly, with Ruth Bolton, a Quaker girl, who takes up a medical career but finally marries him after he successfully exploits her father's coal-mining enterprise.

GILDER, Richard Watson (1844–1909), an assistant editor of *Scribner's Monthly* after 1870, and when it was succeeded by *The Century* (1881) remained as editor until his death. In this position he was a leader of New York artistic, civic, and social life. The best of his 16 volumes of poetry is *The New Day* (1875), a cycle of love sonnets. He characterized his verse as 'insufficient but irrepressible,' and called himself a 'squire of poesy.' He also wrote books on Lincoln and Cleveland, and his *Letters* (1916) were edited by his daughter Rosamund.

GILLETTE, William (1855–1937), made his debut as an actor in 1875, and as a successful adapter of novels and plays in 1881 with *The Private Secretary*, based on a German drama, and *Esmeralda*, based on Mrs.Burnett's novel. His 13 original plays include *Held by the Enemy* (1886) and *Secret Service* (1895), dramas of the Civil War; *Too Much Johnson* (1894), a farce; and *Clarice* (1905), a domestic drama. His most popular vehicle was *Sherlock Holmes* (1899), his own arrangement of the Conan Doyle stories, in which he continued to act until within a few years of his death.

GILLIS, Walter (1855–1925), New York printer, whose press, noted for the classical simplicity of its products, was considered at the turn of the century to be the most distinguished in the U.S., except for that of De Vinne. Gillis wrote his *Recollections of the Gillis Press.*

GILMAN, Daniel Coit (1831–1908), founder of the Sheffield Scientific School

at Yale, was professor of geography there (1855–72), president of the University of California (1872–5), and first president of Johns Hopkins (1876–1901). His stimulating personality, emphasis on creative research and freedom of thought and teaching, and the brilliant scholars he attracted, soon made Johns Hopkins an important American university and medical center. He resigned to accept the presidency of the Carnegie Institution, and remained active in other foundations and societies. His books include *University Problems* (1898) and *The Launching of a University* (1906).

GILPIN, WILLIAM (1813–94), editor, soldier, and politician, figured in Western history as a soldier in the Indian wars and the Mexican War, and as first territorial governor of Colorado. He wrote two visionary works: *The Central Gold Region* (1860), later published as *The Mission of the North American People* (1873), in which he pictured the Mississippi Valley as the future home of civilization; and *The Cosmopolitan Railway* (1890), proposing a railway to connect America with Asia by way of the Bering Strait.

GIOVANNITTI, ARTURO (1884–), Italian-born poet, came to the U.S. (1902), where, disillusioned by his observation of exploited labor, he became a lecturer, pamphleteer, and labor organizer. His only book in English, *Arrows in the Gale* (1914), is an impassioned prose poem condemning the prison system, which he had come to know at first hand through his activity in strikes.

Girl of the Golden West, The, play by Belasco (q.v.), produced in 1905 and published in 1925. It became the libretto of an Italian opera by Puccini (1910).

'The Girl,' saloon keeper and schoolmistress in a Far Western mining community, falls in love with Dick Johnson, an outlaw. Johnson, wounded, is tracked to her cabin by the sheriff, Jack Rance, who accepts her offer to decide by a game of poker whether he shall have her or, if he loses, discontinue his search for her lover. The sheriff is bested by her cheating, but Johnson is captured when he leaves the cabin. When the miners see how much she loves her outlaw, they free him, and Johnson and 'The Girl' start eastward to a new life.

Girl of the Limberlost, A, novel by Gene Stratton-Porter (q.v.).

Girl with the Green Eyes, The, play by Clyde Fitch (q.v.), produced in 1902 and published in 1905.

Jinny Tillman, a pathologically jealous woman, marries John Austin, whose candor makes him her exact opposite. Her brother Geoffrey confesses to John that while drunk he had secretly married a housemaid, but does not tell him of his second marriage to Ruth Chester, a respectable woman who knows nothing of her husband's bigamy. When Ruth confides in John concerning her marriage to Geoffrey, he tries to protect her and Geoffrey without revealing their secrets to his wife. Jinny, misinterpreting his relation with Ruth, accuses John of infidelity, and he leaves her. John returns only after the bigamy is disclosed, when Jinny, brokenhearted, attempts to commit suicide.

GIST, CHRISTOPHER (*c.*1706–59), frontiersman in the employ of the Ohio Company, was the first white man to explore southern Ohio and northeastern Kentucky, preceding Boone by 18 years. He accompanied Washington on a journey to warn the French out of the Ohio Valley (1753–4), and at this time saved Washington's life. He later guided the expedition of Braddock. His *Journals* were published in 1893.

Give Your Heart to the Hawks, free verse narrative by Jeffers (q.v.), the title poem of a volume published in 1933.

At a drunken beach party near their California home, Lance Fraser discovers his brother Michael and his wife Fayne in an embrace, and kills his brother. No one else has seen the incident, and Fayne, independent of ordinary moral standards, persuades her husband to conceal his crime, making it appear an accident. ('Oh, give your heart to the hawks for a snack o' meat But not to men.') Conscience-stricken, Lance torments himself by sleeping in Michael's room, seducing Michael's fiancée, Mary Abbey, and making love to Fayne on Michael's grave. Mary confesses to Fayne that she is pregnant, goes to San Francisco for an abortion, and later commits suicide. Fayne, herself pregnant, tries desperately to keep Lance from surrendering to police, but he is morbidly obsessed, and confesses to his puritanical old father, who becomes insane. Fayne packs their belongings and persuades her husband to leave the farm with her. At their first camp, on a trail near the coast, he becomes

insane, kills their horses with an axe, and leaps from a cliff to his death. Fayne buries him on the beach and returns, her courage and faith unwavering. ('I could not keep you, but your child in my body Will change the world.')

GLACKENS, WILLIAM JAMES (1870–1938), member of 'The Eight' (q.v.), studied at the Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts and in Paris. His early portraits and figure groups show the influence of Manet, but after 1910 he developed his characteristic manner, whose fluent surfaces, golden-red harmonies, and forms bathed in radiant light resemble the paintings of Renoir. He was also known as a magazine and newspaper illustrator.

Gladiator, The, blank verse play by R.M.Bird (q.v.), written in 1831 for Edwin Forrest, who acted in it more than 1,000 times. It was not published until 1919, because the actor feared it might be performed by another person.

Spartacus, a Thracian captured by the Romans, is forced to fight in a gladiatorial contest, on the promise that his wife, Senona, and his son will be freed. His adversary turns out to be his brother, Pharsarius, and the two plot a rebellion, which is successful until Pharsarius, due to his impetuosity and his love for the niece of the Praetor, leads part of the army in a premature attack on Rome, and is defeated. In a second attempt, Pharsarius dies and Senona and her son are killed. Spartacus, now hemmed in by the armies of Pompey and Crassus, makes a final attack, in which he is killed.

Glance at New York, A, melodrama by Benjamin A. Baker (q.v.).

GLASGOW, ELLEN [ANDERSON GHOLSON] (1874–), was born in Richmond, Virginia, of an aristocratic Southern family, and in 1897 published her first novel, *The Descendant. The Freeman, and Other Poems* (1902) is her only volume of verse. *The Voice of the People* (1900) was the first of a long series of novels recording the social history and political background of her state from 1850 to the present, and represented her revolt from the romantic, sentimental tradition of Southern fiction in depicting the genteel code of the Old South at bay before the new industrial revolution. This first realistic study, concerned with the rise of a poor farm boy to political prominence, and his death in a mob riot, was followed by such contrasts of life in the old and new social classes of the South as *The Battle-Ground* (1902), *The Deliverance* (1904), *The Wheel of Life* (1906), *The Ancient Law* (1908), *The Romance of a Plain Man* (1909), and *The Miller of Old Church* (1911). In *Virginia* (q.v.,1913) and *Life and Gabriella* (q.v., 1916), she wrote novels of Southern women victimized by a false and decaying code of chivalry. Three realistic studies of political and social conflicts in the new South followed: *The Builders* (1919); *One Man in His Time* (1922); and *Barren Ground* (q.v.,1925). At this time she declared that 'what the South needs now is —blood and irony,' and she proceeded to write three satirical and witty novels of manners, *The Romantic Comedians* (q.v., 1926), *They Stooped to Folly* (q.v.,1929), and *The Sheltered Life* (q.v., 1932). In *Vein of Iron* (q.v.,1935), she returned to the realistic study of rural life in Virginia, and *In This Our Life* (1941) is a novel of contemporary Virginia life. Her short stories were collected in *The Shadowy Third and Other Stories* (1923), and a complete edition of her *Works* was published in 1938.

GLASPELL, SUSAN (1882–), with her husband, George Cram Cook (q.v.), was a founder and leader of the Provincetown Players (q.v.) and The Playwrights' Theatre, for which, sometimes in collaboration with him, she wrote such one-act plays as *Suppressed Desires* (1914), satirizing psychoanalysis; *Trifles* (1916), tracing the events which led up to a woman's murder of her husband; *Close the Book* (1917); *A Woman's Honor* (1918); and *Tickless Time* (1918), satirizing romantic escapists from modern civilization. Her longer plays include: *Bernice* (1919), which reveals the character of a dead woman through her effect upon her family and friends; *The Inheritors* (1921), concerned with a Midwestern college founded by liberal families whose third generations clash, because one remains liberal but the other has become conservative; *The Verge* (1921), a psychological study of a neurotic woman driven to insanity; and *Alison's House* (q.v.,1930; Pulitzer Prize, 1931), dealing with the effect of a poet's life on her surviving family, and supposedly suggested by the life of Emily Dickinson. Her other works include: *Lifted Masks* (1912), a book of short stories; *The*

Road to the Temple (1926), a romantic biography of her husband; and novels which include *The Glory of the Conquered* (1909), the story of a scientist who goes blind and dies just as he is about to make a great discovery, *The Visioning* (1911), set in an army post, *Fidelity* (1915), about a girl who elopes with a married man, *Brook Evans* (1928), describing the lives of a mother and daughter, *The Fugitive's Return* (1929), dealing with an Iowa girl and her experiences on Cape Cod and in Greece, *Ambrose Holt and Family* (1931), and *The Morning Is Near Us* (1940), about the homecoming of an American woman traveler.

GLASS, Hugh (*fl.*1822–33), Far Western trapper, during an expedition to the mouth of the Yellowstone (1823) was attacked by a grizzly bear and left as dead by his companions, young James Bridger and a certain Fitzgerald, who took his rifle and equipment. He regained his strength and made his way to Fort Kiowa. Upon encountering his former companions, he forgave Bridger because of his youth, and Fitzgerald when he returned his rifle. He is believed to have been killed by the Blackfoot in 1833. His adventures were the basis of many legends, which have frequently been retold, as in Neihardt's *Song of Hugh Glass* (1915).

Gleason's Pictorial Drawing-Room Companion (1851–9), Boston weekly magazine, modeled on the *London Illustrated News*. Contributors included Sylvanus Cobb, T.S.Arthur, A.J.H.Duganne, T.B.Read, Horatio Alger, and Mrs.Sigourney. In 1854 it was sold to M.M.Ballou, who thereafter substituted his name for Gleason's in the title.

Glory of Columbia, The, see *André.*

Glory of the Nightingales, The, verse narrative by E.A.Robinson (q.v.).

Go West, young man, expression used in an editorial by Horace Greeley in the New York *Tribune*, and erroneously attributed to him. It was first used by John Babsone Lane Soule (1815–91) in an article in the Terre Haute *Express* (1851), and expressed the spirit of manifest destiny, exhorting young men to grow up with the country by taking advantage of opportunities in the unsettled West.

Godey's Lady's Book (1830–98), monthly miscellany founded at Philadelphia by Louis Antoine Godey (1804–78). Sarah J. Hale, the editor from 1837 to 1877, exerted an important influence on fashions and manners, for the magazine was widely considered a criterion of taste. Among the articles and pictures of fashions were included stories and other contributions from Emerson, Longfellow, Holmes, Hawthorne, Mrs.Stowe, Poe, W.G.Simms, and Paulding, although most of the writers were of a far lower caliber, conforming to the popular sentimental, moral, and didactic standards of the day. In 1892 the magazine was moved to New York, where as *Godey's Magazine* it published novelettes by Gertrude Atherton, Julian Hawthorne, H.H.Boyesen, and others. It was absorbed by Munsey's *Puritan.*

GODFREY, Thomas (1736–63), Philadelphia poet, whose lyric and narrative poems contributed to the *American Magazine* were imitative of the Cavalier poets. *The Court of Fancy* (1762), as he acknowledged, was strongly indebted to Chaucer and Pope. He is best known for his romantic tragedy, *The Prince of Parthia* (q.v.), which he wrote in 1759. *Juvenile Poems on Various Subjects. With the Prince of Parthia, a Tragedy* was a posthumous collection (1765).

GODKIN, Edwin Lawrence (1831–1902), came to America from Ireland at the age of 25, and founded *The Nation* (q.v.,1865), a liberal weekly commenting on public affairs, literature, and the arts. He was a disciple of the Bentham-Mill-Grote school of philosophy, believing that the ultimate social object is the greatest happiness of the greatest number, attained through liberty, under reason and justice. He edited the New York *Evening Post* (q.v.,1883–1900), with which he had merged *The Nation* in 1881. His fearless independence, zeal, and wide knowledge made it an extremely influential newspaper. He was consistently liberal, believed wholeheartedly in democracy, sympathized with the Union during the Civil War, attacked the corruption of Grant's regime, led the Mugwump revolt against Blaine, supported Cleveland but attacked his jingoism, was an implacable foe of 'free silver,' advocated a moderate tariff, deplored territorial expansion, and consistently worked for civil service reform. Thirty years prior to the formulation of F.J.Turner's ideas on the frontier, Godkin found that the democratic tide in

the U.S. 'owed most of its force and violence' to the influence of frontier life, which proved a dangerous leveling influence and caused the rise of the demagogue and spoilsman. His books include *Problems of Democracy* (1896) and *Unforeseen Tendencies of Democracy* (1898).

Gods Arrive, The, novel by Edith Wharton (q.v.).

God's Little Acre, novel by Erskine Caldwell (q.v.), published in 1933.

A Georgia mountaineer, Ty Ty Walden, has devoted 15 years to digging for gold on his farm. Always a 'religious man,' he has set aside one acre whose income shall go to the church, but has had to shift 'God's little acre' constantly, so as not to interfere with the digging. Ty Ty's sincere but adaptable morality appears also in the shiftless lives of his children: Buck, who is brutally jealous of his wife Griselda; Shaw, lazy at work but more diversified in his affections; promiscuous Darling Jill, who despises her timid fat suitor, Pluto Swint, a candidate for sheriff; and Rosamond, whose husband, Will Thompson, is a cotton weaver in a Carolina mill. Pluto drives Darling Jill to Scottsville, to bring the Thompsons back to dig, since the mill workers have long been on strike. Although Rosamond nearly kills her husband that night, when she finds him sleeping with Darling Jill, the next day they return together to the farm. Ty Ty, in need of funds, goes to Augusta to borrow money from his wealthy eldest son, Jim Leslie. Pluto, Darling Jill, and Griselda take Will and his wife back to Scottsville, where the mill owners have finally refused the union's demands. Will spectacularly fulfils his desire to possess Griselda, and next day dies a hero's death in a violent attempt to reopen the mill. Jim Leslie appears at the farm, mad with days of desire for Griselda. When he refuses to leave, Buck shoots him. Ty Ty, grief-stricken at this 'blood on my land,' allows Buck to commit suicide, and wonders 'how soon Shaw would come back to help him dig.'

Gods of the Lightning, play by Maxwell Anderson (q.v.) and Harold Hickerson.

GODWIN, PARKE (1816–1904), New Jersey-born journalist and reformer, graduated from Princeton (1834). He was a leading Fourierist (q.v.), publishing *The Harbinger* (q.v.) from Brook Farm, and writing *Democracy, Constructive and Pacific* (1843) and *A Popular View of the Doctrines of Fourier* (1844). Among his other books are *Vala* (1851), a fantastic tale; a partial translation of Goethe's *Autobiography* (1846–7); a biography of his father-in-law, Bryant (1883); and an edition of Bryant's works. Godwin was associated with the New York *Evening Post* (q.v., 1836–81), during the last four years succeeding Bryant as editor. He also edited the *Commercial Advertiser*.

GOETHALS, GEORGE WASHINGTON, see *Panama Canal*.

GOFFE, WILLIAM (*c.*1605–79), English Puritan, signer of the death warrant of Charles I. At the Restoration he fled to America, where he lived mainly in seclusion at Hadley, Massachusetts. He is supposed to have been instrumental in repelling an Indian attack during King Philip's War. He figures in Cooper's *The Wept of Wish-ton-Wish*, Barker's *Superstition*, Paulding's *The Puritan and His Daughter*, Hawthorne's 'The Grey Champion,' McHenry's *The Spectre of the Forest*, and Delia Bacon's *Tales of the Puritans*, as well as in Scott's *Peveril of the Peak*. A factual account of Goffe is contained in Ezra Stiles's *History of the Judges of Charles I* (1794). His father-in-law and fellow regicide, Edward Whalley, accompanied Goffe to America.

GOLD, MICHAEL (1896–), born in New York, where he was reared on the East Side, was led by his experiences in the slums and as a worker to become a Communist, and has been an editor of both *The Masses* and its successor, *The New Masses*. His books include: *120 Million* (1929), sketches of American workers; *Jews without Money* (1930), a semi-autobiographical novel; and *Change the World!* (1937), a collection of articles from the *Daily Worker* and *The New Masses*. He is also the author of three plays: *Hoboken Blues*, a fantasy of Negro life; *Fiesta*, dealing with revolution in Mexico; and *Battle Hymn* (1936), written in collaboration with Michael Blankfort, and concerned with the career of John Brown.

Gold, play by Eugene O'Neill (q.v.).

Gold rush, see *Forty-niners* and *Klondike*.

Gold-Bug, The, tale by Poe (q.v.), published as a prize story in the Philadelphia *Dollar Magazine* (1843) and reprinted in *Tales* (1845). The cryptograph on which

the story depends is a development of the interest that prompted Poe's essay, 'Cryptography' (*Graham's Magazine*, 1841).

William Legrand, an impoverished Southern gentleman, lives in seclusion on Sullivan's Island, South Carolina, his only companion being the Negro servant Jupiter. One day, when they capture a rare golden scarab beetle, marked with a sort of death's-head, they come upon a curious piece of parchment, which when heated proves to contain a secret cipher and a drawing of a death's-head. Legrand ingeniously decodes the cipher, which directs them to the buried treasure of Captain Kidd. With the aid of a friend and the superstitious Negro, both of whom he deliberately mystifies, Legrand locates an indicated tree, in which a skull is nailed, and, by dropping the beetle through an eye of the skull, they are able to establish a line on the position of the cache. Besides several skeletons, they exhume a fortune in old coins and jewels, with which Legrand re-establishes himself in society.

Golden Book of Springfield, The, Utopian narrative by Vachel Lindsay (q.v.).

Golden Bowl, The, novel by Henry James (q.v.), published in 1904.

Charlotte Stant, a daring, intelligent, but penniless American, has a brief affair in London with Prince Amerigo, an impoverished Italian aristocrat. They recognize that life together without money would be fatal to their love, and Charlotte returns to America. The Prince then falls in love with Maggie Verver, who, with her wealthy father, represents the best qualities of American culture: enthusiasm, moral fineness, the ability to assimilate new values, and a refreshing innocence and delicacy of outlook. Charlotte, a close friend of Maggie, returns to London, and, while shopping one day with the Prince, considers as a possible gift for Maggie a certain gilded crystal bowl, perfect except for an invisible flaw. She is persuaded not to buy it, but the bowl becomes a symbol of the Prince's character and the various flawed relationships in the narrative. Maggie, after her marriage, realizes that she has ended the happy relationship with her father, who, when he finds her worried about him, marries Charlotte. In Italy Maggie is happy with her reunited father, husband, and friend, as well as in the care of her son, but gradually she becomes aware of the renewed liaison of Charlotte and her husband. She conceals her discovery, and quietly sets herself the task of restoring the proper grouping of the couples. The Prince senses that she knows the truth, and is touched by her generosity and delicacy. Adam too realizes that she has learned that his wife and son-in-law are lovers; with the same tact and self-sacrifice that she has exhibited, he takes Charlotte to America, never to return. The Prince understands that, by losing his mistress, he has gained a new depth of character and a wife whose value he has only begun to appreciate. The process of 'conversion,' which began with the smashing of the golden bowl, is thus completed.

Golden Boy, play by Clifford Odets (q.v.).

Golden Calf, The, novel by H.H.Boyesen (q.v.).

Golden Day, The, critical work by Lewis Mumford (q.v.).

Golden Dog, The, romance by William Kirby (q.v.).

Golden Era, The (1852–93), newspaper and literary journal of San Francisco, during its heyday published writings by Bret Harte, Mark Twain, C.W.Stoddard, Prentice Mulford, Fitz Hugh Ludlow, Alonzo Delano, Ada Clare, Joaquin Miller, Adah Menken, and R.H.Newell. After the 1860's, the paper dwindled in significance.

Golden Hind, ship of Sir Francis Drake (q.v.).

Golden House, The, novel by C.D.Warner (q.v.).

Golden Legend, The, dramatic poem by Longfellow (q.v.), published in 1851 and incorporated in *Christus* (q.v.,1872). It is based on *Der Arme Heinrich*, by Hartmann von der Aue, 12th-century German minnesinger.

Prince Henry of Hoheneck, a student of alchemy, becomes ill, and Lucifer, in the guise of a physician, pretends to cure him. As a result, the prince is excommunicated and exiled. He takes refuge with a peasant family, whose daughter, Elsie, upon discovering that some maiden must offer her life to save his, resolves to sacrifice herself. Lucifer, now disguised as a priest, persuades the prince and the girl's mother to consent to her death. Henry and Elsie

journey to Salerno, where the sacrifice is to take place. On the way they see typical medieval examples of corruption and high faith existing side by side. As Elsie is about to die, the prince suddenly intervenes. Because of this good deed he is miraculously restored to health, and they marry.

GOLDMAN, EMMA (1869–1940), Russian-born exponent of anarchism (q.v.), came to the U.S. (1886), and soon began to write and lecture in behalf of various reform movements, including feminism and birth control. Her anarchist speeches, and the magazine *Mother Earth*, which she founded in 1906, attracted wide attention. She was twice jailed, once for advocating pacifism during the World War. In 1919 she and an associate, Alexander Berkman, were deported to Russia, but their dislike for the Bolshevist regime, and their criticism of it, led to their leaving the country. Miss Goldman's autobiography, *Living My Life* (1931), was published from her home in France, and her other works include *Anarchism and Other Essays* (revised edition, 1911), *The Social Significance of the Modern Drama* (1914), and *My Disillusionment in Russia* (1925).

GOLDMARK, RUBIN (1872–1936), New York musician, was a nephew of the Austrian composer Karl Goldmark, and numbered among his pupils such composers as Gershwin. His own best known work is a symphonic *Requiem* (1919), suggested by the Gettysburg Address, and he also composed such orchestral works as a *Negro Rhapsody*, *Hiawatha* overture, and a tone-poem, *The Call of the Plains*.

GOMPERS, SAMUEL (1850–1924), English-born labor organizer, was brought to the U.S. (1863), worked as a cigar maker, and with the union for this trade, and similar unions, formed the American Federation of Labor (q.v., 1886), whose president he remained (except for the year 1895) until his death. He led the A.F.of L. in its struggle for leadership against the Knights of Labor, kept his organization free of political entanglements, opposed socialistic ideas, and maintained simply that higher wages, shorter hours, and greater freedom were the primary aims of labor. He was the first U.S. labor leader to be recognized as a great public figure, and helped keep organized labor loyal to the government during the World War. *Seventy Years of Life and Labor* (2 vols., 1925) is his autobiography.

Gone With the Wind, novel by Margaret Mitchell (q.v.), published in 1936 and awarded the 1937 Pulitzer Prize.

Set in Georgia during the Civil War and Reconstruction, this long romantic tale centers in the adventures of Scarlett, a high-spirited wilful girl, daughter of Gerald O'Hara, an Irish immigrant who has become owner of Tara, a large plantation. Sixteen years old at the outbreak of the war, and in love with their neighbor Ashley Wilkes, she learns that Ashley plans to marry his cousin, the gentle Melanie Hamilton. Out of spite, Scarlett marries Melanie's brother Charles, youthful suitor of Honey Wilkes, Ashley's sister. Charles soon dies in the war, and Scarlett, living in Atlanta with her aunt 'Pittypat,' is plunged into poverty by the city's fall to the Northern invaders. In the struggle to survive after the war, Scarlett must carry the load of supporting her own family and also Ashley's, for her mother has died, her father has lost his mind, and Ashley, an idealistic aristocrat, is unable to adjust himself to the harsh realities of the new South. Scarlett is determined to keep Tara and to win financial security at any cost. She works in the fields, does other menial tasks, and, to get money for taxes, marries Frank Kennedy, her sister's fiancé. With Frank's money and her own unscrupulous determination, she establishes a lumber business in Atlanta, and forces Ashley to become manager of one of her mills. Frank is killed in avenging an insult to her, and Scarlett, now 27, marries the war profiteer, Rhett Butler, who attracts her by qualities similar to her own. Her selfishness and continuing infatuation for Ashley destroy Rhett's love, however, and he deserts her. When Melanie dies, and Ashley rejects Scarlett's sympathy, she realizes too late that Rhett is the one man she has ever really loved.

Good-bye, poem by Emerson (q.v.), written in 1823, and published in *The Western Messenger* (1839). In couplets of four-stress lines, it is an early expression of the theme of *Nature* (q.v.). The poet rejects the traditional institutions of the 'proud world,' in favor of 'going home' to the untrammeled solitude of nature, where 'man in the bush with God may meet.'

Good-Bye, My Fancy, poems and prose by Whitman (q.v.), published in 1891. The verse is reprinted in the final edition

of *Leaves of Grass* (q.v.), and the prose in the *Complete Writings* (1902).

Good Earth, The, novel by Pearl Buck (q.v.), published in 1931, awarded the Pulitzer Prize (1932) and dramatized by Owen and Donald Davis (1932). With *Sons* (1932) and *A House Divided* (1935), it forms a trilogy, *The House of Earth.*

Wang Lung, a Chinese peasant, rises to become a rich landowner and founder of a powerful family, but throughout his life he is dominated by a reverence for the soil. His marriage to O-lan, formerly a kitchen slave in the House of Hwang, intensifies this feeling, for her starved youth has impressed upon her the lessons of careful husbandry and the security that comes only from possession of land. Slowly but surely, during strenuous years of hardship, famine, flood, disease, and ceaseless labor, Wang Lung and patient, homely O-lan accumulate their acres, many of them bought from the declining House of Hwang. Three sons and two daughters are born to them, and they live more luxuriously. Wang Lung takes as second wife the attractive former prostitute, Lotus, but O-lan patiently manages the household until her death. Their sons grow to manhood, the two eldest superintending their father's affairs, while the youngest becomes a revolutionary leader. All three divorce their lives from the soil, however, and, although they plan to maintain their power as a family, they do not possess the vigor and intensity that has given signficance to the life of Wang Lung.

Good Gray Poet, sobriquet of Whitman, first applied to him by W.D.O'Connor (q.v.).

Good Morning, America, poem in free verse by Sandburg (q.v.), delivered as a Phi Beta Kappa poem at Harvard, is the title piece of a volume (1928). This Whitmanesque panorama of American life and ideals, distinguished by an apt use of vernacular phrases and folk sayings, sly humor, and skepticism of fashionable values, nevertheless exhibits a profound faith that the obstinate, misguided will of the people will triumph over the errors and abuses of modern mechanical civilization.

Good News from New England, see *Winslow, Edward.*

Good News from Virginia, sermon by Alexander Whitaker (q.v.).

Good Speed to Virginia, see *Gray, Robert.*

Good Woman, A, novel by Louis Bromfield (q.v.).

GOODHUE, BERTRAM GROSVENOR (1869–1924), architect, who, in association with R.A.Cram (q.v., 1892–1914), was the leading American exponent of modern Gothic style. Because of their successful use of the medieval idiom, in such buildings as All Saints' (Ashmont, Massachusetts), St.Thomas's (New York), and West Point, they established Gothic as the dominant style for ecclesiastical architecture and often for university buildings. Later, in independent practice, Goodhue turned to an expression more in accordance with contemporary life, as may be seen in the National Academy of Sciences (Washington, D.C.)and the Nebraska state capitol.

GOODRICH, SAMUEL GRISWOLD (1793–1860), Boston publisher, founder of the annual gift book, *The Token* (q.v., 1827–42). Under his pseudonym, Peter Parley, were published more than 100 moralistic books for juvenile instruction, beginning with *The Tales of Peter Parley about America* (1827). Sugar-coated with fiction, they were significant for their break away from religious didacticism. Goodrich was also the author of poetry, prose sketches, and volumes of advice to parents. His *Recollections of a Lifetime* (2 vols., 1856) tells of the many authors he knew, including Hawthorne and Epes Sargent, who were among those he employed to write children's books under his pseudonym.

GOODWIN, NAT[HANIEL] (1857–1919), began his career as a vaudeville comedian (1875) at Tony Pastor's Opera House. After 1889 he played in more serious productions, including Fitch's *Nathan Hale* and Augustus Thomas's *In Mizzoura.*

GOODYEAR, CHARLES (1800–60), inventor of the process of vulcanizing rubber by curing it in a mixture with sulphur, for which he obtained a patent in 1844.

GOOKIN, DANIEL (1612–87), born in England or Ireland, at the age of 18 was living on his father's Virginia plantation, and there later became a burgess, captain, and large landholder. An ardent Puritan, he emigrated to Massachusetts (1644), where for 35 years he was re-elected as deputy to the General Court, and among

other offices was appointed major-general of the colony's forces (1681). He was interested in the welfare of the Indians, and was 'chosen to be ruler over the praying Indians,' protecting them during King Philip's War. His posthumously published books, *Historical Collection of the Indians in New England* (1792) and *An Historical Account of the Doings and Sufferings of the Christian Indians* (1836), are attempts at scientific history, marked by a humanitarian attitude toward the Indians.

GORDON, Caroline, see, *Tate, Allen.*

GORDON, Charles William (1860–1937), Canadian clergyman, under the pseudonym Ralph Connor wrote a number of popular novels set in the lumber and mining regions of western Canada. Among these are: *Beyond the Marshes* (1899); *The Sky Pilot* (1899); and *The Prospector* (1904). *Postscript to Adventure* (1938) is his posthumously published autobiography.

GORDON, William (1728–1807), born in England, came to Massachusetts (1770), attracted by sympathy with the American cause. In order to collect materials for a contemporary history he hobnobbed with the leading figures and supposedly collected a great amount of material. His book was so outspoken that it could not be published either in England or America as originally written, and was entirely recast when printed in London as *The History of the Rise, Progress, and Establishment of the Independence of the United States of America* (1788). This work, which was once acclaimed by Edward Channing as ' the most valuable history of the Revolution from a British pen,' has been discovered to be a wholesale plagiarism from Dodsley's *Annual Register* and the work of David Ramsay. It is probable that some 100 of the most offensive pages were stricken from the manuscript and the offensiveness mitigated by the plagiarism of material that would please the English.

GORGAS, William Crawford, see *Panama Canal.*

GORGES, Sir Ferdinando (*c.*1566–1647), English soldier, was one of the organizers of the Virginia Company of Plymouth (1606), employed John Smith to head successive unsuccessful settlements in Maine, and himself directed commercial voyages to New England. He obtained a revised charter for a Council for New England (1620), which set the boundaries of 'New England' between 40° and 48° N. latitude, and wrote *The Briefe Narration of the Original Undertakings of the Advancement of Plantations into Parts of America* (1647) in a vain attempt to win financial support for the enterprise. His schemes for an aristocratic Anglican settlement failed because of the surprising success of the grants to the Pilgrims (1620) and to the Massachusetts Bay Colony (1628). Negotiations to make all New England a royal province, under the governorship of Gorges, were never completed because of the growing power of the Puritans in England. He received instead the title to the province of Maine (1639), but could not acquire the financial backing necessary for extensive colonization.

Ferdinando Gorges (1630-1718), his grandson, author of *America Painted to the Life* (1658–9), sold to Massachusetts his inherited title to Maine (1677). His book's account of Massachusetts is strongly indebted to Johnson's *Wonder-Working Providence.*

GORMAN, Herbert S[herman] (1893–), New York author and journalist, whose books include the biographies, *A Victorian American—Henry Wadsworth Longfellow* (1926); *Hawthorne—A Study in Solitude* (1927); *The Incredible Marquis* (1929), the story of Dumas *père*; *Scottish Queen* (1932), the life of Mary of Scotland; and *James Joyce* (1940). He has also written such novels as *Jonathan Bishop* (1933); *Suzy* (1934); and *The Mountain and the Plain* (1936), a romance of the French Revolution.

GORTON, Samuel (*c.*1592–1677), came to Boston from England (1637), but was soon banished because of his Antinomian beliefs. He followed Roger Williams to Providence, but seceded from his group to found Shawomet, Rhode Island (1643). Imprisoned in 1644 as an enemy of 'civil authority among the people of God,' he spent four years in exile in England, returning (1648) to live peaceably at Shawomet, which he renamed Warwick in honor of his protector. Gorton contended that Christ was the only proper object of worship, denied the Trinity, claimed that each man should be his own priest, wished to abolish all outward ordinances, taught a conditional immortality dependent upon

individual character, claimed that by union with Christ one partook of God's perfection, and denied the existence of heaven and hell. Among his pamphlets setting forth these theories were *Simplicities Defense against Seven-Headed Policie* (1646), a reply to Edward Winslow's *Hypocrisie Unmasked* (1646); *Saltmarsh Returned from the Dead* (1655); and *An Antidote against the Common Plague of the World* (1657). His followers, the Gortonites, persisted as a distinct group for nearly a century.

GOSNOLD, Bartholomew (*fl.* 1572–1607), English navigator and colonizer, commanded an expedition of exploration along the New England coast and the islands of Nantucket sound (1602). Gabriel Archer and John Brierton (q.v.), members of the expedition, prepared accounts that were reprinted in Purchas. In 1606 Gosnold brought some of the first settlers to Virginia in the *God Speed.*

Gospel of Wealth, The, essay by Andrew Carnegie (q.v.).

Gotham, sobriquet of New York City, derived from the jocular reputation of the 'wise men' of Gotham, England, noted for their foolish actions. The name was first so used in Irving's *Salmagundi* (1807–8).

Gothic Revival, aesthetic movement, primarily in architecture, imitating the arts of the Middle Ages. The movement began in England (*c.*1770), with Horace Walpole's design of his home, Strawberry Hill, and Latrobe introduced it to the U.S. (1800). Richard Upjohn was the outstanding American architect in the Gothic style, until it was succeeded by complete eclecticism (*c.*1860). The vogue of medievalism in the Gothic romance was simultaneous.

Gothic romance, variety of fiction widely popular in 18th-century England, whence it spread to the U.S. and throughout Europe, especially influencing German literature. The vogue of medievalism, sensationalism, and supernatural horrors was developed by Walpole's *Castle of Otranto* (1764), set in a background of romantic 'Gothic' architecture; Beckford's *Vathek* (1786); M.G.Lewis's *The Monk* (1795); *The Mysteries of Udolpho* (1795) and other romances of horror by Mrs.Radcliffe; and later by Godwin and Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley. In the U.S., Charles Brockden Brown (q.v.) was the leading author of Gothic romances, and *The Asylum* (q.v.) is a typical example of the genre, which strongly influenced such writers about the mysterious and the supernatural as Poe and Hawthorne (qq.v.), although Poe's statement, 'the terror of which I write is not of Germany, but of the soul,' is applicable to both of them.

Gottlieb, Max, character in *Arrowsmith* (q.v.).

GOTTSCHALK, Louis Moreau (1829–69), pianist and composer born in New Orleans, studied in Paris, where he began to compose his picturesque, sentimental piano pieces, some of which are still played. He had a spectacular career as virtuoso and conductor before his death in Rio de Janeiro. His autobiography was published as *Notes of a Pianist* (1881).

GOUDY, Frederic W[illiam] (1865–), type designer and printer, founded his Village Press (1903) in Illinois, and three years later moved it to New York, where until its destruction by fire (1939) it was famous for expressing the character of the text in its design and printing of books. Goudy has designed some hundred new type faces. His writings include *The Alphabet* (1918), *Elements of Lettering* (1921), *The Capitals from the Trajan Column at Rome* (1936), and *Typologia* (1940).

GOUGH, John Bartholomew (1817–86), English-born bookbinder in New York, rescued from alcoholism by a temperance pledge, and beginning in 1842 devoted himself entirely to lecturing in the cause of temperance. He wrote an *Autobiography* (1845, revised 1869) and *Platform Echoes* (1885). Honoré Morrow's *Tiger! Tiger!* (1930) is a fictional biography of Gough.

GOULD, Edward Sherman (1805–85), New York author of a novel, a comedy, sketches, and a good deal of hack work. His lectures, *American Criticism of American Literature* (1836), decried native letters and praised the British.

GOULD, Jay (1836–92), New York financier, began to speculate in railroad stocks in 1860, and in 1867–8 combined with James Fisk and Daniel Drew, fellow directors of the Erie Railroad, in a sensational and extra-legal competition with Cornelius Vanderbilt for control of the road. Fisk and Gould emerged victorious, and with William M. Tweed and Peter B. Sweeney engaged in other operations typical of Gilded Age finance, including an

attempt to corner the gold market, which caused the panic of Black Friday (Sept. 24, 1869). Gould was then ousted from the Erie, but, having a fortune of some $25,000,000, turned to the West, where he bought control of the Union Pacific, Kansas Pacific, and other railroads. His other investments included ownership of the New York *World* (1879–83), the city's elevated railways, and a controlling interest in the Western Union Telegraph Company. After his death these properties were inherited by his son, George Jay Gould (1864–1923), who maintained control until about 1910.

Grabhorn Press, founded at San Francisco (1920) by Edwin and Robert Grabhorn. It is significant not only for its fine craftsmanship but also for its scholarly reprints and original publications of early Western Americana. A *Bibliography* of its publications was issued in 1940.

GRADY, Henry Woodfin (1850–89), Georgia journalist and orator, who as editor of the *Atlanta Constitution* (1879–89) and as a speaker was an important influence in the rebuilding of the South, by pointing the way to economic and racial readjustments. His famous oration, 'The New South,' was delivered before the New England Club in New York City, in December 1886, and published in *The New South and Other Addresses* (1904) and in his *Complete Orations and Speeches* (1910).

Graham's Magazine (1826–58), monthly literary journal, founded at Philadelphia as *Atkinson's Casket,* was an unimpressive miscellany until 1839, when it was purchased by George Rex Graham (1813–94). After he merged it with *Burton's Gentleman's Magazine* (q.v.,1840), it became one of the best periodicals in the country. Poe was literary editor of *Graham's Magazine,* (1841–2), and increased its circulation from 5,000 to 37,000. Among his contributions were such acute criticism as his review of the *Twice-Told Tales*; 'The Murders in the Rue Morgue,' 'A Descent into the Maelström,' and 'The Masque of the Red Death'; and poems including 'To Helen.' R.W.Griswold supplanted Poe (1842–3), and later editors included Bayard Taylor and C.G.Leland. The success of the magazine demonstrated the feasibility of paying liberally for contributions, so that it had such contributors as Lowell, N.P.Willis, Bryant, Cooper, Longfellow, C.F.Hoffman, Paulding, and Simms. It was also noted for its colored fashion plates, and the engravings of John Sartain.

GRAHAME, James (1790–1842), Scottish author of a *History of the Progress of the United States of North America* (4 vols., 1827–36), which, although generally neglected, was praised by C.F.Adams, Prescott, and Josiah Quincy. The work is mainly a political narrative, but particular attention is given to the legal aspects of colonial social history.

GRAINGER, Percy [Aldridge] (1882–), Australian-born composer and pianist, since 1915 has lived mainly in the U.S. His best known compositions are symphonic and piano settings of English, Irish, and American folk tunes.

Grand Army of the Republic, founded in 1866 as an organization of Civil War veterans of the Union army and navy. There were more than 400,000 members in 1890. Nominally nonpolitical, the G.A.R. was predominantly Republican, and through this party won the passage of pension bills in Congress. Other activities included the establishment of an annual Memorial Day and the care of disabled members and bereaved families.

Grandfather's Chair, stories for children by Hawthorne (q.v.).

Grandissimes, *The: A Story of Creole Life,* novel by G.W.Cable (q.v.), published in 1880.

During the early 19th century there is a feud between the Grandissimes and the De Grapions, aristocratic Louisiana families. One of its results has been the death in a duel of Nancanou De Grapion, and his beautiful widow, Aurora, is the last of the family to survive. She lives with her daughter, Clotilde, in impoverished seclusion in New Orleans. Joseph Frowenfeld, a young apothecary, through his friend, old Dr. Keene, and his whimsical Creole clerk, Raoul Innerarity, becomes acquainted with both Honoré Grandissime, banker and head of his family, and the De Grapions, who nurse him during an illness. The apothecary falls in love with Clotilde, and Honoré loves Aurora, but various intrigues and their social positions keep them apart. Finally, haughty old Agricola Fusilier, who killed Nancanou, antagonizes Honoré's quadroon half-brother, who stabs him. At the old man's deathbed, Honoré's sister effects a

reconciliation of the families, and the two couples are enabled to marry.

Grandmothers, The, novel by Glenway Wescott (q.v.).

Granger movement, originated in a secret association, founded by O.H.Kelley and others (Dec. 1867) as the National Grange of Patrons of Husbandry, to secure improved agricultural methods and protective legislation for farmers. The power of the local granges, distributed throughout the U.S., reached its height *c.*1875, and supported the Greenback party after 1876. By gaining control of state legislatures, the granges sought to obstruct the growing transportation monopolies, leading to the 'Granger Cases' (1876), in which the Supreme Court authorized state regulation of public utilities, and to the Interstate Commerce Act (1887). In 1889 the granges won their battle for the establishment of a Department of Agriculture. Their recent activities have been nonpolitical efforts for the improvement of the status and methods of agricultural communities.

Grangerford family, characters in *Huckleberry Finn* (q.v.).

GRANT, Anne McVickar (1755-1838), Scottish author, as a young girl lived for some years near Albany, New York, where her father, a captain in the British army, was stationed. Of her life at this time she left a record in the anonymous *Memoirs of An American Lady* (1808), an interesting source of information on contemporary manners.

GRANT, Robert (1852–1940), Boston jurist and author, graduated from Harvard (1873), and won his first literary success with *An Average Man* (1883), a study of two young New York lawyers, one of whom is willing to pursue a simple, honest career, while the other attempts by every means to gain money and fame. His other novels include: *Face to Face* (1886), contrasting American and English standards; *Unleavened Bread* (q.v.,1900), about a woman whose desire for prestige and dominance outweighs all moral considerations; *The Undercurrent* (1904) and *The Orchid* (1905), studies of divorce in wealthy society; *The Chippendales* (1909), about a conservative Boston family, and the thinning out of its original fine qualities; *The High Priestess* (1915), dealing with a women's attempt to have a career; *The Bishop's Granddaughter* (1925), satirizing American divorce laws; and *The Dark Horse* (1931), concerned with Boston politics and society. In addition to a volume of poetry and several collections of essays, Grant has written an autobiography, *Fourscore* (1934). In 1927 he was appointed by the governor of Massachusetts to the advisory investigating committee on the Sacco-Vanzetti case.

GRANT, Ulysses Simpson (1822–85), 18th President of the U.S. (1869–77), was reared on an Ohio farm, attended West Point, served in the Mexican War, and retired to enter business in Ohio. Early in the Civil War he was made a major-general, following a successful campaign in western Kentucky. In July 1863, by a joint land and river campaign, he captured Vicksburg and Port Hudson, splitting the Confederacy in two, and after his successful Tennessee campaigns Lincoln made him commander-in-chief of the Union forces. Grant himself led the Army of the Potomac against Lee in the Wilderness campaign (q.v.), the siege of St.Petersburg, and the subsequent strategy that led to Lee's surrender at Appomattox. His personal popularity, and his stand with the radical Republicans against President Johnson, caused his presidential nomination, and after his election he authorized punitive Reconstruction policies in the South, keeping alive sectional hatred. His cabinet appointments were misguided, and he was duped by disreputable financiers and politicians, so that serious scandals involved some of the highest in his administration. Upon retirement, he invested his funds in a private banking house that collapsed (1884), causing him to seek a means of livelihood in writing his *Personal Memoirs* (2 vols., 1885–6), which rank high among military accounts, because of their direct style and unassuming manner. Biographies of Grant include those by Hamilton Garland and W.E.Woodward, and Matthew Arnold wrote a critical appraisal in his *Civilization in the United States* (q.v.).

Grapes of Wrath, The, novel by Steinbeck (q.v.), published in 1939 and awarded the 1940 Pulitzer Prize. The narrative chapters alternate with panoramic essays that show the social significance of the migrant labor problem.

The Joads, expropriated Oklahoma farmers from the Dust Bowl region (q.v.),

set out in a dilapidated automobile for California, which they believe is a land of plenty. The family includes Grampa, a lusty old man who was never 'house broke'; Granma, weary and fanatically religious; lonely Uncle John; Pa, who has tacitly surrendered the rule of the family to his wife; Ma, brave, strong, and patient, who dreams and plans for the others; dull-witted Noah; Tom, just released from a jail term for killing a man in a fight; Al, a cocky youth who admires Tom's calm strength; Rose of Sharon, absorbed in love for her weak husband, Connie, with her unborn child; and the children, Ruthie and Winfield. The caravan also includes Casy, an ex-preacher and rustic socialist. Grampa and Granma die, and Noah deserts, during the hard journey, but the Joads drive on ('It don't take no nerve to do somepin when there ain't nothin' else you can do.') In California they are hounded by sheriffs and labor contractors, Casy is jailed, and Connie runs away. Haunted by starvation, they spend some time in a government camp, but leave reluctantly to pick fruit at a black-listed orchard. Tom meets Casy, who is leading the strikers, and during an attack by vigilantes Casy is killed, and Tom in turn kills his murderer. The Joads escape, and, while hiding Tom, work at picking cotton. Exhausted and fearful, Ma finally sends Tom away, and he plans to continue Casy's work as a labor organizer. During a storm, Rose of Sharon gives birth to a stillborn child. Jobless, the Joads face starvation, but Ma cries, 'We ain't gonna die out. People is goin' on—changin' a little, maybe, but goin' right on.'

GRATTAN, C[LINTON] HARTLEY (1902–), literary critic and contemporary historian, whose writings include: *Bitter Bierce* (1929), a biography; *Why We Fought* (1929); *The Three Jameses—A Family of Minds* (1932); *Preface to Chaos: War in the Making* (1936); and *The Deadly Parallel* (1939), comparing current policies with those that led up to the entrance of the U.S. into the first World War. He has edited *The Critique of Humanism* (1930), an attack on the New Humanism, and Timothy Flint's *Recollections of the Last Ten Years* (1932).

GRATTAN, THOMAS COLLEY (1792–1864), British consul at Boston (1839–46), whose book, *Civilized America* (2 vols., 1859), which he calls 'a record of events, a gallery of portraits, and a miscellany of opinions,' is an important contemporary record combining contempt for U.S. social standards with praise for the country's independence, order, and energy.

Graustark, romance by G.B.McCutcheon (q.v.).

GRAY, ASA (1810–88), Harvard professor and leading botanist of his time in the U.S., and also famous as the foremost American advocate and supporter of Darwin, in such books as *Darwiniana* (1876).

GRAY, ROBERT (*fl.*1609), author of *Good Speed to Virginia* (1609), a tract in the form of a sermon, published in London to promote colonization in Virginia. This was the third printed work relating to the colony, and its chief argument for immigration was that of the overpopulation of Great Britain.

GRAYDON, ALEXANDER (1752–1818), captain of a volunteer battalion during the Revolutionary War, wrote a volume of *Memoirs* (1811), valuable as a historical source.

GRAYSON, DAVID, pseudonym of R.S. Baker (q.v.).

GRAYSON, WILLIAM J[OHN] (1788–1863), South Carolina author, lawyer, and politician, represented his state in Congress (1833–7). An ardent champion of slavery, he is remembered for his long didactic poem, *The Hireling and the Slave* (1854), contrasting the idyllic life of a Negro slave with the harsh existence of a Northern wage-slave. He also wrote: *Letters of Curtius* (1851), defending slavery as a social scheme in which 'labor and capital are associated on a large scale and their interests combined'; *Letter to Governor Seabrook* (1850), against secession; and *The Country* (1858), a neoclassical poem praising rural life. A later edition of *The Hireling and the Slave* (1856) includes 'Chicora,' a romantic verse treatment of an Indian legend.

Graysons, The, novel by Eggleston (q.v.).

Great Awakening, THE, series of religious revivals, which began (*c.*1734) with the evangelicalism of Jonathan Edwards (q.v.). Revivalism was soon spread by such leaders as Theodore Frelinghuysen of the New Jersey Dutch Reformed Church; Gilbert Tennent, a New Jersey Presbyterian; and such lesser men as Benjamin Colman, Joseph Bellamy, George White-

field, and James Davenport. Although the movement centered in New England, it extended throughout the colonies (*c.*1740–50). After the emotional fervor had spent its force in New England, a controversy developed between the New Lights of western Massachusetts, who held to the theology of Edwards, and the Old Lights of Boston, who were led by Charles Chauncey, and developed a liberalism that culminated in Unitarianism. A similar division in the Presbyterian Church split into a New Side and an Old Side, the former, led by William and Gilbert Tennent, being instrumental in the founding of Princeton University. The original frenzied revival occasioned renewed missionary work among the Indians, in which Eleazar Wheelock was active, and which led to the founding of Dartmouth College.

Great Divide, The, play by William Vaughn Moody (q.v.).

Great Emancipator, The, sobriquet of Lincoln (q.v.).

Great Gatsby, The, novel by F.Scott Fitzgerald (q.v.), published in 1925. It was dramatized by Owen Davis (1926).

Nick Carraway, a young Midwesterner who sells bonds in New York, lives at West Egg, Long Island, which is separated from the city by an ash-dump, whose distinctive feature is an oculist's faded billboard with a pair of great staring eyes behind yellow spectacles, symbolic of an obscenely futile world. Nick's neighbor is mysterious Jay Gatsby, whose mansion and fabulous entertainments are financed by bootlegging and other criminal activities. As a poor army lieutenant, Gatsby had fallen in love with Nick's beautiful cousin Daisy, who later married Tom Buchanan, an unintelligent, brutal man of wealth. Through Nick, he manages to meet Daisy again, impresses her by his extravagant devotion, and makes her his mistress. Her husband takes as his mistress Myrtle Wilson, sensual wife of a garageman. When her husband becomes jealous and imprisons her in her room, Myrtle escapes, runs out on the highway, and is accidentally hit by Daisy, who drives on. Gatsby tries to protect Daisy, and Tom, to whom she has become reconciled, brings his hatred of her lover to a climax by telling Myrtle's husband that it was Gatsby who killed her. Wilson shoots Gatsby and then himself.

Great God Brown, The, play by Eugene O'Neill (q.v.), produced and published in 1926. The concept of multiple personality is expressed in the changeable masks worn by the characters, removed only when they are alone or in the presence of sympathetic persons.

William A. Brown is a 'visionless demigod of our new materialistic myth . . . inwardly empty and resourceless.' His friend, Dion Anthony, represents the 'creative pagan acceptance of life . . . distorted by morality from Pan . . . into a Mephistopheles mocking himself in order to feel alive.' Their fathers have been partners in a firm of builders, but when Dion marries Margaret, whom they both love, he retires from the firm to study painting. Margaret loves Dion's mask, which protects his sensitive nature from intrusion, and never comes to know his inner self. When he fails as a painter, she secures a place for him in the employ of Brown, who still loves her. Dion seeks consolation with Cybel, a prostitute, who embodies the honest qualities of earthly love, and is the only person who understands him. Although he is the creative force in their building enterprises, and retains the gift of living, which Brown secretly envies, Dion degenerates and finally dies while alone with Brown, who takes his mask and becomes Margaret's husband until he confesses the deception. In a confused chase by police who accuse him of murder, Brown is shot. He dies in the arms of Cybel, who affirms the existence of God, and tells him 'There is only love.' Margaret finds fulfilment in her sons, and in her timeless love for the mask of Dion.

Great Meadow, The, novel by Elizabeth M. Roberts (q.v.), published in 1930.

Diony Hall grows up, during the 1770's, on the Virginia farm of her scholarly father, and at 17 marries adventurous Berk Jarvis, with whom she makes the westward trek over Boone's Trace (the Wilderness Road). Their companions, on the difficult journey to Harrod's Fort in Kentucky, include Berk's mother Elvira, a powerful, self-reliant widow, his younger brother Jack, and Evan Muir, an experienced hunter and frontiersman. Evan and Berk work rapidly at the Fort, building homes and plowing fields in the near-by wilderness. There is constant danger from the lurking Shawnees, and one day, when

Diony and Elvira go outside the stockade to gather nuts, the older woman is murdered and scalped, while Diony is clubbed and left as dead. She recovers, but Berk determines to avenge his mother, and, after the birth of their son, leaves with a raiding party. Rumors drift back of his capture and death, but Diony refuses to believe them and carries on the work, aided by Evan and other neighbors. After a year she accepts her widowhood, marries Evan, and moves with him to the house Berk had built. Two years later Diony bears a second son, and begins to feel secure in her new home, when Berk reappears, ill and gaunt, after three years of wandering, hardships, and captivity among the Indians. Diony realizes that Berk is her true mate, and, choosing him, keeps her two sons with her, while Evan returns to his solitary life.

Great Meadows, see *French and Indian Wars.*

Great Plains, see *Plains region.*

Great Stone Face, The, allegorical tale by Hawthorne (q.v.), published in *The Snow Image and Other Twice-Told Tales* (1851). 'Old Stony Phiz' is said to represent Webster.

In a mountain valley dominated by a towering rock formation that resembles a noble, majestic face, lives the boy Ernest, who learns from his mother the legend that some day a great man bearing the features of the Face will visit the community. He eagerly awaits the coming of this man, but, though he grows to old age, and sees Mr.Gathergold the banker, Old Blood-and-Thunder the general, and Old Stony Phiz the statesman, all reputed to resemble the Face, his expectations are disappointed. He has meanwhile lived an honest, helpful life, communing with the spirit of the landmark, and has come to be honored and revered. A poet visits him, in whom again Ernest hopes to see the features of the image, but fails. At an outdoor meeting where Ernest preaches, the poet sees that it is Ernest himself who resembles the Stone Face. The simple, venerable old man, unconscious of this, continues to await his hero.

Great Tradition, The, critical work by Granville Hicks (q.v.).

Great War, see *World War.*

Greek Revival, neoclassical movement in architecture and the arts, occurred in Europe and the U.S. during the late 18th and early 19th centuries, and was directly influenced by archaeological excavations in Greece, and at Pompeii and Herculaneum. In the U.S. it primarily affected architecture. Although Jefferson's design for the Virginia state capitol (1785) had the plan of a Roman temple, the revival was really Greek, and had as its most influential architects Latrobe, Mills, Strickland, and T.U.Walter. The Capitol (q.v.) and most other federal and state buildings have been created under the influence of this style, which later shared supremacy (*c.*1850–60) with the style of the Gothic Revival.

Greeks Had a Word for It, The, comedy by Zoë Akins (q.v.).

GREELEY, HORACE (1811–72), born in New Hampshire, worked at various journalistic and printing jobs until he was 23, when he founded the *New Yorker,* a critical weekly which he continued until 1841. He also edited Whig campaign papers, and, encouraged by Seward and Thurlow Weed, founded the *New-York Tribune* (q.v.), which he edited for 30 years. Greeley's chief assistant (1849–62) was Charles A. Dana (q.v.). The great influence of the paper was due to Greeley's trenchant editorials, which attacked monopolies, and advocated labor organization, a protective tariff, temperance, and a homestead law, supporting the latter with his famous phrase, 'Go West, Young Man!' He also championed Fourierism, helped found the North American Phalanx, and opposed all aids to slavery, particularly the Mexican War, the Compromise of 1850, and the Kansas-Nebraska Bill. He exerted his influence in behalf of Lincoln's election, and after the Civil War favored Negro suffrage. In 1872 he was the presidential candidate of the Liberal Republican and Democratic parties, but was badly defeated. This disappointment, and the death of his wife a few days before, caused him to become insane, and he soon died. His books include *The American Conflict* (2 vols.,1864–6), a history of Abolitionism and the Civil War, and *Recollections of a Busy Life* (1868).

GREEN, ANNA KATHERINE (1846–1935), author of *The Leavenworth Case* (1878), which, though not the first detective story nor the greatest creation of a master detective, established the formula and the popularity of this new literary form

in the U.S. She wrote many other detective novels.

GREEN, ANNE (1899–), Georgia-born author, like her brother Julien has lived most of her life in France, which is the background of her novels. These include *The Selbys* (1930), *Reader, I Married Him* (1931), *Marietta* (1932), *Fools Rush In* (1934), *That Fellow Perceval* (1935), and 16 *Rue Cortambert* (1937), primarily light, satirical stories of expatriates from the Southern states. *A Marriage of Convenience* (1933), published in England as *Painter's Despair*, is a humorous treatment of changing French standards, while *Winchester House* (1936) is a somber story set in New York. *Paris* (1938) is a character study of a French business woman, *The Silent Duchess* (1939) is a story of 18th-century France, and *The Delamer Curse* (1940) tells of the exorcising of a curse laid upon a Franco-American family.

GREEN, BARTHOLOMEW, see *Boston News-Letter.*

GREEN, JULIEN (1900–), brother of Anne Green, was born in Paris of American parents, and has lived most of his life in France. His first book, *Le Voyageur sur la Terre*, a novelette translated as *The Pilgrim on the Earth* (1929), concerns an American college student who dies after being driven insane by hallucinations. Later novels, also written in French, are equally sombre psychological studies of individuals, superficially commonplace, but actually the prey of deep tortured passions. These include: *Mont-Cinère* (1926), translated as *Avarice House* (1927); *Adrienne Mésurat* (1927), translated as *The Closed Garden* (1928); and *Léviathan*, translated as *The Dark Journey* (1929). *Personal Record* (1939) is his journal (1928–39), and other works in English translation include *Christine and Other Stories* (1930), *The Strange River* (1932), *The Dreamer* (1934), *Midnight* (1936), and *Then Shall the Dust Return* (1941).

GREEN, PAUL [ELIOT] (1894–), North Carolina playwright, professor at the state university, began his career with the Carolina Playmakers (q.v.), and is the author of many one-act plays written in the dialect of the Negroes with whom they deal. Collections have been issued as *The Lord's Will and Other Carolina Plays* (1925), *Lonesome Road* (1926), and *In the Valley* (1928). Perhaps the best known of his one-act plays is *Hymn to the Rising Sun* (1936), an indictment of prison-camp conditions. *In Abraham's Bosom* (q.v., 1927; Pulitzer Prize) is a long play of Negro life, based on his earlier play (1924) of this title and *Your Fiery Furnace* (1923). Other full-length plays include: *The Field God* (1927), about repressed, deeply religious poor whites; *Tread the Green Grass* (1929), a folk play; *Roll, Sweet Chariot* (1934), presenting the tragic spirit and philosophy of Negro life; *The House of Connelly* (1932), concerned with the decadence of Southern planters; *Johnny Johnson* (1937), a musical play written with Kurt Weill; and *The Lost Colony* (1937), produced annually on Roanoke Island, an historical pageant of the early settlement there. *Wide Fields* (1928) is a book of short stories, and *Out of the South* (1939) is a collection of 15 previously published plays.

GREEN, WILLIAM (1873–), spent his youth as a coal mine worker, became prominent in labor union activities, and since 1924 has been president of the American Federation of Labor (q.v.).

Green Bay Tree, The, novel by Louis Bromfield (q.v.), published in 1924, and dramatized (1927) as *The House of Women.*

Julia Shane, proud, shrewd, and self-reliant, at the death of her husband becomes mistress of Cypress Hill, the luxurious family estate in a growing Midwestern industrial town. She has two daughters: Irene, a pious Catholic, and Lily, a distinguished beauty, with fine tastes and an independent nature. The governor of the state seeks to marry Lily, who, although she is pregnant as the result of their intimacy, refuses him and goes to live in Paris, where her son Jean is born. Julia grows old in haughty seclusion, while Irene, forbidden to become a nun, devotes herself to charity among the foreign-born mill workers, one of whom, Stepan Krylenko, becomes her disciple. Lily reluctantly returns from Paris at Julia's death. There is at the time a great strike at the mills, aided by Irene's funds and led by Krylenko, with whose vitality and simplicity Lily falls in love. The strikers are defeated, but Krylenko continues his activities in other industrial centers. Irene enters a convent, and Lily returns to her romantic freedom in

Paris, taking with her a young cousin, Ellen Tolliver, who as Lilli Barr becomes a famous pianist. Lily's aristocratic lover is killed in the World War, Jean is wounded, and she herself engages in relief work, finally marrying a cabinet minister because 'a lonely old age isn't pleasant.'

Green Grow the Lilacs, folk comedy by Lynn Riggs (q.v.), produced and published in 1931. It is intended 'to recapture in a kind of nostalgic glow . . . the great range of mood which characterized the old folk songs and ballads.'

The scene is a farm community in Indian Territory (Oklahoma) in 1900, and among the characters are: Aunt Eller Murphy; her orphaned niece, pretty Laurey Williams; Jeeter Fry, their ugly hired man, whose passion and vindictiveness Laurey fears; and the handsome cowboy, Curly McClain, who loves Laurey. All of them attend a 'play-party' at the home of Old Man Peck, and there Curly and Laurey announce their engagement, arousing the rage of Jeeter, who vows revenge. A month later they are married, but on the wedding night they are victims of a traditional bawdy 'shivoree,' during which Jeeter attacks Curly and is accidentally killed. Curly is arrested, but, on the eve of the court hearing that is expected to exonerate him, breaks jail to visit his bride. When a posse arrives to recapture him, Aunt Eller uses her persuasive ingenuity on the friendly deputies, who allow Curly to spend the night with Laurey.

Green Mountain Boys, irregular militia led by Ethan Allen (q.v.), originally organized to defend the independence of the New Hampshire Grants of Vermont against the interference of New York land-jobbers. Later the Vermonters were prominent in the Revolution as captors of Fort Ticonderoga. D.P.Thompson's romance celebrates their deeds, and Vermont is popularly called the Green Mountain state.

Green Mountain Boys, The, romance by D.P.Thompson (q.v.), published in 1839.

Colonel Reed buys a Vermont tract from a group of New York land-jobbers, evicts the settlers who have occupied it under the New Hampshire Grants (q.v.), establishes a log fort, and returns to Canada. To defend the rights of the former settlers, Captain Warrington and his band of local patriots capture the fort and its occupants, who include Reed's daughter Jessie. Selden, Warrington's friend, who takes Jessie to a friend's home, falls in love with her. Meanwhile Warrington goes to his estate on Lake Champlain, opposite Crown Point, and finds his old friends, Captain Hendee and his daughter Alma, who are ignorant of his ownership, having purchased the land from the New Yorkers. Darrow and Sherwood, New York agents, capture Warrington, but when Ethan Allen, disguised as 'Smith,' comes with news of the Battle of Lexington, he and Warrington escape, planning to organize the Green Mountain Boys to fight the British. Sherwood, now a Loyalist spy, attempts to malign Warrington's character, in order to further his own suit with Alma, but she remains faithful to the patriot. Allen, after Warrington reconciles his differences with Benedict Arnold, leads the Green Mountain Boys in capturing Crown Point and Hubbardton. Darrow, fatally wounded, confesses his duplicity and Sherwood's, and reveals that Selden is Hendee's long-lost son. Selden and Jessie are married in a double wedding with Warrington and Alma.

Green Pastures, The, play by Marc Connelly (q.v.), produced and published in 1930, and awarded the Pulitzer Prize. It is based on the sketches by Roark Bradford (q.v.), *Ol' Man Adam an' His Chillun* (1928).

Mr.Deshee, a Negro preacher in Louisiana, gives a Bible lesson to his country Sunday School class, and the action of the play dramatizes his narratives, presenting the Negro's anthropomorphic conception of God and Heaven, and representing Old Testament history in terms of Southern Negro life.

Greenback Party, organized to oppose the Resumption Act (1875), which proposed redemption by specie within four years of the greenbacks, or legal tender notes, issued during the Civil War. The West and South supported the new party, since those regions were suffering the results of the panic of 1873, and believed that business would be further damaged by a contraction of currency. In 1878 several labor organizations, as well as the National Grange, joined to form the Greenback-Labor party, and elected 14 congressmen. After 1884 the party dwindled, for, when a gold reserve was accumulated to retire

the greenbacks, confidence was restored, and the amount outstanding became a permanent part of the U.S. currency.

GREENE, Asa (1789–*c.*1837), Massachusetts physician and journalist, wrote several sportive novels with a humor varying from the genial to the burlesque. *Travels in America by George Fibbleton* (1833) is a reply to Mrs.Trollope and a satire on the *Observations . . . in the United States* (1833) of the Rev.Isaac Fiddler. *The Life and Adventures of Dr.Dodimus Duckworth* (1833) is a mock-heroic biography of a New Englander; *The Perils of Pearl Street* (1834) presents a humorous story against a realistic background of New York business and high finance; and *A Yankee among the Nullifiers* (1833) is a fictional autobiography with a truthful depiction of what the author had seen during a visit to South Carolina.

GREENE, Nathanael (1742–86), served as quartermaster-general in the Revolutionary War. After Gates's defeat at Camden (1780), Greene commanded the Southern army, and, by a series of successful battles, forced the British to retreat. After the Battle of Eutaw Springs (q.v.,1781), he caused the British evacuation of Charleston.

George Washington Greene (1811–83), his grandson, served as U.S. consul at Rome (1837–45), taught modern languages at Brown University (1848–52), and occupied the first American chair established for teaching U.S. history at Cornell (1871). His works included: *Historical Studies* (1850), *Biographical Studies* (1860), *Historical View of the American Revolution* (1865), *Life of Nathanael Greene* (3 vols.,1867–71), and *A Short History of Rhode Island* (1877).

GREENE, Sarah Pratt, see *McLean, Sarah.*

Greenfield Hill, discursive poem by Timothy Dwight (q.v.), published in 1794. Mainly in heroic couplets, although there are some Spenserian stanzas, octosyllabics, and blank verse passages, the work is obviously modeled on Denham's *Cooper's Hill,* and also consciously imitates Goldsmith, Thomson, Beattie, Gay, and Pope. It was intended to answer European critics who asserted that America afforded no poetic settings.

Subjects of the poem's seven parts include: 'Prospect of the Country between Greenfield Hill and the Sound,' and a contrast of its people with those of other nations; a description of the flourishing village and the felicity of its inhabitants; such historical events as the burning of Fairfield, and the successful war against the Pequots; the moral advice of a clergyman and a wise farmer; and finally a 'Vision, or Prospect of the Future Happiness of America.'

GREENOUGH, Horatio (1805–52), Boston-born sculptor, was the first of many Americans to be influenced by the sentimentalism and classicism prevalent during his period of expatriation in Italy. His gigantic, half-nude statue of Washington, depicted as an Olympian god, caused a storm of indignation. Too heavy for its place under the Capitol dome, this first monumental piece of marble statuary by an American has been housed in the Smithsonian Institution. Greenough's sculpture is now considered literary in content, and deficient in form.

Greenwich Village, district of New York City, situated in lower Manhattan, during the colonial period was a separate village and later became an exclusive residential district. Paine wrote *The Crisis* in Greenwich Village, and Poe later lived there, but it was not until the end of the 19th century that it became famous for its Bohemianism as an artistic and literary colony. Among those who successively lived in the Village, and contributed to its long succession of little magazines including *The Little Review, The Masses, The Seven Arts,* the *Bohemian,* the *Pagan,* the *Quill,* and the *Playboy,* were Gelett Burgess, Floyd Dell, Emma Goldman, Eugene O'Neill, Edna St.Vincent Millay, and Max Eastman. The Greenwich Village Theatre was an outgrowth of the Provincetown Players (q.v.).

GREENWOOD, Grace, pseudonym of Sara Jane Lippincott (q.v.).

GREGG, Josiah (1806–50), trader of the Santa Fé Trail, was the author of the *Commerce of the Prairies* (2 vols.,1844), an important contemporary account of frontier history. His *Diary and Letters* were published in 1941.

GREGORY, Horace [Victor] (1898–), born in Milwaukee and educated at the University of Wisconsin, began his poetic career with *Chelsea Rooming House* (1930), which sensitively illus-

trates the reaction of a romantic mind swept from the easy surroundings of home and the academic world into the tough, vital life of the lower West Side in Manhattan. His next two books of poems, *No Retreat* (1933) and *Chorus for Survival* (1935), exhibit his belief that life is bitter and destructive, but must be challenged by the will to survive. *Poems*: 1930–1940 (1941) is a selection of his best work. Other works include a translation of Catullus (1931) and *Pilgrim of the Apocalypse* (1933), a critical study of D.H.Lawrence. He is a professor of English at Sarah Lawrence College. His wife is Marya Zaturenska.

GRENVILLE, George (1712–70), British prime minister (1763–5), attempted to solve the problem of the English debt by the Sugar Act (1764), which forced New England merchants to pay duty on molasses and sugar imported from Jamaica, and by the Stamp Act (1765). The unpopularity of these and the offensive Quartering Act (1765) led to his removal from office.

GRENVILLE, Sir Richard (*c.*1541–91), British naval officer, commanded a fleet of seven ships carrying colonists to Roanoke Island (1585), under the sponsorship of his cousin, Sir Walter Ralegh. He returned with provisions the following year, but all the settlers had left with Drake.

GREY, Zane (1875–1939), prolific writer of popular Western novels, the outstanding 20th-century heir of the dime novel, whose more than 60 books have sold over 13,000,000 copies. His stories, chiefly dealing with cowboy life in the Far West, are sensationally melodramatic and lack characterization, presenting life as a stereotyped struggle between ruthless villains and self-reliant, brawny heroes who are loyal to their friends and the fictional ethics of the frontier, and chivalrous to their simple, naïve heroines. Grey's most popular novel, *Riders of the Purple Sage* (1912), has sold more than 750,000 copies, and many of his works have been adapted for motion pictures. His many books on deep-sea and fresh-water game fishing describe his own experiences.

Grey Champion, The, historical sketch by Hawthorne (q.v.), published in *Twice-Told Tales* (1837). It is concerned with the appearance of the regicide Goffe in Boston, at a time when rebellion threatened the colony. In his intimidation of Andros, Goffe is presented as 'the grey champion' of the spirit of independence and colonial rights.

Greyslaer, romance by C.F.Hoffman (q.v.), published in 1840, and anonymously dramatized the same year. Its sources include the life of Brant and the Kentucky Tragedy (qq.v.).

In the Mohawk Valley at the outbreak of the Revolution, Max Greyslaer, a young lawyer, is jailed for patriot agitation. Aided by Whig friends, he escapes to the home of his guardian, Mr. de Roos, which is then attacked by Joseph Brant and his Loyalist Mohawks. De Roos and his daughter Tyntie are killed, while another daughter, Alida, is captured with Greyslaer, who loves her. She reveals that she was forced into a secret marriage, years before, with the ruffian Bradshawe. Even when the marriage is discovered to have been illegal, and she and Greyslaer eventually make their escape, she refuses to marry him until her reputation is entirely cleared. He serves with distinction in the patriot army, in which Alida's brother Derrick is killed, leaving in her care a half-breed child who is then rumored to be her son. Heart-broken over this scandal, she breaks off with Greyslaer, who goes to Albany to seek vengeance on Bradshawe, the cause of their troubles. They fight, and Bradshawe, who disappears, is thought to have been killed. Greyslaer is tried for murder, and only saved by the timely evidence of the hunter Balt, who testifies that he himself killed Bradshawe. When a document is discovered proving the half-breed boy to be Derrick's son, Alida and Greyslaer are married.

GRIFFES, Charles Tomlinson (1884–1920), New York composer, taught music at Tarrytown (1908–20), and before his premature death from pneumonia composed many notable impressionistic works. The best known of these are the suite for piano, *Roman Sketches*, which includes *The White Peacock*, famous in its symphonic adaptation; the tone poem, *The Pleasure Dome of Kubla Khan* (1920); and many songs, tone-pictures for piano, and works for string quartet.

GRIFFITH, D[avid Lewelyn] W[ark] (1875–), motion-picture producer and director, who as a pioneer in the medium introduced such devices as the close-up and fade-out. His picture, *The Birth of a*

Nation (q.v.,1915), for which he is best known, was the first large screen spectacle, in the genre. This film was based on Thomas Dixon's *The Clansman*. Other notable Griffith productions include: *Intolerance* (1916), *Hearts of the World* (1918), *Broken Blossoms* (1919), and *Orphans of the Storm* (1921).

Griffiths, CLYDE, character in *An American Tragedy* (q.v.).

GRIMKÉ, see *Weld, T.D.*

Grimm, PETER, see *Return of Peter Grimm.*

GRINGO, HARRY, pseudonym of H.A. Wise (q.v.).

Gringo, term of contempt applied by Spanish-Americans to Englishmen or citizens of the U.S. It came into use in the late 18th century, being derived from *griego* (Greek) to refer to those who 'talk Greek' or gibberish.

GRINNELL, GEORGE BIRD (1849–1938), naturalist and ethnologist, accompanied Custer to Dakota, visited Yellowstone Park (1875), was an explorer in Alaska (1899), and made many expeditions in the western U.S. He edited *Forest and Stream* (1876–1911), was prominent in the conservation movement, and wrote books which include *Pawnee Hero Stories* (1889), *The Story of the Indian* (1895), *The Fighting Cheyennes* (1915), and *The Cheyenne Indians* (2 vols.,1923).

GRISWOLD, RUFUS WILMOT (1815–57), born in Vermont, was a prominent Philadelphia and New York journalist, editing *Graham's Magazine* (q.v.,1842–3) and *The International Monthly Magazine* (1850–52). As the literary executor of Poe, he wrote a biography, which was partly malicious and partly false, and in his edition (1850) of the poet's works published some letters in which he made interpolations favorable to himself. His compilations, *The Poets and Poetry of America* (1842), *The Prose Writers of America* (1847), and *The Female Poets of America* (1849), although often faulty in critical judgment, remain valuable for the student. His other works include a social history, *The Republican Court, or American Society in the Days of Washington* (1855).

Grotesque and Arabesque, Tales of the, see *Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque.*

Group, The, satirical play by Mercy Otis Warren(q.v.), published in 1775, the day before the Battle of Lexington. It deals with the king's abrogation of the Massachusetts charter, and his appointment of a Tory upper house.

Lord Chief Justice Hazelrod (Peter Oliver), Judge Meagre (Foster Hutchinson, brother of the governor), Brigadier Hateall (Timothy Ruggles), Sir Sparrow Spendall (William Pepperell), and Beau Trumps (Daniel Leonard) belong to the group that supports the royal prerogative and desires to take freedom away from the populace. They discuss their points of view at length, and the only real drama occurs when they import Sylla (General Gage) to put their ideas into action, although he is shown as torn between his duty as a soldier and his realization of the justice of the popular cause.

Group Theatre, New York organization, founded by a group of insurgents from the Theatre Guild (q.v.) under the leadership of Harold Clurman, Lee Strasberg, and Cheryl Crawford. Their first professional production, after a series of performances as a little theater, was Paul Green's *The House of Connelly* (1931), sponsored by the Theatre Guild and financed by Eugene O'Neill, Maxwell Anderson, and others. During its independent career, the Group has produced all the plays of Clifford Odets, formerly an actor with the company. Its numerous other productions have included *Night over Taos, Men in White, Bury the Dead,* and *The Gentle People.*

GRUENBERG, LOUIS (1883–), Russian-born composer and pianist, was brought to New York as a child. Besides symphonic works and the opera, *The Emperor Jones* (q.v.,1932), based on O'Neill's play, he is known for his compositions adapting the jazz idiom to classical forms. These include an orchestral *Jazz Suite, Four Indiscretions* for string quartet, and *The Daniel Jazz* and *The Creation* for voice and small orchestra.

GUARD, THEODORE DE LA, pseudonym of Nathaniel Ward (q.v.).

Guardian Angel, The, novel by Holmes (q.v.), published in 1868.

Myrtle Hazard, an orphan, is reared by her spinster aunt, Miss Silence Withers, whose brother Malachi leaves Myrtle a fortune, contingent upon a certain lawsuit. When the girl is 15, she rebels against her tyrannous aunt, and runs away, disguised as a boy. Endangered in

her boat by a precipitous falls, she is rescued by Clement Lindsay, a talented young artist, and brought home by Master Byles Gridley, her 'guardian angel.' The shock leaves her in a nervous condition, which is taken advantage of by Miss Silence and others who try to convert Myrtle to Calvinism. Later she becomes conscious of her fascinating beauty, when she is courted by the poetaster, Gifted Hopkins, the ambitious lawyer, Murray Bradshaw, and Clement, who is, however, engaged to Susan Posey. She refuses a proposal from Bradshaw, who enlists in the Civil War and is killed. Susan falls in love with Gifted Hopkins, and breaks her engagement to Clement. Through Gridley's aid, Myrtle receives her inheritance and marries Clement, who has become a colonel in the war.

Guenn, romance by Blanche Willis Howard (q.v.).

Guerrière, see *Old Ironsides.*

GUESS, GEORGE, see *Sequoyah.*

GUEST, EDGAR A[LBERT] (1881–), English-born newspaper poet, whose daily poem in the *Detroit Free Press* is widely syndicated, and extremely popular with the people he calls 'folks,' for its homely saccharine morality. His verse has been collected in such books as *A Heap o' Livin'* (1916), *Just Folks* (1917), and *Life's Highway* (1933).

Guggenheim Fellowships, given annually for creative work in the arts, or research in any branch of knowledge, by the John Simon Guggenheim Memorial Foundation, founded in 1925 by Senator and Mrs.Simon Guggenheim. The usual amount of the 40 to 50 annual awards is $2,500 each, enabling the winners to go to any part of the world to accomplish the work they propose. Since 1929 similar fellowships have been awarded in the Latin American countries. Among the authors who have received the awards are Louis Adamic, Conrad Aiken, Stephen V. Benét, Carleton Beals, Thomas Wolfe, Kay Boyle, Hart Crane, Countée Cullen, Joseph W. Krutch, Lewis Mumford, Evelyn Scott, Allen Tate, and Glenway Wescott.

GUINEY, LOUISE IMOGEN (1861–1920), born in Boston, began writing poetry and essays as a young woman. Throughout her later years, partly spent in England, she showed a steadfast admiration for Tennyson, Hazlitt, and the Cavalier poets, and a deeply ingrained devotion to the Catholic tradition. Her poems were collected in *Songs at the Start* (1884), *A Roadside Harp* (1893), *England and Yesterday* (1898), *The Martyrs' Idyl* (1899), and *Happy Ending* (1909, enlarged 1927). *A Little English Gallery* (1894) contains literary portraits, and *Patrins* (1897, 1901) is a collection of familiar essays. Alice Brown, with whom she wrote a study of Stevenson (1895), wrote her biography (1921), and her *Letters* have been published (2 vols.,1926).

GUION, DAVID [WENDEL FENTRESS] (1895–), Texas composer and music teacher, is best known for his settings of spirituals and cowboy songs, and his piano transcriptions of such folk tunes as *Turkey in the Straw* and the *Arkansas Traveler.*

GUITERMAN, ARTHUR (1871–), New York poet and journalist, best known for his humorous verse and ballads dealing with American history and legends. His books include: *The Laughing Muse* (1915); *The Mirthful Lyre* (1918); *Chips of Jade* (1920); *Ballads of Old New York* (1920); *The Light Guitar* (1923); *A Poet's Proverbs* (1924); *I Sing the Pioneer* (1926); *Wildwood Fables* (1927); *Song and Laughter* (1929); and *Death and General Putnam* (1935). He has also written librettos for both light and grand operas, including Damrosch's *The Man Without a Country* (1937).

Gullah, corrupt dialect of Negroes of the South Carolina and Georgia coast, and northeast Florida. It employs an African intonation. Examples may be found in the novels of Julia Peterkin.

GUMMERE, FRANCIS BARTON (1855–1919), professor of English at Haverford (1887–1919), was a noted philologist and student of early Germanic life, but is best known for his aesthetic criticism and development of the theory of the communal origins of ballads, in *The Popular Ballad* (1907).

GUNTER, ARCHIBALD CLAVERING (1847–1907), English-born author, lived in California (1853–79), where he attended the state university and won his first success with the play, *Found the True Vein* (1872), featuring local characters similar to those Bret Harte was beginning to popularize. After a career in the West as chemist and civil engineer, he went to New York to

write his best-known work, *Mr. Barnes of New York* (1887), a novel which is said to have had a sale of more than a million copies. He also wrote a play, *Prince Karl* (1886), and 39 novels in all, including *Miss Nobody of Nowhere* (1890) and *A Princess of Paris* (1894).

GUNTHER, JOHN (1901–), after graduation from the University of Chicago (1922) became a reporter for the *Chicago Daily News*, and has since been a foreign correspondent in Europe and the Orient. His knowledge of contemporary foreign affairs is revealed in his informal histories, *Inside Europe* (1936) and *Inside Asia* (1939). He is also the author of several novels.

Guy Rivers, first of the Border Romances by Simms (q.v.), published in 1834. It deals with the outlawry in northern Georgia during the gold rush of the 1820's.

Ralph Colleton, who loves his cousin Edith, is driven from their home by his uncle, because he is penniless. On the road, he is wounded by a highwayman, but he is aided by the backwoodsman, Mark Forrester, and nursed by Lucy Munro, whose father Wat is a member of the outlaw band led by Guy Rivers, Ralph's assailant. Rivers is really Edward Creighton, a brilliant lawyer turned desperado because of his failure to win social and political advancement, and because of his rejection by Edith. Ralph participates in a battle between the outlaws and the state militia, and further incurs the enmity of Rivers, who had originally been jealous of Edith's love for him. In an attempt to kill Ralph, Rivers and Munro mistakenly kill Forrester. They engineer Ralph's arrest for the crime, and nearly gain a conviction. Munro, at the behest of his daughter, confesses before dying as the result of a scrape with the sheriff. Ralph is cleared; Rivers, captured, commits suicide; and Edith, having obtained her father's consent, weds Ralph, taking the orphaned Lucy into their home.

H

H.D., pseudonym of Hilda Doolittle (q.v.).

H.H., pseudonym of Helen Hunt Jackson (q.v.).

HABBERTON, JOHN (1842–1921), New York journalist whose novel, *Helen's Babies* (1876), achieved tremendous popularity for its humorous account of a bachelor uncle's supervision of two mischief-loving boys during their parents' vacation, and their successful encouragement of his love affair. The author's later books were less successful, and included a novel, a play, and children's fiction.

HACKETT, FRANCIS (1883–), Irish-born author and editor, came to the U.S. (1901). He has edited *The New Republic* (1914–22) and other magazines, and is the author of *Ireland, A Study in Nationalisms and Horizons* (1918); *The Story of the Irish Nation* (1922); *That Nice Young Couple* (1924), a novel; *Henry the Eighth, A Personal History* (1929) and *Francis the First* (1934), biographies; *Queen Anne Boleyn* (1939), a historical novel; and *I Chose Denmark* (1940), an account of his residence in Europe.

HADLEY, ARTHUR TWINING (1856–1930), political economist, president of Yale (1899–1921), whose books include studies of railroad transportation and other economic subjects, and such works of social philosophy as *The Education of the American Citizen* (1901), *Freedom and Responsibility* (1903), *Standards of Public Morality* (1907), *The Moral Basis of Democracy* (1919), and *The Conflict between Liberty and Equality* (1925).

HADLEY, HENRY K[IMBALL] (1871–1937), Massachusetts-born composer and conductor, whose many works, marked by agreeable melodies and technical facility, but lacking profundity, include five symphonies, several operas, ballets, various choral works, and 200 songs.

HAGEDORN, HERMANN (1882–), New York author, known both for his works about his friend Theodore Roosevelt, including a *Life* (1918), *Roosevelt in the Bad Lands* (1921), a selection of his speeches, *The Americanism of Theodore Roosevelt* (1923), and *The Bugle that Woke America—The Saga of Theodore Roosevelt's last Battle for his Country* (1940), and for his own competent but mediocre *Poems and Ballads* (1912) and such novels as *The Rough Riders* (1927). He has also written a biography of Edwin Arlington Robinson (1938).

Hail Columbia, patriotic song by Joseph Hopkinson (q.v.), to the tune originally written for *The President's March*, attributed to Philip Phile (variously spelled) or Johannes Roth. It was introduced by the actor Gilbert Fox (1798) when war with France was thought inevitable, since it appealed for a unified national spirit. It was published in *Porcupine's Gazette* (April 20, 1798).

'Hairy Ape, The,' expressionist play by O'Neill (q.v.), produced and published in 1922. It is symbolic of the perversion of human strength by technological progress.

In the cramped forecastle of a transatlantic liner, Yank—brutal, stupid, and profane—is the recognized leader of the stokers, who are the ultimate products of a society subservient to machines. When Mildred Douglas, daughter of the ship's owner, makes a slumming visit to the stokehole, she is shocked by the lurid atmosphere, and faints at encountering Yank's unashamed brutality. Although he is completely adapted to this environment, he now discovers that there is a world in which he does not belong, and 'the Hairy Ape,' as his friend Paddy calls him, becomes sullen and morose, beginning to think of his position. In New York on Easter Sunday, he swaggers in dirty dungarees up Fifth Avenue, trying in vain to insult the aristocratic strollers, who politely ignore him. Arrested, he is sent to Blackwell's Island, where the prisoners, misunderstanding his rebellion, advise him to join the I.W.W. Rejected by the labor organization, he goes to the zoo to see the ape, the only creature with whom he can now feel kinship. When he liberates it, to help him wreak destruction, the beast crushes him to death.

HAKLUYT, RICHARD (1552?–1616), British geographer and compiler of narratives of exploration. Among his valuable publications dealing with America, preserving original accounts that would otherwise have been lost, are: *Divers Voyages touching the Discoverie of America* (1582); *A notable historie containing foure voyages*

made by certayne French captaynes into Florida (1587), including the narrative of Laudonnière; *Virginia richly valued* (1609), including the account of De Soto's discoveries; and his greatest work, *The Principal Navigations, Voyages, Traffiques, and Discoveries of the English Nation* (1589; 3 vols., enlarged, 1598–1600). The work of Hakluyt was continued by Samuel Purchas (q.v.), who collected his unpublished papers in *Hakluytus Posthumus* (4 vols., 1625).

HALE, Edward Everett (1822–1909), nephew of Edward Everett, was a Boston Unitarian clergyman, philanthropist, and popular author. He wrote prolifically on many subjects, but is principally remembered for his tale, *The Man Without a Country* (q.v.,1865). His other books include: *If, Yes, and Perhaps* (1868), miscellaneous tales ranging from the patriotism of the reprinted 'Man Without a Country' and the whimsy of 'A Piece of Possible History' to the satirical fantasy of 'My Double and How He Undid Me'; *Sybaris and Other Homes* (1869), a Utopian satire of American society; *Ten Times One Is Ten* (1871), a novelette concerned with the ethical influence of a dead man's ghost on his friends; *In His Name* (1874), concerned with the 12th-century Waldenses; *Philip Nolan's Friends* (1877), a romantic account of the real Nolan; *The Fortunes of Rachel* (1884), dealing with an orphaned English girl and her social career in the U.S.; *East and West* (1892), a story of frontier Ohio; and two autobiographical works, *A New England Boyhood* (1893) and *Memories of a Hundred Years* (1902). *Franklin in France* (2 vols.,1887–8) was the most important of his scholarly works.

Lucretia Peabody Hale (1820–1900), his sister, is best known as the author of *The Peterkin Papers* (1880), a sprightly satire on the culture of Boston bent on self-improvement.

HALE, Nathan (1755–76), born in Connecticut, graduated from Yale (1773), became a captain in the Revolutionary War, and volunteered to serve as a spy among the British forces on Long Island. Apprehended and sentenced to be executed, before he was hanged he uttered the famous words, 'I only regret that I have but one life to lose for my country.' He was the subject of a popular song of the period, and later of a play by Clyde Fitch.

HALE, Sarah Josepha [Buell] (1788–1879), is celebrated as the author of 'Mary Had a Little Lamb' (q.v.), published in *Poems for our Children* (1830). In addition to her work in behalf of child welfare, feminine education, and other humanitarian movements, she edited the Boston *Ladies Magazine* (1828–37), *Godey's Lady's Book* (q.v.,1837–77), and various compilations, and wrote many works typical of Victorian feminine productions, including plays, further volumes of poetry, the antislavery *Northwood, or Life North and South* (1827) and other novels, *Sketches of American Character* (1829) and other short stories, and *Woman's Record* (1854), a history of distinguished women.

Half-Century of Conflict, A, history by Parkman (q.v.).

Half-Moon, see *Hudson, Henry.*

Half-Way Covenant, doctrinal revision of New England Congregationalism (q.v.), drafted by Richard Mather and approved by a church synod (1662). First-generation Congregationalists were admitted to full membership in the church only after a personal experience of conversion, and their children shared in the privileges of full membership except for the Lord's Supper. The Half-Way Covenant proposed to extend this privilege to the children of second-generation members, even though the latter may have confessed no experience of conversion to bring them into full communion.

HALIBURTON, Thomas Chandler (1796–1865), Canadian humorist, was prominent as a judge and legislator in his native country until he moved to England (1856), where he became a member of the House of Commons. The first Canadian writer to attain international reputation, he greatly influenced U.S. humorists by his use of homely Down East humor and speech, which he popularized, although Seba Smith preceded him in this genre. His famous character, Sam Slick, an itinerant clockmaker combining the characteristics of the shrewd New England peddler with the boastful talk of the Western frontier, is depicted in the three series of *The Clockmaker* (q.v.,1837, '38, '40) and the two series of *The Attaché* (q.v.,1843, '44). Sam Slick also appears in *Sam Slick's Wise Saws and Modern Instances; or, What He Said, Did, or Invented* (1853) and *Nature and Human Nature* (1855). *The Letter*

Bag of the Great Western; or, Life in a Steamer (1839) contains 28 letters marked by similar characterizations and criticism. *The Old Judge; or, Life in a Colony* (1843), introducing other types, is a humorous description of life in Halifax. *The Season Ticket* (1860) is concerned with the travels of an Irish squire, an American senator, and Ephraim Peabody, a kind of Sam Slick, in British North America. Haliburton's serious writings include: *An Historical and Statistical Account of Nova Scotia* (1829), which was a source of Longfellow's *Evangeline; The Bubbles of Canada* (1839); and *Rule and Misrule of the English in America* (1851).

HALL, Basil (1788–1844), British naval officer and traveler, whose three-volume *Travels in North America* (1829) aroused much protest in the U.S. because of its Tory view of the crude democratic society. *The Aristocratic Journey* (1931) is a collection of the letters which his wife, Margaret H. Hall, wrote during this trip.

HALL, G[ranville] Stanley (1844–1924), Massachusetts-born educator and psychologist, was professor of psychology at Antioch (1872–6); Johns Hopkins (1881–8), where John Dewey was a student of his; and president of Clark University (1889–1920). He founded the *American Journal of Psychology* (1887) and edited it until 1921 as well as editing several other scientific and educational journals. His books include: *The Contents of Children's Minds on Entering School* (1894), which influenced the U.S. movement toward child-study; *Adolescence* (1904); *Jesus the Christ, in the Light of Psychology* (1917); *Morale: The Supreme Standard of Life and Conduct* (1920); *Recreations of a Psychologist* (1920); and *Life and Confessions of a Psychologist* (1923), an autobiography.

HALL, James (1793–1868), circuit judge, banker, and editor in frontier Illinois, edited the *Illinois Gazette* (1820–22), the *Illinois Intelligencer* (1829–32), and founded the *Illinois Monthly Magazine* (q.v.,1833), the first literary periodical west of Ohio. He is chiefly remembered for his record of pioneer life and legends, the most important of his many books being the romantic *Letters from the West* (1828); *Legends of the West* (1832), containing 'The Seventh Son,' a realistic sketch; *Sketches of History, Life, and Manners in the West* (1834); and a *History of the Indian Tribes* (1836–44), with T.L.McKenney.

HALL, James Norman, see *Nordhoff,C.B.*

Hall of Fame, national shrine on the campus of New York University, was established in 1900 to honor with memorial busts and tablets 50 distinguished Americans. Five more, chosen by a committee of 100, are added each fifth year from the number of distinguished American men and women who have been dead for more than 25 years. Of the 72 persons honored up to 1939, the following authors are included: Emerson, Longfellow, Irving, Mrs.Stowe, Hawthorne, Lowell, Whittier, Bryant, George Bancroft, Motley, Holmes, Poe, Cooper, Parkman, Clemens, and Whitman.

HALLECK, Fitz-Greene (1790–1867), born in Connecticut, became a leading member of the Knickerbocker Group (q.v.), and was associated with J.R.Drake in the authorship of the 'Croaker Papers' (q.v.,1819), which catapulted him into fame in New York social and literary circles. In the same year he published his long poem, *Fanny*, a satire of New York society and the newly rich, imitating Byron's *Beppo* and *Don Juan*, which was so popular that Halleck added 50 stanzas to it two years later. He visited Europe (1822) and there wrote the poem 'Alnwick Castle,' in which he attempted to combine the sentimental romance of Scott with Byron's sophisticated satire. Three years later he published the popular 'Marco Bozzaris,' a stirring poem on the Greek struggle for freedom, which again exhibits his debt to Byron. After the publication of *Alnwick Castle, with Other Poems* (1827), Halleck did little writing, although his collected *Works* appeared in 1847. Among his best-known short poems are 'Connecticut,' 'Burns,' 'The Field of the Grounded Arms,' 'Red Jacket,' and an elegy 'On the Death of Joseph Rodman Drake.'

HALLECK, Henry Wager (1815–72), began his military career in California (1846) during the Mexican War, later serving as secretary of state under the military government of the territory and helping to frame the State Constitution (1849). Until the outbreak of the Civil War he was a distinguished lawyer in the state and wrote *A Collection of Mining Laws of Spain and Mexico* (1859); but he

returned to the army (1861) as major-general in command of the Missouri Department and shortly thereafter of the Departments of Kansas and Ohio. His excellence in organizing the Union army, despite his lack of brilliance in the field, led to his appointment as general-in-chief of all armies (1862). Because of many reverses he was removed (1864) and appointed chief of staff at Washington. In addition to the valuable *Elements of Military Art and Science* (1846) he wrote several works on international law.

HALLIBURTON, Richard (1900–39?), after his graduation from Princeton (1921), embarked on a spectacular career of travel and adventure, during which he swam the Hellespont, retraced the routes of Ulysses, Cortès, Balboa, Alexander, and Hannibal, circled the globe by airplane, and visited most of the romantic regions of the world. His popular accounts of these exploits include *The Royal Road to Romance* (1925), *The Glorious Adventure* (1927), *New Worlds to Conquer* (1929), *The Flying Carpet* (1932), and *Seven League Boots* (1935). While he was on his way from China to San Francisco, the Chinese junk in which he was traveling disappeared. *Richard Halliburton, His Story of His Life's Adventures* (1940) is compiled from letters to his parents.

HALPER, Albert (1904–), proletarian novelist born in Chicago, whose experience in different occupations has furnished the backgrounds for his fiction. *Union Square* (1933) shows the effect of economic forces on workingmen, artists, agitators, and others who occupy this New York City district. It tended to satirize many of the radical personalities and habits toward which his later books are sympathetic. *The Foundry* (1934) is concerned with workers in a Chicago electrotype foundry during the year preceding the 1929 stock market crash, and *The Chute* (1937) deals with workers in a mail-order house. *Sons of the Fathers* (1940) depicts the strain of America's entrance into the World War upon a Jewish immigrant who hoped his sons would never have to fight.

HALPINE, Charles Graham (1829–68), born in Ireland, came to the U.S. (1851), and became a brigadier-general in the Union army. He was best known for his humorous description of Civil War events in *The Life and Adventures . . . of Private Miles O'Reilly* (1864).

HAMILTON, Dr. Alexander (1712–56), Scottish-born physician, practiced in Maryland after 1738. He was a founder of the Tuesday Club of Annapolis (q.v.), and is best known for his *Itinerarium* (1744), a diary of his journey through the Middle Colonies and as far as Boston, which provides an excellent account of contemporary society and manners.

HAMILTON, Alexander (1757–1804), was born in the Leeward Islands, the illegitimate son of a Scottish merchant. A letter he wrote to the local newspaper, describing a West Indian hurricane, won popular attention, and led to his aunt's sending him to be educated at Elizabethtown, New Jersey, and at King's College. Unsettled political conditions interrupted his education, and although he was only 17, he published two anonymous pamphlets, *A Full Vindication of the Measures of Congress* (1774) and *The Farmer Refuted* (1775), answering the arguments of Samuel Seabury and brilliantly defending the patriot position, and justifying the appeal to arms. During the Revolutionary War he served as captain, lieutenant-colonel, and aide-de-camp to Washington. After the victory he was appointed receiver-general of continental taxes, was elected to the Continental Congress (1782–3), practiced law in New York, and served as a delegate to the Annapolis Convention (1786). As a member of the Federal Constitutional Convention he considered its accomplishments in many ways unsatisfactory, but as an advocate of strong centralized government he worked for the ratification of the Constitution, especially as the principal author of *The Federalist* (q.v.,1787–8). As the first secretary of the treasury (1789–95), he presented a series of influential reports. These included: (1) issued January 14, 1790, proposing that the national government take over state debts incurred in aid of the Revolution, and that both national and state debts be refunded at par; (2) issued December 13, 1790, advising that an excise tax be levied to provide revenue for the government; (3) issued the same date, recommending the establishment of a bank of the U.S., modeled on the national bank of England; and (4) issued December 5, 1791, a *Report on Manufactures*, advocating a protective tariff for military self-sufficiency and the preservation of the home market. In the last, he pointed out that, as long as the

U.S. remained an exclusively agricultural country, it would depend upon uncertain foreign markets for the sale of its goods. He therefore urged the encouragement of manufacturing to provide a reliable and growing market, and the protection of infant industries by import duties or bounties. These measures tended to strengthen the federal government at the expense of state governments, and to ally it with moneyed interests, and such a policy has come to be known as the Hamiltonian system, as opposed to the agrarian system of Jefferson and his followers. Resigning from the cabinet, Hamilton declined the office of Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, and returned instead to law practice. In 1798, when war threatened with France, he became an army general, second in command to Washington. After the peaceful settlement of the dispute, he was a bitter critic of Adams. In New York politics, he was twice instrumental in defeating the political aspirations of Aaron Burr, and in 1800 he supported his old political enemy Jefferson against Burr in the presidential election. Embittered by these attacks, Burr challenged him to a duel, as a result of which Hamilton died. He appears frequently in fiction, as in *The Conqueror*.

HAMILTON, GAIL, see *Mary A. Dodge*.

HAMILTON, HENRY (?–1796), British soldier, called 'the Hair-Buyer' by the American patriots because of his tactics while lieutenant-governor of Detroit (1775–9), in instigating Indian raids and scalpings of frontier settlers. He was captured at Vincennes by George Rogers Clark, but later served as an official in various British colonies.

Hamilton College, Presbyterian school for men, situated at Clinton, New York, was founded (1793) by Samuel Kirkland, a Connecticut missionary to the Indians, as a school for Indians and whites. Originally named Hamilton Oneida Academy, in honor of Alexander Hamilton, a trustee and sponsor, it was renamed in 1812. Its graduates include C.D.Warner (1851), Elihu Root (1864), Ezra Pound (1905), and Alexander Woollcott (1909). Clinton Scollard was a professor there.

Hamlet of A.MacLeish, The, blank verse poem by MacLeish (q.v.), published in 1928.

Reinterpreting the characters and incidents of Shakespeare's *Hamlet* as symbols of spiritual questioning and pessimism in the modern world, the poet sees the dead king as the haunting consciousness of evil urging revenge; Claudius as 'the jay jeer of the sun in the ear of our pain'; Gertrude as the mother-force guilty of reproducing pain and evil; Ophelia as temptation; and Hamlet as the poet' himself, melancholy and despairing. Science and philosophy lead nowhere, man has lost significance by divorcing himself from the earth and from tradition, and even death has become 'a gesture away from us,' and artistic expression a 'hoarse grief . . . shouted at the narrow stars.' He accepts the challenge of Laertes, resigning himself to 'the staged encounter and the game-pit rules' of life, in which he hopes to 'Cancel this bloody feud, revoke All tears, all pain . . .'

HAMMERSTEIN, OSCAR (1847–1919), won a fortune by his invention of a cigar-making machine, and became a noted New York impresario, building a number of theaters, the Harlem Opera House (1888), and the Manhattan Opera House (1892, rebuilt 1906). His successful productions of important new operas, including works by Debussy and Strauss, made him a powerful rival of the conservative Metropolitan Opera Company, which bought his interests (1910), on the condition that he cease to produce operas in the U.S. His subsequent venture in London was a failure, and the Metropolitan blocked his attempt to establish an American Opera Company (1913).

HAMMETT, [SAMUEL] DASHIELL (1894–), author of detective novels, distinguished for their realism and authentic dialogue, which include *Red Harvest* (1929), *The Dain Curse* (1929), *The Maltese Falcon* (1930), *The Glass Key* (1931), and *The Thin Man* (1932).

HAMMETT, SAMUEL ADAMS (1816–65), southwestern frontier humorist, who embroidered his adventures with typical frontier anecdotes, dialect, and tall tales, and published them as *A Stray Yankee in Texas* (1853), *The Wonderful Adventures of Captain Priest* (1855), and *Piney Woods Tavern, or Sam Slick in Texas* (1858). He used the pseudonym Philip Paxton.

HAMMON, JUPITER (*c.*1720–*c.*1800), Negro slave on Long Island, whose first poem, *An Evening Thought* (written 1760), antedated by several years the

work of Phillis Wheatley, the more famous Negro poet to whom he addressed his second poem (1778). Of more importance than his religious verses is *An Address to the Negroes of the State of New York* (1787), urging his fellow slaves to be patient, and asking their masters to manumit their children.

HAMMOND, JOHN (*fl.*1635–56), English colonist who came to Virginia in 1635, and after 19 years of residence there moved to Maryland, where he remained for two years. Upon returning to England he published *Leah and Rachel; or, The Two Fruitfull Sisters, Virginia and Maryland* (1656), a racy, vigorous pamphlet contrasting living conditions in England and the colonies, and pleading for the amelioration of the status of poor Englishmen by their removal to America.

HAMPDEN, WALTER (1879–), actor known for his leading parts in productions both in England and the U.S., of such plays as *Cyrano de Bergerac, The Tempest, Hamlet, Macbeth, Henry V, Julius Caesar,* and *Richelieu.*

Hampton Roads, channel between Old Point Comfort and Sewall's Point, Virginia. During the Civil War, it was the site of the battle between the *Monitor* and the *Merrimac* (q.v.,1862), and of an unsuccessful peace conference (Feb.1865) attended by Lincoln and Seward, and Alexander Stephens and two other Confederate emissaries.

HANCOCK, JOHN (1737–93), famous as the first signer of the Declaration of Independence, was a Boston Revolutionary patriot, led the local merchants in protesting the Stamp Act, and presided over the Continental Congress (1775–7). With the exception of one term, he served as governor of Massachusetts from 1780 until his death.

HANDY, W[ILLIAM] C[HRISTOPHER] (1873–), Alabama-born Negro composer of jazz, and St.Louis song publisher. He spent several years in a minstrel show, organized a dance orchestra (1903), and became famous as the composer of the *Memphis Blues* (1909), which won him the title of 'father of the blues.' The best known of his later compositions is *St.Louis Blues* (1914), included in *Blues: An Anthology* (1926), which he edited. *Father of the Blues* (1941) is his autobiography.

HANNA, MARCUS ALONZO (Mark Hanna) (1837–1904), Ohio industrialist and politician, was a typical capitalist of the Gilded Age, and controlled the Republican party in his state. He was responsible for the election of McKinley (q.v.) to the governorship and to the presidency, and as chairman of the Republican National Committee was the first prominent leader openly to represent a union between politics and big business. He was a U.S. senator (1897–1904), and managed to combine an advocacy of organized labor with his defensive policy in behalf of property rights. He is the subject of biographies by Herbert Croly and Thomas Beer.

Hannah Thurston, novel by Bayard Taylor (q.v.).

Hans Breitmann, see *Leland,C.G.*

Hans Brinker, story for children by Mary Mapes Dodge (q.v.).

Hansa, Per, character in *Giants in the Earth* (q.v.).

HANSON, HOWARD [HAROLD] (1896–), Nebraska-born composer, conductor, and educator, taught at the College of the Pacific (1916–21), and since 1924 has been director of the Eastman School of Music, in which position and as the conductor of various orchestras he has influenced many contemporary composers. His own works include chamber music, choral works, symphonic poems, the opera *Merry Mount* (1934), with a libretto by R.L.Stokes based on New England history, and the *Nordic* and *Romantic* symphonies.

HAPGOOD, HUTCHINS (1869–), born in Chicago, graduated from Harvard (1892), and became a journalist in Chicago and New York. His realistic narratives based on the lives of people he knew include *The Autobiography of a Thief* (1903), *The Spirit of Labor* (1907), *An Anarchist Woman* (1909), and *Types from City Streets* (1910). *Enemies* (1916) is a novel written with his wife, and *The Story of a Lover* (1919) is a semi-autobiographical novel. *A Victorian in the Modern World* (1939) is an autobiography, telling of his relations with Chicago left-wing groups and his post-war association with Greenwich Village and Provincetown.

NORMAN HAPGOOD (1868–1937), his brother, was editor of *Collier's* (1903–12) during its muckraking period, and later edited *Harper's Weekly* (1913–16) and

Hearst's International (1923–5). His books include: *Literary Statesmen* (1897); biographies of Washington, Lincoln, and Webster; *The Stage in America* (1901); *Industry and Progress* (1911); and his autobiography, *The Changing Years* (1930).

Hapless Orphan, The; or, Innocent Victim of Revenge, anonymous novel by 'an American Lady,' published in 1793. It is a typically sentimental didactic romance concerned with Caroline Francis, a Philadelphia girl who attracts the fiancé of Eliza, and is the object of Eliza's remorseless revenge after the young man's suicide. After innumerable machinations, Caroline is killed, and her corpse is barely saved from the dissecting room through the aid of another suitor, Mr.Helen.

HARBEN, William Nathaniel (1858–1919), born in Georgia, later lived in New York and abroad, becoming known for his popular short stories and novels concerned with life in northern Georgia. His novels include: *The Woman Who Trusted* (1901); *Abner Daniel* (1902); *The Georgians* (1904); *Ann Boyd* (1906); and *Mam' Linda* (1907).

Harbinger, The (1845–9), weekly Fourierist newspaper, edited by George Ripley, was dedicated to 'the examination and discussion of the great questions in social science, politics, literature, and the arts, which command the attention of all believers in the progress and elevation of humanity.' Until 1847 it was the official organ of Brook Farm, and attained a circulation of approximately 1,000. It was later edited from New York by Ripley and Parke Godwin for the American Union of Associationists. Among the contributors were Lowell, Whittier, C.A. Dana, Greeley, the younger W.E.Channing, and J.S.Dwight, whose critical articles made the paper one of the leading musical journals of the U.S.

Harbor, The, novel by Ernest Poole (q.v.), published in 1915.

New York harbor forms the background for the childhood of Bill, who watches his father's ships leave for distant ports, and regrets the passing of the romantic days of sailing ships. He hates the brutal life of the docks, and, after attending college, where he is influenced by the radical thought of his friend, Joe Kramer, escapes to Paris to begin his career as an author. After two years, he returns to New York and marries his childhood sweetheart, Eleanore Dillon. His father-in-law, an engineer who plans to transform the harbor into a unified industrial center, converts him to the point of view of big business, and he writes glowing articles on the potentialities of such a port. In his idealistic enthusiasm, Bill fails to see that he is assisting a monopoly that will crush his father's class of small competitors. Joe Kramer, now a labor organizer, becomes the lover of Bill's sister Sue, and the writer comes to see that the truly humane cause is that of the workers. Although a strike in which he participates is defeated, and he is no longer able to sell his writings, his wife shares his new social attitude, and he determines to write the story of the harbor, and to continue working 'for the freedom of mankind.'

Harbours of Memory, sketches by William McFee (q.v.).

HARDING, Chester (1792–1866), itinerant Massachusetts painter, whose early portraits include those of Daniel Boone and prominent Indian chiefs. After studying in London (1823–6), he settled in Boston, and rivaled Gilbert Stuart as a fashionable portrait painter.

HARDING, Warren Gamaliel (1865–1923), 29th President of the U.S. (1921–3), was born in Ohio, and was a small town journalist until he entered state politics, serving as state senator and lieutenant-governor. He followed the Republican party line during his term in the U.S. Senate (1914–20), and was a 'dark horse' candidate for the presidency, with what was probably a deliberately vague platform. His brief administration was generally unimportant, although he opposed membership in the League of Nations and recognition of the new Russian government, and called the Washington Conference (1921–2) to limit naval armaments. His term is chiefly remembered as one of the most corrupt in U.S. history, owing to his cabinet appointments of such friends as Fall, Denby, and Daugherty, who were implicated in graft scandals including that of Teapot Dome (q.v.).

HARDY, Arthur Sherburne (1847–1930), born in Massachusetts, was known as a professor of civil engineering and mathematics before the success of his fiction. He later served as U.S. minister to Persia, Greece, Rumania, Servia, and

Spain. Besides mathematical texts and a book of verse, he was the author of several popular novels: *But Yet a Woman* (1883), a stylized tale of contemporary France; *The Wind of Destiny* (1886), a romantic story set in Europe and the U.S., and its sequel, *His Daughter First* (1903); *Passé Rose* (1889), a romance of the time of Charlemagne; and *Helen* (1916), a novel of international society, set in France. *Diane and Her Friends* (1914) is a collection of stories.

HARE, ROBERT (1781–1858), professor of chemistry at the University of Pennsylvania, was the author of *Brief View of the Policies and Resources of the United States* (1810); *Standish the Puritan* (1850), a romance of the Revolutionary War; and *Spiritualism Scientifically Demonstrated* (1855).

HARIOT, THOMAS (1560–1621), English mathematician and geographer, accompanied Grenville on his second expedition to Virginia (1586). The two-year sojourn resulted in his *Briefe and True Report of the New-Found Land of Virginia* (1588), which was accompanied in the 1590 edition by the imaginative drawings of a fellow-colonist, John White, and was republished by Hakluyt. Ralegh was indebted to Hariot in *The History of the World* for points of chronology and geography. The name is also spelled Harriot and Harriott.

HARLAND, HENRY (1861–1905), born in Russia of American parents, was educated in Europe and at Harvard, and became a New York journalist and public official. Under the pseudonym Sidney Luska, he wrote a series of sensational novels dealing with the lives of immigrant Jews, including *As It Was Written* (1885), *Mrs. Peixada* (1886), *My Uncle Florimond* (1888), and *Mr. Sonnenschein's Inheritance* (1888). In 1890 he abruptly discarded this side of his personality, and, taking up residence in London, became one of the leading expatriate aesthetes, and the original editor of the *Yellow Book*. During this later period, he wrote a number of courtly and decorative tales, collected in *Grey Roses* (1895) and *Comedies and Errors* (1898), as well as the extremely popular *The Cardinal's Snuff-Box* (1900), concerned with the love of an English novelist and an Italian duchess, which comes to a happy fulfilment through the mediation of his uncle, the cardinal. *My Friend Prospero* (1904) is a similar romance about a young English nobleman and an Austrian princess.

HARLAND, MARION, pseudonym of Mary Terhune (q.v.).

Harlem, section of upper Manhattan, that includes New York City's Negro district of some 250,000 residents. It was originally an independent village of Dutch settlers, who named it for Haarlem, and was later a residential section for whites until its population became predominantly Negro (*c.*1914–18). The Negro section figured in literature as early as the publication of J.W.Johnson's *The Autobiography of an Ex-Colored Man* (1912), and was widely exploited in the fiction and poetry of the 1920's. Among the best known treatments are Van Vechten's *Nigger Heaven* (1925), O'Neill's *All God's Chillun Got Wings* (1924), and Maxwell Bodenheim's *Naked on Roller Skates* (1931); and among the Negro authors who have depicted Harlem life are Claude McKay, Jean Toomer, Wallace Thurman, Countée Cullen, Langston Hughes, and W.E.B. DuBois.

Harmony Society, an outgrowth of a German pietist sect founded at Württemberg by George Rapp. After persecution abroad, and the establishment of several temporary colonies, Rapp and 600 adherents settled in Pennsylvania (1804), naming their settlement Harmony. The society moved to Indiana (1815–25) but returned to settle at Economy, Pennsylvania, near Pittsburgh. In 1831 'Count Maximilian De Leon,' an adventurer who undermined their religious beliefs, split the Harmonists in two, and escaped with the funds of his minority party. The majority, who continued successfully under the original leadership, are popularly known as the Rappists. Part of their religious system embraced communism, and another distinguishing feature was the doctrine of celibacy. The latter in 1807 led them to dissolve marriage ties and prohibit further marriages, and finally caused their extinction, although there were still four members in 1903. (See *New Harmony*.)

Harper's Bazar (1867–), weekly women's magazine, was published to complement *Harper's Weekly*. In 1901 it became a monthly, and in 1913 was pur-

chased by Hearst, who made it more modern and sophisticated. Since 1929 the title has been spelled *Bazaar*.

Harpers Ferry, see *Brown, John*.

Harper's Monthly Magazine (1850–), founded at New York by Harper and Brothers, with Henry J. Raymond as editor during the first six years. This eclectic literary periodical at first drew widely on British authors, including Dickens, Thackeray, Charles Lever, Trollope, Wilkie Collins, and Hardy, but under the editorship (1869–1919) of Henry M. Alden it printed an increasing amount of American material, including contributions by such diverse authors as Melville, De Forest, Nordhoff, Elizabeth S. Phelps, Henry James, C.D.Warner, Howells, Garland, E.E.Hale, Miss Jewett, Brander Matthews, and Owen Wister. Among the popular serials were Du Maurier's *Trilby* (1894) and Clemens's *Joan of Arc* (1895–6); featured illustrations were by such artists as E.A.Abbey, A.B.Frost, Howard Pyle, and Winslow Homer. A separate English edition published abroad was edited by Andrew Lang. After 1900, the American publication devoted more space to contemporary politics and social problems, with articles by public figures including Wilson, Theodore Roosevelt, and H.C.Lodge, and following the First World War its policy became more notably liberal. The best-known department is the 'Editor's Easy Chair,' whose occupants have included D.G.Mitchell (1851–3), G.W.Curtis (1853–92), Howells (1901–21), E.S.Martin (1921–35), and Bernard De Voto (1935–). Until 1900 the magazine's name was *Harper's New Monthly Magazine*, and since 1925 it has been simply *Harper's Magazine*.

Harper's Weekly (1857–1916), illustrated political and literary journal. Although it always published serials, including works by Dickens, Wilkie Collins, Mrs.Gaskell, and Bulwer, it was best known for its engravings and woodcuts, which constitute a pictorial history of the times. In 1862 Thomas Nast joined the staff, and made the magazine notable for its war pictures and political cartoons. His bitter caricatures of the corrupt Tweed Ring did much to shape public opinion, as did his cartoons, which created the accepted symbols of the Tammany tiger, the Republican elephant, and the Democratic donkey. The magazine was later noted for its photographs and wash drawings, and the writings of such contributors as Kipling, Conan Doyle, Henry James, Howells, H.B.Fuller, R.H.Davis, and Hamlin Garland. Among the editors were G.W.Curtis (1863–92), Carl Schurz (1892–4), and J.K.Bangs (1898–1901). It was absorbed by *The Independent*.

Harp-Weaver, The, poems by Edna St. Vincent Millay (q.v.).

HARRIGAN, EDWARD (1845–1911), author of popular songs, variety sketches, and 39 plays, in all of which he acted the leading parts. His song, 'The Mulligan Guard' (1873), was the seed of many farce-comedies containing popular lyrics, the most famous being the cycle begun with *The Mulligan Guard Picnic* (1878). These satires on the amateur military organizations that flourished in society and politics after the Civil War depict a typical stage Irishman and German, the latter acted by Harrigan's partner, Tony Hart.

HARRIMAN, EDWARD HENRY (1848–1909), during his 20's made a fortune in Wall Street, and about 1880 began his career as an organizer and executive of railway systems. After expanding the Illinois Central, he turned to the Union Pacific, of which after 1897 he became virtual dictator. His domineering attitude and efficiency in the application of practical techniques gave him a unique personal power in railroading, and he extended the Union Pacific's leadership by combinations with the Central Pacific, Southern Pacific, and other systems. He also owned a fleet of merchant ships in the Pacific, and engaged in banking and insurance manipulations. His unscrupulous methods and monopolistic ambition led to a famous financial duel with James J. Hill over control of the Northern Pacific, and also led to an investigation (1906–7) by the Interstate Commerce Commission, which termed his financing 'indefensible.' He led a scientific expedition to Alaska (1899), whose results are contained in the *Harriman Alaska Series* (14 vols.,1902–14). Among his biographies is one by John Muir (1911).

HARRIOT, see *Hariot*.

HARRIS, BENJAMIN (*fl.*1673–1716), English bookseller and publisher, lived in Boston (1686–95), where he issued *Publick Occurrences Both Forreign and Domestick*

(q.v.), the first newspaper printed in America. It was immediately suppressed, but Harris published writings by such authors as Cotton and Increase Mather, and his own compilation, *The New England Primer* (q.v.).

HARRIS, Charles K., see *Tin Pan Alley.*

HARRIS, Frank (1856–1931), born in Ireland, came to the U.S. (1870), where he worked at jobs ranging from bootblacking to cow punching, the latter occupation being described in *My Reminiscences as a Cowboy* (1930). After attending the University of Kansas, he became an American citizen and was admitted to the state bar (1875). He drifted to Europe for further education, and in England became editor of various magazines and an intimate of such men as Beerbohm, Wilde, and Shaw. He attained a literary reputation for such books of short stories as *Elder Conklin* (1894) and *Montes the Matador* (1900), his novel *The Bomb* (1908), dealing with the Haymarket Riot, and his play *Mr. and Mrs. Daventry* (1900), which critics have contended was mainly written by Wilde. Of this London period, Wilde said, 'Frank Harris has been received in all the great houses—*once.*' He returned to the U.S., where he edited *Pearson's Magazine,* but his pro-German views during the First World War caused him to retire to Nice. Meanwhile he had won notoriety through his biography of *Oscar Wilde: His Life and Confessions* (2 vols.,1916), which has been called maliciously inaccurate; his five volumes of *Contemporary Portraits* (1915–27), impressionistic and frequently scandalous sketches of acquaintances; and his promiscuously frank *My Life and Loves* (3 vols., 1923–7). His other works include: *The Man Shakespeare* (1909) and *The Women of Shakespeare* (1911), psychological studies; *Great Days* (1914) and *Love in Youth* (1916), novels; *Unpath'd Waters* (1913), *The Veils of Isis* (1915), *A Mad Love* (1920), and *Undream'd of Shores* (1924), short-story collections; *Shakespeare and His Love* (1910) and *Joan la Ramée* (1926), plays; and *Bernard Shaw* (1931), a biography of which Frank Scully later claimed the authorship.

HARRIS, George Washington (1814–69), Tennessee River steamboat captain, later became a political writer and contributed humorous sketches to local newspapers and *The Spirit of the Times.* He is best known for his *Sut Lovingood Yarns* (q.v.,1867), a collection of the tall tales and humor of the Old Southwest.

HARRIS, Joel Chandler (1848–1908), born and reared in a small town in Georgia, worked on newspapers in Macon, New Orleans, and Savannah, before joining the staff of the *Atlanta Constitution,* with which he was associated from 1876 until the founding of his own *Uncle Remus's Magazine* (1900). His first Uncle Remus story appeared in the *Constitution* in 1879, and the first collection in book form, *Uncle Remus: His Songs and His Sayings* (q.v.,1880) was followed by *Nights with Uncle Remus* (1883), *Uncle Remus and His Friends* (1892), *Mr. Rabbit at Home* (1895), *The Tar-Baby and Other Rhymes of Uncle Remus* (1904), *Uncle Remus and Br'er Rabbit* (1906), and other collections, all more exclusively addressed to children than was the first. These works were among the first, and remain the greatest, in the school of Negro folk literature. Uncle Remus is both typical and strongly individual, and his tales, based on native legends, are told with a simple humor and authentic dialect that is in perfect harmony with the thing said and the way of saying it. The rich plantation background and the elaborate dialogue of the animals are also remarkably fine. *Mingo, and Other Sketches in Black and White* (q.v.,1884) was the first of a number of volumes in which Harris portrayed Georgia aristocrats, poor whites, and ex-slaves, with fidelity, understanding, and humor. These include two novels, *Sister Jane: Her Friends and Acquaintances* (1896) and *Gabriel Tolliver: A Story of Reconstruction* (1902), and such volumes of short stories as *Free Joe, and Other Georgian Sketches* (1887), *Tales of the Home Folks in Peace and War* (1898), and *The Making of a Statesman* (1902), all of which contribute to Harris's eminence among authors of local-color fiction.

HARRIS, Roy (1898–), Oklahoma-born composer, has written in many forms, developing a personal idiom based on the folk music and spirit of Western America. His compositions include three orchestral symphonies; a *Symphony for Voices* based on poems of Whitman; a piano concerto; an overture, *When Johnny Comes Marching Home;* and a symphonic elegy, *Farewell to the Pioneers.*

HARRIS, Thomas Lake (1823–1906), English-born poet and religionist, began his career in 1845 as a minister of Universalism (q.v.), was converted to spiritualism by Andrew Davis, and later established communities of believers in the Brotherhood of the New Life, which aimed at the creation of a new social system through the spiritual regeneration of mankind. He wrote mystic poetry, which he claimed to dictate while in a state of trance.

HARRIS, William Torrey (1835–1909), philosopher and educator, founded the St.Louis school of Idealism, which initiated the systematic study of German thought in the U.S. Influenced by Alcott and Theodore Parker, he became the foremost exponent of Hegel in the U.S. upon publishing *Hegel's Logic* (1890), although he had already used Hegelian interpretation in *The Spiritual Sense of Dante's Divina Commedia* (1889). His academic career, beginning as a St.Louis school teacher (1857) and ending as U.S. Commissioner of Education (1889–1906), was marked by his application of Hegel's principles to educational problems. He founded *The Journal of Speculative Philosophy* (1867–93), which published the early writings of Dewey, James, and Royce, and with Alcott he established the Concord School of Philosophy (1880). The extensive bibliography of his writings includes an *Introduction to the Study of Philosophy* (1889) and the *Psychologic Foundations of Education* (1898). With F.B. Sanborn he wrote a study of Emerson (1901).

HARRISON, Benjamin (1726?–91), Virginia statesman, served with distinction in the colonial legislature, the two Continental Congresses, and the governorship of his state (1781–4). He was a leader in the debates over the Articles of Confederation and the Declaration of Independence, which he signed. W.H.Harrison was his son.

Benjamin Harrison (1833–1901), grandson of W.H.Harrison, was 23rd President of the U.S. (1889–93). Born in Ohio, he practiced law in Indiana, from which he raised a Union regiment in the Civil War, serving as its colonel. In the U.S.Senate (1881–7) he supported the conservative Republican party line. After his defeat of Cleveland in 1888, he continued to follow party dictates, and the most important event of his administration was the convening of the first Pan-American Conference (1889). Cleveland, again his opponent, replaced Harrison after the election of 1892, and he resumed his law practice.

HARRISON, Constance Cary (1843–1920), born in Virginia, later lived in New York and England, and became known for her essays, stories, and novels depicting American social life during the latter part of the 19th century. *The Anglomaniacs* (1890), published anonymously, won wide attention for its comic portrayal of American social climbers in Europe. Her other fiction includes: *Belhaven Tales* (1892); *Sweet Bells Out of Tune* (1893); *A Son of the Old Dominion* (1897); *Good Americans* (1898); and *Latter-Day Sweethearts* (1906). She published her autobiography as *Recollections Grave and Gay* (1911).

HARRISON, Henry Sydnor (1880–1930), born in Tennessee, graduated from Columbia, and served on the staff of the Richmond *Times-Dispatch* (1900–10). His later life was mainly devoted to fiction, the best of his seven novels being *Queed* (1911) and *V.V.'s Eyes* (1913). The first, dramatized by Gilbert Emery (1921), is a complacently realistic story of American city life, concerned with a young 'revolutionary sociologist' whose conviction of his mission in life is broken by contact with actuality when he becomes a newspaper reporter. *V.V.'s Eyes*, about an enthusiastic young doctor, V.Vivian, who attempts to reform the selfish daughter of a factory owner, includes pleas for improved factory conditions, child-labor legislation, and women's rights.

HARRISON, William Henry (1773–1841), 9th President of the U.S. (1841), was born in Virginia, the son of Benjamin Harrison. After several years in the army on the Northwest frontier, he served as a delegate to Congress, and from 1800 to 1812 he was governor of Indiana Territory. His policies with regard to the use of Indian lands aroused resentment among the tribes, who rebelled under the leadership of Tecumseh (q.v.). In the battle of Tippecanoe (q.v.,1811), Harrison temporarily defeated the Indians, and at the outbreak of the War of 1812 he was appointed commander-in-chief of the U.S. forces in the Northwest. In 1813, aided by the naval victory of Perry, he succeeded

in occupying Detroit, and his entry into Canada signalized the American triumph in the West. Although Harrison served as a representative (1816–19) and senator (1825–8), he sank to poverty and obscurity during the Jacksonian era. In 1836, however, he was a compromise candidate for the presidency, supported by the Anti-Masons and certain Whigs, and in 1840 received the backing of Webster and Clay in a final Whig attempt to oust the Jacksonian Democrats. Publicized as a frontier hero and advocate of the 'Log Cabin and Hard Cider,' with the famous slogan 'Tippecanoe and Tyler too,' Harrison won an overwhelming victory against Van Buren. Before his party had time to consolidate its power, he contracted pneumonia and died after a month in office. His grandson, Benjamin Harrison, was the 23rd President.

HARRISSE, Henry (1830–1910), French bibliographer of American history, resident in the U.S. (1847–66). His works include: *Bibliotheca Americana Vetustissima* (1866), a bibliography of 300 books referring to America between 1493 and 1551; *Notes on Columbus* (1866), written in collaboration with Samuel L.M.Barlow; *Additions* (1872) to his first book; *Notes . . . sur la Nouvelle-France* (1872); *D. Fernando Colon, Historiador de su Padre* (1871), on Columbus's son; *Les Corte-Real et leur voyage au nouveau monde* (1883); *Christophe Colomb . . .* (2 vols.,1884–5); *Découverte de l'Amérique du Nord* (1892), a critical survey of the sources and questions concerned in the voyages of the Cabots; and *John Cabot, the Discoverer of North America* (1896).

HART, Albert Bushnell (1854–), professor of American history at Harvard (1883–1926), and editor of the co-operative work, *The American Nation* (28 vols., 1904–18), which was a summary by trained specialists writing in an untechnical style. Besides his own contributions to this series, he has written individual works on American government and history, and has edited an *American History Told by Contemporaries* (5 vols., 1897–1929).

HART, Frances Noyes (1890–), author of fiction, including such detective novels as *The Bellamy Trial* (1927), *Hide in the Dark* (1929), and *The Crooked Lane* (1934).

HART, Fred H. (fl.1873–8), Nevada frontier journalist and humorist, author of *The Sazerac Lying Club* (1878), a collection of character sketches and local narratives in the vein of the tall tale.

HART, Joseph C. (1798–1855), New York lawyer and journalist, lived for a time in Nantucket, and wrote *Miriam Coffin; or, The Whale-Fishermen* (1834), the first American novel on whaling, written to obtain congressional support for the industry, of which it gives a vivid picture. *The Romance of Yachting* (1848) is a farrago of travel and literary essays, including one of the earliest analyses of Shakespeare's plays intended to prove Bacon's authorship. Hart was later U.S. consul in the Canary Islands, where he died.

HART, Moss (1904–), New York playwright, is best known for his collaborations with George S. Kaufman (q.v.), which include: *Once in a Lifetime* (1930), *Merrily We Roll Along* (1934), *You Can't Take It With You* (q.v.,1936; Pulitzer Prize, 1937), *I'd Rather Be Right* (1937), *The American Way* (1939), *The Man Who Came to Dinner* (1939), and *George Washington Slept Here* (1940). He has also written the librettos for Irving Berlin's revues, *Face the Music* (1932) and *As Thousands Cheer* (1933), and the musical comedy *Lady in the Dark* (1941), whose songs are by Kurt Weill and Ira Gershwin.

HARTE, [Francis] Bret[t] (1836–1902), born in Albany, New York, went to California (1854), where he engaged in various occupations, including a brief attempt at mining in the Mother Lode. In 1860 he settled in San Francisco, where he became a printer and journalist, and through his contributions to the *Golden Era* and the *Californian* became a prominent literary figure. *The Lost Galleon* (1867), a collection of poems, and *Condensed Novels and Other Papers* (1867), distinguished for its satirical parodies of famous authors, were his first books. The following year, Harte became editor of the newly founded *Overland Monthly*, in which he published his local-color stories, mainly concerned with moral contrasts, including 'The Luck of Roaring Camp,' 'The Outcasts of Poker Flat,' 'Tennessee's Partner' (qq.v.), 'Miggles,' and 'Brown of Calaveras.' His famous comic ballad, 'Plain Language from Truthful James' (q.v.,1870), also appeared at this time, and, with the collection of *The Luck of Roaring Camp and*

Other Sketches (1870), he was swept into popular favor throughout the U.S. He immediately made a triumphal trip East, where he received a contract from the *Atlantic Monthly* for $10,000 for 12 contributions. He fulfilled the contract with mediocre writing, and his short-lived popularity came to an end. During subsequent years, Harte collected his magazine contributions in *Mrs. Skaggs's Husbands* (1873), *Tales of the Argonauts* (1875), *An Heiress of Red Dog, and Other Sketches* (1878), *A Sappho of Green Springs, and Other Stories* (1891), *and Colonel Starbottle's Client, and Some Other People* (1892). He also wrote such novels as *Gabriel Conroy* (1876), *M'liss: An Idyll of Red Mountain* (1873), and *Jeff Briggs's Love Story* (1880), and two plays, *Two Men of Sandy Bar* (1876) and *Ah Sin* (1877), the latter in collaboration with Clemens, as well as many other works, but none of these approached the success of his earliest writings. He became U.S. consul at Crefeld, Rhenish Prussia (1878), and at Glasgow (1880–85). He lived the remainder of his life in London, where editors accepted his stories more readily than did the American magazines. During his last years he was little better than a hack writer, turning out imitations of the California stories that had won him fame.

Hartford Convention (1814–15), meeting of 26 delegates from Massachusetts, Connecticut, and Rhode Island to consider their position in the War of 1812. This dissident Federalist group, motivated by the Essex Junto and the mercantilists opposed to Jefferson's policies, advocated state rights, prohibition of the admission of new states, limitation of federal control in commercial embargoes, trade restrictions, and declarations of war, and other revisions of the Constitution. The possibilities of secession or a separate peace with England were also considered.

Hartford Daily Courant, see *Connecticut Courant.*

Hartford Wits, see *Connecticut Wits.*

Harvard Classics, see *Eliot, C.W.*

Harvard University, the first American institution of higher learning, was founded (1636) at Newe Towne (Cambridge) under a grant of the Massachusetts Bay Colony. Three years later, the college was named for John Harvard (1607–38), a colonist who bequeathed half his estate (£780) and his library of more than 400 volumes to the new institution. In its early years, the college was closely allied with church and state, but in the mid-19th century this alliance was completely severed, the clergy no longer being formally represented on the board of overseers, which is elected by the alumni rather than the legislature. Harvard Divinity School (founded 1819) was originally a stronghold of Unitarianism, but has later been a nonsectarian graduate school of theology. Other prominent schools are those of medicine (founded 1782), law (founded 1817), Lawrence Scientific School (1847–1907, now the school of engineering), business administration (founded 1908), and journalism. Among the notable institutions within the university are the Agassiz museum of comparative zoology, Peabody museum of archæology, Fogg art museum, Arnold arboretum, and Widener Memorial Library, the largest university library in the U.S. Famous presidents of Harvard include Increase Mather (1685–1701); Josiah Quincy (q.v., 1829–45); Edward Everett (1846–9); Jared Sparks (1849–53); C.W. Eliot (q.v., 1869–1909), under whom Harvard took its place as a leading university of the U.S.; A.L. Lowell (q.v., 1909–33), who introduced the tutorial system and house plan and made other reforms and innovations; and James B. Conant (1933–). Radcliffe College (q.v.) for women is affiliated with the university. Throughout its history, Harvard has played an important role in American cultural life, and its faculty and alumni have included many outstanding men. Among the literary figures on the faculty have been Holmes, Lowell, C.E. Norton, George Bancroft, John Fiske, Parkman, Longfellow, Henry Adams, Santayana, Whitehead, William James, Bliss Perry, Irving Babbitt, G.P. Baker, and G.L. Kittredge. Graduates noted for their writings include Michael Wigglesworth (1651), Increase Mather (1656), Benjamin Thompson (1662), Samuel Sewall (1671), Cotton Mather (1678), Thomas Prince (1709), Mather Byles (1725), Royall Tyler (1776), Prescott (1814), Edward Everett (1814), Jared Sparks (1815), George Bancroft (1817), Emerson (1821), Motley (1831), Theodore Parker (1836), Holmes (1829), Thoreau (1837), R.H. Dana, Jr. (1837), Lowell (1838), Parkman (1844), C.E. Norton (1846), Henry Adams

(1858), John Fiske (1864), William James (M.D., 1869), Santayana (1886), T.S.Eliot (1909), and John Dos Passos (1916).

HARVEY, WILLIAM HOPE (1851–1936), commonly known as 'Coin' Harvey because he used this pseudonym in the magazine and books he published from his Chicago home to disseminate his views on bimetallism. Among his works on the free coinage of silver, which for a time greatly influenced the public, are: *Coin's Financial School* (1894); *A Tale of Two Nations* (1894); *Coin's Financial School Up to Date* (1895); *Coin on Money, Trusts, and Imperialism* (1899); *The Remedy* (1915); and *Common Sense, or the Clot on the Brain of the Body Politic* (1920).

Harvey Cheyne, hero of *Captains Courageous* (q.v.).

Hashimura Togo, see *Irwin, Wallace.*

HASSAM, CHILDE (1859–1935), Boston painter, studied in Paris, where he found his inspiration in Impressionism (q.v.). He worked as an illustrator, genre painter, watercolorist, and etcher, but is best known for his landscapes, and his technique is shown to best advantage in *Allies Day, Fifth Avenue.*

HASTINGS, THOMAS (1784–1872), born in Connecticut and reared in upstate New York, moved to New York City (1832), where for the remainder of his life he conducted church choirs, composed music and words for hymns, and compiled several hymn books. His first collection, *Spiritual Songs for Social Worship* (1831–2), was edited with Lowell Mason, and most of his original works were collected in *Devotional Hymns and Religious Poems* (1850), which includes his music for Toplady's 'Rock of Ages.'

Hasty Pudding, The, mock-epic in three cantos of heroic couplets, composed in 1793 by Joel Barlow (q.v.), published in 1796. During his residence in France, the poet happened one evening, in a Savoyard inn, to encounter a steaming dish of boiled Indian meal (hasty pudding). This reminded him of his home in Connecticut, and caused him to write his merry epic on this native dish, in the professed hope of ranking 'simplicity of diet among the virtues.'

Haunted Palace, The, poem by Poe (q.v.), published in the *Baltimore Museum* (1839), and as one of the hero's 'rhymed verbal improvisations' in the tale, 'The Fall of the House of Usher.' The six stanzas (rimed *ababcdcd*) depict in terms of allegory the progress of insanity within the phantom-haunted 'palace' of a decaying mind.

Haverford College, men's school founded (1833) by the Society of Friends, is situated just north of Philadelphia. The enrolment is limited to about 250. Graduates include Christopher Morley (1910), W.H. Chamberlin (1917), and Frederic Prokosch (1927), and Logan Pearsall Smith was a student there (1881–4).

Hawkeye, see *Leather-Stocking Tales.*

Hawkins, LAURA, heroine of *The Gilded Age* (q.v.).

Hawks of Hawk-Hollow, The, romance by R.M.Bird (q.v.), published in 1835, and anonymously dramatized in 1841.

At the Delaware Water Gap in Pennsylvania, in 1780, there is a feud between the Gilbert and Falconer families. Years before, Colonel Richard Falconer betrayed Jessie Gilbert, and her brothers, a wild group known as the Hawks, vowed revenge, but fled during the Revolution to the West Indies. Herman Hunter, an artist, now comes to the valley, where he falls in love with Catherine Loring, daughter of the colonel's steward, after he rescues her from drowning, being in turn saved by a dark stranger. Herman's rival is Henry Falconer, the colonel's nephew. When Catherine prepares to marry Henry, the dark stranger, revealing himself to be Oran Gilbert, helps Herman to surprise the wedding party, killing Henry and kidnapping Catherine. Herman is captured and jailed, Oran fails to carry out his plan to seize the jail, and Elsie, an old crone, reveals to the colonel that Herman is actually Hyland, his son by Jessie Gilbert. The colonel, repentent, has Hyland released, confesses that he had secretly married Jessie, and dies. Oran, pursued by a posse, commits suicide, and Hyland and Catherine marry.

HAWTHORNE, JULIAN (1846–1934), son of Nathaniel Hawthorne, was educated in the U.S. and abroad, and spent part of his early life in England. Beginning with the publication of *Bressant* (1873), a melodramatic novel, he became a popular author, and his best-known fiction includes: *Garth* (1877), a novel concerned with an Indian curse on a New England family dwelling in Jamaica; *Archibald Malmaison*

(1884), a story of split personality; and *A Fool of Nature* (1896). In addition to such books on his family as *Nathaniel Hawthorne and His Wife* (1884) and *Hawthorne and His Circle* (1903), his autobiographical works include *Shapes that Pass* (1928) and *The Memoirs of Julian Hawthorne* (1938).

HAWTHORNE, NATHANIEL (1804–64), was born at Salem, Massachusetts, of a prominent Puritan family, which had spelled the name Hathorne, and included a judge at the Salem witchcraft trials who figures as the accursed founder of *The House of the Seven Gables*. Nathaniel's father, a sea-captain, died of yellow fever in Dutch Guiana in 1808, leaving his widow to mourn him during a long life of eccentric seclusion, and this influenced her son's somber and solitary attitude. During his childhood, he read extensively in the poets and romancers, and spent an impressionable year at a remote Maine lake, after which he attended Bowdoin College, graduating in 1825. Returning to Salem, he began to write historical sketches and allegorical tales, dealing with moral conflicts in colonial New England. In 1828 he published anonymously, at his own expense, an immature novel, *Fanshawe* (q.v.), whose hero resembles the author at this period. The work went practically unnoticed, but interested S.G.Goodrich, who then published many of Hawthorne's stories in *The Token*. These were reprinted in *Twice-Told Tales* (q.v.,1837, enlarged 1842), and included 'The Maypole of Merrymount,' 'Endicott and the Red Cross,' 'The Minister's Black Veil,' 'Mr.Higginbotham's Catastrophe,' 'Dr. Heidegger's Experiment,' 'The Grey Champion,' 'The Ambitious Guest' (qq.v.), and the 'Legends of the Province House,' containing 'Lady Eleanore's Mantle' and 'Howe's Masquerade' (qq.v.). These tales, which the author said had 'the pale tint of flowers that blossomed in too retired a shade,' deal with the themes of guilt and secrecy, and intellectual and moral pride, and show Hawthorne's constant preoccupation with the effects of Puritanism in New England. In imaginative, allegorical fashion, he depicts the dramatic results of a Puritanism that was at the roots of the culture he knew, recognizing its decadence in his own time. In 1836 he emerged from his seclusion at Salem to begin a career of hack writing and editing. For Goodrich he edited the monthly *American Magazine of Useful and Entertaining Knowledge* (1836), and later compiled the popular *Peter Parley's Universal History* (1837), as well as writing such books for children as *Grandfather's Chair* (1841), *Famous Old People* (1841), *Liberty Tree* (1841), and *Biographical Stories for Children* (1842). Meanwhile he had also been employed in the Boston Custom House (1839–41), and now spent six or seven months at Brook Farm, where his sensitiveness and solitary habits, as well as his lack of enthusiasm for communal living, unfitted him for fruitful participation. He married Sophia Peabody, an ardent follower of the Concord school, but even this marriage, although it was a happy turning point in his life, did not bring Hawthorne to share the optimistic philosophy of Transcendentalism. Settling in Concord at the Old Manse, he continued his analysis of the Puritan mind in the tales that were collected in *Mosses from an Old Manse* (q.v.,1846), including 'Young Goodman Brown,' 'The Celestial Railroad,' 'Rappaccini's Daughter,' 'The Artist of the Beautiful,' 'The Birthmark,' and 'Roger Malvin's Burial' (qq.v.). As Surveyor of the Port of Salem (1846–9), he wrote little, but satirically observed his associates, as he described in the introduction to *The Scarlet Letter* (q.v., 1850). This novel, written after Hawthorne's dismissal from his post owing to a change of administrations, proved to be his greatest production, and indeed summed up in classic terms the Puritan dilemma that had so long occupied his imagination. Other books of this period include: *The House of the Seven Gables* (q.v.,1851), another great romance, concerned with the decadence of Puritanism; *The Blithedale Romance* (q.v.,1852), in which he turned to the contemporary scene and his Brook Farm experiences; *The Snow Image and Other Twice-Told Tales* (q.v.,1852), containing 'The Snow Image,' 'The Great Stone Face,' and 'Ethan Brand' (qq.v.); and *A Wonder Book* (q.v.,1852) and *Tanglewood Tales* (q.v.,1853), stories for children. During these years, he lived for a time in the Berkshires, where he was friendly with his admirer, Melville. After he wrote a campaign biography of his college friend Franklin Pierce (1852) he was rewarded with the consulship at Liverpool. His departure for Europe (1853) marks another turning point in his life. The ensuing years abroad

were filled with sightseeing and journalizing, and, although his new cultural acquirements had little influence on his writing, they throw significant light on his character of mind. After his consular term (1853–7), he spent two years in Italy, returning to settle again in Concord (1860). *Our Old Home* (q.v.,1863), shrewd essays on his observations in England, and *The Marble Faun* (q.v.,1860), a romance set in Italy, were results of his European residence. His last years, during which he continued to contribute to the *Atlantic Monthly*, were marked by declining creative powers, and his attempts to write a romance based on the themes of an elixir of life and an American claimant to an English estate resulted only in four posthumous fragments: *Septimius Felton* (q.v., 1871); *The Dolliver Romance* (q.v.,1876); *Dr. Grimshawe's Secret* (q.v.,1883); and *The Ancestral Footstep* (1883). Other posthumous publications include *Passages from the English Notebooks* (1870), *Passages from the French and Italian Notebooks* (1871), and *Passages from the American Notebooks* (1868), all edited by his wife. Hawthorne's position has long been recognized as that of a classic interpreter of the spiritual history of New England, and in many of his short works, as well as in *The Scarlet Letter* and *The House of the Seven Gables*, he wrote masterpieces of romantic fiction. Like Poe, but with an emphasis on moral significance that Poe lacked, he was a leader in the development of the short story as a distinctive American genre. The philosophic attitude implicit in his writing is generally pessimistic, growing out of the Puritan background, although his use of the supernatural has an æsthetic rather than a religious foundation. His imagination tended always toward abstraction and allegory, so that even the most memorable characters of his novels are recalled as embodying psychological traits or moral concepts, rather than as living figures. His achievement may be said to consist principally in his summing up of the New England Puritan tradition in terms of a deeply imaginative romantic fiction, and in his creative recognition of the decay of that tradition and its system.

HAY, JOHN [MILTON] (1838–1905), Indiana-born statesman and author, as a law student at Springfield met Lincoln, whose assistant secretary he became. With John Nicolay, another secretary, who also served the President until his assassination, he gathered material for the monumental *Abraham Lincoln: A History* (10 vols.,1890). After holding minor posts in foreign legations, he entered journalism, and wrote *Castilian Days* (q.v.,1871), a record of his travels, and *Pike County Ballads* (q.v.,1871), dialect poems about the Illinois frontier. Re-entering the government as assistant secretary of state during the administration of Hayes, he moved in the Washington circle which included Henry Adams, H.C.Lodge, and Clarence King, and wrote an anonymous novel, *The Bread-Winners* (q.v.,1884). He was McKinley's ambassador to Great Britain (1897–8), and secretary of state under McKinley and Theodore Roosevelt (1898–1905). He was responsible for the Open-Door policy in China and the Hay-Pauncefote Treaty (1901), which gave the U.S. control of an Isthmian canal and supremacy in the Caribbean.

HAYES, HELEN (1902–), actress who began her theatrical career as a child, and whose mature roles have included leading parts in Barrie's *What Every Woman Knows*, Kaufman and Connelly's *To the Ladies*, and Housman's *Victoria Regina*. Her husband is Charles MacArthur.

HAYES, RUTHERFORD B[IRCHARD] (1822–93), 19th President of the U.S. (1877–81), after serving in the Civil War became a Republican member of Congress from Ohio (1865–7), and supported the severe Reconstruction program. He was three times elected governor of his state (1867–75) before becoming President in a contested election, in which an Electoral Commission gave him the decision over Tilden (q.v.). Upon assuming the presidency he returned local government to the South, thus ending the Reconstruction. This policy and his civil service reform alienated the faction of Roscoe Conkling, but Hayes remained a party man in his championing of hard money. His *Diary and Letters* (5 vols.) were published (1922–6).

Haymarket Riot, occurred in Haymarket Square, Chicago (May 4, 1886), during a mass protest against the killing of strikers by police, when a bomb was exploded, killing and wounding several policemen. The police thereupon fired into the crowd, and during the ensuing panic and terror several anarchist Internationalists were arrested. Although some were later pardoned by Governor Altgeld, even the trials, which

led to the execution of four men, failed to discover proof of their implication in the bombing. Frank Harris's novel, *The Bomb* (1908), deals with the case.

HAYNE, Paul Hamilton (1830–86), South Carolina author, called 'the last literary cavalier,' was known before the Civil War for his nature poetry, published in *Poems* (1855), *Sonnets and Other Poems* (1857), and *Avolio* (1860). He was a leading member of the Russell's Bookstore Group (q.v.), and edited *Russell's Magazine* (1857–60). During the war he was too ill to serve in the army, and lived in poverty after his home was destroyed, but won fame for his martial lyrics. His fragile, charming poetry finds its best expression during the post-war period in his *Legends and Lyrics* (1872). He edited the poems of his friend Timrod, and for this volume (1873) wrote a pathetic and penetrating introductory essay. He also wrote a life of H.S.Legaré (1878). His own *Collected Poems* were published in 1882.

HAYWOOD, William Dudley (1869–1928), born in Salt Lake City, was a miner at the age of 15, and early became interested in labor organization. He opposed the craft unionism of the American Federation of Labor, founded the Industrial Workers of the World (q.v.), and preached the doctrine of class struggle. In 1905 he was jailed for instigating the assassination of Idaho's governor, but was acquitted in a celebrated trial. He continued his militant leadership of labor in the Lawrence and Paterson textile workers' strikes (1912, '13). Because of his I.W.W. activities, he was sentenced in 1918 to 20 years imprisonment for sedition, but, while awaiting a new trial, escaped to Russia (1921), where he lived until his death. He collaborated on a book, *Industrial Socialism* (1911), and his autobiography, *Bill Haywood's Book* was posthumously published (1929).

HAZARD, Ebenezer (1744–1817), Pennsylvania antiquarian and postmaster-general (1782–89), whose *Historical Collections, State Papers, and Other Authentic Documents* (2 vols.,1792–4) influenced the work of his friend Jeremy Belknap, and constituted a significant early attempt to preserve American source materials.

HAZARD, Thomas Robinson (1797–1886), Rhode Island agriculturist generally called 'Shepherd Tom' because of his sheep-raising. This and his textile manufacturing were so successful that at 43 he retired from business, moved to an estate near Newport, and devoted the remainder of his life to spiritualism; a variety of reforms that included better asylums for the poor and insane, abolition of capital punishment, antislavery, pacifism, and feminism; and antiquarianism. His writings include *Recollections of Olden Times* (1879) and *The Jonny-Cake Letters* (1882). This collection, enlarged as *The Jonny-Cake Papers of 'Shepherd Tom'* (1915), recounts Yankee folklore of Rhode Island in a whimsical fashion.

Hazard of New Fortunes, A, novel by Howells (q.v.), published in 1890. Basil March also figures in *Their Wedding Journey* (1871), *An Open-Eyed Conspiracy* (1897), and *Their Silver Wedding Journey* (1899).

Basil March becomes editor of a magazine promoted by slangy, affable little Fulkerson, and financed by Dryfoos, a farmer who has become a millionaire through the discovery of natural gas on his farm and who backs the magazine in order to give practical business experience to his son Conrad. March engages on his staff a German socialist, Lindau, whose point of view antagonizes Dryfoos. The capitalist orders March to discharge Lindau, but March refuses, and Fulkerson sides with him. During a strike of streetcar employes, Conrad and Lindau are killed while trying to pacify the strikers. Prostrated by the death of his son, Dryfoos magnanimously provides for Lindau's funeral, and sells the magazine to Fulkerson and March.

Hazel Kirke, domestic melodrama by Steele MacKaye (q.v.), produced and published in 1880 as a revision of his play, *An Iron Will* (1879).

Dunstan Kirke, an English miller, banishes his daughter Hazel when she disappoints him by failing to marry Squire Aaron Rodney, and elopes instead with Arthur Carringford, the disguised Lord Travers. Hazel's mother-in-law, who has opposed the match, informs her that her marriage is illegal. When the girl attempts to drown herself in the millstream, she is rescued by her husband, after which her father forgives her and her marriage is discovered to be legal.

He and She, play by Rachel Crothers (q.v.), produced in 1911 as *The Herfords*

and under its present title in 1920. It was published in 1921.

Tom and Ann Herford, both sculptors, are happily married until she wins a prize for which they have both competed, and it becomes obvious that she is more interested in her career than her home. While they are arguing, their young daughter, Millicent, arrives and announces that she has run away from boarding school to marry a chauffeur. Ann, realizing her responsibilities, prepares to take Millicent to Europe, and resigns her commission in favor of Tom.

Headless Horseman, see *Legend of Sleepy Hollow.*

Headsman, The; or, The Abbaye des Vignerons, romance by Cooper (q.v.), published in 1833.

During the early 18th century, Balthazar, headsman or executioner of Berne, conceals the identity of his supposed son Sigismund so that the youth may not be forced to continue the family's hereditary profession. Sigismund loves Adelheid, daugher of Baron Melchior de Willading, but, when questioned concerning his birth, he reveals his secret. Adelheid continues to love him, and it is later disclosed, when Balthazar is unjustly accused of a murder, that Sigismund is actually the son of the Doge of Genoa, having been stolen as a child.

HEARN, LAFCADIO (1850–1904), born in the Ionian Islands, of Irish-Greek parentage, was educated in France and England, and emigrated to the U.S. in 1869. Handicapped by poverty, semi-blindness, a morbid inferiority complex, and a scandal resulting from his relations with a mulatto woman, he had an unsuccessful career as a journalist in Cincinnati, and then lived for a time in New Orleans, where he wrote 'Fantastics,' a series of weird newspaper sketches. His first book, *One of Cleopatra's Nights* (1882), stories translated from Gautier, was followed by *Stray Leaves from Strange Literature* (1884), reconstructing fantastically beautiful stories from the exotic literature which fascinated him; *Gombo Zhêbes* (1885), a collection of Negro-French proverbs; and *Some Chinese Ghosts* (1887), beautifully polished Oriental legends. After a visit to Grand Isle, he wrote *Chita: A Memory of Last Island* (q.v.,1889). *Two Years in the French West Indies* (1890) contains sketches based on his residence in Martinique (1887–9), from which he also drew material for his novel *Youma* (q.v.,1890). During a brief residence in New York, he wrote *Karma,* a weak novel, and did some hack work that enabled him to go to Japan (1890). There he spent the rest of his life, marrying the daughter of a Samurai family, and becoming a Japanese citizen under the name Koizumi Yakumo. As a school teacher in the small town of Matsue he observed the feudal customs described in his *Glimpses of Unfamiliar Japan* (1894). For almost ten years he occupied the chair of English literature at the Imperial University of Tokio, and his lectures were posthumously published from verbatim transcripts made by his students. During this period he wrote 12 books on the life, customs, flora, and fauna of his adopted country. His stories of Japan were frequently set in the form of essays, and among the volumes in which he best catches the mood of the place and the people, or in which he most successfully treats the supernatural, are: *'Out of the East'* (1895); *Kokoro* (1896); *In Ghostly Japan* (1899); *Shadowings* (1900); *A Japanese Miscellany* (1901); *Kottō* (1902); *Kwaidan* (1904); and *The Romance of the Milky Way* (1905). *Japan: An Attempt at Interpretation* (1904) was the summation of his sympathetic and acute observations on the mind and the soul of the people among whom he had chosen to live.

HEARST, WILLIAM RANDOLPH (1863–), son of George Hearst (1820–91), California mine operator and U.S. senator, was born in San Francisco, and assumed charge of his father's San Francisco *Examiner* in 1887. Beginning with this paper and the New York *Morning Journal,* he built up a powerful chain of newspapers throughout the U.S. and eventually became ruler of a domain, with headquarters on his San Simeon estate, that has included such properties as motion-picture and radio companies, some 30 newspapers with a circulation of many millions, and a number of popular magazines, including *Harper's Bazaar, Hearst's International-Cosmopolitan,* and *Good Housekeeping.* He served as a congressman from New York (1903–7), and was an unsuccessful candidate for mayor and governor. His newspapers are considered the most flagrant examples of yellow journalism, and through them have been presented his notorious campaigns, including advocacy of war

with Spain (1897–8) and later with Mexico; extreme nationalism and opposition to the League of Nations; demand for full monetary payment of World War debts; and suppression of radical minorities.

Heart of the West, short stories by W.S.Porter (q.v.).

Hearth and Home (1868–75), weekly journal of agricultural information and literature for the rural home. The editors included D.G.Mitchell, Mrs.Stowe, Mrs. Dodge, the two Egglestons, and Frank Stockton. In time the magazine became almost completely a literary miscellany, and, in addition to the serialization of *The Hoosier Schoolmaster* and other writings of its editors, printed contributions from E.E.Hale, Mrs.Davis, E.P.Roe, and Louisa Alcott.

Hearts of Oak, play by David Belasco and James A. Herne (qq.v.).

HEATH, James Ewall (1792–1862), Virginia author and public official, whose books included *Edge-Hill* (1828), a romance of plantation life, and a comedy, *Whigs and Democrats* (1839).

Heathen Chinee, The, see *Plain Language from Truthful James.*

Heavenly Discourse, satirical dialogues by C.E.S.Wood (q.v.).

Heaven's My Destination, novel by Thornton Wilder (q.v.).

HECHT, Ben (1894–), born in New York, reared in Wisconsin, after refusing to go to college because he considered formal education repressive, became in turn an acrobat, a violinist, and a newspaper reporter. As a Bohemian member of the literary group that flourished in Chicago just after the First World War, he became known as an ironical, cynical, ultra-romantic writer, who was variously dubbed an 'intellectual mountebank' and 'Pagliacci of the Fire Escape.' He drew attention to himself in various ways, such as having a well-publicized literary feud with his friend, Maxwell Bodenheim, with whom he wrote *The Master Poisoner* (1918) and other plays; publishing the *Chicago Literary Times* (1923–4), a gaudy iconoclastic little magazine; and vociferously espousing the cause of art-for-art's-sake. His attitude of mind was well revealed in his novel, *Erik Dorn* (q.v., 1921) and *Gargoyles* (1922). 1001 *Afternoons in Chicago* (1922) and *Tales of Chicago Streets* (1924) are romantic short stories of city life. *Fantazius Mallare* (1922), a book with a decadent erotic theme, was followed by several other novels, *The Florentine Dagger* (1923), *Humpty Dumpty* (1924), *The Kingdom of Evil* (1924), *Count Bruga* (1926), and *A Jew in Love* (1931), and by collections of short stories, *Broken Necks* (1924), *The Champion from Far Away* (1931), and *A Book of Miracles* (1939). In 1928 was produced his play, *The Front Page*, written in collaboration with Charles MacArthur (q.v.), a tough swift-moving portrayal of newspaper life. He has collaborated with MacArthur on many motion-picture scripts, and his further plays include: *The Great Magoo* (1933), written with Gene Fowler; *20th Century* (1932), written with MacArthur; *To Quito and Back* (1937); and *Ladies and Gentlemen* (1939), written with MacArthur.

HECKER, Isaac Thomas (1819–88), born in New York, early came under the influence of Orestes Brownson, visited Brook Farm and Fruitlands, and was intimate with the Transcendentalists. He entered the Roman Catholic church (1844) and was expelled from the Redemptorist order 13 years later, but was permitted by the pope to found the Paulist Fathers, of which he was the superior until his death. *The Catholic World*, an eclectic monthly magazine that he founded (1865) and edited until his death, is still in existence.

HECKEWELDER, John Gottlieb Ernestus (1743–1823), was brought from England to America at the age of 11. He became a Moravian missionary to the Indians on the Susquehanna and aided in their removal to Ohio and Canada. His wide knowledge of the Indians is recorded in his *Account of the History, Manners, and Customs of the Indian Nations Who Once Inhabited Pennsylvania* (1819) and *A Narrative of the Mission of the United Brethren among the Delaware and Mohegan Indians* (1820). Cooper drew strongly on these works, and was criticized for following the missionary's partiality for the Delawares, hatred of the Iroquois, and generally romantic interpretation.

HEDGE, Frederic Henry (1805–90), Unitarian clergyman in Massachusetts, Maine, and Rhode Island, professor in Harvard Divinity School, is noted for helping to bring Emerson and other Transcendentalists the knowledge of German idealistic philosophy that he had acquired

abroad. The Transcendental Club (q.v.) was sometimes called the Hedge Club. His many books include *Prose Writers of Germany* (1848), *Hymns for the Church of Christ* (1853), *Ways of the Spirit and Other Essays* (1877), *Atheism in Philosophy* (1884), *Hours with German Classics* (1886), *Martin Luther, and Other Essays* (1888), and many sermons, orations, and translations, some of the latter included in *Specimens of Foreign Standard Literature* (14 vols., 1838–42), edited with George Ripley.

HEENAN, JOHN CAMEL (1835–73), boxing champion of the U.S. (1858–63), known as the 'Benicia Boy.' His most famous match was in England with Tom Sayers (1860), and was declared a draw. He was married to Adah Isaacs Menken.

HEGAN, ALICE, see *Rice, Alice.*

Heidenmauer, The; or, The Benedictines, romance by Cooper (q.v.), published in 1832.

In 16th-century Bavaria, the Benedictines of the abbey of Limburg strive to maintain their temporal power in the town of Dürkheim, which they finally lose to the feudal lord, Count Emich of Leiningen-Hartenburg. This theme, showing a society emerging from domination by Catholicism and superstition to secular rule and critical Protestantism, is amplified by a subplot dealing with the love and marriage of the count's forester, Berchtold Hintermayer, with Meta Frey, daughter of a leading citizen of Dürkheim. The title refers to a ruined fortress near the town, home of the hermit Baron Odo von Ritterstein, once the fiancé of Meta's mother.

HELD, JOHN, JR. (1889–), illustrator known for his woodcuts and drawings imitating this technique, which burlesqued the style and subject matter of the 1890's. Both as an author and artist, in such books as *Grim Youth* (1930) and *The Flesh Is Weak* (1931), he was considered a leading interpreter of the younger generation of the Jazz Age.

Held by the Enemy, play by William Gillette (q.v.).

Helen Halsey, novel by Simms (q.v.).

Helen's Babies, novel by John Habberton (q.v.).

Helicon Home Colony, communal experiment founded at Englewood, New Jersey (1906), by Upton Sinclair (q.v.) and some 40 associates, mostly young married writers. The mothers co-operated in the care of their children, and the household workers, one of whom was Sinclair Lewis, were treated as equals by the residents. Distinguished visitors included John Dewey, William James, and Emma Goldman. The project suffered much vilification in the press, and was abandoned (1907) when the main building was destroyed by fire.

Hell-Bent fer Heaven, play by Hatcher Hughes (q.v.), produced and published in 1924, when it was awarded the Pulitzer Prize.

Rufe Pryor, a canting evangelist in the North Carolina mountains, is in love with Jude Lowry, the fiancée of Sid Hunt, and in order to win her revives the long-slumbering feud between the Hunts and the Lowrys. Failing to effect his purpose, he believes that as the instrument of God he should dynamite a dam and drown Sid. The others escape, and Rufe is left imprisoned in the house while the flood rises. In desperation, he alternately implores and reviles his God.

Hell-Fire Club, popular name of the Couranteers (1721–4), a Boston literary coterie, including Benjamin Franklin and William Douglass, which frequented the office of James Franklin, and contributed to his *New England Courant.* It received its name from the Mathers, who accused it of resembling the reputedly scandalous London organizations of that name. Actually, the club brought the spirit of the London coffee-houses to Boston, and opposed reactionary tendencies.

HELLMAN, LILLIAN (1905–), New York dramatist whose plays include: *The Children's Hour* (1934), a tragedy in which a malicious child destroys the happiness of the proprietors of her boarding school by accusing them of lesbianism; *Days to Come* (1936), a play concerned with a strike; and *The Little Foxes* (1939), dealing with the struggle of a reactionary Southern family to maintain its wealth and power despite internal dissension and the encroachments of modern society; and *Watch on the Rhine* (1941), about an anti-Nazi agent who comes to the U.S. with his American wife and is forced to murder in order to continue his intense struggle against Hitler's world.

HELPER, HINTON ROWAN (1829–1909), North Carolina author, spent three years in California during the gold rush, and wrote his impressions in *Land of Gold:*

Reality Versus Fiction (1855). He then became interested in the problem of slavery, and wrote *The Impending Crisis of the South: How to Meet It* (1857), discussing the question from an economic point of view and advocating free labor, although only in the interests of the whites, since he despised Negroes. Unpopular in the South, this antislavery argument was widely distributed by Republicans and Abolitionists and won Helper the post of U.S. consul at Buenos Aires. After his return (1866), he wrote three passionate books denouncing the very existence of colored races, the first of these being *Nojoque: A Question for a Continent* (1867), a furious satire demanding the extinction of Negroes and prophesying a happy 'golden age' to be inaugurated by 'the total absence of all the swarthy and inferior races of men.' He devoted most of the rest of his life to an unsuccessful project that is described in *The Three Americas Railway* (1881).

HEMINGWAY, Ernest [Miller] (1898–), born in Illinois, while attending school made frequent hunting and fishing expeditions in northern Michigan, which helped condition his later primitivistic attitude. After working as a Kansas City reporter, he joined a volunteer ambulance unit in France, then transferred to the Italian infantry until the close of the First World War, after which he reported battles in the Near East for the Toronto *Star*, and settled in Paris as a member of the expatriate group. Influenced by Ezra Pound and particularly by Gertrude Stein, whose style strongly affected him, he published *Three Stories & Ten Poems* (Paris, 1923) and *in our time* (q.v.,Paris,1924). These early stories already exhibited the attitude of mind and technique for which he later became famous. As the leading spokesman for the 'lost generation,' he expressed the feelings of a war-wounded people, disillusioned by the loss of faith and hope, and so thoroughly defeated by the collapse of former values that, their atrophied nerves not permitting them to attack their betrayers, they could turn only to a stoic acceptance of primal emotions. The stories are mainly concerned with 'tough' people, either intelligent men and women who have dropped into an exhausted cynicism, or such primitives as frontiersmen, Indians, and professional athletes, whose essential courage and honesty are implicitly contrasted with the brutality of civilized society. Emotion is held at arm's length; only the bare happenings are recorded, and emphasis is obtained by understatement and spare dialogue. After Hemingway returned to New York and wrote the mediocre satirical novel, *The Torrents of Spring* (1926), he carried the style and attitude of his short stories into the novel, *The Sun Also Rises* (q.v.,1926), which tells of the moral collapse of a group of expatriated Americans and Englishmen, broken by the war, who turn toward escape through all possible violent diversions. Success in fictional craftsmanship and in portraying the mind of an era was again achieved in *A Farewell to Arms* (q.v.,1929), the poignant love story of an English nurse and an American ambulance lieutenant during the war. Besides further distinguished collections of short stories, *Men Without Women* (q.v.,1927) and *Winner Take Nothing* (q.v.,1933), he wrote only two lesser books during the next few years, although his work continued to exercise a great influence on the literature of the period. *Death in the Afternoon* (q.v., 1932), a book on bullfighting, and *Green Hills of Africa* (1935), an account of big-game hunting with digressions on literary matters, show a further cultivation of the primitive and brutal levels, contrasted with the hollow culture that had cheated his generation. In *To Have and Have Not* (q.v.,1937), Hemingway for the first time showed an interest in a possible solution of social problems through collective action. He continued to manifest this attitude in his newspaper articles written from Spain during that country's civil war, and in his realistic three-act play, *The Fifth Column*, concerned with fascist and communist counter-espionage in Madrid during the civil war. Produced in an adaptation by Benjamin Glazer (1940), the play was published in *The Fifth Column and the First Forty-Nine Stories* (1938), a collection that also includes the first printing of one of his finest short stories, 'The Snows of Kilimanjaro,' describing the death of an American author during a hunting expedition in Africa. *For Whom the Bell Tolls* (q.v.,1940), Hemingway's longest novel, though concerned with an incident in the Spanish civil war, possesses universality in dealing with the theme that the world is so integrated that loss of liberty in one place means a loss everywhere.

HÉMON, Louis (1880–1913), French-

Canadian author, is best known for his novel of pioneer life in Quebec, *Maria Chapdelaine* (1913, translated 1921). Other works in translation include his *Journal* (1924); a book of short stories, *My Fair Lady* (1923); and two novels, *Blind Man's Buff* (1924) and *Monsieur Ripois and Nemesis* (1925).

HENDERSON, Alice Corbin (1881–), was an editor of *Poetry* (1912–16), and published her first book of poems, *The Spinning Woman of the Sky* (1912). She moved to New Mexico (1916), whose folklore she has employed in her poems, *Red Earth* (1920) and *The Sun Turns West* (1933). Her other books include: *Adam's Dream and Two Other Miracle Plays for Children* (1907); *The Turquoise Trail* (1928), an anthology of New Mexico poetry; and *Brothers of Light* (1937), an account of the Penitentes.

HENDERSON, Richard, see *Transylvania.*

HENDRICK, Burton J[esse] (1871–), journalist and historian, whose books include: *The Life and Letters of Walter Hines Page* (1922, Pulitzer Prize, 1923); *The Training of an American: The Earlier Life and Letters of Walter Hines Page* (1928, Pultizer Prize, 1929); *The Victory at Sea* (1920, Pulitzer Prize, 1921), written in collaboration with Admiral William S. Sims; *Bulwark of the Republic: A Biography of the Constitution* (1937); and *Statesmen of the Lost Cause* (1939).

HENNEPIN, Louis (1640–1701?), Belgian-born Franciscan friar, came to Canada (1675), and became chaplain of the exploring expedition of La Salle, who detailed him to accompany Aco on the first exploration of the upper Mississippi Valley. Captured in Minnesota by the Sioux, they were rescued by Duluth. After returning to France, Hennepin published a *Déscription de la Louisiane* (1683, translated 1880), *Nouvelle Découverte* (1697, translated 1698), and his *Nouveau Voyage* (1698), interesting and important accounts in which, however, he exaggerates his own part in the expedition, which was actually led by Aco. His assertion that they reached the mouth of the Mississippi is unfounded, and his description of the lower river is plagiarized from Membré.

HENRI, Robert (1865–1929), Ohio-born painter and art instructor, studied at the Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts and in Paris. His early portraits, employing sweeping strokes and recording the first impression of the subjects, as in *The Young Woman in Black,* show the influence of Velasquez, Hals, and Manet. As a teacher at the Art Students' League and elsewhere, he continually stressed sincerity and honesty, without preconceived formulæ. In 1910 he founded 'The Eight' (q.v.), and his battle against sentimentality and academism caused him also to champion the Armory Show. His ideas are expressed in a book, *The Art Spirit* (1923).

HENRY, Joseph (1797–1878), New York physicist whose electro-magnetic experiments and discoveries, independent of and evidently slightly prior to those of Faraday, were the foundation of the development of the telegraph, telephone, radio, and electric motor. He was a professor at the College of New Jersey (1832–46), and director of the Smithsonian Institution (1846–78), which published his *Scientific Writings* (1886).

HENRY, O., pseudonym of W.S.Porter (q.v.).

HENRY, Patrick (1736–99), Virginia statesman, during the years leading up to the Revolution was a member of the colonial House of Burgesses and of the Continental Congress. His revolutionary speeches were marked by force and sincerity, as in his famous phrases, 'Tarquin and Cæsar each had his Brutus, Charles the First his Cromwell, and George the Third may profit by their example . . . If this be treason, make the most of it!' (speech on the Stamp Act, May 29, 1765, in the Virginia legislature); and 'I know not what course others may take, but as for me, give me liberty or give me death!' (speech in the Virginia Convention, March 23, 1775). Outlawed by Lord Dunmore, Henry succeeded him as governor of Virginia (1776–9), when he supported Washington and sent George Rogers Clark on his Northwestern expedition. Although originally a radical, he broke with his friend Jefferson and became a conservative member of the Federalist party. He declined membership in the Constitutional Convention and the U.S.Senate, as well as Washington's offers to appoint him secretary of state and chief justice of the Supreme Court. He was mainly responsible for the drafting of the Bill of Rights. He figures frequently in fiction, e.g. *The Virginia Comedians.*

Henry E. Huntington Library and Art Gallery, situated at San Marino, near Pasadena, California, on the estate of its founder, the nephew of C.P.Huntington (q.v.). The younger Huntington left a large endowment to maintain it as a public library and center of scholarly research. The library is noted for its incunabula and for book and manuscript collections of English and American literature, Americana, and Spanish-American history. The art gallery contains a fine collection of English paintings. The library's publications are an outgrowth of its research program.

Henry Esmond, Esquire, The History of, romance by Thackeray (q.v.), published in 1852. *The Virginians* (q.v.) is a sequel.

During the reign of Queen Anne, Henry Esmond is orphaned by the death of his father, Viscount Castlewood. His birth is thought to have been illegitimate, and the new Lord Castlewood, a cousin, takes the boy into his family as a page. Henry becomes devoted to Lady Castlewood, and is appalled when he carries smallpox into their home, thereby spoiling her great beauty. She is neglected by her husband, and his false friend, Lord Mohun, attempts to seduce her. Castlewood's discovery of this treachery prompts him to fight a duel, in which he is killed. Before he dies, he reveals to Henry that the boy's parents had been married, so that he is heir to the estate, but Henry conceals this fact in the interests of Lady Castlewood and her son. She considers him responsible for the duel and forces him to leave. After distinguished army service under Marlborough, he returns in time to prevent Lady Castlewood's marriage to Tom Tusher, an ambitious chaplain. He does not realize that she loves him, and falls in love with her daughter Beatrix, now grown to womanhood and a vain coquette. She spurns him, but his affection continues through various adventures, until she foils his scheme to enthrone the Pretender by accepting the Prince's advances at a time when he should be in London. Henry now realizes her true nature, and discovers that he loves her mother, whom he marries. Leaving the English estate in the hands of her son Frank, Henry and his wife move to a Virginia plantation, where they found a leading colonial family.

Henry St.John, Gentleman, romance by J.E.Cooke (q.v.), published in 1859 as a sequel to *The Virginia Comedians* (q.v.). It was reissued under the title *Bonnybel Vane.*

Set in the Shenandoah Valley at the outbreak of the Revolutionary War, the narrative tells of the hero's love for Bonnybel Vane. Contrasting the Whig and Tory classes, the author shows the changing sentiments of the landholders under the stress of historical events.

HENSON, Josiah (1789–1883), Negro slave who escaped from Maryland to Canada and became a Methodist preacher. He dictated *The Life of Josiah Henson* (1849), to which Mrs. Stowe wrote an introduction. Regarded as a prototype of Uncle Tom, he figures in her *Key to Uncle Tom's Cabin.*

HENTZ, Nicholas Marcellus (1797–1856), French-born novelist, whose best-known work, *Tadeuskund, the Last King of the Lenape* (1825), is a melodramatic Indian tale in the manner of Cooper. He conducted several schools in the South with his wife, Caroline Lee Whiting Hentz (1800–56), who wrote *De Lara; or, the Moorish Bride* (1831) and *Werdenberg; or, the Forest League* (1832) and other tragedies, as well as several novels and collections of tales.

HERBERT, Henry William (1807–58), English-born author and editor, came to New York (1831), where he taught school and edited *The American Monthly Magazine* (1833–5). Besides translating classical literature, he wrote a well-known series of historical romances, including *The Brothers: A Tale of the Fronde* (1835), and, under the pseudonym Frank Forester, wrote sporting manuals and such novels as *My Shooting Box* (1846), *The Deerstalkers* (1849), and *The Quorndon Hounds; or, A Virginian at Melton Mowbray* (1852).

HERBERT, Victor (1859–1924), New York composer, 'cellist, and conductor, was born in Ireland and had a career in Germany before he came to New York (1886) to be first 'cellist of the Metropolitan Opera. He was a soloist with the orchestras of Seidl and Theodore Thomas, a bandmaster (1894–8), conductor of the Pittsburgh symphony (1898–1904), and then devoted himself mainly to composing. His early works include compositions for 'cello and orchestra, and he later wrote two grand operas, the Indian *Natoma* (1911) and *Madeleine* (1914), but

his fame is based on his gay and tuneful operettas, which number nearly 40. The most popular American works in this genre, they include: *The Fortune Teller* (1898), *Babes in Toyland* (1903), *Mademoiselle Modiste* (1905), *The Red Mill* (1906), *Naughty Marietta* (1910), and *Eileen* (1917). Some of the songs from these operettas continue to be widely popular, among them being 'Toyland,' 'Italian Street Song,' 'Kiss Me Again,' 'Ah, Sweet Mystery of Life,' and 'Gypsy Love Song.'

HERBST, JOSEPHINE [FREY] (1897–), Iowa-born proletarian author, graduated from the University of California (1919). Her novels, besides *Nothing Is Sacred* (1928) and *Money for Love* (1929), include the trilogy: *Pity Is Not Enough* (1933), telling of the struggle of the Trexlers during the Gilded Age, particularly of the tragic career of a son of the family who is a carpetbagger in the South; *The Executioner Waits* (1934), picturing the family during the years from 1918 to 1929, and describing the era's social conflicts, strikes, and personal frustrations; and *Rope of Gold* (1939), following the characters through the chaotic economic conditions of the 1930's. *The Unknown Americas* (1939) is a study of Latin America, and *Satan's Sergeants* (1941) is a novel set in Pennsylvania.

HERFORD, OLIVER (1863–1935), cartoonist and humorist, whose volumes of light verse, illustrated by his own drawings, include: *The Bashful Earthquake* (1898), *A Child's Primer of Natural History* (1899), and *Excuse It, Please* (1929).

HERGESHEIMER, JOSEPH (1880–), born in Philadelphia, began his career as a novelist with *The Lay Anthony* (1914), an idealistic romance, followed by *Mountain Blood* (1915), contrasting the newly rich with the old Virginians of Highland stock. *The Three Black Pennys* (q.v.,1917) is a portrait of the rise and decline of a family, with a background of the Pennsylvania iron industry. *Gold and Iron* (1918) contains three novelettes, each a character study of a powerful person whose aggression wins him what he desires. In *Java Head* (q.v.,1919), Hergesheimer turned to historic New England, writing an atmospheric novel concerned with the tragic results of miscegenation, while *Linda Condon* (q.v.,1919), a romantic character study, marked the end of this period of conscientious work and artistic sincerity. His earlier writing had not always been on the highest level, but now his novels tended to move progressively farther toward the artistic shallows of cheap popular fiction. They follow two main lines: that of highly decorated, weak portraits of a futile society, as in *Cytherea* (1922) and *The Party Dress* (1930); and that of romances depending on picturesque settings for their vigor, as in *The Bright Shawl* (1922), set in the West Indies, *Balisand* (1924), dealing with post-Revolutionary Virginia, *Tampico* (1926), a romance set in Mexico, *Swords and Roses* (1929), a Civil War story, *The Limestone Tree* (1931), concerned with Kentucky pioneers and their descendants, and *The Foolscap Rose* (1934), describing the rise to power of a Pennsylvania family. *The Happy End* (1919) is a book of short stories, of which the best known is 'Tol'able David' (q.v.). Hergesheimer has also written *San Cristóbal de la Habana* (1920), sketches of the Cuban city; *Quiet Cities* (1928), stories set in the past of nine American cities; *Sheridan* (1913), a biography; other fiction, travel accounts, and the autobiographical narrative, *From an Old House* (1925).

Hermitage, THE, near Nashville, Tennessee, the home and burial place of Andrew Jackson.

HERNDON, WILLIAM HENRY (1818–91), Kentucky-born lawyer, the junior partner of Lincoln's law firm after 1844 and formally associated with this firm until Lincoln's death. His antislavery views are supposed to have influenced Lincoln, whose political career Herndon is also said to have encouraged. With Jesse W. Weik he wrote *Herndon's Lincoln: The True Story of a Great Life* (3 vols.,1889), notable for its new material on Lincoln's life through his New Salem days.

HERNE, JAMES A. (1839–1901), New York actor and playwright, first came into prominence during his association with Belasco in San Francisco. His plays, first published in a collected edition in 1928, include: *Margaret Fleming* (1890), a somber, realistic story of marital infidelity; *Shore Acres* (q.v.,1892), a realistic depiction of New England life; *The Reverend Griffith Davenport* (q.v.,1899), a Civil War play; and *Sag Harbor* (q.v.,1899), a reworking of *Hearts of Oak* (1879), originally written with Belasco, a final example of his mastery of homely realism and his break with the old tradition.

Hero, The, play by Gilbert Emery (q.v.), produced in 1921, and published in Quinn's *Contemporary American Plays* (1923).

When Oswald Lane, a World War veteran, returns to his home, he is idolized by the village in general, and particularly by his commonplace brother Andrew, the latter's wife Hester, and the young Belgian refugee, Marthe. Ostensibly a hero, he considers himself superior to the community and lacks any sense of moral obligation. After seducing Marthe, he scorns the advances of Hester and steals the funds of the local church, of which Andrew is treasurer, so that he may return to France to find 'his own kind of girl.' In a final display of his variety of heroism, he is killed while saving his young nephew from a fire. Hester, not wishing to disillusion her husband, tells him that she gave the missing church funds to Oswald to deposit in the bank. Andrew, the real hero, quietly determines to replace them, and resumes his uneventful life.

HERRERA Y TORDESILLAS, ANTONIO DE (1549?–1625), Spanish official historian, whose *Historia General . . .* (1601–15), translated as the *General History of the Indies* (1740), is comprehensive, accurate, and unbiased, although too disconnected by its strict chronological order to be of literary significance.

HERRICK, ROBERT (1868–1938), born at Cambridge, graduated from Harvard (1890) and served in the English department at the University of Chicago (1893–1923). *The Man Who Wins* (1897), the story of a scientist whose work conflicts with the demands of his family life, was the first of a series of novels concerned with similar contrasts of personal and professional ideals. Among these are *The Gospel of Freedom* (1898), *The Web of Life* (1900), and *The Real World* (1901). The novels that followed, still primarily concerned with the conflict in American society between the desire for material success and the maintenance of personal integrity, and with the place of women in this society, include some of his most notable writing: *The Common Lot* (1904), in which a young Chicago architect succumbs to the temptation of get-rich-quick methods, building a flimsy tenement that burns and destroys its tenants, but is saved from moral disintegration by the faith of his wife; *The Memoirs of an American Citizen* (1905), the life story of an unscrupulous industrialist; *The Master of the Inn* (q.v., 1908), showing the effects of life in modern cities on the physical and mental health of their people; and *Together* (q.v., 1908), an analysis of modern marriage. *A Life for a Life* (1910) is a muckraking novel about the fight against a power trust, but in *The Healer* (1911), *His Great Adventure* (1913), and *One Woman's Life* (q.v., 1913), Herrick returned to his preoccupation with problems of personal relationship in a hostile, complex world. His later novels are: *Clark's Field* (q.v., 1914), about the conflicts over the control and use of a valuable city lot; *Homely Lilla* (1923) and *Waste* (1924), pessimistic studies of character; *Chimes* (1926), a satirical novel about the big-business methods of a university and its suppression of idealism in its teachers; *The End of Desire* (1932), concerned with the belated love affair of two professional people; and *Sometime* (1933), a satirical Utopian narrative. In these novels, and in his several collections of short stories, Herrick frequently reveals the inner working of industrialism, graft, and the disorders of modern civilization, but he rises above muckraking through his capacious humane and critical attitude. He treats literary structure much as he does social structure, denying and rejecting it, yet failing to create an adequate substitute, and his books generally lack unity, except for such relatively sentimental works as *The Master of the Inn*.

Hesperus, see *Wreck of the Hesperus*.

Hessians, name applied to the mercenary soldiers hired by Great Britain, at a cost of approximately £1,770,000, from six German states during the Revolutionary War. Over half of them came from Hesse-Cassel and Hesse-Darmstadt. The first treaty for hiring such soldiers was made in January 1776, and nearly 30,000 were sent to America, of whom some 17,000 returned to Germany. Many of the others settled in the New World. The charge that they were inhumane and rapacious appears to have been merely political propaganda of the time. The Hessians took a leading part in the battles of Long Island and White Plains, in all the operations for the capture of New York, in the occupation of Rhode Island, and at Yorktown and many battles in the South.

Hester Prynne, heroine of *The Scarlet Letter* (q.v.).

HEWAT, ALEXANDER (*c.*1745–1829), Scottish-born Presbyterian clergyman, emigrated to South Carolina (1763), where he remained as a Loyalist until the outbreak of the Revolutionary War. He wrote *An Historical Account of the Rise and Progress of the Colonies of South Carolina and Georgia* (2 vols.,1779), interspersing social and natural history with a political narrative. David Ramsay, who declared that Hewat's Tory bias rendered untrustworthy the account of the Revolutionary background, used the rest of the history as a source of his own work.

HEWITT, JAMES (1770–1827), born in England, and coming to New York in 1792, soon became a leading conductor, instrumentalist, and composer, and after 1812 continued these activities in Boston. His compositions include many sentimental songs; piano sonatas; extravagant program pieces for orchestra; and operas, of which the first, *Tammany or the Indian Chief* (q.v.,1794), with a libretto by Anne Julia Hatton, was one of the earliest American operas.

Hey, Rub-a-Dub-Dub, essays by Dreiser (q.v.).

Heyliger, DOLPH, see *Bracebridge Hall.*

HEYWARD, DUBOSE (1885–1940), South Carolina author, began his career with *Carolina Chansons* (1922), poems written with Hervey Allen, followed by his own poems in *Skylines and Horizons* (1924). He is best known for his novel of Charleston Negro life, *Porgy* (q.v.,1925), whose dramatic version, written with his wife Dorothy, won the 1927 Pulitzer Prize and was made into an opera by George Gershwin, as *Porgy and Bess* (1935). *Mamba's Daughters* (1929), another novel of Negro life, was also dramatized by the author and his wife (1939). His other works include the poems in *Jasbo Brown* (1931), and the novels, *Peter Ashley* (1932), about South Carolina before the Civil War, and *Star Spangled Virgin* (1939), dealing with the effects of the New Deal program on the bewildered Negro population of the Virgin Islands.

HIAWATHA (*fl.c.*1570), Indian statesman and legislator, probably born a Mohawk, was one of the medicine men responsible for the organization of the Iroquois confederacy. The body of legends that grew up with Hiawatha as the central figure was recorded by Schoolcraft and others, but Longfellow's poem uses only the hero's name, disregarding his character and actual deeds.

Hiawatha, The Song of, narrative poem by Longfellow (q.v.), in unrimed trochaic tetrameter, published in 1855. The novel and facile meter of this popular Indian epic has led to innumerable parodies and imitations. It is the subject of a series of Currier and Ives prints, and has been set to music. The meter derives from the Finnish epic, *Kalevala,* which the poem resembles in spirit as well as in several striking passages. Among its sources of information on the Indians are the works of Schoolcraft, Heckewelder, and Catlin.

Hiawatha is reared by his grandmother, Nokomis, daughter of the Moon, among the Ojibwas on the southern shore of Lake Superior. He learns the language of the birds and animals, secures magic mittens that will crush rocks and magic moccasins that enable him to take mile-long strides, and seeks vengeance on his father, Mudjekeewis, the West Wind, for a wrong committed against his mother, Wenonah. The fight ends in a reconciliation, and Hiawatha returns as the defender and civilizer of his people. Later he defeats Mondamin, the Corn Spirit, from whose buried body springs the maize, after which he builds a birchbark canoe, has a contest with Nahma, the sturgeon, who swallows both canoe and warrior, and destroys Pearl-Feather, sender of disease and death. The youth then marries Minnehaha, lovely daughter of an arrow-maker of the once hostile Dakotahs. The wedding feast and Song of the Evening Star inaugurate an idyllic time of peace and culture, over which Hiawatha rules until the death of his friends, Chibiabos the musician and Kwasind the strong man. Although he kills Pau-Puk-Keewis, who had insulted him, famine and fever visit the people and claim Minnehaha. Golden swarms of bees appear as forerunners of the whites, whose coming Hiawatha has prophesied, and a missionary priest offers the Indians a new religion. Hiawatha admonishes his people to heed the stranger's words, and departs for the Isles of the Blest in Keewaydin, kingdom of the Northwest Wind, over which he is to rule.

HICKOK, WILD BILL, sobriquet of James Butler Hickok (1837–76), Illinois-born scout, stagecoach driver, and frontier marshal in Kansas. He had many en-

counters with desperadoes, and his name is famous in frontier tales. He toured the East with Buffalo Bill (1872–3), and was murdered at Deadwood, South Dakota.

HICKS, ELIAS (1748–1830), Quaker preacher whose liberal opposition to evangelical doctrines of salvation led to a separation (1827) of the Quakers (q.v.) into Hicksites and Orthodox Quakers. His doctrines, closely approaching Unitarian views, seemed to undervalue the Scriptures in emphasizing the 'Inward Light.' His *Journal* was published in 1832, and *The Quaker* (4 vols.,1827–8) contains his sermons. The Hicksites founded Swarthmore College.

HICKS, GRANVILLE (1901–), born in New Hampshire, graduated from Harvard (1923), wrote *Eight Ways of Looking at Christianity* (1926), and taught at Smith College and Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute. Establishing himself as a leading Communist critic and serving as an editor of *The New Masses*, he wrote a Marxist interpretation of American literature since the Civil War, *The Great Tradition* (1933). He collaborated with John Stuart on a biography of *John Reed* (1936), was appointed a Fellow in U.S. History at Harvard (1938), and in an autobiographical work, *I Like America* (1938), explained his position as a Communist critic of the contemporary scene. *Figures of Transition*, a Marxist study of British literature at the end of the 19th century, was published in 1939, the year in which he resigned from the Communist party. *The First to Awaken* (1940), a Utopian romance written with Richard M. Bennett, tells of a New Hampshire man who is anæsthetized in 1940, and a century later awakens from his 'suspended animation' to observe revolutionary social and industrial improvements.

HIGGINSON, FRANCIS (1586–1630), English nonconformist clergyman, emigrated to Salem (1629), where he was elected pastor, but died as a result of the hardships of the first winter. Part of his journal was published in England as *New-England's Plantation* (1630), and the complete journal is reprinted in the *Life* (1891) by T.W.Higginson.

HIGGINSON, THOMAS WENTWORTH (1823–1911), born at Cambridge, graduated from Harvard (1841) and Harvard Divinity School, and became a Unitarian minister. During the Civil War, he was colonel of the first regiment of Negro soldiers, and his war experiences are described in *Army Life in a Black Regiment* (1870). After being wounded, he retired to Newport, later returning to Cambridge to devote himself to writing, teaching, and social reform, being particularly interested in equal rights for Negroes and in the suffrage movement. His books include: *Malbone* (1869), a novel; sketches, including *Oldport Days* (1873) and *Old Cambridge* (1899); the lives of Whittier (1902) and Longfellow (1902) for the 'Men of Letters' series; biographies of Margaret Fuller (1884) and of his ancestor, Francis Higginson (1891); and an autobiographical account, *Cheerful Yesterdays* (1898), valuable for its information about his contemporaries. Higginson was the first to encourage Emily Dickinson, although he tended to 'correct' her poems. He edited two volumes of Miss Dickinson's verse with Mabel L. Todd (1890–91).

High Tor, verse play by Maxwell Anderson (q.v.), produced in 1936 and published in 1937.

The passing of pioneer individualism and independence from the American scene is the theme of this dramatic fantasy, in which Van Dorn, who dislikes ordinary work, owns a mountain retreat on High Tor, a Hudson River headland. A real-estate company wants the property, but he declines to sell, despite the pleading of his fiancée Judith, who wants him to become a conventional town-dweller. She leaves him, exasperated, but he remains, in the company of John, last of the local Indians. The real-estate men, Art Biggs and Judge Skimmerhorn, come to bargain with Van and are lost on the mountain, as are several gangsters, escaping from a bank robbery. The legendary Dutch crew of Hudson's ship, the *Onrust*, who have awaited rescue for centuries, complete the strange company. Van's meeting with Lise, ghostly wife of the Dutch captain, is an episode of romance, while comedy is provided by the confrontation of the Dutch sailor DeWitt with such modern inventions as sandwiches and paper money, and by the greedy attempts of Biggs and Skimmerhorn to keep the stolen money, at which they are trapped in the scoop of their own steamshovel. The ghosts disappear, police capture the thieves, and Van, rejoined by Judith, sells

his land for a large price. The Indian has the final word:

> . . . Nothing is made by men
> but makes, in the end, good ruins.

HILDRETH, Richard (1807–65), Massachusetts historian, author, and jurist, whose most famous work is a *History of the United States* (6 vols.,1849–52), which discusses the subject, with a Federalist bias, down to 1821. In reply to those who objected to the lack of philosophy in his works, he wrote a *Theory of Politics* (1853), setting forth an economic interpretation of history based on the ideas of Robert Owen. His novel, *The Slave; or, Memoirs of Archy Moore* (1836), republished under the titles *The White Slave* and *Archy Moore*, enjoyed great popularity and is said to have been the first antislavery novel. It is a romantic recital of the adventures of an octoroon slave, who escapes from a Virginia plantation and eventually becomes the commander of a British privateer in the War of 1812.

HILL, George Handel (1809–49), comedian popularly known as Yankee Hill, because of his acting of Yankee parts in such plays as Woodworth's *The Forest Rose* and J.S.Jones's *The People's Lawyer*. As his fame increased, he acted not only in his native Boston, but throughout the East and abroad.

HILL, James [Jerome] (1838–1916), is known as 'the empire builder' because of his construction of the Great Northern Railway and development of agriculture and trade in the Northwest. Born in Ontario, he moved in 1856 to St.Paul, Minnesota, where he became a steamship and railroad agent and executive, and in 1878, with three others, purchased the St.Paul and Pacific Railroad. By reconstructing and extending this line, which in 1890 was renamed the Great Northern, Hill became one of the most powerful figures in U.S. railroading and finance, even managing to defeat the attempted incursion into his territory by E.H.Harriman during the 1890's. The Northern Securities Company, which Hill organized (1901) to consolidate his holdings, was outlawed by the U.S.Supreme Court (1904). He also helped build the Canadian Pacific Railway, and was important as a banker and as a power in the Democratic party, serving as confidential adviser to President Cleveland.

HILLHOUSE, James Abraham (1789–1841), Connecticut poetaster, author of the romantic verse dramas, *Percy's Masque* (1819), *Hadad* (1825), and *Demetria* (1839).

HILLQUIT, Morris (1869–1933), born in Latvia, came to the U.S. (1886), and was a leader of the Socialist party and a prominent labor lawyer. He was an unsuccessful candidate for mayor of New York (1917, '32). His books include a *History of Socialism in the United States* (1903), *Socialism in Theory and Practice* (1909), *From Marx to Lenin* (1921), and an autobiography, *Loose Leaves from a Busy Life* (1934).

HILLYER, Robert [Silliman] (1895–), New Jersey-born poet, graduated from Harvard (1917), served in the First World War, and returned to Harvard, where he has been a professor since 1919. He is best known for his poetry, in the academic tradition of romanticism, which has been published in such volumes as *Sonnets and Other Lyrics* (1917), *The Five Books of Youth* (1920), *Alchemy—A Symphonic Poem* (1920), *The Hills Give Promise* (1923), *The Halt in the Garden* (1925), *The Happy Episode* (1927), *The Seventh Hill* (1928), *The Gates of the Compass* (1930), *A Letter to Robert Frost and Others* (1937), *In Time of Mistrust* (1939), and *Pattern of a Day* (1940). His *Collected Verse* (1933) won the 1934 Pulitzer Prize. He has also written a novel, *Riverhead* (1932), and critical essays, *Some Roots of English Poetry* (1933) and *First Principles of Verse* (1938).

HINDUS, Maurice [Gerschon] (1891–), Russian-born author, came to the U.S. (1905), graduated from Colgate (1915), and has frequently revisited his native land. His studies of Russia include *Russian Peasant and Revolution* (1920). *Broken Earth* (1926), *Humanity Uprooted* (1929), *Red Bread* (1931), and *The Great Offensive* (1933). *Moscow Skies* (1936) and *Sons and Fathers* (1940) are novels, and *Green Worlds* (1938) is an autobiography of his youth in Russia.

Hireling and the Slave, The, poem by W.J.Grayson (q.v.).

HIRST, Henry Beck (1817–74), eccentric Philadelphia poet, was a friend of Poe until he parodied 'The Haunted Palace.' He later claimed to be the author of 'The Raven.' His poems include *The Coming of*

the Mammoth (1845), *Endymion* (1848), and *The Penance of Roland* (1849).

His Family, novel by Ernest Poole (q.v.), published in 1917 and awarded the Pulitzer Prize in 1918.

Through the eyes of Roger Gale, an elderly widower with three grown daughters, are seen the effects of modern standards of living in the careers of representative New York people. Gale, who has been absorbed in business affairs since the death of his wife, suddenly becomes aware of the problems of his family, and tries to assist in solving them. Of his daughters, Edith is excessively devoted to her five children, for whose sake she is even willing to sacrifice her husband's health and happiness; Deborah, her father's friend and business adviser, is the principal of a high school in the tenement district, and postpones her own marriage in order to continue to serve her numerous 'family'; and Laura, who is completely self-centered and luxury-loving, marries a young broker, divorces him, and marries again, intent on her career of pleasure. Laura is unaffected by her father's opinions, but he is able to aid Edith after the premature death of her husband Bruce, by establishing her in his former New Hampshire home, which he considers a more suitable environment for her matronly endeavors. He also helps Deborah to reconcile her concept of her altruistic mission in life with her own marriage and happiness, and before his death he sees her finally satisfied as wife, mother, and educator.

His Second Wife, novel by Ernest Poole (q.v.).

Hist, character in *The Deerslayer* (q.v.).

History of New York, A, From the Beginning of the World to the End of the Dutch Dynasty, by Diedrich Knickerbocker, burlesque history by Irving (q.v.), published in 1809, and revised in 1812, '19, and '48. It satirizes the methods of contemporary historians, the heroic style of epic poetry, and men and events during the Dutch administration as well as during its own period. Although Irving follows the history of New Netherland as then known, his satirical intention causes him to alter or disregard facts, as when, in the figure of William the Testy (William Kieft), he draws a Federalist caricature of Jefferson. According to the preface, the fictitious chronicler was 'a small brisk looking old gentleman . . . a very inquisitive body . . . although a little queer in his ways.'

Book I contains a cosmogony and description of the world, parodying contemporary histories, and a burlesque account of the discovery and peopling of America. Book II chronicles the voyage of Hudson, early Dutch colonization, and the founding of New Amsterdam, and gives traditional portraits of Dutch colonial types. Book III describes the 'golden reign' of the stolid governor, Wouter Van Twiller, who was 'exactly five feet six inches in height, and six feet five inches in circumference,' and whose head was 'a perfect sphere'; the profound deliberations of his burgomasters over their pipes; conditions in early New Amsterdam; the hostility of the neighboring Yankees of Connecticut; and the establishment of Fort Goed Hoop. Book IV tells of the governorship of William the Testy, so learned that he was 'good for nothing'; his pugnacity; his war 'by proclamation' with the Yankees; his many laws, partisan quarrels, and border disputes. Books V, VI, and VII chronicle the reign of Peter Stuyvesant (Peter the Headstrong): his political reforms and military adventures in Delaware; and his unsuccessful defense of New Amsterdam against the conquering British force.

History of the Dividing Line, journal of William Byrd (q.v.) during 1729, found among his Westover Manuscripts, and first published in 1841. These off-hand daily jottings about Byrd's survey of the Virginia-North Carolina border begin with a sparkling sketch of Virginia history, and proceed to some caustic comments upon the backward residents of North Carolina. In his vivacious account of the country, and in various disgressions, the author shows himself to be a witty, observant, and graceful writer.

HITCHCOCK, Enos (1744–1803), born in Massachusetts, graduated from Harvard (1767) and became a chaplain in the Revolutionary army and minister in Rhode Island. His didactic moral novel, *The Memoirs of the Bloomsgrave Family* (1790), is credited with being the second American novel, since it followed *The Power of Sympathy* by a year. He also wrote a *Treatise on Education* (1790), and *The Farmer's Friend; or, The History of Mr. Charles Worthy* (1793), an edifying story of the worldly success of a moral New Englander.

Hive of the Bee Hunter, The, sketches by T.B.Thorpe (q.v.).

HOBAN, JAMES (*c.*1762–1831), Irish-born architect, designed the White House (q.v.), which he built (1792–9) and reconstructed (1814). He helped to build the Capitol (q.v.) and executed many other public buildings.

HOBSON, RICHMOND PEARSON (1870–1937), naval officer, who became a hero in the Spanish-American War because of his gallant attempt to blockade the Santiago harbor. He later served as a member of Congress from Alabama (1907–15).

HOCKING, WILLIAM ERNEST (1873–), besides his work as professor of philosophy at Harvard and other universities, has written many books on religion and philosophy, including: *The Meaning of God in Human Experience* (1912); *Human Nature and Its Remaking* (1918); *Man and the State* (1926); *Philosophy of Law and of Rights* (1926); *The Self, Its Body and Freedom* (1928); *The Spirit of World Politics* (1932); and *Living Religions and a World Faith* (1939).

HODGE, FREDERICK WEBB (1864–), anthropologist and author, served in the Southwest with the U.S.Geological Survey (1884–6) and later expeditions, and joined the Bureau of Ethnology in 1889, becoming its head (1910–18). He edited the *Handbook of American Indians North of Mexico* (2 vols.,1907–10) and *The American Anthropologist* (1899–1910, 1912–14), and is the author of many important works on the background of the Southwest.

HOE, RICHARD MARCH (1812–86), as the head of the press-manufacturing business founded by his father, in 1846 invented the Hoe rotary press, which, by fastening type to a central cylinder around which impression cylinders revolved, greatly speeded the process of printing. He also invented a folder to fold newspapers as they come from the press. His son, ROBERT HOE (1839–1909), also an inventor of printing processes, was the founder of the Grolier Club, and formed one of the finest rare book collections in the U.S.

HOFFMAN, CHARLES FENNO (1806–84), New York author and editor, whose career included editorial positions on the *American Monthly Magazine*, *Knickerbocker Magazine*, the *New-York Mirror*, and other periodicals. Before he became insane (1849), he was well known for his writings, which included: *A Winter in the West* (1835), describing his horseback trip through sparsely settled Michigan and Illinois; *Wild Scenes in the Forest and Prairie* (1839); the novel, *Greyslaer* (q.v., 1840), based on the Kentucky Tragedy, and successfully dramatized; and the lilting lyrics and other popular poems collected in *The Vigil of Faith* (1842), *The Echo* (1844), and *Love's Calendar* (1847).

HOLBROOK, JOSIAH (1788–1854), educational reformer, was born in Connecticut, graduated from Yale (1810), and founded an industrial school (1819) whose curriculum included manual training, farming, and scientific subjects. When this failed, he established an Agricultural Seminary (1824–5) and in 1826 founded the first American lyceum (q.v.) at Millbury, Massachusetts. He remained the leader of the lyceum movement, for which, beginning in 1830, he published a series of *Scientific Tracts Designed for Instruction and Entertainment . . .*, and edited a weekly newspaper, the *Family Lyceum* (1832).

Holden, EBEN, see *Eben Holden.*

Holgrave, character in *The House of the Seven Gables* (q.v.).

Holiday, play by Philip Barry (q.v.), produced in 1928 and published in 1929.

Johnny Case, a young lawyer, and Julia Seton, a New York heiress, meet during a winter holiday and return to announce their engagement. Johnny has not realized Julia's wealth and social position, and he is disconcerted by the cool reception he has from her conventional father, who is suspicious of possible fortune-hunters. The young man gradually comes to see that Julia's ideals and interests are those of her father, and, although Mr.Seton welcomes the engagement after an investigation, Johnny finds his fiancée less congenial than her brother and sister, Ned and Linda, who are in revolt against their vapid, wealth-bound life. Ned drinks excessively, and Linda is growing neurotic, but Johnny has in common with them and their friends, Nick and Susan Potter, the desire to be a 'living' person, to enjoy the savor of life. Julia shares her father's consternation when Johnny announces that he has decided to retire with his present small fortune. When he asks Julia to share his 'holiday' of a

few years, she threatens to end their engagement. Meanwhile Linda and Johnny have fallen in love, and, when Julia finally breaks with Johnny, they elope to Europe.

HOLLAND, Edwin Clifford (*c.*1794–1824), Charleston poet, whose *Odes, Naval Songs, and Other Occasional Poems* (1813) are considered to mark the beginning of romantic poetry in South Carolina. He dramatized Byron's *Corsair* (1818).

HOLLAND, Josiah Gilbert (1819–81), Massachusetts author, was long associated with Samuel Bowles as an editor of the *Springfield Republican*, and became the first editor of *Scribner's Monthly* (q.v.,1870–81). His many books were popular in their day, being well suited to the homely taste for sentimental didacticism. His novels include: *The Bay-Path* (1857), dealing with the religious background of 17th-century Connecticut; *Miss Gilbert's Career* (1860), set in contemporary Connecticut; *Arthur Bonnicastle* (1873), a semi-autobiographical novel of a New England boy's life at Yale and in New York; *Sevenoaks* (q.v.,1875), the story of an unscrupulous financier; and *Nicholas Minturn* (1877), about a wealthy and idealistic young social reformer. Besides many poems, including *Bitter-Sweet* (1858) and *Kathrina, her Life and Mine in a Poem* (1867), Holland wrote histories and such works as *Letters to Young People* (1858), using the pseudonym Timothy Titcomb.

HOLLEY, Marietta (1836–1926), popular humorist whose pseudonym, 'Josiah Allen's Wife,' was a household word for many years because of her great literary output, which began with *My Opinions and Betsy Bobbet's* (1873) and ended with *Josiah Allen on the Woman Question* (1914). The humorous but sane homely philosophizing of Josiah's wife, Samantha, was often used as propaganda for temperance and woman's suffrage.

Hollingsworth, character in *The Blithedale Romance* (q.v.).

HOLLISTER, Gideon Hiram (1817–81), Connecticut lawyer, was the author of *Mount Hope* (1851), a romance about King Philip; *Kinley Hollow* (1882), a novel about 19th-century Puritanism; *Thomas à Becket* (1866), a poetic drama produced by Edwin Booth; and a history of his state.

HOLLOWAY, Emory (1885–), professor of English at the University of Texas (1912–18), at Adelphi College (New York) (1919–37) and at Queen's College (North Carolina) (1937–). In addition to his biography, *Whitman—An Interpretation in Narrative* (1926, Pulitizer Prize 1927), he has edited many previously unpublished Whitman manuscripts.

Hollywood, suburb of Los Angeles, California, situated eight miles northeast of the city's downtown district and celebrated as the center of motion-picture (q.v.) production for the world. Most of the American studios are located there, as are the homes of actors and producers. Because of the enormous sums spent both by studios and by individuals who have risen to sudden wealth and fame, the region is often considered to be as melodramatic and glamorous as its films. Besides inspiring a great quanity of romantic fiction, these qualities have given rise to a considerable literature of satire, e.g. Kaufman's plays, *Once in a Lifetime* and *Stage Door*, and such novels as H.L. Wilson's *Merton of the Movies*, Van Vechten's *Spider Boy*, J.P.McEvoy's *Hollywood Girl*, Elmer Rice's *A Voyage to Purilia*, and John O'Hara's *Hope of Heaven*. Many prominent dramatists and novelists have spent some time in writing for Hollywood pictures, and among them have been Robert Sherwood, Sidney Howard, Dorothy Parker, J.H.Lawson, Anita Loos, Dreiser, Bromfield, Odets, Faulkner, Phil Stong, Ben Hecht, Charles MacArthur, George Kaufman, Marc Connelly, and Maxwell Anderson.

HOLM, Saxe, pseudonym of Helen Hunt Jackson (q.v.).

HOLMES, Abiel (1763–1837), father of O.W.Holmes, was a Congregational clergyman at Cambridge (1792–1829), and wrote *The Annals of America*, a chronological compilation of facts from 1492 to 1826. He also wrote a *Life* (1798) of his father-in-law, Ezra Stiles.

HOLMES, Mary Jane [Hawes] (1825–1907), popular post-Civil War novelist of Massachusetts, whose 39 sentimental, moral, and stereotyped novels sold more than 2,000,000 copies. Her best-known work was *Lena Rivers* (1856).

HOLMES, Oliver Wendell (1809–94), son of Abiel Holmes, was born at Cambridge, reared in the traditions of the Brahmin class, and graduated from Har-

vard in the class of 1829, which he helped to make famous by his long series of reunion poems. His first verse to bring him popularity was 'Old Ironsides' (q.v.,1830). While studying medicine at Harvard and in Boston, he published in the *New England Magazine* (1831–2) two papers entitled 'The Autocrat of the Breakfast-Table,' which were precursors of his later famous work. After two years of study in Paris hospitals, he received his M.D. from Harvard (1836), and his collection of witty occasional *Poems* (1836) was his last literary contribution for some time, since he turned to his chosen profession, holding the post of professor of anatomy at Dartmouth (1838–40) and publishing two important medical works, *Homeopathy and its Kindred Delusions* (1842) and *The Contagiousness of Puerperal Fever* (1843). From 1847 until his retirement in 1882, he was Parkman Professor of Anatomy and Physiology at Harvard, and for the first six years also served as dean of the Harvard Medical School. His stimulating qualities as a lecturer soon brought him before the public in the lyceums. As a witty, urbane conversationalist, he reigned supreme in Boston society and club life, and became the unofficial poet laureate of all important gatherings in the intellectual 'hub of the Universe.' As a reformer, he was simply a scientific rationalist, opposing the Calvinistic dogmas in which he had been reared. He was probably the most militant Unitarian among Boston laymen, and attacked the religion of his fathers consistently in prose and poetry, notably in 'The Deacon's Masterpiece' (q.v.,1858) and the more vituperative 'The Moral Bully,' which satirizes a preacher's hypocritical virtues. When the *Atlantic Monthly* was founded (1857), Holmes not only named it, but also, as a leading contributor, was influenced to become primarily a man of letters. He contributed *The Autocrat of the Breakfast-Table* (q.v.,1858), which he followed by *The Professor at the Breakfast-Table* (1860), *The Poet at the Breakfast-Table* (1872), and *Over the Teacups* (1891), all reflections of the original. Selections from his endless flow of poetry peppered these volumes, notably 'The Chambered Nautilus' (q.v.) and 'The Deacon's Masterpiece,' in the first volume. He also turned to fiction, and in *Elsie Venner* (q.v.,1861) wrote the best of his three 'medicated novels.' All exhibit his theological and biological views, and all are studies of abnormal psychology, but *The Guardian Angel* (q.v.,1867) and *A Mortal Antipathy* (q.v.,1885) show a diminishing ability as a novelist. He reprinted from the *Atlantic* two collections of essays, *Soundings from the Atlantic* (1864) and *Pages from an Old Volume of Life* (1883), and also wrote biographies of Motley (1879) and Emerson (1885), and collected a volume of *Medical Essays* (1883). His numerous addresses, lectures, and minor essays in themselves constitute a large collection. Besides the several enlarged editions of his *Poems*, his verse was issued in many volumes, including *Songs in Many Keys* (1862), *Songs of Many Seasons* (1875), *The Iron Gate* (1880), and *Before the Curfew* (1888). Although most of his poems were written for specific occasions, some have transcended their occasional nature. Among the best known of them are 'The Last Leaf' (1831), on an aged survivor of the Boston Tea Party; 'My Aunt' (1831), a humorous verse on the 'sad, ungathered rose' of his ancestral tree; 'The Boys,' written for the 30th reunion of his Harvard class; 'Bill and Joe' (1851), another reunion poem; 'Dorothy Q.' (1871), a sentimentally humorous piece on a family portrait; 'A Sun-Day Hymn' (1860), which begins 'Lord of all being! throned afar'; 'Contentment,' a humorous poem on 'simple pleasures,' from the *Autocrat*; 'The Living Temple,' also from the *Autocrat*, a hymn on man's 'wondrous frame'; 'The Ballad of the Oysterman' (1830), a parody of romantic balladry; and 'Brother Jonathan's Lament for Sister Caroline' (1861), a patriotic poem on the secession of South Carolina.

Oliver Wendell Holmes (1841–1935), his son, was a professor of law at Harvard and served as chief justice of the Massachusetts supreme court (1899–1902) and Associate Justice of the U.S. Supreme Court (1902–32). His writings include *The Common Law* (1881), *Speeches* (1891, 1913), and *Collected Legal Papers* (1920), all exhibiting his distinction of mind and consistently liberal views. Felix Frankfurter has written on *Mr. Justice Holmes and the Constitution* (1927).

HOLMES, William Henry (1846–1933), artist and geologist with the U.S. Geological Survey (1874–89), wrote important descriptive works on Yellowstone Park, the Grand Canyon, and the Southwest.

As a leading anthropologist, he headed the National Museum, the Bureau of Ethnology, and the National Gallery of Art. His books include a *Handbook of Aboriginal American Antiquities* (1919).

HOLST, HERMANN EDUARD VON (1841–1904), Russian-born German historian, went to the U.S. (1866), and became a professor of history at the University of Chicago. His *Constitutional and Political History of the United States* (1876–92), although carefully based on source materials, vehemently supported the laissez-faire doctrine and bitterly attacked slavery. Later historians have contended that he manipulated material to prove his thesis that slavery is the keynote of the whole development of American constitutional doctrines, and that the pioneer movement to the Southwest was solely a politically maneuvered migration for the advantage of slaveholders. Other books in his rather oratorical style are *The Constitutional Law of the United States of America* (1887), *John C. Calhoun* (1882), and *John Brown* (1888).

Holyoke, see *Mount Holyoke College.*

Home As Found, novel by Cooper (q.v.) published in 1838 as a sequel to *Homeward Bound* (q.v.). In it, Cooper satirizes his neighbors at Cooperstown, and, as a result of the controversies and libel suits that followed, he was himself satirized in an anonymous novel, *The Effinghams; or, Home as I Found It* (1842).

After their return from Europe, the Effinghams open their house in New York City, among their guests being John Effingham's newly found son, Paul Powis, the suitor of his cousin Eve, and Sir George Templemore, who falls in love with Eve's cousin, Grace Van Cortlandt. The party is entertained at a series of typical social affairs, after which Grace and Sir George go to England to be married, and the others return to the Effingham estate at Templeton, a small upstate community. Mlle Viefville, Eve's vivacious maid, marries Aristabulus Bragg, the village lawyer and an inveterate 'booster,' while other Templeton citizens are depicted as hypocritical demagogues or foolish democrats. Paul gives up his life of travel and adventure to marry Eve, and the Effinghams settle down to their duties as landowners and civic leaders.

Home Burial, dramatic dialogue in blank verse by Robert Frost (q.v.) published in *North of Boston* (1914).

The incompatibility of a New England farm couple is revealed in the tragic conflict between them following the death of their only child. The husband has buried the child in the near-by family plot, and the wife becomes obsessed by his seemingly unfeeling attitude. Oppressed by loneliness, she comes to hate him and now feels that the transitoriness of his grief is a further proof that 'the world's evil.' She is determined that she 'must go—somewhere out of this house,' but her husband declares obstinately, 'I'll follow and bring you back by force. I *will!*—'

Home Journal, The (1846–1901), weekly magazine, founded by N.P.Willis and G.P.Morris as an outgrowth of the *New-York Mirror* (q.v.). It was devoted to society news, gossip, light essays, and verse. Willis remained editor until 1867, and his policies were continued until 1901, when, as *Town and Country*, it became a more elegant society journal. Purchased by Hearst in 1925, *Town and Country* is still published.

Home, Sweet Home, song in *Clari* (q.v.).

HOMER, SIDNEY (1864–), Boston musician and teacher, is best known for his vocal settings of *Songs from Mother Goose, Song of the Shirt, Sweet and Low,* Stevenson's *Requiem,* and Lindsay's *General William Booth Enters into Heaven.*

LOUISE HOMER (1872?–), his wife, was a leading contralto of the Metropolitan Opera.

HOMER, WINSLOW (1836–1910), Boston-born artist, during the Civil War served as artist-correspondent for *Harper's Weekly,* and, while engaged in this work, also made such paintings as *Prisoners from the Front,* exhibiting his characteristic talent for keen observation, as do his genre scenes of everyday American life. After a trip to Europe (1867), he painted anecdotal scenes of Negro life, whose solid draftsmanship, emphasis on essential structure, and honest realism foreshadow his later, more important painting. In England (1881–2), on the Maine coast, and in Florida and the Bahamas, he produced many seascapes. In both watercolor and oils, he exhibits a boldness of conception and objective interpretation of the power of the sea, in a style little influenced by European art.

Homestead Act, Congressional law (1862) intended to allay unrest among industrial laborers of Eastern urban sections by the free distribution of parts of the public domain. It provided 160 acres to adult citizens and to aliens who had filed their declaratory papers, providing such persons staked out portions of unclaimed land and were able to prove occupancy. The measure was supported by Horace Greeley in the phrase, 'Go West, Young Man!' Previous laws (1785, 1800, 1820) provided for restricted homesteading by inexpensive purchase. The effects of the law on westward migration are depicted in such novels as *Giants in the Earth* and *Cimarron.*

Homestead Strike, occurred at Homestead, Pennsylvania, during five months of 1892, in the steel plants owned by the Carnegie and Frick interests. The climax of many skirmishes came in an armed battle (July 6) between strikers and 300 Pinkerton agents led by Henry C. Frick, which resulted in ten deaths and many injuries. Strikebreakers, protected by the National Guard, ended the strike and crushed the Amalgamated Association of Iron and Steel Workers, which had directed it.

Homeward Bound; or, The Chase, novel by Cooper (q.v.) published in 1838. *Home As Found* (q.v.) is a sequel.

Edward and John Effingham, New York landowners, with Edward's daughter Eve, have spent several years in Europe, and now sail for home on the American packet *Montauk,* commanded by Captain Truck. Their fellow passengers include the vulgar American, Steadfast Dodge; foppish Sir George Templemore; Mr.Sharp, a handsome young English aristocrat; and Mr. Blunt, an American adventurer, who falls in love with Eve. The *Montauk* encounters many hazards during the voyage: A port officer attempts to arrest a steerage passenger and is ordered off the ship; it is chased by the English sloop of war *Foam;* in order to escape, Captain Truck heads for the Bay of Biscay and is caught in a storm; anchored for repairs on the African coast, it is attacked by Arab raiders, who are beaten off. Finally crossing the ocean, the packet arrives off Sandy Hook, only to find the waiting *Foam,* whose captain recognizes Mr.Sharp as the real Templemore and explains that his mission has been to arrest the imposter, a fleeing defaulter. Mr.Blunt reveals that he is actually Paul Powis, and it is learned that John Effingham is his long-lost father.

Homony Club, genteel literary and social organization of Annapolis, founded by Jonathan Boucher (q.v.). It ended with his return to England (1775), because the Revolution, he said, 'put an end to everything that was pleasant and proper.'

Homos, MR., character in *A Traveler from Altruria* and *Through the Eye of the Needle* (qq.v.).

HONE, PHILIP (1780–1851), New York businessman, Whig political leader, and member of social and literary circles. His diary, of which selections have been published (1889, 1927), gives a comprehensive description of New York life during the second quarter of the 19th century.

Honorable Peter Stirling, The, novel by P.L.Ford (q.v.) published in 1894. Although the author denied it, the hero is considered to represent Grover Cleveland.

Peter Stirling, a 'practical idealist,' rises from a plain New England background and Harvard education to a leading position in New York society, law, and politics. He loves Helen Pierce, daughter of a banker, but is unselfishly reconciled to her marriage with his best friend, Watts d'Alloi. When d'Alloi is the father of an illegitimate child, Stirling accepts the responsibility to spare Helen the knowledge of her husband's infidelity. In an environment of corrupt municipal and state politics, Stirling moves with unprejudiced fairness and honesty, seeking always the public interest. He is a candidate for governor, but, when his sincere conservatism threatens to lose votes during a great strike, he maintains his position, saying 'Votes be damned!' When he is wounded in a bombing while leading his regiment of militia against the strikers, he is cared for by Helen and d'Alloi's daughter Leonore, whom he later marries.

HOOKER, [WILLIAM] BRIAN (1880–), author of the poetic librettos for two operas by Horatio Parker (q.v.), *Mona* (1912), concerned with early Britain under Roman rule, and *Fairyland* (1915), a romantic fantasy set in 13th-century Europe. *The White Bird* (1924) is an opera dealing with 19th-century New York. He translated *Cyrano de Bergerac* in 1923 for the successful production by Walter Hampden, and with W.H.Post

adapted *The Squaw Man* (q.v.) as the libretto of the musical play *White Eagle* (1927).

HOOKER, Joseph (1814–79), army officer, served with distinction in the Mexican War, and during the Civil War became known as 'Fighting Joe,' because of his activities in the Peninsular Campaign. He supplanted Burnside as commander-in-chief of the Army of the Potomac (Jan.–June 1863) and led an unsuccessful drive on Richmond, but, angered by a lack of co-operation from other generals, was relieved of his command by Meade before the Battle of Gettysburg. His later service included important commands during Sherman's march to Georgia.

HOOKER, Thomas (1586–1647), English-born Congregationalist, was forced to flee to Holland because he exhibited Puritan leanings in his religious lectures at Cambridge. After preaching in Amsterdam, Delft, and Rotterdam, he emigrated with John Cotton and Samuel Stone to Massachusetts (1633). He was pastor at Newe Towne (Cambridge) for three years, and then, because of his democratic views, took his entire congregation of some hundred families to found the Connecticut Colony. His liberal spirit shaped the character of the new community, in which authority was held with the free consent of the people. Because his ideas were so opposed to those of Winthrop and other Massachusetts leaders, it was not until 1643 that Hooker was able to persuade them to join with his colony in a New England confederation. His views were embodied in the 'Fundamental Orders' (1639), which served as Connecticut's constitution, and his many published sermons reveal his dramatic oratorical power. In *A Survey of the Summe of Church Discipline* (1648), he defended New England Congregationalism, and postulated the principle of divine absolutism, making temporal absolutism unnecessary. The sovereign will of God, he held, was represented by no ecclesiastical hierarchy, but was communicated directly to the individual believer. The people, walking together in the fellowship of faith, communicate power by voluntary subjection to the governing pastor. A second volume of this work was written by John Cotton (q.v.).

HOOPER, Johnson Jones (1815–62), born in North Carolina, later settled in Alabama, where he was a lawyer and newspaper editor. His tales of a backwoods gambler, *Some Adventures of Captain Simon Suggs, Late of the Tallapoosa Volunteers* (1845), present a vivid picture of flush times on the frontier of the Old Southwest. Similar sketches were collected in *The Widow Rugby's Husband, A Night at the Ugly Man's and Other Tales of Alabama* (1851), and in 1858 he published *Dog and Gun, A Few Loose Chapters on Shooting.*

Hoosier, name applied to the residents of Indiana. Its origin is uncertain. One theory attributes it to one Aaron Short, who, after winning a prizefight, shouted 'Hurrah for the Hoosier!,' meaning perhaps 'the Husher,' a term applied to a champion fighter who could hush all comers. The first-known literary use is in John Finley's poem, 'The Hoosier Nest' (1830), and in course of time all Indiana authors have come to be called Hoosier authors. The most prominent among them are: Edward Eggleston, who wrote *The Hoosier Schoolmaster* and *The Circuit Rider*; his brother George, who wrote *A Man of Honor* and *Juggernaut*; Maurice Thompson, best known as the author of *Alice of Old Vincennes*; James Whitcomb Riley, known as the 'Hoosier poet'; Booth Tarkington, who wrote *The Gentleman from Indiana* and *The Magnificent Ambersons*; Theodore Dreiser, who described his native state in *A Hoosier Holiday*; and Meredith Nicholson, who wrote *A Hoosier Chronicle* and other novels of Indiana life.

Hoosier Schoolboy, The, novel by Edward Eggleston (q.v.).

Hoosier Schoolmaster, The, novel by Edward Eggleston (q.v.) published in 1871. It is based on experiences of his brother George.

Ralph Hartsook, a district school teacher in backwoods Indiana, loves Hannah Thompson, a hired girl whose employer, Jack Means, wants to marry his sister Mirandy to Ralph. The young man is persecuted by the settlers when a false accusation of theft is lodged against him, and his pupils attempt to drive him out. In the ensuing trial Ralph is acquitted, and he marries Hannah when she is found to be of age and therefore illegally 'bound' to the Means.

HOOTON, Earnest Albert (1887–), Wisconsin-born anthropologist,

since 1913 has been a professor at Harvard. His books include *The Indians of Pecos* (1930), *Up from the Ape* (1931), *Apes, Men, and Morons* (1937), *Crime and the Man* (1939), and *Why Men Behave Like Apes, and Vice Versa* (1940).

HOOVER, HERBERT CLARK (1874–), 31st President of the U.S. (1929–33), was born in Iowa, graduated from Stanford University (1895), and until the First World War was active as a mining expert and engineer in many foreign countries. During the war he was the U.S.Food Administrator, besides serving on several important economic boards and leading relief commissions. He served as secretary of commerce (1921–8) under Harding and Coolidge, reorganizing and expanding his department and introducing engineering methods in the solution of economic problems. He was the Republican candidate for the presidency in 1928, opposing Alfred E. Smith, and following his election made a good-will tour of Latin-American countries. In the year of his inauguration occurred the stock-market crashes that marked the end of the 'Coolidge prosperity' and the beginning of the depression of the 1930's. Hoover appointed commissions to study the resulting problems, created the Reconstruction Finance Corporation, and urged Congress to pass an Emergency Relief Act, a Farm Relief Act, and an act to create Federal Home Loan Banks. These and other measures failed to prevent a great wave of foreclosures and bank failures, and by 1932 the Democratic party controlled the Congress, as well as winning an overwhelming victory in the presidential election for Hoover's rival, Franklin D. Roosevelt. Hoover's administrative policies were primarily based on the economic theory of 'rugged individualism,' which he expounded in his books, *American Individualism* (1922), *The New Day* (1928), and *The Challenge to Liberty* (1934). His earlier books are concerned with mining and game conservation, and with his wife he translated Agricola's *De re metallica* (1912).

Hope Leslie, novel by Catherine M. Sedgwick (q.v.).

Hopedale Community, was founded at Milford, Massachusetts (1842) by Adin Ballou and other Universalists, who professed a kind of Christian socialism, advocated women's rights, and opposed intemperance, war, and slavery. Because of internal dissension and financial difficulties, the association disbanded in 1856.

Hopi Indians (also called Moqui or Moki), agricultural tribe that inhabits six pueblos in northeastern Arizona. First known to the Spaniards in 1540 through Coronado's expedition, they were made vassals by Juan de Oñate in 1598. Missionary work among them was carried on precariously from 1629 to 1700, when their hostility compelled its abandonment. After the Pueblo Revolt of 1680, their villages were built on mesas for purposes of defense against the Spaniards. The Hopi are noted for their mythology and ceremonial dances, including the biennial snake dance. They figure in *Death Comes for the Archbishop* and in Edna Dean Proctor's *Song of an Ancient People.*

HOPKINS, LEMUEL (1750–1801), Connecticut physician and poet, member of the Connecticut Wits (q.v.). Like the other satirists with whom he collaborated, he was a Yale graduate and resident of Hartford. A stanch Federalist and Calvinist, he was in complete harmony with the Wits, contributing to *The Anarchiad, The Echo,* and *The Political Greenhouse* (qq.v.). His separate works include *The Guillotina, or a Democratic Dirge* (1796); an 'Epitaph on a Patient Killed by a Cancer Quack'; an arraignment of Deism, 'Verses on General Allen'; and 'The Hypocrite's Hope,' a satire on irreligious persons who rigidly observe religious formalities.

HOPKINS, MARK (1802–87), Massachusetts physician, Congregationalist minister, and teacher, was president of Williams College (1836–72). Although he was a stimulating instructor, and President Garfield said 'Give me a log hut, with only a simple bench, Mark Hopkins on one end and I on the other, and you may have all the buildings, apparatus, and libraries without him,' he was unimportant as theologian or philosopher. He wrote a number of books, including *Lectures on the Evidences of Christianity* (1846), *The Law of Love and Love as a Law; or, Christian Ethics* (1869), and *Teachings and Counsels* (1884). He was president of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions (1857–87).

HOPKINS, SAMUEL (1721–1803), Congregational minister in Massachusetts, Rhode Island, and his native Connecticut,

was the leading disciple of Jonathan Edwards, on whose philosophy he based his own 'Hopkinsianism.' His *System of Doctrines Contained in Divine Revelation . . .* (1793) and other writings were more influential than his dull, logical preaching.

HOPKINS, Stephen (1707–85), governor of Rhode Island and signer of the Declaration of Independence, contributed to the Revolutionary cause an important pamphlet, *The Rights of Colonies* (1764), wherein he examined the problem of parliamentary authority, and justified the colonial attitude toward England's policy. To counteract it, Martin Howard wrote *A Letter from a Gentleman in Halifax to His Friend in Rhode Island* (1765).

HOPKINSON, Francis (1737–91), born in Philadelphia, was the first student to enroll in the Academy of Philadelphia, and the first to receive a diploma from the College of Philadelphia. After studying law, and serving as collector of customs at Salem, New Jersey (1763), he sailed for England to seek political preferment. He was unsuccessful, but on returning to the law, rose rapidly, and was appointed to the New Jersey governor's council (1774) and elected to the Continental Congress (1776). He was a distinguished harpsichordist and leader of Philadelphia musical society, and revised and composed music for Thomson's and Mallet's *Alfred, a Masque*, presented at the College of Philadelphia (1757). He published a collection of psalm tunes and a number of songs, and his later claim to 'being the first Native of the United States who has produced a Musical Composition' is generally considered justified. His literary ability was exhibited in the many poems that he wrote at this early period, including 'The Treaty' (1761), an Indian poem; 'Exercises' for his college (1761, '62); 'Science' (1762), prophesying a great future for the college; and 'Dirtilla' (1772), a humorous work. To the *Pennsylvania Magazine* he also contributed a series of Addisonian essays, on subjects ranging from 'A New Plan of Education' to the state of bachelorhood. In 1774 he began his career as a political satirist with *A Pretty Story* (q.v.), and two years later he attacked the 'Letters of Cato' in *A Prophecy*, which allegorically reviewed the contention with the mother country. Meanwhile he was a signer of the Declaration of Independence, chairman of the Continental Navy Board (1776–8), treasurer of loans (1778–81), and judge of admiralty for Pennsylvania (1779–89). In the *Letter written by a Foreigner on the Character of the English Nation* (1777), he satirized the peculiarities of the English. This was followed by *A Political Catechism* (1777); a stirring 'Camp Ballad'; and his *Answer to General Burgoyne's Proclamation* (1777), burlesquing the general's manifesto. He further satirized the English in 'The Battle of the Kegs' (q.v.,1778), the most popular of his writings, and 'Date Obolum Bellisario' (1778), a poetical allegory in which wretched England, driven to beggary, tells of the grief caused her by her worthless son George. Hopkinson also satirized his fellow-countrymen who sympathized with England, in 'The Birds, the Beasts, and the Bat,' a Hudibrastic fable on men who turn their allegiance according to the state of the military weather; a *Letter to Joseph Galloway* (1778), accusing the prominent Loyalist of treachery to country and friends; and *Two Letters* (1776), supposedly written by a Tory, acknowledging the unscrupulous lies which the Americans were then attributing to the Loyalists. Among other *jeux d'esprit* was his publication of a mock advertisement of the King's Printer, Rivington, who it proclaimed was retiring from business after the surrender of Cornwallis, and auctioning off his stock of abusive books and maps. During the war, Hopkinson also employed his several talents in writing *The Temple of Minerva* (1781), a 'dramatic allegorical cantata,' 'consisting of an overture, arias, ensembles, and choruses in praise of the American alliance with France'; in designing seals for various departments of the new government, a number of coins and issues of paper money, and the American flag, known as the Stars and Stripes (q.v.). After the war, he was a federal judge in Pennsylvania, supported the Federalists in various writings, and published many literary essays, including 'Modern Learning Exemplified' (1784), satirizing educational fads, and 'A Plan for the Improvement of the Art of Paper War' (1786), ridiculing newspaper quarrels. *Seven Songs, for the Harpsichord or Forte-Piano* (1788) actually containing eight pieces, was the first book of music published by an American. *The Miscellaneous Essays and Occasional Writings*, which he had prepared for publication, were issued a year after his death.

JOSEPH HOPKINSON (1770–1842), his son, was a noted lawyer and jurist, served in Congress (1814–19), and was a member of the Tuesday Club of Philadelphia, president of the Academy of Fine Arts, and author of *Hail Columbia* (q.v.,1798).

HOPWOOD, AVERY (1882–1928), Ohio-born playwright, after graduation from the University of Michigan (1905) became a New York journalist and had his first play, *Clothes*, written with Channing Pollock, produced (1906). This began a successful career as a dramatist, in which his hits included melodramas, farces, adaptations, and collaborations. His works include: *The Gold Diggers* (1919); *The Bat* (1920), written with Mary Roberts Rinehart; and *Getting Gertie's Garter* (1921), with Wilson Collison.

Horizon, play by Augustin Daly (q.v.), produced in 1871 and printed in 1885.

Alleyn Van Dorp, graduating from West Point, is dispatched on his first commission to the Far West, where in addition to his army duties he is to search for the long-lost husband and daughter of his foster-mother. Arriving in the Indian country, he finds the vigilance committee ejecting several undesirable citizens, including the drunkard Wolf and his daughter Med, loved by the gambler Loder and the Indian chief Wannemucka. Alleyn falls in love with Med, whom he takes to a near-by settlement. He discovers through a letter that she and Wolf are the two whom he is seeking, but Wolf, who is ill, refuses to leave the town, and Med is given into the protection of Loder. The party she joins is twice attacked by Wannemucka's Indians, but both times saved by Alleyn's soldiers. Loder, after warning the settlement of an attack and killing Wannemucka, realizes that Med deserves a better life than he can give her, and departs, leaving her to marry Alleyn.

Horse-Shoe Robinson: A Tale of the Tory Ascendancy, novel by J.P.Kennedy (q.v.) published in 1835. It was dramatized by Clifton W. Tayleure (1856).

In Virginia and the Carolinas, during the closing years of the Revolutionary War, Mildred Lindsay, daughter of a Tory who wants her to marry the British spy Tyrrel, loves the patriot Arthur Butler and is herself an ardent rebel. She secretly marries Butler, who is captured, leaving her to be squired through various difficulties by the frontier hero, Horse-Shoe Robinson, a resourceful blacksmith. Tyrrel is eventually hanged as a traitor, and Mildred and Butler are reunited.

Horses and Men, short stories by Sherwood Anderson (q.v.).

Hot Time in the Old Town To-night, A, song composed for a minstrel show (1886) by Theodore Metz, with words added by Joseph Hayden (1896). It was a popular marching song of the Spanish-American War, and later the campaign song of Theodore Roosevelt.

Hotel Universe, play by Philip Barry (q.v.), produced and published in 1930.

Ann Field, an American expatriate in southern France, has as week-end guests a number of friends, each of whom has had an unhappy life. They include Pat Farley, with whom Ann has long been in love; Lily Malone, an actress; Tom Ames, a retired publisher, and his wife Hope; Norman Rose, a Jewish financier; and Alice Kendall, who is in love with Norman. Ann's father Stephen, a serene old man with a mystic belief in three worlds, one of fact, one of imagination, and a third after death which combines these two, saves the guests from further frustrations by revealing the earlier acts or decisions responsible for their present suffering. Alice walks in her sleep and reveals her passion for Norman, which he reciprocates, although he has formerly refused to marry her because she is a gentile. Tom confesses the loss of his Catholic belief, but gains a new faith through Stephen's conviction that he can attain whatever his spirit wants. Lily comes to Stephen as though he were her father, who has long been dead, and he destroys her illusions so that she is freed from a morbid fixation. Pat, who has intended to commit suicide because of his remorse at having betrayed an English girl and caused her suicide, is led to live over again his first meeting with Ann, and recaptures his original love for her. As Stephen dies unnoticed in his chair, the guests prepare to leave, Alice and Norman planning to marry, Lily free to face life, Tom now ready to clarify his faith and philosophy, Hope happy in the belief that this will restore their felicity, and Ann and Pat about to marry.

HOUGH, EMERSON (1857–1923), born in Iowa, graduated from the state university (1880) and began to practice law in Whiteoaks, New Mexico, 'half cow town and half mining camp.' Here he began to

write magazine sketches on the local outdoor life and sports, and he soon abandoned the law for work on Midwestern newspapers and the magazine *Forest and Stream*. He wrote many articles concerned with Yellowstone National Park, and was influential in the movement for the preservation of wild life in this and other regions. His first book, *The Singing Mouse Stories* (1895), was followed by his most popular early work, *The Story of the Cowboy* (1897). Besides a series of stories for boys, The Young Alaskans, he wrote *The Story of the Outlaw* (1907), *The Passing of the Frontier* (1918), and many popular historical romances set in the West. Among these are: *The Mississippi Bubble* (1902); *The Law of the Land* (1904); *54–40 or Fight!* (1909); *The Sagebrusher* (1919); *The Covered Wagon* (1922); *North of 36* (1923); and *Mother of Gold* (1924).

Hound and Horn (1927–34), little magazine, founded as a 'Harvard Miscellany' by Lincoln Kirstein and Varian Fry. The title came from Ezra Pound's 'The White Stag': ' 'Tis the white stag Fame we're hunting, bid the world's hounds come to horn.' R.P.Blackmur and Bernard Bandler II became editors (1929), and the following year the magazine moved to New York, losing its association with Harvard. Kirstein became the sole editor, and the quarterly vacillated thereafter among humanism, Southern regionalism, Marxism, and the neo-classicism of its Western editor, Yvor Winters. In its attempt to publish the best advance-guard authors, *Hound and Horn* printed works by Katharine Anne Porter, Kenneth Burke, Allen Tate, Ezra Pound, Gertrude Stein, T.S. Eliot, and many others, whose reputations it helped to establish.

HOUSE, EDWARD MANDELL (1858–1938), Texas-born statesman, although never a candidate for office, was instrumental in nominating Wilson for the presidency (1912), afterward becoming the chief executive's intimate adviser and 'other self.' He interviewed diplomats and rulers in attempts to avert war (1914–15); was a special representative at the Inter-Allied Conference of premiers and foreign ministers for co-ordination of war activities (1917); represented the U.S. in the Supreme War Council; gathered and prepared data for the Peace Conference; and helped draft the Treaty of Versailles. After the war, he was on the commission that drafted the Covenant of the League of Nations, and was a member of the Commission on Mandates (1919). He wrote *Philip Dru: Administrator: A Story of Tomorrow, 1920–1935* (1912), an anonymous novel whose proposed governmental reforms helped cement his friendship with Wilson. *The Intimate Papers of Colonel House* (4 vols.,1926–8) form a valuable source of information on American relations in the World War.

House of Earth, The, trilogy by Pearl Buck, which includes *The Good Earth* (q.v.).

House of Mirth, The, novel by Edith Wharton (q.v.), published in 1905.

Although she has beauty and charm and is related to prominent New York families, Lily Bart is unmarried at 29. Ambitious for wealth and position, she makes a career of her search for a husband, and among her suitors are Simon Rosedale, a vulgar rich Jew, and Lawrence Selden, a lawyer who is the one love of her life, but lacks the wealth she requires. Gambling at a house party, she loses a large sum to Gus Trenor, who undertakes to invest her small capital, gaining power over her by advancing money from his own pocket, although she does not realize this until later. His demand that she satisfy his passion by way of repayment frightens Lily, but she manages to escape and promises to return the money. She goes on a yachting trip to the Mediterranean in a party headed by George Dorset, whose wife Bertha conceals a meeting with her lover by accusing Lily of being George's mistress. The ensuing scandal ends Lily's career in fashionable society, and after the death of her aunt, Mrs.Peniston, she becomes a milliner. Following a last interview in which she reveals her love to Selden, she returns, ill and overwrought, to her boarding-house room, where she takes an overdose of sedative, which kills her. Selden arrives, intending to ask her to marry him. Her lifeless body has already been discovered, and when he searches her effects he finds that she has put aside her aunt's entire bequest to repay her debt to Trenor.

House of Night, The, poem by Freneau (q.v.), published in 1779 and enlarged in his *Poems* (1786). It was suggested by the Scriptural aphorism, 'the last enemy that shall be conquered is Death.'

Death, in his solitary palace at midnight, is represented as being on his deathbed. After composing his epitaph, which

indicates that even Death has vanity, he makes a bargain with an avaricious undertaker, a reflection upon the inhumanity of man who will not perform a charitable act without certain reward. After the passing and funeral of Death, the poem concludes with reflections on the impropriety of too great attachment to the present life, and incentives to virtue that may conduct one to a better existence.

House of the Seven Gables, The, romance by Hawthorne (q.v.), published in 1851. It is based on the tradition of a curse pronounced on the author's family when his great-grandfather was a judge in the Salem witchcraft trials.

In Salem stands the ancestral home of the Pyncheons, cursed by Wizard Maule when the original Colonel Pyncheon despoiled him of his wealth. In the mid-19th century, the house is owned by hypocritical Judge Jaffrey Pyncheon, whose studied benevolence makes him an honored citizen. He does not live in the dilapidated mansion, whose occupants are his poor cousin Hepzibah, reduced to operating a cent-shop; a country relative, Phoebe; a single lodger, the young daguerrotypist Holgrave, who falls in love with Phoebe; and Hepzibah's brother Clifford, ill and feeble-minded, just released from prison after a term of 30 years for the supposed murder of a rich uncle. Jaffrey, who had obtained Clifford's arrest, now harasses him in an attempt to find the missing deeds to their rich uncle's property, and threatens to have Clifford confined in an insane asylum. Hepzibah attempts to aid her brother and circumvent the judge, but the latter's sudden death frees them, and makes them his heirs. Holgrave reveals that he is actually the last of the Maules, and that the judge, like the rich uncle, died by the curse on the house. Revealing the location of the missing deeds, he marries Phoebe, leaving the House of the Seven Gables, freed of its curse, to Hepzibah and Clifford.

Houseboat on the Styx, A, fantasy by J.K.Bangs (q.v.).

HOUSTON, Samuel (1793–1863), Virginia-born frontiersman and soldier, captured the public imagination by his exploits under Jackson in quelling the Creek rebellion (1814). He was elected to Congress (1823–7), and was governor of Tennessee (1827–9). When his new bride left him for mysterious reasons, he resigned his governorship, and went to live among the Cherokees in Oklahoma, where he took an Indian wife. He went to Texas in 1835, and again entered the limelight when he conquered the forces of Santa Anna (1836) and became the first president of the Lone Star Republic (q.v.). He was one of Texas's first senators (1846–59), and became governor of the state in 1859, but was deposed two years later when he attempted to keep it from joining the Confederacy. He is the subject of a biography, *The Raven* (1929), by Marquis James.

HOVEY, Richard (1864–1900), born in Illinois, early began to write poetry and published his first small volume at the age of 16. After graduating from Dartmouth (1885), he was successively an art student, theological student, journalist, actor, and lecturer. He was in England and France (1891–2), and, influenced by the French Symbolists, translated eight of Maeterlinck's plays. His own poetic vitality found an outlet in the exuberant *Songs from Vagabondia* (1894), written in collaboration with Bliss Carman. In this and the later volumes written with Carman, *More Songs from Vagabondia* (1896) and *Last Songs from Vagabondia* (1901), he reveled in the idea of the open road and happily proclaimed the joys of youthful living and companionship. The outbreak of the Spanish-American War swept him into an excited chauvinism, and in such poems as 'Unmanifest Destiny' and 'The Word of the Lord from Havana' he nationalized the Deity and deified the nation. With these poems, which appeared in *Along the Trail* (1898), was published his longer poem, 'Spring,' whose popular interlude, 'A Stein Song,' has the refrain,

> For it's always fair weather
> When good fellows get together . . .

During these years, Hovey was also writing an ambitious cycle of poetic dramas based on the *Morte d'Arthur*, with love as a central theme, and the thesis that the social system has not yet evolved sufficiently to become 'a medium in which all lives can move at all times in all respects in freedom.' He projected three trilogies, each consisting of a masque, a tragedy, and a drama, but in the posthumous collection of fragments, *The Holy Graal* (1907), are only the first trilogy and the masque of the second. During the last two years of his life, he lectured at Bar-

nard College. *To the End of the Trail* (1908) is a posthumous collection of poems.

How Beautiful with Shoes, play by W.D.Steele (q.v.) and Anthony Brown, produced in 1935. It is based on a short story by Steele.

Amarantha Doggett, a Southern mountain girl, is betrothed to Ruby Herter, a stupid, slovenly neighbor. Humble Jewett, a homicidal maniac, escapes from an asylum, and, hearing Amarantha's name, conceives a passion for her. He follows the frightened girl into a field, where she betrays him to a sheriff's posse. Jewett sets the town jail afire, escapes, and kidnaps Amarantha, carrying her into the woods. A former teacher of literature, he is obsessed by certain poetic passages, which he recites, attributing the beauties they describe to the farm girl. Fascinated as well as terrified, she is forced to submit to his mad lovemaking until, by saying that her name is Mary and not Amarantha, she unwittingly induces him to believe that he is Jesus and she his mother. As he sleeps at her feet, he is captured. When Amarantha returns home, Ruby attempts to caress her in his accustomed coarse fashion, and, although she does not understand what has happened, she cannot endure her lover, whom she hysterically dismisses.

How to Try a Lover, comedy by J.N Barker (q.v.), published in 1817, and probably unproduced. Founded on a French picaresque novel, it is set in 13th-century Catalonia and deals with the efforts of young Carlos to win the fair Eugenia, over the supposed disapproval of their two fathers, who concoct a scheme to bring them together through apparent difficulties, on the assumption that their love will be stronger if opposed. The play ends with a Court of Love, at which Eugenia presides and gives the fathers a bad time in revenge for their deception, until she finally awards her hand to Carlos.

How to Write Short Stories (*With Samples*), book by Ring Lardner (q.v.), published in 1924, with a humorous, mock-critical preface and ten stories to 'illustrate in a half-hearted way what I am trying to get at.' These tales of baseball players, boxers, song writers, and other American types constitute a sardonically humorous use of the vernacular to expose native foibles and vices.

'The Facts' tells of an idyllic love affair, which proceeds smoothly until the hero with his best friend spends a drunken Christmas Eve in buying precisely the wrong gifts for his fiancée's entire family. 'Some Like Them Cold,' an account of a casual meeting of a song writer and a stenographer, and their tentatively affectionate letters, exposes them as selfish and mercenary. 'Alibi Ike' is the story of a competent baseball player who continually makes trouble for himself by seeking unnecessary excuses for his every action. 'The Golden Honeymoon' describes the dull, commonplace, and quarrelsome lives of a superficially amiable old couple. 'Champion' presents the cruel, mean, and unprincipled side of a prizefighter's life, which 'would never have passed the sporting editor' of a newspaper. 'A Caddy's Diary' reveals the hypocrisy and lack of sportsmanship of his patrons. 'A Frame-Up' describes the deception of a champion boxer by his manager, who takes advantage of the youth's innocence to further his own ends.

HOWADJI, THE, pseudonym of G.W.Curtis (q.v.).

HOWARD, BLANCHE WILLIS (1847–98), novelist born in Maine, lived after 1875 in Germany, marrying there and becoming the Baroness von Teuffel. She wrote many exotic romances, of which the most popular was *Guenn: A Wave on the Breton Coast* (1883), the story of an egocentric American artist, who causes the suicide of a Breton peasant girl when he fails to return her love.

HOWARD, BRONSON (1842–1908), Michigan-born dramatist, came to New York in 1865, where he became a pioneer in the drama of contemporary manners with his farce *Saratoga* (q.v.,1870) and of social criticism in *Young Mrs.Winthrop* (q.v., 1882). *Old Love Letters* (1878) was a popular one-act social comedy. *The Henrietta* (1887) and *Baron Rudolph* (1881) were satires on American business. *One of Our Girls* (1885) was a social comedy contrasting French and American standards, a theme further elaborated in *Aristocracy* (1892), contrasting a *nouveau riche* Californian, and old established New Yorker, and a European patrician. *Shenandoah* (q.v.,1888), a Civil War drama, was his greatest and most popular work. Although Howard did much to improve the American drama, he was bound both by con-

vention and his own desire to achieve effects at the expense of realistic thought.

HOWARD, MARTIN (*d.*1781), Loyalist pamphleteer, wrote *A Letter from a Gentleman at Halifax to His Friend in Rhode Island* (1765), in reply to a publication by Stephen Hopkins. To answer angry retorts, he wrote *A Defense of the Letter from A Gentleman at Halifax to His Friend in Rhode Island* (1765), distinguished for its urbanity, satire, and clear legal reasoning. He fled to England during the Revolution.

HOWARD, SIDNEY [COE] (1891–1939), California-born playwright, graduated from the state university (1915), studied at Harvard in the 47 Workshop of G.P. Baker, served in the First World War, and returned to become a magazine editor. His first play, *Swords* (1921), a romantic blank verse tragedy set in medieval times, was followed by adaptations from foreign dramas, including *S.S.Tenacity* (1922), *Casanova* (1923), and *Sancho Panza* (1923), and an original play, *Bewitched* (1924), written with Edward Sheldon. Although he continued to make adaptations, his reputation as an original dramatist was established with *They Knew What They Wanted* (q.v., 1924; Pulitzer Prize, 1925), which was followed by *Lucky Sam McCarver* (q.v.,1925), *Ned McCobb's Daughter* (q.v.,1926), and *The Silver Cord* (q.v., 1926). With Charles MacArthur, he wrote *Salvation* (1928), a play about a woman revivalist. A further series of adaptations included *Olympia* (1928); *Marseilles* (1930); and *The Late Christopher Bean* (1932), which transfers a French play to a New England setting, and shows the triumph of a hired girl in recognizing the greatness of a struggling artist, who marries her when he becomes successful. Howard's next play was *Alien Corn* (1933), the story of a music teacher in a small college, who forsakes her dream of becoming a concert pianist because of her love for the married college president, and, when their affair ends, stifles her feelings and continues her teaching. Later plays include: *Dodsworth* (q.v.,1934), in collaboration with Sinclair Lewis; *Yellow Jack* (q.v., 1934); *Paths of Glory* (1935), a dramatization of a war novel by Humphrey Cobb; and *The Ghost of Yankee Doodle* (1937), the story of a liberal's fight against war propaganda.

Howard University, coeducational institution at Washington,D.C., chartered by act of Congress (1867). Although it is open to all races, it has a primarily Negro student body. The University is named for General O.O.Howard, who, as head of the Freedmen's Bureau, had much to do with its founding. Since 1928, it has received an annual congressional appropriation, and it offers a wide variety of courses in undergraduate and graduate schools.

HOWE, E[DGAR] W[ATSON] (1853–1937), born in Indiana, reared in Missouri and Nebraska, was editor and proprietor of the *Daily Globe* of Atchison, Kansas (1877–1911), and later of *E.W.Howe's Monthly* (1911–37), which was noted for his aphoristic editorials. His most famous novel, *The Story of a Country Town* (q.v.,1883), is a powerful, melodramatic tale of the narrow life of a midwestern community, which was privately printed after being rejected by numerous publishers, but has come to be recognized as a significant pioneering work of naturalistic fiction, and in spite of the stilted dialogue and the author's pessimism has been widely read and frequently republished. Howe's other works include: *The Confession of John Whitlock* (1891); *Country Town Sayings* (1911); *Ventures in Common Sense* (1919); *Plain People* (1929), his autobiography; and *The Indignations of E.W. Howe* (1933). He was known as 'the Sage of Potato Hill.'

HOWE, ELIAS (1819–67), maker of instruments and watches, who invented the sewing machine (1846). Infringements on his patent led to protracted litigation, but Howe eventually established his right. The machine was substantially improved by Isaac Merritt Singer (1811–75), Howe's leading rival.

HOWE, GEORGE AUGUSTUS, see *Howe, William.*

HOWE, JULIA WARD (1819–1910), poet and lecturer on social reforms, was particularly interested in abolitionism and woman suffrage. With her husband, Samuel G. Howe, she edited the Boston *Commonwealth*, an antislavery paper, and among her books are a *Life of Margaret Fuller* (1883), *Sex and Education* (1874), and *Modern Society* (1881). She is famous as the author of 'The Battle Hymn of the Republic' (q.v.,1862), and was the mother of Laura E. Richards and Maud Howe Elliott. Her collected poems include *Passion Flowers* (1854) and *Later Lyrics* (1866).

HOWE, M[ARK] A[NTONY] DEWOLFE (1864–), New England editor, poet, and scholarly antiquary. His numerous books on the New England background include: *Boston, the Place and the People* (1903); *Life and Letters of George Bancroft* (1908); *Boston Common: Scenes from Four Centuries* (1910); *Letters of Charles Eliot Norton* (1913), edited with Sara Norton; *The Atlantic Monthly and Its Makers* (1919); *Memories of a Hostess* (1922), based on the journals of Mrs.J.T.Fields; *Barrett Wendell and His Letters* (1924, Pulitzer Prize, 1925); *Classic Shades* (1928); and *Holmes of the Breakfast-Table* (1939). As the unofficial prose laureate of Boston, Howe is said to be the prototype of the biographer in J.P.Marquand's *The Late George Apley*.

HOWE, RICHARD, see *Howe, William*.

HOWE, SAMUEL GRIDLEY (1801–76), Boston philanthropist and champion of oppressed peoples, organized the Massachusetts School for the Blind (Perkins Institution), and aided the deaf and feeble-minded. With his wife, Julia Ward Howe, he founded the Boston *Commonwealth*, an antislavery paper. Late in life he aided the Cretans in their struggle for independence from Turkey, just as his earliest philanthropic act had been to aid the suffering Greeks in their revolt against the Turks. His principal book was the *Historical Sketches of the Greek Revolution* (1828). He was the father of Laura E. Richards and Maud Howe Elliott.

HOWE, WILLIAM HOWE, 5th Viscount (1729–1814), commander-in-chief of the British army in the American Revolution. After taking part in the Battle of Bunker Hill (q.v.,May 1775), he held Boston until the spring of 1776. A fictional incident of this period is the subject of Hawthorne's 'Howe's Masquerade.' Accompanied by the fleet under the command of his brother, Richard Howe (1726–99), he captured Long Island and New York, at the same time treating with the colonies for peace, thus bearing 'the olive branch in one hand and the sword in the other.' He defeated Washington at White Plains, Brandywine (q.v.), and Germantown (q.v.), and settled at Philadelphia during the winter when the Americans were rallying their forces at Valley Forge (q.v.). After his resignation, Howe was succeeded by Sir Henry Clinton (1778). His other brother, George Augustus Howe (*c.*1724–58), was a brigadier-general, killed in the march on Ticonderoga.

HOWELLS, WILLIAM DEAN (1837–1920), born in Ohio, began at the age of nine to set type in his father's printing office. As he tells in *My Year in a Log Cabin* (1893) and 'The Country Printer' in *Impressions and Experiences* (1896), his formal education was very slight and he had to school himself in the pressroom and from his father's bookcase. The family life in Hamilton, one of several Ohio towns to which they migrated, is revealed in the autobiographical *A Boy's Town* (1890). After many moves, the family settled in Columbus, where from 1856 to 1861 Howells wrote for the *Ohio State Journal*, and with J.J.Piatt (q.v.) published the *Poems of Two Friends* (1860). Meanwhile he was passionately studying languages and reading what literature he could obtain, activities which in later life he described in such volumes as *My Literary Passions* (1895), *Literary Friends and Acquaintances* (1900), *Years of My Youth* (1916), and others. In 1860 he wrote a campaign biography of Lincoln, which won him the consulate at Venice. During his four years there, he found time to write a pleasant observation of *Venetian Life* (1866) and *Italian Journeys* (1867), and his study of the language and literature later bore fruit in *Modern Italian Poets* (1887). Returning to America (1865), he was associated briefly with *The Nation*, and then accepted the sub-editorship of the *Atlantic Monthly* (q.v.), a post he held for five years, until he became editor-in-chief (1871–80). During these years, he lived in and near Boston, and, although he retained the democratic equalitarianism of the Ohio frontier, he also became an adopted son of Brahmin culture. His first novel, *Their Wedding Journey* (q.v.,1872), grew naturally out of his travel sketches, as did *A Chance Acquaintance* (q.v.,1873) and *A Foregone Conclusion* (q.v.,1875), the latter depicting an Italian background. *The Lady of the Aroostook* (q.v.,1879) and *A Fearful Responsibility* (1881) both contrast American and Venetian characters, and deal with conflicts between love and social rank. Other works of this first period were: 'Private Theatricals' (*Atlantic*, 1875–6; in book form as *Mrs.Farrell*, 1921); *The Undiscovered Country* (1880), a study of the sordidness of spiritualism and the true spirituality of the Shakers; and *Dr.*

Breen's Practice (1881), which deals with the incompetence of a society woman as a physician. In 1881 Howells forsook the *Atlantic* and began serializing his stories in the *Century Magazine*. At the same time, he departed from his earlier comedies of manners and studies of contrasting types, to begin a series of realistic character studies, particularly of characters grappling with ethical problems. The first of these, *A Modern Instance* (q.v.,1881), was followed by *A Woman's Reason* (1883), which in its study of feminine nature and Boston social values lacked the breadth of its predecessor and of the masterpiece on Boston and the self-made man that followed it, *The Rise of Silas Lapham* (q.v., 1885). *Indian Summer* (q.v.,1886), the subtle portrait of a middle-aged widow and her problem of romance, is considered second only to the portrait of Silas Lapham. *The Minister's Charge* (1887) presents the theme that one cannot disclaim complicity with lives that surround one, while *April Hopes* (q.v.,1888) shows a return to the comedy of manners, although it includes a tragic presentation of young love. In *Annie Kilburn* (q.v.,1889), Howells deals with the contrasts among the 'summer people,' the substantial inhabitants, and the laboring class of a New England town, and his consideration of false charity as against true justice shows an indictment of the existing economic system. This novel marked the change that now came to Howells's life. He moved to New York as a member of the editorial staff of *Harper's*, where he ranged more widely than he had under the Boston influence, and became interested in the larger problems of industrialism. A New York traction strike, the conviction of the anarchists of the Haymarket Riot, the influence of Tolstoy, and the reading of such social reformers as Henry George, all caused him to turn toward socialism and to adapt his realistic fiction to the problems of the machine age. This transition is reflected in his first novel about New York, *A Hazard of New Fortunes* (q.v., 1890), followed by *The Quality of Mercy* (1892), a study of the ramifications of a crime for which the economic order is primarily responsible. These were followed by *An Imperative Duty* (1893), a slight treatment of the problem of miscegenation; *The World of Chance* (1893), a record of New York literary life; and *The Coast of Bohemia* (1893), dealing with a young woman art student. In *A Traveler from Altruria* (q.v.,1894) and again in its sequel *Through the Eye of the Needle* (q.v., 1907), he returned to his study of social and economic problems, through the medium of a Utopia. Several minor novels followed, which revert to earlier themes: *An Open-Eyed Conspiracy* (1897) and *Their Silver Wedding Journey* (1899) reintroduced the Marches from his first novel; *Ragged Lady* (1899) is a story of American rusticity and European sophistication; *The Landlord at Lion's Head* (q.v., 1897), with its portrait of Jeff Durgin, is one of the author's great works of character study; and *The Son of Royal Langbrith* (q.v.,1904) is a dramatic handling of a moral problem. In his last novel, *The Leatherwood God* (1916), he deals with the Ohio frontier of his youth, which is also the scene of *New Leaf Mills* (1913), the chronicle of a year of his childhood. Throughout his life, Howells wrote short stories, of which two volumes are concerned with the supernatural, but all are less important than his novels. He was also the author of 31 dramas, ranging from farce to blank-verse tragedy, of 11 travel books, of several autobiographical works, and of a few volumes of verse. During his later life, Howells was frequently considered the pre-eminent American man of letters, and he received many honors both in the U.S. and abroad, as well as the offer of many academic posts. In addition to advising his friend, Clemens, he used his important position to aid and encourage such authors as Boyesen, Garland, Stephen Crane, Frank Norris, and Robert Herrick, who were following the trail he had blazed. Both in his articles in the 'Easy Chair' of *Harper's Monthly*, and in such volumes as *Criticism and Fiction* (1891), *My Literary Passions* (1895), and *Literature and Life* (1902), he was an important critical force. His own literary credo was summed up in *Criticism and Fiction*, in which he championed realism and its truthful delineation of the motives, the impulses, and the principles that shape the lives of actual men and women. The sources of this realism he ascribes not only to science but to democracy, since the realist 'feels in every nerve the equality of things and the unity of men.' To this concept he also attached certain dicta of his age: that art must serve morality, that it should teach rather than amuse, and that truthfulness to American life would

inevitably picture the smiling aspects of experience.

Howe's Masquerade, story by Hawthorne (q.v.) published in *Twice-Told Tales* (1842).

At the Boston tavern, the Old Province House, once headquarters of the royal governors, the proprietor tells a visitor this legend: When Governor Howe gave an entertainment, the night before the patriots' victory in the siege of Boston, the guests were costumed as figures of history and fiction, with comic individuals in rags representing Washington and his generals. Late in the evening, a funeral march was heard, and a solemn procession of ancient figures passed through the ballroom. Colonel Joliffe, an aged patriot detained during the siege, was present with his granddaughter, and identified the apparitions as early Puritan governors, 'summoned to form the funeral procession of royal authority in New England.' According to legend, the procession reappears on each anniversary of the occasion.

HOWTH, Margaret, pseudonym of Rebecca H. Davis (q.v.).

HOYT, Charles Hale (1860–1900), popular dramatist whose farcical plays, depending on amusing situations, caricatured characters, and satire, included *A Texas Steer* (1890, published 1925), a satire on politics, and *A Trip to Chinatown* (produced 1891, unpublished).

Hub of the Universe, phrase applied to Boston, derived from a statement by Holmes in *The Autocrat of the Breakfast-Table*: 'Boston State-house is the hub of the solar system.'

HUBBARD, Elbert (1856–1915), born in Illinois, after a career as a salesman, and the writing of several poor novels, turned self-conscious Bohemian. Finding the Hubbard cupboard rather bare, he sought intellectual nutriment in the theories of the English craftsman, William Morris, whose ideas on decoration, printing, and medieval design he attempted to ape. Failing to grasp the fundamentals of this thought, Hubbard, in his Roycroft Press at East Aurora (near Buffalo, New York), produced a shoddy imitation of Morris's Kelmscott Press. From this ostentatiously simple artist colony, he also edited an inspirational magazine, the *Philistine* (1895–1915), whose platitudinously 'arty' content

was mainly written by himself. A similar magazine, *The Fra* (1908–17), whose title derived from the sobriquet he conferred upon himself, never attained the enormous popularity of the earlier publication. Among his numerous writings is the series of 170 *Little Journeys* to the homes of great men. His best-known work is the narrative essay, *A Message to Garcia* (q.v., 1899), a typical, timely, Hubbard-inspirational account of an incident in the Spanish-American War, which appealed to industrial magnates so poignantly that they distributed countless copies to promote greater efficiency among their employes. Hubbard died in the sinking of the *Lusitania*.

HUBBARD, Frank McKinney (1868–1930), Indiana humorist, as 'Kin' Hubbard was widely known for his syndicated columns and caricatures, originally published in the *Indianapolis News* (1891–1930). These were concerned with the 'Sayings' of his shrewd, humorous character, Abe Martin, whose dialect quips were collected in an annual series of books.

HUBBARD, William (*c.*1621–1704), born in England, graduated from Harvard in the first class (1642) and became active in colonial affairs, entering the ministry at Ipswich (1656). *A General History of New England from the Discovery to MDCLXXX* depended greatly upon Morton's *Memorial* and Winthrop's *Journal*, just as later historians, such as Prince and Cotton Mather, in turn depended upon Hubbard's manuscript, first printed in 1815. In his *Narrative of the Troubles with the Indians in New-England* (1677), he quivered with fury in telling of the Indians, 'the treacherous villains' and 'dross of mankind.' Although the narrative lacks artistic unity and digresses into many details, it has a tremendous zest, and was very popular. Another of his works is the sermon, *The Happiness of a People in the Wisdome of their Rulers* (1676).

Huckleberries Gathered from New England Hills, eleven local-color stories by Rose Terry Cooke (q.v.), published in 1891.

'Grit' is the story of obstinate old Reuben Fyler, who, because of an old family quarrel with the Potters, refuses to let his daughter marry Tom Potter. When the girl manifests her 'Fyler grit' and elopes, his anger is overcome by his admiration, and he astonishes the town by approving

the match. 'Odd Miss Todd' is a character study of Miny (Hermione) Todd, who, after the death of her eccentric father, at the age of 30 cultivates a taste for friendship, and becomes noted for her charity, especially after her brief love affair with a fortune-seeking minister she has befriended, who abandons her to marry another. 'Hopson's Choice' tells of the romance of Hopson Bunnell and his cousin Prudence. Their love hits a snag, when Prudence mistakes *p* for *b* in an overheard reference to 'Hopson's Choice,' but a friend corrects the misunderstanding, and all ends well. 'A Town Mouse and a Country Mouse' is the story of the Hart sisters, Amanda and Melinda, who are separated when the latter marries a farmer and the former becomes a maid-of-all-work in town. After many years, they visit each other, and Melinda finds the noisy town unendurable, while Amanda dislikes the lonely farm, so that they continue to live apart.

Huckleberry Finn, *The Adventures of,* novel by Clemens (q.v.), written under his pseudonym Mark Twain. A sequel to *Tom Sawyer* (q.v.), it was begun in 1876 and published in 1884, omitting the chapter included in *Life on the Mississippi.* Although it carries on the picaresque story of the characters in *Tom Sawyer,* the sequel is on the whole a keener realistic portrayal of regional character and frontier experience on the Mississippi.

Narrated by Huck, the sequel begins with its unschooled hero under the motherly protection of the Widow Douglas and her sister, Miss Watson. When his blackguard father appears to demand the boy's fortune, Huck tricks him by transferring the money to Judge Thatcher, but his father kidnaps him and imprisons him in a lonely cabin. During one of the old man's drunken spells, Huck escapes to Jackson's Island, where he meets Miss Watson's runaway slave, Jim. They start down the river on a raft, but, after several adventures, the raft is hit by a steamboat and the two are separated. Huck swims ashore, and is sheltered by the Grangerford family, whose feud with the Shepherdsons causes bloodshed. The boy discovers Jim, and they set out again on the raft, giving refuge to the 'Duke of Bridgewater,' itinerant printer and fraud, and the 'Dauphin,' 'Louis XVII of France,' actor, evangelist, and temperance faker. At stopping-places, the 'King' lectures as a reformed pirate, and they present, as 'Kean' and 'Garrick,' dramatic performances culminating in the fraudulent exhibition of the 'Royal Nonesuch.' Huck witnesses the murder of a harmless drunkard by an Arkansas aristocrat, whose contempt discourages a mob of would-be lynchers. The rogues learn of the death of Peter Wilks and claim legacies as his brothers. Huck interferes in behalf of the three daughters, and the scheme is foiled by the arrival of the real brothers. Then he discovers that the 'King' has sold Jim to Mrs.Phelps, Tom Sawyer's Aunt Sally, and at the Phelps farm he impersonates Tom in an attempt to rescue the Negro. When Tom arrives, he masquerades as his brother Sid, and concocts a fantastic scheme to free Jim. In the 'mixed-up and splendid rescue,' Tom is accidentally shot, and the slave is recaptured. While Tom is recuperating, he reveals that Miss Watson has died, setting Jim free in her will, and that the rescue was necessary only because he 'wanted the *adventure* of it.' It is also disclosed that Huck's fortune is safe, since his father is dead, but he concludes: 'I reckon I got to light out for the territory ahead of the rest, because Aunt Sally she's going to adopt me and sivilize me, and I can't stand it. I been there before.'

HUDSON, Henry (*fl.*1607–11), English navigator, was employed by the Muscovy Company (1607–8) and the Dutch East India Company (1609) to search for a northeast passage to the Orient. During his voyage for the latter, adverse conditions in the Arctic nearly caused a mutiny among his crew, and he decided to seek a northwest passage instead. In his ship, the *Half Moon,* he sailed along the coast of North America, and discovered Delaware Bay, New York Bay, and the Hudson River. His last attempt to discover a passage, in the ship *Discovery,* was financed by an English company. Leaving England in April 1610, he sailed westward, and during the following months reached Hudson Strait and Hudson Bay, where he spent the winter. By spring, hardships had led to a mutiny, and Hudson was set adrift with eight others, while the rest of the crew returned in the *Discovery* to England. Nothing is known of his fate.

Hudson Balance (1801–9), Federalist newspaper of Hudson, New York. Its editor, Harry Croswell, was unsuccess-

fully defended by Hamilton in a libel suit arising from the paper's vigorous attacks on Jefferson. During one of Hamilton's courtroom speeches, his remarks concerning Aaron Burr precipitated his fatal duel with his rival. In 1809 the paper was moved to Albany, where its policies were continued in *The Balance and New York Journal.*

Hudson River Bracketed, novel by Edith Wharton (q.v.).

Hudson River School, group of American painters who, rebelling against the classical 18th-century tradition of aristocratic portraiture, turned to romantic depictions of the American landscape. This transition in interest and taste coincides with the rising nationalism that followed the War of 1812, and had as its literary parallel the novels of Cooper and the poetry of Bryant. The leaders of the school, Thomas Cole, Asher Durand, and Thomas Doughty (qq.v.), were followed by the more sentimental or more literal Frederick Church, Albert Bierstadt (qq.v.), John F. Kensett (1818–72), Thomas Moran (1837–1926), Jervis McEntee (1828–91), and Jasper Cropsey (1823–1900), whose subjects were as far removed from the original Hudson River scenery as the national parks of the Far West.

Hudson's Bay Company, monopolistic trading company, which possessed virtually sovereign rights to the region drained by the rivers flowing into Hudson Bay, was permanently chartered by Charles II (1670). The monopoly was not respected, either by French or other English traders, until the Treaty of Paris (1763), which transferred Canada from France to England. The Northwest Company of Scottish traders was a formidable rival until the merger of the two organizations (1821), after a bloody rivalry over the Red River Settlement. All of Canada except the settled eastern sections was leased to the Company, and even Washington and Oregon were virtually under its rule. Following a parliamentary investigation (1857), stock ownership became public, and the Company's position was no longer secure. In 1869 its territory was transferred to the Dominion of Canada, and since that time its interests have turned progressively from fur trading to such commercial enterprises as manufactures, shipping, and retailing. In 1930 the Company placed its Canadian stores in a separate organization and restored its London business to the fur trade.

Hugh Wynne, Free Quaker, romance by S.W.Mitchell (q.v.) published in 1897.

Hugh Wynne, son of a puritanical Philadelphia merchant who married a beautiful, pleasure-loving Frenchwoman, tells his own story. During the Revolutionary War, he escapes from the domination of his stern Quaker father to become a so-called Free or Fighting Quaker, and an officer on the staff of Washington. He loves Darthea Peniston, whom he finally wins, after interludes of rivalry with his friend Jack Warder and his cousin and enemy, Arthur Wynne. His narrative and Warder's diary describe the atmosphere of Revolutionary Philadelphia and Wynne's adventures in battle as a spy, prisoner of the British, and member of Lafayette's staff. The real characters depicted include Washington, Arnold, André, and Lafayette.

HUGHES, Charles Evans (1862–), educated at Colgate, Brown, and Columbia, practiced law in New York City, was active as a politician and professor of law, and became governor of New York (1907–10), resigning to accept his appointment as associate justice of the U.S. Supreme Court. This he left to be the Republican candidate for the presidency in 1916, after which he returned to law practice. He was secretary of state (1921–5) and held various diplomatic posts until his appointment as Chief Justice of the U.S. Supreme Court (1930–41). His writings include: *Conditions of Progress in Democratic Government* (1909); *The Pathway of Peace and Other Addresses* (1925); and *The Supreme Court of the United States* (1927) and other collections of lectures on legal and political subjects delivered at Columbia, Princeton, and Yale.

HUGHES, Hatcher (1883–), born in North Carolina, is a professor of drama at Columbia and author of plays which include *Wake-Up, Jonathan* (1921), written with Elmer Rice; *Hell-Bent fer Heaven* (q.v., 1924; Pulitzer Prize), a North Carolina mountain play; *Ruint* (1925), a comedy dealing with the mountain people; *It's a Grand Life* (1930), written with Alan Williams; and *The Lord Blesses the Bishop* (1934).

HUGHES, [James] Langston (1902–), Negro author, best known for his poems,

which are objective, unhampered by traditional form, frequently sardonic, and often employ Negro folk or jazz rhythms. His poems are contained in the books, *The Weary Blues* (1926), *Dear Lovely Death* (1931), *The Negro Mother* (1931), *The Dream Keeper* (1932), and *A New Song* (1938). *Scottsboro Limited* (1932) contains poems and a one-act play, and, besides other short plays, Hughes has written two full-length plays, *Mulatto* (1936) and *Troubled Island*. *Not Without Laughter* (1930) is a novel, and *The Ways of White Folks* (1934) is a book of short stories. *The Big Sea* (1940) is his autobiography which reviews a career marked by literary distinction and proletarian sympathies.

HUGHES, RUPERT (1872–), Missouri-born author, best known for his comprehensively documented biography of *George Washington* (3 vols.,1926–30), which attempts to depict the first President's greatness without repeating the many myths that have arisen concerning his life. Hughes has also written a book on *American Composers* (1900), a world history, many plays, songs, and motion pictures, and some 25 popular novels, including *What Will People Say?* (1914), *Souls for Sale* (1922), and *No One Man* (1931). He has long been a resident of California.

Huguenots, French Protestants, whose church was Calvinistic in doctrine and Presbyterian in government. They were bitterly persecuted until the Edict of Nantes granted them freedom of worship (1598). Upon its revocation (1685), many of them fled to America. Some had previously made settlements in Florida and South Carolina, and many of the settlers of New Amsterdam were Huguenots. They became an important element in the society of Virginia and South Carolina, and also settled in Rhode Island, Connecticut, New York, Delaware, Maryland, and Pennsylvania. The only surviving church is in Charleston.

HULL, ISAAC, see *Old Ironsides*.

Hull House, see *Addams, Jane*.

HULME, THOMAS, see *Cobbett, William*.

Humanism, THE NEW, philosophical and critical movement that flourished in the U.S. during the 1920's, under the leadership of Irving Babbitt and P.E.More (qq.v.). These scholars and their followers stressed the human elements of experience, as distinguished from the supernatural or animal elements, assuming that the essential quality of human experience is ethical, that there is a dualism of man and nature, and that man's will is free. They desire a discriminating, harmonious cultivation of every part of human nature, based upon a universal scale of values rather than the temporary codes of any particular society. The New Humanists transcend the scientific method, finding their ultimate ethical principle in restraint, recognizing freedom as the 'liberation from outer constraints and subjection to inner law.' They turn to the Hellenic doctrine of reason, and away from romanticism; although they draw upon Christianity, Oriental philosophy, and certain modern thinkers, and tend to make intellect rather than formal theology the universal test. T.S.Eliot and Norman Foerster (qq.v.) are among the important followers of this school, although Eliot has criticized some of its basic concepts. S.P. Sherman (q.v.) was an early popular spokesman for its philosophy, but later adopted different standards. *Humanism and America* (1930), a symposium by its proponents, was answered by the symposium, *The Critique of Humanism* (1930), and also by Santayana's *The Genteel Tradition at Bay* (q.v.,1931).

Humble-Bee, The, poem by Emerson (q.v.) published in 1839 and reprinted in *Poems* (1847). In six stanzas of irregular four-stress couplets, the verses celebrate the wisdom and virtues of the 'yellow-breeched philosopher,' who mocks at care, 'sipping only what is sweet,' and taking account of only what is cheerful and excellent.

Humble Romance, A, and Other Stories, collection of 28 tales by Mary Wilkins Freeman (q.v.), published in 1887. Studies of the New England environment and its typical characters, they show the influence of the local-color movement and are representative of Victorian morality and sentimentality.

'A Humble Romance' is the story of Jake Russell, an itinerant tin peddler, who unknowingly commits bigamy after his first wife elopes with another man. She returns to blackmail Jake, but his second wife remains faithful, carrying on his business until he is able to rejoin her. 'Old Lady Pingree' tells of a kindly old spinster whose charity during her bare, poverty-stricken life is rewarded by the granting of her pathetic last wish to be buried 'respectably' in the family plot.

'Cinnamon Roses' is a tale of the frustrated romance of a New England villager and the spinster who mistakenly believes he is courting her more attractive sister, and the correction of their misunderstanding in later life. 'An Independent Thinker' tells of Esther Gay, who nearly alienates her granddaughter's fiancé and his family by her seeming irreligion, but ingeniously manages to regain their friendship while still clinging to her beloved 'principles.' 'The Bar Light-House,' set on the stormy New England coast, is concerned with a light-house keeper's paralytic wife and her religious conversion owing to a succession of apparently miraculous circumstances.

Humoresque, short story by Fannie Hurst (q.v.).

HUMPHREYS, DAVID (1752–1818), born in Connecticut, graduated from Yale (1771), and during the Revolutionary War became a lieutenant-colonel and aide-de-camp to Washington. His stirring patriotism appears in *A Poem Addressed to the Armies of the United States* (1780), and his military knowledge in an *Essay on the Life of the Honorable Major-General Israel Putnam* (1788). After the peace, he spent two years abroad as Secretary to the Commission for Negotiating Treaties of Commerce, and then returned to Mount Vernon for a year with his 'Dear General.' At the threat of war between Spain and England (1790), he was appointed a secret agent abroad, and, appointed sole commissioner in Algerine affairs (1793), spent three more years in Spain as minister plenipotentiary. Returning to the U.S. (1802), he interested himself in the production of wool from the Spanish Merino sheep, wrote a dissertation on the subject, and imported some of the sheep, establishing a successful woolen mill. A typical 18th-century squire, having directed his pen to *A Poem on the Happiness of America* (1780) and *The Glory of America; or, Peace Triumphant over War* (1783), he now addressed 'to the Citizens of the United States' a didactic *Poem on the Industry of the United States of America* (1783). Here he expressed his faith in the nation's glorious future, with a social and economic conservatism characteristic of a Yankee industrialist and stanch Federalist. Associated with the Connecticut Wits (q.v.), he wrote poetry that is pompous and lacking in imagination, although he contributed a few light bagatelles and participated in the satire, *The Anarchiad* (q.v.,1786–7). He was also the author of a romantic drama, *The Widow of Malabar* (1790), and a comedy, *The Yankey in England* (q.v., 1814).

HUNEKER, JAMES GIBBONS (1860–1921), after studying piano in Paris, where he was affected by the romanticism of contemporary painters, writers, and musicians, became a music critic in Philadelphia and New York. From 1900 to 1917 he wrote for the New York *Sun* on matters concerned with art, literature, drama, and music, and his wit, lush phrasing, and connoisseur's gusto made his criticism stand far above that of other journalists of the time. His best-known early books include *Mezzotints in Modern Music* (1899), essays on Brahms, Chopin, Liszt, and others; *Chopin: The Man and His Music* (1900), a biographical sketch and critical analysis generally considered his best work; and *Melomaniacs* (1902), satirical sketches. From this exclusive concern with music he turned to wider interests in such books as *Iconoclasts, a Book of Dramatists* (1905); *Egoists: A Book of Supermen* (1909); *Promenades of an Impressionist* (1910); *Ivory Apes and Peacocks* (1915); *New Cosmopolis* (1915), a study of New York City; *Unicorns* (1917); and *Variations* (1921). *Old Fogy* (1913) and *Steeplejack* (1920) are autobiographical works that exhibit the variety of interests, facility of criticism, and vivacity of thought that won Huneker the personal and artistic allegiance of such men as Mencken and Nathan. His sonorous style and love for the voluptuous and colorful are also exhibited in his novel, *Painted Veils* (q.v., 1920), concerned with New York artists.

Hunkers, name applied to the conservative Democrats of New York from 1844 to 1852, who wished to retain the whole 'hunk' of party policy and patronage in the hands of established politicians in opposition to the Barnburners (q.v.), the radical group.

HUNT, HELEN, see *Jackson, Helen Hunt.*

HUNT, ISAAC (*c.*1742–1809), born in Barbados, graduated from the Academy of Philadelphia (University of Pennsylvania) in 1763, served as a tutor, and then became a pamphleteer. *A Letter from a*

Gentleman in Transilvania (1764) attacked the Pennsylvania proprietors, and Hunt lampooned the college authorities in a series of satires, beginning with *A Humble Attempt at Scurrility* (1765), nevertheless receiving a master's degree (1771). *The Political Family* (1775) championed a continued union with Great Britain, and as a Loyalist he was forced to escape to England, where he barely managed to live by preaching and tutoring. His last political pamphlet was written against Thomas Paine (1791). He was the father of Leigh Hunt.

HUNT, William Gibbes (1791–1833), graduated from Harvard (1810), and emigrated to Lexington, Kentucky, where he established *The Western Review and Miscellaneous Magazine* (q.v.,1819–21), an important journal of Western culture.

HUNT, William Morris (1824–79), born in Brattleboro, Vermont, attended Harvard, and studied painting at Düsseldorf, Germany. He disliked the meticulous, uninspired Düsseldorf style, and is significant as the first American figure painter to abandon its teachings for a freer manner, which he learned as a student in Paris. With Inness, he began the trend of French influence that dominated American art in the latter part of the 19th century. Upon his return to the U.S. (1855), Hunt produced his best work in such canvases as *The Bathers* and *Boy and Butterfly*, in which the simple forms and harmonies of tone sustain the poetic interpretation. In 1875 he painted two decorative murals for the New York state capitol, but, despite his versatility, his work is uneven and does not fulfil the promise of his youth. He was the author of *Talks about Art* (1878) and a *History of Pre-Raphaelitism.*

Richard Morris Hunt (1828–95), his brother, the first American architect to study at the Beaux-Arts in Paris, was largely responsible for the wave of eclecticism that swept American architecture in the late 19th century. During the 1870's, he designed sumptuous homes of a French Renaissance château type, in New York, Long Island, Boston, and Newport, for such wealthy families as the Astors, Vanderbilts, and Belmonts. His outstanding public edifices include the Lenox Library (the site now occupied by the Frick Art Gallery) and the Tribune Building in New York City.

HUNTER, Dard (1883–), Ohio papermaker and typographer, whose *The Etching of Figures* (1915) and *The Etching of Contemporary Life* (1917) are said to be the first books in the history of printing ever produced entirely by one man. His other works include *The Art of Bookmaking* (1915), *Primitive Paper-making* (1927), and *Paper-making through Eighteen Centuries* (1929).

Hunters of Kentucky, The, song by Samuel Woodworth (q.v.).

HUNTINGTON, Collis P[otter] (1821–1900), born in Connecticut, went to California (1849) and made a fortune as a merchant in Sacramento before helping to finance the Central Pacific Railroad, which, by meeting the Union Pacific (1869), completed the first transcontinental railway. Huntington succeeded his principal associate, Leland Stanford, as president of the Central Pacific and of the Southern Pacific (1890). An ingenious financier, ruthless manipulator, and unscrupulous lobbyist, Huntington owned streetcar and steamship lines, as well as other railroads, of which the most notable was the Chesapeake and Ohio. His nephew, Henry E. Huntington (1850–1927), associated with him in business, founded the Henry E. Huntington Library (q.v.).

HUNTLEY, Lydia, see *Sigourney.*

Huron Indians (properly, Wandot or Wyandot), confederacy of nomadic Iroquoian tribes, which originally inhabited Ontario, where Champlain visited them (1603). They were bitter enemies of the Iroquois proper, who virtually destroyed them (1648–9). Some survivors fled to Quebec and descendants of others settled in Michigan and Ohio. They fought against the U.S. in the Revolution and the War of 1812, but later moved to Oklahoma. In the *Leather-Stocking Tales* the Hurons are depicted as treacherous and cruel, and they figure also in *Satanstoe.*

Hurry Harry, character in *The Deerslayer* (q.v.).

HURST, Fannie (1889–), born in Ohio, graduated from Washington University (1909), taught school for a time, and moved to New York to begin her literary career. Her first four books were volumes of short stories, *Just Around the Corner* (1914), *Every Soul Hath Its Song* (1916), *Gaslight Sonatas* (1918), and *Hu-*

oresque (1919). The last, containing eight stories of Jewish life in New York City, is mainly distinguished for its title story, concerned with a youthful violin prodigy, which was dramatized by the author in 1923. Later short stories have been published in *The Vertical City* (1922), *Song of Life* (1927), *Procession* (1929), and *We Are Ten* (1937). Her novels, reflecting her various interests in the stage, music, and the role of women in the modern world, are: *Star-dust* (1921); *Lummox* (1923), a character study of a clumsy Scandinavian servant-girl; *Appassionata* (1926); *Manne-quin* (1926); *A President Is Born* (1928), a family chronicle; *Five and Ten* (1929); *Back Street* (1931); *Imitation of Life* (1933); *Anitra's Dance* (1934); and *Great Laughter* (1936), concerned with a matri-arch's rule over her family.

HUTCHINS, Robert Maynard (1899–), graduated from Yale (1921) and was successively secretary of the univer-sity, professor in the law school (1927), and dean of the law school (1928). In 1929 he became president of the Univer-sity of Chicago (q.v.), where he has reor-ganized the administration and abolished compulsory courses and the conventional grading system. In his books, *The Higher Learning in America* (1936), *No Friendly Voice* (1936), and *Speaking of Education* (1940), he states his theory of education, which is opposed to 'the accumulation of observed facts' of science, as being essen-tially anti-intellectual. He advocates the study of certain basic texts in the history of ideas, and asks for concentration on the basic abstractions, through 'rational analysis which is logically prior to the empirical observations involved.'

HUTCHINSON, Anne (1591–1643), emi-grated from England to Massachusetts (1634), where her vigorous intellect soon led her to hold informal weekly meetings of women, in which she discussed the ser-mons of the previous Sunday and advo-cated a 'covenant of grace,' based on the individual's direct intuition of God's grace, as opposed to the orthodox belief in a 'covenant of works,' based on obedi-ence to the statutes of church and state. She was called an Antinomian (q.v.), was said to be 'traducing the ministers and their ministry,' and, although Governor Vane, her brother-in-law John Wheel-wright, and others supported her views, a synod of churches excommunicated her, and Governor Winthrop banished her from the colony. In 1638 she and her family emigrated to Rhode Island. In 1642 she moved again, with some of her family, to New York, where all but one of her household were massacred by Indians the following year.

HUTCHINSON, Thomas (1711–80), member of a prominent Boston family, enjoyed a brilliant political career. At one time he was simultaneously member of the Council, judge of probate, chief justice, and lieutenant-governor. He was the last royal governor of Massachusetts Bay Colony (1771–4). Although he was the most influential man in the colony, his 'hard money' policy and decided Tory leanings made him unpopular with the Adams family and others. He insisted on the strict enforcement of the Stamp Act, and this, along with certain injudicious letters he wrote to the Plantation Office in London (see *Hutchinson Letters*), as well as the fact that a member of his family was stamp distributor, led to the burning of his mansion in 1765. His hatred of the liberal colonists increased, and it was his strenuous Tory policy that led to the Boston Tea Party, after which he left for England. His *History of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, from its First Settle-ment in* 1628 *to the year* 1750 (2 vols., 1764, '67) was based on a wide study of manu-script sources, but he was better equipped for minute than for general analysis, and lacked creative imagination with which to reconstruct the past. A third volume, bringing the history down to 1774, was published (1828), and he was the author of several pamphlets dealing with colonial history. A continuation of the *History* was made by George Minot (q.v.). Hutchinson is satirized in *The Adulateur.*

Hutchinson Letters (1768–69), written by Thomas Hutchinson supposedly to a former secretary of the British Foreign Secretary Grenville, urging drastic meas-ures and the curbing of 'what are called English Liberties' in the colonies. The letters came into the possession of Frank-lin, who sent them to a friend with the stipulation that they should not be copied. When they were published (1772) and precipitated a scandal, Franklin was de-nounced in unmeasured terms and re-moved from the office of deputy post-master-general.

Hutter, THOMAS, character in *The Deerslayer* (q.v.).

HUTTON, LAURENCE (1843–1904), New York drama critic and author of some 50 books, mainly on the theater or on his literary pilgrimages abroad, which are distinguished by a chatty, impressionistic style. Among these works are *Curiosities of the American Stage* (1891), *Other Times and Other Seasons* (1895), and *Literary Landmarks of Florence* (1897). He edited the *American Actor Series* (5 vols.,1881–2).

Hyacinth Robinson, hero of *The Princess Casamassima* (q. v.).

Hymn to the Night, poem by Longfellow (q.v.) published in *Voices of the Night* (1839). In quatrains of alternate five- and three-stress lines, the poem hails the soothing night with a verse from the *Iliad,* 'Welcome! Thrice prayed for!,' and celebrates the peace-bringing 'fountain . . . the calm majestic presence of the Night.'

Hymn to the Rising Sun, play by Paul Green (q.v.).

Hymns have been collected by all American Protestant sects and sung in their church services. The scruples of the Puritans forbade original hymns, and they created only new versions of the Psalms. Although the 16th-century English versions of Henry Ainsworth, John Hopkins, and Thomas Sternhold were probably brought over on the *Mayflower,* the first American collection was the *Bay Psalm Book* (q.v.,1640). Cotton Mather, in his *Psalterium Americanum* (1718), made another translation, as did Thomas Prince (1758), while Thomas Walter (q.v.) gave further impetus to psalmody through his discourse on 'singing by note' (1721), and William Billings (q.v.) introduced other reforms in his musical settings (1770). During the late 18th century, Congregationalists began to admit hymns as well as psalms, and, besides the amended versions of Isaac Watts's *Psalms and Hymns* by Joel Barlow (1785) and Timothy Dwight (1800), original religious songs were written by Mather Byles. Later Congregational hymnodists included J.G.C. Brainard and Ray Palmer, and H.W. Beecher's *Plymouth Collection* (1855) was an important Congregational compilation. The Presbyterians, like the Congregationalists, long used versions of Watts, the first of their original hymnodists being Samson Occom. During the 19th century, hymnody was stimulated by Thomas Hastings (q.v.), and by Lowell Mason (q.v.), whose settings included those for 'From Greenland's Icy Mountains' and 'Nearer, My God, to Thee.' Mason's collection, *The Choir* (1832), included S.F. Smith's 'America,' and other prominent Baptist hymnodists were Adoniram Judson and Mrs.Sigourney. Members of the Protestant Episcopal church known for their hymns include Francis Scott Key, Mrs.S.J.Hall, J.W.Eastburn, and Mrs. Stowe. Other hymnodists of the time included Hosea Ballou, Alice and Phoebe Cary, Lucy Larcom, and Whittier. The Unitarians contributed more to American hymnody than any other sect, and the authors of their hymns included J.Q. Adams, John Pierpont, Andrews Norton, Mrs.Follen, Bryant, Emerson, Hedge, H.W. and Samuel Longfellow, Holmes, Parker, J.F.Clarke, Jones Very, O.B. Frothingham, E.E.Hale, and T.W.Higginson. About the middle of the 19th century, the evangelists Moody and Sankey caused an increase in the popularity of hymnody.

Hyperion, romance by Longfellow (q.v.) published in 1839. The thin thread of story connects philosophical discourses, romantic legends, literary criticism, and translations of German poetry. The romantic creation is in the mood of Jean Paul Richter, but the events correspond with those of the author's second visit to Europe, from the death of his first wife to his friendship with Frances Appleton, whom he later married.

Paul Flemming, who has passed many months in lonely wandering, makes a trip to Frankfort with a young German baron. Shortly afterward he meets Mary Ashburton, falls in love with her, and is rejected. He continues his travels in company with Berkley, a young Englishman, who nurses him through a serious illness. At length Flemming arouses himself from his dreams of poetry and love, and returns to a normal life in America.

I

I Sing the Body Electric, poem by Whitman (q.v.), untitled in the 1855 edition of *Leaves of Grass*, later called 'Poem of the Body' as a section of 'Children of Adam,' and given its present title in 1867. It celebrates the anatomy and the form of men, women, and children, declaring, 'These are not the parts and poems of the Body only, but of the Soul, O I say now these are the soul!'

I.W.W., the Industrial Workers of the World, a labor organization founded at Chicago (1905) by representatives of 40 occupations and 46 labor unions, to serve 'the immediate interests of the working class' and effect 'their final emancipation.' Led by Haywood, Debs (qq.v.), and others, the I.W.W. established a program of organization on industrial lines, as contrasted with the craft unionism of the A.F. of L., and of struggle for the eventual overthrow of capitalism. It was split (1908) on the issue of methods of revolutionary action, and by 1917 the two bodies had less than 60,000 members, although 300,000 membership cards had been issued since the inception of the organization. Its disintegration was hastened by the post-war hysteria against radicalism. Numerous propaganda pamphlets were issued, and other contributions to literature are found in *I.W.W. Songs* (1918), a book containing 'Hallelujah! I'm a Bum,' 'Casey Jones—the Union Scab,' and other popular pieces. Members of the I.W.W. were sometimes called 'Wobblies.' The I.W.W. has often figured in fiction, as in Dos Passos's *U.S.A.*

IBERVILLE, PIERRE LE MOYNE, *Sieur d'* (1661–1706), French-Canadian soldier and explorer, commanded five expeditions against the English (1686–97). Although his daring attacks were generally successful, he received insufficient support from France and failed to break the British hold on the Hudson Bay area. After the end of hostilities, he colonized Old Biloxi (1699) at the mouth of the Mississippi, which he first definitely ascertained. The settlement was moved three years later to Mobile. He proved an able administrator, and during later warfare captured Nevis and St.Christopher, and was planning to seize Boston and New York at the time of his death by yellow fever at Havana.

Icarian Colonies, see *Cabet, Étienne.*

Icebound, play by Owen Davis (q.v.), produced and published in 1923, was awarded the Pulitzer Prize.

Members of the tight-lipped, 'icebound' Jordan family, in Veazie, Maine, await the death of old Mrs. Jordan, whom none of them loves. She has a secret fondness for her youngest son Ben, the 'black sheep,' and he is summoned by Jane Crosby, a poor cousin and household servant, who is in love with him. Jane's influence over Mrs. Jordan is disliked by the older son, Henry, his mean wife Emma, and vain step-daughter Nettie, and by the widowed daughter Sadie and her children, Ella and Orin. They plan to dismiss Jane on acquiring the estate. Mrs. Jordan dies before Ben arrives, risking arrest. The lawyer, Judge Bradford, discloses that Jane inherits the bulk of the estate, and she keeps Ben out of jail by paying bail for him, making him stay to help on the farm until his trial in the spring. He distrusts her, resents working for her, and is attracted by Nettie, who, like the others, becomes dependent upon Jane's generosity. Jane decides to transfer the estate to Ben, and the Jordans, reversing their attitude, flatter and befriend him. When Bradford reveals to Ben that Jane loves him, and shows him a letter from his mother, Ben breaks the 'ice' of his Jordan character, confesses his love for his mother, and asks Jane to marry him.

Ichabod, poem by Whittier (q.v.) published in 1850. In quatrains of alternate four-and two-stress lines, the work, whose Hebrew title means 'inglorious,' expresses the disappointment of the antislavery factions when Webster supported the Compromise of 1850 in his Seventh of March Speech. In 'The Lost Occasion' (1880), Whittier, praising Webster's 'nobler self,' condones his 'sad concessions' in this episode.

Ichabod Crane, hero of *The Legend of Sleepy Hollow* (q.v.).

Idiot's Delight, play by Robert Sherwood (q.v.), produced and published in 1936, was awarded the Pulitzer Prize.

At a resort hotel in the Italian Alps, 'in any imminent year,' several foreign travelers are detained because the near-by frontiers have been closed. Among them are Harry Van, an American vaudeville promoter, and his troupe known as 'Les Blondes'; the Cherrys, a honeymooning English couple; Dr.Waldersee, a German scientist who is working on a cancer cure; Quillery, a radical French pacifist; and Achille Weber, a munitions manufacturer, and his Russian mistress Irene. Harry recognizes the exotic Irene as a vaudeville performer with whom he once had a casual love affair in Omaha, although she denies this and maintains an affected pose. The outbreak of a world war is announced, and Quillery, learning that planes from a local base have bombed Paris, delivers a violent patriotic outburst and is arrested and shot. Irene tells Weber 'the truth' concerning his responsibility for death and destruction; this he cannot forgive, and the following day he refuses to endorse her questionable passport. Waldersee abandons research to join the 'obscene maniacs' at home, Cherry goes to join the army, and even Dumptsy, the gentle little waiter, appears in uniform. Only Irene cannot cross the frontier, but, when she confesses to Harry that she did know him, 'slightly, in Omaha,' he suddenly decides to remain with her, and they are trapped when the hotel is destroyed during an air raid.

If, Yes, and Perhaps, tales by E.E.Hale (q.v.).

IK MARVEL, pseudonym of D.G.Mitchell (q.v.).

Illinois Monthly Magazine, The (1830–37), edited and mainly written by James Hall (q.v.), was the first literary periodical west of Ohio. In 1832, when Hall moved to Cincinnati, he changed the title to *The Western Monthly Magazine* and continued it as a dignified literary journal and local review. His editorship ended in 1836.

Illumination, see *Damnation of Theron Ware*.

Illustrious Providences, see *Remarkable Providences*.

Imagism, poetic movement of England and the United States, flourished from 1909 to 1917. Its credo, expressed in *Some Imagist Poets* (1915), included the use of the language of common speech, precision, the creation of new rhythms, absolute freedom in choice of subject matter, the evocation of images in hard, clear poetry, and concentration. Originating in the æsthetic philosophy of T.E.Hulme, the movement soon attracted Ezra Pound, who became the leader of a small group opposed to the romantic conception of poetry and inspired by Greek and Roman classics and by Chinese, Japanese, and modern French poets. In the U.S., the group was represented in *Poetry: A Magazine of Verse* by Pound, H.D., John Gould Fletcher, and Amy Lowell, and by such English poets as F.S.Flint, Richard Aldington, and D.H.Lawrence. Pound collected some of their work in *Des Imagistes: An Anthology* (1914), after which his interest began to wane; Amy Lowell then assumed active leadership, advocating that the group subscribe to a fixed program and hold together for at least three years. Under her guidance were published several anthologies, all entitled *Some Imagist Poets*.

IMLAY, GILBERT (*c.*1754–1828?), Revolutionary War captain, adventurer, and author of *A Topographical Description of the Western Territory of North America* (1792) and *The Emigrants* (3 vols.,1793), a sentimental romance of the frontier near Pittsburgh, which, in addition to its adventurous quality, champions such social reforms as divorce and the rights of women. During his later life in Europe he lived for a time with Mary Wollstonecraft.

Imp of the Perverse, The, story by Poe (q.v.), published in *Graham's Magazine* (1845). A condemned murderer explains his confession, which followed years of safe concealment, in terms of a perverse impulse, and states that perversity is an unrecognized major motive for men's actions.

Impending Crisis, The, tract by H.R. Helper (q.v.).

Impressionism, æsthetic movement in which the artist attempts to present the impressions an object makes upon him, rather than a realistic version of the object itself. Impressionists are thus more concerned with moods or sensations than with the observation of details. The name derives from the French school of painting of the late 19th century, whose exponents included Dégas, Monet, Manet, Renoir, and Pissaro, and which was brought to

the U.S. by such painters as J.A.Weir, Maurice Prendergast, and Childe Hassam, who were similarly concerned with transitory effects of light and with capturing a momentary luminous atmosphere. Their theories were taken over by writers, especially Baudelaire and other followers of Poe, and such symbolists as Mallarmé, who attempted to capture the fleeting impressions of a moment, or held that the personal attitudes and moods of an author were more important than any objective depiction of character, setting, and action. In music the leading impressionist is Debussy, whose American followers include such composers as Griffes and Loeffler. Impressionistic art was most influential at the end of the 19th century and during the early decades of the 20th, when its leading proponents in American criticism included Huneker, Vance Thompson, and G.J.Nathan. In poetry the movement is exemplified in such authors as Pound, Sandburg, Amy Lowell, Conrad Aiken, Marianne Moore, and Wallace Stevens, who were influenced by a mingling of trends, including Imagism (q.v.). Impressionists in prose include such diverse writers as Van Vechten, Huneker, Gertrude Stein, E.E.Cummings, and Thomas Beer. Expressionism (q.v.) is both an extension and a negation of this point of view.

In Abraham's Bosom, play by Paul Green (q.v.), produced in 1926 and published in 1927, when it won the Pulitzer Prize. It includes the earlier one-act plays, *Your Fiery Furnace* (1923) and *In Abraham's Bosom* (1924).

Abraham McCranie is the son of a Negro woman by her white master, Colonel McCranie, a North Carolina plantation owner. Raised by his aunt, Muh Mack, who has a typical pessimistic view of her race's status, Abraham is moved to passionate rebellion. His education is meager and his experience limited, but he dreams of wider opportunities for Negroes and attempts to found a school. Opposed by both whites and Negroes, he is driven from place to place after the death of his well-meaning father leaves him at the mercy of his cruel white half-brother, Lonnie. His marriage with Goldie McAllister is unfortunate, and he is disappointed in his son Douglas. Following years of wandering, Abraham returns to the plantation, intending to open a school. His plans are accidentally disclosed by Douglas, just released from prison, and Abraham is beaten and injured by a party of masked white men. Lonnie tells him his farm crop is to be seized, and Abraham, infuriated, kills him, but is shot by a mob as he shouts a defiant prophecy of freedom for his race.

In Dubious Battle, novel by Steinbeck (q.v.), published in 1936.

Jim Nolan, a young man whose 'whole family has been ruined by this system,' joins the Communist party in San Francisco. He meets Mac, who 'knows more about field work than anybody in the state,' Dick, a 'bedroom radical,' and Joy, an agitator who has been 'smacked over the head too much.' When Mac is ordered to Torgas Valley, where a strike of fruit pickers is expected, Jim accompanies him to be trained. At Torgas they meet Al Anderson, a 'sympathizer,' and go to the camp of the fruit tramps, where Mac wins the gratitude of the leader, London, by assisting at the birth of his daughter's child. When the strike begins, Mac advises London concerning methods, finds a camping place for the thousand strikers on the farm of Anderson's father, and summons Dick to provide supplies, as well as Dr. Burton, a 'fellow traveler,' who assumes charge of sanitation. The orchardists unsuccessfully attempt to bribe and intimidate London and his fellow chairman Dakin, but the morale of the strikers is maintained. Strikebreakers arrive from the city, and Joy, who has accompanied them, is killed by a vigilante's bullet. This is the first of the misfortunes, which Mac impersonally turns to use, including the stoppage of food supplies, the shooting of Jim and other pickets, newspaper attacks, unrest and espionage, and the destruction by vigilantes of Anderson's crop. Burton and Dick disappear, Al is injured, Dakin is arrested, and the strikers are driven off the farm and warned of an armed attack. After being wounded, Jim grows in assurance, and practically assumes leadership until he is led out of camp by a ruse and brutally murdered. In desperation, Mac places his friend's corpse on a platform and harangues the men: ' "Comrades! This guy didn't want nothing for himself—" '

In His Steps, novel by C.M.Sheldon (q.v.).

In Ole Virginia, six local-color stories by T.N.Page (q.v.), published in 1887.

'Marse Chan,' told in dialect by a Negro ex-slave, is a romance of the Civil War, concerned with a pair of aristocratic lovers separated by the political rivalry of their parents. The young man dies a hero in battle, and the girl dies of grief. ' "Unc' Edinburg's Drowndin'," ' also in dialect, is a similar tale of lovers parted by a family quarrel, which ends, however, with their reconciliation. 'Ole 'Stracted' tells of a slave who becomes 'distracted' when his wife and children are taken from him to be sold. Freed at the close of the war, he is obsessed by his desire to earn their freedom, and, after many years, having saved the exact amount, finds his son only to die in his arms. ' "No Haid Pawn" ' (No Head Pond) is a sensational tale of ghosts and horrors, set on a mysterious deserted plantation in the swamps. 'Polly' is the story of a hot-headed Virginia colonel, his love for his niece, whom he rears from infancy, his anger at her secret marriage, and their reconciliation at a Christmas feast.

In Our Time, 15 short stories by Hemingway (q.v.) published in France in 1924 and in the U.S. in 1925. Nearly all are concerned with life in the Middle West, but an ironic effect is obtained by the interpolation of brief passages describing European war and bullfight episodes.

'Indian Camp,' 'The Doctor and the Doctor's Wife,' 'The Three Day Blow,' and others, tell of the boyhood experiences of Nick, the author's counterpart, who grew up in the Great Lakes region, learning the bitter as well as the beautiful facts of existence through the work of his father, a physician, and through his association with Indian guides and their families. Such stories as 'Mr. and Mrs.Elliot,' 'Out of Season,' and 'Cross Country Snow' are brief, poignant tales of American expatriates in Europe and their complex loves and friendships. 'My Old Man' is the story of a boy's loyalty to his father, an American jockey forced to work in Europe because of unsportsmanlike conduct at home, and of the boy's disillusion following his father's death. The author's enthusiasm for sport and the American wilderness is shown in 'Big Two-Hearted River,' an account of a trout-fishing expedition.

In Praise of Johnny Appleseed, free verse poem by Vachel Lindsay (q.v.) published in his *Collected Poems* (1923). It celebrates the pioneering career of his favorite hero, John Chapman (q.v.), whom he considers as a symbol of the restless, creative American spirit. The work is in three parts: 'Over the Appalachian Barricade,' 'The Indians Worship Him, But He Hurries On,' and 'Johnny Appleseed's Old Age.'

In the Cage, novelette by Henry James (q.v.), published in 1898.

A girl telegraph clerk in a London department store despises her complacent fiancé, Mr.Mudge. Curious about the lives of her wealthy patrons, she is particularly fascinated by the liaison of Lady Bradeen and young Captain Everard, details of which are revealed through their frequent telegrams. Although she 'hates' the frivolous rich, she comes to have a tender interest in the affairs of Everard, and the two recognize a certain mutual understanding. When her friend Mrs.Jordan asks her to become a business partner, the girl postpones accepting either this offer or Mr.Mudge's proposal. She helps Everard to avoid a scandal by producing a copy of an intercepted telegram, and her brief association with him ends when Lord Bradeen dies and the lovers are able to marry. Mrs.Jordan's offer is withdrawn, and the girl quickly settles her problems by accepting Mr.Mudge.

In the Midst of Life, see *Tales of Soldiers and Civilians*.

In the Tennessee Mountains, eight local-color stories by Mary N. Murfree (q.v.) published in 1884 under her pseudonym Charles Egbert Craddock.

'Drifting Down Lost Creek' is the pathetic story of Cynthia Ware, a mountain girl whose lover is wrongfully convicted on a murder charge and sent to the penitentiary. She gathers evidence in his favor and a year later succeeds in having him pardoned, but, ignorant of her aid and fascinated by the outside world, he does not return. She never marries, and sees him only once again, ten years later, when he pays a brief visit to his birthplace, having become a successful machinist and married, although unhappily. 'A-Playin' of Old Sledge at the Settlemint' is concerned with the evil results of an epidemic of gambling in a mountain village. 'The Star in the Valley' is a poetic narrative of a girl too fine for her crude mountain environment, who seeks vainly to end

the murderous family feuds, and meets an early death, unappreciated save by an occasional visitor. 'Electioneerin' on Big Injun Mounting' tells of an attorney-general, born in a backwoods settlement, who nearly loses the vote of his native region for re-election because he is thought to have taken on 'airs.' The sentiment is changed by his act of generosity in refusing to prosecute a man who sought his life.

In Tragic Life, novel by Vardis Fisher (q.v.).

In War Time, novel by S.Weir Mitchell (q.v.).

Inchiquin, novel by C.J.Ingersoll (q.v.).

Independence Day, see *Fourth of July*.

Independence Hall, Philadelphia building, erected 1732–41, which houses the Liberty Bell and a small museum of historical objects. This national shrine was the meeting place of the second Continental Congress, the signers of the Declaration of Independence, and the Federal Constitutional Convention.

Independent, The (1848–1928), New York weekly periodical, was at first a religious journal affiliated with the Congregationalists. H.W.Beecher was the editor (1861–3), and when he was succeeded by his assistant, Theodore Tilton (1863–70), the latter made it a secular periodical interested in such reforms as woman suffrage, and drew contributions from Whittier, Lowell, Greeley, Mrs. Stowe, and Garrison. Under later editors, it became an interdenominational religious and literary organ, with contributions from Bryant, Longfellow, Holmes, Harte, Aldrich, J.W.Riley, Helen Hunt Jackson, and Hovey. It became active in political discussion, and, after absorbing *Harper's Weekly* (1916), printed many pictures of the European war. After several changes of ownership and policy, it was merged with the *Outlook*.

Independent Chronicle (1776–1819), published at Boston as a Whig newspaper favoring the Revolutionary cause. Early contributors included William Gordon, John Hancock, and Samuel Adams. After the war, it continued to oppose the Tories, favored France, denounced the Alien and Sedition laws, and advocated the War of 1812. It was merged with the *Boston Patriot*.

Independent Journal, see *New York Independent Journal*.

Independent Republicans, see *Republican Party*.

Index, The (1870–86), liberal socio-religious weekly journal, advocating religious emancipation, was affiliated with the Free Religious Association (q.v.). Contributors included C.P.Cranch, the elder Henry James, Elizabeth Peabody, Moncure Conway, T.W.Higginson, O.B.Frothingham, and L.M.Child.

Indian Bible, see *Eliot, John*.

Indian Burying Ground, The, poem by Freneau (q.v.), published in his *Miscellaneous Works* (1788). In ten iambic tetrameter quatrains, it portrays sympathetically the spirit of the nomadic Indian hunters, who were traditionally buried in a sitting posture with images of the objects they knew in life. Freneau's treatment of the immortal 'children of the forest' appealed strongly to Scott and Thomas Campbell, who echoed his images in their poetry.

Indian Princess, The; or, La Belle Sauvage, play by J.N.Barker (q.v.) produced and published in 1808. The first Indian play by an American to be performed and the first to use the story of Pocahontas, the play with its accompanying songs was called 'an operatic melo-drame.' It was adapted by an Englishman as *Pocahontas, or The Indian Princess* and was produced in London (1820). Based on Smith's *General History of Virginia*, it bathes its subject in a romantic atmosphere, and the characters are conventional types.

Indian Student, The, poem by Freneau (q.v.), published in his *Miscellaneous Works* (1788). A short piece in iambic tetramenter quatrains, it tells of Shalum, who was taken from his tribe on the Susquehanna to be educated at Harvard, but left civilization to die among his native woods.

Indian Summer, novel by Howells (q.v.) published in 1886.

Theodore Colville, a middle-aged Indiana publisher, goes to Florence for a vacation and there meets his boyhood acquaintance, Evalina Bowen, now a middle-aged widow, and her young friend, Imogene Graham. Imogene's sympathy is aroused when she learns that Colville had been disappointed in love, and her pity leads to their engagement. She then falls

in love with a young clergyman, Mr. Morton. When she finally recognizes her true feelings, she breaks the disparate bond with Colville, who marries Mrs. Bowen.

Industrial Workers of the World, see *I.W.W.*

Infidel, The, novel by R.M.Bird (q.v.).

INGERSOLL, CHARLES JARED (1782–1862), Philadelphia lawyer, member of Congress (1813–15, 1840–49), and author. Although his works are varied, and include *Edwy and Elgiva* (1801) and *Julian* (1831), dramas, two histories of the War of 1812, books of poetry, and works on political economy, he is best known for *Inchiquin, The Jesuit's Letters . . .* (1810), an anonymous novel purportedly by a Jesuit traveler in America who appreciates the native scene, and thus indirectly attacks the criticisms of contemporary English travelers. The scathing criticism of this book in the *Quarterly Review* (English) precipitated such defenses as Timothy Dwight's *Remarks on the Review of Inchiquin's Letters* (1815) and Paulding's *The United States and England* (1815).

INGERSOLL, ROBERT GREEN (1833–99), practiced law in Illinois and entered Democratic politics before the Civil War, in which he served as a colonel of cavalry and turned to the Republican party. In 1876 he nominated Blaine for the presidency with the famous epithet, 'the plumed knight' (q.v.). He is best known as 'the great agnostic,' because of his long campaign in behalf of freethinking, including celebrated antireligious lectures on 'Superstition,' 'The Gods,' 'Some Mistakes of Moses,' and similar subjects, criticizing theology and the Bible from a rationalist point of view. His lectures, which had an important influence on American thought during the late 19th century, were published in several collections, and his complete *Works* appeared in 12 volumes (1900).

INGRAHAM, JOSEPH HOLT (1809–60), born in Maine, became popular as a historical romancer with such thrilling tales as *Lafitte; or The Pirate of the Gulf* (1836); *Burton; or, The Seiges* (1838), an infamous portrait of Burr; and *Leisler; or, The Rebel and the King's Man* (1846). As an Episcopal clergyman in the South, Ingraham later wrote epistolary religious romances, including *The Prince of the House of David* (1855), concerned with the life of Christ; *The Pillar of Fire* (1859), the story of Moses; and *The Throne of David* (1860), telling of the land of Canaan to the time of Absolom's revolt.

PRENTISS INGRAHAM (1843–1904), his son, was a soldier of fortune and the author of more than 600 dime novels, some 200 of which have as hero his friend Buffalo Bill. He also wrote *Montezuma* and other popular plays.

Inheritors, The, play by Susan Glaspell (q.v.).

Injun Joe, character in *Tom Sawyer* (q.v.).

INMAN, HENRY (1837–99), son of the painter Henry Inman (1801–46), served in Indian campaigns in the West, engaged in journalism in Kansas, and wrote such accounts of the frontier as *The Old Santa Fé Trail* (1897), *The Great Salt Lake Trail* (1898), with financial help from W.F.Cody, and *Buffalo Jones' Forty Years of Adventure* (1899).

INNESS, GEORGE (1825–94), born near Newburg, N.Y., begar his artistic career as a romantic landscape painter in the vein of the Hudson River School. During the 1850's and 60's, such solidly painted canvases as *Peace and Plenty* foreshadow his best work in the simplification of forms, synthesis of composition, and richer tones. After 1870, details of form and local color were subordinated to atmospheric effect. His last paintings, such as *The Home of the Heron* (1893) and *Moonlight on Passamaquoddy Bay* (1893), were done from memory, and sentiment often dominates the solid structure, with forms being lost in a generalized vagueness.

Innocents Abroad, The; or, The New Pilgrim's Progress, travel narrative by Clemens (q.v.), published in 1869 under his pseudonym Mark Twain. It is based on letters written during 1867 to the San Francisco *Alta California* and the *New-York Tribune* and *Herald,* describing the tour of the steamship *Quaker City* to Europe, Egypt, and the Holy Land. In this autobiographical account, Clemens has an opportunity to ridicule foreign sights and manners from the point of view of the American democrat, who scorns the sophisticated, revels in his own national peculiarities and advantages, and is contemptuously amused by anything

with which he is unacquainted. Characteristic passages are concerned with the comical difficulties of 'innocent' tourists, their adventures among deceptive guides, inefficient hotels, and misunderstood customs; a comparison of Lake Como with Lake Tahoe, to the general advantage of the latter; a burlesque account of the ascent of Vesuvius; experiences of various Turkish 'frauds'; an awe-struck meeting with the Russian royal family; and a naïvely sentimental description of Biblical scenes in Palestine.

Inside of the Cup, The, novel by Winston Churchill (q.v.).

International Episode, An, novelette by Henry James (q.v.), published in 1879.

Lord Lambeth and his friend Percy Beaumont come to America for a visit and at Newport they meet Mrs.Westgate and her sister, Bessie Alden. The latter fascinates Lord Lambeth, being bold, intelligent, and typically American, and he is on the verge of falling in love with her when he is suddenly recalled to England. Later the situation is reversed, when Bessie and Mrs.Westgate visit London. The older woman discourages her sister from notifying Lord Lambeth of their arrival, but they meet accidentally, and Lambeth increasingly charmed by Bessie's independence and frankness, is about to propose to her. His mother and sister, alarmed, call on the Americans and make plain their disapproval of the match. Bessie keeps her own counsel, but, when Lambeth proposes, she surprises everyone by refusing him.

International Monthly Magazine of Literature, Art, and Science, The, (1850–52), was edited by R.W.Griswold, for the first six weeks as a weekly, and thereafter as a monthly competitor of *Harper's*, with which it was finally merged. Contributors included Bulwer, Thackeray, Dickens, R.H.Stoddard, Bayard Taylor, Hawthorne, and Simms.

IOOR, William (*fl.*1780–1830), South Carolina dramatist, whose plays included *Independence, or Which Do You Like Best, the Peer or the Farmer?* (produced 1805), a social comedy adapted from an English novel, praising America's unsophisticated virtues, and *The Battle of Eutaw Springs* (published 1807, produced 1813).

Iron Heel, The, novel by Jack London (q.v.) published in 1908.

Purportedly written in 1932, this 'Everhard Manuscript' tells of events supposed to take place between 1912 and 1918, when, by a process of evolutionary development, the great capitalistic monopolies of the U.S. band together in a fascistic organization, the Iron Heel, which seizes control of the country. Stamping out all democratic forms and free institutions, the Iron Heel creates a caste system with a plutocratic aristocracy at the top, supported by secret police, a military oligarchy, and a few powerful subsidized unions that aid in suppressing the majority of organized labor. Originally motivated by fear of the growing revolutionary Socialist party, the Iron Heel succeeds in driving the equalitarian movement underground, but there it continues to militate against the 'Oligarchs' and their barbarous tyranny. One of the Socialist leaders is Ernest Everhard, a Californian, whose wife Avis, converted by him to the cause, tells their story in this manuscript. For 20 years they maintain their secret, partially terrorist, organization, which averts war with Germany by a general strike in collaboration with German Socialist unions, instigates armed revolts, and in general advocates the use of force against force. The manuscript breaks off, following Everhard's execution, but footnotes written 700 years later inform the reader that the Iron Heel retained power for 300 years, was overthrown, and was succeeded by a golden age of collectivism.

Iron Woman, The, novel by Margaret Deland (q.v.).

Iroquois Indians, confederacy of warlike but highly cultured tribes in western New York (united *c.*1570), which consisted originally of Five Nations: Seneca, Cayuga, Onondaga, Oneida, and Mohawk. Among the chiefs who supposedly effected this league was the Mohawk immortalized as Hiawatha by Longfellow. The trade relations of the Iroquois with the Dutch led to their obtaining firearms, with which they became great conquerors of other tribes in the mid-17th century. During the French and Indian Wars they were allies of the British, and in the American Revolution most of the chiefs supported the Loyalists. The Tuscarora Indians joined the confederacy (1715), which became the Six Nations. Besides *Hiawatha* and the *Leather-Stocking Tales*, the Iroquois figure in such works as Alfred B.

Street's *Frontenac: or the Atotarho of the Iroquois* (1849), a metrical romance based on Frontenac's expedition of 1696 against the confederacy. Cadwallader Colden's *History of the Five Indian Nations* (1727) was the first careful study of the subject. Among later works, L.H.Morgan's *League of the Ho-dé-no-sau-nee, or Iroquois* (1851) superseded Schoolcraft's *Notes on the Iroquois* (1847).

Irrepressible Conflict, see *Seward, W.H.*

IRVING, JOHN TREAT (1812–1906), nephew of Washington Irving, whose urbane interest in the frontier he reflects in his *Indian Sketches* (1835), *The Hunters of the Prairie* (1837), and *The Hawk Chief: A Tale of the Indian Country* (1837). His magazine sketches on Dutch legends indicate a similar influence. Under the pseudonym John Quod he wrote *The Quod Correspondence* (1842), a novel concerned with legal affairs.

IRVING, PETER (1771–1838), older brother of Washington Irving, helped him in planning *Salmagundi*, the *History of New York*, and the *Tales of a Traveller*. His own writing is unimportant, although he was for a time a political journalist and member of literary society, and wrote such works as *Giovanni Sbogarro* (1820), a historical romance set in Venice. He edited the New York *Morning Chronicle* and *The Corrector*, to which his brother contributed.

IRVING, PIERRE MUNRO (1803–76), lawyer and author, graduated from Columbia (1821) and during his subsequent travels became the confidant of his uncle, Washington Irving, whom he visited in Spain (1827). *Astoria* (1836) was a result of their collaboration, and, during his uncle's residence at Sunnyside (1846–59), Pierre was his agent and secretary, and recorded their conversations. He was his uncle's literary executor, wrote the first biography, *The Life and Letters of Washington Irving* (4 vols.,1862–4), and edited *Spanish Papers and Other Miscellanies* (1866).

WILLIAM IRVING (1766–1821), his father, eldest brother of Washington Irving, contributed light satirical verse to *Salmagundi* (q.v.,1807–8). He was a moving spirit, with his brothers and brother-in-law, J.K.Paulding, in the informal literary group known as 'The Nine Worthies' or 'The Lads of Kilkenny' of 'Cockloft Hall.'

IRVING, WASHINGTON (1783–1859), was born in New York City, the youngest of 11 children of a wealthy merchant who had sided with the rebels in the Revolution. Precocious and impressionable, the boy was early influenced by the literary interests of his brothers William and Peter, but in 1798 concluded his education at private schools and entered a law office. His legal studies soon lost their appeal, although he continued in various offices until 1804, varying his occupation by a frontier journey (1803) through upper New York state and into Canada, and by writing for the *Morning Chronicle* and *The Corrector*, newspapers edited by his brother Peter. For the *Chronicle* (1802–3) he wrote the 'Letters of Jonathan Oldstyle, Gent.,' a series of youthful satires on New York society, which won him recognition. To restore his failing health and to further his education, he traveled in Europe (1804–6), where he collected material later used in stories and essays. Although he was admitted to the bar upon his return, he lost interest in the law and turned seriously to literature. *Salmagundi; or, the Whim-Whams and Opinions of Launcelot Langstaff, Esq., and Others* (q.v., 1807–8) is a series of satirical miscellanies concerned with New York society, of which the leading essays were written by Irving, his brothers, and their brother-in-law, J.K.Paulding, all members of the group known as the 'Nine Worthies of Cockloft Hall.' Federalist in politics, conservative in social attitude, and humorous in intention, these early essays represent the position and manner to which Irving was to cling throughout his career. He was now famous as author, wit, and man of society, and, to further his reputation, turned to the creation of the comic Dutch-American scholar, Diedrich Knickerbocker, on whose burlesque *History of New York* (q.v.) he was occupied until 1809. This work, called 'the first great book of comic literature written by an American,' although ostensibly concerned with the history of the Dutch occupation was also a Federalist critique of Jeffersonian democracy and a whimsical satire on pedantry and literary classics. Before its completion, Irving suffered a tragic loss in the death of his fiancée, Matilda Hoffman. According to sentimental biographers, who disregard later love affairs, he remained a bachelor to be faithful to her memory. Certainly he was profoundly

affected at the time. In spite of the success of the *History*, he deserted creative literature during the next six years, when he was occupied in business with his brothers, in collecting the poems of Thomas Campbell (1810), in editing the *Analectic Magazine* (1813–14), a popular miscellany of reprints from foreign periodicals; and in social and political activities in New York, Philadelphia, and Washington. Toward the end of the War of 1812, he served as an aide-de-camp to the governor, and in 1815 he planned a cruise to the Mediterranean with Decatur; but, when this became impossible, he sailed alone for Liverpool, to take charge of the family business there. During the next two years, he tried desperately to maintain the failing business, but in 1818 it went into bankruptcy, and he was forced to write for a living. He had already been impressed by the beauties of the English countryside as interpreted by the romantic poets, and, encouraged by Scott, now turned to writing his most successful work, *The Sketch Book* (q.v.,1819–20), containing familiar essays on English life, and Americanized versions of European folk tales in 'Rip Van Winkle' and 'The Legend of Sleepy Hollow' (qq.v.). As Geoffrey Crayon, the pseudonym by which the book was signed, Irving was now a celebrity, lionized in English and French society, and the intimate of such men as Scott, Byron, and Moore. In Paris (1820) he wrote plays with J.H.Payne (q.v.), a collaboration to which he occasionally returned for several years. *Bracebridge Hall* (q.v.,1822) is another book of romantic sketches, less important than *The Sketch Book*, but equally well received. Continuing his search for fictional materials, Irving now traveled in Germany (1822–3), spending the winter at Dresden, where he fell in love with an English girl, Emily Foster, who seems to have refused his proposal of marriage. After a year in Paris, he returned to England and published *Tales of a Traveller* (q.v.,1824), so adversely criticized that Irving was nearly discouraged from further literary activity. After two unproductive years in France, during which he is supposed to have vied with Payne for the affections of Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley, he became a diplomatic attaché in Spain (1826–9), living for a time in Madrid at the home of the bibliographer, Obadiah Rich and engaged in research for his scholarly but popular *History of the Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus* (1828), based principally on the work of the Spanish scholar Navarrete. This was followed by *A Chronicle of the Conquest of Granada* (q.v.,1829), and a 'Spanish *Sketch Book*,' *The Alhambra* (q.v.,1832), recounting Spanish legends and describing the famous monument. Irving was secretary of the U.S. legation in London (1829–32), and then returned to New York, after an absence of 17 years, to be welcomed enthusiastically as the first American author to achieve international fame. Again seeking picturesque literary backgrounds, he made an adventurous trip to the Western frontier. This was described in *A Tour on the Prairies* (q.v.), published as a part of *The Crayon Miscellany* (q.v.,3 vols.,1835). The Western tour resulted in two other works: *Astoria* (1836), an account of the fur-trading empire of John Jacob Astor, written with Pierre Irving (q.v.); and *The Adventures of Captain Bonneville, U.S.A.* (1837), a romanticized biography of the frontier soldier. After a few years at his home, Sunnyside (q.v.), during which he declined the nomination for mayor of New York City, and the secretaryship of the navy offered him by Van Buren, as well as giving up a plan to write a *Conquest of Mexico* in favor of Prescott, Irving returned to his favorite place of exile, becoming minister to Spain (1842–5). His position was made difficult by the Spanish insurrection (1843), and after his resignation two years later he spent a year in London on a diplomatic mission concerning the Oregon Question. Again at Sunnyside, he passed the remaining 13 years of his life in the company of his beloved nieces and innumerable friends, acknowledged as the leading American author, in spite of his waning powers, as evidenced in *Oliver Goldsmith* (1849) a biography of one of his literary masters; *A Book of the Hudson* (1849) and *Wolfert's Roost* (q.v.,1855), collections of sketches; *Mahomet and His Successors* (2 vols.,1849–50), conventional biographies; and the monumental *Life of Washington* (5 vols., 1855–9), planned as early as 1825, but completed in the last year of his life, just before his health finally failed. Bare of the graces of his early writing, this triumph of scholarship crowned an erratic career that seldom retained its literary focus for more than a few years at a time, but which served in many ways to con-

solidate the culture of the U.S. and Europe. Unlike his contemporary, Cooper, Irving saw the European past in an aura of romance, and, except for the gentle satire of his early works, consistently avoided coming to grips with modern democratic life. In most of his writing, graceful, humorous, and pleasant, he was a careful stylist in the tradition of Addison, Steele, and Goldsmith. He sought, both in method and in subject matter, the traditional, the romantic, and the picturesque.

IRWIN, WALLACE (1876–), born in New York, attended Stanford University (1896–9) and began his literary career as a San Francisco journalist. He wrote a number of humorous poems at this time, including *Love Sonnets of a Hoodlum* (1902), *The Rubaiyat of Omar Khayyam, Jr.* (1902), *Nautical Lays of a Landsman* (1904), and *Random Rhymes and Odd Numbers* (1906). While continuing his journalistic career in the East, he attained widespread popularity with his Hashimura Togo letters, ostensibly written by a Japanese, commenting on American politics and society, which were published in the *Letters of a Japanese Schoolboy* (1909) and *Mr. Togo, Maid of All Work* (1913). His later novels include *Seed of the Sun* (1921), dealing with the strife of Japanese and white farmers in California, and *The Days of Her Life* (1931), with a background of California history.

WILL[IAM HENRY] IRWIN (1873–), his brother, was born in New York, reared in the West, graduated from Stanford (1899), and became a New York journalist. He is the author of such books as *Old Chinatown* (1908); *A Reporter in Armageddon* (1918), on his experiences as a World War correspondent; *The Next War: An Appeal to Commonsense* (1921); *Christ or Mars?* (1923); *How Red Is America?* (1927); and *Propaganda and the News; or, What Makes You Think So?* (1936). He has collaborated on two plays, *The Thirteenth Chair* (1916), with Bayard Veiller, and *Lute Song* (1930), with Sidney Howard.

Isaac and Archibald, blank verse narrative by E.A.Robinson (q.v.), published in *Captain Craig* (1902).

The narrator tells how, as a small boy, he was taken by the old farmer Isaac to visit his lifelong friend Archibald. During the journey, Isaac confided his uneasiness about Archibald's failing health and competence, and also his mellow philosophy of life, based on honest emotion and sympathy. They arrive at Archibald's comfortable farm, to find its owner hearty and amiable. When Isaac walks out to inspect his friend's acres, Archibald confesses doubts of Isaac's health, and makes a like confession of simple faith in 'the light, my boy,—the light behind the stars . . . Live to see clearly, and the light will come.' The narrator reflects on this day, which has passed with his friends 'to the silence of the loved and well-forgotten,' and concludes reverently, 'They were old men, and I may laugh at them because I knew them.'

Isabel Archer, heroine of *The Portrait of a Lady* (q.v.).

Isadore, poem by T.H.Chivers (q.v.).

ISHAM, SAMUEL (1855–1914), painter and art critic, best known for his authoritative *History of American Painting* (1905).

Ishmael, the narrator in *Moby-Dick* (q.v.).

Isidro, romance by Mary Austin (q.v.) published in 1905.

During the Mexican rule of California, Don Isidro Escobar sets out for Monterey to fulfil his parents' vow that he shall serve the Church. He views this vocation with simple faith, although he is not prevented from having such adventures on the way as returning a flock of sheep to the shepherds of its murdered owner, leading to his being suspected of the crime; meeting the crafty trapper, Peter Lebecque, whose shy ward, El Zarzo (the Briar), becomes Isidro's companion; and saving the life of the renegade Indian, Mascado. At Monterey, he places himself in the hands of Padre Saavedra, who plans to train him as his successor. El Zarzo, actually the disguised Jacinta, long-lost daughter of the local Commandante, has fallen in love with Isidro, and remains to be near him. The innocent Isidro is imprisoned for murder, and, before Saavedra obtains his release, Jacinta is kidnapped by Mascado, who takes her to a mountain retreat. Awed by the girl's defiance, he does not harm her, and Isidro comes to the rescue. They return to the mission, where they are married to protect her name from scandal, but do not consummate the marriage because of Isidro's priestly vow. He is captured by Mascado and taken to a camp of renegade

Indians, while Jacinta goes to her father's home. The Commandante leads a force against the renegades, and Jacinta, learning of her husband's plight, goes to him. Mascado's men withstand the siege until the Commandante routs them by setting a forest fire. Isidro and Jacinta are saved, and, on their return to Monterey, he renounces his intention of becoming a priest. Their marriage is celebrated by the community, and the Commandante takes them to Mexico to live.

Israel Potter: *His Fifty Years of Exile*, romance by Melville (q.v.) published in 1855. It is largely based on an anonymous *Life and Remarkable Adventures of Israel Potter* (1824).

Israel Potter, a New England boy, after youthful experiences as farmer, surveyor, and peddler, becomes a sailor on whaling ships. He joins the Revolutionary army in time to participate in the Battle of Bunker Hill, but is captured by the British and taken to England. There he escapes, goes to London as a laborer, is befriended by rebel agents, and joins them in secret activities. Traveling between London and Paris, he meets Horne Tooke, Franklin, and John Paul Jones, and, becoming a friend of the last, takes part in naval affairs, including the battle between the *Bonhomme Richard* and the *Serapis*. In England again, Israel is associated with Ethan Allen, flees to London in fear of apprehension, and becomes a workman again, marrying and living in alternate want and moderate plenty. Finally, 45 years after his departure, he returns to America, infirm and impoverished, to seek a pension. He is refused, dictates his memoirs, and dies in poverty.

Israfel, poem by Poe (q.v.) published in *Poems* (1831) and several times revised in later editions. It is prefaced by an altered quotation from the *Koran*: 'And the angel Israfel, whose heart-strings are a lute, and who has the sweetest voice of all God's creatures.' In eight stanzas of great metrical variety, ranging from four- to two-stress lines, the poem contrasts the ideal dwelling-place of the angel with the poet's own 'world of sweets and sours,' and concludes that if they were to change places

> He might not sing so wildly well
> A mortal melody,
> While a bolder note than this might swell
> From my lyre within the sky.

It Can't Happen Here, novel by Sinclair Lewis (q.v.) published in 1935. It was dramatized by the author and John C. Moffitt (1936), for simultaneous presentation by all units of the Federal Theatre.

Doremus Jessup, liberal editor of a Vermont paper, is one of the few in his small town to oppose the nomination and election (1936) of his fellow townsman, Berzelius (Buzz) Windrip, to the presidency. Upon assuming office, Buzz, who is fascistic and dictatorial, obtains control of the legislature and judiciary, divides the U.S. into eight provinces governed by his henchmen, stifles labor unions, quells riots with machine guns, suppresses racial and political minorities, and jails all his opponents. Doremus is temporarily arrested, his press is taken from him, and his son-in-law is shot for defending him. Walt Trowbridge, an honest ex-senator who had been Buzz's rival for the presidency, flees to Canada, where he sets up a New Underground movement, which Doremus aids by secretly printing a paper in its favor. His socialist friend, Lorinda Pike, assists him, as do his daughter Sissy, her fiancé Julian Falck, and his elder daughter Mary, though his son is a supporter of Windrip's Minute Men. Julian joins the Minute Men to obtain information for Doremus, and Sissy for the same reason encourages the attentions of Shad Ledue, formerly Doremus's assistant and now a local leader for Buzz. The Minute Men nevertheless suspect Doremus, discover incriminating documents, and send him and Julian to a concentration camp. Sissy reports Shad's revelation of secrets to her to the local commissioner, and Shad is sent to prison, where he is killed by the men he has had arrested. Two years later, Buzz is deposed by his former friend Lee Saranson, who in turn is soon ousted by Secretary of War Haik. Through Lorinda's aid, Doremus escapes to Canada, where he joins Trowbridge and his many followers. During the war that Haik declares on Mexico (1939), he takes part in the widespread revolt, converted by necessity from his former liberalism to revolutionary activity.

Italian Father, The, play by William Dunlap (q.v.), produced in 1799 and published in 1810. Based on Dekker's *The Honest Whore, Part* II, the play deals with Michael Brazzo, who, disguised as a

serving-man, watches over his daughter, Astrabel, after he casts her off for having become the mistress of the worthless Beraldo. Beraldo's friend Hippolito converts Astrabel to a chaste life, but later, at the request of Brazzo, tries to undo his work in order to test her fidelity.

Ithuel Bolt, character in *Wing-and-Wing* (q.v.).

Ivory Tower, The, unfinished novel by Henry James (q.v.).

J

J.S. OF DALE, pseudonym of F.J.Stimson (q.v.).

Jack Cade, The Captain of the Commons, romantic tragedy in blank verse by R.T. Conrad (q.v.), produced in 1835. It was rewritten as *Aylmere; or, The Bondman of Kent* for Edwin Forrest (1852) and was published in both versions. The story is concerned with the Kentish rebellion of 1450, interpreted from a social and economic point of view, and takes liberties with history in the depiction of Jack Cade, or Aylmere, and his friends and enemies.

JACK DOWNING, pseudonym of Seba Smith (q.v.).

Jack Tier, novel by Cooper (q.v.).

JACKSON, ANDREW (1767–1845), 7th President of the U.S. (1829–37), was born in the backwoods country of South Carolina, and at the age of 13 participated in Revolutionary War battles. He was admitted to the bar in North Carolina (1787), in a western district that is now a part of Tennessee. He helped draft the constitution of Tennessee (1796), and served in Congress as a representative (1796–7) and a senator (1797–8), later becoming a judge of the state supreme court and major-general of the state militia. He took the side of Burr in the latter's trial for treason (1807), and retired to private life on his plantation until 1812. The following year he led the militia in the defeat of the Creek Indians at Talladega and at Horseshoe Bend in 1814, and then became a major-general in the U.S. army, capturing Florida and commanding the defense of New Orleans against the British. His spectacular victory in the Battle of New Orleans, although fought after the peace was signed, made him the hero of the War of 1812. In 1818 he again entered the military service, exceeding his orders in quelling the Seminole Indian rebellion, so that the U.S. became involved in serious troubles with Great Britain and Spain. He was nevertheless appointed military governor of Florida (1821), a post which he soon resigned. Considered the leading representative of the frontier spirit, Jackson was again elected to the U.S.Senate (1823–5), and in 1824 was a candidate for the presidency. His opponents were J.Q.Adams, W.H.Crawford, and Henry Clay; though Jackson received the largest number of electoral votes, there was no majority, and a congressional poll gave the election to Adams. Four years later, however, Jackson was swept into power by a popular vote based on his personal influence, expansionist policies, and advocacy of a protective tariff. He opposed Calhoun's doctrines of state rights and nullification, but also opposed the centralization of power represented by the Bank of the United States (q.v.), which he vehemently attacked. His stand on the bank question was widely popular among the people of the backwoods regions, who suspected banks as privileged institutions, and, despite his dictatorial attitude and employment of the spoils system in awarding patronage, he was re-elected by a large majority in 1832. His destruction of the Bank and his inflationary policy of distributing government funds among state banks helped cause the financial panic of 1837, which he bequeathed to his successor, Van Buren (q.v.). This and other aspects of the Jacksonian policies alienated former supporters, who formed the opposed Whig party, which was victorious in 1840. After he retired from the presidency, he spent his last years in comparative seclusion at his Tennessee home, the Hermitage.

JACKSON, DANIEL, see *Mitchell, Isaac.*

JACKSON, HELEN [MARIA] HUNT (1831–85), was born at Amherst, Massachusetts, and in 1863 began to write poetry for publication, which was collected in *Verses by H.H.* (1870) and *Sonnets and Lyrics* (1886). Later she wrote a travel book, children's books, many magazine contributions, and several novels. *A Century of Dishonor* (1881) is a historical account of governmental injustice in the treatment of the Indians, and her indictment was stated even more strongly in the romance, *Ramona* (q.v.,1884), inspired by her work in a government investigation of the Mission Indians. Her novel, *Mercy Philbrick's Choice* (1876), is said to be a fictional study of her friend Emily Dickinson. Many of her early writings were published under the pseudonym Saxe Holm.

JACKSON, THOMAS JONATHAN ('Stonewall' Jackson) (1824–63), born in West Virginia, graduated from West Point (1846), served in the Mexican War, and

taught at the Virginia Military Institute (1851–61). He was a little-known major in the Confederate army until the first Battle of Bull Run (q.v.,1861), when, according to General Barnard Bee, his brigade stood 'like a stone wall.' His brilliant campaign as commander in the Shenandoah Valley during the following spring is famous for its well-ordered strategy, and Jackson was subsequently successful in the Seven Days' Battles, the second Battle of Bull Run, at Harpers Ferry, Fredericksburg, and Antietam. His leadership, in collaboration with Lee, kept Union forces of superior strength from achieving any important goal, and he was the leading Southern hero by the time of his victory in the Battle of Chancellorsville (q.v.,May 1863), in which he was accidentally shot by his own troops. He figures in fiction in *The Long Roll*, Cooke's *Surrey of Eagle's Nest*, and other novels.

Jackwood, ABIMELECH, character in *Neighbor Jackwood* (q.v.).

Jacobin, name applied to extreme radicals in England and America, had its origin in the Société des Jacobins, the political club of the French Revolution which, though begun as a liberal organization, ended under the extreme revolutionary sway of Robespierre. In American politics at various periods the name was used as a derogatory appellation for those who were considered unduly liberal.

Jadwin, CURTIS, character in *The Pit* (q.v.).

Jalna, novel by Mazo de la Roche (q.v.).

Jamaica Funeral, The, poem by Freneau (q.v.), written during his residence in the West Indies (1776) and published in his *Poems* (1786). This bitter satire on the sensual, hypocritical clergy of the colonial church tells how a 'hectoring priest' beat a man at the funeral for objecting to his dunning the mourners for parish dues, and then without conscience glutted himself at the funeral feast.

JAMES, HENRY (1811–82), father of Henry James, Jr., and William James, was a lecturer and writer on religious, social, and literary topics. Born of a wealthy and rigidly orthodox family of Albany, New York, he revolted against Calvinism, and felt that the social order was unjust. An accident that happened to him as a schoolboy resulted in the amputation of a leg, and drove him further upon his mental resources. After his graduation from Union College (1830), he entered Princeton Theological Seminary (1835), but withdrew after two years, finding himself out of sympathy with orthodox theology. On a visit to England (1837), he became influenced by Robert Sandeman, a Scottish rebel against Calvinism, whose letters he edited (1838). During the 1840's and '50's, James lived in New York, and traveled abroad frequently, until in 1864 he settled in Boston. In the 1840's he was introduced to the doctrines of Swedenborg, and underwent a kind of religious conversion. Although he never literally embraced these doctrines, they affected his whole later thought and gave him a strongly mystical bias. He was a friend of Emerson and Carlyle, and frequently lectured on them. After 1847 he was an intimate of Parke Godwin, C.A.Dana, Albert Brisbane, and George Ripley, and found his social philosophy in the doctrines of Fourierism (q.v.). Most of his writings were devoted to expressing his religious doctrine, 'the immanence of God in the unity of mankind.' Among his books are: *Christianity the Logic of Creation* (1857); *Substance and Shadow; or Morality and Religion in Their Relation to Life* (1863); *The Secret of Swedenborg, Being an Elucidation of the Divine Natural Humanity* (1869); and *Society the Redeemed Form of Man, and the Earnest of God's Omnipotence in Human Nature* (1879). He figures in his son's books, *A Small Boy and Others* and *Notes of a Son and Brother.*

JAMES, HENRY (1843–1916), son of Henry James,Sr., was born in New York City, and, with his brother William and two other brothers, received a remarkably cosmopolitan eclectic education. The father, desiring his sons to be citizens of the world, believed that they should avoid forming definite habits of living or of intellect, until prepared to make wise choices of their own. Accordingly, Henry was privately educated by tutors until 1855, when the family went to Europe for a three-year stay. He also lived for a time in Newport, (1858, 1860–62), until he entered Harvard Law School (1862). After 1866, although he lived mostly in Europe, his American home was at Cambridge. His conception of himself as a detached spectator of life was maturing,

as was his idea that the American scene was hostile toward creative talent and offered no adequate subject matter. For the time being, however, he divided his interest between European and American materials. During the late 1860's, encouraged by Howells, C.E.Norton, and others, he wrote critical articles and reviews, exhibiting admiration for the technique of George Eliot, and also produced short stories, frequently showing the influence of Hawthorne, one of his masters; a realistic novelette, 'Watch and Ward' (*Atlantic Monthly* 1871; in book form 1878), concerned with a guardian who loves and marries his ward; and a farce, 'Pyramus and Thisbe' (1869). His first important fiction was 'A Passionate Pilgrim' (q.v.,1871), in which he deals with the first of his great themes, the reactions of an eager American 'pilgrim' when confronted with the fascinations of the complex European world of art and affairs. The author himself, during this period, was often a pilgrim to the transatlantic world, which he came to regard as his spiritual fatherland, moving there permanently in 1875. During a year in Paris, he associated with such masters of his art as Turgeniev and Flaubert, but after 1876 he made his home mainly in London, with which much of his writing is concerned. His first novel, following *A Passionate Pilgrim and Other Tales* (1875), his travel book *Transatlantic Sketches* (1875), and a translation from the German, was *Roderick Hudson* (q.v.,1876), concerned with the failure of an American sculptor in Rome, resulting from a lack of inner discipline. Other novels and tales of this early London period, when James's course of life was still for him a matter of doubt and self-questioning, include: *The American* (q.v.,1877), contrasting French and American standards of conduct; *The Europeans* (q.v.,1878), reversing the situation by bringing Europeans into a New England background; *Daisy Miller* (q.v., 1879), whose wide popularity is probably owing to its portrayal of a charming, ingenuous American girl; *An International Episode* (q.v.,1879), a novelette showing the reactions of Englishmen to the American scene and of an American heiress to aristocratic Britain; *The Madonna of the Future and Other Tales* (1879); and *Confidence* (1880), a romantic, melodramatic novelette about a group of expatriated Americans. In *Washington Square* (q.v., 1881), James again revealed American character, this time in its native environment, but after *The Bostonians* (q.v., 1886), a satirical novel of New England reformers and philanthropists, he devoted himself to British and continental themes. *The Portrait of a Lady* (q.v.,1881), the first of his mature masterpieces, is a triumph of his method of psychological realism, analyzing the relations of a young American woman with a group of Europeans and expatriated Americans, who objectify her conscientious moral attitude, her sensitive appreciation, and her endurance under suffering. In nearly all of James's fiction, the environment is one of affluence and leisure, in which the preoccupations are with manners and the appreciation of character and the arts, including that of conversation. He treats this society with an infinite refinement of particulars, and in a prose style considered to be unapproached in English for subtlety of phrase and of rhythm. Following *The Portrait of a Lady*, James temporarily turned from the writing of novels. He collected his fiction (14 vols.,1883), and published several new works: a dramatization of *Daisy Miller* (1883); *The Siege of London* (q.v., 1883), short stories; *Portraits of Places* (1883), a travel book; *Tales of Three Cities* (1884); *A Little Tour in France* (1885); and *Stories Revived* (3 vols.,1885), reprinting earlier tales. He returned to the novel with *The Princess Casamassima* (q.v.,1886), a melodramatic story of revolutionaries and lower-class life in London, told, as all of James's later fictions are, through the observations and reactions of one character, who usually remains outside the events. This was followed by *The Reverberator* (1888), a novelette concerned with American travelers on the continent; *The Aspern Papers* (q.v.,1888), a novelette which tells of the attempt of a critic to gain a celebrated poet's letters; *A London Life* (1889), short stories; *The Tragic Muse* (q.v.,1890), a novel dealing with the lives of artists in English society; *The Lesson of the Master* (1892), short stories; *The Real Thing and Other Tales* (1893); *The Private Life* (1893), and *The Wheel of Time* (1893), collections of tales. At this time he also wrote four comedies, collected in *Theatricals* (2 vols.,1894–5), but none of them was successful in the theater, owing perhaps to his essentially cerebral attitude toward life, his extreme refinement of motive and situation, and his un-

lifelike dialogue and inability to create dramatic simplifications. His next series of fictional works includes: *Terminations* (1895) and *Embarrassments* (1896), books of stories, the latter containing 'The Figure in the Carpet' (q.v.); *The Other House* (1896), an unsuccessful melodramatic novel; *The Spoils of Poynton* (q.v., 1897), a tragic novel of mean passions magnified by the excellence of their object, a household of precious objects of art; *What Maisie Knew* (q.v.,1897), a novel told through the medium of a little girl's mind; *In the Cage* (q.v.,1898), in which a telegraph clerk observes her aristocratic patrons; *The Two Magics* (1898), containing the fine tale of the supernatural, 'The Turn of the Screw' (q.v.); *The Awkward Age* (q.v.,1899), portraying a British society girl between adolescence and marriage; *The Soft Side* (1900), a collection of tales; *The Sacred Fount* (q.v., 1901), a novelette that seems to satirize the typical 'detached observer' of James's novels; *The Wings of the Dove* (q.v.,1902), another of his masterpieces in subtle character portrayal; *The Better Sort* (1903), short stories; *The Ambassadors* (q.v.,1903), a novel that shows the author's genius for formal structure, as well as his discernment of the values of Old World culture; and *The Golden Bowl* (q.v., 1904), his last completed novel, which also exhibits him at the height of his artistry. With the addition of two volumes of stories, *The Altar of the Dead* (1909) and *The Finer Grain* (1910), and two unfinished novels, *The Ivory Tower* (1917) and *The Sense of the Past* (1917), this completed his prolific output of fiction. He edited a second collection of his novels and tales (1907–9), which included the valuable critical prefaces, and other writings of his last decade include: *William Wetmore Story and His Friends* (2 vols.,1903); *English Hours* (1905), essays; *The Question of Our Speech, and The Lesson of Balzac* (1905), two lectures delivered in the U.S.; *The American Scene* (q.v.,1907), a descriptive work written after a long journey through the U.S.; *Views and Reviews* (1908), essays; and the autobiographical books, *A Small Boy and Others* (q.v.,1913), *Notes of a Son and Brother* (q.v.,1914), and *The Middle Years* (1917). He also returned to playwriting, but of three plays only *The High Bid* was produced (1908). These last years were troubled ones, saddened by deaths, including that of his brother William, and at the outbreak of the First World War he was particularly agitated. Unable to show his allegiance to the Allied cause in any other way, he became a British citizen in 1915. Throughout his literary career, he was strongly conscious of the formal and theoretical phases of his work, and wrote much criticism of his own practice and that of other masters of fiction. These critical writings, sufficient in themselves to establish an author's reputation, were published in *French Poets and Novelists* (1878); *Hawthorne* (1879); *Partial Portraits* (1888), including an essay on 'The Art of Fiction'; *Picture and Text* (1893); *Essays in London and Elsewhere* (1893); *Notes on Novelists* (1914); *Within the Rim and Other Essays* (1918); and *Notes and Reviews* (1921). Thus he fulfilled his cosmopolitan destiny, detached even from the art that absorbed him, for his self-judgements are as subtle and well formed as is the substance of his fiction. His artistry was conscious at every point, and he paid the penalty of his intellectual attitude, in later life seeming to have lost contact with the facts and values of normal living. His eminence in the realm of his choice, however, is unquestioned, as is his influence in the history of the novel, in which he was a pioneer of psychological realism and formal architectonics, and the master of a rich, highly complex prose style and an extremely sensitive apprehension of values of character.

JAMES, Jesse [Woodson] (1847–82), born and reared on a Missouri farm, joined the Quantrill gang during the Civil War, and afterward, with his brother Frank (1843–1915), led what became the most notorious band of robbers in U.S. history. Their field of operations included several midwestern states, and they executed daring and melodramatic robberies of banks and railroad trains throughout the 1870's, causing many deaths. Public sentiment was strongly in favor of the brothers, Jesse especially having become a hero during his lifetime, but a large reward was offered for their capture dead or alive, and Jesse, who was in hiding under the alias Thomas Howard, was killed by one of his accomplices, Robert Ford. Frank, never convicted, gave up his life of crime to become a respectable farmer. As a sort of American Robin

Hood, Jesse James is the hero of a popular ballad, several dime novels, and many folk tales, as well as a play, *Missouri Legend* (1938).

JAMES, MARQUIS (1891–), journalist and popular though sound biographer, author of the rapidly moving narratives, *The Raven: A Biography of Sam Houston* (1929, Pulitzer Prize); *Andrew Jackson: The Border Captain* (1933); and *Andrew Jackson: Portrait of a President* (1937).

JAMES, THOMAS (1782–1847), pioneer trader of Santa Fé, is remembered for his *Three Years Among the Indians and Mexicans* (1846).

JAMES, WILLIAM (1842–1910), son of Henry James,Sr., was born in New York City, and spent his boyhood, with his brother Henry, in private study in Europe and at Newport. In 1860–61 he tested one of his apparent aptitudes by studying painting under W.M.Hunt at Newport, but abandoned this career to study at Lawrence Scientific School, Harvard (1861–4) and then at Harvard Medical School, which he left to accompany Agassiz on an expedition to collect zoological specimens in Brazil (1865–6). After another year in the Medical School, and a year abroad, he received his M.D. (1869). Physical weakness and a nervous condition that prevented his entering practice or laboratory research caused a period of pessimistic self-doubt, which ended in 1870, partly owing to his reading of Renouvier, whose psychological theories convinced him of the possibility of moral freedom. His long career of teaching at Harvard began in 1872, when he became an instructor in physiology. This work led him into problems of psychology and philosophy, and he soon became interested in the hypotheses of Darwin and Spencer, in 1879 commencing a course on 'The Philosophy of Evolution.' He had already transferred his instruction to the department of philosophy, and in 1876 had inaugurated a pioneering laboratory of psychology. From the year of his marriage (1878) until 1890, James's chief occupation outside of his teaching was the writing of *The Principles of Psychology* (1890; abridged as a school text, 1892). This 'positivistic' treatise, carefully documenting contemporary psychological knowledge and embodying its author's discoveries and hypotheses, remains a classic text, although somewhat superseded by later investigations, which it helped to inspire. Among the chapters previously published in periodicals is 'What Is an Emotion?' (*Mind*, 1884), first stating the so-called James-Lange theory, which suggests that emotions do not cause behavior, but are, rather, collateral results of the same bodily reactions. James's many trips to Europe and close association with leading continental psychologists and philosophers influenced his entry into the wider realm of philosophic problems. During the '80's and '90's, he was also active in the Society for Psychical Research, increasing the prestige of this organization, and reinforcing his own impartial speculative attitude. Other activities demonstrating his altruistic idealism and championing of truth regardless of its source included opposing legislative discrimination against Christian Scientists and Spiritualists, campaigning against the Spanish-American War and other imperialist policies of the U.S., advocacy of temperance though not of prohibition, and criticism of the Dreyfus case. At the same time he was publishing many lectures and articles on philosophic subjects, and in 1897 issued *The Will to Believe* (q.v.), a collection of essays defining his position as a 'radical empiricist' and asserting the right to accept metaphysical hypotheses on grounds beyond the possibility of experimental proof. A lecture tour in 1896, made to spread these and similar ideas among influential audiences, resulted in the publication of *Talks to Teachers on Psychology; and to Students on Some of Life's Ideals* (1899), while another phase of his interest in human values appears in *Human Immortality: Two Supposed Objections to the Doctrine* (1898), defending the possibility of life after death. James's international reputation was further strengthened in his appointment as Gifford Lecturer on Natural Religion at the University of Edinburgh (1901–2). There he delivered the two series of lectures printed in *The Varieties of Religious Experience* (q.v., 1902), in which he considers religion as an area of psychological facts, and treats it, in his brilliant expositional style, from the points of view of science and common sense. He indicates the practical values of religious belief in terms of action and of happiness, and concludes with a statement of his personal dualistic belief. As early as

1898, while lecturing at the University of California, James had used the term and concept of 'pragmatism,' adopted from C.S.Peirce (q.v.), to express his philosophic attitude. During the intervening years, he continued to develop this concept of the mind and its relation to action, and in *Pragmatism* (q.v.,1907) he defined and amplified this eminently modern philosophic position, according to which an idea has meaning only in relation to its consequences in the world of feeling and action. This pragmatism, differing from that of Peirce, immediately won followers, including John Dewey, but also precipitated attacks, which were answered by James in *The Meaning of Truth* (q.v., 1909). He had retired from Harvard (1907), but during his last years continued to write and to lecture, and was honored as the foremost American philosopher of his time. His late and posthumous publications include: 'The Energies of Men' (1907) and 'The Moral Equivalent of War' (1910), expressing his abhorrence of warfare and proposing a substitute, the conscription of youth for projects of manual labor in order to secure discipline and liberate the martial impulses; *A Pluralistic Universe* (1909), defining his metaphysical tenets, in a series of lectures delivered at Oxford in 1908; *Some Problems of Philosophy. A Beginning of an Introduction to Philosophy* (1911), edited by H.M.Kallen; *Memories and Studies* (1911), edited by his brother Henry; *Essays in Radical Empiricism* (1912), edited by R.B.Perry; *The Letters of William James* (2 vols.,1920), edited by his son Henry; and *Collected Essays and Reviews* (1920), edited by Perry. A sketchy biography is contained in his brother's *A Small Boy and Others* and *Notes of a Son and Brother*, and Santayana's *Character and Opinion in the United States* includes a study of James and his philosophy.

JAMES, Will[iam Roderick] (1892–), cowboy author and illustrator, whose popular tales of Western life include: *Cowboys, North and South* (1924); *The Drifting Cowboy* (1925); *Smoky* (1926); *Cow Country* (1927); *Sand* (1929); and *Sun-Up* (1931). His autobiography was published as *Lone Cowboy: My Life Story* (1930).

JAMESON, John Franklin (1859–1937), professor of American history at Johns Hopkins, Brown, and the University of Chicago, was chief of the division of manuscripts at the Library of Congress (1928–37), and author of a *History of Historical Writing in America* (1891), *Dictionary of United States History* (1894), and *The American Revolution Considered as a Social Movement* (1926).

Jamestown, capital of Virginia (1607–98), situated on what is now an island but was formerly a peninsula in the James River, about 40 miles above Norfolk. The first permanent English settlement within the boundaries of the present U.S., Jamestown was founded (May 13, 1607) on what may once have been the site of a Spanish colony, by some hundred colonists under the command of Sir Christopher Newport. During the winters of 1608 and 1609, the colony was threatened with extinction by disease, starvation, and Indian attacks, and it was preserved only by the leadership of such men as John Smith (q.v.). Fear of Spanish attack was also almost constant. Newport, Sir Thomas Gates, and Sir George Somers reached Jamestown with 150 colonists (1610), but found conditions so deplorable that they were about to give up the settlement. Lord De la Warr arrived unexpectedly at this juncture, bringing more colonists and supplies, and hope was renewed. In 1611, 650 additional colonists were brought. The rapid expansion of tobacco culture soon made the community self-supporting. An outstanding example of the acceptance of the whites by the Indians is the marriage of Pocahontas (q.v.) to John Rolfe. The first legislative assembly in America was held at Jamestown in 1619, and Negro slavery was introduced on this continent in the same year. The town never became prosperous, and it was frequently destroyed by fire, being deliberately fired by the insurgents during Bacon's Rebellion (1676). It was abandoned after Williamsburg became the capital (1699), and its buildings fell into ruin, although they were partially restored (*c.* 1900). The Jamestown Tercentennial Exposition was held at Hampton Roads (1907).

Jane Talbot, novel by C.B.Brown (q.v.).

Janet March, novel by Floyd Dell (q.v.).

Janice Meredith, novel by P.L.Ford (q.v.), published in 1899.

Coquettish Janice and her family are involved in the major events of the Revo-

lutionary War. Patriotic Colonel John Brereton finally wins her, after the capricious heroine has captivated many soldiers of both armies. Washington, Hamilton, and others are vividly sketched, and the general atmosphere seems more real than the hero and heroine.

JANVIER, THOMAS ALLIBONE (1849–1913), born in Philadelphia, traveled widely in Mexico and France, which formed the backgrounds for his fiction, including: *The Aztec Treasure-House* (1890), a story of an archæologist's adventures in Mexico; *Color Studies* (1885), sketches of life in Mexico and in Greenwich Village during the 1880's; *Stories of Old New Spain* (1891); *The Uncle of an Angel* (1891) and *The Passing of Thomas* (1901), collections of stories satirizing Philadelphia conservatism through the eyes of a young girl; *From the South of France* (1912), stories of modern Provence; and *At the Casa Napoléon* (1914), stories of people who lived at a small New York hotel.

Jarnegan, novel by Jim Tully (q.v.).

JARVES, JAMES JACKSON (1818–88), born in Boston, during his wide travels became editor of the *Polynesian* (1840–48), the first Hawaiian newspaper. His books include: *Scenes and Scenery in the Sandwich Islands* (1843), *Scenes and Scenery in California* (1844), *Parisian Sights* (1852), *Italian Sights* (1856), and several works of art criticism, mainly dealing with Italian painting, of which he formed a great collection.

Jasper Western, character in *The Pathfinder* (q.v.).

Java Head, novel by Hergesheimer (q.v.), published in 1918.

During the great period of Salem's trade with the Orient, Jeremy Ammidon, shipowner and retired captain, lives at the home he has named Java Head, to symbolize 'the safe and happy end of an arduous voyage.' His son William manages the firm, and another son, Gerrit, becomes a captain in the trade. Gerrit returns from one of his voyages with an aristocratic Chinese wife, Taou Yuen, who in straitlaced Salem is received with kindness only by Rhoda, William's gracious wife. Before this voyage, Gerrit had been in love with Nettie Vollar, but had not married her because she was disapproved of by his family. Nettie's degenerate uncle, Edward Dunsack, formerly an agent in China, becomes infatuated with the unhappy Taou Yuen and plans to use his niece's love for Gerrit to win the Chinese woman for himself. He contrives to have her visit Nettie, who is ill, and locks himself in a room with her. Taou Yuen, who knows by now that she can never understand Salem or her husband, and who dreads Edward's touch, kills herself by swallowing opium. Jeremy dies of apoplexy when he discovers that William has engaged the firm in the opium trade, and Gerrit, always feeling more sympathy for outcasts than for his own people, marries Nettie and takes her to sea with him.

JAY, JOHN (1745–1829), New York lawyer, statesman, and jurist, was educated at King's College, and, admitted to the bar (1768), practiced in partnership with Robert Livingston. A conservative aristocrat, allied with the commercial class, he opposed separation from England until the Declaration of Independence, but thereafter was a leading supporter of the Revolutionary cause. As a member of the two Continental Congresses, he was the author of the celebrated *Address to the People of Great Britain* (1774) and of appeals to Canada, Jamaica, and Ireland to join in the rebellion (1775). He helped to draw up the New York state constitution, and served as chief justice of the state, and later as governor (1794–1801). His federal appointments included: minister to Spain (1780–82); peace commissioner to England (1782); secretary of foreign affairs (1784–89); and first chief justice of the U.S.Supreme Court (1789–95). His five essays in *The Federalist* (q.v., 1787–8), numbers 2,3,4,5, and 64, deal with the Constitution in relation to foreign affairs, and are marked by a lucid style and reasoning power. He is also noted for the so-called Jay's Treaty with England, concluded in 1794, which provided for the British evacuation of northwestern posts, allowed Loyalists full protection in becoming American citizens, permitted unrestricted navigation of the Mississippi, and authorized trade between the U.S. and Canada and equal privileges for vessels of both nations in Great Britain and the East Indies, while restricting American trade in the West Indies. Considered unduly favorable to British interests, the treaty aroused indignant protests in the U.S., but was finally ratified.

Jayhawkers, lawless marauders who engaged in battles for Free Soil in the Kansas-Missouri border war (1857-9). Sinclair Lewis and Lloyd Lewis have written a play about the period, *Jayhawker* (1934).

Jazz, term of uncertain, possibly Negro, origin, applied to a type of dance music characterized by pronounced syncopation, interpolated melodic figures, and unconventional, often grotesque, instrumental effects. The rhythm is the contribution of the popular ragtime, which developed out of the Afro-American slave music, and is also characterized by extemporization during a 'break' or the gap between the ending of one eight- or sixteen-measure section and the next. The ragtime foundation of a syncopated air is brought into strong relief by a regular beat in the bass in common time. The striking and characteristic tone color of jazz orchestra music is the result of the predominance of brass wind instruments, among them the saxophone. The Negro 'blues' (q.v.), with their combination of melancholy and humor, have contributed much of the bitter-rueful flavor and also the well-known 'blue note.' The 'Rhapsody in Blue' by George Gershwin (q.v.) is a notable outgrowth of this influence. Among the outstanding jazz composers are Irving Berlin (q.v., 'Alexander's Ragtime Band'), Ferde Grofé ('Broadway at Night'), W.C.Handy (q.v., 'The St.Louis Blues'), Cole Porter ('You're the Top'), and Jerome Kern (q.v., 'Ol' Man River'). The prominent jazz orchestra conductors include Paul Whiteman, Cab Calloway, Ted Lewis, Guy Lombardo, Duke Ellington, Benny Goodman, and Rudy Vallee. A recent development of jazz is the so-called 'swing' music. This derives its peculiar effect from the contrast between an unvarying, strongly rhythmic basis, and a highly decorated, arabesque, frequently improvised melodic part, performed usually by one instrument, or by several in turn. The term Jazz Age is often applied to the 1920's.

JEFFERS, [John] Robinson (1887–), born in Pittsburgh, traveled widely on the continent until his family settled in California when he was 16. After graduation from Occidental College (California) and desultory graduate study of medicine and other subjects in the U.S. and abroad, he settled with his wife in the town of Carmel (q.v.), whose surrounding country forms the setting of his poetry. After two undistinguished volumes, *Flagons and Apples* (1912) and *Californians* (1916), containing his first California narratives and descriptive pieces, he published *Tamar and Other Poems* (q.v., 1924), including two long works, whose title narrative, adapting the Biblical legend to modern experience in a California scene, and 'The Tower beyond Tragedy' (q.v.), his own version of the legend of Orestes and Electra, in which Orestes finds salvation from the madness of self-centered humanity by 'falling in love outward' with his nonhuman surroundings. Other characteristic poems in the volume include the lyric 'Night' (q.v.); 'Boats in a Fog' and 'Granite and Cypress,' expressing Jeffers's love of the spare, enduring beauty of the rocky coast on which he makes his home; 'Shine, Perishing Republic,' advising his sons to 'be in nothing so moderate as in love of man . . . When the cities lie at the monster's feet there are left the mountains'; 'The Coast-Range Christ,' a tragically ironic narrative of California mountain people at Christmas; and the apostrophe 'To the Stone-Cutters,' comparing the poet's work to that of the stone-cutter, both being conscious of ultimate futility, 'Yet stones have stood for a thousand years, and pained thoughts found The honey peace in old poems.' These were reprinted with additions, the following year, in *Roan Stallion, Tamar, and Other Poems,* the new title piece (q.v.) being an allegorical legend of pantheism. In *The Women at Point Sur* (q.v.,1927), through the mad preacher, Barclay, the poet again sets forth his conception of the need 'to uncenter the human mind from itself,' while yet indicating the dangerous aspects of action in accordance with such a philosophic attitude. 'Cawdor' (q.v.), in *Cawdor, and Other Poems* (1928), is a bitterly tragic narrative, in which Jeffers considers 'human affairs . . . looking eastward against the earth, reclaiming a little dignity from that association . . .' Also included in this volume is 'Hurt Hawks,' expressing the poet's concept of 'the wild God of the world . . . intemperate and savage . . . beautiful and wild . . .,' whom the 'communal people' have never known, or have forgotten. In 1929 he published *Dear Judas, and Other Poems,* whose title piece retells the story

of the betrayal of Christ, describing Judas's motive as one of love. 'The Loving Shepherdess,' in the same collection, is a parable of self-sacrifice in its story of a girl who, knowing herself doomed to die, wanders over the countryside, devotedly caring for the dwindling flock of her dead father. *Descent to the Dead* (1931), written in England and Ireland, is a volume of elegies in the manner and often in the mood of their Greek models, forming a concise expression of Jeffers's poetic themes, the desire for an end of life, the breaking of the human mold, and the escape to nonhuman nature. In *Thurso's Landing, and Other Poems* (1932), the title narrative (q.v.) describes the fatally violent struggle of a California farmer and his rival for his wife's love. *Give Your Heart to the Hawks, and Other Poems* (1933) is a collection whose title narrative (q.v.) deals with the poet's frequent subject of a man who violates a human code, in this case by murdering his brother, and then finds himself alone in a world, beyond humanity, which is inhabited only by the fierce hawks of freedom and soaring flight. The title narrative of *Solstice, and Other Poems* (1935) is a retelling of the Medea legend, while 'At the Birth of an Age,' in the same volume, is a drama set in the time of Attila. In *Such Counsels You Gave to Me, and Other Poems* (1937), the title narrative (q.v.) is a modern tragedy based on the old Scottish ballad, 'Edward, Edward.' *The Selected Poetry of Robinson Jeffers* was issued in 1938. While endowing his plots with a strongly realistic setting of the sheer granite cliffs, surf-beaten shore, and towering redwoods of the California coast, Jeffers has never obscured the symbolism in his use of this background. Accepting a scientific view of the universe, in which man appears to be of but trivial importance, he has made the core of his thought the renunciation of humanity and the reliance upon nature. Thus the melodramatic subjects of his narratives have an allegorical significance, and the frequent use of the incest theme symbolizes man regarding man exclusively, and leading himself to destruction. From this stems his intense revulsion from society, expressed in such statements as 'Cut humanity out of my being, that is the wound that festers.' He looks forward to the time when man will be driven from the universe, and the grass and the cliff will

> . . . enjoy wonderful vengeance and suck
> The arteries and walk in triumph on the faces.

In this profound contempt for 'the animals Christ was rumored to have died for,' and belief that solace will come to the earth only when, freed from humanity, it has attained a 'white and most clean, colorless quietness,' he finds war or any other negative force to be good, in that it cleanses civilization and leads back to 'the primal and the latter silences.'

JEFFERSON, Joseph (1829–1905), Philadelphia-born actor, was prominent on the American stage for 71 years. Noted for his comic roles, he is primarily identified with the play, *Rip Van Winkle*, adapted with Boucicault in 1865, in which he continued to act for the remainder of his career. He wrote an *Autobiography* (1890).

JEFFERSON, Thomas (1743–1826), 3rd President of the U.S. (1801–9), was a member of a prominent Virginia family, studied at William and Mary, and practiced law (1767–74). After he entered the House of Burgesses (1769), he was almost constantly in the political service of Virginia and of the nation until his retirement from the presidency. At the outset he identified himself with the aggressive anti-British group, and he made an important contribution to the Revolutionary cause in *A Summary View of the Rights of British America* (1774), a brilliant exposition contending that Parliament had no authority in the colonies, whose only bond with England was allegiance to the same king. As a member of the Continental Congress (1775–6), he was almost wholly responsible for the spirit and phrasing of the Declaration of Independence (q.v.), his great monument in literature and political theory. In the Virginia House of Burgesses (1776–9), and as governor (1779–81), he attempted to translate the ideals of this document into reality, by advocating laws which would make impossible the maintenance of a landed aristocracy or an established church. His revision of the state laws and constitution embodied liberal policies, not all of which could be made effective, concerning education, religious freedom, economic equality, antislavery, and other humanitarian reforms. When the British invaded Virginia, he virtually resigned his governorship, intending to retire from public life, and used his leisure to write his *Notes on the State of Virginia* (q.v.). Again in the

Continental Congress (1783), he headed the committee that debated the peace treaty, suggested the plan of the present monetary system, and prepared a report (March 1784) that formulated the plan of government of western territories later embodied in the Ordinance of 1787. After traveling in Europe, and serving as minister to France (1784–9), he returned to the U.S. to become the first secretary of state (1789–94). His antagonism toward the attitude and policies of Hamilton, then secretary of the treasury, had already arisen in their differences over the new Constitution, which Jefferson opposed until the adoption of the Bill of Rights. Jefferson, as a thoroughgoing republican, feared that Hamilton's program would lead in the direction of monarchy. He championed state rights, individual liberties, and the ascendancy of the agrarian faction, all in opposition to the Hamiltonian attitude, and objected to the Bank of the United States, the protective tariff, and other measures that would ally the federal government with the moneyed interests. To further his views, which made him the leader of the anti-Federalist Democratic Republican party (q.v.) then in process of formation, he backed Freneau's *Federal Gazette*, which attacked the Hamiltonian *Gazette of the United States*. He retired from office (1793–6), but in 1796 was the Democratic Republican candidate for the presidency, and, running second to Adams, became Vice President (1797–1801). His most important contribution during this period was his drafting of the Kentucky Resolutions (q.v.,1798), complementing Madison's Virginia Resolutions in reply to the Federalist Alien and Sedition Acts. In 1800 Jefferson and Burr, both Democratic Republican candidates, received equal electoral votes for the presidency. In the congressional election to determine which should be chief executive, Hamilton placed his influence on the side of Jefferson, who was elected. During his two terms, he authorized the Louisiana Purchase, commissioned the expedition of Lewis and Clark, dispatched the naval force of Decatur against the Tripolitans, prosecuted Burr for his unwarranted and bellicose expedition into the Spanish Southwest, and was responsible for the Nonimportation Act and the Embargo Act in retaliation for foreign interference with American trade. These last acts impoverished sections of the country that had previously supported him, and revivified partisan opposition in New England, but his party remained in power long after his retirement, his immediate successors being Madison and Monroe, both his friends and protégés, whom he continued to advise. After he left the presidency, he was primarily interested in the University of Virginia, which he founded and planned as a modern, broad, and liberal institution of higher education. His designs for his home, Monticello (q.v.), and for the Virginia state capitol and part of Washington,D.C., stimulated the classical revival in U.S. architecture. Besides his importance in politics and political history, he further influenced American culture by his scholarship in various sciences and languages, and as a leading connoisseur and patron of the arts. He composed his own epitaph: 'Here was buried Thomas Jefferson, Author of the Declaration of American Independence, of the Statute of Virginia for Religious Freedom, and Father of the University of Virginia,' summing up his lifelong quest of liberty, political, religious, and intellectual.

Jefferson, TERRITORY OF, was established by local vote (1859) in what is now the state of Colorado. The provisional government was not approved, either by Kansas or the U.S., and two years later it was dissolved, upon the creation of Colorado Territory.

JEFFRIES, JAMES J. (1875–), heavyweight boxing champion of the world (1899–1905), won his title in a bout with Bob Fitzsimmons, and forfeited it by retiring.

JEMISON, MARY (1743–1833), 'the White Woman of the Genesee,' was captured by Indians from her western Pennsylvania home at the age of 15, and, developing a deep affection for them, married into the Delaware tribe and remained with them for the rest of her life. James E. Seaver's *A Narrative of the Life of Mrs. Mary Jemison* (1824) is the most popular of all Indian captivity accounts.

Jennie Gerhardt, novel by Dreiser (q.v.) published in 1911.

In Columbus, Ohio, Senator Brander falls in love with poverty-stricken Jennie Gerhardt. He seduces her, promising marriage, but suddenly dies. After the birth of her child, Vesta, Jennie goes to

Cleveland as a lady's maid, and there meets Lester Kane, son of a wealthy manufacturer. Unable to resist his domineering personality and kindness to her family, she leaves Vesta with her mother and accompanies him on a trip to New York. When they return, he wishes to marry her, but fears his family's anger, and instead establishes her as his mistress. For three years she conceals Vesta's existence from him, but even after he learns the truth they continue to live happily together. The Kanes discover the liaison, but Lester resists their attempts to end it until the death of his father, whose will provides only a small legacy unless he gives up Jennie. During a trip to Europe, Lester becomes increasingly aware of the girl's limitations, and resumes his friendship with Letty Gerald, a woman of his own temperament and status. Jennie learns of the provisions of the will and insists that Lester leave her. He provides her with a modest home, and marries Letty, soon regaining his former prestige in society and business. Vesta dies, but Jennie adopts two orphan children, and her love for Lester persists. When he falls ill during his wife's absence, he summons Jennie to confess that she has been his only real love, and she remains to nurse him until his death.

Jennifer Lorn, novel by Elinor Wylie (q.v.).

JENYNS, SOAME (1704–87), British politician and wit, attacked the doctrine of colonial nullification in *The Objections to the Taxation of Our American Colonies . . .* (1765), which claimed that the Parliamentary right to tax the colonies could not be negated by colonial charters, which derived from the crown, and therefore could not supersede acts of the whole legislature. James Otis's *Considerations on Behalf of the Colonies* (1765) was a reply.

Jerome, A Poor Man, novel by Mary Wilkins Freeman (q.v.) published in 1897.

Jerome Edwards, a New England boy, is left by his father's mysterious disappearance to provide for his mother and his sister Elmira. During the difficulties of his youth, he preserves pride and independence, refusing aid, and intent on paying his own way. He falls in love with a childhood friend, Lucina Merritt, and Elmira loves Lawrence Prescott, son of a wealthy doctor who is virtually dictator of the district, but marriage seems impossible for both of them. Disaster follows disaster; the mill on which Jerome has founded his hopes is destroyed by a flood, but he continues his labors. He receives a large inheritance, but gives it away in order to keep a promise. Finally Dr. Prescott permits his son to marry Elmira, and Jerome submerges his pride, proposing to Lucina although she has a fortune and he has nothing, only to find that her inheritance has actually been left her as a dowry, so that his arduous career is at last rewarded.

Jerry of the Islands, novel by Jack London (q.v.) published in 1917.

Jerry, an Irish setter pup, idolizes his master, Van Horn, who operates a ship to obtain indentured labor from the Solomon Islands. When Van Horn is killed by cannibals, Jerry is taken by the native chief and trained to act as a sentinel. He escapes to the jungle, and ends his quest for a white master when he is found by a California couple who are yachting in the South Seas. Following further adventures, they take Jerry back to the Pacific coast with them.

Jessel, MISS, character in 'The Turn of the Screw' (q.v.).

Jesuits, name given to members of the Society of Jesus, a religious order of the Roman Catholic Church, founded by Ignatius Loyola (1534). Originally conceived as a band of spiritual soldiers to convert the Moslems, the order has been distinguished for its missionary work and scholarship. The Jesuits were powerful in the Spanish, French, and Portuguese possessions in the Americas, and were associated with the Calverts in founding Maryland. Among the notable French leaders were Marquette and Jogues, among the Spanish was Kino, and the Belgian included DeSmet. The *Jesuit Relations*, translated by R.G.Thwaites (73 vols., 1896–1901), includes reports and narratives of the missionaries in New France. Among the learned institutions that they founded in the present U.S. are Fordham and Georgetown Universities. A famous historical account is Parkman's *The Jesuits in North America in the Seventeenth Century*.

Jethro Bass, character in *Coniston* (q.v.).

Jeunes, LES, see *Lark, The*.

JEWETT, SARAH ORNE (1849–1909), was born and reared in South Berwick, Maine, which she calls Deephaven in her stories. She was early stimulated by Mrs.Stowe's sympathetic depiction of her state's local color, and determined to follow her in recording the life of the dwindling farms and deserted, shipless harbors. Her keen perception of this life led to the acceptance of a story by the *Atlantic Monthly* when she was only 19. This was the first of the series published as *Deephaven* (q.v.,1877), which established her reputation, although she far exceeded it in her later writing. Her great friendship with Annie Fields brought her frequently to Boston, but she always returned to her native town to write her books. The most characteristic of these include: *A Country Doctor* (1884), a novel about a New England woman doctor and her struggles between love and her profession; *A Marsh Island* (1885), a novel depicting the love of a rich planter and the daughter of a New England farmer; *A White Heron* (1886), a collection of stories, in which the title piece deals with the conflict in the heart of a little girl between her adoration of a young ornithologist and her desire to protect the white heron for which he is searching; and further collections, *The King of Folly Island* (1888), *A Native of Winby* (1893), and *The Life of Nancy* (1895). Her masterpiece is *The Country of the Pointed Firs* (q.v.,1896), a series of closely knit sketches of a Maine seaport town, during the era of its decay from the grandeur of West Indian trading days. Her precise, charmingly subdued vignettes of the gently perishing glory of the Maine countryside and ports have won her a place among the most important writers of the local-color school, and she was a significant influence on the writing of Willa Cather, as the latter tells in *Not Under Forty*. In 1901 Miss Jewett turned to historical romance in *The Tory Lover*, concerned with a young American officer during the Revolution and his conflicting duty to his king and to his native land. Her poems were collected in *Verses* (1916), and she also wrote three books for children.

Jews, IN AMERICA, first arrived in small numbers during colonial times. Several Jews settled in New Amsterdam, and in the second half of the 17th century Newport, as later described in poems by Longfellow, became an important Jewish settlement, since Rhode Island was the only English colony offering complete religious toleration. During the 18th century, Jews settled in Pennsylvania because of the colony's liberal religious views, and began to settle throughout the colonies. Until 1815 nearly all were of Spanish and Portuguese extraction, and the majority, like Haym Salomon, who helped finance the Revolution, became financiers and merchants although there were such exceptions as Mordecai Noah. The large influx from Germany occurred after 1820, when there were only some 3,000 Jews in the U.S. In 1848 there were 50,000; in 1880, 230,000. Some 2,000,000 Jews emigrated after this time, mainly from Russia, Austria-Hungary, Poland, and Rumania. In 1930 there were 4,200,000 Jews in the U.S., of whom 1,765,000 lived in New York City, forming a large part of the population in the East Side, the Bronx, and Brooklyn, and engaging in such occupations as shopkeeping and the clothing industries. The many Jewish educational institutions include Hebrew Union College (Cincinnati, founded 1875) and Dropsie College (Philadelphia, founded 1907), and, mainly at New York, there has developed an American Yiddish culture, with a distinctive literature and theater. Wider in scope is their contribution to American civilization in general. The many Jewish authors and playwrights include F.P.Adams, Mary Antin, Shalom Asch, Joseph Auslander, Belasco, S.N.Behrman, Albert Bein, Bercovici, Bodenheim, Myron Brinig, John Cournos, Nathalia Crane, Babette Deutsch, Edna Ferber, Irving Fineman, Waldo Frank, Joseph Freeman, Michael Gold, Arthur Guiterman, Albert Halper, Moss Hart, Ben Hecht, Morris Hillquit, Fannie Hurst, Matthew Josephson, MacKinlay Kantor, Kaufman, Sidney Kingsley, Charles Klein, Komroff, J.H.Lawson, Emma Lazarus, Meyer Levin, Lewisohn, Walter Lippmann, Albert Maltz, Adah Menken, G.J. Nathan, Robert Nathan, Odets, James Oppenheim, Dorothy Parker, Elmer Rice, Morris Rosenfeld, Gilbert and George Seldes, Irwin Shaw, Horace Traubel, John Wexley, Anzia Yezierska, and Leane Zugsmith. Those who have been active in the development of Tin Pan Alley, motion pictures, and other popular entertainments include the Frohmans, the Shuberts, Sigmund Romberg, Irving Berlin, Douglas Fairbanks, Paul Muni, and many

other comedians, singers, musicians, and actors. In the field of serious music there have been such composers and instrumentalists as Gershwin, Gottschalk Goldmark, Kurt Weill, Copland, Harold Bauer, Alfred Hertz, Bruno Walter, Bloch, Menuhin, Heifetz, Elman, and the Damrosch family. Leaders of journalism include Ochs and Pulitzer, and among those prominent in organized labor have been Gompers and Meyer London. Jews in law and politics have included Judah P. Benjamin, Bernard Baruch, Eugene Meyer, Brandeis, Cardozo, Herbert Lehman, and Frankfurter. Among the names associated with business and finance are Seligman, Warburg, Lehman, Schiff, Strauss, Rosenwald, Guggenheim, and Morgenthau. The many Jewish scholars and teachers include Franz Boas, Michelson, E.R.A.Seligman, and H.M.Kallen, while the recent German antisemitic movement has caused the emigration of such prominent figures as Einstein, Max Reinhardt, and Bruno Walter.

Jibbenainosay, The, see *Nick of the Woods*.

Jim Bludso, poem in *Pike County Ballads* (q.v.).

Jim Crow, generic name for a Negro, is said to derive from the minstrel show (q.v.) song, 'Jim Crow,' introduced by Thomas Rice in 1830. Used mainly in the South, the name by extension is applied in 'Jim Crow cars' to indicate special railway carriages for Negroes, and in 'Jim Crow laws' aimed at discrimination between Negroes and whites.

Jingoism, name applied to a bellicose policy in foreign affairs, which was particularly prevalent in the U.S. after the mid-19th century, when many believed that the nation had a 'manifest destiny' (q.v.) to overspread the continent and annex neighboring countries such as Cuba.

Jo Erring, character in *The Story of a Country Town* (q.v.).

Joad, family name of the principal characters in *The Grapes of Wrath* (q.v.).

Joan of Arc, Personal Recollections of, fictional biography by Clemens (q.v.) published in 1896. To conceal his authorship, so that the book might be received without bias, Clemens invented 'The Sieur Louis de Conte,' Joan's supposed 'page and secretary,' whose work is 'freely translated by Jean François Alden.' The biography follows the known facts in the life of the 15th-century French heroine, but amplifies them with several fictional characters, and interprets such documents as those relating to the ecclesiastical trial at Rouen in the light of Clemens's lifelong idealistic reverence for 'the noble child, the most innocent, the most lovely, the most adorable the ages have produced.' Her traits have been said to resemble those of women in the author's family. Other figures, like the comically boastful Paladin and laughing Noël Rainguesson, are related to characters in his earlier fiction. In general, the mood is that of serious, although romanticized, history, but there are characteristic Clemens touches in the use of European folklore, humor, and American tall talk.

JOGUES, Isaac (1607–46), French Jesuit missionary, arrived in Quebec (1636), was captured by the Iroquois while returning from a journey to Sault Ste.Marie (1642), and was held captive until ransomed by the Dutch a year later. In 1646, while serving as an ambassador of peace to the Mohawks, he was seized and tomahawked to death. His descriptive work, *Novum Belgium*, has been published in the *Narratives of New Netherland*, 1609–1664 (1909).

John Barleycorn, novel by Jack London (q.v.).

John Brent, novel by Theodore Winthrop (q.v.), posthumously published in 1862.

Richard Wade, leaving for the East, trades his unsuccessful California mine for Don Fulano, a proud 'unmanageable' black stallion, which in his hands becomes docile. The 'Indianesque Saxon' John Brent, his friend and a veteran Western adventurer, accompanies him, and on their way across the plains they are joined by Murker and Larrap, two rascals who call themselves Smith and Robinson. In Utah they encounter a company of Mormons, headed by the unscrupulous Sizzum, who has in his power the impoverished Englishman, Hugh Clitheroe, and his daughter Ellen. Murker and Larrap kidnap Ellen, and are followed in a melodramatic chase on horseback by Wade and Brent. The latter, losing his horse, continues with Wade on Don Fulano, and, when Brent is shot in an encounter with the abductors, the horse tramples Murker to death. Brent recovers, and the rescued Ellen, although in love with Wade, returns to England with her fat-

Wade and Brent seek the Clitheroes in London, and the lovers are finally united.

John Brown's Body, popular Civil War song, commemorating Brown's raid on Harpers Ferry. The origin of the tune is uncertain, although there is evidence that it was a Sunday-school hymn composed by a South Carolina musician, William Steffe, as early as 1856, which became popular in the North with various sets of words. The 'John Brown' verses have been attributed to Charles S. Hall, H.H. Brownell, and anonymous Union soldiers, but Thomas B. Bishop (q.v.) is most often credited with their authorship. 'The Battle Hymn of the Republic' (q.v.) was written for the same tune.

John Brown's Body, verse narrative of the Civil War by Stephen V. Benét (q.v.), published in 1928 and awarded the 1929 Pulitzer Prize.

A prelude, 'The Slaver,' sketches the background of intersectional antagonism with its account of an early slave-ship, its harsh, pious master, Captain Ball, and the experiences of a conscience-stricken mate. Then, with vivid impressionistic characterizations and rapid changes of scene, the poem tells of Brown's raid on Harpers Ferry, and his execution; of the opening of the war, with episodes concerning Lincoln, Davis, Lee, Jackson, Grant, and other figures; and of the personal lives, now interrupted, of the fictional protagonists: Jack Ellyat, a New England law student who joins the Union army; Clay Wingate, aristocratic Georgian who enlists in the Black Horse Troop, and his beautiful fiancée, Sally Dupré; Luke Breckinridge, ignorant mountaineer, who is not sure who the Yankees are, except that 'they ain't Injuns neither'; Spade, renegade Negro; Jake Diefer, burly Pennsylvania farmer; Melora, a mountain girl with whom Ellyat has an idyllic interlude before his incarceration in a Southern prison; and others. The course of events until 1865 are thus described and interpreted, with a final passage concerned with the war's termination of the Southern dream of a patriarchal aristocratic nation, and the inauguration instead of an America of equalitarianism and industrial mechanization.

John Gray, see *The Choir Invisible*.

John Henry, hero of a cycle of Negro ballads (q.v.) and tall tales (q.v.), a 'natchal man,' who was born in the 'Black River country, where the sun don't never shine,' and is sometimes a steel-driver in the building of the 'Yaller Dog' or 'Yaller Ball' railroad line for 'Mister Billie Bob Russell,' sometimes a roustabout on river boats. Other figures in the ballads and tales include: John Hardy, the gambler; innumerable rivals of John Henry, all named Sam; and the women, Poor Selma, Julie Ann, and Ruby. John Henry's chief exploit is his competition with a steam-drill in driving steel, in which he drives faster than the machine, but dies, 'with his hammer in his hand,' as a result of the exertion. In some versions, the contest is with a steam winch in loading cotton on a river boat. The legend seems to have originated *c.*1870, when an actual John Henry of such a contest may have existed. The ballads about John Hardy may have arisen from the same source, but their hero differs from John Henry in that he comes to a bad end, murdering a man and dying on the gallows. Roark Bradford's *John Henry* (1931) combines and reconciles the various tales, while Guy B. Johnson's *John Henry: Tracking Down a Negro Legend* (1931) is a collection of variants of the ballads.

John March, Southerner, novel by George W. Cable (q.v.).

John Marr and Other Sailors, poems by Melville (q.v.) published in 1888. Besides the vigorous title piece, the collection includes such sea-pieces as 'Bridegroom Dick,' 'Tom Deadlight,' and 'Jack Roy.' *John Marr and Other Poems* (1922) is a selection from all of Melville's poetic works.

John of Barneveld, history by Motley (q.v.).

JOHN PHOENIX, pseudonym of G.H. Derby (q.v.).

John Sherwood, Iron Master, novel by S.Weir Mitchell (q.v.).

John Ward, Preacher, novel by Margaret Deland (q.v.).

Johnny Appleseed, sobriquet of John Chapman (q.v.).

Johnny Reb, nickname applied to Confederate soldiers during the Civil War.

Johns Hopkins University, incorporated at Baltimore in 1867, endowed by a prominent merchant, Johns Hopkins (1794–1873), but not opened until 1876, when

it took its place as a leading American university, largely owing to the work of its first president, Daniel Coit Gilman. Sidney Lanier was an early lecturer (1879–81), and other noted faculty members have included G.Stanley Hall, H.B. Adams, J.B.Watson, and R.T.Ely. The university excels in laboratory and graduate work, and the affiliated graduate medical school, founded in 1893, is one of the finest in the world. William Osler was a member of its faculty. Graduates of the university include John Dewey (Ph.D., 1884) and V.F.Calverton (1921).

JOHNSON, ALLEN (1870–1931), professor of American history at Grinnell, Bowdoin, and Yale, edited *The Chronicles of America* (50 vols.,1918–21), a scholarly series to which he contributed *Jefferson and His Colleagues*, and edited the first seven volumes of the *Dictionary of American Biography* (q.v.). He wrote a biography of Stephen Douglas (1908), *Union and Democracy* (1915), and *The Historian and Historical Evidence* (1926).

JOHNSON, ANDREW (1808–75), 17th President of the U.S. (1865–9), was born in North Carolina, and moved to Tennessee in 1826. He had no formal education, but, due to his perseverance and understanding of the problems of small, nonslaveholding Southern farmers, was elected to the state legislature and the governorship, and became a Democratic member of the House of Representatives (1843–53) and the Senate (1857–62). He supported Breckinridge in the 1860 presidential election, and never renounced his affiliation with the Democratic party, but opposed secession and served the Union cause in the Civil War. Appointed military governor of Tennessee (1862–4), he organized a successful loyal government, and as a reward received the vice presidency. Succeeding Lincoln upon the latter's assassination, he encountered many rebuffs in attempting to administer the Reconstruction (q.v.) in accordance with Lincoln's policies, insisting that the problem was an executive and not a legislative one. This program was immediately unpopular with the Congress, which was dominated by radical Republicans, and there was a struggle between the powerful legislature and the solitary chief executive in which the latter was inevitably defeated. When he attempted to remove Secretary of War Stanton on a charge of conspiracy, he was brought before the Senate in an impeachment trial initiated by Thaddeus Stevens and others, but was acquitted when the vote fell one short of the two-thirds majority required for removal from office. He was largely without influence during the rest of his term, and after several unsuccessful campaigns was returned to the Senate in 1875, only to die soon after taking his seat.

JOHNSON, EASTMAN (1824–1906), born in Maine, studied painting in Düsseldorf and in Holland, where he was attracted to genre painting and learned to combine detailed composition and sober colors with sentimental humor. He was best known for his scenes of homely American life, but also painted sober, honest portraits.

JOHNSON, EDWARD (1598–1672), colonial Massachusetts chronicler and captain of militia, came to Boston in 1630 to trade with the Indians, and after a short stay sailed for England to bring his family, with whom he returned in 1636. He was a founder of Woburn (1640), and until his death was active in the affairs of that town. As a devout and stalwart Puritan, in 1650 he commenced writing *A History of New-England*, better known by its running title, *The Wonder-Working Providence of Sions Saviour in New England* (q.v.,1654). In this anonymously published work, intended to suppress the calumniations of English critics and celebrate the Puritan religious commonwealth in America, Johnson writes with vigor both of homely facts and of great events, and rhapsodizes with an epic view of the founding of New England as a spiritual crusade by soldiers of Christ at war with unbelievers and the wilderness.

JOHNSON, JAMES WELDON (1871–1938), Negro author, born in Florida, and educated at Atlanta University and Columbia, became a teacher and lawyer. He early collaborated with his brother, the composer John Rosamond Johnson (1873–), in writing songs and light operas, one of their works being the popular Negro anthem, *Lift Every Voice and Sing* (1900). Although he later served as U.S. consul in Nicaragua and Venezuela, and was sent to investigate conditions in Haiti, his principal work, besides his writing and lecturing, was in the administration of various Negro reform groups in the U.S. He contributed to many magazines

and was the author of *God's Trombones* (1927) and other books of poetry; studies of Negro life, including *Black Manhattan* (1930); *The Autobiography of an Ex-Colored Man* (1912), a novel; and the autobiography entitled *Along This Way* (1933).

JOHNSON, Josephine [Winslow] (1910–), Missouri author, whose works include: *Now in November* (1934, Pulitzer Prize 1935), a realistic novel of drudgery on a midwestern farm; *Winter Orchard* (1935), a collection of short stories; *Jordanstown* (1937), the story of a young Midwesterner who, during the depression, edits a newspaper in an unsuccessful attempt to help the oppressed; and *Year's End* (1937), a volume of poetry.

JOHNSON, Merle [DeVore] (1874–1935), was a cartoonist on the staff of *Puck*, and later compiled bibliographies of Mark Twain (1910), Cabell (1921), *American First Editions* (1929), and *High Spots of American Literature* (1929). *You Know These Lines* (1934) is a check list of books containing famous verse quotations.

JOHNSON, Oliver (1809–89), a founder of the New England Anti-Slavery Society (1832), was associated with Garrison in the editorship of *The Liberator* (q.v.). As a reformer and journalist, he was a contributor to every humanitarian movement of his time.

JOHNSON, Owen, see *Johnson, R.U.*

JOHNSON, Robert (*fl.*1609–12), author of *Nova Britannia* (1609), a promotional tract for the Virginia Company, in the form of a discourse by one of a number of adventurers returned from Virginia and assembled in London. He also wrote *New Life of Virginia* (1612).

JOHNSON, Robert Underwood (1853–1937), was associated with the *Century Magazine* from 1873 and succeeded R.W. Gilder as editor (1909). His many occasional poems in the romantic tradition of the Gilded Age, including *Saint-Gaudens, an Ode* (1910), won him a reputation as the unofficial poet laureate of the U.S. and were collected in *Poems of Fifty Years* (1931). After 1919 he served as director of the Hall of Fame, and he was ambassador to Italy (1920–21). His memoirs were published as *Remembered Yesterdays* (1923).

Owen [McMahon] **Johnson** (1878–), his son, is the author of such popular novels as *The Varmint* (1910), an amusing account of a boys' preparatory school; *Stover at Yale* (1911), an entertaining but critical campus novel; and *The Tennessee Shad* (1911), another story of young boys.

JOHNSON, Samuel (1696–1772), was a Congregationalist minister until 1712, when he joined the Church of England, becoming its acknowledged leader in New England. He was the first president of King's College (1755–63), and, as a friend and disciple of the English philosopher Berkeley, became the leading American exponent of Berkeley's idealism, which he made palatable by his pleasing style, while rendering Calvin ridiculous by satirical paraphrase. His principal book, *Ethices Elementa* (1746), was enlarged as *Elementa Philosophica*, published by Franklin in 1752.

JOHNSON, Samuel (1709–84), English lexicographer and author, in 1775 was employed by the ministers in power to write a tract, *Taxation no Tyranny*, in answer to the resolutions and addresses of the Continental Congress. In it he ridicules the attempt of the Americans to resist the will of the mother country, asserts the supreme power of the home government to require contributions for the purposes of maintaining public society or prosperity, and contends that in Parliament all British subjects possess a 'virtual representation.'

JOHNSON, Sir William (1715–74), colonial superintendent of Indian affairs north of the Ohio, aided the English during King George's War by securing Iroquois loyalty. He helped to formulate the Indian policy of the Albany Congress, and, until the arrival of Gage, was in charge of the defense of the northern frontier, where he repulsed the French. He is the subject of a biography by W.L.Stone and his son, and figures in fiction in Paulding's *The Dutchman's Fireside*.

JOHNSTON, Annie Fellows (1863–1931), author of children's stories, best known for the series beginning with *The Little Colonel* (1896). *In the Desert of Waiting* (1905) is based on a legend of an Arizona mountain.

JOHNSTON, Joseph Eggleston (1807–91), Confederate general, whose victory

at Bull Run (q.v.,1861) won him command of the Department of Northern Virginia, in which capacity he participated in the Battle of Fair Oaks (1862). He was placed in command of the Army of the Tennessee (Dec. 1863), but was forced to surrender to Sherman.

JOHNSTON, Mary (1870–1936), Virginia author of 22 popular romances, the best known of which is *To Have and To Hold* (q.v.,1900), telling of a young English noblewoman who leaves her country to avoid marriage with a man she hates, and weds an unbelievably heroic Virginian. Fifteen of her stories deal with various periods of Virginia history, and *The Long Roll* (q.v.,1911) and its sequel, *Cease Firing* (1912) are romantic tales of the Civil War, constructed with minute attention to historical facts. Her books are idealistic, sometimes verging on the mystical, and are peopled by stilted or artificial figures, despite her ability to recreate atmosphere.

JOHNSTON, Richard Malcolm (1822–98), Georgia jurist, educator, and author, wrote humorous local-color stories for *The Spirit of the Times* and similar publications, which he gathered in *Georgia Sketches* (1864), a work indebted even in its title to Longstreet's *Georgia Scenes*. Republished as the *Dukesborough Tales* (q.v.,1871) under the pseudonym Philemon Perch, the sketches are vivid studies of Georgia life in the best humorous tradition of the Old Southwest. In several editions between 1864 and the early 1890's, the revised sketches evolved from the coarse and direct Longstreet type to a more subdued and precise pattern. Among his other books are *Old Mark Langston, a Tale of Duke's Creek* (1884), a rambling, sketchy novel set in a rural Georgia town; *Mr. Absolom Billingslea and Other Georgia Folk* (1888); *Mr. Billy Downs and His Likes* (1892), six stories; *Widow Guthrie* (1893), a serious novel of life in a small Georgia community; *Old Times in Middle Georgia* (1897); *Pearce Amerson's Will* (1898), a melodramatic novelette; and an *Autobiography* (1900).

Johnstown Flood, occurred May 31, 1889, when as a result of heavy rains a dam was destroyed on the Conemaugh River above the manufacturing city of Johnstown, Pennsylvania. The city and its outlying districts were flooded before warning could be given, and some 2,200 lives were lost, besides property valued at $10,000,000.

JOLLIET, Louis (1645–1700), French-Canadian explorer, was the leader, in collaboration with Marquette (q.v.) of the expedition which discovered the upper Mississippi River (1673). They continued as far south as the mouth of the Arkansas River. Because Jolliet's journal of the expedition was lost, his fame has been overshadowed by that of his associate.

Jonathan, character in *The Contrast* (q.v.).

Jonathan, Brother, see *Brother Jonathan.*

Jonathan Oldstyle, pseudonym of Irving (q.v.).

JONES, Bobby [Robert Tyre Jones, jr.] (1902–), golfer, during the 1920's repeatedly won the U.S. amateur and open championships, and the British amateur and open championships. He retired in 1930, after having won these four major titles in the one year.

Jones, Casey, railroad engineer hero of a popular ballad, which tells of his fatal last trip in the cabin of a 'big eight-wheeler,' which was 'eight hours late with the western mail.' His attempt to arrive in 'Frisco' on schedule results in a head-on collision with another train. As with most ballads, there are many variants of both music and verses, and no definite origin is known. It is claimed that the original engineer was John Luther Jones, killed in a wreck on the Chicago and New Orleans Limited (March 18, 1900). The song has been attributed at various times to three railroad workers, Wallace Saunders, Cornelius Steen, and 'Wash' Sanders. It may have been revised from a ballad about a Negro fireman, Jimmie Jones, but certainly had its roots in the tradition that 'there's many a man killed on the railroad, and laid in his lonesome grave,' which also produced 'The Wreck of the Six-Wheel Driver,' 'Ol' John Brown,' and 'Charley Snyder.' A vaudeville version of 'Casey Jones' was published in 1909 by T.L.Siebert and E.Newton. The hero's career has become a folk legend, and is the subject of a famous labor-union song and of Robert Ardrey's play, *Casey Jones* (1938).

JONES, Hugh (*c.*1670–1760), Virginia minister, professor of mathematics at William and Mary, and historian, whose

An Accidence to the English Tongue (1724) was the first English grammar written in America. His historical monograph, *The Present State of Virginia* (1724), has been regarded as the best contemporary account of the social, economic, and ecclesiastical life of the colony.

JONES, James Athearn (1791–1854), Massachusetts-born author and editor, whose books include: *Tales of an Indian Camp* (3 vols.,1829), 56 romantic legends based on the folklore of Eastern and Plains Indians; an early volume of poems, of which the most popular was 'The Lay of a Mountain Spirit'; *The Refugee* (1825), a fantastic romance of the Revolutionary War; and another novel, *Haverhill; or, Memoirs of an Officer in the Army of Wolfe* (1831).

JONES, John Beauchamp (1810–66), frontier novelist, was born in Baltimore and reared in the Kentucky and Missouri border country. His pioneer boyhood is reflected in the narrative, *Wild Western Scenes* (1841), in which Daniel Boone is described. Other novels include *The Western Merchant* (1849), *Freaks of Fortune; or, The History of Ned Lorn* (1854), and *The War Path* (1858). In the interests of the South, he founded *The Southern Monitor* at Philadelphia (1858). His *A Rebel War Clerk's Diary at the Confederate Capital* (1866) gives a good picture of conditions within the Confederacy.

JONES, John Paul (1747–92), Scottish-born naval adventurer, served in the West Indian slave trade before he entered the Revolutionary navy (1775). He was highly successful in destroying British ships, harassing the Nova Scotia fisheries, and capturing a British transport. Franklin procured for him an old French vessel, renamed the *Bonhomme Richard*, with which, accompanied by a small fleet, he fought the most important naval engagement of the war. This was the battle (Sept. 23, 1779), which resulted in the capture of the British warship *Serapis*. 'I've just begun to fight,' is supposed to have been Jones's reply to the question of Captain Pearson of the British ship, 'Have you struck?' The *Bonhomme Richard* sank within a few hours after Jones transferred his crew to the *Serapis*. In 1788 he entered the Russian naval service, but resigned the following year to reside in Paris. A dashing figure, he and his exploits appear in a poem by Freneau and several historical romances, notably *Richard Carvel*, *Israel Potter*, *The Pilot*, and *Drums*.

JONES, Joseph Stevens (1809–77), Boston actor, author of more than 150 melodramas, farces, and comedies. *The People's Lawyer* (1839) and *The Silver Spoon* (1852) are distinguished for their characterizations of the shrewd rural Yankee. The former play was also known as *Solon Shingle*, from its hero's name. Jones's other popular plays included *The Liberty Tree* (1832), *The Carpenter of Rouen* (1840), and *Paul Revere and the Sons of Liberty* (1875).

JONES, Major, pseudonym of W.T. Thompson (q.v.).

JONES, Robert Edmond (1887–), New York stage designer, graduated from Harvard (1910), was a little-theater leader associated with the Washington Square Players and the Provincetown Players, and later, with Eugene O'Neill, managed the Greenwich Village Theatre (1923–7). He was a founder of the Theatre Guild, and among the many plays for which he designed settings have been *The Green Pastures*, Percy MacKaye's *Caliban*, *In Abraham's Bosom*, *Night over Taos*, and plays by O'Neill and Susan Glaspell. *The Dramatic Imagination* (1941) is a book on the theater.

Jones, *The Emperor*, see *Emperor Jones.*

JONSON, Robert (*fl.*1609–12), author of *Nova Britannia: offeringe most excellent Fruites by Planting in Virginia* (London, February 1609), a tract intended to promote colonization and investment in the Virginia colony. A second part, *The New Life of Virginia* (1612), is attributed to him.

JORDAN, David Starr (1851–1931), prominent ichthyologist, was the first president and chancellor of Stanford University (1891–1916), which through his work became a leading American university. Besides his scientific works on fishes, he was the author of *The Human Harvest* (1907), *War's Aftermath* (1914), and other pacifist works, as well as an autobiography, *The Days of a Man* (2 vols.,1922).

Joscelyn, romance by Simms (q.v.).

JOSEPH (*c.*1840–1904), chief of the Nez Percé tribe, refused to recognize the land grants of the U.S.Government made during his father's lifetime, and attempted (1877) to lead his followers into Canada.

His brilliant retreat of more than 1,000 miles ended after a five-day siege, when he was captured near the Canadian border.

JOSEPHSON, MATTHEW (1899–), New York author, known for a time as a member of the post-war expatriate group and an editor of *Secession* (1922–4), achieved prominence upon publishing a study of *Zola and His Time* (1928). His *Portrait of the Artist as American* (1930) presents such Americans as Henry James, Whistler, and Bierce to support the thesis of Van Wyck Brooks that industrial America frustrates artistic creation. Later works include a biography of *Jean-Jacques Rousseau* (1931); *The Robber Barons* (1934), a study of the rise to power of 19th-century American industrialists; *The Politicos* (1938), a companion volume dealing with the political background of this era; and *The President Makers* (1940), concerned with the era of McKinley to Wilson.

JOSIAH ALLEN'S WIFE, pseudonym of Marietta Holley (q.v.).

JOSSELYN, JOHN (*fl.*1638–75), English scientific writer, visited Boston and Maine (1638–9), where his brother was the representative of Gorges. His second visit (1663–71) was occupied in scientific observation and resulted in *New-Englands Rarities Discovered* (1672) and *An Account of Two Voyages to New-England* (1674). Although there is some scientific value in his botanical observations, he makes many credulous statements concerning mermen, Indians who talk 'in perfect hexameter verse,' and frogs 'which chirp in the spring like sparrows.' With this lore he combines information for colonists, local history, and animadversions on the Puritans, whom he disliked, possibly because the Bay Colony's expansion threatened his brother's affairs.

Journal of Julius Rodman, The, fictional travel narrative by Poe (q.v.), published anonymously in *Burton's Gentleman's Magazine* (1840). It purports to be an account of 'the first passage across the Rocky Mountains of North America ever achieved by civilized man,' as accomplished in 1792 by an English emigrant, Julius Rodman, with several companions, and described in a diary discovered by his heirs. The character of Rodman and the dates are fictious, but the adventures and descriptions are based on fact, being largely paraphrased from Irving's *Astoria* and the accounts of Lewis and Clark and Sir Alexander Mackenzie.

Journey to the Land of Eden, A, journal written by William Byrd (q.v.) during 1733, was found among his 'Westover Manuscripts,' from which it was published in 1841. An account of his trip 'to the land of Eden,' his tract of land near the River Dan in North Carolina, the journal contains urbane and witty observations by a patrician Virginian concerning the boorish back-country people and the Indians.

JUÁREZ, BENITO PABLO (1806–72), Mexican liberal statesman, a Zapotec Indian. He served as governor of Oaxaca (1847–52) until Santa Anna came into power. Returning from exile in the U.S., he aided the revolt against Santa Anna, became minister of justice (1855–8), and, by his liberal laws opposing the influence of the army and clergy, precipitated the War of the Reform (1858), from which he emerged as President. When he refused to pay foreign debts, Napoleon III used this pretext to install his puppet ruler Maximilian (q.v.), attempting to oust Juárez. At the end of the U.S.Civil War, the U.S.Government demanded the withdrawal of French troops from Mexico, thus permitting Juárez to capture and execute Maximilian and to resume his presidency (1867). His administration was constantly harassed by the revolts of Díaz and others who opposed his reforms.

JUDD, SYLVESTER (1813–53), Unitarian minister, graduate of Yale (1836) and Harvard Divinity School (1840), during his second year at the graduate school published *A Young Man's Account of His Conversion from Calvinism.* As a pastor at Augusta, Maine (1840–53), he advocated several idealistic reforms, including a 'birthright church' in which all individuals would by birth automatically become members. He was a pacifist, opposed capital punishment, and believed in temperance and antislavery. His religious and social ideas are exhibited in his two novels, *Margaret* (q.v.,1845) and *Richard Edney and the Governor's Family* (1850), and in his didactic metaphysical epic, *Philo, an Evangeliad* (1850). His novels are distinguished both for their realistic depiction of the Down East re-

gion, and for their idealistic quality, reminiscent of Hawthorne and Melville.

Judge (1881–1939), comic weekly founded by a group of authors and artists who seceded from *Puck*. The new magazine imitated its prototype closely, but failed of success until 1884, when a group of Republicans, recognizing the power wielded by the Democratic *Puck*, turned *Judge* into a satirical organ for political purposes. The Republican connection was dissolved in 1910, but the circulation was then so large that the magazine survived on its own power as a comic weekly. It was particularly successful during this and the next decade, but during the depression of the '30's was forced to become a monthly (1932), losing its leadership in its field to *The New Yorker*. In 1936 it purchased 'the humorous tradition and features of *Life*.'

Judgment Day, novel by James T. Farrell (q.v.), published in 1935 as the concluding part of his naturalistic trilogy concerned with the Chicago youth, Studs Lonigan (q.v.).

At 27, Studs contemplates the failure and unhappiness of his family and friends. Worried and suffering because of his weak heart, he fears loneliness, yet almost against his will is involved in an affair with Catherine Banahan, whom he asks to marry him. Events rapidly conspire to defeat him: He loses his savings by an unwise investment in stocks; is unable to buy insurance because of his heart ailment, which has been aggravated by unwholesome living; cannot persuade Catherine to have an abortion when she becomes pregnant; is unemployed during the business depression; and dies, after a brief illness, at the age of 29.

Judgment Day, play by Elmer Rice (q.v.).

JUDSON, Adoniram (1788–1850), Massachusetts-born Baptist missionary in Burma, endured extreme hardships in founding his mission, including 17 months imprisonment during the war with the British. He translated the Bible into Burmese and was the author of an English-Burmese dictionary. He is the subject of several romantic biographies, and of Honoré Morrow's novel, *The Splendor of God* (1929).

Emily [Chubbuck] Judson (1817–54), his third wife, returned from Burma to New York, where she wrote several popular moralistic works, including *Alderbrook* (1847), rural sketches and poems, and *Allen Lucas, the Self-made Man* (1847), a novel. She used the pseudonym Fanny Forester.

JUDSON, Edward Zane Carroll (1823–86), known by his pseudonym Ned Buntline, was an adventurer, trapper, and soldier in the Far West, a founder of the Know-Nothing party (q.v.), leader of the Astor Place riots (q.v.), accused murderer, editor, and author, whose boisterous life reads like one of his own dime novels. In 1869 he met W.F.Cody, and, endowing him with the name Buffalo Bill, made him the hero of a series of dime novels, as well as the leading figure in his play, *The Scouts of the Plains* (1873), in which Cody himself took the leading part. Judson was the author of more than 400 dime novels, a genre of which he was a creator.

Julia France and Her Times, novel by Gertrude Atherton (q.v.) published in 1912.

The adventurous life of Julia Edis includes her marriage at 18 to dissolute, vicious Lieutenant France, who is chosen by her ambitious mother because he is heir to a dukedom; years of disillusion in England; escape from her insane husband, first to enter the millinery business and then to become a suffrage leader; love for an American, Daniel Tay; return to her childhood home in the West Indies; divided allegiance to Tay and her career; and her final decision to give up all else for life with him.

Julius Rodman, see *Journal of Julius Rodman*.

JUMEL, Mme Eliza (1775–1865), named Eliza Brown, or, more familiarly, Betsey Bowen, until in 1804 she married Stephen Jumel, an American wine merchant who had arrived in New York (1795) after being driven from his Haitian coffee plantations by an insurrection of his slaves. After a vain attempt to enter New York society, Mme Jumel and her husband went to live in France (1815). She returned alone (1826) to gain control of her husband's property. He died (1832) and a year later she married Aaron Burr (q.v.), from whom she soon separated when he lost much of her fortune through speculation. She figures in *The Conqueror*.

Jumping Frog, see *Celebrated Jumping Frog.*

June Moon, play by Ring Lardner and George S. Kaufman (qq.v.).

Jungle, The, novel by Upton Sinclair (q.v.) published in 1906. This exposé of the Chicago meat-packing industry prompted the investigation by Roosevelt and the Federal Government that culminated in the Pure-Food Legislation of 1906.

Jurgis Rudkus, a Slav immigrant, marries frail Ona Lukoszaite, and seeks security and happiness as a workman in the Chicago stockyards. Foremen abuse him, real-estate sharks filch his meager savings, and at every turn he is beset by misfortunes arising from the poverty, brutality, and disease that are the conditions of his employment. At the birth of a second child, amid direst want, Ona dies. Jurgis's morale temporarily disintegrates and he becomes successively a tramp, common thief, highwayman, and pawn of a corrupt politician. Then, having thought his way through this morass of chicanery and brutality, and despairing of the individual's capacity to face modern society alone, he arrives at a belief in socialism.

Junto Club (THE JUNTO), social and debating society, founded by Franklin at Philadelphia (1727), with a membership restricted to 12 of his friends, all working men. The club was first known as the Leather Aprons, and in plan of organization was similar to the neighborhood benefit societies founded at Boston by Cotton Mather, but the thought was directed along deistic and utilitarian lines. It existed approximately 40 years, during which time it was an important cultural influence, and affiliated clubs were organized. In 1731 it formed a subscription library, which was the first American public library. It was also the forerunner of the American Philosophical Society (q.v.).

Jurgen: A Comedy of Justice, romance by Cabell (q.v.), published in 1919.

In mythical, medieval Poictesme, Jurgen is a middle-aged poetical pawnbroker, married to Dame Lisa, 'a high-spirited woman, with no especial gift for silence.' By special dispensation of the Devil, Lisa vanishes, and Jurgen unwillingly seeks her, forced by conscience and local gossip. By the Centaur Nessus, whose magic shirt he is given to wear, he is carried to 'the garden between dawn and sunrise,' and here encounters Dorothy la Désirée, the sweetheart of his youth, who does not recognize him. Continuing his search, he meets the earth goddess, Mother Sereda, and, when she promises him any gift in her power, he chooses a Wednesday of his youth to live over again. In this state, Dorothy loves him, but he discovers that his desire is a lost illusion. In various disguises, followed by his notetaking shadow, he pursues his skeptical pilgrimage among mythical and fictional figures, and has erotic adventures among Guenevere, Dame Anaïtis (The Lady of the Lake), Merlin, Queen Helen, a hamadryad, and others, visiting the legendary lands of Cocaigne, Pseudopolis, and Leukê. He lives in Hell, where he marries a vampire, and then, as Pope John xx, visits the Heaven of his grandmother, where he ascends the throne of God. At last he finds Koschei, 'who made things as they are.' Offered various great beauties, Jurgen declines each of them in turn, and, after Koschei dubiously returns Lisa to him, husband and wife take up again their prosaic but comfortable life.

JUSSERAND, JEAN JULES (1855–1932), French ambassador to the U.S. (1902–15), who in addition to being known as a diplomat was recognized as an author and scholar. His works include: *English Wayfaring Life in the Middle Ages* (1889); and *With Americans of Past and Present Days,* awarded the first Pulitzer Prize in history (1917).

Just Before the Battle, Mother, song by G.F.Root (q.v.).

Juvenile literature, see *Children's literature.*

K

KALB, JOHANN, see *De Kalb.*

KALER, JAMES OTIS (1848–1912), Maine author of stories for boys, of which the best known was *Toby Tyler; or, Ten Weeks with a Circus* (1881). He wrote under the pseudonym James Otis. His other tales include: *At the Siege of Quebec* (1897), *With Perry on Lake Erie* (1899), and *The Minute Boys of the Wyoming Valley* (1900).

KALLEN, H[ORACE] M[EYER] (1882–), German-born professor of philosophy at the New School for Social Research, has translated and edited the works of several philosophers, including William James and Benjamin Paul Blood, and is the author of many books exhibiting liberal and idealistic social interests. These include: *Creative Intelligence* (1917), written with John Dewey and others; *The Structure of Lasting Peace* (1918), *Zionism and World Politics* (1921); *Culture and Democracy in the United States* (1924); *Education, the Machine and the Worker* (1925); *Frontiers of Hope* (1929); *Individualism: An American Way of Life* (1933); *A Free Society* (1934); and *The Decline and Rise of the Consumer: A Philosophy of Consumer Cooperation* (1936).

KALM, PETER (1716–79), Swedish scientist and traveler, a pupil of Linnaeus, was sent to America (1748–51) by the Swedish Academy of Sciences. He visited Pennsylvania, New York, New Jersey, and southern Canada, was the guest of such prominent men as Franklin, and, although chiefly concerned with botanical studies, was a shrewd observer of people and institutions. He wrote an account of his journey, published in Sweden (3 vols., 1753–61) and translated as *Travels into North America . . .* (1770–71). The manuscript of his fourth volume was destroyed by fire, but notes for it were discovered and published in 1929. A complete American edition was edited by Adolph B. Benson as *The America of 1750: Peter Kalm's Travels in North America* (2 vols.,1937).

KANE, ELISHA KENT (1820–57), naval surgeon and Arctic explorer, wrote of his first voyage to the Arctic in the popular narrative, *The U.S. Grinnell Expedition in Search of Sir John Franklin* (1853), abridged and reprinted as *Adrift in the Arctic Ice Pack* (1915). Kane made a second expedition with the *Grinnell,* reaching 80° 10′ N., a 'farthest North' record. The rigorous conditions of this journey caused his death after the publication of *Arctic Explorations* (2 vols.,1856). A scurrilous anonymous publication, *The Love-Life of Doctor Kane* (1866) tells of his romance with the spiritualist, Margaret Fox.

Kansas-Nebraska Bill, like its predecessors, the Missouri Compromise and the Compromise of 1850, was intended to ease the tension, in the struggle for domination between North and South. Enacted in 1854, it allowed residents of Kansas and Nebraska Territories, on the principle of 'squatter sovereignty' (q.v.), to determine whether they should permit slavery under their governments. This caused a hasty influx of advocates and opponents of slavery, who racked 'bloody Kansas' with civil strife. Opposition to the passage of this bill resulted in the formation of the Republican party the same year. See *Emigrant Aid Society* and *Border Ruffians.*

KANTOR, MACKINLAY (1904–), Iowa-born journalist and author, besides *Turkey in the Straw* (1935), a book of 'American ballads and primitive verse,' has written many volumes of fiction. These include: *Long Remember* (1934), a novel of the Battle of Gettysburg, as seen by a non-combatant; *The Voice of Bugle Ann* (1935), a novelette about a fox-hound so loved by her master that he shot the man suspected of killing her; *Arouse and Beware* (1936), a psychological novel concerned with the escape of two Yankee soldiers from a Confederate prison; *The Noise of Their Wings* (1938), the story of the restoration of passenger pigeons to America; and *Cuba Libre* (1940), about an idealistic Cuban revolutionist's career, from the Spanish-American War to the present.

KARLSEFNI, THORFINN, see *Thorfinn Karlsefni.*

Kate Croy, character in *The Wings of the Dove* (q.v.).

Katharine Walton, one of the 'Revolutionary Romances' by Simms (q.v.) published in 1851, is a sequel to *The Partisan* (q.v.).

Shortly after the Battle of Camden

(1780), Katharine's father, Colonel Walton, is rescued from his captivity in the British garrison at Dorchester by her fiancé, Robert Singleton. Colonel Balfour, commandant at Charleston, to avoid responsibility for the loss of a prisoner, accuses Major Proctor, guard of the garrison, of treason. Walton's estates are confiscated and at Balfour's order Katharine is taken to Charleston. Singleton, disguising himself as Captain Furness, a Loyalist, becomes a friend of Proctor, revealing Balfour's treachery to him. Meanwhile Walton is again captured, and Balfour tells Katharine that if she does not marry him her father will be hanged. Proctor, having killed Balfour's henchman, Vaughan, joins Singleton's rebels, among whom is the comic Porgy, but before they can rescue the Waltons Katharine agrees to marry Balfour. He sends an order to reprieve her father, which is intercepted by Balfour's former sweetheart. Since Walton is hanged, Katharine is freed from her promise.

KAUFMAN, GEORGE S. (1889–), New York journalist, playwright, and director, has written popular plays and musical comedies in collaboration with many authors. Among these are Marc Connelly (q.v.), with whom he wrote such plays as *Dulcy* (1921), *To the Ladies* (1922), *Merton of the Movies* (1922), and *Beggar on Horseback* (q.v.,1924); Ring Lardner (q.v.), with whom he wrote *June Moon* (1929); Edna Ferber (q.v.), with whom he wrote *Minick* (1924), *The Royal Family* (1927), *Dinner at Eight* (1932), and *Stage Door* (1936); Morris Ryskind and George Gershwin, with whom he wrote such musical comedies as *Of Thee I Sing* (q.v.,1931; Pulitzer Prize, 1932) and *Let 'Em Eat Cake* (1933), the latter satirizing revolutionaries; Katherine Dayton, with whom he wrote *First Lady* (1935), a comedy of Washington political and social life; and Moss Hart, with whom he wrote *Once in a Lifetime* (1930), a satire of Hollywood, *Merrily We Roll Along* (1934), a play in reverse chronology, tracing the hero from his failure in middle age back to his youthful promise, *I'd Rather Be Right* (1937), a travesty of the Roosevelt administration, *You Can't Take It With You* (q.v.,1936; Pulitzer Prize, 1937), *The American Way* (1939), a patriotic panorama of recent history; *The Man Who Came to Dinner* (1939), a farce about an author who resembles Alexander Woollcott, and *George Washington Slept Here* (1940).

Kavanagh, novel by Longfellow (q.v.), published in 1849.

A young Roman Catholic, Kavanagh, is converted to Protestantism and becomes the popular pastor of a New England village church. Alice Archer is enamored of his brilliance, but he marries her less timid friend, Cecilia Vaughan, and, after they leave for Italy, Alice languishes and dies. Although Kavanagh is the ostensible hero, the young village schoolmaster, Churchill, is the dominant character. His life moves easily along in the temper of the village, but beneath his humdrum exterior he broods constantly over the project of writing a romance. This procrastinating author is obstructed in his search for the sublime by the actual life of his community, and critics have generally discerned the character of Longfellow in Churchill.

KEARNEY, DENNIS (1847–1907), Irish-born San Francisco drayman, during a California depression (1877) harangued workingmen in the city's sand lots, denouncing the Central Pacific Railroad for importing Chinese laborers. His inflammatory speeches, ending with the slogan 'The Chinese must go,' temporarily won him a wide following.

KEARNY, STEPHEN WATTS (1794–1848), army officer in the War of 1812 and on the frontier, during the Mexican War commanded the Army of the West, with which he captured Santa Fé and continued to California to join the forces of Commodore Stockton. Frémont, acting as civil governor under Stockton, refused to obey Kearny, and was court-martialed and found guilty of mutiny, but saved by President Polk's order. Kearny was military governor of California (March–June 1847), and later of Vera Cruz and Mexico City.

Kearsarge, see *Semmes, Raphael.*

KEATING, SARAH, see *Wood, Sarah.*

KEENAN, HENRY FRANCIS (1850–), author of the anonymously published novel, *The Money-Makers* (q.v.,1885), intended as a reply to Hay's *The Breadwinners.* It shows the selfish, unprincipled actions of capitalists, which lead to the conditions attacked in Hay's anti-union novel.

Keep Cool, novel by John Neal (q.v.).

KEIMER, SAMUEL (1688–1739), English-born printer, author of *A Brand Pluck'd from the Burning* (1718) and *A Search after Religion* (1718), dealing with his connections with various religious sects. In 1722 he came to Philadelphia, where he later employed Franklin in his print-shop. After the latter left him to start a newspaper, Keimer founded the weekly *Universal Instructor in All Arts and Sciences, and Pennsylvania Gazette* (Dec. 1728–Sept. 1729), but was overwhelmed by the competition of Franklin and Andrew Bradford. He sold the paper to Franklin, through whose hands it later passed to become *The Saturday Evening Post.* Reduced to bankruptcy, Keimer went to Barbados, where he founded the first newspaper in the Caribbean. He is remembered mainly because of the racy account of him in Franklin's autobiography, which tells of Franklin's setting into type Keimer's *Elegy on the Much Lamented Death of . . . Aquila Rose* (1723).

KEITH, GEORGE (*c.*1638–1716), Scottish clergyman, came to America (1684) and became headmaster of the William Penn Charter School (1689). At first he agreed with the Quakers, but his differences with them on such points as the Inner Light, and his contentious manner, caused him to be denounced by Penn (1692). Keith returned the attack in *The Deism of William Penn and His Brethren* (1699), and formed a strong separatist party of Christian Quakers (Keithians). In 1700 he joined the Anglican Church, into which he took his followers, traveling widely throughout the colonies in 1702–4. Of this later period he left a record in *A Journal of Travels from New-Hampshire to Caratuck* (1706).

KELLAND, CLARENCE BUDDINGTON (1881–), popular novelist whose works include: *Mark Tidd* (1913), the first of a series of novels for boys, of the genre of *Tom Sawyer*; and novels for adults, most of them dealing with current fads and manners, such as *Conflict* (1920), *Rhoda Fair* (1925), *Hard Money* (1930), *The Great Crooner* (1933), and *Arizona* (1939).

KELLER, HELEN [ADAMS] (1880–), author and lecturer, who, though blind and deaf since the age of two, graduated with honors from Radcliffe (1904) and became a prominent worker for social reforms. Her books include: *The Story of My Life* (1902); *The World I Live In* (1908); *Out of the Dark* (1913); *My Religion* (1927); *Midstream—My Later Life* (1929); and *Let Us Have Faith* (1940).

KELLEY, EDGAR STILLMAN (1857–), Wisconsin-born composer, taught music in Berlin (1902–10), and later became a dean of the Cincinnati Conservatory of Music. His works include: *New England*, a symphony based on native themes; incidental music for *Ben-Hur* (1899); *The Pilgrim's Progress* (1918), a 'musical play;' and symphonic compositions based on *Gulliver in Lilliput*, *Alice in Wonderland*, and *The Pit and the Pendulum.*

KELLOGG, ELIJAH (1813–1901), Congregational clergyman of Maine, author of the famous declamatory piece, 'Spartacus to the Gladiators,' first published in the *School Reader* (1846) of Epes Sargent. His novel for children, *Good Old Times* (1867), a story of pioneer Maine, was followed by 28 other stories, mainly children's novels of Down East folk.

KELLY, GEORGE [EDWARD] (1887–), actor, director, and playwright. He has written many one-act plays, and his longer works include: *The Torch-Bearers* (1922, revised 1938), a satire on the little-theater movement; *The Show-Off* (1924), a comedy dealing with a successful braggart; *Craig's Wife* (q.v.,1925; Pulitzer Prize, 1926), a character study of a domineering woman who turns her family against her; and *Daisy Mayme* (1926). Later plays include *Behold the Bridegroom* (1927), *Maggie the Magnificent* (1929), *Philip Goes Forth* (1931), and *Reflected Glory* (1936).

KELLY, JONATHAN FALCONBRIDGE (1817–55), journalist and humorist, under the pseudonyms Falconbridge and Cerro Gordo, contributed to many periodicals. A collection of his work appeared as *The Humors of Falconbridge* (1856). He also wrote a biography of Dan Marble (1851).

Kelroy, novel by Rebecca Rush (q.v.).

KEMBLE, E[DWARD] W[INDSOR] (1861–1933), illustrator and cartoonist, best known for his light but sympathetic interpretations of Negroes and mischievous boys, as in his drawings for the first edition of *Huckleberry Finn.*

KEMBLE, Frances Anne (Fanny Kemble) (1809–93), member of a famous English stage family, had a successful career as an actress in London, and came to America (1832), acting for two years before retiring to marry Pierce Butler, owner of a Georgia plantation. Her *Journal of Frances Anne Butler* (2 vols., 1835) is a record of her theatrical tour, freely criticizing many American customs. *The Journal of a Residence on a Georgian Plantation*, written during the winter of 1838–9, was not published until 1863, when it was meant to influence British opinion against the South, whose slavery she detested. In 1846 she left her husband, returned to the London stage, wrote *A Year of Consolation* (1847), and a year later became involved in a notorious divorce suit. Afterward, in the U.S., she gave public readings of Shakespeare and wrote plays, volumes of poetry, criticism, and autobiography, and *Far Away and Long Ago* (1889), a rambling novel of the Berkshires, where she made her home. Owen Wister was her grandson.

KEMP, Harry (Hibbard Kemp) (1883–), born in Ohio, has been called 'the tramp poet,' because of his vagabond career. His early poetry in *The Cry of Youth* (1914) and *The Passing God* (1919), quiet neoclassical verse, was completely out of keeping with his personality as revealed in *Chanteys and Ballads* (1920). *Tramping on Life* (1922) is a lusty autobiographical narrative, and *More Miles* (1926) is a novel based on his life. Besides volumes of translations and a later book of verse, *The Sea and the Dunes* (1926), Kemp has published such varied volumes as *Boccaccio's Untold Tale and Other One-Act Plays* (1924); *The Bronze Treasury* (1927), 'An Anthology of Eighty-One Obscure English Poets'; *Don Juan's Note-Book* (1929); and *Mabel Tarner, An American Primitive* (1936).

KENDALL, George Wilkins (1809–67), with Francis A. Lumsden, founded the *New Orleans Picayune* (q.v.,1837). After an adventurous expedition to Mexico (1841), he wrote the *Narrative of the Texan Santa Fé Expedition* (1844) and served in the Mexican War. He and his partner became, through the *Picayune*, the originators of the art of war correspondence, and he graphically described the conflict in *The War between the United States and Mexico* (1851).

KENNEDY, Charles Rann (1871–), English dramatist long resident in the U.S., whose plays, all concerned with ethical problems, include: *The Servant in the House* (1908), a study of human relationships applying the teachings of Jesus to modern life; *The Winterfeast* (1908), set in the 11th-century Iceland, dealing with the effects of love and friendship turned to hate; *The Terrible Meek* (1912), a plea for pacifism; *The Necessary Evil* (1913); *The Idol-Breaker* (1914); and *The Salutation* (1925).

KENNEDY, John Pendleton (1795–1870), born in Baltimore, graduated from Baltimore College (1812) and began to practice law. Disliking this profession, he soon entered politics, educational affairs, and literature. *The Red Book* (1818–19) was a publication in the manner of Irving's *Salmagundi*. *Swallow Barn* (q.v., 1832), a series of Virginia sketches, appeared under the pseudonym Mark Littleton, and in 1835 he issued a novel, *Horse-Shoe Robinson* (q.v.). A second novel, *Rob of the Bowl* (q.v.,1838), was less successful. His literary associations at this time included contacts with most of the leading U.S. authors, and he was a patron of Poe, awarding first prize in a short story contest to 'Ms. Found in a Bottle.' In 1838 Kennedy's political career began with his election to Congress as a Whig. He was re-elected (1840, '42), and wrote a satire of Jacksonian democracy, *Quodlibet: Containing Some Annals Thereof . . . by Solomon Second-thoughts, Schoolmaster* (1840). After the death of President Harrison, Kennedy wrote *A Defense of the Whigs* (1843), attacking Tyler's political defection. His last important literary work was a two-volume biography of William Wirt (1849). In 1852 he became Fillmore's secretary of the navy and urged the expedition to Japan under Commodore Perry, as well as the second Arctic voyage of Kane. Kennedy met Thackeray during the English author's visit to the U.S. (1855–6) and furnished him information later used in *The Virginians*. He supported the Union cause during the Civil War, about which he wrote *Mr. Ambrose's Letters on the Rebellion* (1865). Posthumous publications include *Political and Official Papers* (1872), *Occasional Addresses* (1872), and *At Home and Abroad* (1872).

Kennesaw Mountain, northwest of Atlanta, Georgia, was the site of a Civil War

battle (July 1, 1864), in which the Confederates were forced to retreat from their fortified position.

Kennicott, CAROL, character in *Main Street* (q.v.).

KENT, JAMES (1763–1847), known as 'the American Blackstone,' was a New York jurist, legal commentator, and professor of law at Columbia (1794–7, 1824–6). As chief justice of the state supreme court (1804–14) and chancellor of the New York Court of Chancery (1814–23), he began the practice of delivering his opinions in writing, and some of them have been widely influential in later cases. He modified English chancery practice to conform to American constitutions, and became the virtual creator of equity jurisdiction in the U.S. His reputation depends both upon his judicial decisions and upon his *Commentaries on American Law* (4 vols., 1826–30), whose six parts deal respectively with (1) international law, (2) the Constitution and government of the U.S., from a Federalist point of view, (3) state laws, (4) rights of persons, (5) personal property, and (6) real property.

KENT, [PERCY] ROCKWELL (1882–), author and artist, whose books, illustrated by himself, are accounts of sea voyages and residences in the Arctic and South America. They include: *Wilderness* (1920), concerning his experiences in Alaska; *Voyaging Southward from the Strait of Magellan* (1924), about his journey to Tierra del Fuego; *N by E* (1930) and *Salamina* (1935), dealing with his residence in Greenland; and *This Is My Own* (1940), describing his life on his Adirondack farm. In addition to illustrations for many books, he is known for his work as a painter, primarily of landscapes, distinguished for a use of simple masses of color, and as a pen-and-ink artist and lithographer who uses a striking, stark line in a highly stylized manner.

KENTON, SIMON (1755–1836), Kentucky and Ohio frontiersman, Indian fighter, and scout under Boone, served in Clark's expedition to Kaskaskia and Vincennes. Although captured at Detroit by the British, he escaped (1779), served in attacks on the Indians in Kentucky, was a major under Wayne (1793–4), and finally served with the Kentucky volunteers in the War of 1812. He was famous in frontier legends, and figures in *Alice of Old Vincennes* and *The Crossing.*

Kentucky and Virginia Resolutions, series of bills adopted by the state legislatures, written respectively by Jefferson and Madison (1798), which stated that the Constitution established a compact of states, that the federal government had no right to utilize powers not specifically granted to it, and that the assumption of such powers made its acts unconstitutional and null. No immediate results occurred, but this was the first important statement of state rights and nullification (qq.v.), and formed a strong reply to the Federalist Alien and Sedition Acts (q.v.).

Kentucky Cardinal, A, novelette by J.L.Allen (q.v.) published in 1894. *Aftermath* (1896) is a sequel.

In the blue-grass region of Kentucky, Adam Moss, an amiable recluse, is absorbed in his love of animal nature and makes his garden a refuge for migratory birds. He is at first 'resigned' to the coming of the Cobb family, which settles next door, but soon falls in love with Georgiana Cobb. She is an elusive girl, who tantalizes Adam by her variable attitudes. Fearing that she will never have his complete allegiance, she tests him by demanding that he capture one of the Kentucky cardinal birds and present it to her in a cage. Unwillingly he does, and, when the bird dies, the lovers are grief-stricken. They quarrel, but through this experience come to understand each other, and are reconciled. In the sequel, they are married, and live happily together, reaching a compromise in their interests when he devotes himself partially to social life. The idyl soon ends in Georgiana's death at the birth of their son, and Adam is left to console himself with his devotion to nature.

Kentucky Derby, annual race for three-year-old colts, run at Churchill Downs, Louisville, Kentucky. The Derby was established in 1875, and has become the American racing classic.

Kentucky Home, My Old, see *My Old Kentucky Home.*

Kentucky Tragedy, celebrated crime known also as the Beauchamp Case. Ann Cook, after having been seduced by Colonel Solomon P. Sharp, solicitor-general of Kentucky, married an attorney, Jeroboam O. Beauchamp (1824), making him swear to kill Sharp. Several times challenged, Sharp refused to fight, and Beauchamp's murder plans were equally unsuccessful. Finally Beauchamp, in dis-

guise, stabbed Sharp to death (Nov. 5, 1825). He pleaded not guilty after his arrest, but was convicted after a long trial marked by corruption and perjury on both sides. Beauchamp was refused a pardon by the governor, and, the night before the execution, Ann joined him in his cell, where both took laudanum. When this did not kill them, they stabbed themselves. His wife died, but Beauchamp was carried to the gallows and hanged. The affair won nation-wide attention, and was the subject of pamphlets, ballads, plays, and novels. Beauchamp's *Confession* (1826) contains his own story and poems by Ann. The tragedy was treated in two plays by Chivers, and in *Politian*, *Greyslaer*, *Beauchampe*, and *Octavia Brigaldi*.

KERN, JEROME (1885–), composer of songs and operettas, whose best-known production was *Show Boat* (1927), written in collaboration with Edna Ferber, on whose novel it was based. This contained his famous song, 'Ol' Man River,' an adaptation of Negro folk music that had been popularized by Paul Robeson. Kern devoted the profits of his musical career to assembling one of the greatest of American book collections, which was dispersed in 1929.

KERR, ORPHEUS C., pseudonym of R.H.Newell (q.v.).

KETTELL, SAMUEL (1800–55) Massachusetts hack writer employed by S.G.Goodrich, edited *Specimens of American Poetry* (3 vols.,1829), an ardently patriotic collection of 189 writers, from Cotton Mather to Whittier, conceived as an answer to Sydney Smith's query, 'Who reads an American book?'

KEY, FRANCIS SCOTT (1779–1843), author of *The Star-Spangled Banner* (q.v.,1814), was known in his own time as a Maryland lawyer, temporarily associated in practice with his brother-in-law, R.B.Taney, and for his other songs and devotional pieces, posthumously published in *Poems* (1857). He also wrote *The Power of Literature and Its Connection with Religion* (1834).

Key into the Language of America, A, by Roger Williams (q.v.), published at London (1643), is an early attempt to record the language of the Indians near Massachusetts, and to describe the habits and customs of the Narragansett Indians.

KIDD, WILLIAM (*c.*1645–1701), British pirate known as Captain Kidd, made his home in New York City (*c.*1690 ff.). In 1697 he was authorized by the governor to proceed as a privateer against pirates, but failure and disease caused a mutiny among his crew, and Kidd, to save himself, was forced to turn pirate. When he returned to his home, he expected to be pardoned, but instead was sent to London under guard and was hanged for piracy. His estate was surprisingly small, and this led to tales of buried treasure, none of which has been proved true. Captain Kidd and his treasure figure in many stories, e.g. Poe's 'The Gold-Bug' and Irving's *Tales of a Traveller*.

KIEFT, WILLEM (1597–1647), was governor of New Netherland (q.v.,1638–47), his administration being noted for his autocratic policies and for the long, bloody Indian war that he precipitated. He was replaced by Stuyvesant, and was lost at sea on his return voyage to Holland, an event which John Winthrop, in his *History of New England*, regarded as the judgment of God. Kieft is satirized as William the Testy in Irving's *History of New York*.

Kilburn, ANNIE, see *Annie Kilburn*.

Killers, The, story in *Men Without Women* (q.v.).

KILMER, [ALFRED] JOYCE (1886–1918), poet, journalist, and critic, whose best-known work is the title piece in *Trees and Other Poems* (1914). He died in the second Battle of the Marne, becoming a symbol of courageous poetic idealism destroyed by war. His other books of poetry are *Summer of Love* (1911) and *Main Street* (1917).

ALINE KILMER (1888–), his widow, is known as a poet in her own right, having published *Candles That Burn* (1919), *Vigils* (1921), and other books.

KIMBALL, RICHARD BURLEIGH (1816–92), a New York lawyer mainly associated with Wall Street affairs (1840–54), until he went to Texas to become a banker and railroad financier. Among his many books are four novels valuable for their early fictional presentation of the American millionaire and the background of Wall Street: *Under-Currents of Wall-Street* (1862), *Was He Successful?* (1864), *Henry Powers, Banker* (1868), and *To-day in New York* (1870).

KING, CHARLES (1844–1933), army officer in the Civil War, various Indian campaigns, and the Spanish-American War. Besides military accounts of frontier encounters, he wrote books for boys, and such novels as *The Colonel's Daughter* (1883), *A War-Time Wooing* (1888), and *Under Fire* (1894).

KING, CLARENCE (1842–1901), born at Newport, graduated from Yale (1862), after which he made a horseback trip across the continent to work in the mines of the Comstock Lode and California. He was next engaged (1866–77) in a geological survey of the Cordilleran ranges from eastern Colorado to California, whose results were published in the co-operative *Report of the Geological Exploration of the Fortieth Parallel* (7 vols.,1870–80). This is said to have attained the highest level then reached in governmental publications. After heading the U.S.Geological Survey (1878–81), he continued his own important writings on geological and geophysical problems. His most popular work was the series of sketches, *Mountaineering in the Sierra Nevada* (q.v.,1872), scientifically accurate as well as charmingly descriptive of the region. His ability as an author is further seen in the 'Helmet of Mambrino' (*Century*, May 1886), and in the discussions with his friends, John Hay and Henry Adams, which are said to have been partly responsible for the novels, *The Bread-Winners* and *Democracy*.

KING, GRACE ELIZABETH (1851–1932), New Orleans author, whose short stories and novels of that city were a late development of the local-color movement. Her books include: *Monsieur Motte* (1888); *Tales of Time and Place* (1892); *Balcony Stories* (1893); *The Pleasant Ways of St. Médard* (1916); a novel of Reconstruction days in New Orleans; and historical and biographical works concerning the region.

KING, RUFUS (1755–1827), born in Maine, represented Massachusetts in the Congress of the Confederation and the Federal Constitutional Congress, then moved to New York and became a prominent Federalist. He served in the Senate (1789–95, 1813–25), was twice a candidate for Vice President, and did his most important work as U.S.minister to England (1796–1803, 1824–6).

CHARLES KING (1789–1867), his son, served on the staff of the New York *American Magazine* as associate editor (1823–7) and editor (1827–47). He was president of Columbia University (1849–64), and during his administration enlarged the scope of undergraduate study.

KING, THOMAS STARR (1824–64), born in New York, became a Boston Unitarian clergyman noted for his writings on natural beauties of the American landscape, including a book on the *White Hills* (1860). During the last four years of his life, he was a Unitarian pastor in San Francisco and was influential in California's choice of the Union side in the Civil War.

King Coal, novel by Upton Sinclair (q.v.), published in 1917. It is based on 'sworn testimony, taken under government supervision,' during an investigation of the Colorado coal-mining industry following the strike of 1914–15.

A wealthy college youth, Hal Warner, disguises himself as a worker, 'Joe Smith,' in order to learn the essential nature of the coal-mining industry. As a mule-tender, and later as a 'buddy,' or miner's helper, he wins popularity and self-respect by struggling for improved working conditions, safety measures, and the miners' right to join a union. His rewards are the love of 'Red Mary' Burke, a strong-willed girl of the mining camp; friendships with men of many nationalities; and an insight into the intricate system by which the coal companies dominate the social and political life of Colorado.

King Cotton, term personifying the chief staple product of the South, indicating its financial and social supremacy. Although a pamphlet, *Cotton Is King*, was published in 1855 by David Christy, the term was popularized in a speech (1858) by Senator James Henry Hammond of South Carolina during his controversy with Seward.

King George's War, see *French and Indian Wars*.

King Jasper, blank verse narrative by E.A.Robinson (q.v.), posthumously published in 1935. The symbolism is considered to refer to the destruction of the capitalistic social structure by vengeful acts of the disinherited, who also perish in the holocaust, leaving only the enduring creative principle of life itself.

The industrialist, 'King' Jasper, at the climax of a ruthless career, is apparently satisfied by his power, but actually is

disturbed by the neurotic obsession of his wife, Honoria, and by his knowledge that '. . . there are somewhere some hands at work That may destroy us if we live too long.' The dignified, tradition-bound Honoria is troubled by the love of their son for Zoë, an orphan girl of exotic beauty and cryptic wisdom. Shocked by the fact that the couple is not legally married, and frightened by Zoë's 'evil' power, Honoria refuses to recognize the girl, even when she joins the household. The elder Jasper finds Zoë's charm irresistible and takes her into his confidence, confessing his dream in which his dead friend Hebron, an inventor whose work he stole, appeared to haunt him and ride his shoulders like Sindbad's Old Man of the Sea. This dream is fulfilled when Hebron's son arrives to seek revenge, and destroys Jasper's kingdom. As the symbolic factory chimneys fall, Honoria quietly commits suicide. Jasper grimly awaits his doom, which comes when Hebron shoots him and his son, and seizes Zoë. Knowing in her mysterious way that she is destined to go on living, but 'alone,' she kills Hebron, and escapes into the night.

King of Prussia, Edict of, see *Edict of the King of Prussia.*

KING PHILIP (*d.*1676), name given by English settlers to Metacomet, Chief of the Wampanoag Indians during New England's most important Indian war. The struggle, known as King Philip's War (1675–6), consisted of sudden raids on the border towns by the Wampanoag, the Nipmucks, and the Narragansett, the latter led by Canonchet. The Nipmucks, Abnaki, and some Praying Indians later joined the struggle. The massacre at Deerfield (autumn 1675) was a prominent attack. Philip was at first successful, but in 1676 his power began to decline, and the war ended when he was treacherously shot by another Indian. The result was the practical extermination of tribal life in southern New England. The character of Philip has been variously estimated by many historians. Increase Mather's *Brief History of the War with the Indians* (1676) and William Hubbard's *Narrative of the Troubles with the Indians* (1677) are examples of the immeasurable rage of the early historians. The only historian of the time who wrote of Philip temperately is Gookin in his *Historical Account . . . of the Christian Indians*. Benjamin Tompson wrote a versified account of the war, Mary Rowlandson told of her captivity, and Thomas Church collected *Entertaining Passages Relating to King Philip's War . . .* (1716). Later versions, in which sympathy lies with Philip's followers, include *Yamoyden* by Eastburn and Sands; Stone's play, *Metamora*; Irving's essay in *The Sketch Book*; and Cooper's *The Wept of Wish-ton-Wish.*

King William's War, see *French and Indian Wars.*

King's College, see *Columbia University.*

King's Henchman, The, opera by Deems Taylor, with libretto by Edna St.Vincent Millay (q.v.).

King's Mountain, BATTLE OF, occurred in a South Carolina frontier town (Oct. 7, 1780), between British troops and a force of American backwoodsmen. The American victory greatly aided the Revolutionary campaign in the South.

KINGSLEY, SIDNEY (1906–), New York actor and playwright, whose play about the medical profession, *Men in White* (q.v.,1933), won the 1934 Pulitzer Prize. His later plays have been: *Dead End* (q.v.,1935), dealing with the crime-breeding slums of New York City; *Ten Million Ghosts* (1936), an unsuccessful play about munitions makers; and *The World We Make* (1939), an adaptation of Millen Brand's novel, *The Outward Room*, dealing with the cure of a psychopathic girl through her contact with poor, simple people.

KINO, EUSEBIO FRANCISCO (*c.*1645–1711), Italian-born Jesuit missionary in the American Southwest, arrived at Vera Cruz (1681) and labored until his death to found missions and convert Indians. His historical and autobiographical chronicle, *Favores Celestiales*, was discovered and translated by H.E.Bolton (1919).

Kinsmen, The, see *The Scout.*

KIPLING, RUDYARD (1865–1936), British poet, novelist, and writer of short stories, resided for several years after 1892 at Brattleboro, Vermont. With his brother-in-law, Wolcott Balestier (q.v.), he wrote *The Naulahka* (1892). *Captains Courageous* (q.v.,1897) is Kipling's own work concerned with the American scene.

KIRBY, WILLIAM (1817–1906), English-born novelist, went to Canada, with which his literary career is identified, after

seven years residence in the U.S. (1832–9). His most important work, *The Golden Dog* (1877), is a romance of Quebec during the period of Louis XV.

KIRKLAND, CAROLINE STANSBURY (1801–64), granddaughter of Joseph Stansbury, was born in New York City. She married Samuel Kirkland, with him conducted a seminary at Geneva and then at Detroit, and became one of the first settlers of Pinckney, Michigan. Her ideas of the West, formed by such works as *Atala*, were considerably altered when she went to live on the frontier, as indicated in *A New Home—Who'll Follow?* (q.v.,1839), written under the pseudonym Mrs.Mary Clavers, and reissued (1874) as *Our New Home in the West.* Mrs. Kirkland's later works on the frontier, *Forest Life* (1842), a series of essays, and *Western Clearings* (1845), loosely woven stories, are more self-conscious and sentimental than her humorous first book. After her return to New York City (1843), her work became conventional and she issued various stereotyped anthologies, travel letters, and didactic literary collections.

JOSEPH KIRKLAND (1830–94), her son, also possessed the ability to describe the Middle West realistically. His novels are based primarily on his own experiences and observations, and are frankly and forcefully told, lacking the romanticism so common in their time. His chief work, *Zury: The Meanest Man in Spring County* (q.v.,1887), was followed by a sequel, *The McVeys* (1888), depicting the drab life of Anne McVey and her illegitimate children by Zury. *The Captain of Company K* (1891) is a realistic novel of the Civil War, based on Kirkland's own experiences.

Kitchen Cabinet, popular name for the intimate advisers of Andrew Jackson, whose informal meetings were responsible for administrative policies over which the official cabinet had no influence.

KITTREDGE, GEORGE LYMAN (1860–), professor of English literature at Harvard University (1888–1936), whose teaching and writing has had a profound influence on American scholarship. His works include: *The Old Farmer and His Almanack* (1904); *Chaucer and His Poetry* (1915); *Shakspere* (1916); *A Study of Gawain and the Green Knight* (1916); and *Witchcraft in Old and New England* (1929).

KITTREDGE, WALTER (1834–1905), concert singer and composer, whose song *Tenting on the Old Camp Ground* (1864) was an immensely popular Civil War song, sung both in the North and the South.

Kiwanis, luncheon club primarily for businessmen and others of the so-called white-collar class, was founded in Buffalo, New York (1914), and now has 1,880 clubs in the U.S. and Canada, and a membership close to 90,000. The name is derived from an Indian word, Keewanis, which suggests the idea 'to make oneself known,' and from this has been acquired the connotation 'self-expression,' which is primarily devoted to what has been denominated as 'Service' having a direct or indirect relationship to business.

KLEIN, CHARLES (1867–1915), popular dramatist, won success with such sentimental plays as *The Auctioneer* (1901) and *The Music Master* (1904), both produced by Belasco, with Warfield in the leading roles. His later works are cleverly constructed and depend upon timely subjects for their temporary effectiveness.

Klondike gold rush, began with the discovery of rich placer deposits in Alaska and the Yukon territory of northwestern Canada (1896), causing a stampede of gold seekers from many countries (1897–9), whose main route of travel was the Yukon River. The hardships suffered by these men and the color of Klondike days are described in many personal narratives, form the basis of works by Robert Service, Stewart Edward White, Rex Beach, and Elizabeth Robins, and are most notably employed in such fiction by Jack London as *The Call of the Wild, White Fang,* and *Smoke Bellew.* (See *North Woods.*)

KNAPP, SAMUEL LORENZO (1783–1838), popular Massachusetts hack writer, who specialized in ornate, effusive, and unreliable biographies. His *Lectures on American Literature* (1829) was an early attempt to study a generally unrecognized subject, but, because he could not find enough material, Knapp padded his book with chapters on 'The Naval Character of Our Country' and other rather remote literary material.

KNEELAND, ABNER (1774–1844), New England Universalist clergyman and freethinker, whose doubts concerning the divine origin of the Scriptures appear in *A Series of Letters in Defense of Divine*

Revelation (1816), a correspondence with Hosea Ballou, and in successive liberal religious magazines that he edited. In 1838 he was jailed for his unorthodox views, although defended by Channing, Ripley, Alcott, Garrison, and Emerson, as well as Theodore Parker, who said, 'Abner was jugged for sixty days; but he will come out as beer from a bottle, all foaming, and will make others foam.' In 1839 he made an unsuccessful attempt to found a colony in Iowa for his First Society of Free Enquirers.

KNICKERBOCKER, DIEDRICH, fictitious chronicler of Irving's humorous *History of New York* (q.v.,1809) and in shorter tales and sketches dealing with the Dutch background of the state. Owing to Irving, the name became synonymous with Dutch in respect to New York. The real Knickerbocker family came to America *c.*1674, and lived chiefly in Albany county.

Knickerbocker Group, school of writers whose association was primarily geographical and due to similar literary tastes. The name was a tribute to Irving's *Knickerbocker's History of New York* (1809), and the members attempted to carry his Addisonian spirit into their superficially sophisticated work. Other than Irving, Bryant, and Paulding, the writers most generally identified with this group included Hoffman, Drake, Halleck, Verplanck, Sands, Willis, Lydia M. Child, and Epes Sargent. This New York City group was represented in *The Knickerbocker Magazine* (q.v.), but may be said to have waned after its founding. Most of the writers were pilloried in Poe's 'The Literati.'

Knickerbocker Holiday, musical play by Maxwell Anderson (q.v.) and Kurt Weill.

Knickerbocker Magazine, The (1833–65), monthly literary magazine, published at New York, was edited by Lewis G. and Willis G. Clark (1834–61). The name was a tribute to Irving, who was a contributor during its heyday, as were Longfellow, Parkman, Paulding, Hoffman, Halleck, Willis, Hawthorne, Whittier, Holmes, Bird, and Bryant. C.G.Leland was editor (1861–2), writing most of the contents himself, although Howells, Aldrich, and Fitz-James O'Brien also contributed. *The Knickerbocker Gallery* (1855) was an anthology selected from the magazine.

KNIGHT, SARAH KEMBLE (1666–1727), known as Madam Knight, was a Boston teacher, also employed in the recording of public documents. She is said to have been an early teacher of Benjamin Franklin. Entrusted with some family business, during the winter of 1704–5 she made an unaccompanied trip from Boston to New York City and back, which occupied five months. During the pauses of her horseback journeys, she kept a journal, which records events in a most amusing fashion, and comments entertainingly upon the rough roads, river crossings, intolerable inns, and the manners and speech of the inland rustics. The diary was first published by Theodore Dwight (1825), and has since been frequently reprinted, although the original manuscript is now lost.

Knights of Columbus, fraternal organization of American Roman Catholics, was founded at New Haven, Connecticut (1882), and has as its purposes the promotion of benevolence among its members, the protection of Catholic interests, and the extension of tolerance and friendly relations with the rest of the community.

Knights of Labor, workers' organization founded at Philadelphia (1869), was intended to replace craft unions by a single union that would include all types of workers, as well as other individuals who sympathized with the organized-labor movement. Terence V. Powderly (q.v.) was its leader (1879-93), and it had attained national importance by 1881, when the policy of secrecy was abandoned. As it continued to grow, important strikes were won in the Union Pacific and Wabash railways. The failure of the Missouri-Pacific strike (1886) caused a loss of prestige, and the Knights of Labor fought an unsuccessful compaign against the newly organized American Federation of Labor (q.v.). It had little influence after 1894, but did not disband until 1917.

Knights of the Golden Circle, see *Copperhead.*

Knights of the White Camellia, see *Ku Klux Klan.*

Knitters in the Sun, stories by Alice French (q.v.).

Know-Nothing movement, opposing the political influence of foreign-born groups especially the Roman Catholics, resulted in the organization of secret nativist

societies, and, during the 1840's of the American Republican party, later called the Native American party. A national convention of this group was held in 1845, and it elected various candidates in Eastern cities, but soon declined. After 1850, agitation against the supposed Irish and German Catholic political domination was renewed, with rioting and much class antagonism. At this time the Know-Nothings arose. Although never an actual party, the several organizations within the movement received this title, suggested by their extreme secrecy, and reputedly coined by E.Z.C.Judson, a prominent member. They had considerable success in local and state elections, and in 1854 abandoned secrecy to become the American party, augmented by the seceding Whigs led by Fillmore. Fillmore was the American party's presidential candidate (1856), but the group's affiliation with pro-slavery Southerners caused his defeat. In 1860 the last remnants of the organization formed the Constitutional Union party (q.v.), known derisively as the 'Do-Nothings.'

KOCH, FREDERICK HENRY, see *Carolina Playmakers.*

KOMROFF, MANUEL (1890–), born in New York, attended Yale, and became a journalist in New York and later in Russia during the revolution. Returning to New York journalism, he published *The Grace of Lambs* (1925), a volume of short stories, which was followed by a novel, *The Juggler's Kiss* (1927), and *Coronet* (2 vols.,1929), a romance tracing the decay of aristocracy from the 17th to the 20th century. *Two Thieves* (1931) is a novel about the men who were crucified with Jesus. Later novels include *A New York Tempest* (1932); *I, the Tiger* (1933); *Waterloo* (1936); *The March of the Hundred* (1939), an allegorical story of humanity in the 20 years since the First World War; and *The Magic Bow* (1940), based on the life of Paganini. Komroff has also edited numerous translations.

Koningsmarke, the Long Finne: A Story of the New World, romance by J.K. Paulding (q.v.), published in 1823, and later retitled *Koningsmarke; or, Old Times in the New World.*

This historical narrative of New Sweden (q.v.) is partly a burlesque of Scott's *The Pirate,* and also satirizes Cooper's Indian characters, the Swedes, and Paulding's contemporaries. Koningsmarke, a handsome young Finn, comes to the Swedish community of Elsingburgh on the Delaware, governed by Heer Peter Piper. Jailed for passing English coins, he is rescued when the jail catches fire. He has been badly injured and is nursed back to health by Christina, Heer Piper's daughter, with whom he falls in love. The town is betrayed by a Negro into the hands of Indians, and several of the townspeople are captured, among them Christina and Koningsmarke, who are adopted into the tribe. Just as the Finn is in danger of execution for refusing a native marriage, they are rescued by the Quaker, Shadrach Moneypenny, who ransoms them as the emissary of William Penn. Later, when the English seize the Swedish *holsings,* Koningsmarke is kidnapped, but Christina pleads for him and he is released by the governor of New York.

KOSCIUSKO, THADDEUS [TADEUSZ ANDRZEJ KOSCIUSZKO] (1746–1817), Polish military leader and statesman, came to America during the Revolution, and served as aide to Washington, officer in the Southern campaigns of Greene, and engineer at West Point. He revisited the U.S. in later years, while in enforced exile from his native country, which he had temporarily liberated from Russia.

KREHBIEL, HENRY EDWARD (1854–1923), music critic of the New York *Tribune* (1880–1923), was the author of many books, including the English translation of Thayer's *Life of Beethoven* (3 vols. 1921), *A Book of Operas* (1909), and *Afro-American Folk-Songs* (1914).

KREYMBORG, ALFRED (1883–), New York poet and playwright, whose first collection, *Mushrooms* (1916), was a self-conscious attempt to achieve direct simplicity in poetry. He next turned to poetic drama, writing *Plays for Poem-Mimes* (1918), *Plays for Merry Andrews* (1920), and *Puppet Plays* (1923), many of which were first presented by the Provincetown Players. *Less Lonely* (1923) shows the juxtaposition of personal and original themes and conventional verse forms. He continued to experiment with the sonnet form in *The Lost Sail* (1928), while *Manhattan Men* (1929) represents a midway point between his early experimentation and his later more conventional poetry published in *Prologue in Hell* (1930) and *The Little World* (1932). *Our Singing*

Strength (1929) is a history of American poetry, complemented by *Lyric America* (1930), an anthology. *Troubadour* (1925) is the autobiography of his youth on the East Side, and his later life in Greenwich Village and elsewhere, and his other books include the novels, *Erna Vitek* (1914) and *I'm No Hero* (1933), and a book for children, *Funnybone Alley* (1927). He has been active in the Federal Theatre and in radio drama, writing for the latter medium such plays as *The Planets* (1938), a modern pacifist allegory.

Kronborg, THEA, character in *The Song of the Lark* (q.v.).

KRUTCH, JOSEPH WOOD (1893–), born in Tennessee, graduated from the state university (1915), served in the First World War, and received his Ph.D. from Columbia (1923). Since that time he has been on the editorial staff of *The Nation* as dramatic critic, and has been a professor at Columbia and the New School for Social Research. His books include: *Edgar Allan Poe: A Study in Genius* (1926), an analytical biography employing psychoanalysis; *The Modern Temper* (1929), a pessimistic analysis of contemporary life, by a 'modern intellectual' who finds that science has destroyed his faith in a beneficent universe, and psychology his belief in his own nobility, so that he 'finds only in the pursuit of knowledge that which makes life worth living'; *Five Masters: A Study in the Mutations of the Novel* (1930), an analysis of Boccaccio, Cervantes, Richardson, Stendhal, and Proust, to determine whether their greatness springs from the life of their times or from an essential universality; *Experience and Art* (1932); *Was Europe a Success?* (1934); and *The American Drama Since* 1918 (1939).

Ku Klux Klan, name of two secret terrorist societies, the first, which figures in Dixon's *The Clansman*, being widespread in the South during the Reconstruction. Organized in 1865, this original Klan was composed of local vigilance committees, intended to keep the freed Negroes in a subservient condition, and used various methods of instilling fear, such as masks, flowing white robes, horseback parades and raids by night, whippings, and tarring and feathering. The first general organization of local Klans was effected in 1867, with the election of N.B.Forrest, an ex-Confederate general, as Grand Wizard, and such other officers as Grand Dragons, Grand Titans, Giants, Goblins, Furies, and Ghouls. This fantastic use of the macabre and the mysterious was effective, and the Klan remained powerful in Southern politics and local affairs into the 1870's. A kindred organization was the Knights of the White Camellia, which dominated the lower South and maintained headquarters in New Orleans. The more recent Ku Klux Klan movement has been nation-wide, originating in Georgia (1915), but spreading, as an outgrowth of wartime emotionalism, to many Northern regions. Based on a program of white supremacy, native Americanism, fundamentalism, anti-Semitism, and anti-Catholicism, it has had considerable political influence, especially in the early 1920's.

Kwasind, character in *Hiawatha* (q.v.).

KUMMER, CLARE, New York song writer and playwright. Her farces include: *'Good Gracious, Annabelle!'* (1916), *Rollo's Wild Oat* (1920), and *Her Master's Voice* (1933). In addition to many popular songs written during the first decade of the 20th century, she wrote a book of humorous verse, *Bible Rimes for the Not Too Young* (1909).

KYNE, PETER B[ERNARD] (1880–), California author, whose popular books include *Cappy Ricks* (1920), a collection of short stories dealing with a shrewd though kindly retired sea-captain and his adventures as owner of a coastwise navigation line and a lumber company. He has published several other collections of Cappy Ricks stories. *The Go-Getter* (1922), the story of a canny businessman, was popular among the sort of men who served as prototypes for the leading character.

L

Labadists, group of Protestant mystics, followers of the French clergyman Jean de la Badie (1610–74). They were most important in Holland and Germany, but founded a community in northern Maryland (1684–1730), where they engaged in farming.

LACY, ERNEST (1863–1916), Philadelphia playwright, whose blank verse dramas include *Chatterton* (1894), produced by Julia Marlowe, *Rinaldo* (1895), and *The Ragged Earl* (1899). *The Bard of Mary Redcliffe,* an unproduced drama also concerned with Chatterton, was published with his poems and other romantic plays (1916).

LADD, GEORGE TRUMBULL (1842–1921), professor of philosophy at Bowdoin and at Yale (1881–1905), was a pioneer in experimental psychology, and formulated a philosophy synthesizing the scientific view of a mechanical structure of nature with an idealistic metaphysical view of its appreciation. His books include: *Philosophy of Mind* (1891); *Philosophy of Knowledge* (1897); *A Theory of Reality* (1899); and *Knowledge, Life and Reality* (1909).

LADD, JOSEPH BROWN (1764–86), Rhode Island physician, was the author of *The Poems of Arouet* (1786), which, though in the sentimental style of the Della Cruscan school, are interesting as American predecessors of romantic poetry.

LADD, WILLIAM (1778–1841), New England author and lecturer on world peace, founded the American Peace Society (1828), edited the *Harbinger of Peace,* and wrote *An Essay on a Congress of Nations* (1840), proposing institutions whose essential features are to be found in the League of Nations, the World Court, and the Hague Conferences. His ideas were popularized by Elihu Burritt.

Ladies' Companion, *The* (1834–44), eclectic literary journal, was published monthly at New York as an imitation of *Godey's Lady's Book.* Poe's 'The Mystery of Marie Rogêt' appeared here, and other contributors included Willis, Paulding, Longfellow, Simms, and Hoffman.

Ladies' Home Journal (1883–), monthly magazine founded by C.H.K. Curtis, was edited by his wife until 1899. It was popularized by its second editor, E.W.Bok (1899–1920), who not only obtained famous contributors, but also indulged in mild campaigns for social reform and æsthetic improvements in urban life. Later editors have continued his policies with such success that the circulation is now more than 2,000,000.

Ladies' National Magazine, see *Peterson,C.J.*

Ladies' Repository, *The* (1841–80), Cincinnati monthly periodical of literature and religion, founded by the Methodists. After 1876 it was entitled the *National Repository.*

Lady Baltimore, novel by Owen Wister (q.v.).

Lady Eleanore's Mantle, allegorical tale by Hawthorne (q.v.), published in 1838 and reprinted in *Twice-Told Tales* (1842).

Lady Eleanore Rochcliffe comes to live at the Boston Province House, in the family of her guardian, Colonel Shute. Her haughty beauty distracts Jervase Helwyse, whose love she scorns, and affects all who see her. The curious mantle she wears is said to have supernatural powers, and to have some influence in the epidemic of smallpox that soon breaks out, striking first the aristocratic circle of Lady Eleanore, and then the common people she despises. At last she herself is stricken, and as she is dying confesses, 'I wrapped myself in Pride as in a Mantle, and scorned the sympathies of nature; and therefore has nature made this wretched body the medium of a dreadful sympathy.' Helwyse takes her mantle, which is burned by a mob, and the pestilence begins to subside.

Lady of the Aroostook, The, novel by Howells (q.v.) published in 1879.

Lydia Blood, a Massachusetts school teacher, sails for Venice on the *Aroostook.* She becomes the object of the attentions of Hicks, a drunken ne'er-do-well, and is saved from his advances by James Staniford, a member of Boston society. Staniford, gradually made aware of Lydia's native nobility and the quality of a

'lady' that has been veiled by her provincialisms, falls in love with her, and they are married in Venice.

Lady or the Tiger, The, short story by Frank Stockton (q.v.), which was sensationally popular when it was published in *The Century* (Nov. 1882). It was reprinted in a collection (1884), and was the subject of an operetta (1888).

A semi-barbaric ancient king invents a court of justice in which prisoners are brought into an arena and made to open one of two doors. Those who open the door behind which is placed a hungry tiger are eaten alive and adjudged guilty; those who open the other door find a beautiful lady, marry her, and are adjudged innocent. A youth dares to fall in love with the king's daughter, who returns his love, and he is sentenced to this form of trial. The princess, having ascertained which door conceals the lady and which the tiger, signals her lover to open the right-hand door. Here the tale ends: 'And so I leave it with all of you. Which came out of the opened door—the lady or the tiger?'

LA FARGE, JOHN (1835–1910), artist and author, was born in New York of French parentage. He went abroad (1856) to study painting with Couture, and met the Pre-Raphaelites and other intellectual and artistic leaders of the time. In 1876 he executed the mural decorations for Trinity Church, Boston, and thereafter he devoted himself to mural painting and the design and manufacture of stained glass, in which he achieved a high standard for modern times. Ill-health forced him to make a trip, accompanied by his friend Henry Adams, to Japan, Samoa, and the South Seas (1886). From this voyage he brought back fine watercolors and paintings, but upon his return other activities precluded further easel painting. His decorative, refined murals, in the tradition of the Italian masters, uninfluenced by the naturalism of his own period, are located in many churches and in the Minnesota state capitol. Among his books are *Considerations on Painting* (1895), *An Artist's Letters from Japan* (1897), *Great Masters* (1903), *The Higher Life in Art* (1908), and *Reminiscences of the South Seas* (1912).

LA FARGE, OLIVER [HAZARD PERRY] (1901–), ethnologist and author, after graduation from Harvard (1924) conducted archæological investigations in Arizona, Mexico, and Guatemala, and with Frans Blom wrote *Tribes and Temples* (2 vols.,1925,'27). *Laughing Boy* (q.v., 1929, Pulitzer Prize, 1930) is a novel of life among the Navajo Indians, and La Farge's later novels include: *The Sparks Fly Upward* (1931), set in Central America; *Long Pennant* (1933), a story of 19th-century New England seamen; and *The Enemy Gods* (1937), dealing with the inability of the Navajos to adapt themselves to white civilization. *All the Young Men* (1935) is a book of short stories, and *As Long as the Grass Shall Grow* (1940) is a survey of the history and present conditions of the American Indians.

CHRISTOPHER LA FARGE (1897–), his brother, is a painter and architect, and the author of two verse novels, *Hoxie Sells His Acres* (1934), set in New England, and *Each to the Other* (1939), describing the attempt of a young man to find his place in the complex modern world. *Poems and Portraits* (1941) is a collection of shorter works. They are grandsons of John La Farge.

LAFAYETTE (*or* LA FAYETTE), MARIE JOSEPH PAUL, *Marquis de* (1757–1834), French major-general in the American Revolution, arrived in America at the age of 19 (June 1777) and, with the exception of about six months, when he worked for the American cause in France, remained until the end of the war. He was constantly active, and particularly distinguished himself at the battles of Brandywine and Monmouth and in the campaign leading to the surrender of Cornwallis. After returning to France, he was associated with revolutionary activities there and consistently maintained his interest in the U.S., to which he returned briefly in 1784 and again in a triumphal tour in 1824.

LAFFITE (*or* LAFITTE), JEAN (*c.*1780–*c.*1825), French smuggler and pirate leader, with his brother Pierre operated off the coast of Louisiana. Their headquarters included the Barataria region near the mouth of the Mississippi, and the island site of the present Galveston, Texas. During the War of 1812, the Laffites refused British remuneration to engage in an attack on New Orleans, and turned over the documents containing the proposal to the U.S. An American naval force was at first sent against them, but

later Jackson accepted the aid of Laffite in the Battle of New Orleans, giving him and his men a pardon in return for their services. Another force was sent against Laffite when he resumed operations in Texas, and he departed peaceably. His end is not definitely known, and his piratical adventures and rumors of buried treasure have made him a prominent figure in folk legends.

LA FOLLETTE, ROBERT MARION (1855–1925), Wisconsin statesman, was a Republican Congressman (1885–91), but later veered from the orthodox party line as governor (1901–6) to introduce 'the Wisconsin idea,' a program to secure direct-primary legislation, tax reform, government control of railroads, and other reforms. As U.S.senator (1906–25), he supported Wilson's reform measures, but was conspicuous for his courageous independence in attempting to keep America out of the First World War. He later opposed the League of Nations and the World Court, fought against deflation and the domination of big business, and served the cause of farmers and laborers. In 1924 he ran for President on the ticket of the Progressive party (q.v.) and received nearly 5,000,000 votes, one sixth of the total. He wrote an *Autobiography* (1912), and a selection of his writings was published as *Political Philosophy* (1920).

ROBERT MARION LA FOLLETTE,JR. (1895–), and PHILIP FOX LA FOLLETTE (1897–), his sons, have continued his liberal policies, the former as a U.S.senator and the latter as governor of Wisconsin.

LAHONTAN, LOUIS-ARMAND, *Baron de* (1666–*c.*1713), French explorer, came to New France (1683) and made an unsuccessful expedition against the Iroquois. In 1687 he was sent with Duluth to Fort St.Joseph, near Detroit, a post which he capriciously abandoned the following year to make a journey of his own to the upper Mississippi. In favor with Frontenac and having distinguished himself in service, he was made lieutenant-governor of Newfoundland, which he erratically left (1693) to become an exile from French domains. His *Nouveaux Voyages*, published in Holland (1703), was translated into English with an added series of 'Dialogues' with a supposed Huron chief, Adario. His book has important information on the Indians and the flora and fauna, but contains wilfully misleading information on such subjects as the fictional River Long. His 'Dialogues,' contrasting savage with civilized life, were a source of the writings of Chateaubriand and other believers in the noble savage.

Lake Champlain, site of an American naval victory (1814) in the War of 1812, which caused the British to abandon their attempt to invade New York. The lake, discovered in 1609 by the explorer for whom it is named, forms an important link in the waterway between the Hudson and St.Lawrence Valleys, and extends from Whitehall, N.Y., to St.Johns, Quebec, about 110 miles. Crown Point and Fort Ticonderoga (qq.v.) are situated on the shores of the lake, where the first British-American naval engagement occurred in 1776.

Lake Erie, site of a naval battle (Sept. 10, 1813) in the War of 1812. Commodore Perry commanded the *Lawrence*, which flew a battle flag inscribed with the motto attributed to James Lawrence, 'Don't give up the ship.' After his flagship was rendered useless, Perry crossed to the *Niagara*, soon captured all the British vessels, and sent his famous message to General Harrison, 'We have met the enemy and they are ours.'

LAMAR, MIRABEAU BUONAPARTE (1798–1859), arrived in Texas from his native Georgia (1835) and distinguished himself at the Battle of San Jacinto. He successively held important positions in the Lone Star Republic, becoming its president (1838–41) between the two terms of Houston. He conducted his regime at Austin in a high-handed manner, and carried out his own ideas in opposition to Houston's desire for annexation by the U.S. His romantic strain may be observed in his Byronic *Verse Memorials* (1857). After serving in the Mexican War, he retired to his Richmond plantation, except for a year (1858–9) as minister to Nicaragua and Costa Rica.

LAMB, HAROLD [ALBERT] (1892–), born in New Jersey, graduated from Columbia (1916), traveled widely in the Near East, and now lives in California. His historical studies and biographies include: *Genghis Khan* (1927), *Tamerlane* (1928), *The Crusades—Iron Men and the Saints* (1930), *The Crusades—The Flame of Islam* (1931), *Nur Mahal* (1932), *Omar*

Khayyam (1934), and *The March of the Barbarians* (1940).

Lambs Club, New York theatrical organization founded in 1875, now has approximately 1500 members representing all the fine arts.

Lamplighter, The, novel by Maria Cummins (q.v.).

LAMPMAN, ARCHIBALD (1861–99), Canadian poet, whose works, *Among the Millet* (1888), *Lyrics of Earth* (1896), and *Alcyone,* are distinguished for their descriptions of native landscapes.

Lancelot, blank verse dramatic narrative by E.A.Robinson (q.v.) published in 1920. It belongs with *Merlin* and *Tristram* (qq.v.) in the author's Arthurian trilogy.

On the eve of Lancelot's departure from Camelot, where his liaison with Queen Guinevere has ended in suspicion and his own conscience-stricken resumption of his pilgrimage after 'the Light,' he is met in the king's garden by Gawaine, whose report prompts a murderous attack on Lancelot's followers. Arthur himself, finally aware of his queen's infidelity, orders her burned at the stake. Lancelot and his friends fall upon the executioners, rescue Guinevere, and murder many in the crowd, including Gawaine's young brothers. The lovers flee to Joyous Gard, where they remain for six months, during the siege that Gawaine persuades Arthur to wage. At last Lancelot sees the futility of the slaughter, and on orders from Rome returns Guinevere to Camelot. Still in banishment, he journeys to France to participate in the war which destroys Arthur's rule. Later he returns to Camelot, attends the deathbed of the penitent Gawaine, and visits Guinevere's convent. He has planned to take her to France, but she refuses to go and speeds him on his way, as his 'Voice' tells him he has reached 'the world's end':

> . . . Where the Light falls, death falls,
> And in the darkness comes the Light.

LANCELOT LANGSTAFF, pseudonym of J.K. Paulding (q.v.).

Land of Eden, see *Journey to the Land of Eden.*

Land of Little Rain, The, 14 sketches by Mary Austin (q.v.) published in 1903. Based on long personal observation, this familiar account of the land, the people, and the animals and plants is concerned with the California region 'between the high Sierras south from Yosemite—east and south . . . beyond Death Valley and on illimitably into the Mojave Desert.'

'The Pocket Hunter,' 'Shoshone Land,' and 'The Basket Maker' are quiet portraits of representative citizens in this region of high mountains and vast deserts: a gold miner who spends his life in an infrequently successful search for stray 'pockets' of precious metal; an ancient Shoshone medicine-man, homesick in exile among the Paiutes; and a widowed Paiute woman who devotes herself to rearing her son and to weaving beautiful willow baskets 'for the satisfaction of desire.' 'The Scavengers' is a study of the carrion creatures of the desert—vultures, buzzards, ravens, and coyotes—embodying the author's sense of the delicate economy of nature. 'Jimville—A Bret Harte Town' is a genial depiction of a mountain town whose life contains all the themes of Harte's sentimental fiction.

Landlord at Lion's Head, The, novel by Howells (q.v.) published in 1898.

Westover, a Boston painter, while sketching in northern New England, boards at the home of Mrs.Durgin, whose wholesome and simple young son Jeff wins his admiration. When he returns several years later, he finds Mrs.Durgin running a summer hotel to put Jeff through Harvard. Jeff, detesting academic life, manages to get himself suspended and goes abroad. In Europe he meets Genevieve Vostrand, with whom he becomes infatuated. When Mrs.Vostrand forces her daughter to marry a worthless Italian count, Jeff courts Cynthia Whitwell, a childhood friend who urges him to return to Harvard. After completing his studies, Jeff returns to Florence, where he again meets the Vostrands. Genevieve's Italian husband has died, and she and Jeff are married, as are Westover and Cynthia.

LANDON, MELVILLE DE LANCEY (1839–1910), New York journalist and humorous lecturer, who used the pseudonym Eli Perkins. He belongs to the school of Artemus Ward, whose complete works he edited (1879). His own numerous books include *The Franco-Prussian War in a Nut-Shell* (1871), *Eli Perkins at Large* (1875), and *Thirty Years of Wit* (1891).

Landor's Cottage, descriptive story by Poe (q.v.), published in 1849 as a 'pendant' to 'The Domain of Arnheim' (q.v.).

It is a detailed depiction of the New York country estate of a Mr.Landor, a simple but exquisite creation of architecture and landscape gardening, and a less elaborate counterpart of the rich domain described in the earlier story.

LANE, Sir Ralph (*c.*1530–1603), English maritime adventurer and American colonist, governed the Roanoke Island colony (1585–6), of which he wrote a glowing report, published in Hakluyt's *The Principall Navigations* . . .

Langdon, Bernard, character in *Elsie Venner* (q.v.).

LANGLEY, Samuel Pierpont (1834–1906), born in Massachusetts, became director of the Alleghany Observatory and professor of physics and astronomy at the Western University of Pennsylvania (1866–87). He made important contributions to astronomical science, especially in spectral measurements of solar and lunar radiations, and for this purpose led an expedition to Mt.Whitney (1881). From 1887 to his death, Langley was secretary of the Smithsonian Institution, and while in office founded the National Zoological Park and the Astrophysical Observatory. He is also famous for his investigations in aerodynamics, and invented the first power-driven heavier-than-air machine to make a successful flight (1896). Besides many periodical writings and reports on his varied investigations, he was the author of *The New Astronomy* (1888), a classic text on its subject.

LANGSTAFF, Lancelot, pseudonym of J.K.Paulding (q.v.).

LANIER, Sidney (1842–81), born in Macon, Georgia, was educated at Oglethorpe University, where he early showed an inclination toward a musical career. Plans for further study were interrupted by his service in the Civil War and his four-months imprisonment at Point Lookout, Maryland. Seriously ill with consumption, and suffering from poverty, he said that in the eight years after his return in 1865 'pretty much the whole of life had been merely not dying.' His novel, *Tiger-Lilies* (1867), about his experiences in the Civil War, helped him to decide that he would not settle 'down to be a third-rate struggling lawyer for the balance of my little life.' Accordingly, he turned to the writing of poetry, published his *Poems* (1877), became a flutist in the Peabody Orchestra at Baltimore, and supplemented his small income by delivering lectures, which were posthumously published as *Shakspere and His Forerunners* (2 vols.,1902). These talks brought him the position of lecturer in English literature at Johns Hopkins in 1879, and the work for his classes resulted in *The Science of English Verse* (1880) and *The English Novel* (1883). In his book on prosody he illuminates his own method by his thesis that the laws governing music and verse are identical, and that time, not accent, is the important element in verse rhythms. Lanier's complete *Poems* were collected in 1884, and are noted for the ballads and lyrics that embody his attempt to produce in verse the sound-patterns of music. His arrangements of lines and rhythms were frequently strained as well as novel, both in the emphasis on pattern-making and the interest in metaphysical conceits, and the imagery is often vague as a result of the attention to musical quality. Nevertheless, the poet's theories were successfully practiced in some of his works, outstanding among which are 'The Song of the Chattahoochee,' 'The Symphony,' and 'The Marshes of Glynn' (qq.v.). His *Poems* were reissued with additions in 1891 and again in 1916.

LARCOM, Lucy (1824–93), Massachusetts Abolitionist and author of simple poetry about nature and children, whose homely sincerity was pleasing to her generation. Her autobiographical *A New England Girlhood* (1889) gives a vivid picture of life in the Lowell mills and homes.

LARDNER, Ring [gold] W[ilmer] (1885–1933), born in Michigan, was known as a sports writer and columnist in Chicago and New York before the great success of his short stories. His first collection, *You Know Me, Al; A Busher's Letters* (1916) employs the racy idiom of the baseball diamond and describes the career of a novice on a professional team. Other books of this early period, displaying the author's talent for the humorous use of the vernacular in portraying typical Americans, include: *Bib Ballads* (1915), a collection of verse; *Gullible's Travels* (1917), satirical stories; *Treat 'Em Rough* (1918); and *The Big Town* (1921), a humorous novel. The publication of *How to Write Short Stories* (q.v.,1924), a collection, first attracted critical attention

to Lardner as a sardonic humorist exposing native follies and vices through the medium of accurate transcriptions of his characters' conversational speech. Though they seem to follow traditional methods of American humor, his stories are actually cynical and mordant treatments of the conventional subjects. The boxers, baseball players, salesmen, stock brokers, song writers, barbers, actresses, stenographers, and other 'average' characters whom he chooses to depict are reduced by the author's implied bitterness to their essential commonplaceness, cruelty, viciousness, dullness, and stupidity. This pessimistic view of characters, as well as his remarkable ability to reproduce the idioms and habits of mind of everyday people, continues to appear in Lardner's later collections of short stories: *What of It?* (1925); *The Love Nest* (q.v.,1926); *Round Up* (1929); and *First and Last* (1934). 'The Love Nest' was dramatized by Robert Sherwood in 1927, and *June Moon* (1929), written by Lardner in collaboration with George S. Kaufman, is a comedy satirizing the song writers of Tin Pan Alley. *The Story of a Wonder Man* (1927) is a satirical 'autobiography.'

Lark, The (1895–7), little magazine published by Les Jeunes, a San Francisco group of literary æsthetes led by Gelett Burgess, and including Frank Norris, Carolyn Wells, Yone Noguchi, Ernest Peixotto, and Bruce Porter. Although influenced by *The Chap-Book* and the English *fin de siècle* magazines, *The Lark* had, its editors said, 'no more serious intention than to be gay.' It was particularly noted for the drawings and nonsense verses of Burgess, whose 'Purple Cow' first pastured there. The magazine was suspended, Burgess said, because he 'wanted it to die young and in its full freshness.'

Larsen, WOLF, character in *The Sea-Wolf* (q.v.).

LA SALLE, RENÉ ROBERT CAVELIER, *Sieur de* (1643–87), French explorer and trader, whose expeditions in Canada were aided by Frontenac. He made exploring trips south of the Great Lakes during the 1670's, and returned to France to secure a trade monopoly in the valley of the Mississippi. In 1682 he descended the Mississippi and took possession of the region for France, naming it Louisiana. He was appointed Viceroy of North America, given command from Illinois to the Spanish borders, and provided with four ships and 200 colonists. His fleet by error landed in Texas (1684) instead of at the mouth of the Mississippi, and, while La Salle was trying to find the river, his men mutinied and killed him. Narratives of his enterprise appear in *The Journeys of . . . La Salle* (2 vols.,1905), and among the books about him is Parkman's *La Salle and the Discovery of the Great West* (1879).

LAS CASAS, BARTOLOMÉ DE (1474–1566), Spanish missionary and historian, called the 'Apostle of the Indies,' sailed with Columbus in 1498 to Hispaniola (Haiti) and Cuba, where he served as a missionary to the Indians and tried to improve their conditions. In striving to break the power of Spanish landholders over Indian laborers, he unfortunately introduced the plan of purchasing Negroes from Africa to serve as slaves, an action he later regretted. His religious and civil labors for the Indians later took him to Mexico, Nicaragua, Peru, and Guatemala. His *Veynte Razones* (1542) and *Brevisima Relacion de la Destruycion de las Indias occidentales* (1554) exposed Spanish cruelty to Indians and pleaded for better laws. His *Historia de las Indias*, not published until 1875–6, was used by many early historians as a valuable and often first-hand account of Spanish discoveries from 1492 to 1520.

Last Christmas Tree, The, prose poem by J.L.Allen (q.v.).

Last Mile, The, play by John Wexley (q.v.).

Last of the Mohicans, The, romance by Cooper (q.v.) published in 1826. It is the second of the Leather-Stocking Tales (q.v.).

While the French and Indians besiege Fort William Henry on Lake George (1757), Cora and Alice Munro, daughters of the English commander, are on their way to join their father, accompanied by Major Duncan Heyward, Alice's fiancé, the singing teacher David Gamut, and the treacherous Indian Magua, called 'Le Renard Subtil' by the French, whom he secretly serves. Magua's plan to betray the party to the Iroquois is foiled by the scout Hawkeye (Natty Bumppo) and his companions, old chief Chingachgook and his son Uncas, only survivors of the Mohican aristocracy. Escaping, Magua

obtains Iroquois aid and returns to capture the girls. He promises them safety if Cora will become his squaw, but she refuses, and Hawkeye arrives to rescue them. Reaching the fort, they remain until Munro surrenders to Montcalm, who gives them a safe-conduct. When they leave, however, they are set upon by Indians, and the sisters are captured. Hawkeye pursues them, finding Cora imprisoned in a Delaware camp and Alice in a Huron camp. Uncas is captured by the Hurons, and Heyward enters the camp in disguise, rescues Alice, and with Uncas escapes to the Delaware camp, where they are cordially received. Old chief Tamenund, learning the identity of Uncas, hails him as his destined successor. Magua then claims Cora as his rightful property, and Uncas is unable to object, but, joined by the English, leads his tribe against the Hurons. When Magua attempts to desert, Uncas follows, and tries to rescue Cora. Uncas and Cora are killed, and Hawkeye shoots Magua, who falls from a precipice to his death. The others return to civilization, except for Hawkeye, who continues his frontier career.

Last Puritan, The: A Memoir in the Form of a Novel, by Santayana (q.v.), published in 1936.

Oliver Alden, in whom 'puritanism worked itself out to its logical end,' is the heir of a wealthy, effete New England family. His neurotic father, Peter, a drug addict, travels about the world in his yacht, vainly seeking a purpose in life to replace the dogmas of his puritanical brother Nathaniel, and of Harriet, his conventional, narrow-minded wife. Oliver grows up without understanding or love, reared by his mother and the sentimental German governess, Irma Schlote. A solemn, precocious child, he develops an athletic body, a passion for achieving the highest and best, and a keen intelligence, which soon begins to question the decadent society in which he lives. At 17 he accompanies his father on a cruise, and finds a friend in Peter's paid companion, Jim Darnley, who is frankly animalistic and unscrupulous. Oliver attends Williams College, where he studies and plays football with equal zeal, since both are duties he must fulfil. After Peter's suicide, antagonized by Jim's parasitism, Oliver befriends Mario Van de Weyer, a cousin his father has helped to support. Educated on the continent and at Eton, Mario is an extreme contrast to Oliver, for he is a cheerful hedonist, a dilettante of florid tastes, who sincerely appreciates Oliver's austere moral distinction, but cannot admire his passionless approach to love with their cousin Edith. During a world tour following his graduation, Oliver stays with the Darnleys in England, falling in love with Jim's gentle sister Rose. Mario, who has joined the army at the outbreak of the World War, visits the Darnleys while on leave, and Rose falls in love with him, preferring his ardent vitality to Oliver's ascetic intellectualism; but Mario does not realize this, and she is heartbroken. Oliver is meanwhile increasingly self-absorbed, obsessed by spiritual questionings that sap his strength and make him febrile and neurotic. Before entering the army, he asks Rose to marry him so that she may inherit his fortune, but she refuses. Willing his estate to the Darnleys, he leaves, dejected and hopeless, to be killed in France.

Late Christopher Bean, The, play by Sidney Howard (q.v.).

Late George Apley, The, novel by J.P. Marquand (q.v.).

LATHROP, GEORGE PARSONS (1851–98), associate editor of the *Atlantic Monthly* (1875–7), was the author of 15 books, ranging from travel accounts to society novels. Following his marriage to Rose Hawthorne, he edited her father's works (1883), wrote *A Study of Hawthorne* (1876), and in 1896 adapted *The Scarlet Letter* as a libretto for the opera by Damrosch. Both Lathrop and his wife became Roman Catholics, and after his death she became a nun under the name Mother Alphonsa.

Latour, FATHER JEAN, character in *Death Comes for the Archbishop* (q.v.).

LATROBE, BENJAMIN HENRY (1764–1820), English-born architect and engineer, came to the U.S. (1796), where he introduced the Greek Revival (q.v.), substituting the whole classical form for Bulfinch's delicate treatment of the Adam style. In the Bank of Pennsylvania (1799–1801) Latrobe inaugurated the temple form for banks, and in the Bank of the United States (1819–24) he used the Parthenon as a model. Appointed surveyor of public buildings by Jefferson (1803–12), he designed the Hall of Repre-

sentatives and other buildings, and helped to rebuild the burned Capitol (1814–17). He also advised Jefferson on the classical plans for the University of Virginia, and is considered responsible for the Gothic Revival (q.v.) in the U.S., through his design (1800) for Sedgley, a Philadelphia residence. His *Journal* was published in 1905.

Latter-Day Saints, see *Mormons.*

LAUDONNIÈRE, René Goulainé de (*fl.*1562–82), French Huguenot navigator, with Jean Ribaut was sent to found an American colony, and settled the present Port Royal, South Carolina. After a revolt during the leaders' absence, another attempt was made at colonization on St. John's River, Florida. Further dissension caused Laudonnière's purchase of a ship from Sir John Hawkins, to take his people home. When Ribaut arrived, shortly afterward, to bring supplies and an order for Laudonnière's return, the departure was forestalled by a fight with the Spanish, who massacred most of the colonists. Laudonnière managed to make his way to France, where he wrote *L'Histoire Notable de la Floride* (1586), translated and published the following year in Hakluyt's *Principall Navigations.* Further information about the colony is found in a book by one of the colonists, Jacques Le Moyne, whose drawings of natives and animals are among the best of those made in early America, as well as in the account written by Ribaut (q.v.). A modern account is contained in Parkman's *Pioneers of France.*

Laughing Boy, novel by Oliver La Farge (q.v.) published in 1929, won the 1930 Pulitzer Prize.

'True . . . to the general spirit of Navajo things, to customs and character,' the story is concerned with the young Navajo silversmith and horse trader, Laughing Boy, and his love for Slim Girl, who unlike him has been educated at an American school. Attracted to each other at a tribal dance festival, they elope despite the warning of his uncle, who hears from jealous Red Man that Slim Girl is a 'bad woman.' Far from Laughing Boy's people, they live at the girl's cabin, where she weaves fine blankets and he makes silver jewelry, absorbed in their idyllic love and in saving money for the fine home of which they dream. During his horse-trading expeditions, Slim Girl continues to meet a white lover, whom she hates, but whose gifts will soon make possible a complete break with her unhappy past. On a visit to her husband's people, she realizes how far her American training separates her from them, and how intensely she wishes to return to the racial pattern. Laughing Boy feels a gap between himself and Slim Girl, which even their great love cannot bridge, but remains unaware of her physical infidelity until he surprises her with her lover, and shoots them both. Neither is fatally wounded, and Laughing Boy, matured by his disillusion, is reconciled with Slim Girl. They pack their possessions and begin a homeward trek, but during the journey Red Man shoots from ambush and kills Slim Girl. Purged of grief and vengefulness by his funeral vigil, Laughing Boy returns to the life of his tribe.

LAURENS, Henry (1724–92), South Carolina planter and merchant, whose opposition to the Townshend Acts caused him to publish *Some General Observations on American Custom House Officers and Courts of Vice-Admiralty* (1769). He was active in the Revolution, and served as president of the Continental Congress (Nov. 1777–Dec. 1778). On his way to Holland to negotiate a loan and treaty, he was captured by the British, and imprisoned for more than a year in the Tower of London, until exchanged for Cornwallis. Along with Franklin, Adams, and Jay, he was a peace commissioner at the Treaty of Paris, and continued to act as unofficial minister to England until 1784. The *Narrative* of his captivity was posthumously published with other papers by the South Carolina Historical Society (1857).

Laus Deo!, poem by Whittier (q.v.) published in 1865. In six-line stanzas of predominantly four-stress lines, the work is the poet's joyous celebration of the passage of the Fourteenth Amendment abolishing slavery, and was inspired by the 'clang of bell and roar of gun' that announced the news (Dec. 18, 1865).

LA VÉRENDRYE, Pierre Gaultier de Varennes, *Sieur de* (1685–1749), French-Canadian explorer, served in Queen Anne's War, and in Europe in the War of the Spanish Succession, before 1730, when he began at his own expense to explore western Canada, on the promise of a fur trade monopoly in the regions he might discover. With his sons and a nephew he

pushed westward, establishing a number of posts, constantly hopeful of reaching the Pacific. In 1738 he built a fort on the site of Winnipeg, and made his way overland to the upper Missouri River. In 1742–3 he sent out two of his sons on an expedition that reached as far west as the Black Hills, while his other expeditions went to the Saskatchewan and may have entered the present Wyoming. His *Journals and Letters* and those of his sons were edited and published by the Champlain Society of Toronto (1927).

LAW, JOHN, see *Mississippi Bubble.*

LAWRENCE, JAMES (1781–1813), New Jersey-born naval officer, saw his first important service in the Tripolitan War, in which he earned a reputation for gallantry. In the War of 1812 he commanded the *Hornet*, in which he defeated and sank the British brig *Peacock*, off the coast of South America. Promoted to a captaincy (1813), he commanded the *Chesapeake*, which was instructed to intercept British ships bound for Canada. He abandoned this task while en route, to fight a ship duel with the British frigate *Shannon*, which had been blockading Boston. The engagement lasted less than 15 minutes, and Lawrence, mortally wounded, shouted his famous cry, 'Don't give up the ship!', as he was carried from the deck. The *Chesapeake* was captured shortly afterward.

LAWRENCE, JOSEPHINE, novelist whose books include: *Winds in the West* (1931); *Head of the Family* (1932); *If I Have Four Apples* (1935), about a middle-class family that lives beyond its means during the depression; *Sound of Running Feet* (1937), showing how the unionization of a factory affects the individual workers; *Bow Down to Wood and Stone* (1938), character studies of three women, each possessed by a martyr complex; *A Good Home with Nice People* (1939); *But You Are Young* (1940), a story of a depression-defeated family supported by a daughter who is a manicurist; and *No Stone Unturned* (1941), characterizing a modern Micawber who procrastinates about business while devoting attention to his family.

LAWSON, JAMES (1799–1880), Scottish-born businessman and author in New York, contributed verse and articles to magazines, and was a friend of Poe, Simms, and Paulding. His books, published anonymously, include *Ontwa, the Son of the Forest* (1822), a verse narrative of Indian warfare; *Tales and Sketches, by a Cosmopolite* (1830), sentimental stories with a Scottish background; *Poems* (1857); *Liddesdale* (1874), a blank-verse tragedy concerned with Indians; and *The Maiden's Oath* (1877), a domestic tragedy.

LAWSON, JOHN (*d.*1711), English explorer and colonist, arrived in the Carolinas in 1700, and subsequently traveled some thousand miles through previously unexplored territory in the Carolinas and Georgia. During his journey he kept a minute record, which vividly described the frontier life and the flora and fauna. This was published as *A New Voyage to Carolina* (1709), reissued as *The History of Carolina* (1714, '18), although it was actually a mixture of folklore and science. After seeing his book through the press in London, he returned as surveyor-general of North Carolina, with a Swiss adventurer, Christopher De Graffenried, to found a colony of Swiss and German Palatines in North Carolina, but was seized by the Indians and put to death.

LAWSON, JOHN HOWARD (1895–), New York dramatist, whose first plays, *Roger Bloomer* (1923) and *Processional* (1925), are noteworthy examples of the use of Expressionism. His later plays, which also show his interest in the proletarian movement, are: *Loud Speaker* (1927), a farce about American politics; *The International* (1928), depicting a future world revolution of workers; *Success Story* (1932), a character study of a man who gains material power at the expense of his soul; *The Pure in Heart* (1934), concerned with the struggles of a small-town girl in New York, and her love for a convict; *Gentlewoman* (1934), a study of a rich woman who attempts an unsuccessful compromise between her love of wealth and her sympathy with the poor; and *Marching Song* (1937), concerned with a sit-down strike.

Lay Anthony, The, novel by Hergesheimer (q.v.).

Lay Preacher, The, essays by Joseph Dennie (q.v.).

LAZARUS, EMMA (1849–87), New York poet, best known for her *Songs of a Semite* (1882), which includes the poetic drama, 'The Dance to Death,' about 12th-century Thuringian Jews, and constitutes an impassioned answer to the persecution of her race in Russia. She also wrote *Ad-*

metus and Other Poems (1871); *Alide* (1874), a romance based on the life of Goethe; and *By the Waters of Babylon* (1887). She translated the *Poems and Ballads of Heine* (1881), and her collected *Poems* appeared in 1889. Miss Lazarus's love of the U.S. as a refuge for the oppressed is expressed in her sonnet to the Statute of Liberty, which was carved on the pedestal of the statue.

Lazarus Laughed, poetic drama by O'Neill (q.v.), produced and published in 1927. The New Testament story of the raising of Lazarus from the tomb is the basis of this mystic affirmation of spiritual love of life as transcending the power of earthly death. In an adaptation of Greek classic form, the play has seven masked choruses, representing seven periods of life, each of which contains seven types of character.

Jesus has departed, after causing the resurrection of Lazarus, who appears as a strange, majestic figure, voicing a 'Yes!' of exultant acceptance, and bringing, in 'the laughter of God,' a message of all-embracing love and the negation of death. The home of Lazarus in Bethany becomes known as the House of Laughter. After the crucifixion of Jesus, many of the followers of Lazarus, including his parents and sisters, are killed by the orthodox, but he continues to affirm his creed, and goes with his wife Miriam to Athens and then to Rome, where his power is manifested everywhere, affecting even Tiberius Cæsar and Caligula. Pompeia, Cæsar's mistress, kills Miriam to test Lazarus, and the dead Miriam resumes life for a moment to announce that 'There is only life.' Tiberius orders Lazarus burned to death in the amphitheatre, but is himself stabbed by Caligula, who first wishes to save Lazarus, but then, in fear and revulsion, kills him after Lazarus tells the crowd, '. . . fear not life! You die—but there is no death for Man!'

Le Bourdon, character in *The Oak Openings* (q.v.).

LEA, HENRY CHARLES (1825–1909), Philadelphia publisher and historian, whose first book, *Superstition and Force* (1866), a history of jurisprudence, led him into a lifetime study of the Catholic Church and its influence on medieval institutions, resulting in such books as *Studies in Church History* (1869), *A History of the Inquisition of the Middle Ages* (3 vols., 1888), *A History of the Inquisition of Spain* (4 vols.,1906–7), and *The Inquisition in the Spanish Dependencies* (1908). Besides other scholarly work, Lea engaged in many philanthropies, was active in politics, and aided such reforms as those in the civil service and copyright law.

LEACOCK, STEPHEN [BUTLER] (1869–), English-born Canadian author and economist, head of the department of political science and economics at McGill University (Montreal), has written such studies as *Elements of Political Science* (1906) and *The Unsolved Riddle of Social Justice* (1920), as well as works on Canadian history and biographies of Dickens and Clemens. He is best known, however, for his humorous stories and essays, combining gay absurdities with penetrating criticism of contemporary society, published in such books as *Literary Lapses* (1910), *Nonsense Novels* (1911), *Sunshine Sketches of a Little Town* (1912), *Arcadian Adventures with the Idle Rich* (1914), *Moonbeams from the Larger Lunacy* (1915), *Frenzied Fiction* (1918), *The Garden of Folly* (1924), and *Winnowed Wisdom* (1926).

Leah and Rachel, tract by John Hammond (q.v.).

Leather Stocking and Silk: or, Hunter John Myers and His Times, romance by J.E.Cooke (q.v.) published in 1854.

Set in Martinsburg (Williamsburg), Virginia, at the beginning of the 19th century, this comedy of manners has as protagonists the bourgeois and aristocratic classes of the region. Hunter John is a veteran frontiersman patterned after the middle-aged Natty Bumppo, but his Meadow Branch home is an outpost of Martinsburg society, rather than a backwoods establishment. His daughter Sally has the leading role in an amateur production of *Romeo and Juliet,* and the Romeo is young Max Cortlandt, who loves Nina Von Horn, and thus there begins the plot of romantic intrigue, involving William Lyttelton, an attorney, and Hans Huddleshingle, an unpopular aristocrat, both in love with Nina. While Max is absent on a hunting trip, Nina becomes engaged to Lyttelton. Huddleshingle is disgraced by his villainous attempt to prevent the marriage, and Max who has returned, is heartbroken and honorably disappears. Lyttelton dies, and a second romance, five years later, culminates in the happy

marriage of Nina, now an accomplished woman of the world, with Max, who has taken the name Dr.Thomas. At the same time, Sally Myers and Nina's cousin Barry, who have grown up together, are married. The narrative skips to the second generation of the families. Nina has died, Max is remarried, and his son, Max,Jr., weds the daughter of Barry and Sally. The books ends by depicting the happy old age and death of Hunter John, among his children and grandchildren.

Leather-Stocking Tales, series of five novels by Cooper (q.v.), depicting the life of the early American frontier, and deriving its title from the nickname of the hero, Natty Bumppo, so called because of his long deerskin leggings. The novels in order of composition are: *The Pioneers* (1823), *The Last of the Mohicans* (1826), *The Prairie* (1827), *The Pathfinder* (1840), and *The Deerslayer* (1841). Their sequence in relation to plot is: *Deerslayer*, *Last of the Mohicans*, *Pathfinder*, *Pioneers*, *Prairie* (qq.v.). The hero is known by the following names: 'Bumppo' or 'Deerslayer' in *Deerslayer*; 'Hawkeye' in *Last of the Mohicans*; 'Pathfinder' in *Pathfinder*; 'Natty Bumppo' or 'Leather-Stocking' in *Pioneers*; and 'the trapper' in *Prairie*. His character remains strikingly consistent throughout the series, which treats his life and adventures from youth to old age and death. The perfect woodsman, who dislikes the restraints and destructiveness of settlements, he understands and loves the forest, and his moral qualities are as great as his understanding. Generous both to friends and to enemies, he possesses a simple, stanch morality, and a cool nerve and never-failing resourcefulness.

Leavenworth, city in northeastern Kansas, the site of a federal penitentiary and a military post on which was formerly located the disciplinary barracks of the U.S.Army.

Leavenworth Case, The, novel by Anna Katharine Green (q.v.).

Leaves from Margaret Smith's Journal, novel by Whittier (q.v.).

Leaves of Grass, poems by Whitman (q.v.), whose first edition (1855) contained 12 poems, including those later entitled 'Song of Myself,' 'I Sing the Body Electric,' and 'There Was a Child Went Forth' (qq.v.). The first edition is also noted for its preface, later omitted, in which the author declares that the ideal poet must be a complete lover of the universe, draw his materials from nature, as a seer reveal the cosmic plan which harmoniously unites past, present, and future, be commensurate with his nation, and in America serve as representative of the common people, differing from them only in his superior vision. He is to discover what is permanent in flux, explain its development, and be a realist in his art. His style is to be simple and natural, without such ornamentation as conventional rime or metre, since it must have an organic growth like that of a perfect animal or tree, in which each part is in proportion and harmonious with the whole. The manner and matter of the poems in this volume were the result both of the author's unique qualities and of the numerous influences upon him (see under *Whitman*).

The second edition (1856) contained 33 poems, including 'Salut au Monde,' 'By Blue Ontario's Shore,' 'Crossing Brooklyn Ferry,' 'Spontaneous Me,' and 'Song of the Broad-Axe' (qq.v.), as well as a fulsome reply to the author's 'dear Friend and Master,' Emerson, in acknowledgment of a laudatory letter which is reprinted.

The third edition (1860) was enlarged to 456 pages, containing 122 new poems including two new sections, 'Calamus' and 'Children of Adam' (qq.v.). The latter contains 'Facing West from California's Shores' and 'Once I Pass'd through a Populous City' (qq.v.). 'Out of the Cradle Endlessly Rocking' (q.v.) is related to these groups.

The fourth edition (1867) reprints, in the copies that came last from the press, those poems published as *Drum-Taps* (q.v.,1865) and *Sequel to Drum-Taps* (1865–6), including the poems on the death of Lincoln, 'When Lilacs Last in the Door Yard Bloom'd' and 'O Captain! My Captain!' (qq.v.); the statement of religion, 'Chanting the Square Deific' (q.v.); and 'Pioneers! O Pioneers!' and 'One's-Self I Sing' (qq.v.).

The fifth edition (1871)was a reprint, with some copies having as annexes 'After All Not to Create Only,' published separately as an ode for the American Institute; and 'Passage to India' (q.v.).

The sixth edition (1876), known as the Author's or Centennial Edition, was in two volumes, the first a reprint of the

1871 edition without the annexes, and the second entitled *Two Rivulets* (q.v.), containing the annexes to the 1871 edition and other poems and prose. This edition contained a new preface, not later retained, expounding the plan and purpose of the poems.

The seventh edition (1881–2), containing some new poems, was first published in Boston, but, because of official protests against asserted indecency, was withdrawn and reissued by a Philadelphia publisher.

The eighth edition (1889), a special pocket edition, reprinted the poems of *November Boughs* (1888) as 'Sands at Seventy,' and the prose epilogue of that book, 'A Backward Glance O'er Travel'd Roads' (q.v).

The final edition under the author's supervision (1891–2) included 'Old Age Echoes,' as well as two annexes, 'Good-Bye, My Fancy' (separately issued, 1891) and 'A Backward Glance O'er Travel'd Roads.'

The standard edition was prepared by the author's executors as part of his *Complete Writings* (10 vols., 1902).

LE CONTE, JOSEPH (1823–1901), studied at Harvard under Agassiz, and was a professor of natural sciences at several Southern universities, before becoming professor of geology, zoology, and botany at the University of California (1869–1901). His most important work was concerned with the origins of mountain systems, and he was an early supporter of the theories of Darwin and Lyell. His many publications included *Evolution* (1888), *Elements of Geology* (1878, frequently revised), *Religion and Science* (1874), *Outlines of the Comparative Physiology and Morphology of Animals* (1900), an *Autobiography* (1903), and a journal of experiences in the Confederate Army, *'Ware Sherman* (1937).

Ledger, see *New York Ledger.*

Led-Horse Claim, The: A Romance of a Mining Camp, novel by Mary Hallock Foote (q.v.) published in 1883.

Cecil Conrath, sister of the superintendent of the Shoshone mine in Colorado, meets Hilgard, superintendent of the rival Led-Horse mine, and they fall in love, although the affair is hindered by enmity between the personnel of the two enterprises. Conrath secretly pushes his shafts into the Led-Horse claim, and attempts to jump it, but Hilgard's men defend their property, and in a shirmish Conrath is supposedly killed. Although the shooting was justified, and it is not certain that Hilgard fired the fatal shot, Cecil refuses to marry him. He goes to New York, falls ill, and is saved from death only by Cecil's arrival to nurse him. Her family disapproves, but the two are married. Later her brother is found to have escaped, continued his criminal career, and not to have died until long afterward.

LEDYARD, JOHN (1751–89), abandoned his studies at Dartmouth to go to the Mediterranean, and subsequently accompanied Cook to the Sandwich Islands, where he made acute observations on the people and their society, publishing *A Journal of Captain Cook's Last Voyage to the Pacific Ocean* (1783). Prior to his return to America (1782), Ledyard was in the British navy and went to Cadiz. He next made his way on foot across Europe and Siberia to Irkutsk, where he was imprisoned as a supposed spy. There he wrote an informal journal of recollections and anthropological information deduced from his travels. Returning to London, he began a trip to Africa, but died at Cairo.

LEE, ANN (1736–84), born in England, joined the society of the Shakers (1758), whose worship centered in the open confession of sin, and who prophesied the second appearance of Christ. As Mother Ann, she became the acknowledged leader of this sect, called Shakers because of their physical manifestations of spiritual influence while engaged in worship. They were also called The Millenial Church, but their proper title was The United Society of Believers in Christ's Second Coming. Having received a vision, Mother Ann emigrated to America (1774), where she continued her religious work and preached her doctrines opposing war, oaths, and sexual relations. In 1781 she made a tour through New England, arousing much antagonism because she was regarded by her followers as the second appearance of Christ, and because she claimed the gift of discerning spirits and working miracles. As a result of her work, a communal Shaker society was founded (1787) at Mount Lebanon, near Albany, New York. Other societies followed, and they continue to exist, although the membership has declined since 1860. The Shakers are uniformly and soberly garbed,

surrender all property on entering the society, follow rules of celibacy and pacifism, and practice a variety of Christian socialism.

LEE, ARTHUR (1740–92), member of the famous Virginia family, brother of R.H. Lee, was educated at Eton and Edinburgh (M.D.,1764), practiced medicine at Williamsburg, and went to London (1768) to study law and prepare for his diplomatic career. In the *Virginia Gazette* (1768), he published 'The Monitor's Letters,' which supplemented Dickinson's *Letters from a Farmer*, and he continued his literary contributions to the colonial cause in other letters and in *An Appeal to the Justice and Interests of the People of Great Britain* (1774) and *A Second Appeal* (1775). As a result of these pamphlets, he was appointed the London agent for Massachusetts (1770–75) and secret agent of the Continental Congress (1775). With Franklin and Silas Deane he was appointed (1776) to negotiate a treaty of alliance with France, and to solicit aid for the Revolution. Although they accomplished their ends, Lee and his colleagues were troubled by constant friction because his vivid imagination led him to accuse them of treason and fraud, when at worst they were guilty only of errors. Deane was recalled because of Lee's letters to Congress. After Lee's return to America (1780), he served in the Virginia legislature and in Congress (1782–4), where he had further controversies with fellow members.

LEE, CHARLES (1731–82), English-born soldier of fortune, served in the French and Indian War and in the Polish army, returning to America (1773) with a vague desire to fight for liberty against the Tory party. After writing an attack on Myles Cooper, and otherwise advertising himself, he became affiliated with the colonial cause and was made a major-general in the Continental Army. Because of his self-interested ambition and his belief that the Continental Army could not survive a pitched battle, he ignored orders to join Washington, whose retreating forces Howe was attacking. He was then surprised and captured in New Jersey by the British, who imprisoned him (Dec. 1776–May 1778). During his confinement he wrote a document, discovered in 1858, which seems to indicate that he was treasonably advising Howe on methods of attack. Upon his release he returned to Washington's army. While leading the attack on Monmouth, he suddenly retreated without warning, and Washington was forced to reform his forces. Following the battle, he wrote an insulting letter to the general, demanding an apology, and was dismissed from the army for a year. His insulting letters to Congress and his 'Vindication' (1778) brought about his final dismissal.

LEE, ELIZA BUCKMINSTER (*c.*1788–1864) New Hampshire author, whose works include: *Sketches of a New England Village* (1838), *Delusion; or, The Witch of New England* (1840), *Boston Two-Hundred Years Ago* (1848), and translations from Richter and other German authors to whom she had been introduced as a follower of Carlyle. Her *Memoirs* of her father, Joseph Buckminster, and her brother, Joseph Stevens Buckminster, were published in 1849.

LEE, HENRY (1756–1818), known as 'Light-Horse Harry,' was an officer in the Revolutionary War, whose cavalry and infantry, known as 'Lee s Legion,' won a notable victory at Paulus Hook near New York and was active in the Southern campaign. After the war, he was governor of Virginia (1792–5) and headed the army that quelled the Whisky Rebellion in Pennsylvania. As a member of Congress, he wrote the *Resolutions* on the death of Washington (Dec. 26, 1799), containing the words, 'first in war, first in peace, and first in the hearts of his countrymen.' His *Memoirs of the War . . .* were published in 1812. He was the father of R.E.Lee.

LEE, RICHARD HENRY (1732–94), brother of Arthur Lee, was a distinguished Revolutionary patriot and statesman. In the Virginia house of Burgesses (1758–75), he prepared memorials against the stamp tax and organized the Westmoreland Association (1766), a nonimportation group, in general working with Patrick Henry and Jefferson for radical measures. He organized intercolonial committees of correspondence, as well as a further plan to boycott British trade, the Continental Association. He was a member of the Continental Congress (1774–80, 1784–7), signing the Declaration of Independence and serving a year as president of the Congress. He opposed the passage of

the Constitution because it lacked a bill of rights, proposed a 'consolidated' rather than a federal government, and did not call for a sufficiently democratic lower house. His views were set forth in two pamphlets, known as 'Letters of the Federal Farmer' (1787–8), which constituted the chief literary opposition to *The Federalist*. After the ratification, he was elected a U.S.senator (1789–92) and was instrumental in the passage of the Bill of Rights, being himself the author of the 10th Amendment.

LEE, ROBERT E[DWARD] (1807–70), son of Henry Lee, was born in Virginia, graduated from West Point (1829), and served as an army engineer and as an officer in the Mexican War. He was superintendent of West Point (1852–5), and commanded a cavalry regiment in Texas, although he spent much time at his Virginia home, Arlington, and commanded the troops that suppressed John Brown's raid on Harpers Ferry. Although he sympathized with the Union cause and hoped for a successful compromise, Lee was determined not to fight against his own state. He was offered the field command of the Union Army by Lincoln, but declined, resigned his post, and became commander of the Virginia troops in the Confederate Army. He shortly became a general and military adviser to President Davis. In the field he was successful in the Seven Days Battles (q.v.), which checked McClellan, and in the second Battle of Bull Run and the battles of Antietam, Fredericksburg, and Chancellorsville (qq.v.). His second attempt to invade the north was checked in the Battle of Gettysburg (q.v.,July 1863), following which he attempted to resign, but was persuaded to continue in command. Thereafter he fought courageously but always on the defensive, in the Battles of the Wilderness, Spottsylvania, and Cold Harbor (qq.v.). Appointed commander-in-chief of the Confederate forces in February 1865, he was forced to surrender two months later at Appomattox (q.v.). After the war he served as president of Washington College (Virginia), which was renamed Washington and Lee in his honor, after his death. The hero of the 'Lost Cause,' Lee has won universal admiration for his sincerity, chivalry, and courage in the face of impossible odds. The best-known biography is that by D.S.Freeman (4 vols.,1934–5).

Leeds, NINA, heroine of *Strange Interlude* (q.v.).

LEEDS, TITAN (1699–1738), Philadelphia publisher of *The American Almanack*, mainly remembered as the victim of a hoax by Benjamin Franklin. In *Poor Richard's Almanack* (1733), Franklin predicted Leeds's death, 'on Oct. 17, 1733, 3 hr. 29 m., P.M.' Despite Leeds's denial, dated October 18, Franklin in his almanac declared 'there is the strongest probability that my dear friend is no more . . . Mr.Leeds was too well bred to use any man so indecently and so scurrilously' as Poor Richard had been in Leeds's protest. The amusing controversy, inspired by the 'Bickerstaff' hoax of Swift (1708), continued until the actual death of Leeds.

DANIEL LEEDS (1652–1720), his father, had established the family reputation as almanac makers by his annual publications begun in 1687. Although originally a Quaker, he later wrote pamphlets accusing George Fox of forgeries and William Penn of concealing evidence of them.

LEES, ANN, see *Lee, Ann.*

LE GALLIENNE, RICHARD (1866–), English journalist, essayist, poet, and novelist, was originally associated with the *fin de siècle* æsthetes. His early verse and epigrammatic prose shows the strong influence of Oscar Wilde. After coming to the U.S., he modified his early preciosity to some degree, although his work continued to indicate his allegiance to the English school of the 1890's. His books include *My Ladies' Sonnets* (1887) and *The Lonely Dancer* (1913), poems; *The Quest of the Golden Girl* (1896), a prose fantasy; *Orestes* (1910), a tragedy; *The Romantic Nineties* (1925), his literary reminiscences; and anthologies exhibiting the tastes of his own period.

EVA LE GALLIENNE (1899–), his daughter, was born in London, where she made her stage debut in 1915. She has acted in such plays as Molnar's *Liliom*, Hauptmann's *Hannele*, and Ibsen's *Hedda Gabler* and *The Master Builder*. In 1926 she founded the Civic Repertory Theatre in New York, where she was manager, director, and actress. She published her autobiography, *At* 33 (1934).

LEGARÉ, HUGH SWINTON (1797–1843), South Carolina lawyer and statesman, served as U.S. attorney-general under

Tyler, and as secretary of state *ad interim* (1843) upon the resignation of Webster. He was the great cham of Charleston literature, and his critical opinions had a profound effect upon the Southern cultural renaissance, which was partly expressed in his *Southern Review* (1828–32). His miscellaneous writings were collected in two volumes (1845–6).

Legend of Sleepy Hollow, The, short story by Irving (q.v.), possibly based on a German source. It was published in *The Sketch Book* (1820).

Ichabod Crane, an assertive, ingenuous Yankee schoolmaster, lanky and angular in appearance, lives among the Dutch folk of Sleepy Hollow on the Hudson, in post-Revolutionary days. He loves Katrina Van Tassel, daughter of a rich farmer, and is the victim of many pranks by the friends of his chief rival for her affections, Brom Van Brunt or Brom Bones, a reckless horseman and neighborhood hero. At an autumn quilting party at Van Tassel's, the guests entertain themselves with stories of ghosts and witches, and Brom tells of the headless horseman supposed to haunt the region. Ichabod is discouraged in his suit for Katrina, and on his way home, late at night, riding a borrowed plow-horse, is frightened by a headless apparition that rides after him, and throws a round object at his head. Ichabod is never again seen in Sleepy Hollow, although the next morning the round object is discovered to be a pumpkin. Brom marries Katrina, and Ichabod's tale becomes a legend of the countryside.

Legends of New England, prose and verse collection by Whittier (q.v.).

Legends of the Conquest of Spain, collection by Irving (q.v.).

Legends of the Province House, see *Twice-Told Tales*.

LEGGETT, WILLIAM (1801–39), was assistant editor and part owner of the New York *Evening Post* (1829–36) under Bryant, in which capacity he advocated Jacksonian principles and was an oracle of radical Democrats and Abolitionists. In 1837 he established *The Plaindealer*, in which he continued his trenchant editorial policy. *Leisure Hours at Sea* (1825) and *Journals of the Ocean* (1826) were volumes of poetry which grew out of his early life as a midshipman, and *Naval Stories* (1834) was a prose collection. His short stories concerned with the West were published as *Tales and Sketches by a Country Schoolmaster* (1829), and his *Poetical Writings* were collected in two volumes (1840).

Legrand, WILLIAM, character in 'The Gold-Bug' (q.v.).

Legree, SIMON, character in *Uncle Tom's Cabin* (q.v.).

Leicester, romantic tragedy by William Dunlap (q.v.), produced in 1794 as *The Fatal Deception* and published under the present title (1807).

Matilda persuades her paramour, Henry Cecil, to murder his friend Leicester. Instead, he mistakenly stabs his own brother, Dudley, who with his wife Edwina has sought refuge with him after slaying another brother. Edwina goes mad, accusing herself of the murder of her husband, while Matilda commits suicide and Henry kills himself with Leicester's sword. Leicester, pardoning his fellow sinners, departs.

LEIF ERICSSON (*fl.*999–1003), son of Eric the Red (*c.*950–*c.*1003), colonizer of Greenland, was probably born in Iceland and reared in Greenland. Converted to Christianity (*c.*999) in Norway, he was commissioned by the king to carry the faith to Greenland. According to the 'Saga of Eric the Red' (in the *Hauksbók*), he was blown off his course during the voyage from Norway to Greenland in the year 1000, and, after passing Helluland (supposedly Newfoundland) and Markland (supposedly Nova Scotia), he landed at Vineland (most frequently identified with Maine, Massachusetts, and other parts of New England). Here he is believed to have built houses, and to have remained long enough to load his ship with cargo. Leif's brothers, Thorwald and Thorstein, are said to have made separate trips to the new country, where Thorwald was killed in an Indian skirmish. Another account of Leif's discovery is found in the 'Saga of Olaf Tryggvason' (in the *Flateyjarbók*), in which it is said that he deliberately voyaged to the transatlantic continent (*c.*1003). Both of the sagas, in their earliest manuscript form, date to the 14th century, and comprise the only definite evidence of Leif's discovery. In the 19th century, there was an attempt to prove his discovery by some inscriptions on the

Dighton Rock in Massachusetts, which have since been proved fairly conclusively to be Indian. Other evidence cited was the peculiar Newport Tower, whose construction has, however, been shown to be similar to that of a certain windmill in England, and a skeleton discovered at Fall River, whose destruction shortly after the discovery left in doubt the question whether it was Indian or Norse. The consensus of opinion is that Leif discovered America, but that there is no evidence of his landing in New England or of any attempt to colonize the country.

LEISLER, JACOB (1640–91), German-born settler of New York, in 1689 led an anti-Catholic group to seize the government and name him lieutenant-governor. Although he acted as *de facto* governor, he was not recognized by the crown, and a new governor and military commission were dispatched, whose conflict with Leisler almost brought about a civil war. After a trial for treason, he was hanged. For several decades, the colony's politics continued to be split between Leislerians and Anti-Leislerians. He figures in the historical plays, *Jacob Leisler* (1848) by Cornelius Mathews, and *Old New York, or Democracy in* 1689 (1853) by Elizabeth Smith, as well as in Ingraham's romantic novel, *Leisler; or, The Rebel and the King's Man* (1846).

Leisure Class, Theory of, see *Theory of the Leisure Class.*

LELAND, CHARLES GODFREY (1824–1903), Philadelphia author and editor, whose early teachers included Bronson Alcott, attended the College of New Jersey, Heidelberg, and Munich. His first book, *Meister Karl's Sketch-Book* (1855), was half way between the Irving tradition and his own dialect humor, which asserted itself in 'Hans Breitmann's Barty,' published in *Graham's Magazine* (May 1857) during his brief editorship. He continued to write amusing dialect poems, which were finally gathered in *Hans Breitmann's Ballads* (1914). He edited *Vanity Fair* (1860–61), *The Knickerbocker Magazine* (1861), and a strong Union paper, *The Continental Monthly* (1862–3). His many activities included the study of gypsy lore and language, about which he wrote; Roman historical and literary scholarship; the study of Indian legends; mystic and occult knowledge; and the introduction of industrial education in public schools.

Leland Stanford Junior University, see *Stanford University.*

L'ENFANT, PIERRE CHARLES (1754–1825), French-born military engineer and architect, was an officer in the Revolutionary War. He is best known for his radial design of the city of Washington, D.C. (q.v.), which was accepted in 1791, but whose execution was not begun until the end of the 19th century. In remodeling the old City Hall of New York to create Federal Hall (1789), the first Capitol of the U.S., he used the classical orders typical of the period.

Lennie Small, character in *Of Mice and Men* (q.v.).

LENNOX, CHARLOTTE RAMSAY (1720–1804), born in New York, was sent to England at the age of 15, and during her long life there won a literary reputation, mainly for her sentimental novels of manners. Her most successful work, *The Female Quixote; or, The Adventures of Arabella* (1752), however, burlesqued the lengthy French romances by telling of the adventures of a girl who molded her life on such works. She dramatized this as *Angelica; or, Quixote in Petticoats* (1758). *The Life of Harriot Stuart* (1750), *The History of Henrietta* (1758), *Sophia* (1762), and *Euphemia* (1790) resemble the romances she burlesqued in her satire, and the first and last are set partly in America. Her other books included *The Sister* (1769), a dramatization of *Henrietta; Old City Manners* (1775), a modernization of *Eastward Hoe;* and *Shakespear Illustrated* (1753). She was a friend of Johnson, Richardson, Fielding, and Garrick.

Lenore, lyrical ballad by Poe (q.v.), published as 'A Pæan' in *Poems* (1831) and considerably revised in later versions (1836, 1843). In four stanzas of seven-stress lines, preserving the fundamental ballad rhythm, it celebrates the death of the poet's beloved:

> Ah, broken is the golden bowl!—the spirit flown forever!
> Let the bell toll!—a saintly soul floats on the Stygian river.

LEONARD, DANIEL (1740–1829), Loyalist writer, contributed to *The Massachusetts Gazette and Post Boy* a series of articles, signed Massachusettensis, which in

that critical period (Dec. 1774–April 1775) was said by John Adams to shine among the Tory writings 'like the moon among the lesser stars.' Adams replied to these letters under the pseudonym Novanglus in *The Boston Gazette*. During the Revolution, Leonard fled to Halifax and England, and was rewarded with the office of Chief Justice of Bermuda.

LEONARD, WILLIAM ELLERY (1876–), New Jersey-born professor of English literature at the University of Wisconsin, whose poems have been published in *Sonnets and Poems* (1906), *The Vaunt of Man* (1912), *The Lynching Bee* (1920), the sonnet sequence *Two Lives* (1922), *Tutankhamen and After* (1924), the selected poems *A Son of Earth* (1928), and *The Midland City* (1930). The poetry in these books, often conventional in form and traditional in diction, is nevertheless marked by a passionate, ironic intensity, and an unusual revelation of personal psychological states. Leonard is also known for his verse translations of Lucretius and Beowulf, and for his psychoanalytic autobiography, *The Locomotive-God* (1927).

Leonor de Guzman, romantic drama by G.H.Boker (q.v.).

Les Jeunes, see *Lark, The.*

LESLIE, ELIZA (1787–1858), Philadelphia author and editor, whose short stories, juvenile tales, and books of advice were immensely popular in her time. *Amelia, or a Young Lady of Vicissitudes* (1848) was her only story approaching the dimensions of a novel, and her reputation was mainly based on magazine pieces, such as 'Mrs.Washington Potts,' which won a prize in *Godey's Lady's Book*. She published three series of *Pencil Sketches, or, Outlines of Character and Manners* (1833,'35,'37).

LESLIE, FRANK (1821–80), the assumed name of Henry Carter, English-born engraver and publisher of illustrated journals, emigrated to New York (1848), and there had a great success with such magazines as *Frank Leslie's Popular Monthly* (q.v.), which he founded in 1876. This was partly due to his method of illustrating current events, dividing his drawings into blocks to be distributed among several engravers and afterward reassembled. In this way, his illustrations reached the public long before those of his competitors. His widow, Miriam F. Leslie, carried on the business and was the author of numerous feminist and travel books.

Lesson of the Master, The, tales by Henry James (q.v.).

Letter to His Countrymen, tract by Cooper (q.v.).

Letter to the Sheriffs of Bristol, by Edmund Burke, published in 1777. After the parliamentary defeat of a resolution for the revision of all acts which antagonized the American colonies, members of the British Whig party withdrew on all questions relating to America. This partial secession called forth Burke's letter, which elaborately defended his opposition to the government measures, and reaffirmed the principles of his speeches *On American Taxation* and *On Conciliation with the American Colonies* (qq.v.).

Letters from a Farmer in Pennsylvania to the Inhabitants of the British Colonies, by John Dickinson (q.v.), published in the *Pennsylvania Chronicle* (1767–8) and reprinted as a pamphlet (1768). In these letters, Dickinson applied the political philosophy of Locke to the objections to British taxation. Contending that the authority of government rests on a social compact, and that the object of government is the protection of the inalienable right of property, any attempt at external, arbitrary taxation is contrary to English principles and law. In a clear, sober style, he urges the colonists first to attempt legal petition, then boycott, and finally, if peaceable methods fail, force of arms.

Letters from an American Farmer, 12 essays by Crèvecœur (q.v.), published in London in 1782 under the pseudonym Hector St.John. These charming and informative essays are mainly concerned with sketching the physical and social conditions of American rural life. The author fluctuates between the lover of nature and Rousseauistic idealist, and the realistic farmer who writes of hard, unpleasant facts. As a theorist, he was ecstatic concerning America as an asylum for the oppressed and a melting pot for many races; as an emigrant and farmer he described the frontier as it actually was, the difficulties of agriculture, and the warfare between different parts of animal nature. Half of the letters are concerned

with the education, employment, manners, and customs of Americans at Nantucket, Martha's Vineyard, Charleston, and elsewhere. The third letter answers the question 'What is an American?' by stating that, as the product of the melting pot, he is a man who acts on new principles, and must therefore entertain new ideas and new opinions. The eleventh letter describes a visit to John Bartram, and the last depicts the difficulties of a 'frontier man,' menaced on one side by savages, and on the other by the unsettled conditions of a Revolution in which he agrees with neither of the opposed groups.

Letters of the British Spy, ten Addisonian essays by William Wirt (q.v.), published in 1803. Purportedly from an English traveler to a member of Parliament, they present a vivid picture of life in the contemporary Southern states of the U.S.

Letters of a Japanese Schoolboy, humorous work by Wallace Irwin (q.v.).

Letters of Cato, see *Cato*.

Letters of Fabius, see *Dickinson, John*.

Letters of Jonathan Oldstyle, Gent., satirical papers on New York society written by Irving, were published in the New York *Morning Chronicle* (1802–3).

Letters of the Federal Farmer, see *Lee, R.H.*

LEUTZE, Emanuel (1816–68), German Düsseldorf-trained painter, is of historical importance for his large, detailed, theatrical canvas of *Washington Crossing the Delaware*, now in the Metropolitan Museum. He returned to the U.S. (1859) from a 20-year residence at Düsseldorf, to paint the stairway of the national Capitol with the historical, allegorical *Westward the Course of Empire Takes Its Way*.

Levelers, politico-religious sect in England during the Puritan revolution. They were the most radical of dissenters, demanding a republic with a representative house elected by full manhood suffrage, complete religious toleration, and abolition of the class system. Their communistic ideas were supported by religious beliefs. Roger Williams was in sympathy with the movement.

LEVERETT, Sir John (1616–79), emigrated to Boston (1633), but returned to England (1644) to serve in the parliamentary army. Again in Massachusetts (1651), he was prominent in politics, and because of his friendship with Cromwell was appointed colonial agent in England (1653–62). He was elected governor of Massachusetts (1673) and re-elected annually until his death, during which period he was active in King Philip's War and in the expulsion of the French from Maine.

John Leverett (1662–1724), his grandson, was a prominent lawyer and judge and president of Harvard (1707–24), having been virtual head of the college from 1685 to 1700. Because of his liberal religious teachings and his introduction of modern literature, he was accused by Cotton Mather of having a subversive influence.

LEVIN, Meyer (1905–), Chicago author, graduated from the University of Chicago (1924) before becoming a journalist, which career formed the background of his first novel, *Reporter* (1929). His other novels are: *Frankie and Johnny* (1930), a love story; *Yehuda* (1931), dealing with life on a Zionist farm commune in Palestine; *The New Bridge* (1933), concerned with a family evicted from its tenement home; *The Old Bunch* (1937), a realistic, panoramic story of the children of Russian-Jewish immigrants growing to maturity in Chicago between 1921 and 1934; and *Citizens* (1940), a dispassionate analysis of the Chicago Little Steel strike and Memorial Day battle of 1937, as seen through the eyes of a young doctor who figured in *The Old Bunch. Golden Mountain* (1932) is a collection of tales retold from Hebrew, Yiddish, and German sources.

LEWIS, Alfred Henry (*c.*1858–1914), was born in Cleveland, Ohio, where he was a lawyer and city attorney until 1881, when he became a wandering cowboy in Kansas, Texas, New Mexico, and Arizona. Returning to Kansas City, he entered journalism, and later went to Washington as a newspaper correspondent, becoming head of the Washington bureau of the Hearst newspapers. During the last 17 years of his life he contributed fiction and articles to popular magazines, and for a time edited *The Verdict* (1898–1900), a Democratic paper. His fictional biographies of American historical figures are negligible, as are his novels of politics and the underworld, but he wrote important fiction concerning the Western frontier life he knew as a young man. His six

volumes of Wolfville stories, published under the pseudonym Dan Quin, present an authentic picture of cowboy and mining life in the Southwest, told in the form of discursive, humorous, drawling reminiscences by an 'Old Cattleman.' These books are: *Wolfville* (q.v.,1897); *Sandburrs* (1900); *Wolfville Days* (1902); *Wolfville Nights* (1908); *Wolfville Folks* (1908); and *Faro Nell and Her Friends* (1913).

LEWIS, CHARLES BERTRAND (1842–1924), Ohio humorist, whose descriptive and humorous sketches in the *Detroit Free Press* won him a contemporary reputation. Much of his writing was collected in books, typical examples being *Brother Gardener's Lime Kiln Club* (1882), a parody of a Negro society, and *Trials and Troubles of the Bowser Family* (1889), about the domestic tribulations of a middle class family. He wrote under the pseudonym M.Quad.

LEWIS, ESTELLE, see *Lewis, Sarah.*

LEWIS, JOHN L[LEWELLYN] (1880–), after employment as a mine worker became an organizer for the A.F.of L. and later president of its affiliated organization, the United Mine Workers. In this position he later became an outstanding champion of the principle of industrial unionism, and in 1935, opposing the A.F.ofL.'s policy of craft unionism, founded the Committee for Industrial Organization, nominally within the parent body. He led the C.I.O. in the disputes leading up to its break with the A.F.of L. in 1938, and was president of the resulting Congress of Industrial Organizations (q.v.) until he resigned (1940) after an unsuccessful attempt to lead his unions against a third term for Roosevelt.

LEWIS, MERIWETHER (1774–1809), was reared in Virginia and Georgia, and first entered military service as a member of the militia that suppressed the Whisky Rebellion. After 1795 he was stationed at various frontier posts and had an opportunity to learn the language and customs of the Indians. Upon the election of his friend and former neighbor Jefferson, Lewis received the post of private secretary to the President. Jefferson favored Lewis's project of exploring a land route to the Pacific, and Congress appropriated $2,500 for this purpose. With his companion officer, William Clark (q.v.), he mustered his men in Illinois in the winter of 1803–4. The expedition followed the Missouri River to its source, made a long portage overland through the Rockies, and descended the Columbia River to the Pacific Ocean. Sacagawea, the Shoshone 'Bird Woman,' aided them as interpreter, guide, and peacemaker. After many difficulties, including encounters with hostile Indians, they returned overland to St. Louis (Sept. 1806). Lewis, although nominally co-commander, was the ultimate authority during the journey, and was rewarded for his success by his appointment as governor of Louisiana Territory. He died mysteriously in central Tennessee, while on his way to Washington, probably having been murdered, although Jefferson assumed that his death was suicidal. The first report of the expedition appeared as a *Message from the President . . . Feb.* 19, 1806. The *History of the Expedition under the Command of Captains Lewis and Clark* was edited in 1814 by Nicholas Biddle and Paul Allen, from material left by Lewis and lent by Clark. The most complete account was edited by R.G.Thwaites as *The Original Journals of the Lewis and Clark Expedition* (8 vols., 1904–5).

LEWIS, RICHARD (1699?–1733?), emigrated to Maryland (*c.*1725) and published a translation of Edward Holdsworth's *Muscipula* (1728), a popular 18th-century Latin satire on the Welsh. Through Governor Calvert he obtained a clerkship in the Assembly, and he seems to have been a schoolmaster at King Williams School (Annapolis). He wrote a 'Description of Spring,' a characteristic 18th-century descriptive poem dealing with American scenery, published anonymously in the English *Weekly Register* (Jan. 1, 1731–2). His 'Carmen Sæculare' (1732) was addressed to Calvert on his becoming governor, and Lewis is also thought to be the author of 'A Rapsody' (1732).

LEWIS, SARAH ANNA (1824–80), Baltimore poet, friend and benefactor of Poe, known as his 'Estelle.' Her romantic, sentimental works include: *Records of the Heart* (1844); *Child of the Sea and Other Poems* (1848); and *Sappho* (1868), a poetic drama which was translated into Greek and produced in Athens.

LEWIS, [HARRY] SINCLAIR (1885–), born in Sauk Center, Minnesota, graduated from Yale (1907), although he left

college for a time to work at the Helicon Home Colony, Upton Sinclair's socialist experiment in New Jersey. After engaging in hack writing, travel in the U.S., and editorial positions in New York City, he wrote several minor novels, including *Our Mr.Wrenn* (1914), *The Trail of the Hawk* (1915), and *The Innocents* (1917). *The Job* (1917), a realistic novel of life in New York City, was his first distinguished work of fiction, and with the publication of *Main Street* (q.v.,1920) he first achieved wide recognition. This story, which contrasts cosmopolitan culture with that of a small town in the Middle West, was followed by the two novels usually considered to contain Lewis's best work: *Babbitt* (q.v.,1922), a satirical portrayal of an 'average' American businessman; and *Arrowsmith* (q.v.,1925), describing the career of a man of science. The latter was awarded the Pulitzer Prize in 1926, but Lewis declined the honor. *Elmer Gantry* (1927) is a bitterly satirical novel concerned with religious shams and hypocrisy in the U.S., and *The Man Who Knew Coolidge* (1928) is an equally malicious depiction of a mediocre businessman. These books, although inferior as works of fiction, are examples of the author's popular iconoclasm, in which he was largely influenced by the criticism of H.L. Mencken. *Dodsworth* (q.v.,1929), generally ranked with his better novels, is a sympathetic portrayal of a retired manufacturer who seeks new interests in European travel. In 1930 Lewis became the first American author to be awarded the Nobel Prize for distinction in world literature. His later books are: *Ann Vickers* (1933), a novel about a woman social reformer; *Work of Art* (1934), the story of a successful businessman; *It Can't Happen Here* (q.v.,1935), concerned with a future fascist revolt in the U.S.; *The Selected Short Stories of Sinclair Lewis* (1935); *The Prodigal Parents* (1938), a story of modern family relationships; and *Bethel Merriday* (1940), about the career of an actress. Lewis is primarily an ingenious satirist of American middle-class society, mimicking the speech and actions of his subjects with what seems to be photographic realism, but is actually more or less good-humored caricature. Critics have accused him of romanticism in overstressing his effects, and often declare that he is himself proof that his charges against American culture are just. In *It Can't Happen Here* he shows a shift from large-scale social analysis to a more immediate political concern, with a bias seemingly in favor of middle-class liberalism. During his later career he has become interested in the theater, and his plays include: *Dodsworth* (1934), a dramatization of his novel, in which he assisted Sidney Howard; *It Can't Happen Here* (1936), written with John C. Moffitt; and *Jayhawker* (1934), a play about Kansas before the Civil War, written with Lloyd Lewis. Sinclair Lewis's wife is the political commentator, Dorothy Thompson.

Lewis and Clark Expedition, see *Lewis, Meriwether.*

LEWISOHN, Ludwig (1882–), novelist and critic, was born in Berlin, and brought as a child to the U.S. Among his many writings, *Up Stream* (1922) and *Mid-Channel* (1929) are autobiographical treatments of the problems of Jews in America. His novels include: *The Broken Snare* (1908), *Don Juan* (1923), *Roman Summer* (1927), *The Case of Mr.Crump* (1926), *The Island Within* (1928), *Stephen Escott* (1930), *The Last Days of Shylock* (1931), *The Golden Vase* (1931), *Trumpet of Jubilee* (1937), and *For Ever Wilt Thou Love* (1939). *Expression in America* (1932) is a study of the American spirit as represented in its literature, and contains an attack on the Puritan tradition from the point of view of Freudian psychology. Lewisohn is noted as a translator, and among his many critical works are: *The Modern Drama* (1915), *The Spirit of Modern German Literature* (1916), *The Drama and the Stage* (1922), *The Creative Life* (1924), and *Cities and Men* (1927), all of which exhibit an idealistic individualism. His sociological studies concerned with the problems of the Jews, for whom he advocates Zionism, include: *Israel* (1925), and *The Answer: The Jew and the World* (1939).

Lexington (Massachusetts) was the site of the first battle of the Revolutionary War (April 19, 1775), precipitated by Gage's expedition from Boston to Lexington and Concord, to seize ammunition and stores collected by the colonists. News of the movement of troops was carried by Paul Revere and Rufus Dawes, who aroused the Minutemen.

Libera Nos, Domine, see *Political Litany.*

Liberal Republicans, see *Republican party.*

Liberator, The (1831–65), Abolitionist weekly, was founded at Boston by W.L. Garrison (q.v.). Its editorial policy was of a militant-pacifist type, denouncing slavery, calling for its immediate abolition and the enfranchisement of all American Negroes, but having no specific program for attaining these ends. For years its editor proved the sincerity of the statement in the first issue: 'I am in earnest—I will not equivocate—I will not excuse—I will not retreat a single inch—*and I will be heard.*' The paper inevitably attracted much opposition. Garrison was mobbed, his press destroyed, a law passed prohibiting its circulation to free Negroes, a reward offered for the apprehension of anyone who circulated it in South Carolina, and a resolution passed in the Georgia Senate offering a reward for the arrest of Garrison. In 1835 a South Carolina mob broke into the U.S. mails and burned copies of *The Liberator,* along with effigies of its editors. Garrison also aroused enmity by his espousal of liquor prohibition and pacifism. The paper printed the writings of the more intelligent free Negroes, as well as those of leading Abolitionists, but its circulation has been estimated as being about 1,400 in 1837, and never more than 3,000. The last issue of *The Liberator* was published upon the ratification of the 13th Amendment.

Liberator, The (1919–24), see *Masses, The.*

Liberia, see *Slavery.*

Liberty (1924–), popular weekly magazine of cheap fiction and journalistic articles, was founded as an adjunct of the *Chicago Tribune,* and was purchased in 1931 by Bernarr Macfadden. It has popularized the 'short short story' printed on a single page, and for the aid of its readers furnishes an estimate of the 'reading time' for each article and story.

Liberty, STATUE OF, gigantic bronze statue executed by the French sculptor, Frédéric Auguste Bartholdi, was a gift of the French people in commemoration of the hundredth anniversary of American independence. The statue was placed on Bedloe's Island in New York harbor (1885), on a 155-foot pedestal. The height of the statue and pedestal is 305 feet, 6 inches, and it is the loftiest statue in the world. Entitled 'Liberty Enlightening the World,' the colossal female figure carries a book representing the law in the left hand, and a torch held aloft in the right. Poems about it have been written by Whittier, Stedman, Hovey, and others, but a sonnet by Emma Lazarus was selected to be placed on the pedestal of the statue itself.

Liberty Bell, located in Independence Hall, Philadelphia, was rung to announce the proclamation of the Declaration of Independence (July 4, 1776). The bell was cracked (1835), but used until 1846. It now stands as an exhibit in the Hall.

Liberty Bell, The (1839–58), gift book devoted to antislavery literature, was published from Boston under the sponsorship of Maria Chapman. The volumes appeared annually except in 1849,'53,'54, and '56. Among the contributors were Emerson, Longfellow, Lowell, Parker, Wendell Phillips, Mrs.Stowe, and Bayard Taylor. The foreign contributors, numbering nearly 75, included Elizabeth Browning, Harriet Martineau, and Tocqueville. Ignoring the economic issues involved, the volumes were confined to emotional appeals to popular morality.

Liberty party, antislavery organization, was formed in 1840 by Abolitionists under the leadership of James G. Birney, who repudiated Garrison's policy of nonpolitical action. In 1848 it merged with the Free Soil party.

Library of Congress, U.S. national library at Washington,D.C., established by act of Congress (1800), and housed until 1897 in the Capitol. The purchase (1815) of Jefferson's library of 6,457 volumes formed the nucleus of the present collections. Other great early purchases included the manuscripts of Jefferson, Washington, Hamilton, and Madison, and the collection of Peter Force. The library is now the third largest in the world, is located in two large buildings, and contains upwards of 5,592,000 books, 1,402,000 maps and views, 1,194,000 pieces and volumes of music, 542,000 prints, 95,000 volumes of newspapers, 2,500,000 folios of reproductions of historical material, and a great collection of manuscripts, which includes the originals of the Declaration of Independence and the Constitution. After 1846 the copyright law required one copy of every book copy-

righted in the U.S. to be deposited in the library, and since 1870 two copies have been required. About 196,000 books are added annually. Most American libraries use its printed catalogue cards and it has also made a Union catalogue of 10,000,000 books and their locations in 700 libraries. Archibald MacLeish was appointed Librarian in 1939, succeeding Herbert Putnam.

LIEBER, FRANCIS (1800–72), German-born political philosopher, emigrated to the U.S. (1827) after his liberalism led to difficulties in his native country. He originated and edited the *Encyclopædia Americana* (13 vols.,1829–33). From 1835 to 1856 he was a professor of history and political economy at South Carolina College (University of South Carolina), and while there produced his most famous books. His *Manual of Political Ethics* (2 vols.,1838–9) discussed the moral obligations arising from the citizen's participation in government. *Legal and Political Hermeneutics* (1839) was an outgrowth of his first work, and *On Civil Liberty and Self-Government* (2 vols.,1853) was a further study of political science, discussing elements of freedom in their relation to law. In 1857 he was given an appointment to Columbia College, and from 1865 until his death taught at its law school. *A Code for the Government of Armies* (1863) was reissued by the War Department as *General Orders No.* 100, and became a standard international work on military law and the conduct of war.

Life (1883–), magazine founded by J.A.Mitchell and E.S.Martin, young Harvard graduates, was intended to be a satirical weekly 'of higher artistic and literary merit' than *Puck* and *Judge*. *Life* played the role of *arbiter elegantarium*, and its early volumes represent the school of genteel humor. Among its artists were F.W.Attwood, E.W.Kemble, Palmer Cox, Peter Newell, Oliver Herford, and C.D. Gibson, who created his 'Gibson Girl' for the magazine; and such authors as J.K. Bangs, Agnes Repplier, and Brander Matthews wrote stories and articles. In addition to being the outstanding humorous magazine of the U.S., *Life* was known for its reviews of books and the theater, and for its serious editorial campaigns against vivisection, the Hearst newspapers, and other matters, as well as against Germany during the First World War. After the war it was purchased by Gibson, who had Robert Sherwood edit it (1924–8), continuing the dual policy of humor and editorial crusades, now in behalf of its fresh-air camps for poor city children and in opposition to the 18th Amendment. Eventually, however, the magazine lost its early subtlety, and was eclipsed by *The New Yorker*. In 1933 it became a monthly, and in 1936 *Judge* bought its 'humorous traditions and features' and Time, Inc. purchased its name for a new pictorial magazine. The new *Life*, a weekly, presents news and feature articles mainly through photographs, with an editorial standard akin to that of *Time* (q.v.), whose prose accounts it complements.

Life and Gabriella: *The Story of a Woman's Courage*, novel by Ellen Glasgow (q.v.) published in 1916.

Gabriella Carr, raised in a Southern town, is a girl of unusual energy and resolution, with a 'vein of iron' in her character that distinguishes her from the conventionally gentle, unassertive girls of her class. She marries George Fowler, an essentially selfish, complacent man, and they go to New York to live. His attraction for her is mainly physical, and when after a few years he deserts her for Florrie Spencer, she is soon reconciled to her condition, and turns her attention to raising her children and creating a business career for herself. As 'Madame Dinard' she becomes head of a leading dressmaking establishment, and years later marries a Westerner, Ben O'Hara, whose bluff, sturdy nature makes him one of her own kind.

Life for a Life, A, novel by Robert Herrick (q.v.).

Life of Reason, The, study of the function of reason in common sense, society, religion, art, and science, by Santayana (q.v.), published in five volumes (1905–6). From the point of view of philosophic naturalism, the author observes man's attempts to live a rational life, as revealed through these five fields of activity. 'Reason as such represents or rather constitutes a single formal interest, the interest in harmony.' Matter is the only reality, the source of the myths, institutions, and definitions that men use to describe or to express that reality. In sympathy with Aristotle, Santayana believes that all ideals have a natural basis, and that

nature is ideal in its potentialities. An ideal society, based on actual and operative society, is realizable only in the imagination. Thus religion and science, whose purpose is to discover truth, are merely imaginative, the former being a myth, the latter a hypothesis, about real conditions. Both are valuable in that they liberate man from personal limitations, but, if taken as truth, may be misleading as a guide for action. Art, conceived as 'action which transcending the body makes the world a more congenial stimulus to the soul,' is valuable and delightful, but ultimately 'there is nothing stable or useful to contemplate except objects relevant to action.'

Life on the Mississippi, autobiographical narrative by Clemens (q.v.), published under his pseudonym Mark Twain (1883). The book opens with a brief history of the Mississippi River since its discovery, and Chapters 4 to 28 deal with Clemens's life as a boy on the river. These chapters, originally published in the *Atlantic Monthly*, give a vivid account of his participation in the steamboat age, the science of steamboat piloting, and the life of the river as seen by the pilot. Chapter 3 also contains a lively passage written for *Huckleberry Finn* but never used in the novel. The second part of the book, written some seven years after the first, is an account of Clemens's return to the river as a traveler, 21 years after he had been a pilot. During his trip from St.Louis to New Orleans, he finds that the glamour of the river has been destroyed by railroad competition. Interspersed with his descriptions of the river, his accounts of meeting Cable and Joel Chandler Harris, and Horace Bixby, who first taught him piloting, are anecdotes of the past, and a vigorous attack on Scott's romanticism and its effect on Southern thought. The second part of the book lacks the unity of the first, has none of its verve and gusto, and is more descriptive and reminiscent.

Life without Principle, essay by Thoreau (q.v.) posthumously published in the *Atlantic Monthly* (1863).

Modern American culture is criticized as being excessively preoccupied with acquisition, at the expense of an awareness of values. 'The aim of the laborer should be, not to get his living . . . but to perform well a certain work . . . An efficient and valuable man does what he can, whether the community pay him for it or not . . .' Most men dwell thoughtlessly on the surface of existence, obsessed by the need for busyness, small gossip, and conformance to convention. They lack independence and self-expression, as appears in such phenomena as the gold rush to California: 'The philosophy and poetry and religion of such a mankind are not worth the dust of a puffball.'

All of us have desecrated ourselves:

> the remedy will be by wariness and devotion to reconsecrate ourselves, and make once more a fane of the mind. . . . Even the facts of science may dust the mind by their dryness, unless they are . . . rendered fertile by the dews of fresh and living truth.

Ligeia, tale by Poe (q.v.), published in 1838 and reprinted in *Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque* (1840). The poem, 'The Conqueror Worm' (q.v.), was not included in the tale until 1845.

An aristocratic young man marries Ligeia, a woman of strange, dark beauty and great learning. They are deeply in love, and share an interest in the occult, until a wasting illness triumphs over Ligeia's passionate will to live, and she dies. In melancholy grief, her husband leaves his lonely home on the Rhine to purchase an English abbey, where he grows mentally deranged under the influence of opium. He marries fair-haired Lady Rowena Trevanion, although they are not in love, and Rowena soon dies in a strange manner. Her husband watches by the bier, and sees signs of returning life in the body, but considers these to be hallucinations. At last she rises to her feet and loosens the cerements from her head so that masses of long black hair stream forth. When she opens her eyes, he realizes that the lost Ligeia's will to live has triumphed, for she has assumed what was formerly the body of Rowena.

Light, CHRISTINA, character in *Roderick Hudson* and *The Princess Casamassima* (qq.v.).

Light in August, novel by Faulkner (q.v.).

LIGHT-HORSE HARRY, sobriquet of Henry Lee (q.v.).

Lightnin', play by Winchell Smith (q.v.) and Frank Bacon.

Lilacs, poem by Amy Lowell (q.v.).

Lily Bart, heroine of *The House of Mirth* (q.v.).

LINCOLN, ABRAHAM (1809–65), 16th President of the U.S. (1861–5), was born in a log cabin in Kentucky, of a typically illiterate and shiftless frontier family. They soon migrated to another place in Kentucky, then to the Indiana woods, where the boy labored on the homestead, garnered a little learning in frontier schools, avoided church membership, and pursued his bent for reading in what books he could obtain. In 1830 the Lincolns moved to Illinois, where Abraham temporarily helped to build the new cabin, split fence rails, and otherwise assist in the tasks of homesteading. After navigating a flatboat to New Orleans, he returned to New Salem, Illinois, where he spent six formative years (1831–7) working at odd jobs, studying, reading law, making a wide personal acquaintance, and serving as surveyor, postmaster, captain of volunteers in the Black Hawk War, and in the state legislature (1834–41). As a Clay Whig, he supported the Bank of the United States, opposed Jackson and Van Buren, and opposed the Abolitionists because he thought they tended to increase the evils of slavery. Meanwhile he courted Ann Rutledge (q.v.), whose father kept the inn where he boarded. Her sudden death (1835), while Lincoln's suit was unsettled, has led to a great deal of sentimental conjecture. His peculiar courtship and marriage to Mary Todd Lincoln (q.v.) has also become part of the Lincoln legend. He was a practicing attorney, beginning in 1836 at New Salem and then at Springfield, and served in Congress (1847–9), opposing the Mexican War as a Democratic-fomented campaign for the extension of slave territory, and consequently becoming unpopular in his home state. In his legal practice he now had as a partner William H. Herndon, whose papers afford an important source of information on the future President. Not only as a circuit-riding lawyer, but also in the higher courts, he was noted for his thoroughness, shrewdness, common sense, and ability to argue a case. He became a good stump speaker, known for his clear, pithy, and witty statements, brilliant by contrast with the trite verbosity then common. After an unsuccessful campaign for the senatorship (1855), he became a Republican at the formation of the new party, and at the state convention (1856) was a leading figure because of his adroit and earnest dealing with the problem of slavery. As the Republican nominee for the U.S.Senate (1858), he delivered in the party convention his famous speech declaring, 'A house divided against itself cannot stand.' He challenged his opponent, Stephen Douglas (q.v.) to seven debates in which he showed the Democrat's inconsistency in favoring both popular sovereignty and the Dred Scott decision, and stressed a conservative attitude towards antislavery, thus winning many followers who disliked outright Abolitionism. Although Douglas won the election, Lincoln's fame was greatly enhanced. In his Cooper Union speech (Feb. 27, 1860), as a potential presidential candidate, he spoke against slavery in the territories, and through his conservative and dignified attitude increased his power in the East. He was elected to the presidency in 1860 by a considerable electoral majority over Douglas and Breckinridge, although he lacked the popular vote. Prior to his inauguration, the secession movement grew rapidly in the South. While Lincoln was still new in the executive functions, and his power was being threatened by members of his own cabinet, he vacillated and for some time failed to take a clear stand in relation to the firing on Fort Sumter. From the outbreak of the Civil War (q.v.) until the convening of Congress (July 1861), he treated the conflict as a huge insurrection to be met by executive measures, summoning the militia, proclaiming a blockade, expanding the army beyond the legal limit, directing governmental expenditures, suspending *habeas corpus*, and launching many military measures. During the progress of the war, he so extended his executive powers that he became a virtual dictator. Although faced with dissension in his cabinet and his own party, with radical Abolitionism on one side and defeatist cries for peace on the other, and despite maladjusted governmental and military functions, he managed to steer a middle course, favoring a war policy that was as little vengeful as possible. In military affairs there was confusion, ignorance, personal ambition, political pressure, lack of morale, and experimentation, which brought the pressure of military duties directly upon him. He nevertheless

remained tolerant, selfless, and moderate. His search for a winning commander-in-chief led him to try in turn McClellan, Pope, Burnside, Hooker, Meade, and Grant. The most famous of his executive acts was the Emancipation Proclamation (1862), which freed slaves in rebellious territory, while those in loyal or conquered states were to be freed by later legislation. As it was naturally ineffective in Confederate-controlled areas, the Proclamation was largely an announcement of Lincoln's aims and policies, and had a great moral effect. Foreign affairs and the threat of war with Great Britain were primarily handled by his Secretary of State, Seward, although Lincoln aided in preserving a moderate policy. He made few public addresses, except for his inaugurals, the Gettysburg Address (q.v., 1863), and the speech on Reconstruction (April 1865). To express his attitude, he depended greatly upon letters addressed to individuals or delegations, intended for public consumption. In 1864, during an atmosphere of national depression, war-weariness, low financial credit, and sniping from defeatists, radicals, and other dissatisfied elements, Lincoln was nevertheless re-elected over McClellan. His second inaugural address loftily declared, 'With malice toward none; with charity for all, let us strive on to finish the work we are in . . . to do all which may achieve and cherish a just and lasting peace . . .' He advocated a fair restoration of the Southern states to the Union, pardoning Confederates who would swear allegiance, promoting loyal governments in the Southern states, and, though he insisted on reunion and the abolition of slavery, was generous concerning collateral issues. He was shot by John Wilkes Booth (q.v.,April 14, 1865), and died the following morning. Stanton's comment, 'Now he belongs to the ages,' separates the real Lincoln, who encountered calumny, hatred, and misinterpretation of his plans, from the legendary Lincoln, who has been raised to the status of a symbol of American democracy and the Union. The President's writing, in speeches and letters, is famous for its homespun dignity, lucidity of thought, trenchancy of expression, richness of idea, flexibility of style, adaptability to the audience, and peculiarly American flavor. He was close to the homely idiom of the common man, and his pungent provincialisms and native humor derive from his frontier education, and account for his enthusiasm for such humorists as Artemus Ward. There are many collections of anecdotes attributed to him; his letters, speeches, and state papers have been frequently published; and his *Complete Writings* were edited by John Hay and J.G.Nicolay (12 vols.,1905). An *Autobiography* (1926) has been selected from his occasional writings about himself. The large and increasing bulk of literature concerned with Lincoln includes many famous works. Of the great number of biographical and historical treatments, the best are considered to be those by Beveridge, Hay and Nicolay, Ida Tarbell, Stephenson, Lord Charnwood, Schurz, and Sandburg. Whitman's 'When Lilacs Last in the Dooryard Bloom'd' is the greatest of the Lincoln poems. The best treatments in drama are those by John Drinkwater and Robert Sherwood, and, though the fiction in which Lincoln figures is generally less distinguished, there have been novels by such diverse authors as Edward Eggleston, Upton Sinclair, and Honoré Morrow.

LINCOLN, Benjamin (1733–1810), major-general in command of the Massachusetts militia (1776), under Gates was instrumental in breaking Burgoyne's communications with Canada, in the Battle of Saratoga (Oct. 1777). While commanding the southern department of the Continental Army, Lincoln was forced to surrender at Charleston (1779), when his troops were trapped by Clinton. Exchanged as a prisoner of war, he joined Washington in the siege of Yorktown, and after the close of the war was appointed secretary of war (1781–3). In 1787 he led the Massachusetts militia that suppressed Shays's Rebellion (q.v.).

LINCOLN, Joseph C[rosby] (1870–), Massachusetts author, was born on Cape Cod, the setting of his many novels and short stories concerned with New England sea captains and Down East landsmen. His first book was *Cape Cod Ballads* (1902), but he has since been known for his fiction, which includes: *Cap'n Eri* (1904), *Partners of the Tide* (1905), *Mr.Pratt* (1906), *The Postmaster* (1912), *Mary 'Gusta* (1916), *Galusha the Magnificent* (1921), *Rugged Water* (1924), *Blair's Attic* (1929), and *The Ownley Inn* (1939). The last two were written in collaboration with his son, Freeman Lincoln.

LINCOLN, MARY TODD (1818–82), member of a genteel Kentucky family, met her future husband, Abraham Lincoln, in Springfield, Illinois. It has been claimed that Lincoln failed to appear at the first date set for their wedding, and there is no doubt that there was a series of breaks and reconciliations before their marriage in 1842. Their married life is equally clouded by legends of unhappiness, but it is certain that her social background as a Southerner and her husband's frontier qualities and zeal for the Union inevitably caused friction. She has frequently been accused of an irritable temper, interference in politics, general extravagance, and petty penury. The early death of two of their sons, the assassination of her husband, and the death of a third son, 'Tad,' in 1871, unbalanced her mind, and she was for a time adjudged insane. Among the studies of her life is *Mary Lincoln, Wife and Widow* (1932), by Carl Sandburg and Paul M. Angle.

LIND, JENNY (1820–87), Swedish soprano, after a European career in concert and opera, at the height of her powers toured the U.S. under the managership of P.T.Barnum (q.v.,1850–52). Exploiting her phenomenal range and pure tones to sing sentimental airs and show-pieces, she was sensationally successful until her marriage to Otto Goldschmidt (1852), a conductor and composer. She later lived in England.

Linda Condon, novel by Hergesheimer (q.v.) published in 1919.

Linda, an aloof, unemotional child, is reared by her divorced mother, whose circle of friends, noisy, and decadent, repels the girl. She does not find a world to fit her refinement and integrity until, after her mother's marriage to vulgar Moses Feldt, she visits her dead father's sisters at Philadelphia, and is passionately wooed by Dodge Pleydon, a New York sculptor. To escape Pleydon, Linda marries her older cousin, Arnaud Hallet, but, even though she bears him a son and daughter, she never attains a passion outside herself. Inspired by his love for her, Pleydon creates his masterpiece, a statue of Simon Downige, an idealistic pioneer in whom he recognizes the same inner nobility and integrity that Linda possesses. He has, however, portrayed Downige in early life, as a tramp, and the pioneer's descendants indignantly destroy the sculpture. For the first time, Linda is emotionally stirred, for she feels that something of herself has been despoiled. She goes to Pleydon, intending to give herself to him in repayment, but discovers that his ideal means more to him now than her real, aging self. After the sculptor's death, she sees a replica of the Downige statue, feels its power, and loses her fear of mortality in the knowledge that her essential being is preserved in the stone.

LINDBERGH, CHARLES AUGUSTUS (1902–), on May 20–21, 1927, flew his monoplane, *The Spirit of St.Louis,* in a nonstop flight of 3,610 miles from New York to Paris in 33½ hours. Lindbergh's own account of this first solo flight across the Atlantic, which made him an international hero, is contained in *We* (1927).

ANNE MORROW LINDBERGH (1907–), his wife, has written *North to the Orient* (1935) and *Listen! the Wind* (1938), personal narratives concerned with episodes in their flights together (1933), exploring routes for transpacific and transatlantic commercial aviation.

LINDERMAN, FRANK BIRD (1869–1938), Montana author, whose writings include: *On a Passing Frontier* (1920), a book of sketches; *Bunch-Grass and Blue-Joint* (1921), a book of verse; several volumes of Indian lore; and fiction concerned with frontier and Indian life, including *Lige Mounts, Free Trapper* (1922), *American* (1930), *Red Mother* (1932), and *Beyond Law* (1933).

LINDSAY, [NICHOLAS] VACHEL 1879–1931), born at Springfield, Illinois, attended Hiram College (1897–1900), studied art at Chicago and New York (1900–1905), and then, after unsuccessful attempts to find employment, decided to be 'a tramp and a beggar.' Although he spent his winters in lecturing on art and temperance, much of the time during the following years was devoted to tramping tours of the U.S., and he won some notice as a popular poet for the verses which he bartered for food and lodging. These included *The Tree of Laughing Bells* (1905) and *Rhymes to be Traded for Bread* (1912). In 1912 he began to lecture on 'The Gospel of Beauty,' and the following year he published his first collection, *General Booth Enters into Heaven and Other Poems,* whose title piece (q.v.) displays the qualities of

vivid imagery, vigorous rhythm, and dramatic conception for which Lindsay is best known. The volume also contained such conventional but equally sincere poems as 'The Eagle That Is Forgotten' (q.v.). With the publication of *The Congo and Other Poems* (1914), he was widely recognized as an exponent of the 'new poetry,' and came to be in great demand as a public reader of his own works. Still preaching the gospel of beauty, he tried to stimulate a popular taste for poetry through a method that he called 'the higher vaudeville,' in which his recitations were marked by a dramatic use of gesture and chant, emphasizing his strong rhythms and syncopation. This second volume included 'Abraham Lincoln Walks at Midnight,' 'The Congo,' and 'The Santa-Fé Trail' (qq.v.), all characteristically vivid, imaginative 'visions,' in which the poet embodies his romantic faith in nature and a life close to the soil, and his fervent patriotism and love for democracy. *The Chinese Nightingale and Other Poems* (1917) marked the peak of his artistic achievement, its title poem and 'The Ghost of the Buffaloes' (qq.v.) having a subtle beauty of melody and image that he never surpassed, although 'In Praise of Johnny Appleseed' (q.v.), commemorating the deeds of his favorite pioneer hero, is one of his most significant pieces. Losing the faculty of self-criticism, he became more prolific but quickly declined in power, and his later poetry is of comparatively little value. Among his later collections were: *The Daniel Jazz* (1920); *The Golden Whales of California* (1920); *Collected Poems* (1923, revised 1925); *The Candle in the Cabin* (1926); and *Johnny Appleseed* (1928). His prose works include: *Adventures While Preaching the Gospel of Beauty* (1914); *A Handy Guide for Beggars* (1916); *The Golden Book of Springfield* (1920), a mystic Utopia based on his gospel of beauty; and *The Litany of Washington Street* (1929), a book of political essays. His biography (1935) was written by his friend, Edgar Lee Masters.

LINN, John Blair (1777–1804), Pennsylvania poet and Presbyterian clergyman, whose writings include *The Poetical Wanderer* (1796), composed when he was a graduate student at Columbia; *The Death of George Washington* (1800), in the manner of Ossian; *The Powers of Genius* (1801), reminiscent of Shenstone and Akenside; and *Valerian* (1805), an unfinished narrative poem. His lost play, *Bourville Castle* (1797), was revised by William Dunlap and his brother-in-law, C.B.Brown.

Linotype, see *Mergenthaler.*

Lion of the West, The, comedy by J.K. Paulding (q.v.), produced in 1830 and revised the following year as a melodrama by J.A.Stone. It was again revised as *A Kentuckian's Trip to New York* (1833), by W.B.Bernard. None of the versions survives, but the play had a great contemporary popularity because of the character of Nimrod Wildfire, a Kentucky backwoodsman who visits the East and confounds the New Yorkers. The character was popularly identified with Davy Crockett and W.P.Duval.

Lionel Lincoln; or, The Leaguer of Boston, romance by Cooper (q.v.), published in 1825 and dramatized as *The Leaguer of Boston.*

Lionel Lincoln arrives at Boston (April 1775) as an officer with the British troops. On shipboard he has met an old man, 'Ralph,' who is actually his father, Sir Lionel, supposed to be in an English insane asylum. Another companion, whose true identity is unknown to either of them, is Job Pray, Lionel's half-wit stepbrother, who guides them to the house of his mother, Abigail. The latter is terrified at the sight of Sir Lionel. They go then to the home of Mrs.Lechmere, Lionel's aunt, with whose granddaughter, Cecil Dynever, Lionel falls in love. Job serves among the minute men at Lexington, and, although his father fails to convince Lionel of the justice of the rebel cause, Ralph saves his son's life during the battle. The young man vainly attempts to solve the mystery of their relationship, before he is called to serve at Bunker Hill. Seriously wounded, he is nursed to recovery by Cecil, and the two marry, encouraged by the strange insistence of Mrs.Lechmere, who soon dies. Finally Sir Lionel explains the various mysteries. Mrs.Lechmere, years before, had wished him to marry her daughter, but instead he had married her ward, Lionel's mother, whose death caused him to become temporarily insane. Somewhat earlier, he had assumed the character of 'Ralph,' during his liaison with Abigail. Mrs.Lechmere has insisted on the marriage of Cecil and Lionel in order to achieve her long cherished

scheme of union between the families. The story ends with the sudden deaths of Sir Lionel, Abigail, and Job, the British evacuation of Boston, and the departure for England of Lionel and Cecil.

Lions, luncheon club primarily for businessmen and others of the white-collar class, was founded in 1917, and now has 2,717 clubs in the U.S. and Mexico and over 80,000 members, dedicated to the purpose 'to serve most and to serve best,' an elusive ideal that though connected with business, is according to the members 'caught—not taught.'

LIPPARD, GEORGE (1822–54), eccentric Philadelphia author, whose sensational novels are of two types: tales of the immorality of large cities, such as *New York: Its Upper Ten and Lower Million* (1853), and *Eleanor; or, Slave Catching in Philadelphia* (1854); and romantic historical fiction, such as *Blanche of Brandywine* (1846) and *Legends of Mexico* (1847). His popular plays dealt with similar subjects. Lippard's most notorious work was *The Monks of Monk Hall* (1844), reprinted as *The Quaker City* (1845), a melodramatic exposé of Philadelphia vice. In 1850 he founded the 'Brotherhood of the Union,' whose purpose was to destroy social evils that produced poverty and crime. He befriended Poe, on whom his romantic, melodramatic fiction is said to have had some influence.

LIPPINCOTT, SARA JANE [CLARKE] (1823–1904), popular mid-19th century poet, newspaper woman, and essayist, whose best-known works were *Greenwood Leaves* (1850), a collection of sketches and letters, and *Haps and Mishaps of a Tour in Europe* (1854). She wrote under the pseudonym Grace Greenwood.

Lippincott's Magazine (1868–1916), Philadelphia literary monthly, was more national in scope than the *Atlantic*, but its contributions were of a similar high caliber. During the 1880's, the magazine was distinguished for the first printing in the U.S. of such English fiction as *The Picture of Dorian Grey*, *The Light That Failed*, and the first Sherlock Holmes stories. Contributors during its early decades included Frank Stockton, Henry James, Lanier, Simms, Miss Woolson, Mrs.R.H.Davis, and Mrs.Cooke, and during the 1890's Edgar Saltus, Julian Hawthorne, Mrs.Atherton, P.L.Ford, J.L.Allen, Hearn, Wister, Crane, and Harte. In 1915 the magazine was moved to New York, where its title became *McBride's Magazine*. The following year it was merged with *Scribner's*.

LIPPMANN, WALTER (1889–), born in New York, graduated from Harvard (1909, class of 1910), and was associated with *The New Republic* at its inception. In 1917 he resigned to become an assistant to the secretary of war, and to aid in preparing data for the peace conference. After another period with *The New Republic* (1919–21), he became the leading editorial commentator for the liberal New York *World*, and in 1931 joined the *Herald Tribune*, where his column continues to appear. His social philosophy has been consistently opposed to any planned society or collectivism, and he places his faith in a liberalism regulated by the impersonal necessities of economic markets, justifying governmental interference only in cases of abuse. *A Preface to Morals* (1929) expounds his thesis that modern society requires realistic analysis and objective virtue for the attainment of individual freedom, rather than loyalty to persons or causes. His other books include: *A Preface to Politics* (1913), *Drift and Mastery* (1914), *The Stakes of Diplomacy* (1915), *The Political Scene* (1919), *Liberty and the News* (1920), *Public Opinion* (1922), *The Phantom Public* (1925), *The Method of Freedom* (1934), and *The Good Society* (1937).

LIST, GEORG FRIEDRICH (1789–1846), German economist, was in the U.S. (1825–31), later served as a U.S. agent abroad, and was influenced by the doctrines of Hamilton in his advocacy of a customs union and a protective tariff to stimulate infant industries, with free trade as the ultimate aim. His works, although mainly concerned with German economic problems, include *Outlines of American Political Economy* (1847).

Literary and Philosophical Society of Newport, debating club that owed its organization to the intellectual stimulus of Bishop Berkeley's visit. The Society existed from 1730 to 1747, and its members included Samuel Johnson and William Ellery.

Literary Club, see *Bread and Cheese Club.*

Literary Digest (1890–1938), weekly magazine, founded as a repository of

newspaper and magazine comments on current questions, prospered greatly under this policy, and during the 1920's reached a circulation of almost 2,000,000. During this decade it originated straw polls, sampling public opinion on important issues, but its striking miscalculation of the probable outcome of the 1936 presidential election caused a loss of public confidence. The competition of such news magazines as *Time* made the old formula of juxtaposing contrary newspaper opinions seem antiquated, and attempts at modernization were made. In 1937 the *Literary Digest* combined with the *Review of Reviews* under the title *The Digest*, but this combination failed. After a short period under its original title, the magazine was purchased by *Time*.

Literary Gazette, The (1809–21), Philadelphia journal, was edited by Irving (1813–14) as *The Analectic Magazine*, and contained some of his writings. Under the editorship of Thomas Isaac Wharton, the journal by 1817 had lost its eclectic character, and it was later virtually a service magazine of the U.S.Navy. At the time of its suspension, it was a weekly filled with book reviews.

Literary Magazine and American Register, The (1803–10), Philadelphia monthly, edited until 1807 by C.B.Brown. It printed both scientific and literary articles, and such contributions by Brown as 'Memoirs of Carwin, the Biloquist.' In 1807 the title became *The American Register*, and thereafter the publication was a bulky semiannual almanac that contained little of literary value.

Literary World, The (1847–53), New York weekly journal of society, literature, and art, edited by the Duyckinck brothers and C.F.Hoffman. In addition to the editors' writings, Paulding, Simms, and others wrote sketches, reviews, portraits of manners, and literary gossip. Another magazine of this name was published at Boston (1870–1904).

Literati of New York City, The, critical review by Poe (q.v.) of the Knickerbocker Group (q.v.) and other New York authors, published in *Godey's Lady's Book* (1846). Among the 38 authors are: Halleck (the third principal contemporary poet, 'a somewhat better position than that to which on absolute grounds he is entitled'); C.P.Cranch ('unusual vivacity of fancy and dexterity of expression . . . one of the least intolerable of the school of Boston transcendentalists'); Mrs.Kirkland ('has a province of her own, and in that province has few equals'); Epes Sargent ('one of the most prominent members of a very extensive American family—the men of industry, talent, and tact'); E.A.Duyckinck ('the excessively tasteful'); Anna Mowatt ('She evinces more feeling than ideality'); Lewis G. Clark ('he is noticeable for nothing in the world except for the markedness by which he is noticeable for nothing'); C.F.Hoffman ('a true idealist . . . one sensitively alive to beauty in every development'); Margaret Fuller ('tainted with the affectation of the transcendentalists, but brimful of the poetic sentiment'); and N.P.Willis ('As a poet he is not entitled to as high a rank as he may justly claim for his prose.') Poe's unfavorable comments on T.D.English, whom he satirizes as 'Thomas Dunn Brown,' provoked a scurrilous reply by English, to which Poe retaliated with a successful libel suit.

LITTELL, ELIAKIM (1797–1870), magazine editor and publisher, began his career in 1819 with the *Philadelphia Register and National Recorder*, which, with various changes of title, he edited until 1844. Then he sold it, as *The Eclectic Museum* (q.v.), to found a rival publication, *The Living Age* (q.v.).

LITTELL, WILLIAM (1768–1824), writer of numerous books on Kentucky law, who also wrote a collection of satirical essays on his contemporaries: *Epistles of William, Surnamed Littell, to the People of the Realm of Kentucky* (1806); and *Festoons of Fancy: Consisting of Compositions Amatory, Sentimental, and Humorous in Verse and Prose* (1814).

Little Big Horn, see *Custer.*

Little Breeches, poem in *Pike County Ballads* (q.v.).

Little Eva, character in *Uncle Tom's Cabin* (q.v.).

Little Foxes, The, play by Lillian Hellman (q.v.).

Little French Girl, The, novel by Anne Douglas Sedgwick (q.v.) published in 1924.

Madame Vervier, a wordly Frenchwoman, embarrassed by the presence of her daughter, Alix, and determined to make a successful match for her, sends

the girl to England to the home of her former lover, Owen Bradley. Owen has died, and his fiancée, 'Toppie,' is loved by his younger brother, Giles, though she remains faithful to Owen's memory and will not marry. Alix, learning the truth about her mother's life, tells Toppie of her mother's relations with Owen, so that Toppie's illusions will be destroyed and she will be willing to marry Giles. Meanwhile, Madame Vervier is attempting to arrange a marriage of convenience for Alix with the wealthy Jerry Hamble, and Giles, out of friendship for the girl, goes to France to explain why Jerry's mother refuses the match. He realizes that he is in love with Alix himself, and pleads his own case. Although Madame Vervier refuses her permission, Alix, following the different standards she has learned in England, refuses to accept her mother's decision, and chooses to marry Giles.

Little Giant, sobriquet of Stephen Douglas (q.v.).

Little Journey in the World, A, novel by C.D.Warner (q.v.).

Little Lord Fauntleroy, novel by Frances H. Burnett (q.v.), published in 1886, and dramatized by the author in 1888.

The son of an English earl alienates his arrogant old father by marrying an American, who after his death raises their son in New York, calling him Cedric Errol. The boy wears his hair in long curls, converses with grave volubility, and endears himself to everyone by his cheerfulness, generosity, and affection. His special friends are Mr. Hobbs the grocer and Dick the bootblack, whom he leaves regretfully when he goes to England as heir to Dorincourt, following the deaths of his uncles. As Lord Fauntleroy he is indulged by the gouty old earl, who, however, refuses to meet the boy's mother, giving her a house near by where the seven-year-old lord visits her daily. Fauntleroy enjoys his new wealth and wins his grandfather's devotion, persuading him to undertake charitable projects and improve his tenants' living conditions. When another American woman appears to claim the estate for her son, the earl is furious but helpless. Dick, in New York, recognizes the woman from a newspaper picture as the former wife of his brother Ben. With Mr. Hobbs the brothers go to England and discredit the woman's false claim. The earl is reconciled with Fauntleroy's mother, and the three live happily at Dorincourt.

Little Magazine, name applied to an advance-guard literary journal, primarily concerned with aesthetic reforms. The *Yellow Book* (1894–7), founded by Henry Harland, and *The Savoy* (1896), both English magazines that revolted against Victorian rationalism, morality, and emphasis upon science, set the standards that others followed. Their art-for-art's-sake credo was imitated by such American magazines as *The Bibelot* (1895–1915), a monthly reprint of prose and poetry from obscure works, edited by T.B.Mosher, and *The Chap-Book* (q.v.,1894–8), issued from Chicago. *The Lark* (q.v.,1895–7), published at San Francisco, was a distant reflection of this school, but had gaiety as its only policy. The little magazine came into particular importance in the U.S. just before and after the First World War, as a protest by those who believed artists were being enslaved and repressed by Mammon and Puritanism. *Poetry: A Magazine of Verse* (q.v.,1912–) is an eclectic publication, championing new poets of all nations and schools. *The Little Review* (q.v.,1914–29), frequently considered the most significant American magazine of the type, had tremendous vitality and never settled into any one pattern. During the post-war period, some magazines, like *The Seven Arts* (q.v.,1916–17), were concerned with an objective scrutiny of American culture. Others, like *The Frontier* (q.v.,1920–39), *Fugitive* (q.v., 1922–5), and *The Reviewer* (q.v.,1921–5), were regional in tendency; and still others, like *Secession* (q.v.,1922–4), *Broom* (1921–4), *Transition* (q.v.,1927–), and *This Quarter* (1925–32), were eclectic in character, and were edited from abroad by expatriates. *The Dial* (q.v.,1917–29) was in a sense the heir of the previous experimentation, but maintained a more detached, urbane, and cosmopolitan tone. *Hound and Horn* (q.v.,1927–34), the outstanding little magazine edited by university students, held policies similar to those of other publications in the movement. During the depression after 1929, advance-guard writers turned their attention to social and economic reform, and little magazines began to disappear. The movement, which caused the printing of many reams of bizarre and unimportant work, justified itself by offering a medium for all

types of artistic experimentation, and many of its heresies have become accepted credos. Among the many writers who have graduated from little magazines are Sherwood Anderson, Masters, T.S. Eliot, Erskine Caldwell, Ezra Pound, Hart Crane, Thornton Wilder, Gertrude Stein, Hemingway, Faulkner, and Cummings.

Little Men, story for children by Louisa May Alcott (q.v.).

Little Norsk, A, novel by Hamlin Garland (q.v.).

Little Regiment, The, and Other Episodes of the American Civil War, six short stories by Stephen Crane (q.v.), published in 1897, and issued in England as *Pictures of War* (1916).

The title story tells of two brothers in the Union army, whose seeming antagonism conceals a deep affection. During a battle, one of them is believed killed, and the other shows signs of bitter grief. When his brother suddenly reappears, they greet each other with a curt 'hello' and resume their pose of hostility. 'Three Miraculous Soldiers' shows the reactions of an ignorant Southern girl, who is terrified when a Union detachment camps on her mother's farm. She helps three Confederate prisoners to escape, but breaks into hysterical tears over a sentry they have wounded. 'A Mystery of Heroism' is concerned with the reckless feat of a private who crosses a field during a violent battle, to fetch a pail of drinking water. When he returns, apparently by miracle, the water is accidentally spilled before any of it can be used. 'The Veteran' tells of the heroism of an aged ex-soldier, who sacrifices his life to save the animals in a burning barn.

Little Review, The (1914–29), monthly little magazine founded at Chicago by Margaret C. Anderson 'as an organ of two interests, art and good talk about art.' 'Making no compromise with the public taste,' the *Review* was best known for its serialization of Joyce's *Ulysses;* Ezra Pound was its foreign editor (1917–19). Such special issues were published as the one devoted to the works of Henry James (Aug. 1918), and in general the magazine tended toward favorable criticism of all extreme modern theories of art, although its æsthetic bias was temporarily interrupted (1916–17) when the editor became interested in social problems and the writings of Emma Goldman. This social concern was abandoned when Miss Anderson 'found the tenets of anarchism to be simple and beautiful but quite uninteresting.' For a short time, the magazine was published at San Francisco, and later at New York. With Miss Anderson's removal to Paris, it was published there as a quarterly (1924–9), mainly edited by Jane Heap, who had long been associated with it. The *Review* gave space to '23 new systems of art . . . representing 19 countries,' and published works by such authors as T.S.Eliot, W.C. Williams, W.B.Yeats, Malcolm Cowley, Ford Madox Ford, Wallace Stevens, Amy Lowell, Ben Hecht, Sherwood Anderson, and Carl Sandburg. Miss Anderson has written of her editorship in *My Thirty Years' War* (1930).

Little Shepherd of Kingdom Come, The, novel by John Fox (q.v.), published in 1902 and dramatized by Eugene Walter (1916).

Chad Buford, a young shepherd, comes to the Cumberland Mountain settlement of Kingdom Come, where he is befriended by the Turner family, whose adopted daughter Melissa falls in love with him. Separated from the Turners during a trip, he is picked up by Major Buford, who becomes interested in his namesake and takes him to Lexington. There Chad falls in love with Margaret Dean, but, shunned by her because his antecedents are unknown, he returns to the mountains. When his parentage is established by kinship with the major, he becomes engaged to Margaret, but they are estranged when he enlists in the Union army at the outbreak of the Civil War. Melissa makes a hazardous trip to warn Chad that his life is in danger, and dies as a result of exposure. After the peace, he returns home a major, is forgiven, and marries Margaret.

Little Theater, name applied to an organization whose dramatic productions are beyond the scope of the commercial theater, either because of financial or conventional limitations. The little theater movement originated in Paris with Antoine's Théâtre Libre (1887), which led to the establishment of Stanislavsky's Moscow Art Theater (1890), the Independent Theatre in England (1891), and the Irish Literary Theatre of the Abbey Players (1899). The movement did not

reach the U.S., however, until the second decade of the present century, when the regular stage was diluted by melodrama and extravagant romance, and motion pictures were beginning to supplant road companies and small town theaters. Although predominantly amateur, some little-theater groups employed professional talent. Their origins were various, some, like the Hull House Players, springing from social settlements, and others, like Mrs.Gale's Toy Theatre, being dependent upon wealthy patrons. Among the important early organizations were Winthrop Ames's Little Theatre, in New York City; Maurice Browne's Little Theatre, in Chicago; the Washington Square Players and Provincetown Players (qq.v.); and two which derived their stimulus from college drama, the 47 Workshop directed by G.P.Baker (q.v.) at Harvard and later at Yale, and the Carolina Playmakers (q.v.) established by F.H.Koch at Chapel Hill (1918). By 1918 there were some 50 little theaters in the U.S., and estimates of the number in 1924 have been as high as 2,000. The most notable success has been the Theatre Guild (q.v.), founded in 1918 by former members of the Washington Square Players. Although it was distinctly a little-theater group when founded, the Guild's shrewdness in play selection, skill in production, and ability in financial management led in 1925 to the building of its own million-dollar theater, and thus took it beyond the usual scope of the movement. The little theaters have had a profound effect on the stage in the U.S. Besides raising the standards for commercial productions and supplying such important talents as O'Neill, Paul Green, Philip Barry, Thornton Wilder, and R.E. Jones, they have caused the establishment of permanent little theaters and community theaters throughout the country, notably at Pasadena, Cleveland, Chapel Hill, Charleston, New Orleans, Seattle, Kalamazoo, and Shreveport. The zest for experiment and co-operation in production and the awakening of a community spirit are values that were also influential in the Federal Theatre Project (q.v.), and in such professional ventures as the Group Theatre (q.v.), but the movement's most important achievement has been the creation of an indigenous drama that has brought the theater closer to the American people.

LITTLE TURTLE (*c.*1752–1812), Miami Indian chief, who commanded his tribe in its victorious wars against the whites (1790–91), but, after leading the attack on Fort Recovery (1794), counseled peace in the campaign against Wayne. In the Treaty of Greenville (1795), he ceded a great part of Ohio to the U.S. and refused to join the confederacy of Tecumseh.

Little Women, novel by Louisa May Alcott (q.v.) published in 1868–9.

This favorite book for children is based on the author's own youthful experiences, and describes the family life of the Marches in a small New England community. Mrs. March is busy, cheerful, and sympathetic; her husband is an improvident army chaplain in the Civil War; and there are four daughters, Meg, Jo, Beth, and Amy. Jo at 15 is ungainly, unconventional, and enterprising, with an ambition to be an author. Meg, a year older, is pretty and wishes to be a lady. Beth is a delicate child of 13 with a taste for music. Amy is a blonde beauty of 12. Their domestic adventures, their attempts to increase the family's small income, their friendship with the neighboring Laurence family, and their later love affairs are the interests of the narrative. Meg marries John Brooke, tutor of Laurie, Mr.Laurence's grandson. Laurie loves Jo, but when she does not respond he goes to Europe to forget her. There he meets and falls in love with Amy, whom he marries. Beth falls ill and dies. Jo becomes a writer of melodramatic fiction, and later marries Dr.Bhaer, an elderly professor.

Littlepage Manuscripts, trilogy of novels by Cooper (q.v.) tracing the history of the Littlepage family through three generations in New York state, during the difficulties between the propertied and propertyless classes that ended in the Anti-Rent War (q.v.). The novels are *Satanstoe*, *The Chainbearer*, and *The Redskins* (qq.v.).

LITTLETON, MARK, pseudonym of J.P. Kennedy (q.v.).

Living Age, The (1844–), eclectic magazine of fiction, poetry, and comment, founded at Boston as *Littell's Living Age* by Eliakim Littell (q.v.), who edited it until his death (1870). Until 1925 it was a weekly, reprinting the cream of foreign

periodicals, and since that time it has appeared monthly with the same policy.

Living Newspaper, see *Federal Theatre.*

Living Temple, The, poem in *The Autocrat of the Breakfast-Table* (q.v.).

LIVINGSTON, EDWARD (1764–1836), born in New York, practiced law and entered politics as a Democrat, serving in Congress (1794–1800). He was mayor of New York (1801–3), but, because one of his clerks misappropriated public funds, he resigned from office, turned over his private property to make good the loss, and began life anew in New Orleans (1804). During the War of 1812 he served as a confidential adviser to Jackson, and obtained the aid of Laffite for the Americans. His elaborate penal code for Louisiana brought him international fame, although it was not adopted. In 1822 he became a Congressman, and in 1828 was elected to the Senate. His firm attachment to Jacksonianism brought him the appointment as secretary of state in 1831, in which capacity he drafted the proclamation against nullification in South Carolina. He was minister to France (1833–5). His writings were collected in *Criminal Jurisprudence* (2 vols.,1873).

ROBERT R. LIVINGSTON (1746–1813), his brother, was a law partner of Jay, and became a member of the Continental Congress, helping to draft the Declaration of Independence, and serving as the first secretary of the Department of Foreign Affairs. He was the first chancellor of New York state (1777–1801), and as minister to France (1801–3) conducted the negotiations leading to the Louisiana Purchase. Upon his return to the U.S., he financed the activities of Robert Fulton, whose first steamboat was named for Livingston's estate, 'Clermont,' and with the inventor he controlled Hudson River navigation for many years.

LIVINGSTON, WILLIAM (1723–90), New York lawyer and political journalist, was a leader of the liberal party that opposed Parliamentary domination in religious and political affairs. After his party's defeat (1769), he retired to New Jersey, where he wrote his *Soliloquy* (1770), a satire on English colonial representatives. He was a delegate to the Continental Congresses, first governor of New Jersey (1776–90), and an active figure in national affairs.

Local color, term applied to fiction or verse which emphasizes its setting, being concerned with the character of a district or of an era, as marked by its customs, dialect, costumes, landscape, or other peculiarities that have escaped standardizing cultural influences. The earliest American writing reflects its locale, as all literature must, but the local-color movement came into particular prominence in the U.S. after the Civil War, perhaps as an attempt to recapture the glamour of a past era, or to portray the sections of the reunited country one to the other. Specifically, American influences upon those authors known as local-color writers may be found in Down East humor and in the frontier tradition of tall tales. Other influences include the writings of Irving, the English tradition of Scott, Maria Edgeworth, and Bulwer-Lytton, and the French romantic tradition of *couleur locale* represented by Hugo, Merimée, and Bernardin de St.Pierre. According to Edward Eggleston, another influence was the national and racial bias of the historical works of Taine, which specifically impelled him to a closer observation of his own region. In local color literature one finds the dual influence of romanticism and realism, since the author frequently looks away from ordinary life to distant lands, strange customs, or exotic scenes, but retains through minute detail a sense of fidelity and accuracy of description. Harte's 'The Luck of Roaring Camp' (q.v.,1868) is usually considered the first local-color story. The most distinguished writing engendered by the movement was in the form of the short story, whose development was thus deeply affected. Besides Harte, the local-color school produced such prominent authors as Mrs.Stowe, Miss Jewett, Mrs.Freeman, Mrs.Cooke, and R.E.Robinson in New England; T.N.Page in Virginia; J.C.Harris in Georgia; G.W.Cable and Kate Chopin in Louisiana; Miss Murfree and John Fox in Tennessee and Kentucky; John Hay in Illinois; Riley and the Egglestons in Indiana; Clemens in California and on the Mississippi; E.W.Howe, Garland, and Zona Gale in the Middle West; and R.H.Davis, H.C.Bunner, Brander Matthews, and O.Henry in New York City. A recent movement with a similar emphasis on sectional culture, but based on different principles and with different aims, is known as regionalism (q.v.).

LOCKE, DAVID ROSS (1833–88), born in New York state, became an itinerant printer and journalist mainly in Ohio, where he achieved fame during the Civil War as a humorist under the pseudonym Petroleum V. Nasby. The first Nasby letter appeared in the Findlay *Jeffersonian* (March 21, 1861), of which he was editor. 'Petroleum Vesuvius Nasby, late pastor uv the Church uv the New Dispensation, Chaplain to his excellency the President, and p. m. at Confederate x roads, kentucky,' was a dissolute, illiterate country preacher, who intended to support the South by his foolish arguments and 'advenchers,' but ironically made its cause appear ludicrously inept. In his caricature of this stupid and corrupt Copperhead, Locke followed the humorous style of Artemus Ward, using the devices popular among literary comedians of the time: ridiculous spellings, deformed grammar, monstrous logic, puns, malapropisms, incongruous juxtaposition of ideas, and anticlimax. In 1865 he became editor of the Toledo *Blade*, and later its owner, contributing to it his immensely popular letters until his death. Lincoln greatly admired Locke's humor, and even read the latest Nasby letters to his cabinet, as comic relief, before outlining the Emancipation Proclamation. *The Nasby Papers* (1864) was the first of several collections, and Locke also published a political novel, *The Demagogue* (1881), and other writings on politics, especially in favor of liquor prohibition.

LOCKE, RICHARD ADAMS, see *Moon Hoax.*

Locke Amsden, novel by D.P.Thompson (q.v.).

LOCKWOOD, RALPH INGERSOLL (1798–1858?), born in Connecticut, became a prominent New York lawyer prior to writing his two novels, *Rosine Laval* (1833), a story of contemporary life published under the pseudonym Mr.Smith, and *The Insurgents* (1835), a story of Shays's Rebellion, published anonymously. His later books were legal treatises.

Locofoco, name applied to the radical Democrats (*c.*1835–40) who fulminated against monopolies, corporations, and paper money, and proposed a vague program of economic leveling, and protection of labor unions. The name derived from the fact that at their first meeting the hall was plunged into darkness by the Whig landlord, and they had to continue by the light of candles ignited by locofoco matches.

LODGE, HENRY CABOT (1850–1924), member of a prominent Boston family, graduated from Harvard (1871), became an editor of *The North American Review* (1873–6), received his Ph.D. (1876) after study in political science under Henry Adams, and turned actively to public affairs. Elected to Congress (1886–93) and to the Senate (1893–1924), he was a leading conservative Republican, known for his defense of civil-service laws, championing of a high protective tariff, opposition to free silver, interest in a strong army and navy, and, during his last years, his successful opposition to U.S. participation in the League of Nations. His writings include *A Short History of the English Colonies in America* (1881), *Alexander Hamilton* (1882), *Daniel Webster* (1883), *George Washington* (2 vols., 1888), collections of essays and speeches, and the autobiographical *Early Memories* (1913).

GEORGE CABOT LODGE (1873–1909), his son, was a poet known for his sonnets and other works distinguished for an awareness of the realities of modern life. His books include: *The Song of the Wave* (1898), *Poems* (1902), *Cain, a Drama* (1904), *The Great Adventure* (1905), *Herakles* (1908), and *The Soul's Inheritance* (1909).

Loeb Classical Library, series of Greek and Latin texts with English translations, published since 1912 as a project of the New York banker and scholar, James Loeb (1867–1933).

Log Cabin and Hard Cider, rallying cry in the presidential election of 1840, in which a Democratic paper scoffed at the Whig candidate, Harrison, as a man who, if given a log cabin and a barrel of hard cider, would stay contentedly in Ohio. The Whigs picked up the phrase, and popularized Harrison as a frontier hero, contrasting him with the sophisticated Van Buren. *The Log Cabin* was a pro-Harrison campaign paper published by Greeley (1840).

Log College, see *Tennent, William.*

Log of a Cowboy, The, semi-autobiographical novel of 'the Old Trail Days,' by Andy Adams (q.v.), published in 1903.

Based on adventures of the author's youth, the narrative tells of an epical five-months cattle drive of 1882, from the southern Texas border to the Blackfoot Agency in Montana. A party of a dozen cowboys, directed by the veteran Flood, works the Circle Dot herd steadily northward and westward, across plains, mountains, and rivers, using characteristic methods of the period before the completion of railroad lines. Besides a full and vivid depiction of the life and work of the herders and their stories and songs, there are accounts of railroad men, Indians, frontier soldiers, and gamblers, and of such events as a night's 'celebration' in Dodge City, all familiarly described in the words of one who knew them from personal experience.

LOGAN, Cornelius Ambrosius (1806–53), Baltimore-born playwright and popular actor-manager, noted for his comic roles, and especially for his creation of Yankee types. His extremely successful farces included *Yankee Land; or, the Foundling of the Apple Orchard* (1834), *The Wag of Maine* (1835), *The Vermont Wool Dealer* (1840), and *Chloroform; or, New York a Hundred Years Hence* (1849).

Olive Logan (1839–1909), his daughter, was known in the U.S. and abroad for her acting and lecturing, her novels and books about the theater, and her comedies, *Surf* (1870) and *Newport* (1879).

LOGAN, James (1674–1751), Irish-born statesman and scholar, came to Philadelphia (1699) as Penn's secretary. He became the political leader of the wealthy and aristocratic interests, in a successful conflict with the democratic antiproprietary party. Also famous as a bibliophile, botanist, and natural scientist, he wrote on such varied subjects as the impregnation of seeds, lightning, and an improvement of the quadrant. He translated *Cato's Moral Distichs* (1735) and *M.T.Cicero's Cato Major* (1744), both published by Franklin.

LOGAN, James (*c.*1725–80), chief of the Mingo Indians, whose English name, although sometimes given as John Logan, was probably taken in honor of the Pennsylvania statesman. After 1774, when his family was massacred by white settlers on the banks of the Ohio, he began a series of attacks on the colonists, and was a leader in Dunmore's War. Although defeated, he refused to make peace, delivering a speech in reply to treaty offers that is often cited as a great example of Indian eloquence, and that was printed in Jefferson's *Notes on the State of Virginia*. During the Revolution, Logan aided the British. Later he became dissipated and degraded, and was killed in a family dispute. He figures frequently in literature, as in Neal's *Logan, A Family History* (1822).

Logrolling, term of opprobrium in American politics, applied to the method of intrigue and subterfuge described by the proposal, 'You help me to roll my log, and I'll help roll yours.'

LOMAX, John A[very] (1872–), scholarly collector of American ballads and folk songs, and lecturer at many universities on this subject. *Cowboy Songs and Other Frontier Ballads* (1910) was revised in 1916 and 1927. With his son Alan (1915–), Lomax has made several collections, including *American Ballads and Folk Songs* (1934) and *Our Singing Country* (1941). *Negro Folk Songs as Sung by Lead Belly* (1936) is a volume transcribed from the improvisations of a Negro guitarist whom they discovered in a Louisiana penitentiary.

LONDON, Jack (John Griffith London) (1876–1916), born in San Francisco, is said to have been the illegitimate son of William Henry Chaney (1821–*c.*1900), an itinerant astrologer. Reared by a family without fixed occupation or residence, he lived along the Oakland waterfront described in *Martin Eden* and *John Barleycorn*, and attended school only when his scramble for a living permitted. As a boy he bought a sloop and with some cronies raided the oyster beds about the bay, as he later told in *The Cruise of the Dazzler* (1902) and *Tales of the Fish Patrol* (1905). He abandoned this lawless, reckless occupation in 1893, to join a sealing cruise which took him as far as Japan. After a tramping trip through the U.S. and Canada, and a period of education including a semester at the University of California (1896), he returned to the Oakland waterfront with an interest in sociology and the Socialist party, which appears in several of his later books. In 1897 he joined the gold rush to the Klondike, where he made an unsuccessful attempt at mining, came to know the men who were prototypes of the elemental, hard-living heroes of his novels, and continued to read Darwin and Karl Marx.

Stricken with scurvy, he returned to Oakland the following year and began to write of his experiences. His short stories of the Yukon were published in the *Overland Monthly* and the *Atlantic Monthly*, and in 1900 his first collection, *The Son of the Wolf*, was issued, bringing him national fame for his Kiplingesque portrayal of the brutal, vigorous life of the Far North. He continued to write in this vein, producing an enormous output of stories and novels, and in 1902, with an established reputation, went to London, where he made a close study of slum conditions for his descriptive work, *The People of the Abyss* (1903). The remainder of his short but full life was spent under the balmy influence of popularity and success. He reported the Russo-Japanese War for the Hearst papers, made lecture tours, went on sailing voyages to the Caribbean and the South Seas, was a correspondent in Mexico, and lived on his great patriarchal estate in California. His popularity, journalistic training, and eagerness for money caused him to write too prolifically, but his energy and ability as a story-teller gave even his worst writing a great appeal. Besides several collections of short stories, such as *Love of Life* (1907), *South Sea Tales* (1911), and *On the Makaloa Mat* (1919), his fiction, similarly preoccupied with physical energy, the cult of 'red blood,' and a breed of Nietzschean supermen engaged in violent struggles of various sorts, includes many novels. The best known of these are: *The Call of the Wild* (q.v.,1903), the story of a dog in the Far North, who escapes from civilization to lead a wolf pack; *The Sea-Wolf* (q.v.,1904), about the powerful, ruthless captain of a sealing ship; *The Game* (q.v.,1905), the story of a prizefighter; *Before Adam* (q.v.,1906), concerned with the life of prehistoric savages; *White Fang* (q.v.,1906), telling of a wild dog who is tamed; *Martin Eden* (q.v., 1909), a semi-autobiographical novel about a socialist writer; *Burning Daylight* (1910), the story of Daylight, a man of tremendous energy who wrests a fortune from the Klondike, then idealistically renounces his hard-won wealth; *Smoke Bellew* (q.v.,1912), about a journalist's strenuous adventures in the Yukon; *John Barleycorn* (1913), a semi-autobiographical novel intended as propaganda for temperance; and *Jerry of the Islands* (q.v.,1917), the story of an Irish setter pup in the South Seas. London also wrote socialistic treatises, such as *The War of the Classes* (1905) and *The Human Drift* (1917), as well as novels concerned with socialists and the class struggle, of which the most famous are *The Iron Heel* (q.v.,1907), prophesying a fascist revolution to be followed eventually by an equalitarian golden age, and *The Valley of the Moon* (q.v.,1913), in which the economic problem is solved by a return to the land. In spite of his belief in collectivism as an inevitable next step in human evolution, London was most convincing in his depiction of individualistic struggle and primitive violence. The very titles of many of his books, e.g. *The Strength of the Strong* (1911) and *The Abysmal Brute* (1913), indicate his preoccupation with the concept of the brute which underlies the social behavior of men and animals. Buck, in *The Call of the Wild*, shows a retrogression, while *White Fang* and *Jerry of the Islands* depict the brute under control or in process of subjugation. In *Martin Eden*, the natural man is vanquished by the intellectual, and the result is death. Wolf Larsen is a combination of civilized brain with primitive force. In *The Iron Heel*, one of the most impressive scenes shows the people of the abyss fighting with bestial, reckless fury against their oppressors. London worshipped Marx and Nietzsche impartially, grasping what he could of their diametrically opposed theories, and championing now one, now the other, both in his novels and in his own life.

LONDON, MEYER (1871–1926), emigrated from the Ukraine to the U.S. (1888), and with Debs and Victor L. Berger was a founder of the Socialist party in America. In Congress (1914–18), he advocated liberal measures, and was savagely denounced by both patriots and Communists, during and after the First World War. He was active in trade-union endeavors and worked in behalf of his race in combatting antisemitism.

London Company, see *Virginia Company*.

Lone Star Republic, name applied to Texas during its period of independence (1836–45). The first permanent American settlement in the Spanish, and later Mexican, territory of Texas was made by Stephen F. Austin (q.v.,1821). The Republic of Fredonia (1826) was established

by one of the emigrants, and caused an increase in the already existent friction between Mexico and the U.S.settlers. Offers to purchase the territory were refused by the Mexican government, and further colonization was prohibited. When Santa Anna (q.v.) became dictator of Mexico (1834), Austin and others began hostilities, since they were determined to avoid military dictatorship. Under the command of Houston (q.v.), the Texan army fought the battle of the Alamo (q.v.) and defeated Santa Anna's forces at the San Jacinto River (April 1836). The Lone Star Republic, so named from the design of its flag, had already been established, and Houston, who had imprisoned Santa Anna, was elected president (1836–8). His administration favored annexation by the U.S., but he was displaced by M.B.Lamar (q.v.), who advocated independence. Returned to the presidency (1841–4), Houston again worked for annexation, which was refused by the U.S.government because of fear of war with Mexico. It was not until 1845 that the problem was settled by the Mexican War (q.v.) and the annexation. Texas is now known as the Lone Star State.

LONG, Crawford Williamson (1815–78), Georgia surgeon, in 1842 performed an operation using sulphuric ether as an anaesthetic. His description of this and four other operations under anaesthetics was published in the *Southern Medical and Surgical Journal* (Dec. 1849), after W.T.G.Morton (q.v.) had claimed that his experiment (1846) was the first use of an anaesthetic. A long controversy existed concerning the priority.

LONG, Huey P[ierce] (1893–1935), Louisiana politician, admitted to the bar in 1915, served on state commissions and as a state attorney in public utility legislation until his election to the governorship (1928). In 1931 he became a U.S. senator, resigning his governorship to one of his henchmen and continuing to hold the political reins in his state. Although he improved the university, roads, and public buildings, he was frequently criticized for corrupt practices. His economic views were expressed in a 'Share-the-Wealth Plan.' The famous phrase, 'Every man a king,' which is the title of his autobiography (1933), was taken from Bryan's 'Cross of Gold' speech. Long's book, *My First Days in the White House* (1935), published after his assassination, shows clearly his political desires and programs and his demagogic attitude. His political machine retained power in Louisiana until 1940.

LONG, James (*c.*1793–1822), served in the War of 1812, became a merchant in Natchez, Mississippi, and in 1819 led a filibustering expedition of fellow townsmen to Texas. There he declared a republic, obtained the aid of Jean Laffite, whom he appointed governor, and conducted military operations against Mexico. The following year he allied himself with José Trespalacios, a Mexican revolutionist in favor with the Iturbide government, who obtained formal recognition of Texan independence. While on a visit to Mexico City, Long was killed by a sentry, ostensibly because of a misunderstanding over his passport. It has been claimed that he was assassinated at the behest of Trespalacios or Iturbide.

LONG, John Luther (1861–1927), author of novels, plays, and librettos, who collaborated with Belasco in dramatizing his short story, *Madame Butterfly* (q.v., 1897), later made into an opera by Puccini. Long collaborated with Belasco on two other plays, *The Darling of the Gods* and *Adrea* (qq.v.).

Long Ghost, Dr., character in *Omoo* (q.v.).

Long Hunt, novel by James Boyd (q.v.).

Long Island, Battle of, occurred on August 27, 1776, when British and Hessian troops, commanded by Clinton, Howe, Percy, Cornwallis, and De Heister, attacked the American fortifications at the site of the present Prospect Park, Brooklyn, New York. The Americans, commanded by General Sullivan, fought desperately, but were soon overpowered, and many of them had to escape or surrender, as did Sullivan. Washington arrived late in the day with additional troops, but could not oppose the numerous enemy force, and during the night of the 29th and 30th led a secret retreat to Manhattan.

Long Roll, The, novel by Mary Johnston (q.v.) published in 1911. *Cease Firing* (1912) is a sequel.

General Warwick Cary of Greenwood and members of his family are among the Virginians prominent in the political activities of secession and the battles and

intrigues of the Civil War. His son Edward is a Confederate volunteer, as are the suitors of his three daughters, Unity, Molly, and Judith. Judith prefers Richard Cleave to Maury Stafford. When the two leave to join the army, Stafford alters an order for Cleave's regiment from General Stonewall Jackson, so that Cleave is involved in difficulties that lead to a court-martial. Dismissed in disgrace, Cleave reenlists as an artillerist under the name Philip Deaderick and distinguishes himself in action. Stafford is captured, after being finally rejected by Judith. Jackson promises Cleave a new court of inquiry, but dies in battle the following day.

Long Tom Coffin, character in *The Pilot* (q.v.).

Long Valley, The, 13 short stories by Steinbeck (q.v.), published in 1938. 'The Red Pony' and 'Saint Katy the Virgin' had previously appeared in separate editions.

Set in towns and on farms of the Salinas Valley in California, these realistic tales are mainly concerned with the relations of people with growing things, and dramatize the author's frequently mystical concept of animal and vegetable nature. 'The Red Pony' presents three episodes in the boyhood of Jody Tiflin, a farm boy whose knowledge of life matures through his loss of a beloved red pony, his meeting with the mysterious *paisano* Gitano, and the death of a mare during the birth of her colt. 'The Snake' tells of a woman's morbid obsession with the natural functions of a captive male rattlesnake. 'The Leader of the People,' which has the same characters as 'The Red Pony,' is concerned with the pathetic old age of Jody's pioneer grandfather. 'Saint Katy the Virgin,' in a different mood and style, is an ironic parable of medieval times, telling of the conversion and beatification of a brood sow.

Longdon, character in *The Awkward Age* (q.v.).

LONGFELLOW, HENRY WADSWORTH (1807–82), descendant of a colonial family, was born at Portland, Maine, and was educated in private schools and at Bowdoin, where he graduated (1825) as a classmate of Hawthorne. His first poem, about John Lovewell, was published in a Portland newspaper (1820). Soon after graduation, he was offered a professorship of modern languages at Bowdoin, on the condition that he prepare himself by studying abroad. Accordingly, he spent the years from 1826 to 1829 in France, Spain, Italy, and Germany. While professor and librarian at Bowdoin (1829–35), he contributed essays and sketches to many magazines, and his teaching was so successful that he was recommended by George Ticknor to be his successor in the Smith professorship of French and Spanish at Harvard. To improve his knowledge of languages, Longfellow went abroad in 1835. His wife, to whom he had been married in 1831, died at this time. In 1836 began his 18 years of teaching at Harvard, during which he became a significant figure in the literary and social life of Cambridge. His first prose work, *Outre-Mer: A Pilgrimage Beyond the Sea* (1834–5), reminiscent of Irving's *Sketch Book,* was followed by *Hyperion* (q.v.,1839), a semi-autobiographical romance, interspersed with prose and verse concerned with German romanticism, which had greatly impressed him. *Voices of the Night* (1839), his first book of poetry, contains 'Hymn to the Night,' 'A Psalm of Life' (qq.v.), and other poems foreshadowing his later work. *Ballads and Other Poems* (1842) contains such favorites as 'The Village Blacksmith,' 'The Wreck of the Hesperus,' 'Excelsior' (qq.v.), and 'The Skeleton in Armor,' and did more to establish his fame than the *Poems on Slavery* (1842), an outgrowth of his antislavery interests. In 1843 he married Frances Appleton, the prototype of the heroine of *Hyperion,* whom he met abroad. Her father, a wealthy cotton-mill proprietor, presented the couple with Craigie House as a wedding present. Longfellow's life now flowed on placidly, in the congenial Cambridge Society, which included his brother-in-law T.G.Appleton. Besides the three daughters who figure in his poem, 'The Children's Hour' (q.v.), two sons were born of this second marriage. Meanwhile his fame increased with the publication of *The Spanish Student* (1843), a poetic drama; *Evangeline* (q.v.,1847), his narrative poem on the Acadians; *The Belfry of Bruges and Other Poems* (1845), including 'The Arsenal at Springfield,' 'The Bridge,' 'The Arrow and the Song,' and 'The Belfry of Bruges' (qq.v.); *Kavanagh* (q.v., 1849), a semi-autobiographical prose tale; *The Seaside and the Fireside* (1849), a volume of poems best known for 'The

Building of the Ship' (q.v.); *The Golden Legend* (q.v.,1851), a dramatic poem on medieval Germany, later incorporated in *Christus*; and *Hiawatha* (q.v.,1855), his celebrated 'Indian Edda.' In 1854 he resigned his professorship, which he said was 'a great hand laid on all the strings of my lyre, stopping their vibration.' His popularity throughout the U.S. and Europe was so great that, on the publication of *The Courtship of Miles Standish* (q.v., 1858), more than 15,000 copies were sold during the first day in Boston and London. His happiness and the even course of his writing were sharply broken, however, when his wife was burned to death (1861). For a long time his grief stopped his creative work, and it was so persistent that it is implicit in 'The Cross of Snow,' written 18 years afterward. The *Tales of a Wayside Inn* (q.v.), including 'Paul Revere's Ride' (q.v.), began to appear in book form in 1863, but they were in large part completed before the death of his wife. For solace he turned to his translation of Dante's *Divine Comedy* (published 1867), done with the aid of Lowell and C.E. Norton, who met with him every week in the Dante Society that they formed. He added two lengthy pieces to *The Golden Legend*, which appeared in final form as *Christus* (q.v.,1872); added to the *Tales of a Wayside Inn*; and wrote many sonnets, including a sequence of six, 'Divina Commedia' (q.v.), now considered to be among his most significant work. During his remaining years, honors were heaped upon him and his home became a shrine for Americans and a point of visit for distinguished foreigners. During a tour of Europe (1868–9), he received degrees from Cambridge and Oxford, and was given a private audience by Queen Victoria. His last poems, including 'Morituri Salutamus' (q.v.), were collected in *The Masque of Pandora* (1875), *Kéramos* (1878), *Ultima Thule* (1880), and *In the Harbor* (1882). After his death, he became the only American to be honored with a bust in the Poet's Corner of Westminster Abbey. The gentleness, sweetness, and purity for which his poetry was popular during his lifetime were the very qualities that caused the reaction against it after his death. His writings belong to the milder aspects of the romantic movement, and he was strongly influenced by the German romantic lyrists. Throughout his work and his life, he was consistently high-minded but conventional, and untouched by the religious and social struggles that disturbed his contemporaries, with the exception of his interest in antislavery, for which his friendship with Sumner was partly responsible. He exercised a great influence in bringing European culture to the U.S., and likewise did much to popularize American folk themes abroad, where his work was immensely popular and widely translated. In his own time he was universally respected, except by a very few detractors, such as Poe in his article, 'Longfellow and Other Plagiarists.' Even today Poe's criticism can hardly be accepted, despite Longfellow's indebtedness to foreign models, e.g. *Hiawatha* to the Finnish *Kalevala*, and 'The Wreck of the Hesperus' to the ballad 'Sir Patrick Spens.' A later age, with different standards, has also accused him of undue didacticism and excessive symbolism, as in 'A Psalm of Life,' 'Excelsior,' 'The Village Blacksmith,' and 'My Lost Youth' (q.v.). The very simplicity that has made him a children's poet has lessened his mature audience, since, despite his great metrical skill, he is lacking in passion and high imagination, and is too decorous, benign, and sweet.

LONGFELLOW, Samuel (1819–92), brother of H.W.Longfellow, was a prominent Unitarian clergyman, and was active in the Transcendentalist movement. His writings include several books of hymns, a biography of his brother, and *Thalatta: A Book for the Seaside* (1853), in collaboration with T.W. Higginson.

LONGSTREET, Augustus Baldwin (1790–1870), Georgia jurist, educator, and author. He is best known for his *Georgia Scenes, Characters, and Incidents* (q.v.,1835), humorous realistic sketches of the life of the Old Southwest, which were forerunners of the work of such writers as J.G.Baldwin, G.W.Harris, J.J.Hooper, W.T.Thompson, and Clemens. He was a fervent advocate of nullification, establishing a newspaper and writing several pamphlets for this cause. He served successively as president of Emory College (1839–48), Centenary College (1849), the University of Mississippi (1849–56), and the University of South Carolina (1857–65). *Master William Mitten* (1864) is a semi-autobiographical novel of his youth in Georgia. Later stories and sketches in

the vein of his first book were less successful.

LONGSTREET, JAMES (1821–1904), Confederate general, served in the two Battles of Bull Run, the Seven Days' Battles, and at Fredericksburg and Antietam. Slow to yield his own opinions or to move when he thought the strategy of his superiors to be incorrect, he was particularly reluctant to follow the orders of Lee at Gettysburg and was accused of responsibility for the Confederate defeat. He later served at Chickamauga and at Knoxville, Tennessee. During the Reconstruction, he became an ardent Republican and champion of Grant, and was hence unpopular in the South. This feeling was aggravated by the claims he set forth in his military autobiography, *From Manassas to Appomattox* (1896), and other writings.

Look Homeward: Angel: *A Story of the Buried Life*, autobiographical novel by Thomas Wolfe (q.v.) published in 1929. *Of Time and the River* (q.v.) is a sequel.

Eugene Gant grows up in Altamont, Catawba (Asheville, North Carolina), the youngest of six children of Oliver Gant, stonecutter and amateur orator, whose demonic passions both fascinate and terrify Eugene, and whose love of craftsmanship and rhetoric dominate the boy's character. Eliza, Oliver's crafty, miserly wife, has frequent quarrels with her husband, and leaves him, while Eugene is yet a child, to operate a boarding-house. The other children include Steve, lazy, selfish, and corrupt; Daisy, shy and retiring; Helen, her father's favorite, 'strung on the same wires;' Ben, quiet and intelligent, who becomes a newspaperman, and whose death is Eugene's most poignant loss; and Luke, exuberant and loveable. Eugene, the 'baby' of the family, has a relatively solitary youth, delivering newspapers in the Negro quarter and becoming acquainted with the town's 'characters.' He reads and memorizes English classics, attending a private school where he receives a limited but more balanced education. At 16 he enters the state university, where he continues to feel lonely and 'different,' but by the time of his graduation makes important personal adjustments to the world, editing the literary magazine, having his first sexual encounters and youthful love affairs, and finally breaking with his family to make what he conceives to be a pilgrimage in search of 'the lost lane-end into heaven, a stone, a leaf, an unfound door . . .'

Looking Backward, *or* **2000–1887,** Utopian romance by Edward Bellamy (q.v.) published in 1888. Its immense popularity led to the founding of Bellamy clubs and a Nationalist party. *Equality* (1897), a sequel, is more a tract than a novel.

Conceived as 'a fairy tale of social felicity,' the book describes a future social and economic order through the narrative of Julian West, a young Bostonian, who enters a hypnotic sleep in 1887 and is revived 113 years later in the changed city. He falls in love with Edith Leete, a descendant of his former fiancée, and through her father, a physician, learns of the scientific and social developments that have taken place. In contrast with the squalor of the slums and the injustices and inequalities of the earlier time, he finds an America in which the business monopolies have evolved to become 'The Great Trust,' economic chaos having been replaced by a democratic form of state capitalism. Private enterprise has disappeared, each citizen is both an employe and a member of the state, and the collective organization of wealth and industry has eradicated crime, poverty, advertising, warfare, and many diseases. The cultural level of the people has consequently risen, and Dr.Leete ascribes these changes to the spread of social intelligence and social ethics among a good people formerly victimized by an evil system.

Lookout Mountain, BATTLE OF, see *Chattanooga.*

Loop, district of Chicago (q.v.) that forms the city's financial, shopping, theatrical, and hotel center. It received its name from the elevated railroad tracks (installed 1897) that 'loop' the section. As the turburlent heart of the largest Midwestern city, the Loop has figured in the poetry of Sandburg, and in such fiction as *The Pit* and *The Cliff-Dwellers.*

LOOS, ANITA (1893–), author of *'Gentlemen Prefer Blondes'* (1925), subtitled the 'Illuminating Diary of a Professional Lady,' a novel satirizing a pair of naïve, pert sirens of the jazz age. This was followed by a less successful sequel, *'But Gentlemen Marry Brunettes'* (1928). Miss Loos has written many plays and

motion pictures in collaboration with her husband, John Emerson, including a dramatization of her first book (1926).

Loose Construction, see *Constitution.*

LORD, WILLIAM WILBERFORCE (1819–1907), New York poet and Episcopal clergyman, was hailed as 'the American Milton' on the appearance of his *Poems* (1845), although Poe, whose hostility he had incurred by a parody, wrote a scathing criticism, accusing Lord of plagiarism. Among his other works were *Christ in Hades* (1851), a religious epic, and *André* (1856), a blank verse narrative. He served as a chaplain in the Confederate army, and was for a time a minister in the South. His *Complete Poetical Works* appeared in 1938.

Los Angeles, in southern California, the largest city of the state, has had the most rapid growth of all American cities during recent years, increasing in population from 102,000 in 1900 to 1,496,792 in 1940. This influx, mainly of native Americans from the Middle West, is due to such diverse causes as the discovery of a great oil-field, the rise of Hollywood (q.v.), and the development of manufacturing and of citrus and other agricultural interests. The site of an Indian village and later of a Spanish pueblo (founded 1781), Los Angeles was captured by the U.S. Army (1846–7), but had a secondary place in California industry and trade until the turn of the century. Situated there and near by are the Henry E. Huntington Library, the California Institute of Technology, University of California at Los Angeles, Occidental College, and University of Southern California.

Lost Cause, popular name applied to the principles of state rights and slavery, for which the South fought during the Civil War.

Lost Colony, The, see *Roanoke.*

Lost generation, name applied to the disillusioned intellectuals and æsthetes of the years following the First World War, who rebelled against former ideals and values, but could replace them only by despair or a cynical hedonism. The remark of Gertrude Stein, 'You are all a lost generation,' addressed to Hemingway, was used as a preface to the latter's novel, *The Sun Also Rises,* which brilliantly describes an expatriate group typical of the 'lost generation.'

Lost Lady, A, novel by Willa Cather (q.v.) published in 1923.

Niel Herbert, a boy in the Midwestern town of Sweet Water, tells the story of Marian Forrester, who brings a knowledge of gracious living to the new country as the youthful wife of old Captain Forrester, retired railroad builder and aristocrat of the pioneer generation. Mrs. Forrester's beauty and charm set her apart from her crass, commonplace neighbors, as do her husband's rugged strength, integrity, and love of fine possessions. The captain is devoted to his wife, but her passionate nature causes her to become the secret mistress of his bachelor friend, Frank Ellinger. When Forrester loses his fortune by assuming responsibility in the failure of his bank, he suffers a paralytic stroke. His wife nurses him carefully, but after his death she is left in financial straits. Ivy Peters, a pushing businessman of the new generation, acquires her beautiful home and becomes her lover, to the bitter disillusion of Niel, who regards her as 'a lost lady,' although he never ceases to admire her. She goes West to her childhood home when Peters marries and occupies the Forrester mansion, and for Niel this symbolizes the end of the great era of the pioneers. Years afterward, he learns that she married a wealthy Englishman in South America, and until her death won admiration for her gracefulness, charm, and taste.

LOTHROP, HARRIET MULFORD STONE (1844–1924), author of books for children, wrote under the pseudonym Margaret Sidney. Her best-known work was *Five Little Peppers and How They Grew* (1881), which in 50 years sold more than 2,000,000 copies.

Lotos Club, New York City club of journalists, authors, actors, musicians, artists, and patrons of the arts, was founded in 1870 to offset the conservatism of the Century Association (q.v.). Its early members included Edwin Booth, Augustin Daly, John Hay, Bronson Howard, Brander Matthews, and Whitelaw Reid.

LOUDON, SAMUEL (*c.*1727–1813), New York printer and publisher, in 1776 founded *The New York Packet and the American Advertiser,* a patriotic weekly newspaper. Although a stanch patriot, he became unpopular with the radical element when he issued *The Deceiver Unmasked; or, Loyalty and Interest United*

(1776), an anonymous reply to Paine's *Common Sense*. While the British occupied New York, the *Packet* was suspended (Aug. 1776–Jan. 1777). It was then resumed irregularly in Fishkill, New York, until Loudon could return to the city. In 1787–8 the paper printed many of the *Federalist* essays. After 1792 it was known as the *Diary or Loudon's Register*, under which title it was continued by his son.

LOUDOUN, JOHN CAMPBELL, EARL OF (1705–82), British soldier, in 1756 was appointed commander-in-chief of the forces in North America with the purpose of molding the army into an efficient unit, and uniting the divided colonies. His failure to defeat Montcalm and his unpopularity because of his blunt insistence on his military and political authority caused him to be recalled (Dec. 1757).

Louisburg, CAPTURE OF, see *French and Indian Wars*.

Louisiana Purchase, effected by a treaty (ratified Oct. 31, 1803), in which Jefferson's representative, Monroe, purchased from Napoleon's government all the French possessions west of the Mississippi River. For this domain, which increased the national territory 140% and became the basis of 13 new states, the U.S. paid $27,267,622, or approximately 4¢ per acre.

Louisville *Daily Journal* (1830–68), founded as an anti-Jackson newspaper by G.D.Prentice (q.v.), became noted for its editor's witty *bons mots* and stinging squibs, collected in *Prenticeana* (1860). During the Civil War, the paper was loyal to the Union and is often credited with having prevented the secession of Kentucky. During the Reconstruction, Prentice wavered between Republican and Democratic points of view, and in 1868 he retired, when the paper was merged with its rival, the Louisville *Courier*.

The Louisville *Courier-Journal* (1868–), the product of this merger, was edited by 'Marse' Henry Watterson (q.v.), and bore the stamp of his personality, typically Southern and symbolic of the Lost Cause. Despite this attitude, and his slow, picturesque, reminiscent style, his opinions were frequently opposed to those of his neighbors, and he advocated free trade, closer friendship with the North, and opposition to the Ku Klux Klan. The paper was sold in 1918, becoming a typical metropolitan daily, and Watterson resigned the following year. Herbert Agar became editor in 1940.

LOUNSBURY, THOMAS RAYNESFORD (1838–1915), professor of English literature at Yale, was the author of *A History of the English Language* (1879), *Life of James Fenimore Cooper* (1882), and *Shakespearean Wars* (3 vols.,1901–6).

LOVE, ALFRED HENRY (1830–1913), Quaker whose religious and social ideas made him an outstanding pacifist. His refusal to compromise during the Civil War led to the writing of *An Appeal in Vindication of Peace Principles* (1862) and the formation of the Universal Peace Society. Throughout his life he continued his vigorous though somewhat naïve attempts to prevent war, and for his spirited criticism of the Spanish-American War he was hanged in effigy.

Love in '76, play by Oliver B. Bunce (q.v.), produced and published in 1857.

Captain Armstrong, a rebel, is captured by Captain Arbald and Major Cleveland of the British army. His fiancée, Rose Elsworth, daughter of a Loyalist, persuades Cleveland, who falls in love with her, to befriend whatever man she marries. Cleveland conspires to keep Rose from marrying Armstrong, by bribing her maid to disguise herself as Rose and marry the imprisoned American. Rose takes the place of the maid, marries Armstrong, and confronts Cleveland with his promise. The play ends happily with the engagement of her maid to a local schoolmaster, and of her sister to Captain Arbald.

Love Nest, The, and Other Stories, nine short stories by Lardner (q.v.) published in 1926. The title story was dramatized by Robert Sherwood (1927).

These accurate transcriptions of American speech reveal the self-deception and hypocrisies of typical Americans, and express the author's sardonically humorous view of native character. 'The Love Nest,' telling of a motion-picture magnate's introduction of a reporter to his 'happy wife and family,' exposes the man's crude, selfish wilfulness and the unhappiness of his frustrated, dipsomaniac wife. 'Haircut,' a barber's monologue while serving a customer, tells of the murder of an intolerable practical joker by a half-wit youth.

'Rhythm' is the story of a cynical Tin Pan Alley composer, showing his egotism and meanness. 'Who Dealt,' presenting the conversation of a stupid, frivolous woman during a bridge game, reveals the ironic tragedy of her husband's previous love affair.

LOVEJOY, Elijah Parish (1802–37), born in Maine, became editor of the St. Louis Abolitionist paper, the *Observer* (1833), but was forced to move to Alton, Illinois (1836), when he was threatened with violence. The press on which he printed the Alton *Observer* was attacked four times, and he was killed in defending it.

Owen Lovejoy (1811–64), his brother, carried on the cause, became a leading Illinois Abolitionist, championed Lincoln, and served in Congress (1856–64).

LOVELACE, Francis (*c.*1621–75), second English governor of New York (1668–73). Like his brother, the English poet Richard Lovelace, he was a follower of Charles II, and his appointment as governor was evidently a reward for his royalist service during the Commonwealth. He performed his duties conscientiously until 1673, when he was temporarily absent in Connecticut, and a Dutch naval squadron seized the English colony. Impoverished and degraded, he was temporarily confined in the Tower of London.

LOVETT, Robert Morss (1870–), professor of English at the University of Chicago, and author of many books, which include: *Edith Wharton* (1925), a critical study; *A Preface to Fiction* (1930); *Richard Gresham* (1904) and *A Winged Victory* (1907), novels; *Cowards* (1914), a play; and two books on English literature in collaboration with William Vaughan Moody, whose poems he edited in 1930.

LOVEWELL, John (1691–1725), Massachusetts Indian fighter, who was granted by the General Court two and a half shillings per day, and a bounty for every Indian scalped. His activities were successful until he was decoyed and ambushed by a band of Pequawkets in Maine, at what is now called Lovewell's Pond. Here he and several companions were killed. The fight has formed the subject of many ballads, the best known being 'Lovewell's Fight.' His story is told in Parkman's *A Half-Century of Conflict*, while Hawthorne's narrative, 'Roger Malvin's Burial,' tells of two of the survivors. 'The Battle of Lovell's Pond' was Longfellow's first published poem.

Loving Shepherdess, The, verse narrative by Jeffers (q.v.).

Lovingood, Sut, see *Sut Lovingood Yarns.*

LOW, Seth (1850–1916), New York merchant, educator, and political reformer. He was mayor of Brooklyn (1882–6), demonstrating broad vision and an ability at organization, and was made president of Columbia College in 1890. He resigned in 1901, when he was elected mayor of New York City on a reform ticket opposed to the Tammany regime. His administration was distinguished for civic reforms, but he failed to be re-elected in 1903. Later he was active in farmers' co-operative movements, Negro education, and attempts to improve relations between capital and labor.

LOWELL, Abbott Lawrence (1856–), brother of Amy Lowell, was a Boston lawyer and professor of political science at Harvard, of which he became president (1909–33). During his presidency the undergraduate curriculum was revised and the university's physical plant extensively enlarged. His books include: *Essays on Government* (1889), *The Influence of Party Upon Legislation* (1902), *Public Opinion and Popular Government* (1913), *Public Opinion in War and Peace* (1923), and *Conflicts of Principle* (1932).

LOWELL, Amy [Lawrence] (1874–1925), collateral descendant of James Russell Lowell, was born in Brookline, Massachusetts. Her first book, *A Dome of Many-Coloured Glass* (1912), lacks the vivid individuality and technical experimentation that characterizes the poetry in *Sword Blades and Poppy Seed* (1914), *Men, Women, and Ghosts* (1916), *Can Grande's Castle* (1918), *Pictures of the Floating World* (1919), and *Legends* (1921). In 1913 Miss Lowell became identified with the movement of Imagism (q.v.), and after Ezra Pound abandoned the group she was its dominating force. Her technical experimentation includes not only the modes of the Imagists but also polyphonic prose (q.v.), a free verse method of which she and John Gould Fletcher are the leading exponents. Although her work attracted wide attention, it has been criticized as dealing too exclusively with sensual im-

ages, particularly visual ones, and as neglecting emotional values. Her distinctive personality informs *A Critical Fable* (q.v., 1922), a witty *Who's Who* of contemporary poets patterned after *A Fable for Critics*. Her biographical study, *John Keats* (1925), has been called an uncritical amassing of materials, although it is distinguished by the zest that marks all her work. Among the most noted of her poems are 'Patterns,' published in *Men, Women, and Ghosts*, a free-verse dramatic monologue on the clash between desire and convention within the mind of a woman of the 18th century, and 'Lilacs,' an Imagistic descriptive piece published in *What's O'Clock?* (1925), a volume for which she was posthumously awarded the Pulitzer Prize (1926). Her other books of verse include *Ballads for Sale* (1927) and *East Wind* (1926), and she wrote two further critical studies, *Six French Poets* (1915) and *Tendencies in Modern American Poetry* (1917).

LOWELL, James Russell (1819–91), descendant of a distinguished colonial family, was born at Cambridge, and graduated from Harvard as class poet (1838; LL.B. 1840; M.A. 1841). Finding law not to his liking, he was generally confused about his place in life, and went through a morose period from which he was rescued by his future wife, Maria White Lowell (q.v.). His early poetry, in *A Year's Life* (1841), shows a sharp difference from the *Poems* (1844) published the year of his marriage. Under the influence of his wife, an ardent Abolitionist and liberal, he temporarily submerged his native conservatism and was stimulated to forceful thinking and writing. His first journalistic venture was the short-lived *Pioneer* (q.v., 1843), but inspired by his wife he became a contributor to and editor of the *National Anti-Slavery Standard* (q.v.,1848–52) and contributed to the *Pennsylvania Freeman*. The year 1848 marked his most important writing in his youth, for it included the publication of works that established him as poet, critic, humorist, and political satirist: *Poems . . . Second Series*, *A Fable for Critics*, the first series of *Biglow Papers*, and *The Vision of Sir Launfal* (qq.v.). His prose and poetry continued in these varied categories, and his great facility permitted him to become a competent, if not brilliant, author in all these fields. With the exception of these four books, published in his 29th year, most of his writing lacks vitality, is too hortatory, depends too much on verbal pranks, ingenious rimes, and pleasant sounds, and represents the output of a man of taste who was a Bostonian and a Victorian. His wife died in 1853, and it is significant that until the publication of *Fireside Travels* (1864), a volume of literary essays, he published no books. He entered the academic world in 1855, succeeding Longfellow as Smith Professor of French and Spanish at Harvard, in which capacity he continued his predecessor's task of directing Americans to the literature of Europe, past and present. After a European journey to perfect his linguistic knowledge, he occupied the post and was nominally professor until 1886, although his teaching career really ended in 1876. As a professor he published little poetry and turned to scholarly interests, emphasizing literary criticism and losing contact with the immediate world. His criticism, contributed to periodicals and later assembled in book form, includes *Among My Books* (1870), *My Study Windows* (1871), a second series of *Among My Books* (1876), *Latest Literary Essays and Addresses* (1891), and *The Old English Dramatists* (1892). Lowell was the first editor of the *Atlantic Monthly* (q.v.,1857–61), in this position being a leader among the mid-19th century authors who are said to have brought a renaissance to New England. In 1864 he temporarily joined C.E.Norton as editor of *The North American Review*, and here also exerted a powerful influence on public taste and opinion. His *Political Essays* (1888) were gathered from his prose articles in these magazines, and in addition he contributed to the *Atlantic* his second series of *Biglow Papers* (q.v.,1867), trenchantly criticizing England's part in the Civil War and stating the patriotic sentiments of Northerners. His feeling for the Union cause was also expressed in one of his most important poems, 'Ode Recited at the Harvard Commemoration' (q.v.,1865), in honor of the Harvard men who died in the war. *The Cathedral* (q.v.,1869) is probably the best of his later poems. As a stanch Republican, he was appointed a presidential elector in 1876, and his firm stand for Hayes was rewarded by his appointment as minister to Spain (1877–80) and Garfield appointed him minister to England (1880–85). As a charming gentleman who had long since reverted to his natural con-

servatism, he was popularly received in European and English society and helped interpret American ideals to the old world, both through personal contacts and more formal addresses, such as *On Democracy* (1884). Following the death of his second wife, Frances Dunlap Lowell, he gave up public life, and returned to his Cambridge home, Elmwood. Although all his works are pleasing, and some are brilliant, those on which his reputation appears to rest most securely were mainly written before he was 30. It is interesting to note that virtually all his books are made up of periodical or lecture collections, and a clue may be found to his failure to rise to the greatest heights in the fact that his writings, loosely connected and brilliant in parts, have a diffused totality.

LOWELL, Maria White (1821–53), married J.R.Lowell (q.v.,1844), and was important in her own right as the author of poems, 20 of which were published in 1855, and a complete collection in 1907 and 1936. She stimulated her husband's interests in antislavery and the Transcendental movement. Her poetry, with a few exceptions, is considered cultivated but derivative, and her greatest work is the Abolitionist poem, 'Africa.'

LOWELL, Robert Traill Spence (1816–91), elder brother of J.R.Lowell, graduated from Harvard (1833) and served for some time as an Episcopal clergyman in Newfoundland. *The New Priest in Conception Bay* (1858) is a novel based on his experiences there, while *Antony Brade: A Story of a School* (1874) tells of his experiences as headmaster at St. Mark's School, and *A Story or Two from an Old Dutch Town* (1878) is concerned with Schenectady, where he was a professor at Union College. The best known of his *Poems* (1864) is 'The Relief of Lucknow,' dealing with the Sepoy rebellion in Lahore (1857).

Lowell Institute, Boston adult educational institution, founded by John Lowell (1799–1836), is a center for 'the higher lecture for the average citizen.' Free lectures have been given for more than a century in all branches of human knowledge by the world's leading scholars, and made available frequently to a reading audience through publication.

Lowell Offering, see *Farley, Harriet.*

LOWES, John Livingston (1867–), born in Indiana, has been a professor of English at Hanover, Swarthmore, Washington University, and since 1918 at Harvard. He has lectured widely and edited many scholarly works, but is best known for his books, *Convention and Revolt in Poetry* (1919), tracing main currents in English poetry; *The Road to Xanadu* (1927), an exhaustive analysis of Coleridge's creative imagination; *Of Reading Books and Other Essays* (1930); and *The Art of Geoffrey Chaucer* (1931). He edited the *Selected Poems* of Amy Lowell (1928).

LOWIE, Robert Heinrich (1883–), Austrian-born anthropologist, author, and editor, was associated with the American Museum of Natural History (1908–21), and since 1917 has been a professor at the University of California. He is the author of many authoritative works on the American Indians, as well as such general works as *Culture and Ethnology* (1917), *Primitive Society* (1920), *Primitive Religion* (1924), *Origin of the State* (1927), and *Are We Civilized?* (1929).

Loyalists, name applied to citizens of the English colonies who opposed American independence during the Revolutionary War. The term Tories had the same significance. The Loyalists were proportionately more numerous among the moneyed class, the Anglican clergy, the office-holders, and other conservatives, but they were estimated by John Adams to include approximately one third of the population, or about 1,000,000 people. Those who removed to Canada, during the Revolution or just after it, were called United Empire Loyalists, and after 1789 this name became a mark of distinction in that country.

Luck of Roaring Camp, The, story by Bret Harte (q.v.), published in the *Overland Monthly* (1868) and reprinted in *The Luck of Roaring Camp and Other Sketches* (1870). It is one of the earliest examples of local-color fiction.

A child is born to Cherokee Sal, a prostitute in the California gold-mining settlement of Roaring Camp. The mother dies, and the child, christened Thomas Luck, is adopted by the hardened miners, whose spirit is changed to a beautiful though awkward sympathy. The following year, when the river rises, Roaring Camp is engulfed, and Kentuck, one of the miners, is drowned with The Luck in his arms.

Lucky Sam McCarver, play by Sidney Howard (q.v.), produced in 1925 and published in 1926.

Carlotta Ashe, a New York society woman, becomes involved in a murder scandal, but her reputation is saved through the influence of Sam McCarver, proprietor of a night club. She falls in love with him, and, though she realizes what he is, marries him. Her attempt to remold his character and make him a part of her idle social set fails, because his will is the stronger. They separate, and each continues his own way. When she loses money and prestige, Sam returns to offer his financial aid, but that very night she dies of heart failure.

Lucy Gayheart, novel by Willa Cather (q.v.).

Lucy Temple, sequel to *Charlotte Temple* (q.v.).

LUDLOW, Fitz Hugh (1836–70), born in New York, graduated from Union College, and the following year won notoriety for his book, *The Hasheesh Eater* (1857), based on his own experiences as a drug addict. Among his periodical contributions was a series of descriptive sketches written during a tour of the West (1863) for the *Atlantic Monthly*, and later collected as *The Heart of the Continent* (1870); an article on the effects of opium, 'What Shall They Do to be Saved?'; and the short stories collected in *Little Brother and Other Genre-Pictures* (1867).

Ludlow Strike, coal miners' strike against the Rockefeller-controlled Colorado Fuel and Iron Company. It began (Sept. 1913) as the result of unrecognized demands for union organization and the improvement of wages, hours, and conditions of labor. State militia and strike-breakers were summoned, and several armed conflicts occurred during the following months, with the loss of many lives. The most important of these was the final 'Battle of Ludlow' (April 1914). Federal troops sent at this time were not recalled until early in 1915. President Wilson proposed a three-year truce, during which time a settlement might be reached, but this was rejected by the operators. The strike ended (Dec. 1914) when the strikers returned to work without the satisfaction of their demands.

LUHAN, Mabel Dodge (1879–), born at Buffalo, New York, severed her ties with her socially prominent family and became a leader of liberal intellectual and æsthetic movements. In Italy (1902–12) and in New York City (1912–18), she established salons to which were attracted such figures as Eleonora Duse, Gertrude Stein, Steffens, Isadora Duncan, John Reed, Walter Lippmann, Van Vechten, and Max Eastman. She moved to New Mexico (1918), and there in 1923 married her fourth husband, Antonio Luhan, a Taos Indian. Her life at Taos is described with painful detail in several books. *Lorenzo in Taos* (1932) is an account of her turbulent intimacy with D.H.Lawrence, while *Winter in Taos* (1935) is a narrative of the region's background. Her autobiography, *Intimate Memories*, comprises four volumes, *Background* (1933), *European Experiences* (1935), *Movers and Shakers* (1936), and *Edge of Taos Desert* (1937).

Luke Havergal, poem by E.A.Robinson (q.v.).

LUKENS, Henry Clay (1838–1900?), New York journalist, author of parodies, lampoons, and humorous verse, usually signed by his pseudonym Erratic Enrique. He wrote *Lean Nora* (1870), a parody of Burger's *Lenore; Jets and Flashes* (1883), a book of lampoons; and an article on 'American Literary Comedians' (*Harper's Magazine*, 1890).

LUKS, George (1867–1933), born in Pennsylvania, studied painting there and abroad, and became a member of the group known as 'The Eight' (q.v.). His typical subjects, genre scenes of New York's East Side, are painted with slashing, direct brush strokes, often, as in *The Spielers*, a painting of two street urchins, capturing the vitality and spontaneity of the moment. For many years Luks was an instructor at the Art Students' League, and later at his own school. An uneven artist, he is also known for his illustrations and caricatures as a Spanish-American War correspondent, and his cartoon series called *McFadden's Flats*.

LUMMIS, Charles Fletcher (1859–1928), spent most of his life in California, where he labored in many ways to create interest in the historical, archæological, and ethnological backgrounds of the Southwest. His books include *The Land of Poco Tiempo* (1893), *The Spanish Pioneers* (1893), *Spanish Songs of Old California* (1923), *Mesa, Cañon, and Pueblo* (1925),

and other works of fiction, history, and poetry. In 1894 he founded and edited the *Land of Sunshine*, a magazine of life and history in the Far West, later entitled *Out West*. Although more a popularizer than a scholar, as librarian of the Los Angeles Public Library he assembled an important collection of Southwest material. He also founded the Southwest Museum (Los Angeles) and the Landmarks Club.

Lummox, novel by Fannie Hurst (q.v.).

LUMPKIN, GRACE, proletarian novelist, author of *To Make My Bread* (1932), the story of a North Carolina mill strike, which was dramatized by Albert Bein as *Let Freedom Ring* (1936). Her other novels include *A Sign for Cain* (1935), dealing with Southern sharecroppers, and *The Wedding* (1939).

LUNDY, BENJAMIN (1789–1839), Quaker Abolitionist, in Ohio (1815) established the Union Humane Society, and there began to publish *The Genius of Universal Emancipation* (1821–35, 1838–9), a journal that appeared irregularly from the editor's various temporary residences, in Tennessee, Maryland, and other states. Garrison was an associate editor during 1829, but, because his articles were too vitriolic, Lundy soon broke with him. From 1825 to 1835 Lundy also made journeys to Haiti, Canada, and Texas, searching for suitable places to colonize freed Negroes. *The War in Texas* (1836) exposes the plot to wrest Texas from Mexico as a slaveholders' scheme. In 1836 he founded *The National Enquirer and Constitutional Advocate of Universal Liberty*, which in 1838 was taken over and edited for two years by Whittier. The latter changed its name to *The Pennsylvania Freeman*, and secured important contributions from Lowell. Lundy thereupon re-established *The Genius*, issuing 12 further numbers before his death.

LUNT, ALFRED (1893–), actor, whose early career included appearances with Helen Hayes, Margaret Anglin, and Lily Langtry, and is best known for his roles in *Ned McCobb's Daughter*, *Marco Millions*, and *Outward Bound*, and his appearances with his wife, Lynn Fontanne, in such plays as *The Guardsman*, *The Taming of the Shrew*, *Idiot's Delight*, *The Sea Gull*, and *Amphitryon* 38.

Lusitania, British-owned Cunard liner, was torpedoed and sunk off the coast of Ireland by a German submarine (May 7, 1915). On the day the vessel sailed from the U.S., the German embassy inserted an advertisement in the newspapers, announcing that vessels flying British or Allied flags were liable to destruction in waters adjacent to the British Isles. Although the ship carried armaments for the Allies, it was unarmed. Of the passengers and crew, numbering 1,959, 1,159 lives were lost, including 128 U.S. citizens, among whom were A.G.Vanderbilt, Charles Frohman, and Elbert Hubbard. Many Americans desired an immediate declaration of war, and President Wilson issued a strong note demanding reparation, which was not granted. The incident, along with other results of submarine warfare, was instrumental in leading to the entrance of the U.S. into the First World War.

LUSKA, SIDNEY, pseudonym of Henry Harland (q.v.).

LUTHER, SETH (*fl.*1817–46), pioneer in American labor reform, who attacked child labor in the cotton mills of New England in his pamphlet, *An Address to the Working-Men of New England* (1832). Other pamphlets were *An Address on the Right of Free Suffrage* (1833) and *An Address on the Origin and Progress of Avarice* (1834). He was secretary of the General Trades Convention in Boston (1834), and helped to draw up the *Boston Circular* (1835), advocating the ten-hour day.

Lutherans, Protestants who adhere to the teachings of Martin Luther. The views of the Evangelical Church, which stem from his principles, are conservative as compared with those of the Reformed Church, based on Calvinistic doctrines. Luther emphasized the responsibility of the individual conscience to God alone, taught that the Scriptures are the only necessary guide to truth and that baptism is essential for regeneration, and permitted the retention of altars and vestments. A synodical form of church organization has developed, but the unity is one of doctrine rather than of organization, since each church makes its own decisions. The first Lutherans in America came to Manhattan from the Netherlands (1623). Another congregation was established in Delaware by Swedish settlers (1638). Others were attracted by the tolerance of the Quakers in Pennsylvania, but the creation of the first Lutheran synod and

its independence from European affiliation resulted from the work of the German-born minister, Heinrich Melchior Mühlenberg, who came to America in 1742. There are now some four and a quarter million Lutherans in the U.S.

Lyceums, popular societies for literary and scientific education. The first 'American Lyceum' was founded at Millbury, Massachusetts (1826), by Josiah Holbrook (q.v.), and under his leadership nearly 100 branches were established during the next two years, embodying his program of providing educational opportunities for adults, stimulating teacher-training and interest in schools, and founding museums and libraries. At first chiefly concerned with the co-operative study of natural history, the lyceums extended their curricula to include a wide range of subjects, and eight years after Holbrook began the work, approximately 3,000 lyceums had been founded in towns and cities throughout the U.S., providing the most important stimulus to general education up to that time. In 1839 the American Lyceum Union held a national convention, and lesser organizations were already established in states and cities, of which the most notable was the Boston lyceum, of which Webster was president. The movement flourished until the end of the century, interrupted only by the Civil War, and local programs of reading, debates, and classes were amplified by the addresses of professional lecturers. Among the popular and well-paid lyceum speakers were Emerson, whose essays were often first presented as lyceum lectures, Webster, Thoreau, Parker, Holmes, Hale, H.W.Beecher, Agassiz, Lowell, Curtis, C.A.Dana, Bayard Taylor, Clemens, Barnum, and Henry M. Stanley. Reform movements were stimulated by such lecturers as Garrison, Greeley, Lucy Stone, and Elizabeth Stanton. With the rise of Mercantile Libraries and systems of public schools and higher educational institutions, for which the lyceum movement had been largely responsible, local groups assumed the nature of forums that were supplied with lecturers from central booking offices, such as the American Literary Bureau of New York, and the Boston Lyceum Musical Bureau of Redpath (q.v.). After 1890, Chautauqua societies (q.v.) took the place of the original lyceums, which became centers of popular entertainment.

Lynch law, capital punishment executed without due process of law by self-appointed groups of private persons. Such mob 'justice' was meted out in frontier settlements, where legal institutions were unorganized or distrusted. It still occurs, most frequently in the South as a result of race prejudice against Negroes. (See *Vigilantes.*) The term probably derives from the name of Charles Lynch (1736–96), Virginia planter and Revolutionary officer, who suppressed a Loyalist conspiracy by extra-legal means.

LYND, Robert S[taughton] (1892–), professor of sociology at Columbia, author of *Knowledge for What?* (1939), concerned with the place of social science in American culture. With his wife, Helen Merrell Lynd, he has written *Middletown* (1929) and *Middletown in Transition* (1937), comprehensive sociological studies of a typical small American city (Muncie, Indiana).

LYON, James (1735–94), Presbyterian minister of Nova Scotia and Maine, as a psalmodist and writer of hymn tunes was one of the earliest American composers. Born in New Jersey, he graduated from Princeton (1759) and in 1761 published his *Urania, or A Choice Collection of Psalm-Tunes, Anthems, and Hymns.* During his pastorates in the northern colonies, he continued to compose religious music, which was published by later anthologists.

LYONS, Eugene (1898–), journalist and foreign correspondent for the United Press in Russia (1928–34), whose books include: *The Life and Death of Sacco and Vanzetti* (1927); *Moscow Carrousel* (1935); *Assignment in Utopia* (1937), telling of his disillusioning experiences in Russia; *Terror in Russia?* (1938), an attack on the Soviet state, balanced by its second part, a defense by Upton Sinclair; and *Stalin: Czar of All the Russias* (1940). He has edited *Six Soviet Plays* (1934), including two of his own translations, and *We Cover the World* (1937), containing experiences of 15 correspondents. He is now the editor of *The American Mercury.*

M

Names beginning with 'Mc' are placed as though beginning with 'Mac.'

M. QUAD, pseudonym of C.B.Lewis (q.v.).

MABIE, HAMILTON WRIGHT (1845–1916), New York editor and critic associated from 1879 to his death with the *Christian Union*, which in 1893 was renamed the *Outlook*. His mild, polite literary criticism, symbolic of the Victorian era in America, was published in such works as *My Study Fire* (1890), *Books and Culture* (1896), and *The Life of the Spirit* (1899).

MCALLISTER, [SAMUEL] WARD (1827–95), born in Georgia, entered law practice in California at the age of 23 and two years later retired with a comfortable fortune. Thereafter he was active as the arbiter of New York and Newport society. He organized the Patriarchs (1872), heads of New York's oldest families, whose approval of social aspirants was considered final. In 1892, when Mrs.William Astor discovered that her ballroom would accommodate 400 people, McAllister cut her list of guests to this number, giving rise to the term, 'the Four Hundred,' designating the cream of fashionable society. He wrote *Society as I Have Found It* (1890).

MCALMON, ROBERT, expatriate American author, whose books, published mainly in France, made him a spokesman of the post-war nihilistic pessimists of the 'lost generation.' His poems in free verse have been published in *Explorations* (1921), *The Portrait of a Generation* (1926), *North America, Continent of Conjecture* (1929), and *Not Alone Lost* (1937). *Village; As It Happened through a Fifteen Year Period* (1924) is a group of impressionistic sketches showing the repressive effect of an American village on its youth, in the manner of *Winesburg, Ohio*. He published his autobiography as *Being Geniuses Together* (1938).

MACARTHUR, CHARLES (1895–), Pennsylvania-born playwright, as a journalist in Chicago was an intimate of the literary group which centered there. His plays include *Lulu Belle* (1926), written with his uncle, Edward Sheldon (q.v.); *Salvation* (1927), written with Sidney Howard; and *The Front Page* (1928), *20th Century* (1932), and *Ladies and Gentlemen* (1939), written with Ben Hecht (q.v.), with whom he has also collaborated on motion-picture scripts. His wife is the actress Helen Hayes.

MCCLELLAN, GEORGE BRINTON (1826–85), was born at Philadelphia, the son of George McClellan (1796–1847), a noted surgeon and professor of medicine. Graduating from West Point (1846), he served as a military engineer, but resigned in 1857 to serve as an official of the Illinois Central Railroad. At the outbreak of the Civil War, he became commander of the Department of the Ohio, led a successful campaign in West Virginia, and was given command of the Division of the Potomac. He succeeded Scott as commander-in-chief of the Union armies, leading in person the disastrous Peninsular Campaign (q.v.). After the Seven Days' Battles (q.v.) he was removed from his command, although given it again in September (1862). Because he was too slow in following up his victory at Antietam (q.v.), Lincoln finally removed him in November. He was the Democratic candidate for the presidency (1864), but was decisively defeated by Lincoln. After the war he resumed his career in engineering, and served as governor of New Jersey (1878–81). *McClellan's Own Story* (1887) is a defense of his military career.

MCCLELLAN, ISAAC (1806–99), author who became celebrated as the sportsman's poet. *Poems of the Rod and Gun* (1886) and *Haunts of Wild Game* (1896) are typical collections of his work, in which he attempts, without great success, to use as poetic themes such subjects as 'Bison-Hunting in the Far West,' 'Elephant-Hunting in the Island of Ceylon,' and 'My Parker Gun.'

McClure's Magazine (1893–1929), popular monthly, was published and edited by Samuel Sidney McClure (1857–), Irish-born publisher who in 1884 established the first newspaper syndicate in the U.S. The magazine was intended to present at a small price the work of the most famous contemporary English and American authors, as well as to report current scientific knowledge and world

affairs. It became a leading vehicle for the muckrakers (q.v.,1901–12). Employing a large staff for research and rewriting, it produced lively articles on complex subjects and was a spearhead of the reform movement, investigating every aspect of American life. Contributors included O.Henry, F.P.Dunne, Jack London, and W.A.White, and among the leading articles were 'The History of the Standard Oil Company,' by Ida Tarbell; 'The Shame of Minneapolis,' by Lincoln Steffens; and 'The Right to Work,' by R.S.Baker. *McClure's* passed the period of its chief significance with the waning of public enthusiasm for reform.

McCORMICK, Cyrus Hall (1809–84), Virginia-born inventor, perfected a reaping machine in 1831, although he did not patent it until after the announcement of a similar machine by a competitor, three years later. His reaper contained the essential features incorporated in all harvesting machines since that time, and soon became indispensable in large-scale agriculture. He opened a factory at Chicago (1847) and became the foremost manufacturer of harvesting machinery.

McCOSH, James (1811–94), Scottish-born philosopher and educator, came to the U.S. (1868) to become president of the College of New Jersey, remaining in that position until 1888. In Scotland and at Princeton, he set forth his philosophy of Intuitionism, opposed to the doctrines of Kant and J.S.Mill. He maintained that common-sense principles or intuitions of the mind have their beginnings in simple cognition, take on singular and concrete forms, and pass into higher judgments and beliefs, to become universal and necessary principles, accredited by experience, self-evidence, necessity, and universality. His philosophy led him to become a theist, and at the same time to champion the doctrine of evolution, which he contended gave evidence of God's method of creation. During his college presidency, he stimulated research, organized graduate work, increased the faculty, and introduced higher standards. His books include: *The Intuitions of the Mind Inductively Investigated* (1860), *An Examination of Mr.J.S.Mill's Philosophy* (1866), *The Laws of Discursive Thought* (1870), *Christianity and Positivism* (1871), *The Scottish Philosophy* (1875), and *Realistic Philosophy Defended* (1887).

McCRAE, John (1872–1918), Canadian poet, who died after two years of service in the First World War. His rondeau, 'In Flanders Fields,' appeared in the posthumous volume, *In Flanders Fields and Other Poems* (1919).

McCUTCHEON, George Barr (1866–1928), Indiana novelist, author of some 40 works of fiction within 28 years. His *Graustark* (1901) followed the style popularized by Anthony Hope's *Prisoner of Zenda* (1894) and dealt with court intrigue in a fictional land, with high-flown romance between dashing American heroes and titled heroines. This was followed by a series of romances dealing with the same mythical principality. His comic fantasy, *Brewster's Millions* (1902), was equally popular and was successfully dramatized by Winchell Smith in 1906. McCutcheon wrote one realistic novel of Middle Western life, *Mary Midthorne* (1911), and upon occasion attempted a blending of realistic depiction with a romantic plot.

McDONALD, Harl (1899–), Colorado-born composer, professor of music at the University of Pennsylvania, has composed many works noted for their rhythmic virtuosity, technical skill, and use of American themes. These include a two-piano concerto, choral works based on the poetry of Whitman, and three symphonies: *The Santa-Fé Trail*, the *Rhumba*, and the *Lamentations of Fu Hsuan*.

MacDOWELL, Edward Alexander (1861–1908), New York-born composer, went abroad to study (1876) at Paris, Stuttgart, and Frankfort, and taught piano at the Darmstadt Conservatory (1881–2). Before returning to the U.S. (1888), he composed his first and second piano concertos and other works for piano and orchestra. In Boston (1888–96), he taught, appeared as a concert pianist, and composed such piano works as the *Twelve Virtuoso Studies*, *Woodland Sketches*, the *Tragica* and *Eroica* sonatas, and many songs, tone poems, and the first and second (*Indian*) suites for orchestra. He headed Columbia's department of music (1896–1904), but after many difficulties resigned the post, and, exhausted and embittered, lost his reason after 1905. While at Columbia he produced his *Norse* and *Keltic* sonatas, the *Sea Pieces*, the *Fireside Tales*, and the *New England*

Idyls, all for piano. MacDowell has taken his place, along with Grieg, as a leading composer in the late romantic tradition, although his nationalism is less marked than that of Grieg. His occasional use of Indian themes is his only overt tie with the American background, although he frequently found inspiration in the countryside at his Peterboro, New Hampshire, farm. Here his widow, the pianist Marian Nevins MacDowell, has established the MacDowell Colony for composers, artists, and writers. E.A.Robinson, Willa Cather, the Benéts, Thornton Wilder, and Hervey Allen are among the authors who have sojourned at the colony.

MACDOWELL, KATHERINE SHERWOOD [BONNER] (1849–83), Mississippi local-color writer, whose sketches were collected in *Dialect Tales* (1883) and *Sewanee River Tales* (1884). *Like Unto Like* (1878) is a semi-autobiographical novel set in the era of the Civil War and Reconstruction. Her later stories of life in the Tennessee mountains and southern Illinois were more realistic. During the early 1870's she lived in Boston, and served as Longfellow's amanuensis. She wrote under the pseudonym Sherwood Bonner.

MCFEE, WILLIAM [MORLEY PUNSHON] (1881–), born in London of English parents, was educated in England, and, following the family tradition, became a ship's engineer. His experiences furnished the material for his first book, *Letters from an Ocean Tramp* (1908, revised 1921). In 1911 he entered the American merchant marine and established his home in the U.S., although during the First World War he served in the British navy. After the war he returned to the U.S., retiring from the sea (1922) to settle at Westport, Connecticut, where he has devoted himself to writing. His first novel, *Aliens* (1914, revised 1918), set in New Jersey, is concerned with British ships' officers and their families. *Casuals of the Sea* (1916) tells of a London family and its aimless struggles, both afloat and ashore, while *Captain Macedoine's Daughter* (1920) is an exotic adventure story with a Mediterranean background, showing McFee's indebtedness, both in method and in philosophic attitude, to Joseph Conrad. *Harbours of Memory* (1921) is a collection of sketches, concerned with experiences at sea and in foreign ports. Later books include: *An Engineer's Note Book* (1921); *Studies in Patriotism* (1922); *Command* (1922), the story of a ship's officer who is a weakling and nonentity until war experiences bring him self-knowledge and authority; *Race* (1924), portraying middle-class life in London during the late 19th century; *Swallowing the Anchor* (1925), autobiographical essays; *Sunlight in New Granada* (1925), a descriptive book about Colombia; *The Life of Sir Martin Frobisher* (1928); *Pilgrims of Adversity* (1928), an adventure novel set in Central and South America; *Sailors of Fortune* (1929), short stories set in the Mediterranean and Caribbean; *North of Suez* (1930), a romantic novel of the Near East; *The Harbourmaster* (1932), an exotic tale of love and life in Salonika and South America; *No Castle in Spain* (1933), a romance contrasting modern American standards with the traditional ideals of a South American aristocrat; *Reflections of Marsyas* (1933), a book of verse; *More Harbours of Memory* (1934), essays on travel and life at sea, including 'A Six-Hour Shift,' the title piece of an English collection (1920); *The Beachcomber* (1935), set in the West Indies; *Derelicts* (1938), a novel whose chief figure is an Englishman who escapes his frustrated life at home to begin anew in a tropical environment; and *Watch Below* (1940), a study of tramp steamers, cast in a form that combines analysis and fiction.

M'Fingal, mock epic by John Trumbull (q.v.), of which the first two cantos were published separately (1775–6) and the complete work in 1782. This burlesque, in four cantos of Hudibrastic couplets, satirizes the events of the year 1775 and deals humorously with the leading figures of the Revolution.

The first canto begins with a political discussion by Honorius (seemingly John Adams), which attacks the course of British government and the local defenders of its injurious colonial policy. This is interrupted by M'Fingal, a burly monarchist New England squire, who defends the Tory policies so ineptly that he ironically clinches every argument of Honorius. The argument between these two champions and their respective cohorts becomes more heated in the course of the second canto. In the third canto, their verbal argumentation is interrupted by the attempt of the Whigs to erect a liberty pole. When M'Fingal attempts to disperse the crowd, a gen-

eral fracas ensues, and he is tarred and feathered and stuck to the pole. In the fourth canto, M'Fingal has sneaked to a secret Tory meeting, where he mournfully recites a vision of future events, and foretells the English defeat and the great rise of the American nation. In the midst of his recital, the mob discovers the meeting, and M'Fingal jumps out the window, to seek temporary safety.

McGill University, situated at Montreal, was founded on the bequest of James McGill (1744–1813), a fur merchant. Chartered in 1821, it was opened in 1829, but dates its importance as an educational institution from 1855. It is best known as a scientific school and for its medical curriculum. Sir William Osler and Stephen Leacock have been members of the faculty.

McGILLIVRAY, Alexander (*c.*1759–93), chief of the Creek Indians, was the son of a Scottish-born trader and a Creek woman. He was educated at Charleston, but returned to the tribe, and, having served as a British agent during the Revolution, developed an intense hatred of Americans because they had confiscated his property. After the war, he became associated with the Spanish authorities in Florida and New Orleans, and, probably abetted by them, instigated attacks on Americans in Kentucky and Tennessee. He made a treaty with the U.S. (1790), by which the Creeks reacquired their land in Georgia, and he was given a pension and appointed a brigadier-general. Upon receiving a larger pension from the Spanish, he repudiated the treaty and caused further attacks.

MacGRATH, Harold (1871–1932), author of popular romances that include: *The Man on the Box* (1904), *Half a Rogue* (1906), and *A Splendid Hazard* (1910).

McGUFFEY, William Holmes (1800–73), born in Pennsylvania, was educated in rural schools and was considered a prodigy because of his remarkable ability at memorization. After graduation from Washington College (1826) and teaching school in Kentucky, he became professor of languages, philosophy, and philology at Miami University (Oxford, Ohio, 1826–36), president of Cincinnati College (1836–9) and Ohio University (1839–43), and professor at Woodward College, Cincinnati (1843–5) and the University of Virginia (1845–73). While at Miami, he began to compile his *Eclectic Readers*, six schoolbooks (1836–57) that combined literary lessons, obvious moral teachings, and carefully selected extracts from great English writers. Their estimated sales totaled 122,000,000 copies, and their constant use in mid-19th century schools had a profound effect upon the moral and cultural shaping of the American mind.

McHENRY, James (1785–1845), Irish-born poet and novelist, emigrated to Pennsylvania in 1817. His works include: *The Pleasures of Friendship* (1822), miscellaneous verse; *Waltham* (1823), a poem dealing with the Revolution; *The Wilderness; or, Braddock's Time* (1823), a historical novel concerning Ulstermen during the Revolution; *The Spectre of the Forest* (1823), a romance of 17th-century New England; and Irish historical fiction, a blank-verse drama on the Druids, and other miscellaneous literature.

McILWAIN, Charles Howard (1871–), professor of history at Miami University (1903–5), Princeton (1905–10), Bowdoin (1910–26), and Harvard (1926–36). His works include: *The American Revolution* (1923, Pulitzer Prize 1924); *The Growth of Political Thought in the West* (1932); and *Constitutionalism and the Changing World* (1939).

McINTIRE, Samuel (1757–1811), carpenter-architect of Salem, whose homes for the wealthy ship-owning aristocracy were marked by well-carved mantelpieces, cornices, ornate portals, and slender, well-proportioned columns, following the Adam style.

McINTOSH, William (*c.*1775–1825), Creek Indian chief, son of a British captain and a Creek woman, was rewarded with an appointment as brigadier-general for aid in the War of 1812. After serving with Jackson against the Seminoles (1817–18), he led one faction of his tribe, the Lower Creeks, to cede lands to the U.S., and as a result was slain in a fight with the Upper Creeks.

McINTYRE, John T[homas] (1871–), Philadelphia author, studied the meaner aspects of the city in his realistic novel, *The Ragged Edge* (1902), and then devoted himself to writing books for children. After 1923 he returned to fiction for adults, publishing in that year *Blowing Weather*, a romance of pirates, the sea,

and the old port of Philadelphia. *Shot Towers* (1926) is a Dickensian depiction of city and country life in the 19th-century U.S.; *Stained Sails* (1928) is a romantic story about John Paul Jones; and *Drums in the Dawn* (1932) is a romance of the Revoluntionary War. McIntyre's later realistic fiction about city life includes: *Slag* (1927), a story of the New York slums and their production of criminals; *Steps Going Down* (1936), which won an international novel prize for its melodramatic study of the Philadelphia underworld; *Ferment* (1937), a story of strikebreaking and labor racketeering in Philadelphia; and *Signing Off* (1938), contrasting the seamy side of the city's life with its more respectable aspects. *A Young Man's Fancy*, produced as a play in 1919, and revised as a novel in 1925, is a fantastic story of youthful romance.

McKAY, Claude (1890–), Negro author, emigrated from his native Jamaica to the U.S. (1912). His books include: *Songs of Jamaica* (1912) and *Harlem Shadows* (1922), poems; *Gingertown* (1932), short stories; and the virile novels, *Home to Harlem* (1928), the story of a Negro soldier's return from France to America; *Banjo* (1929), set on the Marseilles waterfront, where McKay worked for a time; and *Banana Bottom* (1933), about a Negro girl in Jamaica, who is torn between racial traditions and the education she has received in England. *A Long Way from Home* (1937) is his autobiography and *Harlem* (1940) is a study of Negro life in New York.

McKAY, Donald (1810–80), born in Nova Scotia, became a famous Boston builder of clipper ships (q.v.). His best-known ship, the *Flying Cloud* (launched in 1851), made the run from New York to San Francisco in less than 90 days. He also built ships for the Australian trade, and for the U.S.Navy during the Civil War, but by 1875 steam and iron shipbuilding forced him to close his yards.

MACKAY, John William (1831–1902), born in Ireland, came to the U.S. (1840) and in 1851 began his mining career in California and Nevada. With several partners he discovered the 'Big Bonanza' deposits of the Comstock Lode (q.v., 1873). He invested in Western railroads and real estate, but, after moving to New York and Europe, organized the Postal Telegraph and Commercial Cable companies, successfully opposing the Western Union monopoly of Jay Gould.

MACKAYE, [James Morrison] Steele (1842–94), New York actor and playwright, whose more than 20 plays, all sentimental melodramas, included *Hazel Kirke* (q.v., 1880), a domestic drama laid in England, a dramatization (1881) of Tourgée's *A Fool's Errand*, and *Paul Kauvar* (1887), a love story of the French Revolution. He also invented many stage devices, including an elevator stage and novel scenic and lighting effects. *Epoch* (2 vols., 1927), by his son, Percy MacKaye, is his biography.

MACKAYE, Percy [Wallace] (1875–), son of Steele MacKaye, was born in New York City, and, after graduation from Harvard (1897) and teaching school, began to write poetry and plays. *The Canterbury Pilgrims* (1903) deals with an imaginary sentimental episode between Chaucer and the Prioress. This was made into a libretto for an opera by DeKoven (1917), and MacKaye wrote two other blank verse plays, *Jeanne d'Arc* (1906) and *Sappho and Phaon* (1907). *The Scarecrow* (q.v., 1908) is a prose play based on a story by Hawthorne. His first play with a modern subject, *Mater* (1908), was a comedy of American politics, while *Anti-Matrimony* (1910) was a satire on the influence of continental playwrights upon naïve Americans, and *Tomorrow* (1913), was a problem play about eugenics. *Yankee Fantasies* (1912) is a series of one-act plays about New England life. *Rip Van Winkle* (1920) is a libretto for a DeKoven opera, and *Washington, the Man Who Made Us* (1920) is a 'ballad play.' MacKaye has been consistently interested in large pageants and communal productions of drama, producing the *Saint-Gaudens Masque-Prologue* (1905), followed by a spectacular pageant version of his *Canterbury Pilgrims* (1909), *Sanctuary*, *A Bird Masque* (1913), *Caliban, by the Yellow Sands* (1916), and *The Evergreen Tree* (1917), the last concerned with the celebration of Christmas. In 1921 he made the first of several visits to the Kentucky Mountains, which resulted in *This Fine-Pretty World* (1923), a comedy based on native materials; *Tall Tales of the Kentucky Mountains* (1926); *Kentucky Mountain Fantasies* (1928), folk plays; *Gobbler of God* (1928), a narrative poem based on a mountain legend; and other writings.

His poetry has been collected in *Poems and Plays* (2 vols.,1916). *Epoch* (2 vols., 1927) is a biography of his father.

MACKENZIE, Sir Alexander (1763–1820), Scottish-born fur trader and explorer, came to Canada in 1779, built trading posts in the West, and in 1789 led an expedition from Lake Athabasca along the Mackenzie River to the Arctic Ocean. In 1793, by water routes, he led another party across northern Canada to the Pacific. This was the first overland journey across North America north of Mexico. Mackenzie continued in the Canadian fur trade and politics until his return to Scotland (1808). His narrative, *Voyages from Montreal . . . through the Continent of North America to the Frozen and Pacific Oceans . . .* (1801), is prefaced by a history of the Canadian fur trade.

McKIM, Charles Follen (1847–1909), architect, studied at the Beaux-Arts in Paris, worked with H.H.Richardson, and founded the firm that in 1879 became McKim, Mead, and White. Reacting against the architectural romanticism of the Gothic revival, McKim first based his style on 18th-century colonial architecture, as in the Newport Casino (1881), but his great success consisted in his restoring to favor the classical ideals modified by Italian Renaissance form. With the Boston Public Library (1887–95), he launched a wave of classicism, and among his firm's works in harmony with this spirit were the Madison Square Garden (1890, demolished in 1925), the Herald Building (1894), the J.P.Morgan Library, several buildings for Columbia University, the Agricultural Building at the Columbian Exposition in Chicago (1893), the University Club in New York, and the Pennsylvania Railroad Station (1906–10) in New York. Stanford White (q.v.) was a member of the firm.

McKINLEY, William (1843–1901), 25th President of the U.S. (1897–1901), was born in Ohio, became a Union officer in the Civil War, and later practiced law and entered Republican politics. Elected to Congress (1876–82, 1884–90), he was prominent in tariff legislation and in 1890 introduced the McKinley bill, providing for reciprocal trade agreements and the protection of 'infant' industries. Through this measure, his defense of the gold standard, and his leadership in party conventions, he won the backing of the Ohio capitalist, Mark Hanna, and was elected governor of the state (1891–5). Hanna was also instrumental in causing his nomination for the presidency. His Democratic opponent was Bryan, over whom he triumphed mainly because of his 'sound money' campaign. McKinley's first term was marked by several applications of the policy of 'manifest destiny.' Republican politicians and popular demand forced him to intervene in the Cuban insurrection against Spain, and the Spanish-American War was precipitated, resulting in a temporary protectorate over Cuba, the purchase of the Philippines, and the acquisition of Puerto Rico and Guam. This period also saw the annexation of Hawaii and certain Samoan islands, intervention in China, agitation for a Panama Canal, the Platt Amendment assuming the right of the U.S. to protect Cuban independence, and Secretary of State Hay's achievement of the 'Open Door' policy (q.v.) in China. Re-elected despite the vigorous anti-imperialistic campaign of Bryan, McKinley toured the West, and on his return visited the Pan-American Exposition at Buffalo, where he was assassinated by an anarchist, Leon Czolgosz. He was succeeded by his Vice President, Theodore Roosevelt.

McLEAN, Sarah Pratt (1856–), New England author, best known for her stories and novels of Cape Cod village life. *Cape Cod Folks* (1881) is a local-color romance, based on real characters, and concerned with the life of a school teacher in a community of seafaring people. Her later books include: *Towhead* (1883); *Last Chance Junction* (1889); *The Moral Imbeciles* (1898); *Vesty of the Basins* (1900); and *Winslow Plain* (1902). Several of her works were published under her married name, Sarah P. McLean Greene.

MacLEISH, Archibald (1892–), born in Illinois, graduated from Yale (1915), served in the First World War, and received his LL.B. from Harvard (1919), after which he practiced law. His poetic career falls into three principal divisions. The first, signalized by his expatriation in Europe (1923–8) and in part the result of his reactions to the War, extends from *Tower of Ivory* (1917) to *The Hamlet of A.MacLeish* (q.v.,1928). These works, along with *The Happy Marriage* (1924), *The Pot of Earth* (q.v.,1925),

and *Streets in the Moon* (1926), show the influence of Ezra Pound and T.S.Eliot, and are subjective in content. MacLeish's work at this time was a voice of the hopeless individual in a chaotic post-war world. Upon his return to the depression-ridden U.S., he showed, from the publication of *New Found Land* (1930) to *Frescoes for Mr.Rockefeller's City* (q.v.,1933), a new attitude, in which his poetic influences were less obvious and his awareness of a national, social, and cultural heritage more sensitive and pronounced. *New Found Land* contains his poem, 'You, Andrew Marvell,' addressing the 17th-century poet who heard 'Time's winged chariot hurrying near,' and, three centuries before MacLeish, discovered in the words of the latter that 'the shadow of the night comes on . . .' to bury the struggling heart in final darkness. His main book of this period was *Conquistador* (q.v.,1932; Pulitzer Prize, 1933), an epic of the conquest of Mexico, in which Díaz tells of the battles to win territory named 'for the kings that bear no scars' and 'the bishops, rich-men, generals cocks-at-arms.' The end of the period was marked by the collection of *Poems*, 1924–1933 (1933). In *Panic* (q.v.,1935), a verse drama, he turned his attention to immediate social issues of the American scene, while in *Public Speech* (1936) he definitely announced his intention to take his part in collectivist social thought. This dual interest in drama and social ideas was extended in the radio plays in verse, *The Fall of the City* (1937), exposing totalitarian dictatorship as a hollow mockery of leadership, and *Air Raid* (1938), depicting the impersonal cruelty of modern warfare. He chose the medium of these works in accordance with his belief that 'the imagination works better through the ear than through the eye.' In *America Was Promises* (1939), he restates his theme of the need for action to save democracy. *Nobodaddy* (1926) was an earlier use of verse in drama, and *Union Pacific* (1934) is a ballet. *Land of the Free* (1938) is a book of photographs of such underprivileged Americans as sharecroppers and child laborers, for which he wrote accompanying poetic comment in the manner of a newsreel sound track. MacLeish's other activities have included the assistant editorship of *Fortune* and the direction of the Harvard School of Journalism. In 1939 he was appointed Librarian of Congress, and he has since written *The Irresponsibles* (1940), an attack on the failure of recent American authors and scholars to take an active stand for democracy; *The American Cause* (1941), a reassertion of the democratic credo and a statement of the artist's usefulness in society, and has collected his prose of the past decade in *A Time to Speak* (1941).

McMASTER, Guy Humphreys (1829–87), New York lawyer, was known for his occasional poems and travel letters. His most famous work is the poem, 'Carmen Bellicosum' (*Knickerbocker Magazine*, 1849), a lyric tribute to the Revolutionary soldiers.

McMASTER, John Bach (1852–1932), professor of American history at the University of Pennsylvania for nearly 40 years, and author of *A History of the People of the United States, from the Revolution to the Civil War* (8 vols.,1883–1913), a realistic narrative, employing social and economic history in the place of the former emphasis upon war and politics. His view of history was continued in *A History of the People of the United States during Lincoln's Administration* (1927), and is to be observed in several other works, which include *Benjamin Franklin as a Man of Letters* (1887), *Daniel Webster* (1902), and *The Life and Times of Stephen Girard* (2 vols.,1918).

MACREADY, William Charles, see *Astor Place riots.*

MacSPARRAN, James (1693–1757), Anglican minister, came to Rhode Island (1721) as a missionary of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts. His books include: *The Sacred Dignity of the Christian Priesthood Vindicated* (1751), intended to admonish his own clergy, which aroused strong protest from the Calvinists, since they considered it directed against them; and *America Dissected* (1753), an epistolary account of the colonies.

McTeague, novel by Frank Norris (q.v.) published in 1899.

McTeague, a strong but stupid San Francisco dentist, marries Trina Sieppe, having met her through Marcus Schouler, her cousin and his friend. Trina wins $5,000 in a lottery, and by careful saving, investment, and shrewd deception increases the sum. Schouler, who formerly

hoped to marry Trina, feels that he has been cheated of this fortune. He seeks revenge by exposing McTeague's lack of either diploma or license, so that he is forbidden to practice, and, thrown into idleness, becomes mean and surly. Trina, who has grown miserly, refuses to let him use her money, and they sink into sordid poverty. Greed, the motive underlying these events, also dominates the two figures of the subplot, Maria Macapa, a mad charwoman, and Zerkow, a Jewish junk dealer; fascinated by her fantastic obsession with a set of gold plate, he marries her, becomes insane, kills her, and commits suicide. Meanwhile McTeague has deserted Trina, stealing some of her savings. In an attempt to obtain the remainder, he murders her. In his flight from justice he tries to cross Death Valley, where he is apprehended by Schouler. McTeague kills his captor, but before he dies the latter manages to handcuff their wrists together, so that McTeague is doomed to die of thirst, locked to the body of his enemy.

MACY, JOHN [ALBERT] (1877–1932), scholar of American literature, whose *The Spirit of American Literature* (1913) was an early plea for realism and the use of native material. His other books include *Socialism in America* (1916) and the editing of *American Writers on American Literature* (1931). As a member of *The Nation* staff (1922–3), he was among the critics who emphasized liberal social views.

Mad Anthony, sobriquet of Anthony Wayne (q.v.).

Madame Butterfly, one-act tragedy by Belasco and J.L.Long (qq.v.,1900), adapted from a story by Long (1897). It was made into an opera by Puccini (1906).

Cho-Cho-San, a Japanese girl of good family, has a liaison with Pinkerton, an American naval lieutenant, which she considers a marriage. For two years, with their infant son, she awaits Pinkerton's return. Then she finds that he has married an American girl, and, realizing her status, kills herself.

Madame Delphine, novelette by G.W. Cable (q.v.) published in 1881.

Delphine Carraze, a New Orleans quadroon, lives in seclusion with her 17-year-old daughter, Olive, whose white father left them his property when he died. The girl falls in love with Ursin Lemaitre, a white banker known as M. Vignevielle, who is associated with the pirate Laffite. Through the intervention of friendly Père Jerome, the banker becomes engaged to Olive. During an investigation of his activities by U.S. agents, he is forced into hiding, and friends prevent his 'insane' marriage. Madame Delphine, moved by her maternal devotion, swears that the girl is not hers, but the daughter of a white woman. Even Olive is convinced, though heartbroken, and the marriage is assured. Madame Delphine confesses her deception to Père Jerome, and dies while receiving absolution.

Madame de Treymes, novelette by Edith Wharton (q.v.).

Madame Sand, comedy by Philip Moeller (q.v.).

M'lle New York, see *Thompson, Vance.*

MADDERN, MINNIE, see *Fiske, Minnie.*

MADISON, JAMES (1751–1836), 4th President of the U.S. (1809–17), was born in Virginia, reared on his father's plantation, and educated at the College of New Jersey, from which he graduated (1771) as a classmate of Brackenridge and Freneau. He entered the Revolutionary struggle as a member of the local Committee of Safety, the Virginia Council of State (1778–9), and the Continental Congress (1780–83), where he steadily favored the increased power of the central government. During the following years he practiced law and served in the Virginia House of Delegates, being the principal advocate of Jefferson's statute for religious liberty and other liberal measures. Madison was largely responsible for calling the Federal Constitutional Convention (q.v.,1787), drew up the 'Virginia Plan,' and won the name 'father of the Constitution' for his active leadership of the Convention. Knowledge of its deliberations depends greatly on his *Journal of the Federal Convention* (3 vols.,1840). With Hamilton and Jay, he contributed many papers to *The Federalist* (q.v.,1787–8), and he was a leader in his state's ratifying convention, as well as the chief advocate of the Bill of Rights (q.v.). In Congress (1789–97), he supported the policies of Jefferson, with whom he wrote the Kentucky and Virginia Resolutions (q.v., 1798), and under whom he served as secretary of state (1801–9). He was chosen by Jefferson to be his successor in the

presidency. During his two terms in this office, he was strongly opposed to English military policy, because of the impressment of American seamen and interference with American trade during the Napoleonic wars, as well as the supposed incitement of Indian hostilities on the frontier. His Federalist opponents dubbed the War of 1812, into which he plunged the country, 'Mr. Madison's War,' and blamed him for its inefficient prosecution. Not a single American aim was achieved, and, had it not been for the late victories at Baltimore, Plattsburg, Lake Erie, and New Orleans, he would have been extremely unpopular. Before his retirement, he inaugurated policies of internal improvement and a protective tariff. The most complete account of his administration is contained in Henry Adams's *History of the United States during the Administrations of Jefferson and Madison* (9 vols.,1889–91), and Madison's *Writings* were published in 1901–6.

Dolly Madison (Dorothy Payne Madison) (1768–1849), his wife, was famous as a leader of Washington society, acting as 'first lady' during Jefferson's incumbency as well as her husband's. When the British burned the White House during their invasion of Washington (1814), she rescued many important state documents. Her *Memoirs and Letters* were published in 1887.

Madison Square Garden, name first given to a New York auditorium (1879) run by P.T.Barnum. A new structure was built (1889–90) by McKim, Mead, and White. This was demolished in 1925, to make way for the New York Life Insurance Building. A third building was erected (1925) far uptown from the original site. It contains an amphitheater seating 18,500 people, in which are held political conventions, meetings, circuses, shows, and sporting events.

Maggie: A Girl of the Streets, novel by Stephen Crane (q.v.), privately issued (1893) under the pseudonym Johnston Smith, but not regularly published until 1896.

In a slum district of New York City called Rum Alley, Maggie Johnson and her brother Jimmie are the maltreated and neglected children of a brutal workingman and his dipsomaniac wife. Maggie, attractive though ignorant and ill cared for, somehow preserves an inner core of innocence in her miserable, filthy environment. She finds work as a collar maker in a sweatshop, while Jimmie becomes a truck driver, typically hard-boiled and fight-loving. Their mother, now widowed, is constantly drunk and has achieved a lengthy police record. Maggie falls in love with Jimmie's tough friend Pete, a bartender, who easily seduces her. For a brief time she lives with Pete, having been melodramatically disowned by her mother. Jimmie offers only the questionable assistance of administering a beating to his former friend. Pete abandons Maggie, who becomes a prostitute for a few months. Then, heartbroken and unable to succeed in this uneasy, exacting occupation, she commits suicide. Her mother makes a great display of grief, sends Jimmie to fetch home the body, and allows herself to be persuaded by her drinking companions to 'forgive' her 'bad, bad child.'

Maggie Verver, heroine of *The Golden Bowl* (q.v.).

Magnalia Christi Americana, ecclesiastical history of New England by Cotton Mather (q.v.), published at London in 1702. The work is in seven parts: (1) the settlement of New England; (2) lives of the governors; (3) biographies of 60 famous divines; (4) an account of Harvard College, with the lives of some famous graduates; (5) a history of the Congregational church in New England; (6) a record of remarkable providences, i.e. events in which God directly revealed his power in the colonies; and (7) a history of various disturbances in the churches, with an appendix on remarkable occurrences in the wars with the Indians (1688–98). The *Magnalia* reprints many of the author's sermons, biographies, and historical narratives, in so far as they could be worked into a rather loose general scheme. The unity of the whole appears in Mather's intention to exalt godliness and celebrate the triumphs of Christ in the New World. It is valuable as an historical source, and the second and third parts indicate Mather's most significant writing to be in the form of biography. The feeling that he was writing a great religious epic, occasionally buried by the scholarship and digression, may be observed in the epic line of the general introduction, 'I write the wonders of the Christian religion, flying from the

deprivations of Europe, to the American strand . . .'

Magnificent Ambersons, The, novel by Tarkington (q.v.), published in 1918 and awarded the 1919 Pulitzer Prize. It is the second part of the trilogy *Growth*, which also includes *The Turmoil* (1915) and *The Midlander* (1923).

Isabel is the daughter of old Major Amberson, who acquired his fortune during the Gilded Age and used it to win a dominating position for his family in a Midwestern town. She was in love with Eugene Morgan during her youth, but they separated owing to a misunderstanding, and Isabel married Wilbur Minafer, dull and sober, for whom she never cared. When her son George is nearly grown, Eugene, a widower, returns with his daughter Lucy to settle in the town and establish an automobile factory. Although Lucy is aware of George's arrogance and conceit, she falls in love with him, and Eugene and Isabel drift into their old relation. After his father's death, George returns from an Eastern college, quarrels with Lucy because she objects to his idleness, and then, horrified at the prospect of his mother's remarriage, prevents it by exploiting her affection and fear of displeasing him. George and Isabel live abroad for a few years, until he brings her home to die of a heart ailment. The major's estate having been depleted, George goes to work in a chemical factory, unwilling to approach his former friends or Eugene, now wealthy, who occupies the social position the Ambersons once held. Having long since received the 'come-uppance' his acquaintances desired for him, George is injured in an automobile accident, and at last Eugene, cherishing his love for Isabel, and Lucy, still faithful, are reconciled with him.

Magua, character in *The Last of the Mohicans* (q.v.).

MAHAN, Alfred Thayer (1840–1914), graduated from the U.S.Naval Academy (1859), served in the Atlantic and the Gulf of Mexico during the Civil War, and continued in the navy until his retirement (1896), after which he was given the rank of rear admiral. He was a lecturer on naval history and tactics at the Newport War College, and served as president of the institution (1886–9). His collected lectures, *The Influence of Sea Power upon History, 1660–1783* (1890) and *The Influence of Sea Power upon the French Revolution and Empire, 1793–1812* (2 vols.,1892), propounding a new view of the significance of navies in political history, greatly influenced the subsequent policies of Germany, England, Japan, and the U.S. His many other books include biographies of Nelson and Farragut, works on naval strategy, naval histories of the American Revolution and the War of 1812, and an autobiography, *From Sail to Steam* (1907).

Mahican Indians, Algonquian confederacy that originally occupied both banks of the upper Hudson River. Crowded by the white settlements, the Mahicans moved to Pennsylvania and thence with the Delawares to the Ohio region, where they were dispersed. The only Mahicans who have preserved the tribal identity are the Stockbridge Indians (q.v.). In *The Last of the Mohicans* Cooper confuses Mahicans with Mohegans (q.v.), with whom they were closely affiliated, as they were with the Delaware.

Main Street, novel by Sinclair Lewis (q.v.), published in 1920 and dramatized in 1921 by Harvey O'Higgins (q.v.) and Harriet Ford.

Carol Milford, a girl of quick intelligence but no particular talent, after graduation from college meets and marries Will Kennicott, a sober, kindly, unimaginative physician of Gopher Prairie, Minnesota, who tells her that the town needs her abilities. She finds the village to be a smug, intolerant, unimaginatively standardized place, where the people will not accept her efforts to create more sightly homes, organize a dramatic association, and otherwise improve the village life. A few characters stand above the apathy and provinciality of the rest: Vida Sherwin the repressed and acidulous school teacher; Guy Pollock, the learned lawyer who has been entrapped by the 'village virus'; and Miles Bjornstam, a laughing, iconoclastic Swedish vagabond. Carol draws away from her husband, falls in love with Erik Valborg, a kindred spirit, and finally goes to Washington to make her own life. When Kennicott comes for her, two years later, she returns with him, for, though she feels no love, she respects him, and being incapable of creating her own life appears not unhappy to return to the familiar, petty atmosphere of Gopher Prairie.

Maine, U.S.battleship sunk by an explosion in Havana harbor (Feb. 15, 1898). Public sentiment, already aroused in favor of the Cuban insurrection against Spain, was inflamed by the decision of a naval court of inquiry that the ship had been destroyed by a submarine mine. 'Remember the *Maine*' became a popular slogan, and the incident aided in precipitating the Spanish-American War.

Maine Woods, The, autobiographical narrative by Thoreau (q.v.), posthumously published (1864) as edited by the younger W.E.Channing. It contains three accounts of trips to Maine: 'Ktaadn' (*Union Magazine*, 1848), describing an excursion to Mt.Ktaadn in 1846; 'Chesuncook' (*Atlantic Monthly*, 1858), about a journey from Bangor to Chesuncook Lake in 1853, with an Indian guide, Joe Aitteon; and 'The Allegash and East Branch,' concerned with a voyage (1857) with 'a relative' and the Indian guide, Joe Polis, from Bangor to the St.Johns lakes by way of Moosehead and Chesuncook, returning by the East Branch of the Penobscot. During this excursion, Thoreau made an extended study of Polis, 'one of the aristocracy' of the Penobscot Indians, a silent, capable hunter and backwoodsman.

Main-Travelled Roads, short stories by Hamlin Garland (q.v.) published in 1891. Late examples of the school of local color, these tales deal with farm life in the Middle West. The volume is unified by the author's conception of 'The Main-Travelled Road in the West,' which 'may lead past a bend in the river where the water laughs eternally over its shallows . . . Mainly it is long and wearyful . . . Like the main-travelled road of life it is traversed by many classes of people, but the poor and the weary predominate.'

MAJOR, CHARLES (1856–1913), Indiana author, whose most popular work was the historical romance, *When Knighthood Was in Flower* (1898), in which the master of the dance, Sir Edward Caskoden, tells of the love of Queen Mary and Charles Brandon, with a romantic background of 16th-century England. *Dorothy Vernon of Haddon Hall* (1902) is another romance of this period. Both stories were successfully dramatized, and since their first vogue have passed into the field of juvenile literature. Major wrote several other historical novels and attempted local-color fiction.

MAJOR JONES, pseudonym of W.T. Thompson (q.v.).

Makely, MRS., character in *A Traveler from Altruria* and *Through the Eye of the Needle* (q.v.).

MAKEMIE, FRANCIS (*c.*1658–1708), Presbyterian clergyman born in Ireland, emigrated to Maryland (1683) and eventually settled in Virginia. His missionary work and preaching throughout the colonies has sometimes caused him to be considered the founder of Presbyterianism in America. He was opposed in a controversy by George Keith, to whom he replied in *An Answer to George Keith's Libel* (1694), and also by the Church of England, to which he replied in *Truths in a True Light* (1699). While in England to obtain funds and workers for the Presbyterian cause, he published *A Plain and Friendly Persuasive to the Inhabitants of Virginia and Maryland for Promoting Towns and Cohabitation* (1705). In 1707 he was fined for preaching without a license in New York, and his pamphlet, *A Narrative of a New and Unusual American Imprisonment* (1707), helped to do away with such intolerance.

Making of Americans, The, novel by Gertrude Stein (q.v.), written in 1906–8 and published in 1925. It deals with the wanderings and mental development of three generations of her own family, beginning as the history of a family's progress, but becoming the history of 'everyone who ever was or is or will be living.' The simple language is marked by recurrent phrases and other devices to create the feeling of a prolonged present and a constant 'beginning again and again.'

Making of an American, The, autobiography of Jacob Riis (q.v.).

Malaeska, dime novel by Ann Stephens (q.v.).

Mallet, ROWLAND, character in *Roderick Hudson* (q.v.).

MALONE, DUMAS (1892–), professor of American history, editor of the last 13 volumes of the *Dictionary of American Biography* (q.v.). His books include *Saints in Action* (1940), a collection of lectures on American clergyman, educators, and reformers.

MALTZ, ALBERT (1908–), proletarian author of New York, attended the Yale Drama School. His plays include:

Merry-Go-Round (1932); *Peace on Earth* (1933), an antiwar play written with George Sklar; *Black Pit* (1935), concerned with unions and strikes in the West Virginia coal-mining region; and *Private Hicks* (1936), a one-act play showing the reactions of members of the militia to the part they play in suppressing a strike. *The Way Things Are* (1938) is a collection of short stories, and *The Underground Stream* (1940) is a novel about fascist opposition to unionization of automobile workers.

Man Against the Sky, The, blank verse poem by E.A.Robinson (q.v.), the title piece of a volume published in 1916.

A figure seen on a hilltop, against the sunset sky, symbolizes mankind looming 'before the chaos and the glare As if he were the last god going home Unto his last desire.' Conjecturing as to the attitude of mind of this solitary figure, the poet reviews the various *raisons d'être* advanced by philosophy, mysticism, common sense, and emotion, but indicates his skeptical view that men 'Must each await alone at his own height Another darkness or another light . . .' Life seems a 'blind atomic pilgrimage,' to which we are led by 'crass chance,' yet we have hints of some deeper meaning, 'an orient Word that will not be erased,' vouchsafed in 'incommunicable gleams Too permanent for dreams.' Earth-bound and narrow-visioned, men gain only 'a little wisdom and much pain'; but if they are to continue living they must cling to hope, realizing that 'Eternity records Too vast an answer for the time-born words We spell . . .'

Man o' War, frequently considered the greatest thoroughbred horse produced in America, was foaled at the Belmont farm, Kentucky, in 1917. After two seasons (1919–20) he was retired. He sired many noted race horses.

Man That Corrupted Hadleyburg, The, story by Clemens (q.v.), published under his pseudonym Mark Twain as the title piece of a collection of essays and fiction (1900).

Hadleyburg is proud of its distinction as 'the most honest and upright town in all the region round about.' A stranger, offended in some way by its people, determines to ruin its reputation. With the bank cashier, Edward Richards, he leaves a sack that he says contains a fortune in coins, and a note announcing that the money is to go to a townsman who once befriended him, and who can be identified by a remark he made, which is written on an enclosed paper. Nineteen of Hadleyburg's leading men then receive notes pretending to divulge the remark. Scruples dissolve under this temptation, and even the hitherto honest Richards begins to think he may have made the remark. At a town meeting, 18 of the citizens are exposed to ridicule, when the Reverend Mr.Burgess reads the notes setting forth their claims to the remark. Burgess has lost Richards's note, and the cashier becomes a hero. The victims pay an enormous sum to avoid having their names recorded on the lead slugs that prove to be the sole contents of the sack, and this amount is given to Richards as a reward for his supposed integrity. Conscience destroys the health of the old man and his wife, who in their dying delirium expose their guilt; thus 'the town was stripped of the last rag of its ancient glory.'

Man Who Died Twice, The, blank verse narrative by E.A.Robinson (q.v.) published in 1924.

Fernando Nash, a musician of great though unfulfilled genius, is impatient, indolent, and dissipated, allows his talent to atrophy, and drifts into a life of immorality and extravagance. After many years, penniless in a lonely garret, he reviews his frustrated career, and with sudden revulsion destroys the manuscripts of his two symphonies. Following a last debauch, he resigns himself to death by starvation, but, as he lies on his couch, has a final experience of the creative force whose betrayal is his tragedy. With a feeling of spiritual peace he has never before known, he hears the 'drums of death,' which always formed the background of his creative imagination. The drums grow louder and more terrible, and his 'Third Symphony' plays itself to his mind's ear in a 'great golden choral fire.' He weeps 'blinding tears of praise and of exhaustion,' gropes his way into the dark hall to call 'for paper—not for food,' and falls unconscious down the stairs. During his convalescence, he becomes resigned to life, finding in religion 'far more than I have lost.' He joins a group of street evangelists, to make 'a joyful noise unto the Lord,' which the narrator admits may be 'earnest of thanksgiving, confusion,

penance, or the picturesque,' but cannot nullify his 'fire of personality' and genius.

Man with the Hoe, The, poem by Edwin Markham (q.v.).

Man Without a Country, The, story by E.E.Hale (q.v.), published in the *Atlantic Monthly* (1863), reprinted in pamphlet form (1865), and collected in *If, Yes, and Perhaps* (1868). Written to inspire patriotism during the Civil War, it was suggested by the remark of Vallandigham that he did not wish to live in a country that tolerated Lincoln's administration. Although entirely fictitious, the story has a realism reminiscent of Defoe. There was a real Philip Nolan (q.v.), whose true history forms the basis of Hale's complementary novelette, *Philip Nolan's Friends* (1876). Arthur Guiterman adapted Hale's first story as a libretto for an opera by Damrosch (1937).

On trial with Aaron Burr for conspiracy, Philip Nolan cries out, 'Damn the United States. I wish I may never hear of the United States again.' The court-martial accordingly condemns him to a life at sea where he will be denied any news of his country. His spirit is broken when one day he reads the lines from the *Lay of the Last Minstrel*,

> Breathes there a man with soul so dead
> Who never to himself hath said,
> 'This is my own, my native land.'

Thereafter he is a pathetic figure, desiring to aid the U.S. and showing great bravery in a sea battle during the War of 1812. After 57 years of exile, he dies happily, having learned of his country's increased greatness.

Manassas, BATTLES OF, see *Bull Run.*

Mandan Indians, northern Plains tribe affiliated with the Arikara, combined bison hunting with agricultural pursuits. La Verendrye visited the Mandan in 1738, and every later expedition up the Missouri knew them. By 1776 smallpox and attacks by neighboring tribes had reduced them to a single village. In 1870 they settled with other tribes on the Fort Berthold reservation in North Dakota. The Mandan figure in the journals of Lewis and Clark, and are the subject of a study and many paintings by George Catlin.

Manductio ad Ministerium, by Cotton Mather (q.v.), published in 1726, is a simple set of directions for candidates for the ministry, and contains an important digression expounding Mather's concept of literary style.

Manhattan, island about 13 miles long and two miles wide, forms the principal part of New York City (q.v.), from whose mainland it is separated by the Harlem River. It was discovered by Verazzano (1524), visited by Hudson (1609), and first occupied as part of New Netherlands by the Dutch. They applied the name Manhattan to the local Indians, and in 1626 the accomplished fact of its settlement was given some semblance of legality by its purchase from the Indians for 60 guilders ($24). One of the five boroughs of New York City, the island houses the principal business districts and includes Wall Street, Greenwich Village, Broadway, the Bowery, the East Side, Harlem, and the Battery (qq.v.).

Manhattan Transfer, novel by John Dos Passos (q.v.) published in 1925. It is marked by stylistic innovations, impressionistic descriptive effects, and a naturalistic attempt to depict the complex life of modern New York City. The careers of a dozen or more representative citizens are traced simultaneously, in a succession of brief dramatic episodes.

A country youth, Bud Korpenning, comes to the city to seek work, but after ten years of infrequent employment, near-starvation, and beggary, commits suicide. Joe Harland, the 'Wizard of Wall Street,' loses fortune and power through excessive drinking and is reduced to common labor and beggary. Gus McNeil, a wealthy contractor, and Joe O'Keefe, a radical union organizer, exhibit the opposite ends of the scale in the building trades. Ellen Thatcher Oglethorpe, with various changes of name, rises from the lower middle class to become a featured actress, at the cost of integrity and happiness. Her first husband, John Oglethrope, is a homosexual, whom she divorces. She endures the attentions of the impresario, Harry Goldweiser, whom she despises. The one man she really loves, Stan Emery, takes to drink, marries another actress, and dies in an apartment-house fire. Ellen bears Stan's child, and marries devoted Jimmy Herf, but even though she quits the stage they cannot be happy and are soon divorced. Jimmy, a nephew of Joe Harland, has an unhappy, struggling career in journalism, which he leaves to begin life

anew outside the city. These and such other characters as Congo Jake, the bootlegger, James Merivale, the banker and society man, George Baldwin, the unscrupulous lawyer and politician, and Cassandra Wilkins, the absurd æsthete, serve to illustrate the author's pessimistic view of the decadent city, and to bind together his portrait of its teeming activity.

Manifest Destiny, jingoistic phrase popular with mid-19th century politicians, who believed that the U.S. should overspread the continent and annex such neighboring countries as Cuba. It was first used by John L. O'Sullivan, in the July 1845 issue of his *United States Magazine and Democratic Review*.

MANILA, Battle of, see *Dewey, George*.

MANN, Horace (1796–1859), secretary of the Massachusetts state board of education (1837–48), raised the standards and improved the equipment of the free schools of the state. His influence was widespread, and he was instrumental in improving common-school education throughout the U.S. In 1852 he founded and became the first president of Antioch College, a progressive institution. He was also identified with such liberal movements as the Free-Soil party, temperance agitation, and efforts to establish state insane asylums. His *Lectures on Education* were published in 1845.

Mary Tyler Peabody Mann (1806–87), his wife, a sister of Elizabeth Palmer Peabody, aided him in his educational and philanthropic work and published the self-effacing *Life and Works of Horace Mann* (3 vols.,1865–8).

MANNERS, John Hartley (1870–1928), English-born dramatist, had a successful career as actor and playwright before he came to the U.S. (1902). Of his more than 30 plays, only the simple, sentimental *Peg o' My Heart* (1912), written for his wife, Laurette Taylor (1887–), is still remembered. It had a run of more than 600 performances in New York, 500 in London, and frequent translations and productions in other countries.

Mannon, Lavinia, character in *Mourning Becomes Electra* (q.v.).

Man's Woman, A, novel by Frank Norris (q.v.) published in 1900.

Ward Bennett and Richard Ferris, Arctic explorers, return to civilization, both in love with a nurse, Lloyd Seabright. Ferris is crippled, and dies when Bennett prevents Lloyd from attending him. She is shocked by this incident, but when Bennett falls seriously ill, she nurses him to health and comes to love him.

Man's World, A, play by Rachel Crothers (q.v.), produced in 1909 and published in 1915.

'Frank' Ware, a woman writer, rears the illegitimate son of a woman who died in childbirth at her Paris home. She becomes convinced that the morality that permits the father to escape responsibility is basically unfair. When she falls in love with Malcolm Gaskell, another suitor, Lione Brune, draws her attention to the resemblance Malcolm bears to the child. Questioning him, she discovers that he is the father, and, in keeping with her moral attitude, refuses to marry him.

MANSFIELD, Richard (1857–1907), actor, born in Berlin of an English father and Dutch mother, came to the U.S. at the age of 18, where he lived until 1877, then went to England and joined the D'Oyly Carte Opera Company. Upon returning to the U.S. in 1882, he continued his career in light opera and soon became a star in legitimate drama. He was the foremost American actor of his time, playing in the grand, romantic style, and having an extensive repertoire, which included Shakespearean plays, *Cyrano de Bergerac*, *Dr.Jekyll and Mr.Hyde* (in which he played the dual role), and plays by authors as varied as Tolstoy, Molière, Schiller, Booth Tarkington, and Clyde Fitch. Although he belongs primarily to the era of great romantic tragedians, he was also a bridge to a new age, by being the first to produce Shaw in America, and his last production was the first American presentation of *Peer Gynt*. Percival Pollard adapted several plays for him, receiving no credit, and then satirized him in his novel, *The Imitator* (1901).

MANTELL, Robert Bruce (1854–1928), English-born actor, whose first appearance was with Dion Boucicault in England in 1876. In 1878 he was in the U.S. playing opposite Modjeska, and won a great reputation both here and in his native country as a romantic interpreter of Shakespearean tragedies.

MS. Found in a Bottle, story by Poe (q.v.), published in 1833 and reprinted in

Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque (1840).

The narrator takes passage on a ship bound from Batavia to the Sunda Archipelago. During a terrible storm, the entire crew is swept overboard, except for this passenger and a Swedish sailor. The storm continues for several days, when suddenly a huge ship under full sail bears down on them, the narrator alone being saved by being hurled upon the rigging of the strange craft. This is the beginning of his long stay aboard the ship, whose aspect is unlike anything he has known, and whose ghostly sailors neither see nor speak to him. He writes this journal of his experiences, intending to seal it in a bottle and throw it into the sea 'at the last moment.' It concludes with a description of a fearful driving current and final whirlpool in which the ship is going down.

Many Marriages, novel by Sherwood Anderson (q.v.).

Map of Virginia, A, narrative by John Smith (q.v.).

Maple, narrative poem in blank verse by Robert Frost (q.v.), published in *New Hampshire* (1923).

Although others commonly misunderstand it as 'Mabel,' Maple, the name of a New England girl, given her at birth by her dying mother, guides her life and endows her with a mysterious poetic quality. Her father is unable or unwilling to make clear the intended meaning, and Maple is able to find only partial clues, but the man she marries discerns her kinship with the spirit of the trees, and they share this secret as a motive of their love.

Mapple, FATHER, character in *Moby-Dick* (q.v.) based on the Boston preacher, E.T.Taylor (q.v.).

MARBLE, DANFORTH (1810–49), actor born in Connecticut, famous for his Yankee roles, of which the most popular was the title part in *Sam Patch* by E.H. Thompson. His circuit extended from Boston to New Orleans and from Savannah to St.Louis, while he was equally popular in New York, London, and Scotland. He is generally called Dan Marble, and sometimes received the nickname, 'Game Cock of the Wilderness,' from the title of a play by the same name in which a Yankee goes to the frontier.

Marble Faun, The, romance by Hawthorne (q.v.) published in 1860. It was issued in England as *Transformation*.

Kenyon, an American sculptor, Hilda, a New England girl, and the mysterious Miriam are friends among the art students in Rome. They become acquainted with Donatello, Count of Monte Beni, a handsome Italian who resembles the Faun of Praxiteles, not only physically, but also in his mingling of human and animal qualities, his amoral attitude, and his simple enjoyment of the life of the senses. The dark, passionate Miriam is loved by Donatello, but she is haunted by an unrevealed sin and by the persecution of a mysterious man who dogs her footsteps after an accidental meeting in the Catacombs. Donatello is enraged by this man, and after an encouraging glance from Miriam flings him to his death from the Tarpeian Rock. Thereafter they are linked by their mutual guilt, which they keep secret. Donatello becomes brooding and conscience-stricken, and, though humanized by his suffering, is a broken spirit when he finally gives himself up to justice. Hilda, who saw the crime committed, is also involved in the sin until she forsakes Puritan tradition and pours out her secret at a church confessional. The unhappy Miriam disappears into the shadowy world from which she came, and Hilda and Kenyon are married.

Marbury vs. Madison, case decided by the U.S.Supreme Court under John Marshall (1803), significant as the first decision to annul an act of Congress as unconstitutional. By this precedent, the judiciary assumed a greatly increased power. William Marbury and other last-minute appointees of John Adams to the office of justice of the peace in the District of Columbia asked for a mandamus to Jefferson's new secretary of state, Madison, to compel him to deliver their commissions. Marshall decided 'for the unanimous court' that Marbury was entitled to the remedy, but held that the Supreme Court could not award it, since to do so would assume original jurisdiction in a case not within the categories enumerated by the Constitution. The particular section of the judiciary act that was the basis of the appeal was held to be unconstitutional and void.

March, BASIL, character in *A Hazard of New Fortunes* and *Their Wedding Journey* (qq.v.).

MARCH, JOSEPH MONCURE (1899–), New York poet and journalist, best known for his verse narratives, *The Wild Party* (1928), a tale of a drunken orgy, and *The Set-Up* (1928), a hard-boiled story of a Negro prizefighter.

MARCH, WILLIAM, pseudonym of William Edward March Campbell (1893–), Alabama author, whose service in the First World War was the inspiration of his first collection of short stories, *Company K* (1933). In addition to two other collections, *The Little Wife* (1935) and *Some Like Them Short* (1939), he has written the novels, *Come In at the Door* (1934) and *The Tallons* (1936).

March to the Sea, name given to the destructive advance of the Union troops under General Sherman (q.v.) from Atlanta to Savannah (Nov. 15–Dec. 21, 1864). 'Marching through Georgia,' by H.C.Work (q.v.), was composed the following year to commemorate the march.

Marching Men, novel by Sherwood Anderson (q.v.).

Marching On, historical novel by James Boyd (q.v.) published in 1927. The characters are descendants of those in his Revolutionary War novel, *Drums* (q.v.).

In the rice-growing Cape Fear country of North Carolina, before the Civil War, James Fraser is the hard-working son of a poor white farmer. He loves Stewart Prevost, daughter of an aristocratic plantation owner, who objects to their courtship. As a result, James determines to escape from his inferior position and goes away to become a railroad worker. At the outbreak of the war, he returns to join the Cape Fear Rifles in the company led by Stewart's brother Charles. Stewart asks James to see to her brother's safety, and when Charles is killed he fears her reproach, but is reassured by an affectionate letter. He spends the last two years of the war in a Northern prison camp, from which he is finally released through an exchange managed by Colonel Prevost. When a party of Northern raiders seizes the colonel's estate, he stays behind and is murdered, but Stewart escapes to James's home.

Marching through Georgia, popular Union marching song, composed in 1865 by H.C.Work (q.v.), and celebrating Sherman's March to the Sea (q.v.).

MARCO BOZZARIS, see *Bozzaris*.

'Marco Millions,' drama by O'Neill (q.v.), published in 1927 and produced in 1928.

Marco Polo, at the age of 15, bids farewell to his sweetheart Donata, and with his father and uncle, Nicolo and Maffeo, heads of a mercantile house, sets out from Venice for Cathay. During the slow journey eastward, the Polos meet foreign manners and motives with an unfaltering blind faith in their own rectitude. In Cathay, Marco's self-confidence impresses Kublai, and the Kaan keeps the youth in his service, in order to observe his unique 'soul.' Fifteen years elapse, during which Marco occupies governmental posts, methodically enriching himself, nearly achieving the 'million' which is his family's sole ambition. Kukachin, the Kaan's beautiful granddaughter, falls in love with the unsuspecting Marco, but is about to be sent to Persia to become the queen of Arghun Khan. Kublai and his philosophic adviser Chu-Yin do not realize her feeling and express disgust at the antics of the mercenary Christian exhibitionist, their 'jester,' whose 'spiritual hump' no longer amuses them. Kukachin defends Marco, and, when he asks permission to return to Italy, has him appointed admiral of her fleet. During the voyage to Persia, he protects her heroically in hopes of a 'bonus,' and is persistently blind to her passionate love. In despair she attempts suicide, but he rescues her, and at last delivers her to Ghazan Khan, for the father has died and she is to marry the son. The Polos celebrate their return to Venice with a vulgar display of wealth, and Marco marries the fat, commonplace Donata. Kublai, in the midst of mourning for Kukachin, who has died humiliated and disillusioned, observes Marco through a crystal, and says with pitying scorn: 'The Word became their flesh, they say. Now all is flesh! And can their flesh become the Word again?'

MARCY, WILLIAM LEARNED (1786–1857), New York Democratic leader, member of the 'Albany Regency,' and partisan of Van Buren, by whom he was appointed to the state supreme court. During his term in the U.S.Senate (1831–3), he defended Van Buren's nomination as minister to England, declaring 'To the victor belong the spoils of the enemy.' From this speech, the name 'spoils system' was invented to describe the distri-

bution of favors on partisan grounds. He served three terms as governor of New York (1833–8), and was Polk's secretary of war (1845–9). By this time he had become a Hunker or conservative Democrat, opposed to Van Buren, who headed the radical Barnburner faction. As secretary of state under Pierce (1853–7), he handled the Gadsden Purchase and the troubles arising from the filibuster of William Walker.

Mardi: and a Voyage Thither, allegorical romance by Melville (q.v.) published in 1849.

Taji, the hero, and his Norse companion Jarl desert from a whaling ship in southern Pacific waters and meet the brigantine *Parki*, abandoned except for the comic Polynesian husband and wife, Samoa and Annatoo. The four pass pleasant days aboard the *Parki*, until it sinks during a storm and Annatoo is drowned. Adrift in a whaleboat, Taji, Jarl, and Samoa meet a native priest and his ward, the mysterious white maiden Yillah, whom he is taking to be sacrificed. They rescue the maiden and reach Mardi, the realm of transcendental beauty, where Taji and Yillah spend a blissful period in love. When she suddenly vanishes, beauty and delight are also gone, and Taji searches for her through the islands of Mardi. He is accompanied by Media, king of Odo, Mohi (Braidbeard) the historian, Babbalanja the philosopher, and Yoomy the poet; as they travel, they discourse on many topics, and their search brings them to Dominora (Great Britain), Vivenza (the U.S.), and other lands, which are the subjects of Swiftian satire. They also visit Serenia, ruled by Alma (Christ), in whose doctrine of love Babbalanja finds the ultimate in earthly wisdom, but Taji, seeing the doctrine disregarded in practice, remains dissatisfied. At last they reach Flozella-a-Nina, where Queen Hautia has transformed Yillah into one of her dusky handmaidens. Hautia nearly overwhelms Taji by her sensual blandishments, but, leaving his companions, he sets sail alone, pursued by 'three fixed spectres,' to continue his search 'over an endless sea.'

Mardi Gras, or Shrove Tuesday, the last day before Lent, is celebrated in Catholic communities of the U.S., notably New Orleans and Memphis, where there are famous annual street processions and masquerades.

Ma-re-Mount, see *Merry Mount*.

Margaret, novel by Sylvester Judd (q.v.), published in 1845 and revised in 1851. Subtitled 'A Tale of the Real and Ideal,' it combines a vivid description of the Down-East region with a transcendental Fourierist fantasy.

Margaret, an orphan with a native sensitivity and intellectual interests, is reared by a backwoods Maine family. To the small town in which they live come Mr.Evelyn, a Transcendentalist, and Rose, a seduced woman. At a husking bee, a rustic lout pays unwelcome attentions to Margaret, and Rose induces Margaret's foster brother Chillion to kill him. Chillion is hanged for this crime. Margaret and Mr.Evelyn fall in love and marry, and together they transform the little town into an ideal community of prosperous, pious, philosophical Transcendentalists.

Margaret Fleming, play by James A. Herne (q.v.).

Marginalia, brief critical notes published by Poe (q.v.) in various periodicals, including *Graham's Magazine* and the *Southern Literary Messenger*, during the 1840's. These were frequently excerpts from previously published reviews and articles, and dealt with such diverse subjects as 'Defoe,' 'The Drama,' 'Antigone,' 'Plagiarism,' 'Rhetoric,' 'The Dash,' and 'Men of Genius.'

Maria Chapdelaine, novel by Louis Hémon (q.v.).

MARIA DEL OCCIDENTE, pseudonym of Maria Brooks (q.v.).

Marie Rogêt, see *Mystery of Marie Rogêt, The*.

MARION, FRANCIS (*c.*1732–95), South Carolina soldier, commander of militia in the Revolutionary War, who lacked sufficient men for regular organization and became famous for his guerilla tactics. He was nicknamed 'the Swamp Fox,' because he retired to the swamps when confronted by superior forces. He became a brigadier-general and fought under Greene in the Battle of Eutaw Springs. His reputation became almost legendary, and he figures in many of the Revolutionary Romances (q.v.) of Simms. The latter also wrote his biography and a poem, 'The Swamp Fox,' while Bryant wrote a 'Song of Marion's Men.'

Marjorie Daw, epistolary short story by Aldrich (q.v.), the title piece of a collection published in 1873.

Edward Delaney, to relieve the tedium of the illness of his friend, John Flemming, writes glowing letters concerning his fictitious neighbor, Marjorie Daw. Sight unseen, Flemming falls in love with the girl, and Delaney, carrying out his hoax, claims that the psychic Marjorie is also in love with him. Partially recovered, Flemming telegraphs that he is coming to press his suit in person, and Delaney flees, leaving a note: 'Oh, dear Jack, there isn't any colonial mansion . . . there isn't any piazza, there isn't any hammock,—there isn't any Marjorie Daw.'

MARK LITTLETON, pseudonym of J.P. Kennedy (q.v.).

MARK TWAIN, see *Twain*.

MARKHAM, EDWIN [CHARLES] (1852–1940), Oregon-born poet, lived in California (1857–1901), where he became a school teacher. He won widespread popularity for the title poem of *The Man with the Hoe and Other Poems* (1899), inspired by Millet's painting. This blank-verse depiction of a brutalized farmer, 'bowed by the weight of centuries . . . The emptiness of ages in his face,' is a somewhat rhetorical protest against the degradation of exploited labor. *Lincoln, and Other Poems* (1901), in the same vein, was also very popular. His many later volumes are generally mediocre, marked by a lofty and occasionally tumid melody. The character Presley, in *The Octopus* (q.v.), is said to represent Markham.

MARKOE, PETER (*c.*1752–92), born in the Danish West Indies and educated at Oxford, probably came to America during the Revolutionary War. He wrote the unproduced play, *The Patriot Chief* (1784), a romantic tragedy set in Lydia, indicating the dangers of aristocracy, and an unproduced opera, *The Reconciliation* (1790). He was also the author of *The Times* (1788), a satirical poem on prominent persons of Philadelphia, where he made his home. *The Algerine Spy in Pennsylvania* (1787), an epistolary novel, and *The Storm* (1788), a descriptive poem, have been attributed to him.

MARKS, PERCY (1891–), born in California, graduated from the state university (1912), studied at Harvard, and has been a professor of English, mainly at Dartmouth and Brown University. *Which Way Parnassus?* (1926) is a study of the causes for the mediocrity of American education, and his many novels include: *The Plastic Age* (1924), a panorama of life at a small American college during the post-war years, realistically portraying the younger generation of the jazz age; *Martha* (1925), the story of a half-Indian girl and her attempt to overcome her background; *Lord of Himself* (1927), a sequel to his first novel; *The Unwilling God* (1929), about a football player who refuses to accept conventional campus standards; *A Tree Grown Straight* (1936), concerned with a novelist's creation of fiction based on the life of his friend, an average businessman; *What's a Heaven For?* (1938), telling of two young men who are forced to temper their high school ideals to achieve happiness and success; *The Days Are Fled* (1939), the story of a musician's life; and *No Steeper Wall* (1940), dealing with a patrician young Bostonian's life on a California ranch and his contrasting of social and moral values.

MARLOWE, JULIA, pseudonym of Sarah Frances Frost (1866–), English-born actress, who was brought to the U.S. at the age of five. Beginning her career in child parts, she later won a great reputation as a Shakespearean actress, appearing with her second husband, E.H.Sothern (q.v.).

Marmion, play by J.N.Barker (q.v.), adapted from the poem by Scott, produced in 1812 and published in 1816. Attributed to a British playwright, Thomas Morton, for fear that a work by an American would not be appreciated, it was soon immensely popular, partially owing to public sentiment during the War of 1812, since it places in the mouths of the Scots the resentment that Americans felt toward British arrogance.

Marne, river in France that was the scene of two battles during the First World War. In the first (Sept. 1914), the German advance on Paris was checked; the second (July 1918), including such engagements as that at Château-Thierry (q.v.), resulted in the rout of the last German offensive by an Allied counter-offensive involving troops of the A.E.F.

MARQUAND, JOHN P[HILLIPS] (1893–), Massachusetts author, whose nov-

els include: *The Unspeakable Gentleman* (1922); *Four of a Kind* (1923); *The Black Cargo* (1925); *Warning Hill* (1930); *Haven's End* (1933); *Ming Yellow* (1935); *No Hero* (1935); *The Late George Apley* (1937, Pulitzer Prize 1938), 'a novel in the form of a memoir' delicately satirizing the life of a Boston Brahmin; *Wickford Point* (1939), a similar satire of a New England family; and *H.M.Pulham, Esq.* (1941), a third study of a similar nature, satirizing a contemporary New Englander torn between his native standards and those of America at large. He has also written *Lord Timothy Dexter* (1925), the biography of an 18th-century New England eccentric, and many popular detective novels built around the character of Mr.Moto, a subtle Japanese sleuth.

MARQUETTE, Jacques (1637–75), French Jesuit missionary and explorer, came to Canada in 1666. In 1673 he accompanied Jolliet on an expedition that descended the Mississippi to the mouth of the Arkansas, establishing the existence of a waterway from the St.Lawrence to the Gulf of Mexico. The following year he set out to found a mission among the Illinois Indians, but he died during the journey. His journal of the voyage with Jolliet, published in 1681, has been translated in Thwaites's *The Jesuit Relations and Allied Documents* (1900), which also contains his journal of the later trip, first separately published in 1852.

MARQUIS, Don[ald Robert Perry] (1878–1937), Illinois-born journalist in Atlanta (1902–9) and New York (1909–22), became noted as a humorist through his columns, 'The Sun Dial' in the New York *Sun*, and 'The Lantern' in the New York *Tribune*. His most famous works are *The Old Soak* (1921), which he dramatized successfully in 1922, 'a kind of gol-dinged autobiography of what me and Old King Booze done before he went into the grave and took one of my feet with him'; and *archy and mehitabel* (1927) and its sequels, dealing with the adventures of archy, the literary cockroach, who writes modern free verse because he is unable to manipulate the typewriter shift key, his friend mehitabel the cat, whose motto is 'toujours gai,' and their compositions and antics, which provide a medium for Marquis's opinions on contemporary life. His mordant satire, which is in the vein of Mark Twain, also appears in *Hermione and Her Little Group of Serious Thinkers* (1916); *Carter and Other People* (1921), including sketches of Negro characters and the ironic one-act play, 'Words and Thoughts'; *The Revolt of the Oyster* (1922), stories; *The Old Soak's History of the World* (1924); *The Almost Perfect State* (1927); *A Variety of People* (1929), stories; *Off the Arm* (1930), a novel set in Paris, Hollywood, and New York; *Chapters for the Orthodox* (1934), stories; and *Master of the Revels* (1934), a four-act comedy set in Elizabethan times. His many books of humorous verse, besides the volumes dealing with archy, include: *Noah an' Jonah an' Cap'n John Smith* (1921); *Sonnets to a Red-Haired Lady (by a Gentleman with a Blue Beard) and Famous Love Affairs* (1922); and *Love Sonnets of a Cave Man* (1928). Marquis was less successful with his serious works, which include the poems in *Dreams and Dust* (1915), *Poems and Portraits* (1922), and *The Awakening* (1924); the dramas, *The Dark Hours* (1924, produced 1932), dealing with the last days of Jesus, and *Out of the Sea* (1927), a version of the Tristram and Iseult legend; and an unfinished autobiographical novel, *Sons of the Puritans* (1939).

MARRYAT, Frederick (1792–1848), British naval captain, author of many popular novels about life at sea. He spent the years 1837–9 in the U.S. and Canada, with the avowed purpose of comparing British and American forms of government for a future book. After some tactless remarks and certain other incidents, he was bitterly attacked by the American press, at Detroit being burned in effigy along with hundreds of his books. He was variously accused of assaulting women, insulting Henry Clay, and being a spy. His six-volume *Diary in America, with Remarks on Its Institutions* (1839) shows a journalistic ability to observe closely and interpret humorously, and contains unflattering descriptions of American manners, customs, and habits. *Monsieur Violet* (1842) is a melodramatic novel about early California.

Marsden, Charles, character in *Strange Interlude* (q.v.).

Marse Henry, sobriquet of Henry Watterson (q.v.).

MARSH, George Perkins (1801–82), Vermont lawyer and scholar, because of

his linguistic ability became minister to Turkey (1849–54) and Minister to Italy (1860–82). He was the author of *A Compendious Grammar of the Old-Northern or Icelandic Language* (1838), *The Goths in New-England* (1843), *Lectures on the English Language* (1860), and *The Origin and History of the English Language* (1862), as well as collaborating on the *Oxford New English Dictionary*. His greatest work was *Man and Nature* (1864), revised as *The Earth as Modified by Human Action* (1874), in which he suggested methods by which man might restore the physical conditions of the organic and inorganic world that he had disturbed, and thereby improve wasted and exhausted regions. This book has been considered the fountainhead of the 20th-century conservation movement in the U.S. and elsewhere.

MARSH, James (1794–1842), born in Vermont, graduated from Dartmouth (1817), and became a Congregational minister and professor of languages. He was president of the University of Vermont (1826–33). Opposed to both revivalism and stern Calvinism, he sought a religion that would 'satisfy the heart as well as the head,' and edited Coleridge's *Aids to Reflection* (1829), adopting its distinctions between reason and understanding. This work and his preliminary essay to it had a formative influence on the Transcendentalist movement.

Marsh Island, A, novel by Sarah Orne Jewett (q.v.).

MARSHALL, Humphry (1722–1801), Pennsylvania botanist, whose book, *Arbustrum Americanum: The American Grove* (1785), is considered the first indigenous botanical essay published in America.

MARSHALL, James Wilson (1810–85), partner of John A. Sutter (q.v.) in the sawmill on the South Fork of the American River at Coloma, California, in the tailrace of which he discovered gold on Jan. 24, 1848. By the end of the year the news had spread, and the gold rush of the forty-niners (q.v.) followed. The sawmill was unable to obtain laborers, the claims of Sutter and Marshall were disregarded, and the two men were financially ruined.

MARSHALL, John (1755–1835), born on the Virginia frontier, served in the Revolutionary War, and became with little formal education the foremost lawyer of his state. He served in the Virginia Assembly (1782–4), was a commissioner during the XYZ affair (q.v.), a congressman (1799–1800), and John Adams's secretary of state (1800–1801). As Chief Justice of the U.S.Supreme Court (1801–35), he established the importance of the court and molded later interpretations of the Constitution, which he considered an instrument of national unity and federal power above state rights. His decisions expounded the doctrine that the Constitution is the supreme law in the U.S., since it springs from the people who are the ultimate source of authority, and therefore governs all governmental agencies. Since it is law, it is enforceable in the decision of cases by the Supreme Court, the final expositor of the Constitution according to the way in which it must be adapted to the various crises in human affairs. In 1803 in the case of Marbury vs. Madison (q.v.), he created a precedent in that the Court set aside an act of Congress because of conflict with the Constitution. He is the author of a five-volume *Life of George Washington* (1804–7).

Marshes of Glynn, The, poem by Lanier (q.v.) published anonymously in the anthology, *Masque of Poets* (1878). It is one of six projected 'Hymns of the Marshes,' of which the poet completed only three others, 'Sunrise,' 'Individuality,' and 'Marsh-Song—At Sunset.' In anapestic measure, it employs shifting accents, initial truncation, and from one to seventeen syllables in a line, to achieve a musical cadence. The poem describes the sea marshes of Glynn County, Georgia, where the author is stimulated to a pagan ecstasy:

> Oh, what is abroad in the marsh and the terminal sea,
> Somehow my soul seems suddenly free
> From the weighing of fate and the sad discussion of sin,
> By the length and the breadth and the sweep of the marshes of Glynn.

MARTIN, Everett Dean (1880–1941), after serving as a Unitarian minister, became an educator and critic, identified with the general movement of Humanism. His books include: *The Behavior of Crowds* (1920); *The Meaning of a Liberal Education* (1926); *Liberty* (1930); *Civilizing Ourselves* (1932); and *Farewell to Revolution* (1935).

MARTIN, Homer Dodge (1836–97), New York painter, whose early work fol-

lowed the dry, meticulous manner of the Hudson River School. Two visits to England (1876,'81) and a stay in France (1882–6) brought him under the influence of the Barbizon painters, and his later canvases were accordingly fluid and romantic. After seeing the works of the younger French Impressionists, he attempted to lighten his color scheme, but his quality of gentle melancholy persisted.

MARTIN, VICTORIA, see *Woodhull.*

Martin Arrowsmith, see *Arrowsmith.*

Martin Chuzzlewit, The Life and Adventures of, novel by Dickens published in 1844. It was partially an outgrowth of his American tour (1842).

Martin, the grandson of wealthy, misanthropic old Martin Chuzzlewit, is in love with Mary Graham, his grandfather's ward. When the old man refuses to allow him to marry Mary and has him dismissed from his position with his cousin, the architect Pecksniff, Martin sails for the U.S. to make his fortune, accompanied by Mark Tapley, his cheerful servant. Defrauded by the Eden Land Corporation (Cairo, Illinois), he loses his money and nearly dies of a fever. He is thus purged of his previous greed, and, when Pecksniff's meanness and treachery are discovered, he is restored to his grandfather's favor and allowed to wed Mary.

Martin Eden, novel by Jack London (q.v.) published in 1909.

Like the author, the hero is a common laborer and sailor whose superhuman endurance and consuming intellectual curiosity lead him to become a writer, so that he may strike out against the bourgeoisie. He falls in love with Ruth Morse, who symbolizes to him all the fine spiritual values: intellect, good breeding, polite society, the enjoyment of literature and art. At her home he meets Russ Brissenden (said to be based on George Sterling), a brilliant socialist poet. Ruth deserts Martin because of his socialism, until one of his books suddenly makes him wealthy and famous. Then she resumes her interest in him, but his love for her is lost, and with it his zest for living. Brissenden's suicide is another great loss, and in a last attempt to escape lethargy Martin makes a South Sea voyage. Finally, a victim of his own intensity, still less than 30, he is overpowered by the will to die and drowns himself.

Martin Faber, novel by Simms (q.v.), published in 1833 and revised as *Martin Faber, the Story of a Criminal* (1837).

Martin, a brilliant but evil young man, seduces the innocent Emily and deserts her to marry Constance Claiborne. When Emily threatens to expose him, he strangles her and hides her body in the cleft of a large rock. He then accuses Constance of having an affair with his friend William Harding, who, by ingenious detective work, reconstructs the murder and exposes it in a painting that he hangs in the village gallery. Frightened, Martin goes with Harding to the scene of the crime to protest his innocence. There he is held by the villagers while the rock is blasted and the body recovered. He attempts to stab Constance when she visits him in prison, but fails and is taken to be hanged.

MARTINEAU, HARRIET (1802–76), English author, wrote popularizations of social, philosophic, and economic subjects, as well as novels and stories for children. In 1834–6 she traveled from New England and New York to the Great Lakes and New Orleans. Returning to England, she published *Society in America* (1837), a critical study of American economic, political, and social institutions, and *Retrospect of Western Travel* (1838), sketches of her experiences. The latter was entertainingly written, and had a popular success, but the former, although sympathizing in general with American principles, was antagonistic toward the South. A typical reply was Simms's *Slavery in America* (1838), a peppery review that not only attacked Miss Martineau's ideas, but also vilified her character and made sport of her deafness. Although it was adversely criticized in *Blackwoods,* on the whole her book was well received in England and was among the most popular of her 52 volumes. Her *Autobiography* (1877) was edited by her friend, Maria W. Chapman.

MARTYR, PETER (PIETRO MARTIRE ANGHIERA) (1455–1526), Italian chaplain, whose residence in Spain brought him acquaintance with Columbus, da Gama, Cortés, Magellan, and other discoverers. They furnished him with information, which was supplemented by official documents, for his many letters on contemporary history and American discovery. His *De Orbe Nove* (1511), commonly known as the *Decades,* and his *Opus Epistolarium*

(1530) give him claim to the title, 'the first historian of America.'

MARVEL, Ik., pseudonym of D.G. Mitchell (q.v.).

MARWEDEL, Emma Jacobina Christiana (1818–93), was born in Germany, where she became active in kindergarten work, public education, and industrial schooling for girls. She emigrated to the U.S. (1868) at the request of Elizabeth Peabody, and continued her work in this country. At Washington,D.C., she conducted a school of industrial arts, an advanced kindergarten, and a training school for kindergarten teachers. She moved to California (1876), where she conducted several kindergartens, numbering among her pupils Kate Douglas Wiggin. Her writings include *The Connecting Link, to Continue the Three-Fold Development of the Child from the Cradle to the Manual-Labor School* (1891).

Marxism, see *Communist Party* and *Proletarian Literature.*

Mary Had a Little Lamb, first line of 'Mary's Lamb,' a poem by Sarah Josepha Hale (q.v.), which was first published in the *Juvenile Miscellany* (Sept. 1830) over her initials. It was reprinted in *Poems for Our Children* (1830).

Mary of Scotland, blank verse drama by Maxwell Anderson (q.v.), produced in 1933 and published in 1934.

This chronicle play of the life of Mary Stuart, set in 16th-century Scotland and England, presents episodes dating from Mary's arrival in Scotland (1561) to assume the throne until her imprisonment, by command of Elizabeth, in Carlisle Castle. The author has endowed his heroine with great beauty, charm, intelligence, and perhaps a more exalted sense of honor, chastity, and personal integrity than history would justify. John Knox, the Protestant leader, is shown as a sincere though bigoted opponent of the Catholic queen, while her less scrupulous adversaries include her half-brother James (Earl of Moray), Maitland of Lethington, Lord Ruthven, and Lord Throgmorton, the last acting as emissary of the rival party to Mary's arch-enemy, Elizabeth, whose plotting is presented as the guiding force toward Mary's downfall. The marriage with dissolute Lord Darnley, the murder of Mary's secretary David Rizzio, the betrayal of her cherished lover Bothwell, and her capture and confinement, are all credited to the machinations of the English queen, whose jealousy, craft, and ruthlessness are shown to be motivated by personal but also national interests. Defeated at last, and resigned to her doom, Mary asserts that hers will nevertheless be the victory of time:

> When all's done, it's my name I care for, my name and heart,
> To keep them clean . . .
> For I'll win men's hearts in the end . . .

Maryland Gazette, The (1727–1839), first newspaper in Maryland, was founded and edited by William Parks, an Englishman resident at Annapolis until 1736. Among the literary contributions were an allegory, 'The Plain Dealer,' which took a conservative point of view regarding constitutional liberty, and a Defoe-like letter purporting to be an account of a mulatto mutiny, by a South Carolina gentleman. The paper was revived by Jonas Green (1745–65), being suspended because of hostility toward the Stamp Act. In 1766 it was revived, and was continued by Green and his family until superseded by the *St. Mary's Gazette.*

Maryland, My Maryland, song by J.R. Randall (q.v.).

MASON, Daniel Gregory (1873–), Massachusetts-born composer, critic, and since 1910 professor of music at Columbia. His compositions include two symphonies, a *Festival Overture,* the *Country Pictures* for piano, *String Quartet on Negro Themes,* Variations on a theme by John Powell, and a folk-song fantasy, *Fanny Blair.* Among his numerous books are *The Dilemma of American Music* (1928) and *Contemporary Composers* (1919). He is a grandson of Lowell Mason.

MASON, George (1725–92), Virginia statesman and wealthy planter, as a member of the House of Burgesses was an opponent of the Stamp Act and other tax measures, and at the outbreak of the Revolution drafted the Virginia declaration of rights. This document, copied at the time by other states, had some influence on the French Declaration of the Rights of Man, as well as on the U.S.Bill of Rights. A member of the Federal Constitutional Convention, Mason had an important role in drafting the Constitution, but he opposed ratification because it was not sufficiently committed to the principle of

state rights. He was influential in securing the adoption of the Bill of Rights.

MASON, JOHN (*c.*1600–72), arrived in the Massachusetts Bay Colony (*c.*1630), where he became the military hero of the Pequot War and later commander-in-chief of the colony and holder of various offices. From memory he wrote a simple, honest, and blunt account of the war, originally published in Increase Mather's *A Relation of the Troubles which have happened in New-England . . .* (1677) and erroneously attributed to John Allyn. The work was edited by Thomas Prince as a *Brief History of the Pequot War* (1736).

MASON, LOWELL (1792–1872), Massachusetts-born composer and educator, influential in the establishment of music teaching in public schools. Returning to Boston after many years as a banker at Savannah, Georgia, he became president of the Handel and Haydn Society (1827–32), and was the first to apply Pestalozzian methods to the teaching of music, founding the Boston Academy of Music (1832) and the New York Normal Institute (1853), and lecturing on this subject in the U.S. and England. He compiled more than 50 books of music, among them *The Choir* (1832), in which the hymn 'America' first appeared. His first collection of hymns and anthems appeared in 1822, and his religious compositions were extremely popular, especially the 'Missionary Hymn' ('From Greenland's Icy Mountains') and 'Bethany' ('Nearer, My God, to Thee'). His library of 8,000 printed works and hundreds of manuscripts was presented after his death to Yale.

WILLIAM MASON (1829–1908), his son, was the foremost pianist and teacher of piano of his time in the U.S. He studied abroad (1849–54), returning to tour this country in one of the first concert circuits of a solo musician, but soon settled in New York, where he organized a famous quartet, with Theodore Thomas as first violin. His piano compositions were popular in his lifetime, but he is now better known for his influence on other pianists and teachers. Such books as *Touch and Technic* are still used as texts, and he also wrote *Memories of a Musical Life* (1902).

Mason-Dixon Line (Mason and Dixon's Line), boundary dividing Pennsylvania from Maryland, Delaware, and the present West Virginia, surveyed by Charles Mason and Jeremiah Dixon (1763–7) and ratified by the crown (1769). It came to be popularly designated as the line dividing the Northern free states from the Southern slave states.

Mason and Slidell, see *Trent Affair.*

Masons, see *Freemasonry.*

Masque of Judgment, The, drama by W.V.Moody (q.v.).

Masque of Kings, The, play by Maxwell Anderson (q.v.).

Masque of the Red Death, The, story by Poe (q.v.) published in *Graham's Magazine* (1842).

In a land devastated by a horrible plague, the 'Red Death,' Prince Prospero determines to preserve himself and his friends, and removes to a secluded castle, where, with a thousand knights and ladies, he spends several months in extravagantly gay pursuits. At a masquerade in the imperial suite, when the courtiers appear in masks and fantastic costumes, a terrifying corpse-like figure joins them, garbed as the Red Death. Attempting to stab him, the Prince dies; when others seize the apparition, it is discovered to have no tangible body. They realize that this is the Red Death itself, and, as midnight strikes, they die: 'and Darkness and Decay and the Red Death held illimitable dominion over all.'

MASQUERIER, LEWIS (1802–?), Kentucky-born sociologist and pioneer in phonetic spelling, invented a new alphabet of 11 vowels and 22 consonants, published in *The Phonotypic Spelling and Reading Manual* (1867). Influenced by George Henry Evans, he developed a plan for an agrarian Utopia, in which the wage system and rents would be abolished, and his individualism eventually led him to anarchism. His various pamphlets were collected in *Sociology, or the Reconstruction of Society, Government, and Property* (1877) and *An Appendix to Sociology* (1884).

Massachuset Indians, tribe or tribes of Algonquian stock, inhabited the New England coast at the arrival of the white colonists, although their power was already on the decline. John Eliot (q.v.) preached to them, and they joined the Praying Indians (q.v.).

MASSACHUSETTENSIS, see *Leonard, Daniel.*

Massachusetts Bay Company, English chartered company, was a Puritan (q.v.) reorganization of the New England Company for a Plantation in Massachusetts Bay, in itself an outgrowth of the fishing and farming colony organized by the Dorchester Company of Adventurers (q.v.). The Massachusetts Bay Company was organized for trading and settlement as a large colonial counterpart to Virginia, with a Puritan flavor. In 1628 it received a new patent, from the New England Council of Gorges, with a grant of land between the Charles and Merrimac rivers, extending indefinitely westward. The royal charter (1629) confirming the patent was given entirely into the hands of the proposed settlers, who arrived on the *Arbella* (q.v.,1630) to settle at Salem and later at Boston. Self-government was conducted by a governor and General Court, although suffrage was extended only to church members. The crown's objections to the colony's coining of money, suffrage restrictions, extension of authority over Maine and New Hampshire, refusal to comply with the Navigation Acts, and general independence led to the rescinding of the charter (1684), when the colony joined with that at Plymouth (q.v.). The original settlers of the Bay Colony were Puritans, as distinguished from the Plymouth Separatists. John Endecott and John Winthrop (q.v.) were the two leading governors. Records of the company have been published.

Massachusetts Centinel and the Republican Journal (1784–1840), Boston newspaper distinguished for its impartial news coverage and literary contributions. J.Q.Adams attacked Paine and other sympathizers with the French in three series of essays (1791–3), under the pseudonyms Publicola, Marcellus, and Columbus. The paper was also famous for its effective use of cartoons, of which the most popular was the Gerrymander (q.v.) drawing. In 1790 the name was changed to *Massachusetts Centinel and the Federalist Journal,* and in 1840 the paper was merged with the *Boston Daily Advertiser* (q.v.).

Massachusetts Gazette, see *Boston News-Letter.*

Massachusetts Historical Society, founded in 1791 by Jeremy Belknap and other historical scholars, whose gift of books and manuscripts became the nucleus of its present great collection. This, the first organization of its kind in the U.S., began to make available its Americana by publishing volumes of collections, augmented by a series of *Proceedings* and special publications. Among the many notable documents thus published for the first time are Bradford's *History of Plimmoth Plantation* and *The Diary and Letter Books of Samuel Sewall.* Its collections were first published in the *American Apollo* (1792–4), a Federalist weekly newspaper.

Massachusetts Indians, see *Massachuset.*

Massachusetts Institute of Technology, leading scientific and engineering school, was incorporated in 1861 and opened in 1865. In 1915 it was moved from Boston to its present site on the Charles River in Cambridge. C.W.Eliot was a professor there (1865–9), and presidents of M.I.T. have included Francis A. Walker (1881–97) and Karl Compton (1930–).

Massachusetts Magazine, The (1789–96), Boston monthly, published music and fiction, as well as articles on current events. Contributors included Sarah W. Morton, Joseph Dennie, and William Dunlap.

Massachusetts Mercury, The (1793–1840), Boston tri-weekly newspaper. Until 1797 it was called *The Mercury,* and after 1801 *The Mercury and New-England Palladium.* Its conservatism was represented by such Federalist contributors as Fisher Ames. It was purchased by the *Boston Daily Advertiser* (q.v.).

Massachusetts Quarterly Review, The (1847–50), literary, philosophical, and humanitarian journal, edited from Boston by Emerson, Parker, and J.E.Cabot, and intended, according to Parker, to be 'the *Dial* with a beard.' Although its contributors included Lowell, Mrs.Howe, the elder Henry James, and other prominent, militantly aggressive authors, T.W.Higginson considered it to be 'the beard without the *Dial.*'

Massachusetts Spy (1770–1904), newspaper founded by Isaiah Thomas, ostensibly as a nonpartisan journal, but actually to serve the Revolutionary cause. In May 1775 it was moved from Boston to Worcester, and part of the time it was edited by others. In 1781 the title was changed

to *Thomas's Massachusetts Spy, or the Worcester Gazette*, and from 1785 to 1788, to avoid the stamp tax on newspapers, it appeared as *The Worcester Magazine*. In addition to news, the paper published agricultural articles by Crèvecœur, and such complete works as Robertson's *History of America* and William Gordon's history of the Revolution. In 1814 it passed out of Thomas's hands.

Massachusetts to Virginia, poem by Whittier (q.v.) read at the Essex County Convention (Jan. 2, 1843), called to protest the arrest of fugitive slaves. It was published that month in *The Liberator* and collected in *Voices of Freedom* (1846). In stirring seven-stress lines, it addresses the Southern state, in the name of the aroused Massachusetts counties, recalling the common struggle for liberty in the Revolution, indicating the inconsistency of the slaveholders' position, and rejoicing in the vigorous democratic idealism of the Abolitionists.

Massa's in de Cold, Cold Ground, song by Stephen Foster (q.v.).

MASSASOIT (*d.*1661), chief of the Wampanoag Indians, whose real name seems to have been Ousamequin or Wousamequin. As Indian ruler of all Massachusetts and Rhode Island, he made a treaty of peace with the Plymouth Colony (1621), which was not broken until the time of his son, King Philip (q.v.). He is mentioned in the writings of Winthrop, Williams, and Bradford.

Masses, The (1911–), weekly journal of news and social criticism, founded at New York by Piet Vlag as 'an outgrowth of the cooperative side of Socialist activity.' Under the editorship of Thomas Seltzer, it pursued no consistent political policy, and stressed literature with a liberal bias, drawing largely upon European fiction by such authors as Sudermann and Bjorkman. In 1912 Max Eastman became editor, assisted by Floyd Dell, John Reed, and others, and the magazine followed a more consistently Socialist policy, until it was suppressed by the government (Dec. 1918). Three months later, the editors founded *The Liberator*, a weekly journal of social criticism with an increasingly radical point of view. In 1922 the staff voted to affiliate the magazine with the Communist party. Suspended in 1924, it was revived in 1926 as *The New Masses* by Joseph Freeman, Michael Gold, and others, who combined the political attitude of the later issues of *The Liberator* with some of the literary and æsthetic ideals of *The Masses*.

Master of the Inn, The, novel by Robert Herrick (q.v.) published in 1908.

A doctor who finds a cure for mental and physical ill health in quiet contemplation and physical labor maintains an 'inn' in the New England countryside. Among the city-broken men who come here to escape from the struggle and confusion of modern civilization is a great surgeon who in his youth won from the Master of the Inn his fiancée. The Master restores strength and skill to the surgeon, who does not recognize him, and reveals his secret of happiness to his patient. The book ends when a fire of unknown origin destroys both the Master and his Inn.

Master Skylark, boys' novel by John Bennett (q.v.).

MASTERS, EDGAR LEE (1869–), Kansas-born lawyer in Chicago (1891–1920), first entered literature as an avocation. His early works included *A Book of Verses* (1898) and *Maximilian* (1902), a blank verse drama. He was suddenly catapulted into fame with the publication of *Spoon River Anthology* (q.v.,1915), free-verse epitaphs revealing the secret lives of the persons buried in a Midwestern cemetery. Masters did not again achieve the directness and simplicity that characterizes these poems, although he employed the same method in *The New Spoon River* (1924), a bitter commentary on the vicious urban standards of changing America. *Domesday Book* (1920) and its sequel, *The Fate of the Jury* (1929), are considered to be among the best of his later poetry, which also includes: *Songs and Satires* (1916); *The Great Valley* (1916); *Toward the Gulf* (1918); *Starved Rock* (1919); the dramatic poems, *Lee* (1926), *Jack Kelso* (1928), and *Godbey* (1931); *Lichee Nuts* (1930), terse poetic statements of philosophy, in the Chinese manner; *Invisible Landscapes* (1935); and *Poems of People* (1936) and *The New World* (1937), presenting a panorama of America and its outstanding figures. *Across Spoon River* (1936) is an autobiography, and his many other prose volumes include: *Mitch Miller* (1920), *Skeeters Kirby* (1923), and *Mirage*, (1924), a trilogy of novels based on the author's youth; *Children of the Market*

Place (1922), a novel about Stephen Douglas; *The Tide of Time* (1937), another novel; *The Tale of Chicago* (1933), an iconoclastic history; and such biographical studies as *Lincoln, the Man* (1931), bitterly attacking its subject, *Vachel Lindsay* (1935), *Walt Whitman* (1937), and *Mark Twain* (1938), the last presenting Clemens as a frustrated genius.

Mateel Shepherd, character in *The Story of a Country Town* (q.v.).

MATHER, COTTON (1663–1728), eldest son of Increase Mather, and grandson of Richard Mather and John Cotton, was so impressed by his heritage that he not only thought of himself as the destined leader of the Massachusetts church and state, but attempted to recapture the spirit of his forefathers in a time when such a spirit was no longer progressive. He entered Harvard at the age of 12, the youngest student ever admitted, and was justifiably considered a prig by his fellows. After some study of medicine, he prepared for the church, received his M.A. (1681), and assisted his father at the Second Church in Boston, where he was co-minister until 1723, and afterward minister. When his father went to England to plead for the restoration of the Massachusetts charter, Cotton conducted the church, and worked at home for the same political ends, writing the manifesto against Andros, *The Declaration of the Gentlemen, Merchants, and Inhabitants of Boston* (1689). He had now written some dozen works, given evidence of being a great preacher, and been made an overseer of Harvard. When his father returned with the new charter and the new governor, Phips, Cotton wrote much to defend both, two of his works being *Political Fables* (q.v.) and *Pietas in Patriam* (1697), a life of Phips. The latter began the investigation known as the Salem Witchcraft trials, in which Mather became fervently interested. Although he believed that the possessed persons should be treated by fasting and prayer, rather than executed, he affirmed the justice of the verdicts, and made no public protest except in his semiscientific writings. *Memorable Providences, Relating to Witchcrafts and Possessions* (1689) was an early study of a victim whom he took into his home. *The Wonders of the Invisible World* (1693) was a narrative of some of the Salem trials, containing theological observations on the operations of devils. This was answered by Robert Calef, a rationalist opponent of the Mather influence in church and state. Mather was himself as rational as Calef, as may be seen in his scientific interests and writings, recognized by his election to the Royal Society of England (1714), and in his statement of opposition to the methods of the witchcraft trials in his *Magnalia Christi Americana* (q.v.,1702). Nevertheless, his aggressiveness in controversy, arrogant manner, and indication that he felt himself to be the political and religious leader of Massachusetts, all made him the butt of the critics of the Salem trials. His inability to succeed his father as president of Harvard or to control Governor Joseph Dudley, and his general conservatism in a period of change, made him feel that many of his ambitions were frustrated, even though he remained a great power in the church. His irritable nerves were overtaxed by his indefatigable industry, and he was given to transports of religious feeling, which sometimes seemed self-conscious attempts to prove the existence of a saintly fire within him. On the other hand, he showed himself in harmony with the new age by championing smallpox inoculation, urging tolerance in the ministry in his *Manductio ad Ministerium* (q.v., 1726), and propounding ideas looking toward deism in his *Christian Philosopher* (q.v.,1721). Possessing a library of nearly 2,000 volumes, he was probably more widely read than any other American of his time, and knew seven languages well. His writing was scholarly, sometimes pedantic, and exhibited a zeal which occasionally led him into specious reasoning. His more than 450 works include histories, biographies, essays, sermons, fables, verses, theological treatises, philosophy, science, medicine, and practical piety. He had a definite theory of style, believing that though a work should be replete with allusions and quotations, richness of content was more important than elegance of expression; and that the chief function of writing being instruction, the more information it conveyed the better its style. Among his important writings are: *A Poem to the Memory of . . . Urian Oakes* (1682); *The Present State of New England* (1690); *Eleutheria: or an Idea of the Reformation in England* (1698); *A Family Well-Ordered* (1699); *La Fe Del Christiano* (1699), a work in Spanish; *Reasonable Religion* (1700);

Some Few Remarks upon a Scandalous Book . . . by one Robert Calef (1701); *Le Vrai Patron des Saines Paroles* (1704), in French; *The Negro Christianized* (1706); *The Good Education of Children* (1708); *Bonifacius* (q.v.,1710), usually called *Essays to Do Good; Psalterium Americanum* (1718), a translation of the psalms; *Sentiments on the Small Pox Inoculated* (1721); *An Account . . . of Inoculating the Small-Pox* (1722); *The Angel of Bethesda* (1722), a medical manual; *Parentator* (1724), a biography of his father; *Ratio Disciplinæ* (1726), on Congregational polity; and *Biblia Americana*, an unpublished compilation of material illustrating and interpreting the Bible. His enormous *Diary* has been published in seven volumes by the Massachusetts Historical Society (1911-12).

MATHER, INCREASE (1639–1723), youngest son of Richard Mather, was reared in the strict Puritan tradition of his father's household, educated at Harvard (1656), and received his M.A. from Trinity College, Dublin (1658). He preached in England at Congregational churches, until the Restoration and the return to Anglicanism forced him to quit England for his native land. He became teacher of the Second Church in Boston (1664), where he worked fervently until his death, and in 1674 was appointed a fellow of Harvard College. His intellectual activities outside of the church may be judged from his publication of some 25 books before 1683, his organization of a society to discuss scientific matters, and his central position in many types of Massachusetts activities. After having once refused the presidency of Harvard College, by placing his duty to his church before anything else, he was nevertheless appointed acting president in 1685, and the following year took complete charge with the title of Rector. During his presidency to 1701, he encouraged scientific study, while at the same time resisting all efforts to undermine the college's fundamental Congregationalism. In 1688 he sailed for England, after having been appointed by the Congregational churches to bring a petition in the matter of the abrogated colonial charter. His interviews with James II came to naught when he was deposed by the Revolution of 1688, but he continued to appeal to William III, and in 1690 was made an official representative of the colonial government. His work was successful, for Governor Andros was replaced by Sir William Phips, and a new charter gave the colonists some of the powers they demanded. After his return his power waned, since many rebelled against his influence in church and state, were dissatisfied with the charter, and in time opposed the attitude of Phips and himself in the Salem Witchcraft trials (q.v.). The witchcraft excitement had begun before his return, but, though he avoided the matter for some time, he was accused by Calef and others of responsibility for Phips's actions. Actually, Mather's book, *Cases of Conscience Concerning Evil Spirits* (1693), disapproved the emphasis the court put on 'spectral evidence,' and generally had the attitude that it was better for a guilty witch to escape than for an innocent man to die. His rational point of view may also be seen in his championship of the unpopular cause of inoculation during a smallpox epidemic. Although he was by no means as bigoted as later popular opinion has claimed, he was firmly convinced of the rectitude of his own ideas, and supported them by his hot temper and tremendous power, in the belief that what he did was for the public good. He was the author of some 130 books, and contributed to more than 65 works by others. His style was simple, strong, and direct, although without brilliance. The works, which sweep the entire circuit of sacred and secular themes of the day, include: *A Brief History of the Warr with the Indians* (1676); *A Relation of the Troubles which have hapned in New-England by reason of the Indians there* (1677); *Life and Death of That Reverend Man of God, Mr.Richard Mather* (1670); *An Essay for the Recording of Illustrious Providences* (1684), generally known as *Remarkable Providences* (q.v.); and many political tracts. *Parentator* (1724), his biography, was written by his son, Cotton Mather.

MATHER, RICHARD (1596–1669), preached in England until 1633, when he was suspended from the ministry for his Puritanism. Stimulated by John Cotton and Thomas Hooker, he emigrated to Massachusetts Bay (1635) and the following year became teacher of the church in Dorchester, where he continued his ministry until his death. He was a prominent preacher and a leader in the development

of the church polity. His anonymously published works included *Church-Government and Church-Covenant Discussed* (1643), the earliest complete exposition of the New England theory of the church, and *Apologie of the Churches in New-England for Church Covenant* (1643), arguing for a covenant of members as the basis of the Congregational church. With John Eliot and Thomas Welde, Mather was an author of the *Bay Psalm Book* (q.v.,1640). His most important work was the original draft of *A Platform of Church Discipline* (1649), the celebrated Cambridge Platform, which was the basic statement of New England Congregationalism. He also drafted the original Half-Way Covenant (q.v.). He was the author of many other works, and was the subject of biographies by his son Increase and his grandson Cotton, being famous as the founder of the 'Mather Dynasty' in New England.

MATHER, Samuel (1706–85), son of Cotton Mather, was graduated from Harvard (1723) and the following year began preaching. He married a sister of Thomas Hutchinson, and in 1732 became pastor of the Second Church of Boston. Charges that are now uncertain caused him to be dismissed (1741), and more than 90 of his congregation withdrew with him to found a new church, which he ministered until his death. His writings include some 20 books, marked by erudition rather than intellectual strength or style. Among them were a *Life of the Very Reverend and Learned Cotton Mather* (1729), *Attempt to Shew that America Must Be Known to the Ancients* (1773), and a poem, *The Sacred Minister* (1773). The last of the 'Mather Dynasty,' he appears to have been an unsuccessful preacher with little public influence. A contemporary said that 'though a treasury of valuable historical anecdotes,' he was 'as weak a man as I ever knew.'

MATHEWS, Cornelius (1817–89), New York editor, contributor to various magazines, dramatist, novelist, and poet. His first important writing was a romance, *Behemoth: A Legend of the Mound Builders* (1839), and was followed by a novel on New York politics, *The Career of Puffer Hopkins* (1841–2), published serially in *Arcturus*, a literary journal he founded with E.A.Duyckinck. His verse was published in *Poems on Man in His Various Aspects under the American Republic* (1843), and he was also the author of *Indian Fairy Book* (1856; reissued as *The Enchanted Moccasins*, 1877), a work based on information from H.R.Schoolcraft. His plays include: *Witchcraft, or the Martyrs of Salem* (1846), an enormously successful blank-verse play, which was even translated into French; *Jacob Leisler* (1848), an historical drama based on the life of the early governor of New York; *The Politicians* (written in 1840 but unproduced), an indictment of New York politics; and *False Pretences* (1855), a light social comedy on *parvenus*.

MATTHEWS, [James] Brander (1852–1929), born in New Orleans, graduated from Columbia (1871) and two years later received his LL.B. After the loss of his family's wealth, he devoted himself to writing fiction and criticism and became prominent in literary and artistic circles in New York and London, being a founder of the Author's Club, The Players, and other societies. In 1880–81 he wrote two books on the French stage, and with Laurence Hutton he edited *Actors and Actresses of Great Britain and the United States* (5 vols.,1886). Meanwhile, besides collaborating with H.C.Bunner (q.v.) on a book of short stories, Matthews wrote a comedy, *Margery's Lovers* (1884), and collaborated on two other successful plays, *A Gold Mine* (1887), a comedy, and *On Probation* (1889), a farce, as well as writing several one-act plays. After lecturing at Columbia (1891–2), he became professor of literature there (1892–1900), and from 1900 to 1924 was professor of dramatic literature, being the first to hold such a position in any American university. His influence on playwrights, criticism, and public taste was great, through his many texts, compilations, and books of essays, including *The Development of the Drama* (1903), *Molière* (1910), *Shakspere as a Playwright* (1913), *A Book about the Theater* (1916), *Principles of Playmaking* (1919), and *Rip Van Winkle Goes to the Play* (1926). *These Many Years* (1917) is an autobiography, and he wrote several volumes of fiction about New York, including *Vignettes of Manhattan* (1894), *Outlines in Local Color* (1897), and *Vistas of New York* (1912). He lectured widely in the U.S. and abroad, was an original member and president (1913–14) of the National Institute

of Arts and Letters, and has been called 'perhaps the last of the gentlemanly school of critics and essayists' in American literature.

Matthias at the Door, blank verse narrative by E.A.Robinson (q.v.), published in 1931.

Matthias at 50, wealthy and 'wrapped in rectitude,' is unaware of the falsities in his life, and pities his neighbor Garth, not realizing that the latter, through bitter failure, is wiser than himself. Garth speaks strangely of death, and the next day commits suicide inside the curious door of a huge rock on Matthias's estate. 'The rich web of his complacency' is abruptly destroyed when Matthias discovers that his wife Natalie married him as an expedient, and really loves his friend Timberlake, who, shaken by Garth's suicide, now disappears. The embittered Matthias takes to drink, and Natalie, to escape his violence, becomes the rock's second suicide. A year later Timberlake returns, pitifully ill, and lonely Matthias welcomes his one remaining friend. He fears that Timberlake will seek an exit through 'the door,' but his friend reassures him, 'I shall not go until my name is called.' Feeling that Garth and Natalie are summoning him, Timberlake attempts to reach the rock, collapses, and a few days later dies. Weary of defeat and futile self-exploration, Matthias goes to the rock, but is halted by Garth's ghostly admonition, 'You cannot die, Matthias, till you are born.' He must live and suffer, he is told, before he can begin to know himself. Convinced and expectant, he returns to take his place ' . . . in a new world That Timberlake and Garth and Natalie Had strangely lived and died to find for him.'

Maud Muller, poetic idyl in four-stress couplets by Whittier (q.v.), published in 1854 and collected in *The Panorama and Other Poems* (1856). It tells of the brief meeting of a wealthy judge with the rustic maiden, Maud Muller, of their momentary thoughts of love, and of the memories of the incident that recur during their years of toil and disappointment.

Maule, family name of characters in *The House of the Seven Gables* (q.v.).

Mauve Decade, The, history by Thomas Beer (q.v.).

MAVERICK, SAMUEL (*c.*1602–*c.*1676), came to Massachusetts about 1624, when he was evidently associated with Gorges, and according to Winthrop engaged in commerce in the Bay Colony. He returned to England after the Restoration, and there wrote *A Briefe Discription of New England and the Severall Townes Therein* (1660), probably in the interests of more rigid colonial supervision. He returned to Massachusetts as a royal commissioner (1664).

Maverick, name applied by cowboys to unbranded cattle. The term supposedly owes its origin to Samuel A. Maverick, a wealthy Texan, who neglected to brand some cattle he received in payment for a debt (1845). When the cattle industry was in a demoralized state during the Civil War, unmarked cattle were commonly claimed and branded by anybody who found them. Later stealing of unbranded cattle and calves from generally branded herds led to many of the bloody battles that figure in Western fiction.

Maxim machine gun, invented (1883) by Hiram Stevens Maxim (1840–1916), an American inventor resident in England. An improvement of the Gatling gun (q.v.), firing 11 shots per second from a single barrel, it completely changed the technique of modern warfare. The Maxim silencer for guns was invented by his son, Hiram Percy Maxim (1869–).

MAXIMILIAN (1832–67), Austrian archduke, brother of the Emperor Franz Josef, was created Emperor of Mexico (1864–7) as a pawn of Mexican conservatives, who were supported by the soldiers of Napoleon III, for political and commercial reasons of the French monarch. Juárez (q.v.) and his liberal government were overthrown, but, when the conclusion of the U.S.Civil War permitted the enforcement of the Monroe Doctrine, the French troops were withdrawn, and Juárez regained power. Maximilian was captured and executed, while his empress, Carlotta (1840–1927), vainly sought aid abroad, where she became insane. Maximilian's autobiography, *Recollections of My Life*, was published in 1868.

MAY, SAMUEL JOSEPH (1797–1871), born in Boston, was Connecticut's first Unitarian clergyman, and was active in pacifist, Abolitionist, temperance, and feminist reform movements. He was involved in so many humanitarian movements that Alcott called him 'the Lord's chore boy.' His writings include *The Rights*

and Condition of Women (1846), a widely circulated sermon; *A Brief Account of His Ministry* (1867); and *Some Recollections of Our Anti-slavery Conflict* (1869).

May-Day, title piece of a volume of poems by Emerson (q.v.) published in 1867. It is a rhapsodic ode in praise of nature's beauties, in irregular tetrameter verse, alternately rimed or in couplets. The poet conceives Spring, 'Daughter of Heaven and Earth,' to be languishing 'with sudden passion' on May-Day, following the snow-bound winter. In a series of vivid images, he evokes the specific beauties of the season and their invigorating effect on all life. In accord with the philosophic doctrines developed in *Nature*, he shows that as lovely Spring complements unlovely Winter, so nature contains a variety of elements, which must be seen in their complex interrelations in order that the whole may be understood.

Mayflower, ship which brought 102 Pilgrims (q.v.) from England to the Plymouth Colony (q.v.). After twice setting sail accompanied by the unseaworthy *Speedwell*, the voyagers abandoned this smaller ship, and left Plymouth, England (Sept. 16, 1620), arriving in the present Provincetown harbor (Nov. 21). A land party went to the present Plymouth (Dec. 21), followed five days later by the ship. The 'Mayflower Compact' (drafted Nov. 11) was an agreement among the 41 adult males, binding them together in a civil body politic to enact, constitute, and frame laws, ordinances, acts, constitutions, and offices, with reference to the general good of the proposed colony. *Mourt's Relation* (q.v.) contains a journal of the voyage, and a record of the compact.

MAYHEW, Experience (1673–1758), born at Martha's Vineyard, from the age of 20 until his death was employed by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in New England, as a preacher among the Indians. He translated into the Indian tongue a lecture by Cotton Mather, and his *Massachusee Psalter* (1709), an Indian version of the Psalms and the Gospel of St.John, is declared to be the greatest monument of the Massachuset language after the Indian Bible of Eliot. Mayhew's other writings include *Indian Converts* (1727), a defense of his work; *Grace Defended* (1744), a theological tract upholding a measure of free will against the Calvinist doctrine of total depravity; and *Observations on the Indian Language* (1884), a personal letter written in 1722. Other works remain in manuscript. He was a grandson of Thomas Mayhew.

Jonathan Mayhew (1720–66), his son, was pastor of the West Church, Boston, from 1747 until his death. He preached a rational, practical Christianity based on the Scriptures rather than Calvin, and affirmed the doctrine of free will, rejecting the Trinitarian view and defending the right of private judgment. His advanced outlook led to many controversies, and among his replies is the caustic *Letter of Reproof to Mr.John Cleaveland* (1764). He was also a liberal in regard to civil rights; in his *Discourse Concerning Unlimited Submission and Non-Resistance to the Higher Powers* (1750), he defended popular disobedience when civil commands were contrary to divine ordinances. *The Snare Broken* (1766) was a sermon counseling observation of the Stamp Act laws, although defending the preservation of individual rights. Mayhew was a friend of the Adamses, James Otis, and other liberal leaders.

MAYHEW, Thomas (*c.*1621–57), grandfather of Experience Mayhew, was owner and governor of Martha's Vineyard, where in 1643 he undertook missionary work among the Indians. This was three years prior to John Eliot's similar work on the mainland. With Eliot he wrote a number of Indian tracts, including *The Glorious Progress of the Gospel* (1649) and *Tears of Repentance* (1652).

MAYLEM, John (1739–?), New England soldier, fought in the French and Indian War, about which he wrote two lusty poems, *The Conquest of Louisburg* (1758) and *Gallic Perfidy* (1758), the latter recounting his capture by the French and Indians under Montcalm. Appended to his name on the title-pages is the designation, 'Philo-Bellum.' There is no record of him after 1762.

MAYO, Frank (1839–96), actor and dramatist, began his career in California and became famous for his character parts, of which the greatest was the title role in *Davy Crockett* (1872), written by F.H.Murdoch but progressively revised by Mayo until it was as much his as Murdoch's. He performed it more than 2,000 times during a successful English tour. He also drama-

tized and successfully produced Clemens's *Pudd'nhead Wilson* (1895).

Mayo, Robert, character in *Beyond the Horizon* (q.v.).

MAYO, William Starbuck (1812–95), New York doctor whose voyage to Spain and northern Africa resulted in the novel, *Kaloolah; or, Journeyings to the Djébel Kumri* (1849), a romance about the Yankee Jonathan Romer and his marriage to an African princess. The contrast between the U.S. and Africa gives rise to a Gulliverian satire. *The Berber* (1850) is a novel with a careful depiction of contemporary Moorish life, which was the result of first-hand observation. *Never Again* (1873) is a novel about a Yankee in wealthy New York society. *Romance Dust from the Historic Placer* (1851; republished as *Flood and Field*, 1855) is a collection of short stories.

Maypole of Merrymount, The, allegorical tale by Hawthorne (q.v.), published in 1836 and collected in *Twice-Told Tales* (1837). It is based on historical accounts of the Cavalier settlement at Merry Mount (q.v.).

Among the revelers about the Maypole at Merrymount are a handsome youth and a beautiful maiden, who, at the height of the festivities, are married by a jolly Anglican priest. At this moment the proceedings are interrupted by a raid of Endecott and his Puritan followers. The latter are dissuaded from punishing the pair when each pleads for the other, and they join the Puritan colony, becoming sober and respectable citizens.

MEAD, Margaret (1901–), anthropologist, assistant curator of ethnology in the American Museum of Natural History since 1926, is best known for her books, *Coming of Age in Samoa* (1928), *Growing Up in New Guinea* (1930), and *Sex and Temperament in Three Primitive Societies* (1935), collected in one volume, *From the South Seas* (1939).

MEADE, George Gordon (1815–72), graduated from West Point (1835), served in the Mexican War, and became an army engineer. During the Civil War he fought under McClellan in the Peninsular Campaign and took part in the Second Battle of Bull Run and at Antietam. In 1863 he succeeded Hooker as commander of the Army of the Potomac (q.v.), which he led until the end of the war, having begun this phase of his service with the victory at Gettysburg (q.v.). After Grant was given the supreme command, Meade was made a major general.

Meaning of Truth, The, essays by William James (q.v.), published in 1909 as a sequel to *Pragmatism* (q.v.). In this reply to his critics, James reasserts and amplifies the basic principles of his concept of pragmatism: 'The fundamental fact about our experience is that it is a process of change . . .'; 'The true . . . is only the expedient in the way of our thinking, just as the right is only the expedient in the way of our behaving . . .'; 'Truth *happens* to an idea. It *becomes* true, is *made* true by events'; 'True ideas are those that we can assimilate, validate, corroborate, and verify. False ideas are those that we cannot.' He discusses the theories of his fellow pragmatists, Schiller and Dewey, and points out certain weaknesses in their positions, but upholds his own concepts as essential to the doctrine of 'radical empiricism,' and contrary to untenable forms of idealism and absolutism.

Mecklenburg Declaration of Independence, The, document said to have been adopted (May 20, 1775) by the committee of Mecklenburg County, North Carolina. It was first published in a North Carolina newspaper (1819). Similarity of phrasing with the Declaration of Independence raised questions of Jefferson's plagiarism, but the general belief is that the Mecklenburg document was altered for publication.

Medicine show, type of entertainment found most often in rural American during the 19th century, when salesmen for 'sovereign remedies,' promised to be cures for most of the known diseases, advertised their wares by wagon shows featuring musicians, song-and-dance performers, freaks, and especially actors representing Indian chiefs and medicine men. The medicine show methods of ballyhoo have been carried over into modern periodical and radio advertising.

MEDILL, Joseph (1823–99), born at St. John, New Brunswick, became one of the great journalists of his time and a founder of the Republican party, to which he may have given its name. In 1855 he bought an interest in the *Chicago Tribune* (q.v.), which he edited until his death, and from 1874 controlled financially. The paper was

ardently Republican, and championed Lincoln at an early date. He was elected mayor of Chicago in 1872.

MEEK, Alexander Beaufort (1814–65), Alabama lawyer, political figure, and author, whose books include *The Southwest* (1840) and *Romantic Passages in Southwestern History* (1857), works on early Alabama; and *Songs and Poems of the South* (1857).

MEEKER, Nathan Cook (1817–79), first showed his interest in socialistic colonization by joining a Fourierist phalanx in Ohio, and during the 1850's wrote a novel, *The Adventures of Captain Armstrong,* combining romance with social teachings. On the staff of the New York *Tribune* (1865), he wrote a series of articles on the Oneida Community, and from a newspaper appointment to investigate the Mormons grew his plan for an agricultural colony in the West. Supported by his editor, Horace Greeley, he launched the Union Colony (1870) at Greeley, on the Platte River north of Denver, as a co-operative organization in which private ownership of land and individual control of activity were permitted. During the eight years in which the colony flourished, he published a newspaper, the Greeley *Tribune.* He later became an Indian agent, but his attempt to reform his charges were unsuccessful, and he was killed by the Utes.

Meg March, character in *Little Women* (q.v.).

MEIKLEJOHN, Alexander (1872–), born in England, was brought to the U.S. as a child, and after graduation from Brown (1893) became a professor of philosophy there (1897–1912). From 1912 to 1924 he was president of Amherst College, and in 1926 headed the Experimental College at the University of Wisconsin, to carry out his progressive ideas of education. He has further practiced these theories in the School for Social Studies, a school for adults founded in San Francisco (1933). His books include: *The Liberal College* (1920); *Freedom and the College* (1923); *The Experimental College* (1932); and *What Does America Mean?* (1935).

MELISH, John (1771–1822), born in Scotland, traveled extensively through the U.S., where he settled in 1809. His *Travels in the United States* (1812) was an attempt to promote emigration and was hailed by reviewers as a fair depiction of American life. The maps he drew for this work led him into cartography, and he next published *A Military and Topographical Atlas of the United States* (1813). His other works include statistical and geographical accounts of the U.S. and *Information and Advice to Emigrants to the United States* (1819).

MELLEN, Grenville (1799–1841), Maine author, whose books include *Sad Tales and Glad Tales* (1828), published under the pseudonym Reginald Reverie, showing the influence of Irving but foreshadowing the short story form as developed by Hawthorne and Poe. His verse, in *The Martyr's Triumph* (1833), was strongly influenced by Byron.

***Mellichampe,** a Legend of the Santee,* Revolutionary romance by Simms (q.v.) published in 1836. It follows *The Partisan* in point of time, but is not a sequel.

Blonay, a hideous half-breed, hates the rebel Humphries for having killed his mother, and joins the Tory soldiers under Barsfield. Ernest Mellichampe, young son of the rebel who seized Barsfield's plantation, seeks to circumvent the machinations of Barsfield and Blonay. In the ensuing raids, Ernest is captured. Barsfield plots to have Ernest escape, in order to have the pleasure of killing him, but Blonay reveals the plot, after being imprisoned by Humphries in a hollow tree, because he remembers the kind treatment given him by Ernest's beloved, Janet Berkeley. In the unsuccessful attempt to carry out his plan, Barsfield is killed, as are Blonay and Ernest's companion, the scout Thumbscrew Witherspoon.

MELLON, Andrew William (1855–1937), Pittsburgh capitalist, associate of Henry C. Frick and others, enlarged his inherited fortune by banking and stock manipulations in coke, steel, aluminum, and oil. One of the wealthiest men in the U.S., he served as secretary of the treasury under Harding, Coolidge, and Hoover, and is noted for his conservative policy of taxation, which favored large fortunes and corporate industry. He served also as ambassador to England (1932–3). At the time of his death he was the subject of an investigation for federal tax evasion, but he was posthumously exonerated. He donated his valuable collection of paint-

ings and sculpture to the U.S., together with funds for the establishment of a national art gallery in Washington,D.C., which was opened in 1941.

Melting Pot, phrase commonly used to signify the mixture and assimilation of different races that have immigrated to the U.S. An early suggestion of the phrase occurs in Crèvecœur's essay, 'What is an American?' It is used as the title of a play by Israel Zangwill, the 19th-century English author.

MELVILLE, HERMAN (1819–91), was born in New York City, a descendant of English and Dutch colonial families in whom he took great pride. His father, a cultivated gentleman, underwent financial reverses, entered bankruptcy, and died when Herman was 12 years old. The boy's mother, left virtually destitute with seven other children, seems from the portrait of Mrs.Glendinning in *Pierre* to have been an imperious, unsympathetic woman. His schooling ended when he was 15, and, after clerking in a New York bank, working in his brother's fur and cap store, farming, and teaching, he shipped as a cabin-boy to Liverpool (1837). This voyage, described in *Redburn*, was both romantic and harrowing, and ingrained in him a love for the sea. Upon his return, he again taught school in upstate New York, until he sailed on the whaler *Acushnet* for the South Seas (Jan. 1841). The 18-month voyage provided a factual basis for his later novel, *Moby-Dick*. When he tired of whaling, he jumped ship at the Marquesas (July 1842) with a companion, Richard Tobias Greene, and lived for a month in the islands, as he later described in *Typee* and *Mardi*. From the savages who were holding him captive in the valley of Typee, he escaped on an Australian trader, from which he deserted at Papeete (Sept. 1842). In Tahiti he worked for a time as a field laborer, studying the island life that he later depicted in *Omoo*. He left Tahiti on a whaler, and at Honolulu enlisted as an ordinary seaman on the frigate *United States* (Aug. 1843). His life aboard the man-of-war until his discharge at Boston (Oct. 1844) is the basis of *White-Jacket*. Having completed his education in what he later termed the only Harvard and Yale that were open to him, he returned home to begin fashioning novels from his experiences, and to enter literary society in New York and Boston. His first five books, *Typee* (q.v.,1846), *Omoo* (q.v., 1847), *Mardi* (q.v.,1849), *Redburn* (q.v., 1849), and *White-Jacket* (q.v.,1850), won him fame and a wide following. He became a member of the literary circle of the Duyckinck brothers, who opened a new world of literature to him through their great libraries. In 1849 he made a trip to England to arrange for foreign publication, and visited Paris. The following year, with his wife, whom he had married in 1847, he moved to the Massachusetts farm that was his home for the next 13 years. Here he formed his friendship with his neighbor Hawthorne, who became his confidant after he outgrew the Duyckinck set of New York literati. His greatest work, *Moby-Dick* (q.v.,1851), was dedicated to Hawthorne, and it is worth noting that the tortured novel *Pierre* (q.v.,1852) was published at the same time as Hawthorne's *Blithedale Romance*, since both deal with idealists who are crushed in their attempts to pursue the ways of heaven upon earth. Melville's popularity, which began to wane with the publication of *Moby-Dick*, was entirely lost through the confused metaphysics and iconoclasm of *Pierre*, for the public's preference was always for his early exotic romances. Opportunity for revaluation was lost when a fire at his publishers' (1853) destroyed the plates of his books and most of the unsold copies. Hawthorne's removal to Concord deprived him of his last great stimulus, and from this time he drew farther within himself in his tireless search for a key to the universal mystery. *Israel Potter* (q.v.,1855), the story of the Revolutionary soldier, was a weak historical romance, but it was followed by Melville's finest achievements in short fiction, *The Piazza Tales* (q.v.,1856), which included 'Bartleby the Scrivener,' 'Benito Cereno,' and 'The Encantadas' (qq.v.). After *The Confidence Man* (q.v.,1857), an abortive satire on the commercialism and selfishness of the age, he wrote no further prose except the novelette *Billy Budd* (q.v.), completed just before his death. *Clarel* (q.v.,1876), a long, involved poem concerned with his search for religious faith, grew out of a tour to the Holy Land (1856). His diary of the trip was published as *Journal Up the Straits* (1935). Melville's other verse includes *Battle-Pieces and Aspects of the War* (q.v.,1866), *John Marr and Other*

Sailors (q.v.,1888), and *Timoleon* (1891), the last containing poems based on his travels in Greece and Italy. *Clarel, John Marr,* and *Timoleon* were privately financed and published in small editions. About 80 short uncollected poems were first printed in the collected edition of his works (1924). Melville's great creative period having perished from public neglect and his own inanition, he attempted to eke out a living by lecturing. Failing to receive a desired consulship, after a trip to San Francisco (1860) on a clipper ship commanded by his brother, he moved to New York City (1863), and three years later received a mean appointment as an outdoor customs inspector, in which position he continued for 19 years. His last years were spent in complete obscurity, and his death passed virtually unnoticed. It was not until 1920 that he was rediscovered by literary scholars, and in subsequent years the previous neglect was atoned for by a general enthusiasm. An elaborate collected edition appeared, including some work left in manuscript; individual works were frequently reprinted; and some magazine sketches were collected as *The Apple-Tree Table* (q.v.,1922). A wealth of scholarly research on his life and writings has been made, and recent students have revaluated his long-obscure literary reputation. He is now considered to be not only an outstanding writer of the sea and a great stylist who mastered both realistic narrative and a rich, rhythmical prose, but also a shrewd social critic and philosopher in his fiction, which, through penetrating allegory and symbolism, ground away at the core of the universe in his search for an Absolute to reconcile heaven and earth.

MEMBRÉ, ZENOBIUS (1645–87), born in France, was sent to Canada (1675) as a Recollect missionary. He accompanied LaSalle to the Illinois River (1679), and again on his exploration to the mouth of the Mississippi (1682). After a short trip with LaSalle to France, he accompanied the explorer to Texas, where he was left with his companions to found a colony and mission, which subsequently perished. His journals, compiled by Chrétien le Clercq in the history of his order in the new world, were published in France (1691) and translated as the *First Establishment of the Faith in New France* (2 vols.,1881).

Memoirs of an American Citizen, The, novel by Robert Herrick (q.v.).

Memoirs of an American Lady, autobiography of Anne Grant (q.v.).

Memoirs of Carwin, the Biloquist, unfinished story by C.B.Brown (q.v.), intended as a sequel to *Wieland* (q.v.). Published serially in the author's *Literary Magazine* (1803–5), it appeared in book form in London (1822) and was reprinted with *Wieland* (1926).

Carwin tells his early history, from his youth on a Pennsylvania farm to his subsequent life in Ireland and Spain, and his discovery and mischievous use of his ventriloquistic powers. He falls under the influence of Ludlowe, a mysterious Irishman, whose social ideas are derived from Godwin. Ludlowe evidently plans to use Carwin as a dupe in unrevealed plots of roguery, which have some connection with his discovery of previously unknown Arctic lands.

Memoranda During the War, Whitman's prose account of his Civil War experiences, published in 1875, and reprinted in *Specimen Days and Collect* (1882).

Men in White, play by Sidney Kingsley (q.v.), produced and published in 1933, and awarded the 1934 Pulitzer Prize. Set in a modern New York hospital, it deals with the work and ideals of doctors, internes, and nurses.

George Ferguson, an ambitious young interne working under the celebrated surgeon Hochberg, so devotes himself to his work that he neglects his wealthy fiancée, Laura Hudson, who consoles herself with plans for a year in Vienna after their approaching marriage. During one of their quarrels, George has what is for him a casual affair with a nurse, Barbara Dennin. Unknown to him, Barbara becomes pregnant, and has an abortion that results in a serious infection. When she is brought to the hospital for an operation, Laura learns of the affair and angrily breaks with George, who determines to sacrifice himself by marrying Barbara, although he does not love her. The girl suddenly dies, and Laura, through Hochberg, finally comes to understand George's attitude. She urges him to continue his work, and promises to share his hardships and ideals after his return from Vienna, where he now goes alone.

Men Without Women, fourteen short

stories by Hemingway (q.v.) published in 1927.

'The Undefeated' tells of the futile heroism of Manuel Garcia, a Spanish bullfighter just released from a hospital, who stubbornly refuses to retire, secures an ill-paid 'nocturnal' engagement, and gives an adequate performance before an unappreciative audience, but is seriously injured and returned to the hospital. 'The Killers' describes the tense atmosphere in a small town lunch-room, when two Chicago gangsters enter to await Ole Andreson, whom they have been paid to murder. He fails to arrive, and they finally leave. Nick, the waiter, goes to Andreson's room, and finds the victim aware of his impending doom, but paralyzed by fear and unwilling to attempt escape. 'Fifty Grand' is the story of a champion prizefighter, Jack Brennan, and his bout with the contender Walcott. The middle-aged champion, worried by his responsibilities, cannot train properly, decides he is bound to lose, and bets $50,000 on his own defeat. He fights well for several rounds, until brutally fouled by his opponent. Insisting that this was an accident, he continues with difficulty, then suddenly ends the matter by an obvious foul on Walcott. ' "It's funny how fast you can think when it means that much money," ' he says.

MENCKEN, H[ENRY] L[OUIS] (1880–), Baltimore journalist, critic, and essayist, began his career on local newspapers in 1899, becoming editor of the *Evening Herald* (1905–6), and thereafter serving on the staff of the *Evening Sun*, during 1916–17 as war correspondent in Germany. He became literary critic of the *Smart Set* (q.v.) in 1908, and was co-editor of this lively periodical with George Jean Nathan (1914–23). His collaboration with Nathan continued during the early years of *The American Mercury* (q.v.), which they founded in 1924, and which Mencken edited until 1933. He is best known for the aggressive iconoclasm of his editorial policies in these magazines, especially during the decade following the First World War, when he exhibited a savagely satirical reaction against the blunders and imperfections of democracy and the cultural gaucheries of the American scene. Although this attitude implied doubt of the ultimate effectiveness of American institutions, he was equally vehement in his denunciation of European patronage of this country, and in his advocacy of an indigenous civilization. His critical views were widely influential, especially in his encouragement of such writers as Dreiser, Lewis, Cabell, and Sherwood Anderson, although he aroused much popular antagonism. He published many books, of which the earliest were the Kiplingesque *Ventures into Verse* (1903) and two critical works, *George Bernard Shaw—His Plays* (1905) and *The Philosophy of Friedrich Nietzsche* (1908). Collaborations with Nathan include two plays, *The Artist* (1912) and *Heliogabalus* (1920); *The American Credo* (1920); and *Europe after* 8:15 (1914), a travel book to which W.H.Wright also contributed. His soundest and most important work of scholarship is *The American Language* (1919, revised '21,'23,'36), a careful and thorough popular discussion of the English language in the U.S., noticing its vital and significant development in this country. Besides the celebrated six series of *Prejudices* (q.v.,1919–27), he has also written introductions and notes for critical editions of Ibsen, Nietzsche, and others; *A Book of Burlesques* (1916); *A Book of Prefaces* (1917); *In Defense of Women* (1918); *Notes on Democracy* (1926); *Treatise on the Gods* (1930); *Making a President* (1932), his accounts of the nominating conventions; *Treatise on Right and Wrong* (1934); and *Happy Days* (1940), an autobiographical narrative of his Baltimore childhood.

Mending Wall, blank verse poem by Robert Frost (q.v.) published in *North of Boston* (1914). Describing the time in early spring when he and a neighboring farmer spend the day in replacing fallen stones on the wall which divides their land, the poet declares,

> Something there is that doesn't love a wall,

and expresses his philosophy of tolerance, generosity, and brotherhood in the contrast between his neighbor's dogmatic 'Good fences make good neighbours' and his own more considered

> Before I built a wall I'd ask to know
> What I was walling in or walling out.

MENKEN, ADAH ISAACS (1835–68), born near New Orleans, began her dramatic career in that city (1857) and married a Cincinnati merchant, Alexander Isaac Menken. Her stage career took her

to New York (1859), where she became a friend of Whitman, O'Brien, and others at the Bohemian rendezvous, Pfaff's. In 1861 she first played her famous title role in Byron's *Mazeppa*, noted for the scene in which, seminude, she was strapped to the back of a wild horse. Her acting in this and other parts made her a favorite, in San Francisco and Virginia City, of the literary group which included Clemens, Harte, and Artemus Ward, and in London of Dickens, Reade, Swinburne, Rossetti, and Burne-Jones, as well as in Paris, where her admirers included Gautier and Dumas *père*. She was meanwhile married three times after leaving Menken, once bigamously to the prizefighter Heenan, and once to Robert Henry Newell. Her adventures became so fabulous that she once declared, 'I never lived with Houston; it was General Jackson and Methuselah, and other big men.' Her poetry, like her life and acting, was rich, garish, and romantic. The rhythms, generally ascribed to the influence of Whitman, seemed to have sprung from the writings of the Hebrew prophets, and the subjects were always passionately autobiographical. Her poems were collected as *Infelicia* (1868).

Mennonites, members of a Protestant sect that originated in Friesland in the 16th century, deriving its name from the Dutch religious reformer, Menno Simons (1492–1559). They accept the Bible as their sole rule of faith, wish to restore apostolic Christianity, administer baptism to adult believers only, are ardently pacifistic, and attempt to live apart from other groups. Suffering persecution in Europe, they emigrated to America, first settling in Pennsylvania (1683) and spreading throughout the South and Middle West. Their numbers have greatly increased, although they are divided into several branches. One of these is the Amish, followers of Jacob Amman, who separated from the orthodox body in the 17th century.

Mercedes of Castile, novel by Cooper (q.v.).

MERGENTHALER, OTTMAR (1854–99), German-born inventor, came to the U.S. (1871) and perfected the linotype machine that bears his name (1885), which was first used to set type for a daily newspaper by the *New-York Tribune* (1886).

Merle, MADAME, character in *The Portrait of a Lady* (q.v.).

Merlin, blank verse dramatic narrative by E.A.Robinson (q.v.) published in 1917. It belongs with *Lancelot* and *Tristram* (qq.v.) in the author's Arthurian trilogy.

The wizard Merlin abandons worldly power to spend an idyllic decade with his mistress, Vivian, at Broceliande, in Brittany. At Camelot, meanwhile, Arthur is troubled by the schemes of his illegitimate son Modred, and by the infidelity of Guinevere with his trusted knight Lancelot. His rule is threatened by civil strife, and he summons Merlin to him, chiding him for having 'gone down smiling to the smaller life,' and asking him to correct the evils of the time. Merlin replies that he can prophesy but not control events, and that he can only advise Arthur to consider his kingdom his queen, since Guinevere is fated to love Lancelot, while England's future depends on Arthur. Still doubting and grieving, the king allows Merlin to return to Broceliande, but there the wizard and his mistress find their blissful preoccupation with each other vanished. He acknowledges that he has 'seen too far' and 'known too much,' and they sadly part. Merlin returns to Camelot, 'the stricken city' that he cannot save. With Dagonet, the fool who is so bitterly wise, he contemplates the ruin of the kingdom, and they find 'a groping way Down through the gloom together.'

MERRILL, STUART FITZRANDOLPH (1863–1915), lived most of his life in France, whose language he used for all of his writing except *Pastels in Prose* (1890), short translations of French authors. *Les Gammes* (1887) and *Les Fastes* (1891) show the influence of Wilde, the pre-Raphaelite school, and William Morris's socialism, and he sympathized with and influenced the symbolist movement. His greatest work was *Une Voix dans la Foule* (1909), a stirring poetic plea for the oppressed and wretched.

Merrimac, see *Monitor.*

Merriwell, FRANK, character in the juvenile stories by W.G.Patten (q.v.).

Merry Mount, settlement at Mount Wollaston (now Quincy), Massachusetts, founded in 1625 by Captain Wollaston and Thomas Morton (q.v.). When the captain withdrew to Virginia with his indented white servants, Morton took possession of the site, which was renamed Ma-re-Mount. There, according to Brad-

ford, the Anglican settlers established a 'schoole of athisme,' whose members revived 'the beastly practices of the madd Bachanalians.' The frolicking of the colonists about a Maypole and their trading of weapons to the Indians caused Myles Standish to be sent to seize Morton, who was transferred to England under arrest (1628). Although the colony was dispersed, several 'revellers' lingered on. Morton's *New English Canaan* (q.v., 1637) presents his version of events, while Bradford and John Winthrop represent the Puritan and Separatist views in their histories. Hawthorne's 'The Maypole of Merrymount' (q.v.,1837) is an allegorical tale, and other literary treatments include Motley's romance, *Merrymount* (1849), and the operatic version by Howard Hanson and R.L.Stokes, *Merrymount* (1934).

Merrymount Press, see *Updike,D.B.*

Merton of the Movies, novel by H.L. Wilson (q.v.).

Message to Garcia, A, essay by Elbert Hubbard (q.v.) published in 1899. It recounts an incident in the Spanish-American War, when Lieutenant Andrew S. Rowan was sent by McKinley to meet General Juan Garcia, head of the Cuban insurgent forces, in order to ascertain what help was needed by Garcia against the Spanish. Because of the heroic aspects of Rowan's persistence during his difficult journey, and the inspirational moral drawn from it by Hubbard, the essay became tremendously popular. Its circulation to 1940 is estimated at 40,000,000 copies, many of which have appeared in special editions issued by industrialists to promote efficiency among their employes. It also served as regulation equipment to soldiers on both sides in the Russo-Japanese War.

Messer Marco Polo, romance by Donn-Byrne (q.v.).

METACOMET, see *King Philip.*

Metamora, or the Last of the Wampanoags, romantic tragedy by J.A.Stone (q.v.), produced in 1829 and revised for Edwin Forrest by R.M.Bird (1836). It deals with the defeat of King Philip, depicted as a noble savage, at the hands of unscrupulous English colonists.

Metaphysical verse, critical term applied to poetry that deals with ideas. Specifically, because of its association with such 17th-century English poets as Donne, Crashaw, Cowley, Vaughan, and Herbert, it is used to describe poetry that, like theirs, conveys a direct emotional apprehension of thought, employing a psychological analysis of love and religion, using the conceit to bring into eccentric and startling juxtaposition the contradictions of life, and usually placing less stress upon conventional form than upon subtlety of thought. In the U.S., such 19th-century poets as Emerson, Jones Very, and Emily Dickinson are considered to belong in this category. Although there is no definite metaphysical school in American poetry, many contemporary authors have been influenced by the revival of interest in the 17th-century poets, for which T.S.Eliot has been mainly responsible. Besides Eliot, these include Cummings, Louise Bogan, Genevieve Taggard, MacLeish, Horace Gregory, Aiken, Marianne Moore, W.C. Williams, Wallace Stevens, Elinor Wylie, Leonie Adams, J.C.Ransom, and Allen Tate.

Methodism, the doctrines, polity, and worship of those religious organizations developed from the evangelistic teaching of John Wesley (1703–91), his brother Charles, and George Whitefield (q.v.). As students at Oxford, they conducted meetings for religious exercises according to such precise rules that they were dubbed Methodists. They accepted the teachings of the Church of England, and, although influenced by the Moravians, intended no more than a revival of personal religion, emphasizing the immediacy of the Holy Spirit. Their zeal led the Anglican churches to be closed to them, but they carried on their evangelistic work in open-air meetings. No legal constitution was adopted until 1784, and it was not until 1791 that they broke from the Church of England to found the Wesleyan Methodist church, known in America as the Methodist Episcopal church. There have been many schisms on matters of government, and in America also on issues raised by the Civil War. The Wesleys visited Georgia in 1735, and Whitefield made many visits, beginning in 1738–9, when he was a leader of the Great Awakening. The beginnings of the organized church are attributed to the preacher Philip Embury, who arrived in 1776. Francis Asbury was sent to America by Wesley in 1771, and became one of

the church's first American bishops (1784). The three main branches of the church, having some 7,000,000 members in the U.S., were united in 1938.

Metropolitan Museum of Art, largest and most important art museum in the U.S., situated in New York City, was incorporated in 1870, moved into its present building in Central Park in 1880, and has frequently been enlarged. It contains collections of all types of art from all countries and all periods, but, appropriately for an American museum, American paintings occupy more gallery space than those of any foreign school. One wing is devoted to American decorative arts from the 17th century through the first quarter of the 19th. The Cloisters, a branch housing European and medieval art, is located in Fort Tryon Park in a building donated by John D. Rockefeller,Jr.

Metropolitan Opera Company, in New York City, was founded in 1883, and since 1893 has been housed in its present building, the earlier structure having been destroyed by fire. Since its inception, the organization has been the most important influence on operatic tastes in the U.S., and it has been instrumental in developing the talents of numerous singers, conductors, and stage directors, as well as bringing nearly every important opera singer of the world to its stage. Its policies have been extremely conservative, and few American compositions have been presented. However, under the direction of such musicians as Toscanini, Hertz, and Damrosch, the *premières* have been given of such operas as Puccini's *Girl of the Golden West* (q.v.,1910), Victor Herbert's *Natoma* (1911), Parker's *Mona* (1912), Damrosch's *Cyrano de Bergerac* (1913), De Koven's *Canterbury Pilgrims* (1917), Taylor's *The King's Henchman* (1927), and *Peter Ibbetson* (1931), and Hanson's *Merry Mount* (1934).

Mettle of the Pasture, The, novel by J.L.Allen (q.v.).

METZ, CHRISTIAN, see *Amana Community.*

Meuse-Argonne, see *Argonne.*

Mexican War, mainly precipitated by the annexation of Texas by the U.S. (Dec. 1845), but other contributing factors included the claims of U.S.citizens against Mexico, the desire to acquire California, and the ambition of imperialists for an increase in slave-holding territory. Hostilities began in April 1846, when the Mexicans resisted an advance at the disputed boundary of southern Texas by American troops under Zachary Taylor. War was declared the following month, when President Polk announced that U.S.territory had been invaded. Santa Anna, temporarily President of Mexico, led his country's forces, while various U.S.expeditions were led by Sloat, Stockton, and Frémont in California; Kearney in New Mexico; Taylor, Wool, and Doniphan (q.v.) in northern Mexico; and Winfield Scott (q.v.), the commander-in-chief, who captured Vera Cruz (March 1847) and led a long inland march to Mexico City, which capitulated after the Battle of Chapultepec (Sept. 1847). By the treaty of Guadalupe-Hidalgo (March 1848), Mexico ceded two-fifths of her territory to the U.S., receiving in return an indemnity of $15,000,000 and the cancellation of certain American claims. Approximately 13,237 enlisted men died as a result of the war.

MIANTONOMO (*d.*1643), with his uncle, Canonicus, ruled the Narragansett Indians of Rhode Island. Although he had aided the whites in the Pequot War, he was forced by the English of Connecticut to make a one-sided peace with Uncas (q.v.), in order to antagonize Roger Williams, who was anathema to other colonial leaders, and who had received his territory through Canonicus and Miantonomo. When Uncas broke the treaty by capturing Miantonomo, delivering him to the Connecticut colonists, they returned him to Uncas to be killed within the latter's jurisdiction. Miantonomo is mentioned in the letters of Williams and in Winthrop's journal, and is the subject of a biography by W.L.Stone.

MICHELSON, ALBERT ABRAM (1852–1931), Prussian-born, American-educated physicist, was a professor at the University of Chicago (1892–1931). He is famous for his accurate measurement of the speed of light, upon which Einstein founded his theory of relativity. Michelson's publications included *Velocity of Light* (1902) and *Light Waves and Their Uses* (1903). He was the first American to receive the Nobel Prize (1907).

Michigan, UNIVERSITY OF, founded at Detroit (1817), was moved to Ann Arbor

(1837). It was the first state university and the first to be coeducational. Students include F.P.Adams (1899–1900) and James Oliver Curwood (1898–1900), the graduates include J.R.Angell (1889), Stewart Edward White (1895), Walter Pitkin (1900), Ernest S. Bates (1902) and Avery Hopwood (1905).

Mickey Mouse, character in the animated cartoons of Walt Disney (q.v.).

Mid-Channel, autobiographical narrative by Ludwig Lewisohn (q.v.).

Middle Border, the prairie region of Minnesota, Wisconsin, Nebraska, and the Dakotas, which was an important agricultural frontier (*c.*1870–1900), when Scandinavian, Slavic, and Irish immigrants settled there to establish one of the great grain-raising areas of the U.S. Authors who have written of the region and its people during the frontier period include Garland, Rölvaag, Willa Cather, and Bess Streeter Aldrich.

Middle Colonies, name applied to colonial New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, and sometimes Delaware, which now form the region known as the Atlantic states or Eastern states (q.v.).

Middle West, central agricultural area of the U.S., stretching westward from the Ohio River to the Rocky Mountains, and approximately inclusive of the Prairie and Plains regions (qq.v.).

Middle Years, The, title of a short story and of an autobiographical fragment, both by Henry James (q.v.).

Middletown, social study by Robert and Helen Lynd (q.v.).

Midland, The, see *Frontier.*

Midnight Ride of Paul Revere, The, see *Paul Revere's Ride.*

MIFFLIN, Lloyd (1846–1921), Pennsylvania poet who devoted himself chiefly to the sonnet form. Among his many volumes are *The Slopes of Helicon* (1898); *Echoes of Greek Idyls* (1899), versions of Bion, Moschus, and Bacchylides; *The Fields of Dawn* (1900); *The Fleeing Nymph* (1905), a long blank verse poem; and *Flower and Thorn* (1909).

Mike Fink, see *Fink, Mike.*

MILES, George Henry (1824–71), Maryland author, whose plays included *Mohammed, the Arabian Prophet* (published 1850), a blank verse romantic tragedy awarded a prize by Edwin Forrest, but produced by another actor (1851); *Hernando de Soto* (1852), another romantic drama; and *Señor Valiente* (1859), a light comedy. His religious novels and *Christine* (1866), a collection of verse, are marked by his strong Catholicism.

Miles Wallingford, romance by Cooper (q.v.), published in 1844 as a sequel to *Afloat and Ashore* (q.v.).

Miles believes that his childhood sweetheart, Lucy Hardinge, has fallen in love with Andrew Drewett. Intending to remain a bachelor, he agrees with a cousin to a system of wills whereby each is heir to the other's property. Then, with his friend Marble and the Negro Neb, he sails for Hamburg in his ship, the *Dawn,* which is arrested by the British for carrying French goods, while many of the crew are impressed into the British service. Anxious to reach his destination so that he may pay off the mortgage on his estate, Miles regains control of the *Dawn,* only to have it captured by the French. After a second escape, the ship is wrecked in a storm, and Miles, Marble, and Neb are rescued by a British warship. Miles is put in irons and his friends are impressed into service, but after several months they manage to escape and return to New York. There Miles learns that his cousin is dead, and the estate has been acquired by a distant relative, Daggett. Lucy is unmarried, while her brother Rupert is pursuing a spendthrift career with the money willed him by Miles's sister Grace, who loved him before his marriage to Emily Merton. Daggett claims a debt from Miles, who is placed in prison until Lucy and her father arrange bail. Finding the necessary documents, Miles dispossesses the villainous Daggett, marries Lucy, and settles down as a patriarchal landowner.

MILLAY, Edna St.Vincent (1892–), born in Maine, graduated from Vassar (1917), having already won fame as an important contemporary poet with the publication of 'Renascence' (q.v., 1912), the title poem of her first volume, *Renascence and Other Poems* (1917), which exhibited technical virtuosity, startling freshness, and an intense hunger for beauty. *A Few Figs from Thistles* (1920) showed that, though the disillusion of the post-war years was crowding in upon her,

she was attempting to maintain gaiety by an almost consciously cynical flippancy. With *Second April* (1921), she revealed a more stable and mature emotional tone, which, like her use of Elizabethan words and tight metrical forms to express modern ideas, has marked her subsequent volumes. While living in Greenwich Village, she became associated with the Provincetown Players, for whom she wrote *The Princess Marries the Page* (1918, published 1932), *Aria da Capo* (1919, published 1921), and *Two Slatterns and a King* (1921), all one-act satirical fantasies. *The Lamp and the Bell* (1921), written for a Vassar commencement, is a 5-act poetic drama dealing with the strong affection between two girls during medieval days. *The Harp-Weaver and Other Poems* (1923), which was awarded the Pulitzer Prize, is a volume of poems distinguished for its sonnets, which shows a further deepening from the earlier arch attitude to a more disillusioned bitterness. Her mature technical ability, particularly in the sonnet form, her lyric gift, and singular directness in expressing personal experiences were exhibited in further volumes: *The Buck in the Snow* (1928); *Fatal Interview* (1931), a sonnet cycle in the Elizabethan manner; *Wine from These Grapes* (1934); *Conversation at Midnight* (1937), a dramatic narrative showing her increasing interest in contemporary social problems; and *Huntsman, What Quarry?* (1939). Other works include *Distressing Dialogues* (1924), a volume of light, sophisticated prose sketches, written under the pseudonym Nancy Boyd, and *The King's Henchman* (1927), the libretto of an opera by Deems Taylor, which is set in Saxon England and is concerned with the love of the king's betrothed and his thane.

Millenial Church, see *Shakers.*

MILLER, CAROLINE (1903–), Georgia novelist, whose first book, *Lamb in His Bosom* (1933), a story of pioneer life in back country Georgia during the Civil War, was awarded the Pulitzer Prize in 1934.

MILLER, JOAQUIN, pseudonym of Cincinnatus Hiner (or Heine) Miller (1841?–1913), adopted at first as a nickname since his earliest writing was a defense of the Mexican bandit, Joaquin Murietta. His early biography is cloaked in romantic exaggeration, so that it can only be said that he was born in Liberty, Indiana, supposedly went West in a covered wagon, lived with the Indians in Oregon, was at various times a horse thief, Portland lawyer, pony-express messenger, newspaper editor, and Indian fighter, before turning to the poetry published as *Specimens* (1868) and *Joaquin et al* (1869). He then drifted to San Francisco, to enter literary society, and later to London where his private printing of *Pacific Poems* (1870) and *Songs of the Sierras* (1871) brought him instant acclaim from the English, who were fascinated by the discovery of a seemingly true frontier poet. He was hailed as 'the Byron of Oregon' and dramatically attempted to live up to his title. He soon returned to America, where his energetic rhetorical poems continued to appear, although in course of time his general bombast, coupled with his imitativeness and metrical weakness, caused him to lose the acclaim he first received. *The Danites of the Sierras* (1877), a Mormon play, was the most popular of his several dramas, and besides several novels he wrote the autobiographical *Life among the Modocs* (1873) and *Memorie and Rime* (1884).

Millerites, religious sect more properly called Second Adventists. These followers of the New York farmer, William Miller (1782–1849), believed in the physical second advent of Christ in 1843. After the Day of Judgment failed to arrive that year, the date was set for October 23, 1844. Even after the second disappointment many followers remained faithful, continuing to anticipate a second coming. In 1916 the sect had more than 112,000 followers. Another group, the Seventh Day Adventists, holding to a similar belief in Christ's second advent, adopted Saturday as the sabbath. This group now has some 133,000 members. Edward Eggleston's *The End of the World* is one of several novels dealing with the Millerites and other works on the sect include those of Jane M. Parker.

MILLIKAN, ROBERT ANDREWS (1868–), Illinois-born physicist, professor at the University of Chicago (1896–1921) and the California Institute of Technology (1921–). He was awarded the Nobel Prize in physics (1923) for his work in isolating the electron and in photoelectric research. His books include: *Mechanics, Molecular Physics and Heat* (1901), *Electricity, Sound and Light*

(1908), *The Electron* (1917, revised 1925), *Science and Life* (1923), *The Evolution of Science and Religion* (1927), *Science and the New Civilization* (1930), and *Time, Matter and Values* (1932).

MILLIS, WALTER (1899–), New York journalist, whose books include: *The Martial Spirit* (1931), a history of the Spanish-American War; *Road to War* (1935), a study of the steps leading to the entrance of the U.S. into the First World War; *Viewed without Alarm* (1937), a survey of the contemporary European scene; and *Why Europe Fights* (1940).

MILLS, CLARK (1815–83), self-taught sculptor, chiefly distinguished for his creation of the first equestrian statue in America, *General Jackson* (1853). He had never seen his subject or any other equestrian statue, but the virtuosity of the rearing horse was so pleasing that Congress voted an additional $20,000 to the original payment of $12,000.

MILLS, ROBERT (1781–1855), Charleston-born architect, under the tutelage of Jefferson and Latrobe became a leader in the Greek Revival (q.v.). Jackson appointed him architect of public buildings in Washington (1836), in which capacity he designed the Treasury Building, the Patent Office, the Post Office, and the Washington Monument (q.v.). He also designed the Washington Monument in Baltimore, a colossal Greek column surmounted by a statue of Washington.

Milly Theale, heroine of *The Wings of the Dove* (q.v.).

Mingo, name applied by the Delaware Indians and their allies to the Iroquois (q.v.) and cognate tribes, and more particularly, in colonial times, by the Americans to a detached band of Iroquois on the upper Ohio River in Pennsylvania. In the *Leather-Stocking Tales*, the name is always associated with cunning, treachery, and diabolical ferocity. Magua the Huron, in *The Last of the Mohicans*, is called a Mingo.

Mingo, and Other Sketches in Black and White, four local-color tales by Joel Chandler Harris (q.v.) published in 1884.

'Mingo: A Sketch of Life in Middle Georgia' is the story of the Negro servant Mingo, who remains faithful to his young mistress even when she marries into a 'poor white' family. After her early death, following the loss of her husband in the Civil War, Mingo remains to care for her child and manage the small farm of her coarse though well-intentioned mother-in-law. 'At Teague Poteet's' is a novelette concerned with the Georgia backwoodsman, moonshiner, and Civil War draft evader, Teague Poteet; his marriage to Puss Pringle; and their charming daughter Sis, who falls in love with handsome Philip Woodward, secret agent sent to investigate the moonshiners. Woodward resigns his commission, and, after allaying suspicion by helping the mountaineers to outwit federal officers, marries Sis and takes her to live in the city, to the sorrow of her parents, who are however 'proud that Sis was going to marry Somebody.'

Minister's Black Veil, The, parable by Hawthorne (q.v.) published in *The Token* (1836) and in *Twice-Told Tales* (1837).

The Reverend Mr.Hooper, a New England Puritan minister, appears one Sunday with his face covered by a black veil. Refusing to explain his action to his terrified congregation, or to his fiancée, who leaves him, he goes through life concealing his face, saying only that the veil is a symbol of the curtain that hides every man's heart and makes him a stranger even to his friend, his lover, and his God.

Minister's Charge, The, novel by Howells (q.v.).

Minister's Wooing, The, novel by Mrs. Stowe (q.v.) published in 1859. It is set in Newport, a New England town, shortly after the Revolution.

Mary Scudder has been educated by her widowed mother to follow the strict orthodoxy of their pastor, Dr. Hopkins. Her cousin James Marvyn loves her, but, when she refuses his proposal of marriage because he has no religious faith, he goes to sea and is reported to have perished in a shipwreck. Mary becomes engaged to Dr.Hopkins, although he is much older than she. Even when James writes that he has been converted by a miraculous escape from death, and then comes to resume his courtship, she announces that she will keep her promise to marry the minister. She becomes acquainted with a charming Frenchwoman, Mme de Frontignac, who is wooed by Aaron Burr, but Mary's appeal to the statesman's honor prevents a scandal. Miss Prissy Diamond, the friendly dressmaker, and Candace, the devout Negro servant, encourage James's

suit, and, when Dr.Hopkins learns their true feelings, he sacrifices his own happiness, making possible the marriage of the young couple.

Miniver Cheevy, poem in iambic tetrameter quatrains, by E.A.Robinson (q.v.), published in *The Town Down the River* (1910).

This satirical portrait of Miniver, a worldly failure in Tilbury Town, shows him to be unaware of his personal inadequacies, consoling himself with a romantic melancholy that he carries to absurd lengths. 'Born too late,' he 'sighed for what was not,' dreaming of 'medieval grace' and 'the days of old.' Thus his life consists of futile yearnings and frustration, to no end except that 'Miniver coughed, and called it fate, And kept on drinking.'

Minnehaha, character in *Hiawatha* (q.v.). The name is first mentioned in Mary Eastman's *Life and Legends of the Sioux* (1849), as the Indian name for a waterfall near Minneapolis.

MINOT, George Richards (1758–1802), Massachusetts jurist, author of *The History of the Insurrection in Massachusetts in the Year* 1786 (1788), a hostile account of Shays's Rebellion. He continued Hutchinson's *History of Massachusetts Bay* (2 vols.,1798, 1803), but his work was eclipsed by the posthumous publication of Hutchinson's own continuation (1828).

Minstrel show, type of variety entertainment presenting white men in blackface performances of Negro songs, dances, and jokes, originated in the U.S. and was extremely popular here and in Europe during the 19th century. T.D.Rice has been called 'the father of American minstrelsy' because of his blackface performance of the song 'Jim Crow' (q.v., 1830) and his subsequent success in programs of Negro songs and dances. Dan Emmett (q.v.) was another early minstrel. The most famous troupe was organized by E.P.Christy (q.v.,1842). Stephen Foster wrote for Christy's Minstrels, publishing under Christy's name such popular minstrel songs as 'Oh! Susanna!,' 'Uncle Ned', *Old Folks at Home*, *Camptown Races*, and *Massa's in de Cold, Cold Ground*. Among the works of Dan Emmett were *Dixie* (q.v.) and *Old Dan Tucker*. By the middle of the century, the program of the minstrel show had become traditional. A row of performers was seated in a semicircle on the stage, with an interlocutor in the center, and two 'end men' called 'Mr.Tambo' and 'Mr.Bones,' who played the tambourine and bone castanets. These three maintained a running dialogue of Negro jokes, while the entire company presented songs, dances, and farces, and performed on the banjo, fiddle, and percussion instruments. The minstrel show was an important influence in the development of Negro music and jazz (q.v.) and helped to form the vaudeville and dramatic conceptions of Negro humor and character.

MINUIT, Peter (1580–1638), probably of French or Walloon descent, was director of the colony of New Netherland (q.v.,1626–31). For 60 guilders ($24) he bought Manhattan Island from the Indians, a transaction that gave an air of legality to the accomplished occupation. He was recalled and dismissed after a dispute with his secretary. In 1638 he headed the Swedish colonists who founded New Sweden (q.v.). He and his ship were lost in a hurricane the same year, while on a commercial trip to the Island of St. Christopher.

Minutemen, colonial militia or armed citizens who agreed before the Revolutionary War to be ready for action in a minute. Although applied to other patriotic colonial forces, the name is generally used in reference to the Massachusetts militia.

Miriam, heroine of *The Marble Faun* (q.v.).

Miriam Coffin, novel by Joseph C. Hart (q.v.).

Mirror, see *New-York Mirror.*

Miss Leslie's Magazine (1843–6), periodical of literature and fashions for women, whose contributors included N.P. Willis, Mrs.Sigourney, Park Benjamin, and Longfellow. The name was changed to *The Ladies' Magazine* (1844), and to *Arthur's Ladies' Magazine* (1845), before it was merged with *Godey's Lady's Book.*

Miss Lulu Bett, novel by Zona Gale (q.v.) published in 1920. Her dramatization (1920) won the Pulitzer Prize for 1921.

Lulu Bett, a spinster, earns her keep by serving as the household drudge in the Wisconsin home of her sister, Ina Deacon,

and her husband Dwight. She is scorned because she is plain and unmarried, and the family's conception of her is thoroughly upset when she marries Dwight's worldly brother, Ninian. When Ninian tells her that he does not know whether his first wife is dead, Lulu returns to the banal and complacent Deacons, who taunt her further, insisting that Ninian has tired of her. Not willing to give her the satisfaction of telling the neighbors that he really loved her, for fear that the scandal of the bigamy will hurt the family, they force her to make the neighbors believe that she has left her husband because of her inability to be a good wife. The play was presented with two endings. In both of them, Lulu rouses her courage to show the Deacons their selfish meanness, but in the first Ninian finds his former wife dead and comes back to claim Lulu, while in the second she leaves without solace, to find her own place in the world.

Miss Ravenel's Conversion from Secession to Loyalty, novel by J.W.De Forest (q.v.), published in 1867.

At the outbreak of the Civil War, Dr. Ravenel, a scholar who is loyal to the Union, leaves New Orleans for 'New Boston' (New Haven, Connecticut). With his daughter Lillie, whose sympathies lie with the aristocratic South, he grows concerned at the entrance into the girl's life of two suitors: Edward Colburne, an intelligent but modest New Boston lawyer; and Lieutenant-Colonel John Carter, a Virginia-born soldier in the Union army, whose dashing manners and aristocratic tendencies match her ideal of Southern manhood. Dr. Ravenel prefers Colburne, an abolitionist like himself, and fears Carter's reputation for dissipation and lack of scruples. Meanwhile Lillie's conversion has begun, and she has a vital interest in the Northern success when Colburne and Carter participate in the capture of New Orleans. Soon the Ravenels return to their old home, and Carter gives up his life of drink and mistresses to court Lillie and intrigue for promotion. After their marriage, he remains faithful for a time, but during a trip to Washington has a secret affair with her gay young aunt, Mrs.Larue. This ends with the birth of Lillie's son, but Dr.Ravenel, now engaged in the education of freed slaves, learns of Carter's infidelity and informs his daughter, who leaves her husband shortly before he dies as a hero in battle. At the close of the war, Lillie is converted to abolitionism, through her return to New Boston and her marriage to Colburne.

Mission Indians, general term applied to Indians of many tribes, chiefly the Yuma and Shoshone, who were Christianized and gathered into communities by the Spanish Franciscans in southern California (1776–1831). They were driven out of the missions by the Mexicans, and were neglected by the Americans until after the Civil War, when, largely at the instigation of Helen Hunt Jackson, the government took steps to care for them. They are now located on 30 small reservations in southern California. *Ramona* and *Isidro* are romantic depictions of the life of the Mission Indians.

Mississippi Bubble, name applied to the disastrous financial scheme of the Compagnie d'Occident, commonly called the Mississippi Company. This was organized by John Law (1671–1729), a Scottish banker, who in 1717 won for it exclusive commercial privileges .n the Mississippi Valley and the Louisiana Territory. Control of all French colonial trade was secured in 1719, by the addition of organizations to develop China, Africa, and the Indies. Law, who had become a director of the French state bank, controlled French finances and revenues and assumed the public debt. The inflation of paper money by which shares were purchased, in a period of unbounded speculative excitement, led to a panic and ended in financial ruin when redemption in specie was prohibited by Law's decree (1720). Literature about the episode includes Emerson Hough's novel, *The Mississippi Bubble* (1902).

Mississippi River, principal river of the U.S. and one of the largest inland navigation systems in the world, drains the great central basin between the Appalachian and Rocky Mountains. Having its source in northern Minnesota, and flowing through the center of the Prairie and Southern states (qq.v.), the river has for its chief tributaries the Missouri and Ohio Rivers, from which each year it carries half a billion tons of sediment to the Louisiana delta and the Gulf of Mexico, as well as annual flood waters that sometimes inundate large areas. Dominating the economic life of the South and Middle

West until the Civil War and the coming of the railroads, the Mississippi was the focus of a distinctive type of American culture during the glamorous period of steamboats and showboats (1811–61), whose most celebrated literary interpreter has been Mark Twain, especially in *Huckleberry Finn* and *Life on the Mississippi*. Other writers on the Mississippi include those associated with its principal cities, St.Louis and New Orleans (qq.v.). Its earlier history included discovery by De Soto, domination by the French following the explorations by Jolliet, Marquette, La Salle, and Iberville, control by Spain (1763–1800), settlement and exploitation of its valley by the U.S. after the Louisiana Purchase (1803), and the pre-steamboat period of keelboating whose typical folk hero was Mike Fink (q.v.). By 1860 there were more than 1,000 steamboats on the river, helping to tie the Middle West to the South. During the Civil War, the Northern attempts to gain control were finally successful through the siege of Vicksburg and the capture of New Orleans. The river is still of primary importance to U.S.agriculture and trade, both as a constructive and destructive force, which popular conceptions of its power have included the Negro's personification of 'Ol' Man River' and the Indian's of the 'Father of Waters.'

Missouri Compromise, championed by Henry Clay, was passed by Congress (1820) to resolve conflict over the extension of slavery to newly admitted states. To maintain equal representation of Northern and Southern factions in the Senate, it was agreed that Maine and Missouri should be simultaneously admitted to the Union, the first prohibiting slavery and the second allowing it. The compromise measure also stipulated the prohibition of slavery in the remainder of the Louisiana Purchase north of 36° 30′. It was repealed (1854).

Mrs.Partington, character in the stories by B.P.Shillaber (q.v.).

Mrs.Wiggs of the Cabbage Patch, story by Alice Hegan Rice (q.v.), published in 1901 under her maiden name, Alice Caldwell Hegan.

Mrs.Nancy Wiggs, who lives in a ramshackle house in the 'Cabbage Patch,' a city tenement section along the railroad tracks, is a middle-aged widow with two sons, Jim and Billy, and three daughters, Asia, Australia, and Europena. They live amid hardships and dire poverty, but 'the substance of her philosophy lay in keeping the dust off her rose-colored spectacles.' When Jim dies, the family is aided by wealthy Lucy Olcott, and later by her former fiancé, Robert Redding. Through the intervention of these two, and by their own persistent endeavors, the Wiggses maintain life and optimism. They are able to repay their benefactors by causing their reconciliation, and when the people of the Cabbage Patch gather to celebrate Mrs.Wiggs's fiftieth birthday, Robert and Lucy come to announce their approaching marriage. The widow concludes, 'Looks like ever' thing in the world comes right, if we jes' wait long enough!'

Mr.Crewe's Career, novel by Winston Churchill (q.v.) published in 1908.

Judge Hilary Vane is legal counsel and chief power in the railroad that controls the government of a New England state. His son Austen campaigns to free the state from the influence of the monopoly, but refuses a nomination for the governorship because he does not wish to hurt his father, or Augustus Flint, president of the railroad and father of his fiancée, Victoria. As a result, Humphrey Crewe, an egotistical capitalist, gains the reform nomination, and is defeated by the political manipulations of the railroad's candidate, although the campaign has demonstrated the waning power of the railroad as a political force.

Mr.Faust, dramatic poem by A.D.Ficke (q.v.).

Mr. Higginbotham's Catastrophe, story by Hawthorne (q.v.) published in *The Token* (1834) and in *Twice-Told Tales* (1837).

Dominicus Pike, an itinerant tobacco-peddler, is informed of the hanging of wealthy old Mr.Higginbotham of Kimballton. He spreads the rumor as he travels, only to have it denied by persons who have seen the old man since his supposed death. Hearing again of the hanging, and being contradicted by Higginbotham's niece, he goes to Kimballton, and arrives just in time to save her uncle from actual murder. It is revealed that the murder was planned by three men, two of whom successively lost courage and fled, spreading the rumor. Dominicus is

rewarded by becoming Higginbotham's heir, as well as marrying the niece.

Mr.Hodge and Mr.Hazard, novel by Elinor Wylie (q.v.).

Mr.Incoul's Misadventure, novel by Edgar Saltus (q.v.).

Mr.Isaacs, romance by F.M.Crawford (q.v.).

Mr.Pitt, play by Zona Gale (q.v.).

MITCHELL, DONALD GRANT (1822–1908), is commonly known as Ik.Marvel, or Ike Marvel, a name that resulted from the misprinting of the pseudonym, J.K. Marvel, which he adopted in 1846 for his contributions to the *Morning Courier and New York Enquirer*. Although he himself preferred his writings about model farming and rural pleasures, such as *My Farm of Edgewood* (1863) and *Rural Studies* (1867), his most popular works were the gently fanciful and subjective *Reveries of a Bachelor* (q.v.,1850) and *Dream Life* (1851), books on the borderline between fiction and the essay. His novel, *Dr.Johns* (1866), is a delicate and leisurely story of New England village life in the early 19th century, concerned with the contrast between the rigid Calvinism of Connecticut and the external influence of Catholicism through two French women characters.

MITCHELL, ISAAC (*c.*1759–1812), newspaper editor of Albany and Poughkeepsie, in his Poughkeepsie *Political Barometer* (1804) published serially the novel that appeared in book form as *The Asylum, or Alonzo and Melissa* (q.v.,1811). An almost verbatim plagiarism of this Gothic romance appeared in the same year as *Alonzo and Melissa, or the Unfeeling Father*. This was signed by Daniel Jackson (*fl.*1790–1811), a teacher at Plattsburg Academy, and achieved great popularity. Mitchell died before he could sue for damages, but posterity has awarded the novel to its rightful author.

MITCHELL, JOHN (*d.*1768), British physician and botanist, resident in Virginia (*c.*1725–46), wrote on botany and zoology, and may have been the author of anonymous works on contemporary American history and American husbandry. His most important work was the making of a *Map of the British and French Dominions in North America* (1755), the most reliable cartography of the period, frequently used during his lifetime and down to the present in boundary disputes.

MITCHELL, JOHN (1870–1919), labor leader born in Illinois, began working in the mines at the age of 12 and soon became active in trade unionism. His presidency (1899–1908) of the United Mine Workers of America was distinguished by a strengthening of organization, strikes that secured better wages and working conditions, and the philosophy of allying craft and industrial unions. His works include *Organized Labor* (1903) and *The Wage Earner and His Problems* (1913).

MITCHELL, JOHN AMES (1845–1918), New York novelist, editor, and artist, whose writings and drawings, were frequently contributed to the magazine *Life* (q.v.), which he founded in 1883, and guided until his death. His best-known novels were *Amos Judd* (1895) and *The Pines of Lory* (1901). The former concerns a young Indian rajah who is taken to Connecticut to save his life during a civil war, and, though reared as the New Englander Judd, shows the contrast between the shrewd, unimaginative Yankee type and the mystical Hindu character.

MITCHELL, LANGDON [ELWYN] (1862–), son of S.Weir Mitchell, was born in Philadelphia, and began his career as a dramatist with *Sylvian* (1885), a romantic tragedy. His most important play is *The New York Idea* (q.v.,1906), a problem drama exposing frivolous attitudes toward love and marriage. Mitchell also made stage adaptations of novels, including *The Adventures of François* (1900), from his father's novel; *Becky Sharp* (1899), from Thackeray's *Vanity Fair*; and *Major Pendennis* (1916), from Thackeray's *Pendennis*. *Understanding America* (1927) is a book of essays.

MITCHELL, MARGARET, Georgia author and former journalist, from 1926 to 1936 was engaged in writing *Gone With the Wind* (q.v.,1936; Pulitzer Prize, 1937). This long romantic novel of Georgia during the Civil War and Reconstruction, told entirely from the point of view of the middle class in the Old South, won an immediate and unprecedented popularity throughout the U.S. Said to be the fastest-selling novel in the history of American publishing, it had a sales record of 50,000 copies in one day and approximately 1,500,000 during its first year. By May 1941 the sales reached 3,368,000 in the

English language, and of the 18 translations the German has been most popular, having sold 500,000 copies.

MITCHELL, S[ILAS] WEIR (1829–1914), Philadelphia physician and author, prior to beginning his career in literature achieved fame for his investigations and writings on clinical medicine, toxicology, and the nervous system. His contributions to these medical subjects were treated in 119 specialized papers and various popular books. The trend of his literary career, marked by his ability in historical romances and in character portrayal, was clearly foreshadowed in his first tale, 'The Case of George Dedlow' (*Atlantic Monthly*, July 1866), a story of the Civil War and its psychological effect on an injured army surgeon. Mitchell's first novels, *In War Time* (1885) and *Roland Blake* (1886), continue the use of this theme, the first by showing the psychology of cowardice in a New England doctor during the Civil War, and the second by depicting the accentuation of certain human characteristics during the stress of conflict, particularly the hero's confusion between good sense and romantic impulses, and the neurotic quality of a woman obsessed with a desire for power over others. His greatest historical novel, *Hugh Wynne, Free Quaker* (q.v.,1897), tells of a Quaker in the Revolutionary War. His other books include: *Characteristics* (1892), a novel consisting primarily of character studies through the conversations of a group at whose center is Dr.Owen North; *Dr.North and His Friends* (1900), a sequel; *The Adventures of François* (1898), a picaresque novel of the French Revolution, whose hero, though refined in manner, is lacking in conscience; *Circumstance* (1901), the psychological study of an adventuress; *Constance Trescot* (1905), the analysis of a woman possessed of the one idea of seeking revenge for her husband's murder; *The Red City* (1907), a study of social contrasts in post-Revolutionary Philadelphia; *John Sherwood, Iron Master* (1911), the analysis of the split between the sympathetic and hard materialistic qualities of a businessman; and *Westways* (1913), a story of the Civil War seen through the eyes of two soldiers. Mitchell was also the author of several volumes of poetry, and short stories and novelettes. He was the father of Langdon Mitchell, who dramatized *The Adventures of François* in 1900.

MITCHILL, SAMUEL LATHAM (1764–1831), Quaker physician and scientist, practiced medicine in New York City and was a professor at Columbia, the New York College of Physicians and Surgeons, and Rutgers Medical College. He was a founder and editor (1797–1820) of the *Medical Repository*. An ardent republican and follower of Jefferson, he served in the state legislature, the House of Representatives, and the U.S.Senate (1804–9).

Mobile Bay, BATTLE OF, Civil War engagement off southwest Alabama (Aug. 1864). Farragut entered the harbor, captured the Confederate fleet, and forced the neighboring forts to surrender.

Moby-Dick; or, The Whale, novel by Melville (q.v.) published in 1851. Within this realistic story of sea adventure is set a symbolic account of the conflict between man and his fate, in which the whale may be taken to represent infinite evil in the universe, and Ahab the will of man that opposes this force. Ahab declares, 'All visible objects are but as pasteboard masks,' and Melville strikes through the surface of his narrative to discover truths deeply imbedded in its events.

The outcast youth Ishmael, feeling 'a damp, drizzly November' in his soul, goes to New Bedford, where he signs for a voyage on the whaler *Pequod*, drawing as his roommate Queequeg, a Polynesian prince. The two become comrades, and, after Ishmael investigates the town and hears a symbolic sermon by Father Mapple, they join their ship, which leaves Nantucket on Christmas Day. The captain, Ahab, is a monomaniac whose one purpose is to capture the fierce, cunning white whale, Moby-Dick, which once deprived him of his leg. He keeps below deck for some time, but finally declares his purpose and posts a doubloon on the mast as a reward for the man who first sights the white whale. The characters of the sailors are revealed by their reactions. The chief mate, Starbuck, earnest, prudent, and fretful, dislikes it. Stubb, the second mate, is happy-go-lucky, and takes perils as they come. Flask, the third mate, is incapable of deep thought, and for him killing whales is simply an occupation. Others in the crew include Fedallah and his mysterious Asiatics; the American Indian harpooner, Tashtego; the African, Daggoo; and the Negro cabin boy, Pip. Through the plot of the voyage, which

carries the *Pequod* nearly around the world, runs a comprehensive discussion of the nature of the whale, the history of science and art relating to the animal, and the facts of the whaling industry. Whales are captured during the pursuit, but circumstances seem to conspire against Ahab: storms, lightning, loss of the compass, the drowning of a man, and the insanity of Ahab's favorite, Pip. The white whale is finally sighted, and in the first day's chase he smashes a whaleboat. The second day, another boat is swamped, and the captain's ivory leg is snapped off. On the third day the whale is harpooned, but Ahab, fouled in the line, is pinioned to Moby-Dick, who bears down on the *Pequod*. The ship is sunk and, as the final spars settle in the water, one of the men nails to the mast a sky-hawk that pecks at the flag he is placing as a signal. The ship, 'like Satan, would not sink to hell till she had dragged a living part of heaven along with her, and helmeted herself with it.' Ishmael, the only survivor, is rescued by another whaler, the *Rachel*.

Mocha Dick, fierce white whale, which, during the 1840's and '50's, is said to have had 19 harpoons put in him, caused the death of more than 30 men, stove 3 whaling ships and 14 boats, and sunk an Australian trader and a French merchantman. An account of him was published by J.N.Reynolds in *The Knickerbocker Magazine* (1839), 12 years before Melville's *Moby-Dick*, which may have been partly suggested by the article or the legends.

Modern Chivalry, satirical picaresque novel by H.H.Brackenridge (q.v.). The first two parts were published in 1792, the third and fourth in 1793 and 1797, a revision in 1805, and a final addition in 1815. The influence of Cervantes is obvious, as is in less degree that of Swift, Fielding, and Samuel Butler, but the work is distinguished as the first extended depiction of backwoods life in American fiction.

Captain John Farrago and his servant, Teague O'Regan, set out from the captain's farm in western Pennsylvania, to ride through the country and observe the life and manners of the people. Farrago is an intelligent democrat, part Jeffersonian and part independent, inclining to the ideas of Tom Paine. Teague is a red-headed, long-legged Irish immigrant, part fool and part knave, whose unbounded self-assurance arises from his ignorance. At each stage of their journey they meet some foolish group that admires Teague, and the captain must invent excuses to keep them from bestowing various honors on his servant. Each adventure is followed by a chapter of reflections upon the abuses of democracy. Teague is a universal success, meets the President, becomes an idol of politicians, beautiful ladies, and scientists, and is finally appointed collector of excise on whisky, all of his predecessors in this office having been tarred and feathered. Teague receives the same treatment, and is captured as a strange animal by a philosophic society, which sends him to France. There the tar and feathers wear off, and his only article of clothing being in an imperfect state, he is mistaken for a sansculotte and borne off in triumph. In the later addition, the author describes a settlement founded by the captain and his friends, but the lack of the early comedy and satire expose his plainly didactic purpose of attempting to raise the standards of democracy.

Modern Chronicle, A, novel by Winston Churchill (q.v.).

Modern Instance, A, novel by Howells (q.v.) published in 1881.

Bartley Hubbard, a clever but unscrupulous Boston journalist, is married to Marcia Gaylord, from whom he becomes alienated because of his shady business practices and his philanderings. Marcia, though still in love with her husband, leaves him and he sues for divorce. His action is defeated and the divorce granted to Marcia. Hubbard goes to Arizona, where he is killed by a man whose personal affairs he has discussed too frankly in his newspaper. Ben Halleck, who has constantly attended Marcia through her trials, debates with his friend Atherton whether he should forsake the ministry to marry her, but does not come to a decision.

Modern Temper, The, critical work by J.W.Krutch (q.v.).

MODJESKA, HELENA (1840–1909), Polish-born actress, was celebrated at Warsaw for her Shakespearean and other roles, but in 1876 accompanied her husband and other Poles to California, where they intended to found a colony. The attempt failed, and Mme Modjeska returned to the theater, at the suggestion of

Edwin Booth. Until her retirement (1907), she acted throughout the U.S. and Great Britain, principally in plays by Shakespeare, Ibsen, and the romantic French dramatists.

Modoc Indians, tribe of southwest Oregon and northern California. In 1864 the Modoc and the Klamath ceded their territory to the U.S., removing to the Klamath reservation. In 1870 a chief known as Captain Jack led a part of the tribe back to the California border and in the subsequent Modoc War (1872–3) two peace commissioners were killed. After the Indians were overcome and their leaders hanged, the tribe was divided, part being sent to Oklahoma and the rest to the Klamath reservation. Joaquin Miller wrote an account of his *Life among the Modocs.*

MOELLER, PHILIP (1880–), New York playwright, began his career with the Washington Square Players, for whom he wrote one-act plays such as *Helena's Husband* (1916), a satirical account of Helen's abduction by Paris. He is best known for *Madame Sand* (1917), a sophisticated biographical comedy, in which vein he also wrote *Molière* (1919) and *Sophie* (1919), the latter concerned with the opera singer Sophie Arnold in the time of Louis XV. Later plays include *Camel Through the Needle's Eye* (1929) and *Fata Morgana* (1931), adapted from the Hungarian in collaboration with J.L.A.Burrell. His early one-act dramas were published as *Five Somewhat Historical Plays* (1918). He is also well known as a stage director for the Theatre Guild.

Mohawk Indians, easternmost tribe of the Iroquois confederacy, located mainly along the Mohawk River, was noted for its ferocity and constant warfare. In the early 17th century, obtaining firearms from Dutch traders, the Mohawk conquered many neighboring tribes, including the Delaware. They were allied with the British in the French and Indian Wars and in the Revolution, after which most of them removed to Canada. The historical Hiawatha was probably a Mohawk, and Joseph Brant (q.v.) was a Mohawk chief.

Mohegan (or MONHEGAN) **Indians,** Algonquian tribe of Connecticut, united with the Pequots under Sassacus, and rebelled against him under the leadership of Uncas. They were allied with the English, and after the death of King Philip (1676) became the only important tribe south of Maine. They finally settled on a reservation near Norwich. Samson Occom (q.v.) was a member of the tribe. In *The Last of the Mohicans,* Cooper confuses Mahicans (q.v.) with Mohegans.

Mohican Indians, see *Mahican* and *Mohegan Indians.*

Moki Indians, see *Hopi.*

Molasses Act, passed by the British Parliament (1733), laid a heavy duty on rum, sugar and molasses imported by the American colonies from French islands. The purpose was to protect British interests in the West Indies.

Moll Pitcher, see *Pitcher, Molly.*

MÖLLHAUSEN, HEINRICH BALDUIN (1825–1905), German traveler and author, in the U.S. on three trips, on which he respectively journeyed as far west as Fort Laramie (1849–53), trekked across the country from Fort Smith to Los Angeles (1853–4), and helped survey the Colorado River (1857–8). This life on the frontier was crystallized in some 30 romantic novels. His stirring depictions of Indian and pioneer life, and adventure on the seas, gave him a reputation as 'the German Cooper.' His *Diary of a Journey from the Mississippi to . . . the Pacific* (1858) is the only work translated into English, but his most famous novels are the trilogy of frontier life, *Der Halb Indianer* (1861), *Der Flüchtling* (1861), *Der Majordomo* (1863).

Molly Maguires, secret Irish organization in the Scranton anthracite mining districts of Pennsylvania. They flourished from 1865 to 1877, and by physical force worked for better laboring conditions against the oppressive industry. Their name seems to have been derived from that of a revolutionary society in Ireland, which was so called either because that was the name of the leader or because its members used feminine disguise. The dour proletarian ballads that they composed and sang have been published as *Minstrels of the Mine Patch* (1938).

Mondamin, character in *Hiawatha* (q.v.).

Money-Makers, The, novel by H.F.Keenan (q.v.) published anonymously in 1885 as a reply to Hay's *The Bread-Winners.*

Wealthy Aaron Grimstone and his daughter Eleanor, endangered in a New

York riot, are saved by two reporters, Archibald Hilliard and Fred Carew. Grimstone rewards his rescuers, and Carew uses his check for charitable purposes, but Hilliard, proud and ambitious, uses his to make a fortune in the stock-market, then retrieves it and returns it to Grimstone. Later the young men, both from the Midwestern city of Valedo, Grimstone's home, become acquainted with his family. Eleanor falls in love with Hilliard, but her father exposes him as a fortune-seeker, and he returns to New York to marry another heiress. Meanwhile Carew loses his job because of his uncompromising report of a coal strike and his sympathy with the liberal Ultrocratic party. He then becomes editor of the Valedo *Eagle*, known as 'the workingman's friend,' and is opposed by Grimstone and the reactionary Optimate party. Ousted from the *Eagle*, he founds a radical paper and exposes Grimstone's responsibility for cheap construction methods that resulted in the burning of his opera house and the deaths of many who were attending a labor meeting. The Optimates incite riots in an attempt to discredit the unions, but Carew continues to print the truth, and the Ultrocrats win at the polls. Grimstone continues his unscrupulous methods, but a year later commits suicide, after which his dissolute son Herbert continues his father's career, abandoning his wife, who is cared for by Eleanor. As Carew maintains his liberal activities, the greedy are still enriching themselves at the expense of the struggling workers, and money remains the standard of social achievement.

Monikins, The, allegorical satire by Cooper (q.v.) published in 1835.

Sir John Goldencalf meets Noah Poke, a Yankee sea-captain, in Paris, where they become acquainted with four monkeys who have been traveling in Europe: Dr.Reasono, Lord Chatterino, Lady Chatterissa, and Mistress Vigiliance Lynx. The knight and the captain, after being enlightened concerning the superior institutions of these 'Monikins,' accompany them to their homeland in the polar regions. Sir John visits the countries of Leaphigh (England), whose society is founded on a rigid system of castes and a false social hierarchy; Leapthrough (France), which he considers unprincipled, erratic, and selfish; and Leaplow (the U.S.), where the leveling tendency of democratic politics has destroyed virtue and distinction. Leaplow is governed according to a National Allegory (the Constitution), by a Great Sachem (President), Riddles (Senators), Legion (Representatives), and Supreme Arbitrators (Supreme Court). The system operates by the institution of contrasting parties, 'Perpendicular' and 'Horizontal,' sometimes supplemented by a third group, 'Tangents.' These parties are led by the Godlikes, who bow to the dominant commercial interests, allowing society to become 'the great moral eclipse,' in which 'the great moral postulate of principle' is overshadowed by 'the great immoral postulate known as interest,' and public opinion is manipulated by scheming demagogues and a powerful press. When Sir John returns to England, he marries his patient fiancée, Anna Etherington, while Captain Poke returns to Connecticut.

Monitor* AND *Merrimac, warships whose Civil War engagement near Hampton Roads, Virginia (March 9, 1862), was the first battle between ironclad ships. The *Merrimac* was a wooden vessel that the Confederates had reconstructed as an ironclad. The *Monitor* was a new type of warship invented by Captain John Ericsson, with a long, low freeboard on which was placed a revolving turret with two guns. The battle ended without a victory.

MONK, MARIA (*c.*1817–50), author of *Awful Disclosures* (1836), an account of her supposed life as a nun in Montreal, filled with horror tales of misconduct in the Catholic convents. Since there was a strong anti-Catholic feeling at the time, Maria won as many converts as enemies. Investigating committees proved her tales to be false, but the slanderous controversies she had precipitated were still hot enough to insure the popularity of her *Further Disclosures* (1837). After this period of notoriety, she faded from the limelight.

Monk and the Hangman's Daughter, The, romance by Ambrose Bierce (q.v.).

Monmouth, BATTLE OF, was fought near Monmouth Courthouse (Freehold, New Jersey), east of Trenton, on June 28, 1778. General Charles Lee was supposed to attack the British, who, under Clinton, were moving toward New York. Failing to take the offensive, Lee was in

retreat when Washington arrived to turn the flight into a drawn battle, although he was unable to halt Clinton. Lee was later court-martialed for his disobedience to orders. It was at this battle that Molly Pitcher (q.v.) aided the Revolutionary soldiers.

MONROE, HARRIET (1860–1936), Chicago poet and editor, first attained notice with her *Columbian Ode* (1892, published 1893), written in celebration of the World's Columbian Exposition in her native city. Besides *Valeria and Other Poems* (1892), she published a biography of her brother-in-law, John Wellborn Root (1896), and a book of five verse plays, *The Passing Show* (1903). With the founding of *Poetry: A Magazine of Verse* (q.v.,1912), she became a leader in the championing of new poetry, and she edited this organ until her death, remaining better known for it than for her several subsequent volumes of minor poetry. Her other works include: *Poets and Their Art* (1926, revised 1932), a book of essays, and *A Poet's Life* (1937), her autobiography. *The New Poetry* (1932), edited in collaboration with Alice Corbin Henderson, is an anthology of 20th-century verse.

MONROE, JAMES (1758–1831), 5th President of the U.S. (1817–25), was born in Virginia, left William and Mary College to become a soldier in the Revolutionary War, and afterward studied law under Jefferson, who remained his model and mentor in matters of policy. In the Virginia legislature (1782–3) and the Continental Congress (1783–6), he upheld Jeffersonian principles and favored a balance between federal and state powers. He opposed the adoption of the Constitution, as a member of the Virginia Convention (1788), fearing the central government would be too powerful. Elected to the U.S.Senate (1790–94), he was bitterly critical of Washington's administration and of Hamilton in particular. His ministry to France (1794–6) ended in recall because of his excessive sympathy with the French Revolution and his failure to follow Washington's instructions. He published his version of the controversy in *A View of the Conduct of the Executive, in the Foreign Affairs of the United States* (1797). Still popular in his own state, he was its governor (1799–1802), and in 1803 was appointed by Jefferson as an envoy to France and Spain. He participated in the negotiation of the Louisiana Purchase, and went to England in an attempt to settle various disputes between that country and the U.S. Again governor of Virginia (1811), he resigned to become Madison's secretary of state (1811–17). He was also secretary of war (1814–15) and was prominent in the events of the War of 1812 and the subsequent peace. Monroe was virtually unopposed in the presidental elections of 1816 and 1820, and the period of his administration, because of the apparent absence of partisan controversy, is known as the 'era of good feeling.' The principal events were the adoption of the Missouri Compromise (q.v.), the Seminole War (q.v.) by which the U.S. acquired Florida, and the framing by Secretary of State J.Q.Adams of the U.S. foreign policy known as the Monroe Doctrine (q.v.). *The Writings of James Monroe* have been published in seven volumes (1898–1903).

Monroe Doctrine, principle of U.S. foreign policy expressed in President Monroe's message to Congress (Dec. 2, 1823), framed by him and Secretary of State J.Q.Adams. It was occasioned by the Russian emperor's ukase (1821) forbidding navigation and fishing within 100 miles of the northwest coast of North America, south of Bering Strait to latitude 51°, and the announcement of the Holy Alliance of Austria, Russia, and Prussia, and of the kingdom of France that new governments erected out of former Spanish colonies were to be abolished. The Monroe Doctrine asserted the dual principle of prohibiting further colonization or interference by European states in the Americas, complementing Washington's policy of nonintervention in European affairs. The doctrine was not implemented by legislation, but it has become deeply fixed in the American mind as a definition of spheres of influence. International episodes in which it has been the guiding policy have included the issues of the Oregon Question and Lone Star Republic (qq.v.), the Mexican empire of Maximilian (q.v.), the Venezuela Affair (q.v.), and the Spanish-American War (q.v.).

Monsieur Beaucaire, romance by Tarkington (q.v.).

Monster, The, and Other Stories, seven

tales by Stephen Crane (q.v.) published in 1899.

'The Monster,' a novelette set in Whilomville, New York, is a bitterly ironic commentary on the cruelty and lack of sympathy of ordinary people for an act of humanity they do not understand. Henry Johnson, a Negro servant in the home of Dr.Trescott, rescues the physician's young son from a fire. He is terribly disfigured and loses his sanity, so that no home can be found for him in the town. Horrified by the 'monster,' the townspeople ostracize the doctor and his family because they harbor the Negro. It finally appears that Trescott has sacrificed his entire happiness for an ethical principle he formerly considered unquestionable. 'The Blue Hotel' is a naturalistic analysis of the events that lead up to a quarrel and murder at a bar in a small Nebraska town. The victim, a stupid, suspicious Swede, is shown to be only incidentally responsible, and his murderer more or less innocent, although he is sentenced to the penitentiary. Blind, inevitable circumstance is the only villain. 'His New Mittens' is concerned with the inner reactions of a small boy who runs away from home, and the remaining stories are studies of men in sensational situations or moments of intense excitement.

Montacute, English title of *A New Home—Who'll Follow?* (q.v.).

MONTCALM-GOZON, Louis-Joseph de, *Marquis de Saint-Véran* (1712–59), French soldier, in 1756 was appointed to command the French troops in Canada, with the rank of major-general. In spite of differences with the governor-general and intendant, he was highly successful in his operations against the British, regaining control of Lake Ontario by capturing the British post at Oswego (1756) and the following year capturing Fort William Henry on Lake George. He successfully withstood the attack of Abercromby's forces at Ticonderoga (q.v.,1758), but in 1759 was placed on the defensive in Wolfe's siege of Quebec. The British entered the city by scaling the heights before the Plains of Abraham (q.v.) and in the subsequent battle both Wolfe and Montcalm were killed. The most famous account of this action is Parkman's *Montcalm and Wolfe* (1884).

Monterey, see *Carmel.*

MONTEZ, Lola (1818–61), pseudonym of the Irish-born actress Maria Dolores Eliza Rosanna Gilbert, whose early career included marriage with an army officer and a scandalous divorce, touring the continent as a dancer, and becoming in 1847 the official mistress of Ludwig I of Bavaria. Receiving the title of Countess of Landsfeld, she virtually ruled Bavaria, but her liberal sympathies during the revolution of 1848 caused the abdication of Ludwig and her banishment. Later she toured the U.S. as a ballet dancer and actress, and was particularly successful in California, where she acted in a sketch of her own life, *Lola Montez in Bavaria.* After further appearances in Australia and Paris, she returned to become a lecturer. Although never much of an actress, she was famed as a beauty and as 'the international bad girl of the mid-Victorians.'

MONTGOMERY, L[ucy] M[aud] (1874–), Canadian author, whose books for girls include *Anne of Green Gables* (1908) and *Anne of Avonlea* (1909).

Monthly Anthology, see *Anthology Club.*

Monthly Magazine and American Review, The (1799–1802), New York periodical edited by C.B.Brown. In 1801 it became a quarterly, entitled *The American Review and Literary Journal.* Primarily educational, it included scientific and literary subject matter, and among Brown's contributions was part of *Edgar Huntly.*

Monticello, Jefferson's estate near Charlottesville, Virginia. The mansion was designed by Jefferson as a colonial adaptation of the classic style (1767). In 1923 the estate became a public monument.

Mont-Saint-Michel and Chartres, critical work by Henry Adams (q.v.), privately printed in 1905, and published in 1913. It is subtitled 'a Study of Thirteenth-Century Unity.' This interpretation of the dominant attitude of mind from 1150 to 1250, as 'expressed in Amiens Cathedral and the Works of Thomas Aquinas,' precedes *The Education of Henry Adams* (q.v.) in the author's plan to study historical forces by relating two points in time. He chose the 13th century as 'the point of history when man held the highest idea of himself as a unit in a unified universe,' in order to 'measure motion down to his own time' in his auto-

biography, 'a study of Twentieth-Century Multiplicity.' In *Mont-Saint-Michel*, he shows philosophy, theology, and the arts to be informed by a spiritual unity, illogical but founded on simple faith and strength of energy. The 16 chapters discuss Norman architecture, giving way to Gothic 'flinging its passion against the sky'; the subordinate arts of sculpture and glass; the *Chanson de Roland*; courts of love; the metaphysical system of Aquinas; and the religious mysticism of a period that found its highest symbol in the Virgin, apotheosis of the feminine ideal. Thus there is a unified attitude of mind in men's reaction to the universe, contrasting with the concept of a 20th-century 'multiverse' which leads to a philosophy and science of multiple aspects and reactions.

Monument Mountain, blank-verse poem by Bryant (q.v.), published in 1824 and collected in *Poems* (1832). Concerned with the name-legend of a mountain near Bryant's childhood home, the poem recounts the story of an Indian princess who loved her cousin. Because their union would have been considered incestuous, she threw herself from a precipice to her death.

MOODY, DWIGHT LYMAN (1837–99), Massachusetts evangelist, associated after 1870 with Ira David Sankey (1840–1908), organist and singer, with whom he carried on a great revivalist campaign in the U.S. and Great Britain. Their collections of gospel hymns were extremely popular. Moody established a chain of educational institutions based on his own plans. Their work is described in Sankey's *My Life and the Story of the Gospel Hymns* (1906).

MOODY, WILLIAM VAUGHN (1869–1910), Indiana playwright and poet, graduated from Harvard (1893), taught English there (1894–5) and at the University of Chicago (1895–9,1901–7). His first poetic play, *The Masque of Judgment* (1900), deals with the conflict between man and God, and the rightful exercise of man's free will, which leads him to rebel. A second verse drama, *The Fire Bringer* (1904), stresses man's duty of rebellion in the story of Prometheus. These works were to have been brought to philosophic completion in a third play dealing with the reconciliation of God and man through the creation of woman. This part of the trilogy, *The Death of Eve* (1912), remained incomplete at Moody's death, and none of the works was ever produced. *A Sabine Woman* (1906) was produced again in 1909 as *The Great Divide*, under which title it was published. This play is concerned with the contrast between Ruth Jordan, a modern product of inherited Puritan traditions and inhibitions, and Stephen Ghent, a free individualist representative of the frontier West. This was followed by another prose play, *The Faith Healer* (1909), which was less successful because of its exalted idealism. It concerns Ulrich Michælis, an occult healer whose power is lost when he gains the earthly love of Rhoda Williams, but regained when he purifies his love in a higher, unselfish realization that her anguish, like that of the whole world, needs healing. Moody's lyric *Poems* (1901) also recognize that men's spirits are plagued and possessed of confused desires, but he voices a highly spiritual and idealistic belief in the greatness of their eventual destiny. His *Poems and Plays* were collected in two volumes (1912), and collections of his *Letters* have been published (1913,1935).

Moon Hoax, result of an article contributed to the New York *Sun* (Aug. 1835) by a reporter, Richard Adams Locke (1800–1871), who pretended to reveal a discovery by Sir John Herschel that men and animals existed on the moon. The revelations, supposedly reprinted from the actually defunct Edinburgh *Journal of Science*, were so clever as greatly to increase the *Sun's* circulation, cause a delegation from Yale to ask to see the original article, and produce pamphlet reprints in England and on the Continent. Poe, who was a friend of Locke and described him in *The Literati*, said that the hoax anticipated most of his own 'Hans Pfall,' and caused him to leave that tale unfinished, although he did later publish his 'Balloon Hoax' (q.v.) in the *Sun* (1844).

Moon Is a Gong, The, see *Garbage Man, The*.

Moon of the Caribbees, The, one-act play by O'Neill (q.v.), produced and published in 1918.

The British tramp steamer *Glencairn* is anchored off a West Indian island, from which is heard a melancholy, crooning Negro chant. On deck, the seamen await the arrival of Bella, the bumboat woman,

who brings three girls and a boatload of fruit in which they smuggle bottles of rum. The Irishman Driscoll distributes the liquor, and an orgy of drinking and dancing begins. The prettiest of the girls, Pearl, leaves Yank to make advances to Smitty, a quiet Englishman burdened by memories of an unfortunate love affair that sent him to sea. When he does not respond, Pearl turns on him furiously and goes off with Yank. The party becomes riotous, ending with a fight in which a man is stabbed to death. The mate finally arrives to send the women ashore, and the men leave the deck, as the melancholy chant continues from the island.

Moon-Calf, semi-autobiographical novel by Floyd Dell (q.v.) published in 1920.

Felix Fay, the son of a poor family in a small Illinois town, hates the mean everyday world that surrounds him, and moons through life 'in the day-dreams which books unfold before him.' His adolescent education includes toying with atheism and socialism, the writing of romantic poetry, and being admired by older women with literary inclinations. He becomes a newspaper reporter and has an affair with a girl, Joyce, whom he considers to be a person with beliefs and standards like his own, until he loses his job, and going away to write a novel, leaves her to marry a man who represents the philistine world he hates. Still a sensitive, idealistic youth frustrated by his surroundings, he goes to Chicago, hoping to find a world closer to his dreams.

The Briary-Bush (1921), a sequel, is concerned with Felix's career as a Chicago reporter and dramatic critic, and his life as a typical jazz-age rebel against convention, until he finally settles down to marriage and achieves literary success.

MOONEY, Tom (Thomas J.) (1884–), labor agitator sentenced to death (commuted to life imprisonment in San Quentin) as a perpetrator of the bomb killings in the San Francisco Preparedness Day parade of 1916. Many prominent individuals and labor organizations, convinced of his innocence, worked for his release. He became the subject of many articles and poems, principally by liberal writers, and such tracts as Sinclair's *100%, the Story of a Patriot.* He was pardoned in 1939 by Governor Olson of California.

Moonshiners, see *Bootlegging.*

MOORE, Clement Clarke (1779–1863), professor of Biblical learning and author of the poem popularly known as ' 'Twas the Night Before Christmas,' published anonymously in the *Troy Sentinel* (Dec. 23, 1823), widely copied, and reprinted in the author's *Poems* (1844). The poem's proper title is 'A Visit from St.Nicholas.'

MOORE, Douglas (1893–), New York composer and a professor of music at Columbia. Excepting a sonata for violin and piano (1930), he has been interested mainly in composing program music on national themes and backgrounds, treated in characteristically American idioms. His better-known works include: *Pageant of P.T.Barnum* (1924), a symphonic suite depicting the life of the showman; *Moby Dick* (1928), a symphonic poem; music for a pantomine, *The Saga of Jesse James*; and *The Headless Horseman*, an operetta, and *The Devil and Daniel Webster* (1939), a one-act opera, both with librettos by Stephen V. Benét (q.v.). He also wrote a textbook, *Listening to Music.*

MOORE, [Horatio] Frank[lin] (1828–1904), New Hampshire-born scholar of American history, editor of such works as *Songs and Ballads of the American Revolution* (1856), *American Eloquence* (1857), and *Diary of the American Revolution from Newspapers and Original Documents* (2 vols.,1859–60).

George Henry Moore (1823–92), his brother, was also a historical scholar, whose works include *Mr.Lee's Plan* (1860), a pamphlet on the treason of Charles Lee; *Negroes in the Army of the Revolution* (1862); and *John Dickinson* (1890).

MOORE, John Bassett (1860–), lawyer and statesman, professor of international law and diplomacy at Columbia (1891–1924). Besides editing the *Works* of Buchanan (12 vols.,1908), he has written such books as *American Diplomacy, Its Spirit and Achievements* (1905), *Digest of International Law* (8 vols.,1906), *Four Phases of American Development—Federalism, Democracy, Imperialism, Expansion* (1912), and *Principles of American Diplomacy* (1918). He has held many important judicial and diplomatic posts, and been a member of the Permanent Court of Arbitration and Permanent Court of Justice at The Hague.

MOORE, John Trotwood (1858–1929), author of *Songs and Stories from Tennessee*

(1897), local-color sketches and poems; *The Bishop of Cottontown* (1906), a novel concerned with the effects of industrialism on Southern life; *Uncle Wash, His Stories* (1910); *Tennessee, the Volunteer State* (4 vols.,1923); and *Hearts of Hickory* (1926), a romantic novel based on the early life of Jackson. His *Taylor-Trotwood Magazine* (1905–11), founded as *Trotwood's Monthly*, was a miscellany of local history and literature in Tennessee. Merrill Moore is his son.

MOORE, JULIA A. (1847–1920), better known as 'The Sweet Singer of Michigan,' upon publication of her first book, *The Sweet Singer of Michigan Salutes the Public* (1876), attracted wide attention because her writing was so bad that it seemed to possess almost a touch of genius. Her poems ranged from elegies on deaths caused by yellow fever and choking on roast beef to occasional verse on the Grand Rapids Cricket Club. Her unconsciously childish grammar, and rimes that went from verse to worse, delighted Clemens, who declared that she had 'the touch that makes an intentionally humorous episode pathetic and an intentionally pathetic one funny.' Her first book, later retitled *The Sentimental Song Book*, was followed by *A Few Words to the Public with New and Original Poems by Julia A. Moore* (1878). She seems to have thought long before publishing her third book, *Sunshine and Shadow* (1915), a romance of the Revolution.

MOORE, MARIANNE [CRAIG] (1887–), born in St.Louis, graduated from Bryn Mawr (1909), and has lived mainly in New York City, where she edited *The Dial* (q.v.,1925–9). Her poetry, collected in *Poems* (1921), *Observations* (1924), *Selected Poems* (1935), and *The Pangolin, and Other Verse* (1936), is characterized by a tightly disciplined, unconventional use of metrics ('I tend to write in a patterned arrangement, with rhymes . . . to secure an effect of flowing continuity'), and a witty, cerebral, ironic view of the world, which has caused her to be compared with Emily Dickinson.

MOORE, MERRILL (1903–), son of J.T.Moore, was born in Tennessee, and began his poetic career as a member of the regionalist group that published *The Fugitive* (q.v.,1922–5). He employs only one form, the sonnet, although he uses it very freely, and is known for the prodigious number of his poems. *The Noise that Time Makes* (1929) was followed by *It is a Good Deal Later than You Think* (1934), *Six Sides to a Man* (1935), and *M* (1938), the last containing 1,000 sonnets. Since receiving his M.D. from Vanderbilt (1928), Moore has been a practicing psychiatrist in Boston.

Moqui Indians, see *Hopi.*

Moran of the Lady Letty, romance by Frank Norris (q.v.) published in 1898. It was issued in England as *Shanghaied.*

Ross Wilbur, on his way to a San Francisco social affair, is shanghaied aboard the *Bertha Millner*, a fishing schooner commanded by brutal Captain Kitchell, with a Chinese crew. He grows hardened and alert during the voyage to the fishing grounds off Lower California. While they are seizing the derelict *Lady Letty* for salvage, a squall overtakes them, and Kitchell is drowned, while Wilbur rescues the *Lady Letty's* only survivor, Moran Sternerson, blonde daughter of the captain. Reared at sea, Moran is rough and strong, dresses as a man, and scorns conventional feminity. She takes command of the schooner, but is coerced by the crew into going to Magdalena Bay, where they are joined by a beachcombing Chinese junk, and find a valuable piece of ambergris. During a fight in which they capture the crew of the junk, Wilbur and Moran become friends and soon they fall in love. They bring the schooner to San Francisco, where Wilbur's friends are astonished by his strange companion. While he is ashore, one of the crew steals the ambergris and kills Moran. A storm drives the ship out through the Golden Gate, as Wilbur helplessly watches.

Moravian Church, evangelical Protestant communion that emphasizes Christian unity and personal service, retains a historical episcopacy, and accepts the Scriptures as the sole moral guide. It originated (1457) in Moravia and Bohemia, among the followers of the martyred John Huss, but met severe persecution. The renewed church dates from 1722, when Count Nicolaus Ludwig Zinzendorf (1700–1760) established a refuge in Saxony. The missionary movement began shortly afterward, and Zinzendorf came to America (1741–3), founded a colony at Bethlehem, Pennsylvania, and from this and other centers unsuccessfully attempted to organize all German sects into

The Church of God in Spirit. A.G.Spangenberg (q.v.) was another leader. There are now some 38,000 Moravians in the U.S.

MORE, PAUL ELMER (1864–1937), born in St.Louis, graduated from Washington University (1887), and continued his studies there and at Harvard. He taught Sanskrit and the classics at Harvard and Bryn Mawr, but then became a critic in New York, editing *The Nation* (q.v., 1909–14), finally returning to scholarship as a lecturer at Princeton. His broad classical knowledge is shown in his *Shelburne Essays* (q.v.,14 vols.,1904–35), and in other critical works that include: *Platonism* (1917), *The Religion of Plato* (1921), *Hellenistic Philosophies* (1923), *The Christ of the New Testament* (1924), *Christ the Word* (1927), *The Demon of the Absolute* (1928), and *The Catholic Faith* (1931). *Pages from an Oxford Diary* (1937) is an autobiographical work. More was associated with Irving Babbitt as a leader in the New Humanist movement (q.v.).

More Wonders of the Invisible World, tract by Robert Calef (q.v.).

Morella, story by Poe (q.v.), published in 1835 and reprinted in *Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque* (1840).

Morella, a student of the German mystics, is a woman of extraordinary learning and mental power. Her husband is devoted to her, and acknowledges her intellectual superiority, but she realizes that he does not love her. When she declines in health, he is repelled by her melancholy beauty. She seems resigned, but at last tells him that she is dying and yet shall live, that 'her whom in life thou didst abhor, in death thou shalt adore.' She dies in childbirth, leaving a daughter who is loved by the lonely father, even though he recognizes her increasing resemblance to his dead wife. He neglects to name the child, but when she is 14 decides to have her baptized. At the font, a perverse impulse causes him to utter the name Morella, at which she falls dead, saying 'I am here!' Distracted, the father bears her corpse to the tomb, where he finds no trace of the first Morella.

MORFORD, HENRY (1823–81), New York journalist and author, whose works include: *The Rest of Don Juan* (1846), a Byronic poem; *Red-Tape and Pigeon-Hole Generals as Seen from the Ranks* (1864), a narrative of his experiences in the Civil War; *Shoulder Straps* (1863), *The Coward* (1863), and *The Days of Shoddy* (1864), novels describing corruption and incompetence in the Northern army and its contractors; *The Bells of Shandon* (1867), a play written with John Brougham; *The Spur of Monmouth* (1876), a romance of the Revolution; and several popular guidebooks and travel accounts.

MORGAN, SIR HENRY (*c.*1635–88), British buccaneer, came to the West Indies as a youth and later led his forces in raids on many Spanish towns, which he unmercifully plundered and outraged. In 1671 he captured Panama from its far more numerous Spanish defenders, for which he was rewarded by being knighted (1674) and made lieutenant-governor of Jamaica. Exquemelin, who served under Morgan, wrote of him in *The Bucaniers of America . . .* (1681; English translation, 1684).

MORGAN, JOHN (1735–89), Philadelphia physician and educator, graduated from the College of Philadelphia (1757), served in the French and Indian War, studied abroad, received his M.D. from the University of Edinburgh (1763), and returned in 1765 to found the University of Pennsylvania's medical school, where he became a professor. He was medical director of the Revolutionary Army (1775–7). His writings include *A Discourse upon the Institution of Medical Schools in America* (1765), one of *Four Dissertations on the Reciprocal Advantages of a Perpetual Union between Great-Britain and her American Colonies* (1766), and *A Recommendation of Innoculation . . .* (1776).

MORGAN, JOHN PIERPONT (1837–1913), Connecticut-born financier, grandson of John Pierpont, began his career in his father's banking house, which in 1895 became J.P.Morgan and Company. He laid the foundation for his extensive international financing by his interests in or management of foreign banking firms. After wresting the control of the Albany and Susquehanna Railroad from Jay Gould (1869), he gave his main attention to railroad development, and with J.J. Hill, won control of the Northern Pacific Railway from Harriman. In 1901, purchasing the interests of Carnegie and merging them with other steel companies, he created the U.S.Steel Corporation, and in 1902 effected a similar organization of the International Harvester Com-

pany. His firm controlled other banks, insurance companies, manufacturing corporations, mines, shipping lines, and communications systems. Because of his tremendous wealth and power, and such actions as his gold speculation (1863) and his harsh terms in his $68,000,000 loan to the U.S. during the financial crisis of 1895, he became extremely unpopular. The Pujo Committee of the House of Representatives investigated the alleged money trust (1912) and disclosed the house of Morgan's tremendous financial ramifications, with its 72 directorships in 47 large corporations. In addition to his financial interests, Morgan was famous as a yachtsman, collector of books and paintings, and philanthropist.

JOHN PIERPONT MORGAN (1867–), his son, graduated from Harvard (1889), entered the London branch of the banking firm, and in 1913 became head of the J.P. Morgan and Company. The following year, the firm became the purchasing agent of military supplies for the Allies, which in the U.S. totalled some $2,500,000,000. In addition to raising huge loans and marketing American securities that European investors were forced to sell, the Morgan firm during the post-war period floated securities of foreign governments and corporations, worth more than $2,000,000,000. During the second decade of the century, the firm was very active in promoting the great mergers that distinguished American finance at the time. The Senate Committee on Banking and Currency investigated its relationships to numerous corporations and its methods of business (1933). Morgan continued his father's philanthropies, presented his London house to the U.S.embassy, gave his yacht, *Corsair*, to the U.S.Coast and Geodetic Survey, and built for himself another *Corsair*, the largest private yacht in the world. His father's library of manuscripts and rare books, housed in a separate building for the use of scholars, is known as the Morgan Library (q.v.).

MORGAN, LEWIS HENRY (1818–81), called 'the Father of American Anthropology,' became interested in ethnology through his membership in a New York secret society, the Gordian Knot, later called The Grand Order of the Iroquois, which superficially patterned itself after the Iroquois Confederacy. The casual desire to know more about Indian matters led Morgan into a serious investigation of the Iroquois, which in turn caused him to do research concerning other Indian tribes, and eventually world anthropology. His *League of the Ho-dé-no-sau-nee, or Iroquois* (1851) is considered the first scientific account of an Indian tribe. His discovery that the kinship system of the Iroquois was similar to that of all American Indians was set forth in *Systems of Consanguinity and Affinity of the Human Family* (1871), an important work on primitive society in general. This led him to propound the doctrine of a common origin and psychic unity of all human races, and a theory of social evolution in his *Ancient Society; or Researches in the Lines of Human Progress* (1877). He wrote many pamphlets and articles on related matters of ethnology, and made an important study of the minds of lower animals in *The American Beaver and His Works* (1868). A small selection of his unpublished diary was issued in 1938.

Morgan Library, originally the private library of the elder J.P.Morgan, was given to the public by his son. It is housed in an art gallery constructed by McKim, Mead, and White (1905), and an adjoining library building (1920), adjacent to the Morgan residence in New York City. In addition to some 30,000 books and manuscripts, there is a large collection of paintings, drawings, coins, and medals. Among the noteworthy categories in the collection are illuminated manuscripts, incunabula, early liturgical works, and manuscripts or first editions of great monuments in English and American literature and history. Since its establishment as a public institution, graduate courses have been founded, lectures given by prominent scholars, and important exhibitions arranged.

MORISON, SAMUEL ELIOT (1887–), professor of American history at Harvard and editor of *The New England Quarterly*. His books include: *Maritime History of Massachusetts* (1921); *The Oxford History of the United States* (2 vols.,1927); *Builders of the Bay Colony* (1930); *The Puritan Pronaos* (1936); and a comprehensive history of Harvard College. With H.S. Commager he wrote *The Growth of the American Republic* (2 vols.,1930).

Morituri Salutamus, poem in heroic couplets by Longfellow (q.v.), written

for the fiftieth anniversary of his class at Bowdoin, was collected in *The Masque of Pandora* (1875).

The title derives from the cry of the Roman gladiators, 'O Cæsar, we who are about to die salute you!,' and in the name of his now aged classmates the poet salutes the familiar scenes, the former teachers, and the young men who are taking the place of his generation, finally addressing his comrades themselves. In an elegiac mood, he recalls the joys and griefs of their long lives, then tells a story, adapted from the *Gesta Romanorum*, of the coming of death, and concludes by urging their continued activity and achievement, while life affords opportunity.

MORLEY, CHRISTOPHER [DARLINGTON] (1890–), New York author and journalist, was born in Pennsylvania, and educated at Haverford College and as a Rhodes Scholar at Oxford (1913). His more than 50 books are widely diverse in nature, some merging fiction and reminiscence, and all mainly integrated by the author's whimsical personality. His interest in bookselling is indicated in his novels, *Parnassus on Wheels* (1917), concerned with a quaint itinerant bookseller, and *The Haunted Bookshop* (1919). Other novels include *Where the Blue Begins* (q.v., 1922) and another fantasy, *Thunder on the Left* (1925); *The Swiss Family Manhattan* (1932); *The Trojan Horse* (1937), a modernized version of the story of Troilus and Cressida; *Human Being* (1932), the story of a publisher's salesman; and *Kitty Foyle* (1939), a realistic story of a girl of the lower middle class. Morley's poetry, marked by extreme sentimentality and derivative of the host of dissimilar authors he admires, includes *The Rocking Horse* (1919), *Chimneysmoke* (1921), *Parson's Pleasure* (1923), and such collections of humorous free verse as *Mandarin in Manhattan* (1933). He has written many books of essays and sketches, combining gossip and travel notes, which reflect his diverse enthusiasms and crotchets, and among these are *Shandygaff* (1918), *Tales from a Rolltop Desk* (1921), *John Mistletoe* (1931), *Hasta la Vista* (1935), and *History of an Autumn* (1938). In addition to writing several one-act plays, he revised and revived such old melodramas as *After Dark*, *The Black Crook*, and *The Blue and the Gray* for a Hoboken Theater that he helped manage (1928–30).

Mormon, name applied to the religious organization founded in New York state by Joseph Smith (q.v.). It is properly known as the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints. The headquarters are in Salt Lake City, while the Reorganized Church has headquarters in Independence, Missouri, the two branches having a combined membership of more than 771,000. Brigham Young (q.v.) succeeded Smith as head of the church, after which he excommunicated Smith's associate, Sidney Rigdon (q.v.), and led the members on a great pilgrimage from Nauvoo, Illinois, to Utah, where in 1847 they founded Salt Lake City. The government there is largely theocratic and consists of a complicated hierarchy. The literature connected with the Mormons and Mormonism is prodigious, but the cornerstone of their faith is the *Book of Mormon*, which according to the church is the word of the prophet Mormon, preserved since ancient times in plates of gold. It is said to have been revealed in 1827 by the angel Moroni to Joseph Smith, who, by the aid of the marvelous spectacles Urim and Thummim, translated the records for publication in 1830. The book gives an account of the American peoples from the Tower of Babel to the 5th century A.D., accounting for the Indians as the lost tribes of Israel. The restoration of these tribes, the rebuilding of Zion, and the reign of Christ upon earth are prophesied for the Mormon earthly paradise. Although its teachings are in general close to those of the Bible, the *Book of Mormon* emphasizes the doctrines of pre-existence, perfection, and an after-life, and stress is placed on the second coming of Christ. A further revelation was added (1843) that sanctioned polygamy, but this practice was prohibited by a church manifesto in 1890.

MORRELL, WILLIAM (*fl.*1623–5), Anglican clergyman, came to Massachusetts (1623) as a member of the ill-fated colony of Gorges. After the colony's failure, he remained for a year at Plymouth, returning to England to publish his poem *Nova Anglia*, or *New-England, or a Brief Enarration* (1625). This poem in Latin hexameters, with its author's translation into English heroic couplets, gives a vivid description of the country and the Indians, culminating in an appeal for Christian help to them.

MORRIS, GEORGE POPE (1802–64), New York journalist and poet, who occupied a minor position in the Knickerbocker Group. He became editor of the *New-York Mirror* (q.v.,1824), and won a temporary reputation for his drama, *Brier Cliff* (1826), and his operetta, *The Maid of Saxony* (1842), but is best known for his sentimental poems, which include the popular 'Woodman, Spare That Tree!' (1830), reprinted in *The Deserted Bride and Other Poems* (1838). His best prose work was *The Little Frenchman and His Water Lots, with Other Sketches of the Times* (1839), the title piece telling of a shrewd New York realtor and a guileless foreigner.

MORRIS, GOUVERNEUR (1752–1816), graduated from King's College (1768) and, after a brief but brilliant law career, entered politics. As a member of the New York landed aristocracy, he was a conservative, but at the outbreak of the Revolution he supported the patriot cause. In 1775 he became a member of the New York provincial congress, where he was active as a moderator and helped frame the first state constitution. A leader of the Continental Congress (1778–9), he drafted several important documents and wrote his *Observations on the American Revolution* (1779). Because of local politics, he failed to be re-elected, and, temporarily retiring from politics, moved to Philadelphia, where he resumed his law practice. A series of anonymous articles on finance (1780) resulted in his appointment to assist Robert Morris as superintendent of finance (1781–5). In 1787 he was elected to the Constitutional Convention, where he favored a strong centralized government in the hands of the upper class, for he was frankly cynical concerning democracy. In 1789 he went to France as a business agent for the U.S. He was appointed U.S.minister (1792), but was recalled after two years, at the request of the French, because of his opposition to their Revolution. In the Senate (1800–1803), he continued to show himself a stanch Federalist. In addition to his *Diary and Letters* (2 vols.,1888), his *Diary of the French Revolution* has been published (2 vols.,1938).

MORRIS, ROBERT (1734–1806), born in England, came to America (*c.*1747), where he entered business, displaying such aptitude in financial matters that in his early twenties he held a leading position in the trade and banking of Philadelphia and of America in general. He opposed the Stamp Act, became a member of the Continental Congress (1775–8), signed the Declaration of Independence, and aided the patriot cause financially, although he always remained a moderate in the Revolution. He was superintendent of finance of the new nation (1781–4) and in this position organized a national bank, borrowed from European nations, levied taxes, economized on government expenditures, and was the financial mainstay of the Union. He was a member of the Constitutional Convention, and as senator from Pennsylvania (1789–95) was a Federalist supporter of a strong central government. His own business affairs failed because of unsuccessful speculations in western land. He not only lost his large fortune, but went through bankruptcy, was placed in debtors' prison (1798–1801), and died a forgotten and broken man.

MORRIS, THOMAS (*fl.*1741–67), English-born soldier, served in America in the French and Indian Wars (1758–67), leaving a record of his very dramatic activities in his *Miscellanies in Prose and Verse* (1791). *Quashy; or, The Coal-Black Maid* (1796) is a light narrative poem, and other poems are collected in *Songs Political and Convivial* (1802).

MORROW, HONORÉ WILLSIE (1880–1940), born in Iowa, before making her home in New York lived for a time in Arizona. The West was the background of her early novels, mainly concerned with pleas for desert and forest reclamation and a return to the faith of the pioneers: *The Heart of the Desert* (1913), *Still Jim* (1915), *Lydia of the Pines* (1917), *The Forbidden Trail* (1919), *The Enchanted Canyon* (1921), *Judith of the Godless Valley* (1922), *The Exile of the Lariat* (1923), and *The Devonshers* (1924). From 1914 to 1919 she edited *The Delineator*. Her later books include: *We Must March* (1925), dealing with Marcus Whitman and his wife, pioneers of the Northwest; *Forever Free* (1927), *With Malice Toward None* (1928), and *The Last Full Measure* (1930), a trilogy dealing with Lincoln; *The Splendor of God* (1929), a novel concerned with Adoniram Judson; *The Father of Little Women* (1927), a study of Alcott; *Mary Todd Lincoln* (1928); *Tiger! Tiger!* (1930),

about John B. Gough, a temperance lecturer; *Black Daniel* (1931), the story of Daniel Webster; and *Demon Daughter* (1939), 'the confession of a modern girl and her mother.'

MORSE, JEDEDIAH (1761–1826), orthodox Congregational clergyman of Connecticut, founded *The Panoplist* (1805), a periodical to combat the growing Unitarianism. He was interested in missionary work among the Indians, his visits to various tribes resulting in the important *Report to the Secretary of War . . . on Indian Affairs* (1822). He was conservative in politics as in religion, and to oppose the influence of French republicanism founded a Federalist periodical, *The Mercury and New England Palladium* (1801). His *Geography Made Easy* (1784) was the first geography published in the U.S., and, along with his later works in this field, won him the title, 'father of American geography.' With Elijah Parish he wrote *A Compendious History of New England* (1804), which brought accusations of plagiarism from Hannah Adams. He was also the author of *Annals of the American Revolution* (1824).

SAMUEL FINLEY BREESE MORSE (1791–1872), his son, graduated from Yale (1810) and studied painting in England under Benjamin West and Washington Allston. Returning to the U.S. (1815), he turned to portraiture because he failed to find commissions for large historical works. Among his solidly constructed character studies are those of Cooper and Bryant, while the *Old House of Representatives* exhibits his ability in painting historical scenes. Unable to maintain himself as an artist, Morse and some associates began to experiment on the electric telegraph (1832), which was successfully demonstrated in 1844. He later experimented with submarine cable telegraphy and the daguerrotype.

Mortal Antipathy, A, novel by Holmes (q.v.) published in 1885.

Maurice Kirkwood, son of a wealthy American family, is educated in Europe, and grows to manhood normal except in one respect. He suffers from 'a mortal antipathy' to beautiful young women, the result of an experience during his infancy, when his young cousin Laura accidentally dropped him into a thornbush. The shock to his nervous system had a permanent effect and he has always associated young women with pain and terror. Once in Italy, however, a gipsy fortuneteller told him: 'Fair lady cast a spell on thee—Fair lady's hand shall set thee free.' As a young man he returns to America, where he lives in a small New England village as a recluse. During an attack of typhoid, he is tended by Dr. Butts, who learns his story. While he is still ill, Kirkwood's house is burned, and he is saved only by the strength and daring of Lurida Vincent, an athletic enthusiast and student at the local young ladies' school. Kirkwood's antipathy is cured by this new shock, after which he is able to associate beautiful womanhood with salvation. Lurida helps nurse him to health, and they marry. Kirkwood anxiously watches for evidence of his phobia in their son, but his cousin Laura visits them and the child fearlessly cuddles in her arms.

MORTON, CHARLES (*c.*1627–98), English Puritan clergyman and founder of a school for Nonconformists, whose pupils included the English author Daniel Defoe. Opposition to his school caused him to emigrate to Massachusetts in 1686, where after failing to achieve his desire of becoming president of Harvard he founded a school that might have become a rival college, had not Harvard throttled it and compensated him by electing him fellow (1692) and vice president (1697). He was an intellectual leader of the community, a prominent minister, the author of textbooks on science and logic, and wrote several volumes on religious subjects.

MORTON, GEORGE (1585–1624), converted to Puritanism by William Brewster, became closely associated with the leaders of the movement in England and Holland. When others went to America, he returned to England to become the chief agent of the Pilgrims. At this time he used the name Mourt, and *Mourt's Relation* (q.v.) is the title generally given to *A Relation . . . of the . . . Plantation Setled at Plimoth . . .* (1622). Morton came to New England in 1623, where his son Nathaniel was later prominent.

MORTON, NATHANIEL (1613–86), emigrated to the Plymouth colony (1623) with his father, George Morton, after whose death he lived with his uncle, William Bradford, whom he served as clerk and amanuensis. He became secretary of the colony and keeper of its records (1647

85), held a similar position in the Congregational church, and was prominent in colonial affairs. His book, *New Englands Memoriall* (1669), a history of New England from its beginnings to the date of publication, was, he admitted, based on the journal of Edward Winslow and his uncle's papers; it was considered extremely important until 1855, when the lost manuscript of Bradford's *History of Plimmoth Plantation* was discovered, and it was found that Morton had transcribed large parts of it almost verbatim. Until that date, however, Morton's work had been the basis of histories by William Hubbard, Thomas Prince, and Cotton Mather. An extended version was written in 1680 and published in 1855, but again it was drawn largely from Bradford's papers.

MORTON, Oliver Perry (1823–77), Civil War governor of Indiana (1861–7), believed that the war should be made 'instant and terrible,' and, despite the opposition of his Democratic legislature, enlisted men, thwarted plots by Copperheads, and prosecuted the business of war as the dictator of his state. He served in the Senate (1867–77), where he was an extremist in Reconstruction legislation. His speeches and papers were published in 1864.

MORTON, Sarah Wentworth (1759–1846), Boston writer, long supposed to be the author of *The Power of Sympathy* (1789), which is now attributed to William Hill Brown. This, the first novel written in America, dealt with a contemporary scandal of incest and suicide in the Morton family, and its anonymity gave rise to the mistaken theory of authorship. Under the pseudonym 'Philenia, a Lady of Boston,' Mrs.Morton wrote *Ouâbi: or The Virtues of Nature* (1790), an Indian tale in four cantos, celebrating the 'noble savage,' and *Beacon Hill: A Local Poem, Historic and Descriptive* (1797), an unfinished epic in heroic couplets, influenced by Milton and Gray. A section of *Beacon Hill* was separately published as *The Virtues of Society* (1799), telling of a wounded English major and his wife during the Revolution. In 1823, under her real name, appeared *My Mind and Its Thoughts*, fragments of prose and poetry.

MORTON, Thomas (1590?–1647), British trader and adventurer, probably originally a lawyer, first visited New England in 1622 or 1624, and returned in 1625 as a member of the party of Captain Wollaston, to settle on the site of the present Quincy, Massachusetts. When Wollaston left for Virginia at the end of the winter, Morton remained as head of the settlement, which he renamed Ma-re-Mount, whence it was called Merry Mount (q.v.). He was soon in the bad graces of the near-by Plymouth Colony, because he was an Anglican given to what the Pilgrims considered licentious practices, and because he hampered the Plymouth trading and violated the frontier code by trading gunpowder and liquor to the Indians for furs. In 1628 a band under Myles Standish attacked Morton's colony in a comic-opera skirmish, captured the leader, and sent him under arrest to England, on charges of trading arms to the Indians and harboring runaway servants. He returned in 1629, to find most of his colony scattered. In 1630 he was taken into custody, sentenced to have his goods confiscated, his house burned, and himself again returned to England. There he was released from jail through the aid of Gorges, who used him in an attempt to void the charter of the Massachusetts Bay Company. In 1637 his *New England Canaan* (q.v.) was published. He returned to Massachusetts (1643), was ordered to leave, and went to Maine and Rhode Island. When he once again ventured into the colony, he was imprisoned for a year on slight pretext. Released, he made his way to Maine, where he died two years later. The Plymouth view of him and his group appears in Bradford's *History of Plimmoth Plantation* and in Winthrop's *Journal.*

MORTON, William Thomas Green (1819–68), Boston dentist, who in 1846 publicly performed operations under an anæsthetic agent (sulphuric ether), which he called 'letheon.' This first public demonstration of the successful use of anæsthetics gained Morton great fame, though similar discoveries had previously been made by Crawford W. Long (q.v.) and Morton's friends, Professor Charles T. Jackson and Horace Wells. Upon public revelation of these earlier uses, a long controversy raged as to who was first in this field. Morton in 1847 published a book on his work and also issued weekly circulars on his experimentation.

MOSES, Montrose J[onas] (1878–1934),

editor and dramatic critic, whose works include *The Literature of the South* (1909), *The American Dramatist* (1911), and an edition of the plays of Clyde Fitch, whose biography he wrote.

MOSHER, THOMAS BIRD (1852–1923), Maine publisher, whose 'Mosher Books,' a series begun in 1891, were attractively printed cheap editions of great works of literature little known in the U.S. *The Bibelot* (1895–1915) was a monthly reprint of prose and poetry from obscure but significant works, which both in selection and in printing was marked by his usual good taste.

Mosses from an Old Manse, tales and sketches written by Hawthorne (q.v.) during his residence (1842–6) at the Old Manse in Concord. They were published in two volumes (1846), with an introductory essay on 'The Old Manse,' followed by 25 short stories and historical sketches. Among them are historical pieces, like 'Roger Malvin's Burial' (q.v.); satirical allegories, like 'The Celestial Railroad' (q.v.); and allegorical tales of the supernatural, like 'Young Goodman Brown,' 'Rappaccini's Daughter,' 'The Birthmark,' and 'The Artist of the Beautiful' (qq.v.).

Mother Carey's Chickens, story for children by Kate Wiggin (q.v.).

Mother Goose, see *Songs for the Nursery*.

Mother Lode, name applied to the gold-mining region of northern and central California, specifically to a belt running northeast by southwest from Mariposa, near Yosemite, to Georgetown, a distance of 110 miles. Gold was first mined there in 1849, and is still profitably extracted. The production since 1880 is said to amount to some $376,000,000. Literary associations of the region derive primarily from Bret Harte and Clemens, who worked there briefly as miners, and used it as background for stories and sketches. It is the scene of many other stories, novels, and poems.

Mother's Recompense, The, novel by Edith Wharton (q.v.) published in 1925.

Kate Clephane, after aimless, unattached years as an expatriate in Europe, returns to New York to live with her daughter Anne, whom she has not seen since deserting her husband and infant child long before. Kate has always been governed by her selfish impulses, and she is glad to be taken in charge by Anne's strong will. She finds New York society more tolerant than it had been in her youth, and since no one remembers the history of her indiscretions she is happy for a time. Among Anne's friends, however, is Chris Fenno, an artist and major in the World War. Although ten years younger than Kate, he has lived with her in Europe, and she regards him as the great love of her life. When Anne reveals that she and Chris are to be married, Kate makes him promise to give up Anne, whom he had not known was her daughter. In the ensuing conflict between mother and daughter, Anne finds that it was her mother who drove Chris away, and demands to know the reason. Kate cannot bring herself to confess that Chris has been her own lover, and Anne's superior will dominates. Chris and Anne are married, but Kate, who has announced she will marry Fred Landers, an old friend and Anne's guardian, cannot face this fate, and, once more acting on impulse, returns to the Riviera to forget her sorrows in this familiar Nirvana.

Motion pictures, introduced in the U.S. by Edison (1896), who with Muybridge and various English and French inventors is credited with creating the essential techniques. Early films were exhibited as curiosities in vaudeville or at small makeshift theaters, which came to be called 'nickelodeons' because of their price of admission. Edison's *The Great Train Robbery* (1903) is considered the first motion picture to present a continuous narrative, and its successors for several years were equally brief and melodramatic. Hollywood (q.v.) became the center of American motion-picture production soon after the establishment of studios there (1908), when such directors as D.W.Griffith (q.v.) and Thomas H. Ince began to raise the mechanical and artistic standards of the films. The first full-length pictures were made in Europe and it was not until the success of Griffith's *The Birth of a Nation* (1914) that the shorter form fell into disuse for serious subjects. Already Mack Sennett had become famous for his Keystone 'Cops' and 'Bathing Beauties,' the most successful early motion-picture comedians, featuring such slapstick performers as 'Fatty' Arbuckle, Ben Turpin, Mabel Normand, Buster Keaton, and Harold Lloyd. Sennett also employed

Charlie Chaplin (q.v.), later considered the greatest pantomimist developed by the films, whose most notable independent productions include *The Kid* (1920), with the child actor Jackie Coogan, *The Gold Rush* (1925), and *Modern Times* (1936). Other famous actors of silent pictures included Theda Bara, Mary Pickford, John Barrymore, Douglas Fairbanks, Lon Chaney, Lilian Gish, Tom Mix, William S. Hart, Emil Jannings, Erich von Stroheim, Gloria Swanson, and Rudolph Valentino. A revolution in cinema technique occurred in 1927–8, when the sound picture was introduced. *The Jazz Singer* (1927) was the first picture with music, and after 1928 nearly all pictures had spoken dialogue. New actors, scenarists, and directors arose, together with new types of films that explored the possibilities of music and dialogue; although fundamentally the motion picture has remained a visual art, its most important component being action which appeals to the eye. In recent times most U.S. motion pictures have been made in Hollywood (q.v.). Featured players in sound pictures have included James Cagney, Fred Astaire, Charles Boyer, W.C. Fields, Paul Muni, Charles Laughton, Bette Davis, the Marx Brothers, Gary Cooper, Greta Garbo, Edward G. Robinson, and Norma Shearer. Through mass production, the shrewd exploitation of desires for vicarious enjoyment, and sentimental publicity concerning their stars, motion pictures have grown to be one of America's wealthiest industries, with gross annual box-office receipts in the U.S. of $1,000,000,000, representing not only the production of comedies and dramas with living actors, but also of newsreels and other documentary films, and of animated cartoons, whose most celebrated producer is Walt Disney (q.v.). Nevertheless, with some notable exceptions, motion pictures in general are considered to compare unfavorably with contemporary American novels and plays, whether in character portrayal, dramatic structure, truth to life, or philosophic import. Dominated by the desire for large profits, and thus by the need to please an audience of many millions, Hollywood has usually sacrificed sincerity for popular forms of excitement and the sentimental 'happy ending.' The original meaning of the novels and plays that are adapted is usually lost by the distortion of plots and characters to fit various conventions, and, although producers have combed European and American literature for materials, and often employ leading authors as scenarists, their successes have been mainly based on original scenarios or on literature comprehensively altered for their purposes.

MOTLEY, John Lothrop (1814–77), descendant of an old and prominent Boston family, after graduation from Harvard (1831) studied for two years in Germany, toured the continent, returned to Boston and married the sister of Park Benjamin, and began to study law, though primarily interested in literature. He wrote two novels, *Morton's Hope* (1839), a semi-autobiographical account of an American at a German university, and *Merry Mount* (1849), a romantic novel concerning the colony of Thomas Morton. After a year as secretary of legation at St.Petersburg and another in Massachusetts politics, he turned in 1847 to his lifelong work of a historical study of the Netherlands. The subject may have been chosen because he liked the analogy between the United Provinces and the United States, and because it gave him an opportunity to study the triumph of Protestantism in Northern Europe and show how it brought freedom where previously there was despotism. He began his work in the U.S., then went to Germany and Holland for further material. The book appeared as *The Rise of the Dutch Republic* (3 vols.,1856) after ten years of preparation. In a picturesque and dramatic manner, he enthusiastically presented the political and religious history of the country. Although he neglected economic and social matters, he arranged his whole canvas around the two subjects of Protestantism and absolutism, making William of Orange the Protestant hero and Philip II the dark-dyed, autocratic, Catholic scoundrel. His continued research bore fruit in the *History of the United Netherlands* (4 vols.,1860,'67), which deals with the period from William's death to the truce of 1609. The period from 1609 to the Thirty Years' War was treated in *The Life and Death of John of Barneveld* (2 vols.,1874). A fourth section dealing with the Thirty Years' War and bringing the history down to 1648 was planned but never completed. Although the series was unfinished, his books have a

great sweep and a unified pattern, which possess as a core the study of the Protestant movement in developing civilization and liberty, which Motley thought had determined the course of European and American history for the modern ages. The long interval between the appearance of the first two volumes and the second two of the *History of the United Netherlands* was partly owing to his duties as minister to Austria (1861–7), in which he proved himself an able diplomat but was recalled by President Johnson as the result of a political struggle. In 1869–70 he was minister to Great Britain, from which post he was recalled because of disagreement in matters arising out of the Alabama claims. Had it not been for political disputes, he would probably have been considered an outstanding diplomat.

Motley Assembly, The, see *Warren, Mercy Otis.*

Motor Boys, The, series of books for boys by Edward Stratemeyer (q.v.).

MOTT, FRANK LUTHER (1886–), director of the School of Journalism at the State University of Iowa, an editor of *The Midland*, and author of books that include *Six Prophets Out of the Middle West* (1917); *The Literature of Pioneer Life in Iowa* (1923); and *A History of American Magazines* (1930–), which won the Pulitzer Prize in 1939. *American Journalism* (1941) is a history of U.S. newspapers.

MOTT, LUCRETIA (1793–1880), Massachusetts Quaker, follower of Elias Hicks, and Abolitionist leader who made her home a station of the underground railroad. In 1848 she was a leader in calling the first convention for woman suffrage in the U.S. Her husband, James Mott (1788–1868), was associated with her in various reform movements.

Mouchoir, Le, romance by Cooper (q.v.).

MOULTON, [ELLEN] LOUISE CHANDLER (1835–1908), Connecticut author of juvenile stories, travel books, short biographies, and such fiction as *Juno Clifford* (1855), a novel, and *This, That, and the Other* (1854), sketches. She was best known for her melancholy, subjective poetry, collected in *Poems and Sonnets* (1909).

Mound-Builders, prehistoric inhabitants of North America, whose remains, in large mounds of earth and rock, are found throughout the U.S., but chiefly in the Mississippi and Ohio River valleys. Considered to be ancestors of later Indian tribes, they themselves belonged to more than one race, and were evidently possessed of an advanced Stone Age culture. In their curious earth structures artifacts of stone, bone, shell, and beaten metals have been discovered, together with skeletons, some of which resemble animals.

Mount Holyoke College, situated at South Hadley, Massachusetts, was founded by Mary Lyon (1836) as a female seminary. It is the oldest women's college in the U.S. Students have included Emily Dickinson (1847–48) and Mary Wilkins Freeman (1870–71).

Mount Vernon, situated on the Potomac River, near Alexandria, Virginia, was the estate of George Washington. The mansion, built by his half-brother Lawrence in 1743, was rented by Lawrence's widow to Washington from 1752 until he inherited it (1761). Washington is buried in a simple brick tomb which he designed on the property. The estate became a public monument in 1860.

Mountain Blood, novel by Hergesheimer (q.v.).

Mountain Interval, poems by Robert Frost (q.v.).

Mountaineering in the Sierra Nevada, sketches of explorations and experiences in the California mountains, by Clarence King (q.v.), published in 1872 and revised from the author's notes in 1902. King had been employed in the U.S. geological survey since 1863, and the book gives an accurate account of the geology and geography of the Sierras. Its chief importance, however, is based on its vivid narratives of mountain-climbing adventures in Yosemite Park and on Mount Tyndall, Mount Shasta, and Mount Whitney, and of meetings with picturesque and typical characters, such as the chapters on 'The Newtys of Pike,' concerning a family of emigrants from Pike County; 'Cut-off Copples's,' describing a frontier artist and his rustic romance; 'The People,' explaining the behavior of Californians by a theory of climatic influence; and 'Kaweah's Run,' an account of an escape from desperadoes.

Mountains of California, The, descriptive work by John Muir (q.v.), published in 1894 and revised in 1911. Describing

the geological history and the varieties of flora and fauna of the region, the study is the result of many summers spent by the author in both the Sierra Nevada and the Coast Range, and besides its scientific authority presents an enthusiastic appreciation of the beauties of the California wilderness. The text, accompanied by Muir's own drawings, describes the glacial actions that created such landmarks as the Yosemite Valley, tells of the lakes, forests, and fauna, including wild sheep and domesticated bees, and recounts anecdotes of the author's mountaineering adventures. Famous chapters deal with 'The Water-Ouzel,' 'A Wind-Storm in the Forests,' 'Sierra Thunder-Storms,' 'The River Floods,' and 'The Douglas Squirrel.'

Mourning Becomes Electra, dramatic trilogy by O'Neill (q.v.), produced and published in 1931. Based on the ancient Greek legend, its three parts are: (I) *Homecoming*; (II) *The Hunted*; (III) *The Haunted.*

I. At the close of the Civil War, Brigadier-General Ezra Mannon, descendant of a Puritan family, returns to his New England home, where he is awaited by his wife Christine and daughter Lavinia. During his absence and that of her adored soldier son, Orin, Christine has had a liaison with the clipper captain Adam Brant, son of Ezra's brother and a family servant, who intended to avenge his mother's disgrace, but instead fell in love with the sensual Christine. Mother and daughter hate each other, for Lavinia is the victim of an inner conflict between her Mannon heritage and the elements of her nature inherited from Christine. Herself in love with Brant, she suspects her mother's relations with him and forces from him the truth. Peter Niles, a childhood friend, loves Lavinia, but she tells him that she hates love and will never marry. When Ezra comes home, it is revealed that he hates his son Orin for possessing Christine's love, which he himself never attained. Pretending to give him medicine, Christine poisons her husband from a box which Brant supplied her, and which Lavinia discovers. II. Orin returns, to find his father dead and his mother distracted and changed. He resumes an old affair with Hazel, Peter's sister, but Lavinia persuades him to join her revenge plot. They follow Christine to a rendezvous on Brant's ship, and, after she leaves, Orin kills Brant. When Christine learns of this, she commits suicide. III. Lavinia and Orin go on a long voyage that takes them to the South Sea islands. By the time they return, Orin, harried by guilt and remorse, has grown to resemble his father, while Lavinia, freed of the puritan repressions, has the beauty and amorality of her mother. She wants to marry Peter and now encourages Orin's affair with Hazel, but Orin, preoccupied with writing a confession, breaks with his fiancée, makes an incestuous proposal to Lavinia, and shoots himself. Lavinia makes love to Peter, but he leaves her, repelled by her eagerness. She concludes, 'Love isn't permitted to me. The dead are too strong!,' and enters the shuttered house, to spend the rest of her life alone with the memory of the Mannon dead.

Mourt's Relation, journal of the voyage of the *Mayflower*, record of the 'compact,' and description of the earliest days of Plymouth Colony. This anonymous document, published in England (1622) as *A Relation or Journall of the Beginning and Proceedings of the English Plantation Setled at Plimoth in New England*, has received its usual name from the signature 'G.Mourt,' attributed to George Morton (q.v.), who at that time used the name Mourt. It may be the work of Edward Winslow and William Bradford, with Morton merely acting as publisher, or a compilation by Morton of their narratives and information from other colonists. This first account of the Plymouth settlement is a vivid piece of prose, but the fact that it consists of extemporaneous jottings has caused it to be overshadowed by subsequent works.

Moving pictures, see *Motion pictures.*

MOWATT, Anna Cora (1819–70), pursued a literary career in New York as a hack writer of widely varied material, until in 1845 her farcical social comedy, *Fashion* (q.v.), gave her the position of a respected author. This play was followed by a romantic prose and verse drama of the reign of Louis XV, *Armand, the Child of the People* (1847). In 1845 she went on the stage, and achieved great success, which she discussed in her *Autobiography of an Actress* (1854), and which furnished material for her romantic narratives of stage life, *Mimic Life* (1856) and *Twin Roses* (1857). After 1861, she lived abroad, where she wrote romantic novels and his-

torical sketches. Her earlier novels of New York society include *The Fortune Hunter* (1844) and *Evelyn; or, A Heart Unmasked* (1845).

Muckraking movement received its name from Theodore Roosevelt (1906) in his attack upon allegedly biased and sweeping charges of corruption in politics and business. The term originally alluded to a character in *Pilgrim's Progress*, who was so intent upon raking up muck that he could not see a celestial crown held over him. The muckraking movement in the U.S. began in 1902 and in four years had spread throughout the nation. It reached another climax in 1911, but ended as a movement with America's entry into the First World War. The *Arena*, a dignified journal of protest, was the precursor of many popular magazines that became the medium for the exposure of unscrupulous methods and motives in private business and in city, state, and national government. *Everybody's*, *McClure's*, the *Independent*, *Collier's*, and the *Cosmopolitan* were the leading periodicals devoted to the movement, and among their principal authors were Ida Tarbell ('History of the Standard Oil Company'), Lincoln Steffens ('The Struggle for Self-Government'), T.W.Lawson ('Frenzied Finance'), R.S.Baker, S.S.McClure, Mark Sullivan, and Samuel Hopkins Adams. A few newspapers, particularly the New York *World* and Kansas City *Star*, aided materially in the campaign, and such books as *The Jungle* and the novels of D.G.Phillips carried the movement into fiction. An account of its development is given in the *Autobiography* of Steffens.

Mudjekeewis, character in *Hiawatha* (q.v.).

Muggletonians, religious sect founded by Lodowick Muggleton (1609–98) and his cousin John Reeve in England, which contended that the doctrine of the Trinity is false, that God has a human body and is synonymous with Christ, that Elijah was appointed his vice-regent in heaven when He descended to die on the cross, and that Eve is the devil incarnate. This sect, although it had no wide following, had some believers in 19th-century New England.

Mugwumps, term applied to those Republicans who refused to support Blaine's presidential candidacy (1884) and campaigned instead for Cleveland. In more recent politics, it refers to those who do not belong to a party, or who vote for another party's candidate. The word comes from the language of the Algonquian Indians, and is used in Eliot's translation of the Bible to mean 'leader' or 'big chief.'

MUIR, JOHN (1838–1914), naturalist and explorer, was born in Scotland, brought to the U.S. (1849), and educated in chemistry, geology, and botany at the University of Wisconsin. Inspired to further study of these subjects, he made extended journeys throughout the U.S., often on foot. The journal of his trip (1868) from Indiana to the West Coast was published as *A Thousand-Mile Walk to the Gulf* (1916). California was thereafter his home, and in the following years he studied the glacial formations of the West and the forests of the region, becoming a leader in the forest-conservation movement through his impassioned writings. His books include: *The Story of My Boyhood and Youth* (1913); *The Mountains of California* (q.v.,1894); *Our National Parks* (1901); *Stickeen* (1909), a sentimental short story about a dog; *My First Summer in the Sierra* (1911); *The Yosemite* (1912); *Travels in Alaska* (1915); and *Steep Trails* (1918).

MULFORD, CLARENCE E[DWARD] (1883–), author of popular romantic novels about Western cowboys, which include: *Bar-20* (1907), *Hopalong Cassidy* (1910), *Hopalong Cassidy Returns* (1924), and *Bar-20 Rides Again* (1926).

MULFORD, PRENTICE (1834–91), California humorist and journalist, whose newspaper writings earned him a local reputation. *Prentice Mulford's Story* (1889) is an account of his life up to 1872, when he left California, and *The Swamp Angel* (1888) is a description of his Thoreau-like retreat to the woods of New Jersey in the '80's. His attitude of mind changed during this period, and he turned to writing theosophic essays.

Mulligan Guard, The, song by Edward Harrigan (q.v.).

MUMFORD, LEWIS (1895–), born in New York, after being educated at City College, Columbia University, and New York University, without receiving a degree, became a critic for magazines in London and New York. His first book, *The Story of Utopias* (1922), was followed

by *Sticks and Stones* (1924), which interpreted American life and thought in terms of the architecture that it produced. *The Golden Day* (1926) rounded out his previous study of American life by analyzing it in relation to its literature, particularly that of the romantic period. *Herman Melville* (1929) is a critical biography, primarily concerned with a psychological investigation of its subject. *The Brown Decades* (1931) is a study of the arts in the U.S. from the close of the Civil War to 1895, seeing that period's development in architecture, engineering, landscape design, and painting as comparable with the earlier 'Golden Day' in literature. *Technics and Civilization* (1934) was followed by *The Culture of Cities* (1938), an analysis of the physical and social composition of cities in the western world since the tenth century, and a plea for a reconstruction of the 20th century 'megalopolis' through regional planning and communal ownership of land. *Faith for Living* (1940) is a plea for moral regeneration based on renewal of family ties, relationship with the soil, and discipline. In addition to writing his books, Mumford has continued as a magazine critic, has founded *The American Caravan*, and held lectureships at the New School for Social Research and Dartmouth (1931–5).

MUNFORD, Robert (*d.*1784), Virginia Revolutionary major, whose writings were published in the posthumous *Collection of Plays and Poems* (1798). In addition to his light poems and his translation of Ovid's *Metamorphoses* (Book One), the book contains his plays, *The Candidates*, a satire on country elections that introduces probably the first Negro in American drama, and *The Patriots* (q.v.).

MUNROE, Kirk (1850–1930), author of books for children. *The Flamingo Feather* (1887), inspired by a residence among the Seminole Indians of Florida, is concerned with 16th-century Florida and the sprightly Réné de Veaux, a companion of Laudonière, who became a member of an Indian tribe allied with the French. His other books deal with adventures in remote regions of the U.S. or with historical events ranging from Pontiac's Rebellion to the Spanish-American War.

Munsey's (1889–1929), New York weekly magazine founded by Frank A. Munsey as a popular journal 'with pictures and art and Good Cheer and human interest throughout.' In 1891 it became a monthly, patterned on *McClure's* and the *Cosmopolitan*. Although it featured articles of popular interest, in addition to fiction, the magazine never entered into the muckraking movement with the fervor of its competitors. Its policy continued with little change, until it was combined with the popular fiction magazine, *All-Story*.

MUNSON, Gorham B. (1896–), New York critic, contributor to many periodicals, and editor of the little magazine, *Secession* (1922-4), who has described his critical approach as 'post-Nietzschean or radically religious.' He was at one time a follower of the New Humanism but has become a literary exponent of Social Credit theories. His books include: *Waldo Frank: A Study* (1923), *Robert Frost: A Study in Sensibility and Good Sense* (1927), *Destinations: A Canvass of American Literature Since* 1900 (1928), *Style and Form in American Prose* (1929), and *The Dilemma of the Liberated* (1930).

MÜNSTERBERG, Hugo (1863–1916), born in Danzig, was educated in Germany, where he was a professor of philosophy and psychology until he came to the U.S. to teach psychology at Harvard (1892–5,1897–1916). There he distinguished himself in the fields of applied psychology and philosophy, and wrote such books as *The Principles of Art Education* (1905); *The Eternal Values* (1909), an idealistic view of philosophy, morality, and æsthetics; and *American Traits from the Point of View of a German* (1901).

MURAT, Achille (1801–47), son of Joachim Murat and Caroline, a sister of Napoleon I, became crown prince when his father was made king of Naples (1808), but after his father's defeat by the Austrians (1815) emigrated elsewhere on the continent, and then to the U.S. in 1823, where he settled in Florida, married an American woman, and regarded himself as an American. Although he spent a short while on the continent, attempting to advance the Bonapartist cause, he lived most of the latter part of his life in the U.S. His works include: *Lettres sur les États-Unis* (1830), a republican manifesto to Europe; *Esquisse morale et politique des États-Unis* (1832), a philosophic account of American society (English translations 1833, 1849); and *Exposition des principes du gouvernement républicain, tel qu'il a été perfectionné en Amérique* (1833).

Murder in the Cathedral, verse drama by T.S.Eliot (q.v.) produced and published in 1935.

In A.D. 1170, Archbishop Thomas Becket returns to Canterbury from his seven-year exile in France. A women's chorus represents the helpless attitude of the common people toward the schism between church and state, while the ecclesiastical party is represented by Becket's priests, and the royal party by the officers of Henry II. The archbishop, having established relations with the Pope and the king of France, is determined to bring the argument to a crisis, even though he realizes that his life is at stake. Four Tempters show the inner conflict involved in his decision: his youthful love of pleasure, his later ambition for power, the demands of the feudal barons, and the desire for martyrdom. Rejecting all four, he is certain that he must give his life 'to the Law of God above the Law of Man,' and on Christmas morning delivers a sermon defending this position. Four days later the king's knights arrive, insolent and self-assured, to murder him by royal command, and he refuses to attempt escape. After they stab him to death, the knights address the audience with a pompous, foolish defense of their deed. They withdraw, leaving the stage to the priests, who thank God for having 'given us another Saint in Canterbury,' and the chorus, which supplicates divine mercy.

Murders in the Rue Morgue, The, story by Poe (q.v.), published in 1841 and collected in the *Prose Tales of Edgar A. Poe* (1843). It is his first tale of ratiocination and in it he is considered to have created the genre of the detective story (q.v.).

The narrator lives in Paris with his friend C.Auguste Dupin, an eccentric genius of extraordinary analytic powers. They read an account of the murders of a Mme L'Espanaye and her daughter Camille in their fourth-story apartment in the Rue Morgue. The police are puzzled by the crime, for its brutal manner indicates that the murderer possessed superhuman strength and agility; his voice, overheard by neighbors, was grotesque and unintelligible; and they can discover no motive. Dupin undertakes to solve the mystery as an exercise in ratiocination. After examining the evidence and visiting the scene of the murders to find new clues, he deduces the fact that the criminal is an ape. An advertisement brings to Dupin's apartment a sailor who confesses that an orang-outang, which he brought to Paris to sell, escaped and committed the murders. The police release a former suspect, and the ape is recaptured and sold to the Jardin des Plantes.

MURDOCH, Frank Hitchcock (1843–72), actor and playwright, none of whose plays has been published. They include: *The Keepers of Lighthouse Cliff*, which supposedly influenced Herne's *Shore Acres; Only a Jew* (1873), a sentimental comedy; *Davy Crockett* (1872), a melodramatic backwoods story, substantially revised by Frank Mayo (q.v.); and *Bohemia, or The Lottery of Art* (1872), an anonymous satire on dramatic critics.

MUREL, see *Murrell.*

MURFREE, Mary Noailles (1850–1922), born in Murfreesboro, Tennessee, spent most of her life in her native state, which she described in her local-color fiction published under the pseudonym Charles Egbert Craddock. She published dialect short stories of life in the Cumberland Mountains in *Lippincott's* and the *Atlantic Monthly*, during the 1870's, and in 1884 issued her first collection, *In the Tennessee Mountains* (q.v.), but it was not until the following year that the editor of the *Atlantic* and the public discovered that the author was a frail, crippled spinster whose pseudonym was derived from the name of the hero in a very early story. The rhythmical prose and general atmosphere of her tales, and the poetic descriptions of landscape, are romantic, although the careful reproduction of the native dialect and faithful descriptions of specific details give them a realistic appearance. The first volume of stories was followed by more than ten others, including *Down the Ravine* (1885), *The Prophet of the Great Smoky Mountains* (1885), *The Mystery of Witchface Mountain* (1895), and *The Young Mountaineers* (1897). In addition, Miss Murfree wrote a series of Southern historical novels, which include: *Where the Battle Was Fought* (1884) and *The Storm Centre* (1905), Civil War tales; *The Story of Old Fort Loudon* (1899); and *A Spectre of Power* (1903), *The Frontiersman* (1904), and *The Amulet* (1906), dealing with the colonial period in the old Southwest, and the life of the Cherokee Indians.

MURIETTA, see *Murrieta.*

MURRAY, JOHN (1741–1815), founder of Universalism (q.v.) in America, was born in England, and reared as a Calvinist and Wesleyan. He joined the congregation of Whitefield, but was excommunicated by him when he openly accepted Universalism. Emigrating to America (1770), he became an itinerant preacher of this doctrine in New Jersey, New York, and New England, although he was not ordained. He established a congregation in Gloucester, Massachusetts (1774), the next year was appointed chaplain of the Rhode Island regiments by Washington, and became pastor of a Universalist society in Boston (1793–1809). His *Letters and Sketches of Sermons* were published in three volumes (1812–13), and his autobiographical *Records* in 1816.

JUDITH SARGENT [STEVENS] MURRAY (1751–1820), his wife, wrote a series of essays, two mediocre plays, and the short prose pieces and poems collected in *The Gleaner* (3 vols.,1798). She added concluding chapters to his *Records*. She used the pseudonym Constantia.

MURRAY, LINDLEY (1745–1826), a Quaker minister and grammarian, emigrated from his native Pennsylvania to England (1784), where he spent the rest of his life. Although the author of many religious tracts, and a number of schoolbooks, he is best known for his *English Grammar* (1795, revised 1818), which until about 1850 monopolized this field in England and the U.S. His *Memoirs* were published in 1826.

MURRELL, JOHN A. (*fl.*1804–44), bandit leader and folk hero of the Old Southwest, whose gang supposedly numbered some thousand members. His highway robberies took place in eight states, and the spoils included money, horses, and Negro slaves. His specialty was stealing a slave from his owner, selling him to another, and repeating this process until the Negro became so well known that Murrell was forced to murder him. The bandit was captured in 1834, and imprisoned for ten years. Virgil A. Stewart, his captor, temporarily masqueraded as a member of the gang, and in this fashion obtained the information contained in *History of the Detection, Conviction, Life, and Designs of John A. Murel* (1835). Murrell's gang figures in Simms's novels, *Richard Hurdis* and *Border Beagles.*

MURRIETA, JOAQUIN (*c.*1832–53), California bandit leader, probably emigrated from Mexico during the Gold Rush, and because of some real or imagined grievance swore vengeance against the Americans, whom for two years he and his gang indiscriminately murdered, robbed, and terrorized. He, or an individual supposed to be Murrieta, was killed in 1853. Later writers clothed him in a romantic aura, and even called him a Robin Hood, but he was probably simply another border ruffian. His name is variously spelled.

Muscogulges, see *Creek Indians.*

Museum of Modern Art, New York institution founded by Mrs. John D. Rockefeller,Jr., in 1929, as an outgrowth of her interest in studying and collecting such painting and sculpture as had been exhibited at the Armory Show. In 1939 the Museum moved into its own building, whose architecture is an example of the simple functionalism that the institution has consistently championed. In addition to its large permanent collection of 19th- and 20th-century masters, the Museum has exhibited more than 100 temporary collections, dealing with such subjects as American folk art, the art of the machine, modern architecture, modern photography, the work of the Federal Art Project, and contemporary fresco painting as practiced by Diego Rivera. It has published some 50 documented catalogues and helped to inaugurate a new method of exhibition with full critical and explanatory information displayed beside the works of art. The Museum also incorporates a library of famous motion pictures, and has devoted exhibits to this art.

Music Master, The, play by Charles Klein (q.v.).

Mustang, see *Pacing Mustang.*

Mutation, sonnet by Bryant (q.v.), published in 1824 and collected in his *Poems* (1832).

The poet observes that painful experiences pass swiftly, releasing the 'young limbs' of joy in 'the welcome morning with its rays of peace.' 'Weep not that the world changes,' he concludes, for an unchanging world would be intolerable.

MUYBRIDGE, EADWEARD (1830–1904), English-born photographer, who early emigrated to the U.S., where, under the auspices of Leland Stanford in California, he began photographic investigations in

the field of animal locomotion, which were forerunners of the motion pictures. His first book, *The Horse in Motion* (1878) was followed by *Animal Locomotion* (11 vols.,1887), which reproduced 100,000 photographs, and *The Human Figure in Motion* (1901).

MUZZEY, DAVID SAVILLE (1870–), director of history at the Ethical Culture School (New York) since 1905, and professor of history at Barnard College (1905–23) and at Columbia (1923–). His books include: *Spiritual Heroes* (1902); *An American History* (1911); *Life of Thomas Jefferson* (1918); *The United States of America* (1922–4); *History of the American People* (1927); and *James G. Blaine* (1934).

My Ántonia, novel by Willa Cather (q.v.) published in 1918.

Jim Burden and Ántonia Shimerda arrive as children in pioneer Black Hawk, Nebraska, he from Virginia and she with her family from Bohemia. With his companion, Jake Marpole, and the frontiersman and hired man, Otto Fuchs, Jim lives on his grandparents' prosperous farm; but the Shimerdas are tricked into buying a squalid, undeveloped tract, where the impractical, music-loving father attempts to create a farm, aided by his vulgar, nagging wife, their grown son Ambrosch, the adolescent Ántonia, her young sister Yulka, and the idiot boy Marek. Although the Burdens aid him with food and supplies, Shimerda in homesick despair commits suicide, and Jim's grandfather employs Ambrosch and Ántonia, who later has to work in the fields. After the Burdens move to town, Ántonia becomes a maid in the household of their neighbors. Despite her trying experiences with various employers, including amorous old Wick Cutter, she remains quiet, sincere, and industrious. Jim, after attending the state university and Harvard, learns of Ántonia's elopement with Larry Donovan, a railway conductor who deserts her and her child. She then returns in disgrace to work on her brother's farm. Twenty years later when Jim visits Nebraska, he finds her a stalwart, middle-aged farm wife, married to mild, friendly Anton Cuzak. They have many children, and it is Ántonia's strength that maintains the family, but she still possesses the laughter and inner core of pioneer integrity which always distinguishes her. 'She was a rich mine of life, like the founders of early races.'

My country, 'tis of thee, first words of the hymn 'America' (q.v.).

My Double and How He Undid Me, tale by E.E.Hale (q.v.).

My Heart and My Flesh, novel by Elizabeth M. Roberts (q.v.) published in 1927.

Theodosia, member of an aristocratic Kentucky family, is reared by her proud old grandfather, Anthony Bell, who encourages her ambition to be a violinist. She is disillusioned by her teacher's criticisms, and a series of disasters follows. She discovers her father's dissolute past, and the fact that the mulattoes, Americy and Lethe, are her half-sisters. Anthony dies and she is left destitute. Of her two lovers, Conway Brooke is burned to death and Albert Stiles deserts her to marry Florence Agnew. Theodosia is obsessed by her relationship with the degraded Negroes and seeks their company to share their hatred of their white oppressors. She passes through a long illness, and lives a nightmare existence with her strange old aunt, Doe Singleton, whose only companions are a pack of hounds. Then she becomes a school teacher in Spring Valley, where she returns to her music and finds peace in the wholesome country atmosphere. At last she learns to love Caleb Burns, a stock-raiser, and his simple, straightforward attitude answers the questions that have troubled her.

My Heart's in the Highlands, play by William Saroyan (q.v.).

My Lady Pokahontas: A True Relation of Virginia, romance by J.E.Cooke (q.v.) published in 1885.

Amos Todkill, a supposed adventurer with John Smith, tells of Smith's captivity by the Indians, his rescue by Pokahontas, and the machinations of Governor Ratcliffe and Sir Thomas Dale, who imprison the couple. He then recounts Rolph's marriage to Pokahontas, after the supposed death of Smith, their visit to England, and Smith's sad rediscovery of Pokahontas, as well as his meeting with Shakespeare, who tells him the Virginia sources of *The Tempest.* The story ends with the death of Pokahontas in England.

My Lost Youth, poem by Longfellow (q.v.), published in 1855 and collected in *The Courtship of Miles Standish* (1858).

In nine-line stanzas, whose metre is reminiscent of ballad measure, the lyric recalls the author's youth in Portland, Maine. Each stanza ends with the refrain of a Lapland song: 'A boy's will is the wind's will, And the thoughts of youth are long, long thoughts.' The title of Frost's collection, *A Boy's Will*, is derived from this passage.

My Mortal Enemy, novel by Willa Cather (q.v.).

My Old Kentucky Home, song by Stephen Foster (q.v.).

My Old Man, story in *In Our Time* (q.v.).

My Study Windows, critical essays by Lowell (q.v.).

MYERS, GUSTAVUS (1872–), New Jersey-born historian and leader of the muckraking movement, best known for his attack on political corruption in *The History of Tammany Hall* (1901, revised 1917), and on the financial oligarchy of the U.S. in *The History of the Great American Fortunes* (1910). His other books include: *The History of the Supreme Court of the United States* (1912); *The History of Canadian Wealth* (1914); *The History of American Idealism* (1925); *America Strikes Back: A Record of Contrasts* (1935); and *The Ending of American Hereditary Fortunes* (1939).

MYERS, PETER HAMILTON (1812–78), New York lawyer and author whose historical novels include *The First of the Knickerbockers* (1848), *The Young Patroon* (1849), and *The King of the Hurons* (1850).

Mysterious Stranger, The, story by Clemens (q.v.) posthumously published in 1916.

In the medieval Austrian village of Eseldorf, a mysterious stranger visits young Theodore Fischer, and his friends Nikolaus and Seppi. He is discovered to be Satan, and shows his power by building a miniature castle that he peoples with clay creatures, destroying them almost as soon as he brings them to life. He then exerts his power on the villagers, and, when Father Peter is falsely accused of theft by the Astrologer and Father Adolf, he confounds the evil and makes the innocent crazy, since he says earthly happiness is restricted to the mad. He shows further 'kindness' by drowning Nikolaus, because he is a cripple. He is totally indifferent to mankind and human conceptions of good and evil. This shocks the boys, who have the natural moral sense, yet Satan shows that from this moral sense came wars, tortures, and inequalities. Finally he departs, and Theodore realizes that this was a dream, as false as morality, and as illogical as a God who tortured men yet commanded them to worship Him.

Mystery of Marie Rogêt, The, detective story by Poe (q.v.), published in 1842–3 as a sequel to 'The Murders in the Rue Morgue' (q.v.) and reprinted in *Tales* (1845). The principal details are based on the actual New York murder case of Mary Cecilia Rogers.

Marie Rogêt, a Parisian beauty of uncertain reputation, leaves her mother's home, saying she intends to spend the day with an aunt, but is not seen again. Four days later, her corpse is recovered from the Seine. The Prefect of Police offers a reward to C.Auguste Dupin, scholarly amateur detective, for a solution to the puzzle. One of the girl's admirers, St. Eustache, is proved innocent after his suicide, and by a process of ratiocination Dupin shows that another, Beauvais, cannot be guilty. The newspapers have hinted that the corpse may not be that of Marie, but Dupin refutes this possibility. He sets aside other suggestions, also by logical proof, and decides that the murder must have been committed by a secret lover, who would have thrown the body into the river from a boat, and then cast the boat adrift after reaching shore. Dupin's proposal that the boat be found and examined for clues is followed by the successful solution of the mystery.

Mystery story, general term applied to horror stories as diverse as the successors of the Gothic romance (q.v.) and the detective story (q.v.), which is more properly a tale of ratiocination.

N

Nanda Brookenham, heroine of *The Awkward Age* (q.v.).

Narragansett Indians, Algonquian tribe, now extinct, which formerly occupied Rhode Island and Long Island. They were induced by Roger Williams, whose study of the tribe is contained in his *Key into the Language of America* (1643), to assist the colonists in the Pequot War. During King Philip's War they were suspected of treachery, and in an engagement of 1675, known as the 'Swamp Fight,' the tribe was virtually annihilated. The Narragansett figure in Cooper's *Wept of Wish-ton-Wish.*

Narrative of Arthur Gordon Pym, of Nantucket, The, novelette by Poe (q.v.) published in 1838. Like 'The Journal of Julius Rodman,' it is an account of exploration and adventure, heightened by fictional additions, but based on fact. It is extensively paraphrased from Benjamin Morell's *Narrative of Four Voyages to the South Seas and Pacific* (1832) and a manual of seamanship, and owes its origin to a 'Report of the Committee on Naval Affairs' (1836), concerning the expedition proposed by J.N.Reynolds, with whom Poe was acquainted. In the novelette, the fictitious Pym recounts his experiences as a passenger on the *Grampus,* which sailed from Nantucket for the South Seas in June 1827. Mutiny, shipwreck, and 'horrible sufferings' are followed by a rescue and further sensational adventures in the Antarctic Ocean and on Pacific Islands.

NARVAÉZ, PÁNFILO DE (*c.*1478–1528), Spanish conquistador, was dispatched by Governor Velázquez of Cuba to stop Cortés's illegal expedition to Mexico. Captured by Cortés, he was imprisoned for two years. In 1528, during an expedition to the Florida coast, he failed to find the wealth he expected, and was lost with all his party, except Cabeza de Vaca and three companions.

NASBY, PETROLEUM V., pseudonym of D.R.Locke (q.v.).

NASH, OGDEN (1902–), New York author of light verse, which ranges from acidulous satire and irresponsible good humor to the mildly mad. Nash says that he owes a debt to Julia Moore, 'The Sweet Singer of Michigan,' and he has employed as a source of humor all the mannerisms of her bad versification, including hyperdithyrambic metres, pseudopoetic inversions, gangling asymmetrical lines, extremely pat rimes or elaborately inexact rimes, parenthetical dissertations dragged in for the sake of a rime, and unexpected puns. His collections include: *Free Wheeling* (1931), *Hard Lines* (1931), *Happy Days* (1933), *The Primrose Path* (1935), *The Bad Parent's Garden of Verse* (1936), *I'm a Stranger Here Myself* (1938), and *The Face Is Familiar* (1940).

Nashoba Community, founded in Tennessee by Frances Wright (q.v.,1825), as an experimental project to demonstrate her plan for the gradual emancipation of Negro slaves. A group of slaves were to be educated for the responsibilities of freedom, while working out their purchase price by communal labor. The project was supported by a number of Abolitionists, and by some liberal Southerners, but Miss Wright, unable to endure the climate, was forced to absent herself, and the community disintegrated by 1828. She freed the 30 slaves who had been gathered, and settled them in Haiti. Mrs.Trollope, who visited the colony in 1828, records in *Domestic Manners of the Americans* the painful impression made on her by the savage and desolate aspect of the place, the lack of comfort, and the bad climate.

NAST, THOMAS (1840–1902), political caricaturist and illustrator, born in Germany, was brought to the U.S. (1846) and commenced his career as an illustrator at 15. After sketching events of Garibaldi's campaign in Italy for French, English, and American papers, he joined the staff of *Harper's Weekly* (1862), to draw Civil War cartoons that attacked Northern defeatists, leading Lincoln to call him 'our best recruiting sergeant.' He reached the height of his success in the 1870's, with his biting caricatures of the corrupt Tweed Ring (q.v.). Although his greatest work was completed by 1886, he helped determine public opinion for almost a quarter of a century, through his keen, forceful satire. He was the creator of the symbolic Tammany tiger, Republican elephant, and Democratic donkey, and popularized the

use of Shakespearean scenes for political cartoons.

Nat Turner's Rebellion, see *Southampton Insurrection.*

Natchez, Les, romance by Chateaubriand (q.v.), originally part of the manuscript that contained *Atala* and *René* (qq.v.). According to the author, the manuscript volume containing these three romantic stories of America was written between 1797 and 1800, and the part that forms *Les Natchez* was lost and not recovered for some time. It was published in his complete works in 1826. Based partly upon his adventures in America in 1791, and more upon the dreams and impressions that he had at this time, the work is an epic of natural man in the form of a poetic novel. The background concerns the massacre of the French colony of the Natchez in 1727, and the plot presents an older and more despairing René, who has been adopted by the Natchez and weds one of them, Celuta. His wife alternates between sentiment and duty when she believes him to have betrayed her tribe. The real traitor is Ondouré, and in the solution of the conflict of civilization and the natural life, the story ends in a general catastrophe of violence, suicide, and murder.

NATHAN, GEORGE JEAN (1882–), born in Indiana, after graduation from Cornell (1904) began his career as a dramatic critic in New York. In 1908 he became associated with the *Smart Set* (q.v.), of which he was co-editor (1914–23) with H.L.Mencken with whom he then founded *The American Mercury* (q.v.,1924), serving as an editor until 1930 and establishing himself as one of the literary arbiters of the period. With Mencken and W.H.Wright he wrote *Europe after 8:15* (1914), and with Mencken he was the author of such works as *Heliogabalus* (1920), a satirical play, and *The American Credo* (1920), 'a contribution toward the interpretation of the national mind,' which travesties common beliefs and attitudes. While Mencken was considered the great satirical realist of the era, Nathan formed his counterpart as a philosophical snob, cynic, and sophisticate, who adopted a pose of detachment, following the attitude of his master, Huneker, in holding to standards of art-for-art's-sake. In *The World in Falseface* (1923) he said, 'What interests me in life is the surface of life: life's music and color, its charm and ease, its humor and its loveliness. The great problems of the world—social, political, economic, and theological—do not concern me in the slightest.' His many books on the contemporary theater, mainly reprinting essays and reviews, include: *The Eternal Mystery* (1913); *Mr.George Jean Nathan Presents* (1917); *The Popular Theatre* (1918); *The Theatre, The Drama, The Girls* (1921); *The Critic and the Drama* (1922); *Materia Critica* (1924); *Art of the Night* (1928); *The Morning after the First Night* (1938); and *Encyclopaedia of the Theatre* (1940). Important for their early championing of O'Neill and other talents, these works vary from scathing attacks on sentimentalities to boundless enthusiasms, for Nathan claims to write 'with a pestiferous catholicity of taste that embraces *Medea* and the Follies, Eleonora Duse and Florence Mills.' His other books include: *The Autobiography of an Attitude* (1925), epigrammatic self-revelations; *The New American Credo* (1927); *Testament of a Critic* (1931); *The Avon Flows* (1937), a comedy adapting parts of *Romeo and Juliet, The Taming of the Shrew,* and *Othello* to present the lives of a Romeo and Juliet who do not commit suicide, but continue to live through farcical and dramatic episodes; and *The Bachelor Life* (1941), an apologia of the single life.

NATHAN, ROBERT [GRUNTAL] (1894–), born in New York, was educated in the U.S. and abroad and is the author of many short novels, noted for their delicate prose and satirical fantasy. These include: *Peter Kindred* (1919), the story of a boy's experiences in preparatory school and at Harvard; *Autumn* (1921), a pastoral tale whose chief figure is a Vermont schoolmaster and philosopher; *The Puppet Master* (1923), a fantasy concerned with the puppet maker, Papa Jonas, and his animated dolls; *Jonah* (1925, published in England as *The Son of Amittai*), a witty reconstruction of the Biblical story; *The Fiddler in Barly* (1926), the story of a country musician; *The Woodcutter's House* (1927), a sentimental fable of a mountain girl and her self-sacrifice to preserve her fiancé's innocent love of life; *The Bishop's Wife* (1928), concerning an angel who poses as an archdeacon and falls in love with the bishop's wife; *There Is Another*

Heaven (1929), the story of a converted Jew and his adventures in a Calvinist Heaven; *One More Spring* (1933), a parable of Christian charity, set in New York City during the depression; *Road of Ages* (1935), telling of an imagined pilgrimage of Jewish exiles into the Gobi desert; *Journey of Tapiola* (1938), the travel adventures of a Yorkshire terrier, a canary, and an old gray rat; and *Winter in April* (1938), a realistic story of affection and friendship in everyday life. *The Barly Fields* (1938) is a collection of five earlier novels. *Portrait of Jennie* (1940) is an idyl of a painter inspired by a cryptic, elfin child who lives in a timeless world, and *They Went on Together* (1941) is a novel of simple people forced by war to evacuate their homes. *Youth Grows Old* (1922) and *A Cedar Box* (1929) are collections of poems marked by the same delicacy of feeling, gentle wisdom, and formal beauty.

NATION, CARRY (1846–1911), temperance agitator, after an unhappy youth and irregular schooling during her family's journeying from Kentucky to Texas and Missouri, married the intemperate Reverend Gloyd. A second marriage (1877) gave her the name Nation, and following a short period of school teaching she became absorbed in emotional religious activity, convinced that she was divinely appointed to destroy the institution of the saloon. She began her crusade at Medicine Lodge, Kansas (1899), and continued with her spectacular destruction of property in saloons. Her favorite weapon was the hatchet, and she referred to her exploits as 'hatchetings' or 'hatchetations.' Her temperance lectures took her through the U.S. and Europe, and in 1904 she published *The Use and Need of the Life of Carry A. Nation.* Although frequently jailed and ridiculed, she gladly suffered this martyrdom in the belief that she was developing sentiment in favor of prohibition.

Nation, The (1865–), New York weekly journal devoted to politics, literature, science, and the arts, founded 'to discuss current affairs . . . to maintain true democratic principles; to work for the equality of "the laboring class at the South"; . . . the elevation of the Negro; to fix public attention on the importance of popular education; . . . criticize books and works of art soundly and impartially.' Its first editor (1865–81) was E.L.Godkin, and early contributors included C.E.Norton, Howells, the three Jameses, D.C.Gilman, W.C.Brownell, Parkman, Fiske, C.F.Adams, W.G.Sumner, and F.W. Taussig. Among the causes for which the magazine worked were civil service and tariff reforms, proportional representation, and the ousting of corrupt politicians such as the Tweed Ring. *The Nation* was equally rigorous in its criticism of literature and the arts. In 1881 it was sold to the New York *Evening Post,* and Godkin left its editorship for that of the newspaper. Under W.P.Garrison (1881–1906), it continued its original policies, although as a subsidiary of the *Post* it lost its old prestige. Garrison and later editors, including P.E.More (1909–14), drew on the same distinguished contributors, although adding many new literary figures. In 1918 O.G. Villard became editor and severed the connection with the *Post.* He continued the magazine's liberal stand in the postwar years, opposing the ratification of the Versailles Treaty, sympathetically interpreting the new Russian state, and making the journal a distinguished commentary on international affairs. The literary editors whose views influenced liberal letters included the Van Dorens, John Macy, Ludwig Lewisohn, and J. W. Krutch. Villard retired in 1933, selling the magazine in 1935, but it continues its campaign for social justice.

National Academy of Design, society of painters, sculptors, and engravers, situated in New York City, was founded (1828) by 30 artists who included S.F.B. Morse and Asher Durand, and was an outgrowth of the New York Drawing Association, founded three years earlier. In 1906 the Academy absorbed the Society of American Artists and raised its membership to 175, and the same year it became affiliated with the Metropolitan Museum of Art and with Columbia University. In addition to exhibits by the Academicians various prizes and medals are offered annually and free instruction is offered in the various arts it sponsors.

National Anti-Slavery Standard (1840–72), published from New York by the American Anti-Slavery Society, advocated complete and immediate abolition, Negro education, and perpetuation of the Union. Among its contributors were Eliza Lee Follen, Wendell Phillips, and Lowell. In 1848–9 Lowell was an active editor, and he was associated with the magazine

until 1852. His contributions, posthumously collected in separate volumes, included *The Biglow Papers*. After 1870 the magazine was unstable, several times changed title, periods of publication, and crusading purposes, which included women's rights and temperance.

National Era (1847–60), antislavery journal, edited from Washington,D.C. by Gamaliel Bailey. In addition to abolitionist news, it was known for its literary contributions, which included Hawthorne's 'The Great Stone Face,' the majority of Whittier's writings during its years of publication, and the serialization of *Uncle Tom's Cabin* (1851–2).

National Gallery of Art, U.S. national museum in Washington,D.C. opened in 1941. Housed in the largest marble building in the world, constructed at a cost of $15,000,000 and built in a neoclassic style by John Russell Pope, is the $50,000,000 collection of paintings donated with the museum by Andrew Mellon. Samuel Henry Kress has given his $30,000,000 collection of paintings and the collection of Joseph E. Widener has been promised. At present the museum is mainly notable for its early Italian paintings. Future acquisitions must be 'excellent in quality' and by painters whose reputations have endured 'for at least twenty years following death.'

National Gazette (1791–3), newspaper of the Democratic Republican Party, edited at Philadelphia by Freneau, and financed by Jefferson to oppose Fenno's Federalist *Gazette of the United States*. It ceased publication when Jefferson resigned from the secretaryship of state. A contributing cause of its demise was the Philadelphia yellow-fever epidemic.

National Geographic Society, founded in 1888 at Washington,D.C., to encourage and engage in geographical research, through its organ, the monthly *National Geographic Magazine*, publishes popular accounts and photographs of its own and other explorations.

National Institute of Arts and Letters, see *American Academy*.

National Intelligencer and Washington Advertiser (1800–1870), triweekly newspaper (daily after 1813), founded at Washington,D.C., by S.H.Smith, as a continuation of his Philadelphia *Independent Gazeteer*, which became the new paper's weekly edition. It was the recognized organ of the administrations of Jefferson, Madison, and Monroe, and until 1825 was the only printed record of the debates and proceedings of Congress. J.Q.Adams used another paper as his official organ, and during Jackson's presidency the *National Intelligencer* opposed the administration, being the outlet for many of the writings of Webster, Clay, and Calhoun. It was again the government organ during the administrations of Polk and Fillmore, but after this time no one paper was considered the dominant administration journal. Lincoln nevertheless used it when he replied to Greeley's 'Prayer of Two Millions.' The paper was suspended (1866), revived (1869), and continued until it was removed to New York (1870) and assumed a different complexion.

National Police Gazette, The (1845–), weekly magazine, was ostensibly intended to expose criminals, but obviously catered to morbid sensationalism, both in its fiction and in its lengthy accounts of current crimes. In course of time, its shocking pink cover was less devoted to criminal records than to exposing the feminine form. Theatrical gossip and sporting news were added features, and the magazine became known as 'the barber shop Bible.' Although it went bankrupt in 1932, it was revived as a monthly, and still exists with the archaic format and a similar policy.

National Republican party, conservative political party opposed to the radical measures of Jackson, arose during the presidential election of 1824, when Clay supported J.Q.Adams. After Jackson defeated Adams again in 1828, the party assumed definite form and in 1832 nominated Clay for the presidency. He was defeated, and the party was soon absorbed by the Whigs.

National Road (NATIONAL PIKE), route of westward migration during the first half of the 19th century, extended from Cumberland, Maryland, to St.Louis, Missouri, where it joined the Oregon Trail and Santa Fé Trail. Although the project was approved by Congress in 1806, construction of the initial section to Wheeling, Virginia, was not begun until 1815. This so-called Cumberland Road was opened in 1818. Agitation for its extension was led by Henry Clay, and further

construction was authorized in 1825. The road reached Columbus, Ohio, in 1833, but did not reach St.Louis until a decade later. Since 1837 it has been maintained by the states, and it is now part of the transcontinental U.S.Highway No.40.

Nationalist party, see *Bellamy, Edward* and *Looking Backward.*

Native American party, see *Know-Nothing Movement.*

Native Son, novel by Richard Wright (q.v.).

Natty Bumppo, see *Leather-Stocking Tales.*

Natural History of Intellect, lectures by Emerson (q.v.).

Naturalism, critical term applied to the method of literary composition that aims at a detached, scientific objectivity in the treatment of natural man. It is thus more inclusive and less selective than realism (q.v.), and holds to the philosophy of determinism. It conceives of man as controlled by his instincts or his passions, or by his social and economic environment and circumstances. Since in this view man has no free will, the naturalistic writer does not attempt to make moral judgments, and as a determinist he tends toward pessimism. The movement is an outgrowth of 19th-century scientific thought, following in general the biological determinism of Darwin's theory, or the economic determinism of Marx. It stems from French literature, in which Zola emphasizes the biological determinism, and Flaubert the economic determinism. The Russian novelists also added their influence to the trend. American leaders of the naturalistic movement are considered to include Crane, Norris, Herrick, London, and Frederic, and later such significant figures as Dreiser, Sherwood Anderson, Faulkner, Dos Passos, and Farrell.

Nature, essay by Emerson (q.v.), published anonymously in 1836 and reprinted in *Nature, Addresses, and Lectures* (1849). Based on his early lectures, this first book expresses the main principles of Transcendentalism. An introduction states that 'Our age is retrospective,' seeing God and nature at second-hand through the ideas and experiences of previous generations, and asks, 'Why should not we also enjoy an original relation to the universe?' The eight brief chapters discuss the 'lover of nature,' the rare poetic person 'whose inward and outer senses are still truly adjusted to each other'; the 'uses' of nature; the idealist philosophy in relation to nature; evidences of spirit in the material universe; and the potential expansion of human souls and works that will result from a general return to direct, immediate contact with the natural environment. The four uses of nature are: (1) 'Commodity,' or its utilitarian and sensuous contributions to the life of mankind; (2) 'Beauty,' or the delight in the perception of natural forms, of the high and noble spiritual elements essential to them, and of the intellectual truths inherent in them; (3) 'Language,' or the symbolic character of natural facts, which convey transcendental meanings to minds prepared for their reception; and (4) 'Discipline,' or the function of natural environment in educating 'both the Understanding and the Reason.' In expressing his belief in the mystical 'unity of Nature,—the unity in variety,—which meets us everywhere,' the author develops his concept of the 'Over-Soul' or 'Universal Mind.' Nature is 'to us, the present expositor of the divine mind,' which is the spiritual essence everywhere present in, and represented by, material nature, and in which man himself shares.

Nauset Indians, Algonquian tribe formerly living on Cape Cod in Massachusetts. In 1622 they supplied the starving Plymouth colonists with corn and beans. Most of them became Christians, and they remained friendly to the colonists through King Philip's War. They were among those called Praying Indians.

Navajo (or NAVAHO) **Indians,** numerous shepherd tribe now living on a large reservation in the mountains of northern Arizona and New Mexico, and southern Utah. After a long-continued war with the Spanish and American settlers, they were finally subdued by Kit Carson (1863–4) and have since been peaceful and industrious agriculturists, known for the high state of their native culture. They figure in Bandelier's *The Delight Makers,* La Farge's *Laughing Boy,* and Cather's *Death Comes for the Archbishop.*

Navigation Acts, laws passed by Parliament for the protection of British commerce. The Act of 1651 forbade the importation of American, Asian, or African commodities except in ships owned, com-

manded, and mainly manned by Englishmen. European goods could be brought into England, Ireland, and British possessions only in ships owned by Englishmen, or by persons of the country of production or shipment. The Act of 1660 continued to bar foreigners from English trade, to encourage English navigation, and to regulate plantation trade. It also enumerated certain articles, such as tobacco and cotton, which could be shipped from the colonies only to England, whence they might be re-exported. Subsequent acts, up to the time of the American Revolution, reaffirmed the same principles, and the 1663 act required that all foreign goods shipped to America must clear from English ports. The Molasses Act (q.v.) was a later law identified with the Navigation Acts.

NEAL, Daniel (1678–1743), English nonconformist clergyman and historian, author of a *History of New England . . . to . . .* 1700 (2 vols.,1720), which, though it drew strongly on Cotton Mather's work, was hostile to his family and their part in the witchcraft trials. Neal's *History of the Puritans* (4 vols.,1732–8) was also indebted to Mather for its information on the New England Puritans down to 1689.

NEAL, John (1793–1876), was born in Portland, Maine, of a Quaker family. He began his feverish literary career during his twenties, when he was studying law in Baltimore, by editing the *Portico* and doing some hack work on Paul Allen's history of the Revolution. His own writing during this period included two narrative poems, 'Battle of Niagara' and 'Goldau, or, the Maniac Harper,' published in 1818, and a blank verse romantic tragedy, *Otho* (1819). His early novels included *Keep Cool* (1817), partly a tract against dueling; *Logan, A Family History* (2 vols., 1822), a romantic account of the Indian chief; *Errata; or, The Works of Will. Adams* (2 vols.,1823); *Seventy-six* (2 vols., 1823), a Revolutionary romance, considered his best work; and *Randolph* (1823), a romantic epistolary novel. The last, in addition to containing much criticism of English and American authors, had a lengthy attack on the Baltimore statesman, William Pinckney, whose son Edward challenged the author. Neal, who was certainly opposed to dueling, ignored the challenge. In the same year, he sailed for England, where *Blackwood's Magazine*, notoriously opposed to American writers, accepted some two dozen of his articles. The most notable of these form a series of five papers (Sept. 1824–Feb. 1825) on 135 American authors. Written without access to the books, the papers abound in errors of fact as well as of prejudice, but are significant as the first attempt at a history of American literature, and as such have been reprinted under Neal's title *American Writers* (1937). While abroad, he wrote and published *Brother Jonathan* (3 vols.,1825), a long romantic novel concerned with New England prior to the Revolution. In 1827 he returned to Portland, where he continued to contribute to periodicals, edited a literary journal, practiced law, and wrote four further novels, *Rachel Dyer* (1828), a study of the Salem witchcraft trials; *Authorship* (1830), a picaresque tale of a New Englander abroad; *The Down-Easters* (q.v., 1833), a melodramatic story with realistic details about New England; and *True Womanhood* (1859). He also published *One Word More* (1854), a religious treatise; dime novels of Indian adventures; *Great Mysteries and Little Plagues* (1870), anecdotes and sayings of children; *Portland Illustrated* (1874), describing the city; and *Wandering Recollections of a Somewhat Busy Life* (1869), a garrulous autobiography that, although not completely trustworthy, gives a fine understanding of the general character of this enthusiastic, flamboyant writer.

NEAL, Joseph Clay (1807–47), Philadelphia journalist and humorist, whose first book, *Charcoal Sketches; or, Scenes in a Metropolis* (1838) satirized Philadelphia types, and was not only popular in this country but also in England, where it was reprinted in *The Pic Nic Papers* (1841) by Dickens, whose work it resembled. Other similar collections are: *In Town and About* (1843); *Peter Ploddy and Other Oddities* (1844); *Charcoal Sketches: Second Series* (1848); *The Misfortunes of Peter Faber, and Other Sketches* (1856); and *Charcoal Sketches* (1865).

Ned McCobb's Daughter, play by Sidney Howard (q.v.) produced and published in 1926.

Carrie, the courageous daughter of a New England sea-captain who has been reduced to operating a ferryboat, tries to eke out a living for her children and her

worthless husband, George Callahan, by running a Maine summer resort. George steals from the ferry company, and, even though Captain McCobb restores the money, his son-in-law's further actions precipitate a stroke that kills him. Carrie is next threatened by her brother-in-law, the bootlegger Babe Callahan, who forces her to let him use the resort as a liquor storehouse, in return for saving George from jail. She obtains $2,000 from him, and then tricks him into believing that she has called the federal agents, so that he flees, leaving her to find peace in raising her family.

Negro minstrels, see *Minstrel show.*

Negroes in America were brought into the English colonies as early as 1619 and in increasing numbers thereafter, under the institution of slavery (q.v.). Although some were early brought from the West Indies, most came directly from Africa. During the Reconstruction, when there were *c.*4,441,830 Negroes in the U.S., they were emancipated, made citizens, and thus first given the opportunity to compete on equal terms with whites for a place in American culture. Through the Freedmen's Bureau (q.v.) and other agencies, they began to be equipped for their new status. The South (q.v.), in which they were mainly located, nevertheless attempted to keep Negroes from political, social, or economic equality through 'Jim Crow' laws (q.v.), such organizations as the Ku Klux Klan (q.v.), and other forms of pressure, including the regulation of the franchise by poll taxes and other methods. Race prejudice has persisted in both North and South, resulting in discrimination and sometimes outbreaks of violence. Since white educational centers were still officially or unofficially closed to Negroes, Booker Washington (q.v.) and other leaders founded Negro schools, e.g. Hampton, Tuskegee, Atlanta, Howard, and Fisk, as well as grade schools and Sunday schools, which have reduced illiteracy from 95 per cent (1865) to 16.3 per cent (1930). They have also established their own religious groups, notably the Negro Baptist Church. Considerable emigration from the South did not occur until the First World War caused a demand for Negro labor in Northern factories. In the North their population has been concentrated in Philadelphia, Baltimore, Chicago, and New York, where their most important district is Harlem (q.v.). Although Negroes have adjusted themselves to American culture, their own distinctive culture survives in the Gullah dialect, the rhythms of the blues, spirituals, the folklore concerned with John Henry (qq.v.), and that which gave rise to the 'Uncle Remus' stories. Negro singers and musicians have included James Bland, W.C.Handy, J.R. Johnson, Paul Robeson, Roland Hayes, and Marian Anderson. Negroes have contributed to American literature since the Reconstruction, and even before that time there were occasional authors, such as Jupiter Hammon and Phillis Wheatley. Among their authors are W.S.B.Braithwaite, C.W.Chesnutt, Countée Cullen, Frederick Douglass, W.E.B.DuBois, P.L. Dunbar, Josiah Henson, Langston Hughes, James W. Johnson, Claude McKay, Jean Toomer, Alberry Whitman, and Richard Wright.

Neighbor Jackwood, antislavery novel by J.T.Trowbridge (q.v.), published in 1856 and revised in 1895. It was dramatized by the author (1857).

Camille ('Milly') Delisard, daughter of a French merchant and a nearly white slave, after her father's death is sold into slavery by his legitimate wife. Her mother dies of grief and maltreatment, and the girl passes through various distressing adventures until she is rescued by a Northerner, Robert Greenwich, who helps her to reach Vermont by way of the underground railroad. Befriended by Abimelech Jackwood, a benevolent Green Mountain man, she calls herself Charlotte Woods, and becomes a servant of the Dunbury family. When Hector Dunbury asks her to marry him, she reveals her history. At first repelled, he later returns to marry her. Greenwich, moved by an uncontrollable passion, now seeks to claim Camille as a fugitive slave. She is forced to hide, but Greenwich recovers his sense of moral values and rescues her from a slave-hunt that he himself originated. Tormented by conscience, he commits suicide, after which Camille and Hector are brought together and their marriage is approved by his parents.

NEIHARDT, JOHN G[NEISENAU] (1881–), born in Illinois, after a varied career including teaching and farming lived among the Omaha Indians (1901–7), and from his study of this tribe has pro-

duced the themes of his poetry and fiction. His five-part epic poem, of which one part is yet to appear, deals with the Plains Indians and their conquest during the westward movement of the white frontier. The published parts are: *The Song of Hugh Glass* (1915), concerned with the legendary episode of 1823, when the frontier trapper was injured, and abandoned, at the approach of hostile Indians, by his youthful companion, Jim Bridger; *The Song of Three Friends* (1919) telling of the Ashley-Henry expedition of 1822–3; *The Song of the Indian Wars* (q.v.,1925), recounting the last great struggle for the bison herds of the Plains; and *The Song of the Messiah* (1935), telling of the last phase of Indian resistance to the white invasion, when they were reduced to the hope that a messianic prophet would arise to deliver them. Neihardt's *Collected Poems* (1926) contains the rugged lyrics published in earlier volumes, and his other books include: *The River and I* (1910), an account of a boating trip with two companions on the Missouri River; *The Lonesome Trail* (1907) and *Indian Tales, and Others* (1926), books of short stories about Indians and frontier heroes; *Life's Lure* (1914), a novel of the Black Hills mining camps; *The Splendid Wayfaring* (1920), the story of Jedediah Smith; a play, *Two Mothers* (1921); and a volume of essays on *Poetic Values* (1925).

Nellie, the Beautiful Cloak Model, melodrama by Owen Davis (q.v.).

NELLY BLY, pseudonym of Elizabeth C. Seaman (q.v.).

Nets to Catch the Wind, poems by Elinor Wylie (q.v.).

Neutral Ground, name applied to Westchester County, New York, during the Revolutionary War, because the sympathies of its residents were divided and it was not occupied for any length of time by either army. It is the setting of Cooper's romance, *The Spy*.

NEVIN, ETHELBERT WOODBRIDGE (1862–1901), Pennsylvania-born composer and pianist, who spent many of his later years in Italy. He is best known for his songs, which include the popular settings of such poems as *The Rosary*, *Mighty Lak' a Rose*, and Eugene Field's *Little Boy Blue* and *Wynken, Blynken, and Nod*. His works for piano are frequently performed, sometimes in orchestral arrangements, and include such suites as *A Day in Venice*, *May in Tuscany*, and *Water Scenes*.

ARTHUR FINLEY NEVIN (1871–), his brother, is also a composer. Interested in the music of the Blackfoot Indians, he has written two operas based on their life, *Poia* (1910) and *Twilight* (1911), the latter being retitled *A Daughter of the Forest* in its 1918 production.

NEVINS, ALLAN (1890–), after a career in journalism became a professor of American history at Columbia (1931), having already made a reputation as a scholar with such books as *The Life of Robert Rogers* (1914), *The Evening Post—A Century of Journalism* (1922), *The Emergence of Modern America* (1927), and *Frémont: The West's Greatest Adventurer* (1927). His later books include: *Grover Cleveland—A Study in Courage* (1932, Pulitzer Prize, 1933); *Hamilton Fish: Inner History of the Grant Administration* (1936, Pulitzer Prize 1937); and *John D. Rockefeller* (2 vols.,1940). In all his works, Nevins turns to original sources and private papers, and he portrays his protagonists against a broad background of contemporary history. *The Gateway to History* (1938) is an examination of methods of historiography.

New Amsterdam, see *New Netherland*.

New Deal, name applied to the administrative program (1933–) of President Franklin D. Roosevelt (q.v.), whose measures were partly designed by the 'Brain Trust' (q.v.) and were intended to promote the economic recovery of the U.S. from its current depression, as well as to provide social security for the future. Emergency measures were instituted for the stabilization of banks, stocks, and trade, and for the relief of millions of unemployed and destitute citizens. Among the most important acts of this generally liberal reform administration were: the establishment of the Agricultural Adjustment Administration, Civilian Conservation Corps, National Recovery Administration, Tennessee Valley Authority, Securities Commission, Works Progress Administration, Public Works Administration, and Federal Arts Projects; the passage of the Gold Reserve Act, Utilities Act, Securities and Exchange Act, Labor Relations Act, Wage-Hour Law, and Social Security Act; the liberalization of the Supreme Court; and repeal of the

18th Amendment. The policies of Roosevelt and his advisers are exemplified in the advocacy of collective bargaining, regional planning, economic reform in the South, agricultural control, and in international relations the increase of 'defensive' armaments and 'quarantine of aggressor nations.' The first part of Roosevelt's third term laid stress on aid to the anti-Axis powers in the Second World War.

New Eclectic (1868–75), Baltimore monthly magazine, an outgrowth of the *Richmond Eclectic* (1866–8), was noted for its contributions from R.M.Johnston, Simms, Lanier, Hayne, and Longstreet. In 1871 the title was changed to the *Southern Magazine*, and it became the organ of the Southern Historical Society.

New England, region including the present states of Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont, Massachusetts, Rhode Island, and Connecticut, was named by Captain John Smith in his map of 1616. The harsh climate, rocky soil, and paucity of natural products served to discourage colonization, except by those English Puritans who sought a new home in which to cultivate their faith, and there early developed a homogeneity that was further emphasized by their intolerance of beliefs at variance from orthodox Calvinism. Accordingly, co-operative action was common in such matters as the public school system, civic rule by town meetings, the organization of the Congregational Church, and the New England Confederation. The resulting early New England mind as developed at Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay (qq.v.) may be traced through the writings of such divines as the Mathers and Jonathan Edwards, and of such laymen as Bradford, Winthrop, and Sewall. Economic considerations also produced a unity and homogeneity, shipbuilding and fishing being the most characteristic occupations, but the very barrenness of the soil, lack of a staple, and inaccessibility of markets forced the people to develop an ingenuity that flowered in the shrewd, thrifty, independent, and resourceful type known as the Yankee (q.v.). Because of its great foreign commerce, which led to the rise of such ports as Boston (q.v.) and Salem, the region was particularly affected by the British Navigation Acts, and played an important part in shaping colonial ideas toward the Revolution, producing such leaders as Samuel and John Adams. After the Revolution the commercial classes became increasingly powerful as the transition to industrialism advanced, calling forth a generally conservative temper that came to be buttressed by a pride of heritage. This attitude, evident in the writings of the Connecticut Wits, may be observed later in the policies of the Cotton Whigs, whose guiding lights were the textile mill owners closely affiliated with the Southern cotton planters. The Brahmin class (q.v.) was therefore long averse to the antislavery movement, but others, with equal pride of heritage and thoughtful of the spirit of Yankee independence, identified themselves passionately with the humanitarian movements of the mid-19th century. Thus Garrison, Whittier, and others agitated for improved conditions of labor in both North and South. Liberalism manifested itself likewise in the growth of Unitarianism, under Channing and Parker, and in the philosophic and literary movement of Transcendentalism, whose school, flourishing at Concord (q.v.), included Emerson, Thoreau, Alcott, and Margaret Fuller. True to the cultural tradition that had led to the founding of Harvard as early as 1636, others also maintained the region's distinction as the center of American intellectual activity, and this renaissance of the pre-Civil War years has been termed by such critics as Van Wyck Brooks, 'the flowering of New England.' Among the representative authors of the time may be mentioned Longfellow and Lowell, who show the scholarship and romantic influences of the Cambridge authors; Bryant and Whittier, the love of nature and social liberalism frequently to be observed in New England thought; Holmes, the genteel Brahmin attitude; Hawthorne, the interest in moral problems and in the Puritan past; and Mrs.Stowe, the humanitarianism and later the preoccupation with local color. The great days of commerce and clipper ships, romantically depicted in such later novels as Hergesheimer's *Java Head*, were now long past, and after the Civil War increasing consciousness of decadence and nostalgia for earlier glories led to a literary Indian summer, represented by such writers of local-color stories as Mary Wilkins Freeman and Sarah Orne Jewett, who were concerned with the decayed grandeur of deserted shipping ports and

dwindling farms; T.B.Aldrich, who recalled the glamour of a New England boyhood; and the secluded Emily Dickinson, who distilled both Yankee wit and Transcendental mysticism in her gnomic verse. Immigration and a constant rise of *nouveaux riches* altered the character of both upper and lower classes in New England, and the transitional society was described by such novelists as Howells, in *The Rise of Silas Lapham* and other books, and Henry James, who contrasted the crassness of Yankee manners with more gracious living in England and on the continent. The region has drawn increasingly on non-English immigrants for its labor, and the resulting social discord is best symbolized by the Sacco-Vanzetti Case, described in Upton Sinclair's *Boston*, which shows the inevitability of such conflict in 20th-century New England. The earlier homogeneity of culture is thus lost, and the rise of other regions has tended to destroy the leadership of New England in the creative arts, although its schools, including Harvard, Yale, Dartmouth, Williams, Smith, Andover, and Exeter, are still leaders in American education. Among recent authors, Robinson, Frost, and Coffin reveal facets of the original New England spirit in their works, but others have been concerned with the decadence of the tradition, as in O'Neill's *Mourning Becomes Electra*, Santayana's *The Last Puritan*, and Marquand's *The Late George Apley*.

New England, Dominion of, see *Andros*.

New England Anti-Slavery Society, see *Abolitionist*.

New England Company, see *Massachusetts Bay Company*.

New England Confederation, union formed in 1643 for 'mutual safety and welfare' by the colonies of Massachusetts Bay, Plymouth, Connecticut, and New Haven. It was the first confederation of the American colonies, and principally bound its members in a league for offense and defense against the Indians, and the French and Dutch settlers of Canada and New York. The Confederation lost strength after 1664 and came to an end with the revocation of the Massachusetts charter (1684).

New England Courant, The, **(1721–26),** third newspaper in Boston, was founded and edited by James Franklin (q.v.). A Yankee imitation of the *Spectator*, it gave Boston the best and most lively journalism it had yet encountered. Because of his flippant remarks about civil and ecclesiastical authorities, the editor was sentenced to jail for one month and forbidden by the court to print the *Courant* or any paper of a like nature. Beginning in February 1723, the paper was published under the name of his half-brother and apprentice, Benjamin Franklin, who had already contributed to it his 'Do-Good Papers' (q.v.,1722). An account of the enterprise is contained in Benjamin Franklin's *Autobiography*. The Hell-Fire Club (q.v.) was an organization of the contributors.

New England Emigrant Aid Company, see *Emigrant Aid Company*.

New-England Magazine, The **(1831–5),** is considered the most important general magazine published in New England before the *Atlantic Monthly*. Contributors included Longfellow, Holmes, Whittier, Everett, Noah Webster, J.G.Percival, and Hawthorne. In politics it favored Webster and Everett, and opposed Van Buren. It was absorbed by the *American Monthly Magazine*.

New England Nun, A, and Other Stories, 24 tales by Mary Wilkins Freeman (q.v.) published in 1891. Realistic but frequently sentimental character studies, they are influenced by the local-color movement.

'A New England Nun' tells of Louisa Ellis, whose fiancé spends 14 years in Australia gathering a fortune with which to marry her, but is rejected on his return because she does not wish to disturb the delicate domestic arrangements to which she has become accustomed. 'A Gala Dress' is a humorous sketch, concerned with the adventures of a spying gossip and the two maiden sisters who can afford but one fine dress and are never seen together at the simple village entertainments. 'Sister Liddy,' set in an almshouse, tells of grotesque, crippled old Polly Moss, whose only pleasure is derived from describing to her fellow paupers a fictitious sister of marvelous beauty and attainments. 'Christmas Jenny' is the story of an eccentric spinster's charity and humane love for the dumb child and the injured birds and beasts to whose care she devotes her life. 'Life Everlastin' ' tells of another humanitarian, Luella Norcross, who returns to the church after a lifetime

of agnosticism, because religion seems 'the only way out of it' for a murderer whom she has befriended.

New England Offering, see *Farley, Harriet.*

New-England Palladium, The, see *Massachusetts Mercury.*

New England Primer, The, Calvinist school book, compiled and published by Benjamin Harris (q.v.), probably in 1683 and certainly before 1690. In its frequent revisions, it is estimated to have sold more than 5,000,000 copies. Besides the letters of the alphabet, illustrated by crudely rimed couplets and woodcuts, the book contained simple moral texts based on Old Testament history and wisdom, and the prayer, 'Now I lay me down to sleep.'

New England Quarterly, The (1927–), scholarly literary and historical review of New England life and letters, edited by S.E.Morison, A.M.Schlesinger, and other prominent scholars.

New England Renaissance, term sometimes applied to the cultural awakening of the mid-19th century aroused by Unitarianism and Transcendentalism (qq.v.).

New England Tragedies, The, long dramatic poem by Longfellow (q.v.), which was first published separately in 1868 and later incorporated as the final section of *Christus* (q.v.). The poem is composed of two dramas, each with a prologue and five acts: I. *John Endicott*; and II. *Giles Corey of the Salem Farms*. The first play concerns Governor Endicott's persecution of the Quakers in Boston in 1665. He condemns Wenlock Christison, a Quaker, to death, and his daughter Edith to lashing and banishment. The governor's son is renounced by his father when he aids Edith, and he unsuccessfully attempts to find her after she is banished. Upon the king's orders, the Quakers are pardoned, and Endicott, broken by the loss of his son, dies shortly thereafter, as do several others of the cruel Puritans. The second play, concerns the witchcraft epidemic in Salem in 1692. Tituba, a villainous Indian woman, leads a sick girl, Mary Walcot, to accuse Goodwife Corey of bewitching her. Meanwhile, John Gloyd turns Giles Corey's cattle loose and claims their loss is caused by witchcraft. Goodwife Corey is then tried by Cotton Mather and Justice Hathorne for witchcraft and is convicted by the evidence of Mary Walcot and her own husband, from whom certain seemingly damaging facts are extracted. Giles is next tried and condemned by the evidence of Gloyd and Mary Walcot, but at the end of the farcical testimony, Cotton Mather, less bigoted than Hathorne, exclaims, 'this poor man whom we have made a victim, Hereafter will be counted as a martyr.'

New England Weekly Journal (1727–41), founded by Samuel Kneeland, was the fourth regularly published newspaper in Boston. In addition to news of current events, it printed essays, letters, and poems by Increase Mather, Thomas Prince, and Mather Byles, as well as a letter from Pope to Byles, on the subject of the latter's poetry. The paper was merged with *The Boston Gazette* (q.v.), becoming *The Boston Gazette, or Weekly Journal.*

New England's First Fruits, tract published in London (1643), dealing with the climate, products, and religion of New England, and giving a description of Harvard College. It was evidently intended to serve as publicity literature and was edited and probably composed by Thomas Weld and Hugh Peter.

New Englands Memoriall, history by Nathaniel Morton (q.v.).

New Englands Prospect, descriptive book by William Wood (q.v.) published in England (1634). This lively work, reminiscent of the full-blooded Elizabethan pamphleteers, is interspersed with the author's own verse. It is divided into two parts, the first a description of the country and its flora and fauna, the second an account of the Indian tribes, which the author says is 'in a more light and facetious style . . . because their carriage and behavior afforded more matter of mirth and laughter, than gravity and wisdom.'

New England's Trials, autobiographical narrative by Captain John Smith (q.v.).

New English Canaan, descriptive work by Thomas Morton (q.v.), subtitled *New Canaan, Containing an Abstract of New England*, and published at Amsterdam (1637). The first part deals with the Indians, the second with the natural endowments of the country, and the third with the settlements there and the attack of the Plymouth colonists upon Morton's colony of Merry Mount (q.v.). In a highly

diverting style, Morton tells his side of the quarrel and satirizes the Pilgrims, particularly Myles Standish, the leader of the attack upon him, whom he calls Captain Shrimp.

New Found Land, poems by MacLeish (q.v.).

New France, name applied to Canada and other regions settled by the French in North America. Canada was first claimed for France by Cartier (q.v.,1534), but the earliest successful colony was that settled at Quebec by Champlain (q.v., 1608). Colonization proceeded under the stimulation of the fur trade and Catholic missionary work among the Indians, with Frontenac (q.v.) the most important governor (1672–82,1689–98). The explorations of Jolliet, Marquette, and La Salle (qq.v.) during his governorship extended the boundaries of New France to include much of the Great Lakes region as well as Louisiana. The struggle with the British for domination in North America, described in a series of histories by Parkman (q.v.), led to the French and Indian Wars (q.v.,1690–1763). This culminated with the defeat of Montcalm (q.v.) at Quebec, and the subsequent Treaty of Paris (1763) marked the end of the French empire in Canada.

New Freedom, The, see *Wilson, Woodrow.*

New Hampshire, blank verse poem by Robert Frost (q.v.), published in 1923 as the title piece of a volume which won the 1924 Pulitzer Prize.

In this familiar monologue, the poet presents a witty defense of his manner of life and philosophic attitude. He describes New Hampshire as 'one of the two best states in the Union. Vermont's the other,' and as a compact community having 'one each of everything as in a show-case.' Answering the 'glorious bards of Massachusetts' who 'taunt the lofty land with little men,' he names friends among the New Hampshire people he admires and would not change. 'I choose to be a plain New Hampshire farmer,' he says, in condemning extremists who demand that he take a radical attitude.

New Hampshire Grants, lands west of the Connecticut River in Vermont, granted to frontier settlers, during the mid-18th century, by the governor of New Hampshire. New York disputed the jurisdiction of New Hampshire in this region, and won a royal decree (1764) in favor of its own claim. The attempts of the settlers to retain their holdings led to many border clashes, notably those involving Ethan Allen's Green Mountain Boys (q.v.). The area of the grants was finally assigned to the state of Vermont, and New York formally relinquished its claims (1790).

New Harmony, socialized community on the Wabash River in Indiana, founded by the Rappists (q.v.,1814) as an outgrowth of their Harmony Society (q.v.). Upon their failure, it was purchased by Robert Owen (q.v.,1825), for use in applying his communal theories. Although some thousand settlers arrived, most of them were impractical theorists. During the two years of its existence, New Harmony had seven different forms of government or constitutions. Dissensions and ten group secessions led to the final dissolution of the community (1828). *The New-Harmony Gazette* (1825–35), its weekly periodical, interpreted and recorded the progress of the colony. After the community disbanded, Robert Dale Owen, Frances Wright, and others broadened the scope of the magazine. It became a socialist and agnostic periodical and, in 1829 the title became *The Free Enquirer.*

New Home, A—Who'll Follow? or, Glimpses of Western Life, sketches by Caroline Kirkland (q.v.), published in 1839 under the pseudonym 'Mrs.Mary Clavers, An Actual Settler.' These realistic sketches of frontier Michigan during the 1830's describe the log houses, conditions in the towns, the land booms, and the backwoods social standards. Among the characters delineated are a silly romantic girl who marries a clerk, a young blood who embezzles the funds of a wildcat bank, squatters, English upperclass settlers, old-maid gossips, and rampant democrats. The book was reissued as *Our New Home in the West* (1874).

New Humanism, see *Humanism.*

New Jersey, COLLEGE OF, see *Princeton University.*

New Jerusalem, CHURCH OF THE, see *Swedenborgianism.*

New Light, see *Great Awakening.*

New Masses, see *Masses.*

New Mirror, see *New-York Mirror.*

New Netherland, region now included in the states of New York and New Jersey,

first claimed for Holland by Hudson (q.v., 1609). The New Netherland Company, founded by Amsterdam merchants (1615), obtained a trade monopoly and established a settlement at New Amsterdam (New York City, q.v.). Their indefinite grant was given to the Dutch West India Company (1621) and in 1626 the accomplished fact of occupation was given a semblance of legality by the purchase of Manhattan Island from the Indians for 60 guilders ($24). Governors, or directors-general, of the colony included Cornelius Jacobson Mey (1624–5), William Verhulst (1625–6), Peter Minuit (q.v.,1626–32), Wouter van Twiller (1633–7), William Kieft (q.v.,1637–47), and Peter Stuyvesant (q.v.,1647–64). The colonists captured New Sweden (1655) but New Netherland was in turn seized by the English (1664). Irving's *History of New York* (q.v.) deals with the Dutch settlement.

New Orleans, largest city in Louisiana and chief port of the Gulf states, is situated on the eastern bank of the Mississippi River (q.v.), 100 miles above its mouth. The site was known to survivors of DeSoto's expedition, and to La Salle, Tonty, and Iberville, prior to the city's founding (1718) by the French governor, Sieur de Bienville. Louisiana was ceded to Spain by the Treaty of Paris (1763), but reverted to France (1803) and in 1803 came into the possession of the U.S. by the Louisiana purchase (q.v.). The city's population was augmented by the real-estate scheme known as the Mississippi Bubble (q.v.), and the opening of the West brought it new prosperity when it became capital of the state (1812). It was a city imbedded in European culture, whose Latin character, enhanced by the semitropical climate, appeared in its gay society, noted for its balls, opera, theater, and Mardi Gras celebrations (q.v.), the distinctive architecture of the Vieux Carré, and the heritage of Creole and Cajun customs. During the War of 1812, the Battle of New Orleans (q.v.) was the final engagement and a decisive American victory. The advent of steam navigation soon made New Orleans both the queen city of the Mississippi and a lawless river town, a center for showboats, gamblers, plantation owners, and slave and cotton traders. During the Civil War it was a strategic point in the Confederate defense until its surrender (1862), when it was placed under the harsh military governorship of Benjamin Butler. It suffered under the pressure of carpetbaggers and scalawags during the Reconstruction, and, besides the civic strife, the diminishing of river trade caused a partial loss of the former commercial importance of the city. During the present century, when the population has increased to nearly a half million, New Orleans has been under the virtual dictatorship of the political machine of Huey Long and his successors. The home of Tulane University (founded 1845), it is represented in the arts by its distinctive architecture, many of whose landmarks still survive; by the Creole and Cajun songs that influenced the sentimental compositions of Gottschalk, and the Negro music that has had its effect on jazz; by the paintings of Audubon and Vanderlyn in the early 19th century; and by its literature. The early literature was predominantly French and, in the tradition of Chateaubriand, largely romantic. The flush period prior to the Civil War was depicted by Vincent Nolte and, in *Life on the Mississippi*, by Clemens. Newspapers have included the *Crescent*, for which Whitman worked briefly, and the *New Orleans Picayune* (q.v.). The city was one of the centers of the local-color movement, and its romantic past figured in the works of Cable, Hearn, Grace King, Kate Chopin, and Ruth Stuart. After the First World War, a more realistic attitude was inaugurated by the little magazine, *Double Dealer*, whose contributors included Sherwood Anderson and Faulkner. Other modern authors who have used the city's background include Roark Bradford, Lyle Saxon, and Hergesheimer.

New Orleans, Battle of, last battle of the War of 1812 (q.v.), in which Andrew Jackson, over a period of two weeks, resisted British attempts to seize the city. The decisive American victory (Jan. 8, 1815), in which Kentucky and Tennessee frontier riflemen played a great part and to which the pirate Laffite also contributed, caused the British to retreat, after the killing or wounding of their leaders and many of their soldiers. Although the battle occurred after the signing of the Treaty of Ghent, of which the combatants were ignorant, and had no effect upon the peace, it did much to restore American national confidence.

A battle of New Orleans during the

Civil War occurred (April–May 1862), when the city was captured by Union forces (May 1) after D.D.Porter had prepared the way for the defeat of the Confederate fleet by Farragut, and General Benjamin Butler had attacked by land.

New Orleans Picayune (1837–), founded by G.W.Kendall and F.A.Lumsden as an independent paper, whose price per copy was a picayune, a Spanish coin current in the Southern states before the Civil War, worth 6¼¢. The newspaper was distinguished for its field reports of the Mexican War, on which the U.S. government relied in part for information. It has always been considered the leading New Orleans newspaper and its only break in publication was for two months during the Civil War, although during the Reconstruction it was forced to issue its own currency in order to continue publication. In 1914 it was combined with the *Times-Democrat* to become the *New Orleans Times-Picayune*. In 1933 it acquired the *New Orleans States*, which it still runs as an evening journal and which it combines on Sundays with the original paper as the *Times-Picayune New Orleans States*.

New Republic, The (1914–), weekly journal of opinion, was founded by Herbert Croly (q.v.), with a board of editors that included Walter Lippmann. Croly conceived the purpose of the magazine as being 'less to inform or entertain its readers than to start little insurrections in the realm of their convictions.' It supported American participation in the First World War, and, though it originated the phrase 'peace without victory,' it broke with Wilson and opposed U.S. ratification of the Treaty of Versailles. It has been consistently distinguished as a liberal organ, and later members of the editorial board have included such writers as R.M. Lovett, Stark Young, and Malcolm Cowley.

New School for Social Research, The, founded at New York in 1919 by C.A. Beard, Herbert Croly, Alvin Johnson, J.H.Robinson, and others, to provide adult education in the social sciences and other fields of learning in a spirit of free inquiry and with a faith in liberal democracy. The school began with less than 900 students, and its early professors included: H.E.Barnes, John Dewey, H.M.Kallen, Roscoe Pound, and Veblen. In 1930 it moved into a modern building designed by Joseph Urban and noted both for its functional architecture and murals by Orozco and T.H.Benton. It now has some 3,800 students and its teachers have included: Carleton Beals, Franz Boas, John Chamberlain, Aaron Copland, Waldo Frank, Lewis Gannett, J.W.Krutch, Lewis Mumford, Gorham Munson, E.R.A.Seligman, Mark Van Doren, and Stark Young. In 1933 it added a Graduate Faculty of Political and Social Science, drawn from scholars driven from their posts in totalitarian countries, which has come to be known as the 'University in Exile.'

New Side, see *Great Awakening*.

New Sweden, colony on the Delaware River founded in 1638 by a Swedish expedition commanded by Peter Minuit, who first settled near the site of the present Wilmington and later occupied territory now included in Delaware, Pennsylvania, and New Jersey. Johan Printz was governor (1643–53), and in 1655 the colony was captured by the Dutch from New Netherland, to which it was annexed, although many of the Swedish settlers remained. The colony's history appears in fiction in Paulding's *Koningsmarke* and in Irving's *History of New York*.

New World, see *Benjamin, Park*.

New York City, situated at the mouth of the Hudson River and formed of the five boroughs of Manhattan (q.v.), Brooklyn, the Bronx (q.v.), Richmond, and Queens, is the largest city of the U.S. The first white occupation occurred when Hudson established a trading post on Manhattan in 1609, and New Amsterdam was the capital of New Netherland (q.v.) long before Minuit's purchase of the island from the Indians (1626). The events of the Dutch occupation, until the British seized the colony in 1664, are widely known through Irving's burlesque *Knickerbocker's History of New York* (q.v.). Despite the rebellion led by Leisler (q.v.), New York grew rapidly during the century of English occupation, although it remained smaller and less important than Boston and Philadelphia. King's College (Columbia) was founded in 1754, and many of the city's theaters, newspapers, and educational institutions had already been established. It was a center of disaffection during the events that led up to the Revolution, and Washington made New York

his headquarters after the British captured Boston. The Battle of Long Island was the city's chief military event of the war, and as the national capital (1784–90) it was the scene of Washington's inauguration and of his Farewell Address. It soon became the principal city of the U.S., having a population of 60,000 in 1800, 3,437,202 in 1900, and 7,380,259 in 1940. The building of railroads, the opening of the Erie Canal (1825), and the importance of New York harbor as the chief port of the U.S. contributed to the city's rise and to the increasing significance of Wall Street (q.v.), while Tammany Hall (q.v.) maintained its political domination for more than a century. The growth in population has been the result of three streams of immigration: (1) from various European countries, which gave rise to such foreign settlements as those on the East Side (q.v.); (2) from the Southern states to the Negro community of Harlem (q.v.); and (3) the influx from all sections of the U.S. of aspirants to careers in trade, finance, and the arts, in all of which New York has come to be considered the American capital. Besides Columbia, the city has such educational institutions as the College of the City of New York, Fordham, New York University, and the New School for Social Research, and its cultural history, influenced by its cosmopolitanism and by its magnetism for young artists, authors, and students, is long and complex. Because of such institutions as the Metropolitan Opera and the Philharmonic Society, New York has been the center of American musical activity, including the work of such men as Leopold and Walter Damrosch, Toscanini, MacDowell, Victor Herbert, George Gershwin, and Deems Taylor. From the early performances of British troupes to the Broadway productions of the present day, the city has also been the headquarters of the theater (q.v.) in America, and for its vaudeville and burlesque shows, musical comedies, dance halls, and night clubs has been composed the music of Tin Pan Alley (q.v.). Such artists as Bellows, Sloan, and Luks have painted New York, and the city's art collections are displayed in many museums, including the Metropolitan Museum and the Museum of Modern Art (qq.v.), while in architecture it is best known for the modern development of the skyscraper (q.v.). The first international exposition held in the U.S. was the Crystal Palace Exhibition ('Exhibition of the Industry of All Nations') at New York (1853), and an exposition celebrating the 'World of Tomorrow' was held there (1939–40). The city's numerous literary figures represent a cross section of social, political, and æsthetic trends during its history. After the Dutch poet Steendam and such English colonial writers as Cadwallader Colden and the authors of *Androboros*, the significant authors include Freneau, Paine, Barlow, and Hamilton during the Revolution; such figures of the early 19th century as Dunlap, C.B.Brown, J.H.Payne, Irving, Paulding, the Knickerbocker Group (q.v.), Cooper, Bryant, Poe, Bayard Taylor, and the Duyckincks; Whitman, and the Bohemian group at Pfaff's (q.v.); other 19th-century figures, including Parke Godwin, William Winter, Howells, Henry James, Melville, Stedman, and Brander Matthews; Stephen Crane, Riis, Saltus, D.G.Phillips, Steffens, O.Henry, H.C.Bunner, R.H.Davis, Huneker, Edith Wharton, and other pre-war authors; the Greenwich Village writers (q.v.); and such later figures as Mencken, Nathan, F.Scott Fitzgerald, Christopher Morley, Dorothy Parker, Kaufman, Dos Passos, Van Vechten, the Harlem authors (q.v.), Ernest Poole, James Oppenheim, Hart Crane, Odets, Irwin Shaw, F.P.Adams, Maxwell Bodenheim, Michael Gold, Kreymborg, and Konrad Bercovici.

New York American (1819–45), daily newspaper, early distinguished as a Whig and National Republican journal, which had great influence among the aristocratic circles of New York. Johnston Verplanck was a founder and assistant editor (1819–29) and Charles King was editor (1827–45), assisted for a time by C.F.Hoffman. The paper was absorbed by the *New York Courier and Enquirer*, a Whig paper, and King remained as an assistant editor with H.J.Raymond (1843–51). It is not to be confused with the Hearst newspaper of the same name.

New York *Evening Post* (1801–), was founded as a Federalist organ, and at first subordinated news to biased political discussion. Early literary contributions included the 'Croaker Papers' of Drake and Halleck. Bryant joined the staff in 1826 and edited the paper (1829–78), which he made an organ of Jacksonian Democracy and later an advocate of the Free Soil and

the Republican parties. After 1881 the *Evening Post* was published by the Villard family, and E.L.Godkin and Carl Schurz (qq.v.) became its editors. Following Schurz's resignation, Godkin edited the paper and also *The Nation*, which was then virtually a weekly edition of the *Post*. It was noted for its crusades against jingoism and political corruption, and as a leader in the Mugwump movement. In 1918 O.G.Villard sold it and it came into the hands of the Curtis Publishing Company, which changed the name in 1934 to the New York *Post*.

New York Gazette (1725–44), first newspaper in New York City, was a semi-official chronicle of current events, edited and published by William Bradford.

New-York Gazeteer, see *Rivington's New-York Gazeteer*.

New York Globe, see *American Minerva*.

New York *Herald* (1835–), founded by James Gordon Bennett (1795–1872) as a penny daily of dignified standards, which, when they failed to bring an income, were changed to those of yellow journalism. His sensational paper became proslavery and pro-Tammany until the Civil War, when popular feeling caused it to become strongly pro-Union. It was famous for its full news coverage, a policy further extended by the younger James Gordon Bennett (1841–1918) when he succeeded to the editorship (1872). He edited the paper primarily from his home in France, establishing European correspondents and making extensive use of cable communications. He also founded the Paris *Herald* (1887), which became the outstanding English-language paper on the continent. In addition to excellent straight reporting, the younger Bennett's editorship won attention by the feature writing of such authors as Clemens and Richard Harding Davis, and by the organization of Stanley's expedition to Africa (1869–72) to find Livingstone. In the years prior to his death, Bennett's paper lost circulation; in 1920 it was purchased by Frank Munsey and merged with *The Sun*, but they were soon separated, and in 1924 the *Herald* was purchased by Ogden Reid, who merged it with the *New-York Tribune* (q.v.) to create the New York *Herald Tribune*, a Republican daily noted both for its news coverage and for its many columnists, including Walter Lippmann and Dorothy Thompson, as well as for *Books*, a Sunday supplement of book reviews.

New York Idea, The, problem play by Langdon Mitchell (q.v.), produced in 1906 and published in 1908.

Philip Phillmore, a conservative, socially prominent New York judge, plans to be married to Cynthia, divorced wife of the sportsman, John Karslake, with whom she is still in love, as is Vida, Phillmore's ex-wife. John interrupts the wedding ceremony when he accuses Cynthia of being ignorant of true love. Thinking he plans to marry Vida, Cynthia goes to John's home, but there discovers that Vida has already married an Englishman, Sir Wilfred Cates-Darby. In talking over old times with John, Cynthia finds that their divorce was technically illegal, and they resolve to resume their married life.

New York *Independent Journal, The, or General Advertiser* (1783–88), newspaper that published many of the *Federalist* papers (Oct. 1787–April 1788). In 1788 it became the *New York Daily Gazette*.

New York Ledger (1855–1903), outgrowth of the *Merchants' Ledger* (1847–55), was the most widely read weekly paper of its time, incorporating characteristics of both newspapers and magazines. 'Fanny Fern,' Mrs.Southworth, Mrs.Sigourney, and Sylvanus Cobb contributed regularly, attracting readers by their sensational and pathetic stories, while the more intelligent were drawn by contributions from Everett, Bryant, Mrs. Stowe, Halleck, Longfellow, and such English authors as Tennyson and Dickens. Robert Bonner, who purchased the *Ledger* in 1851, was noted as the Barnum of publishers, because of his sensational advertising schemes. He retired in 1887 and in 1898 the paper became a monthly magazine.

New York Magazine, The (1790–97), monthly 'Literary Repository,' most of whose material was not original, but whose special contributors included C.B. Brown and Dunlap. The latter's 'Theatrical Register' was first printed there.

New-York Mirror (1823–60), weekly newspaper devoted to literature, art, and society, founded by Samuel Woodworth and others. G.P.Morris became editor (1824) and in 1831 N.P.Willis became an

associate editor, when the *Mirror* absorbed his *American Monthly Magazine.* Contributors included Cooper, Halleck, Whittier, Irving, T.D.English, John Neal, C.F.Hoffman, and Mrs.Sigourney. In 1842 it became the *New Mirror*, and in 1844 the daily *Evening Mirror*, of which Poe was the literary critic (1844–5). Although Morris had retired, Willis still kept his connection, until he went abroad (1845). Upon his return the following year, he joined Morris's *National Press* to create the *Home Journal*, but the *Mirror* continued until 1860 under the management of their former partner, Hiram Fuller. The original *Mirror* is not to be confused with the 20th-century tabloid of that name, owned by Hearst.

New York Packet, see *Loudon, Samuel.*

New York *Post*, see *New York Evening Post.*

New York Public Library, consolidated (1895) from the collections of several previous libraries, including the Astor library founded by J.J.Astor, the scholarly Lenox Library founded by James Lenox, and the English and American literature collection of E.A.Duyckinck. Most of the city's independent libraries were consolidated with the main collection (1901–4). In 1938, the total number of volumes was 3,246,150. The library publishes reports and bulletins.

New York Review and Athenæum Magazine, The (1825–26), monthly literary journal which superseded *The Atlantic Magazine*, was edited by R.C.Sands, Bryant, and others. Among the contributors were Halleck, Longfellow, N.P.Willis, George Bancroft, and the elder R.H.Dana. Lack of an aggressive policy brought about its merger with *The United States Literary Gazette* (q.v.).

New York *Sun* (1833–), newspaper founded by Benjamin H. Day (q.v.) as a penny daily, to feature human interest stories. Its news was local, with little emphasis on politics, although it leaned toward the Democratic party. It first attracted wide attention with its sensational 'Moon Hoax' (q.v.,1835). In 1838 Day sold the paper to Moses Y. Beach, who edited it until 1848, stressing news scoops. His sons controlled the *Sun* until 1860, tending to support the Democrats, although opposing secession and slavery. During 1860–62 the paper passed into other hands, becoming an organ of evangelical religion, but returned to the Beach family until 1868, when C.A.Dana (q.v.) became editor and manager. His sole rule was 'Be interesting,' and his forte was personal journalism. He early turned against Grant and was influential in attacking the corruption of the period. Upon his death (1897), his son became editor, to be succeeded (1903) by Edward P. Mitchell, who was associated with the paper for 50 years, editing it until 1920. Frank A. Munsey bought the *Sun* (1916) and merged it with the *Herald*, to become *The Sun and New York Herald*, but they were soon separated, and the *Sun* was made into an evening paper, which purchased the *New York Globe* (1923). Among the associate editors, correspondents, and reporters have been Frank H. Simonds, Arthur Brisbane, D.G.Phillips, S.H. Adams, and Will Irwin.

New York Times, The (1851–), daily newspaper founded by Henry J. Raymond (q.v.) as a conservative journal to be known for its accuracy, although reflecting the views of its Whig backers, Seward and Weed. After 1856 the paper was strongly Republican, but it continued its policy of conservative journalism under Raymond, who was editor until his death (1869). During the 1870's it became somewhat more sensational, in its work for reforms and leadership of the attack on the Tweed Ring. Its original publisher, George Jones, died in 1891, and during the next five years the *Times* declined in standards and dropped to a circulation of 9,000. In 1896 it was purchased by Adolph Ochs, who returned it to its original standards by adhering to the slogan, 'All the News That's Fit to Print.' Its careful reporting of the First World War through a large corps of correspondents helped raise the circulation to nearly 370,000 (1918). Since the death of Ochs (1935), his family has maintained the *Times's* reputation as the most eminent of American newspapers, and increased its daily circulation to nearly 500,000 and its Sunday issue to more than 750,000.

New-York Tribune (1841–), daily newspaper founded by Horace Greeley (q.v.), who edited it until his death (1872) and made it distinguished, not only for his trenchant editorials, but also for the journalists he attracted to it. These included H.J.Raymond, who founded the

Times in 1851; C.A.Dana, who was the managing editor from 1849 to 1862; George Ripley, who as literary critic (1849–80) wrote the first daily book reviews in the U.S.; and Whitelaw Reid, who succeeded Greeley as editor. Among Greeley's policies were opposition to monopolies and advocacy of labor organization, a protective tariff, and a homestead law. Although he began as a Whig, he became a Free Soil leader, and was influential in the election of Lincoln. After the Civil War, he favored Negro suffrage but opposed the punitive Reconstruction policy. During Reid's editorship (1872–1912), the *Tribune* remained the most distinguished and powerful Republican organ in the country. His policies were continued by his son, Ogden Reid, who succeeded him as editor, although the paper lost circulation until in 1924 it purchased the New York *Herald* (q.v.), becoming the *Herald Tribune*.

New York University, nonsectarian, privately endowed coeducational institution, chartered in 1831. Since 1891 it has been situated in several widely distributed sites in New York City. Graduate training is offered in many subjects, ranging from aeronautics to dentistry. The Hall of Fame (q.v.) is situated on its Washington Heights campus. Graduates include Cornelius Mathews (1834), R.G.White (1839), G.L.Duyckinck (1843), Lyman Abbott (1853), Deems Taylor (1906), and Jean Toomer (1918). Thomas Wolfe was an instructor of English there (1924–30).

New-York Weekly Journal (1733–52), founded by J.P.Zenger (q.v.) to oppose the official political views of the *New York Gazette*. Its repeated attacks on authorities caused Zenger to be imprisoned and to become the subject of the first trial for newspaper libel in the colonies. The paper was edited by his family while he was in prison (1735), and upon his acquittal, which is considered instrumental in establishing American freedom of press, he resumed the editorship, which he continued until 1746. It was later edited by his son.

New York *World* (1866–1931), founded as a penny daily religious newspaper. Since morality did not pay, it was forced to go through several mergers, and soon became worldly in fact as well as in name as the organ of the Albany Regency. In 1883 it was purchased by Joseph Pulitzer, who made it a flamboyant crusading paper and attracted an audience by espousing popular causes. In 1894 it inaugurated a colored comic strip, 'Hogan's Alley,' whose hero's name, the Yellow Kid, is said to have been the original of the term 'yellow journalism.' The paper vied with the Hearst publications during the Spanish-American War in gaudy and unscrupulous sensationalism. Under the editorship of Pulitzer's son, its standards were raised, when it championed the Democratic party and became known for such columnists as Walter Lippmann, F.P.Adams, and Heywood Broun. In 1931 it was combined with the *New York Telegram* to become the *World-Telegram*, a member of the Scripps-Howard chain. *The World Almanac and Book of Facts*, an annual reference volume, was founded in 1886.

New Yorker, The (1925–), weekly humorous magazine, founded and edited by Harold Ross to appeal to the 'caviar sophisticates' and 'not for the old lady in Dubuque.' The magazine is noted for its crisp satirical style and sophisticated whimsy, evidenced in such departments as 'Notes and Comments' and 'The Talk of the Town' written by E.B.White and others, its brief biographical sketches called 'Profiles,' the former column of 'Shouts and Murmurs' by Alexander Woollcott, drawings by such artists as Peter Arno, James Thurber, Soglow, Rea Irvin, and Alajalov, and fiction and verse by Ogden Nash, Dorothy Parker, Thurber, Conrad Aiken, Clifton Fadiman, Robert Benchley, and others. It is credited with popularizing the one-line caption for drawings, typical of the freshness of style that caused *The New Yorker* to supersede such journals as *Life* and *Judge*. Collections from the magazine include an annual *New Yorker Album*, *The New Yorker Book of Verse*, and a volume of *Profiles*.

NEWELL, PETER (1862–1924), humorist, author, and illustrator, best known for his flat wash drawings and whimsical captions in such books as *Topsys and Turvys* (1893), *Peter Newell's Pictures and Rhymes* (1899), *The Hole Book* (1908), *The Slant Book* (1910), and others.

NEWELL, ROBERT HENRY (1836–1901), New York journalist and humorist, best known for his comic treatment of contemporary matters in newspapers, written under the pseudonym Orpheus C.

Kerr. This name, a pun of the words 'Office Seeker,' was suggested by the great number of political aspirants at the time of Lincoln's inauguration and became a stock character for political lampooning. Newell's writings, significant for their comic interpretation of Civil War history, are in the vein of the cracker-box philosophy of Jack Downing, and are marked by mock-heroic jibing at solemnity, gross exaggeration or understatement, and purposeful misspelling. In addition to *The Orpheus C. Kerr Papers* (5 vols.,1862–71), under his own name Newell wrote sentimental verse; romantic fiction; *The Cloven Foot* (1870), a continuation of *Edwin Drood*; and *There Was Once a Man* (1884), a novel attacking the Darwinian theory. He married Adah Isaacs Menken.

Newes from Virginia, see *Rich, Richard.*

Newman, CHRISTOPHER, character in *The American* (q.v.).

NEWPORT, CHRISTOPHER (*c.*1565–1617), English mariner, served in Drake's Cadiz expedition (1587), commanded a privateering expedition to the West Indies (1592), and was employed by the London Company to command its expeditions to Virginia. He brought 120 settlers to found Jamestown (1607), but on his return (1608) with a similar number of emigrants, found only 40 of the original settlers alive. On his third voyage (1609), he brought some 70 more, and the same year made a fourth voyage, with Sir Thomas Gates and Sir George Somers, but was wrecked in the Bermudas and did not reach Virginia until May 1610. He made his last voyage in 1611, and then, because of disagreement with other leaders of the Virginia colony, quit the service to enter that of the East India Company. Narratives of his voyages appear in the works of Purchas, William Strachey, and John Smith, in the first two of which he is mentioned favorably.

Newport Mercury (1758–), second newspaper in Rhode Island, was founded by James Franklin,Jr., nephew of Benjamin Franklin. After its founder's death (1762), the paper was successfully continued by others. Except for three years, when it was published in Massachusetts during the British occupation of Newport, it has continued to be published in Rhode Island, where it is still influential.

NEWTON, A[LFRED] EDWARD (1863–1940), Philadelphia book collector, whose charming writings in a manner resembling that of the 18th-century essayists are primarily concerned with his avocation. These include: *The Amenities of Book-Collecting and Kindred Affections* (1918); *A Magnificent Farce and Other Diversions of a Book-Collector* (1921); *The Greatest Book in the World and Other Papers* (1925); *This Book-Collecting Game* (1928); *A Tourist in Spite of Himself* (1930); *End Papers* (1933); and *Derby Day and Other Adventures* (1934). He has also written two plays, *Dr.Johnson* (1923) and *Mr.Strahan's Dinner Party* (1930), and many brochures privately printed for his friends. His desire that the books, drawings, and manuscripts in his collection should 'not be consigned to the cold tomb of a museum' led to the sale of his library in 1941.

Newtown, (or Newe Towne), see *Cambridge.*

Nez Percé Indians, Northwestern tribe whose name is derived from the custom of wearing nose pendants. First encountered by Lewis and Clark, they were praised in Irving's *Adventures of Captain Bonneville* for their high culture and long-standing friendliness with the whites. After a fraudulent treaty by which the Americans obtained their gold lands, an uprising occurred (1877), led by Chief Joseph (q.v.).

NICHOLS, THOMAS LOW (1815–1901), journalist known for his reform and radical ideas, whose book, *Forty Years of American Life:* 1821-1861 (1864), furnishes one of the most interesting sources of information on everyday American life in its period. Among his other works are three novels on contemporary life in New York City, *Ellen Ramsay* (1843), *The Lady in Black* (1844), and *Raffle for a Wife* (1845). When he could not subscribe to the principles of a government prosecuting a Civil War, he left (1861) to spend the rest of his life as an expatriate in London.

MARY SARGEANT NICHOLS (1810–84), his wife, was a well-known reformer and wrote an autobiographical novel, *Mary Lyndon; or, Revelations of a Life* (1855).

NICHOLSON, SIR FRANCIS (1655–1728), British colonial administrator, came to America (1686) as lieutenant-governor of

the Dominion of New England under Andros. The imprisonment of Andros and the popular revolt of Leisler caused him to return to England (1689). Again in the colonies, he served as lieutenant-governor of Virginia, where he distinguished himself for his efficient administration and helped found the College of William and Mary. As governor of Maryland (1694–8) and of Virginia (1698–1705), he promoted education and the Anglican church, although pursuing a dictatorial policy. He commanded the colonial troops who captured Port Royal (1710) and established British supremacy in Acadia, and made an unsuccessful attempt to capture Quebec (1711). In 1713 he was appointed governor of Nova Scotia and given supervisory powers over other northern colonies. Before his recall the following year, he was satirized in the play *Androboros* (q.v.). His last appointment was as governor of South Carolina (1720–25). His writings include *Journal of an Expedition* (1711), an account of his capture of Port Royal, and *An Apology or Vindication of F.Nicholson* (1724), defending his South Carolina administration.

NICHOLSON, MEREDITH (1866–), Indiana novelist, who has served as minister to Paraguay (1933–4), minister to Venezuela (1935–8), and to Nicaraugua (1938–). His books include: *The Main Chance* (1903); *The House of a Thousand Candles* (1905), a mystery story; *The Port of Missing Men* (1907); *The Lords of High Decision* (1909); *Siege of the Seven Suitors* (1910); *A Hoosier Chronicle* (1912), a semi-autobiographical novel; *Hope of Happiness* (1923); and *The Cavalier of Tennessee* (1928). In addition to short stories, essays, and poems, he also wrote *The Hoosiers* (1900), a study of Indiana authors, and *The Poet* (1914), a fictional biography of James Whitcomb Riley.

Nick Carter, stock name for the detective hero of many dime novels. John Russell Coryell probably first used the name during the 1880's, but F.V.R.Dey, E.T. Sawyer, G.C.Jenks, and others were more prolific writers of the Carter novelettes, which include more than 1,000 titles. Nicholas Carter was also a stock name used for a number of authors of dime novels.

Nick of the Woods; or, The Jibbenainosay, novel by R.M.Bird (q.v.) published in 1837. This story of Indian warfare on the Kentucky border during the closing period of the Revolutionary War was meant to contradict the romantic literary conception, fostered by Chateaubriand and Cooper, that the Indian was a noble savage. Here the Indians are depicted as dirty, merciless, drunken louts, and the frontiersmen as vindictive, indiscriminate Indian-killers. The book was extremely popular and was made into a melodrama by Louisa Medina (1838).

Involved in the narrative of Captain Roland Forrester's progress through the wilderness with his beloved Edith, her captivity by the Indians, and subsequent raids and massacres, is the central figure of the Quaker, derisively called Bloody Nathan because he is the only man in Kentucky who says he will not fight. This unctuous hypocrite is actually Nick of the Woods, the Jibbenainosay, or devil, so feared by the Indians because undetected he carries on a brutal annihilation of the redmen in revenge for their massacre of his wife and children. Disguised as an Indian, Bloody Nathan discovers Wenonga, a Shawnee chief, to be the murderer of his family. Killing him with a tomahawk, he disappears, to haunt the forests no more, while George Rogers Clark saves Roland and Edith from death at the stake.

NICOLAY, JOHN GEORGE (1832–1901), brought to the U.S. in 1838 from his native Germany, grew up in Illinois, where after a journalistic career during his twenties he was appointed Lincoln's private secretary in 1860. His lifelong friend, John Hay, held a similar position, and the two men, who revered Lincoln, enjoyed an unusual opportunity for intimate study of their hero. From 1875 to 1890 they collaborated on the great biography, *Abraham Lincoln: A History* (10 vols.,1890). Nicolay's other works include *The Outbreak of Rebellion* (1881), *A Short Life of Abraham Lincoln* (1902), and the editorship with Hay of Lincoln's writings (12 vols.,1905).

Nigger, The, play by Edward Sheldon (q.v.), produced in 1909 and published in 1910.

Philip Morrow, a Southern patrician, becomes governor of his state through the aid of his cousin, Clifton Noyes, on a platform opposing the new freedom of the Negroes and favoring the commercial interests of Noyes. Turning against his cousin's plans, Morrow is threatened by

him with the revelation, previously unknown to him, that he is partly of Negro blood. Nevertheless, urged by his fiancée Georgiana, he signs the bill harming his cousin's business and prepares to address the citizens on his Negro heritage.

Nigger Heaven, novel by Carl Van Vechten (q.v.) published in 1926. It is noted for its depiction of the various strata of Negro society in Harlem.

Mary Love, a young librarian, meets Byron Kasson, a penniless writer. They fall in love, but are unhappy because his ambition meets constant obstacles, owing to the inferior position of their race. Mary refuses to marry the wealthy gambler, Randolph Pettijohn, disliking his meanness and vulgarity. Lasca Sartoris, a celebrated, exotically fascinating actress, takes Byron's affections from Mary for a time, and his interest from his career, but then she tires of him and turns to Pettijohn. Byron thinks that to win Mary again he must prove that he hates Lasca. He goes to a night club intending to shoot her. There another former lover of Lasca kills Pettijohn; Byron, maddened, fires into the dead body and police arrest him for the murder.

Night, lyric poem by Jeffers (q.v.) published in *Roan Stallion, Tamar, and Other Poems* (1925).

In stately free verse, the poet celebrates the beauty of the rhythmic return of night to the California coast. 'Sun-lovers' worship a 'father of lights and noises, wars, weeping and laughter . . . ,' but nobler night, death, and darkness, 'the primal and the latter silences,' must prevail over life, 'the flicker of men and moths and the wolf on the hill.' This ultimate truth, which men dared not face before, has been unveiled by modern science and philosophy.

Night Before Christmas, poem by C.C. Moore (q.v.).

Night over Taos, verse drama by Maxwell Anderson (q.v.), produced and published in 1932.

At the home of Pablo Montoya, patriarchal ruler of the Mexican colony at Taos, New Mexico, in 1847, is centered the final crisis of this outpost of a crumbling empire. An American force of frontiersmen and soldiers have attacked Montoya's men, and his son Federico, desiring his father's power as well as Diana, a girl whom Pablo is about to take as his fourth wife, betrays their position to the 'gringos.' In the battle that ensues, Pablo is thought dead, and Federico quarrels with his brother Felipe, who loves and is loved by Diana, but who remains faithful to his father. As they fight, Pablo returns, to make preparations for his wedding and for a last desperate stand against the Americans. He discovers Federico's treachery, and kills him. When he becomes aware of the love of Felipe and Diana, he wishes to kill Felipe also, but Father Martinez, his old adviser, reminds him that this will cause the rebellion of the peons. Pablo realizes that with the defection of his family his cause is lost, and with a final grand gesture he gives Diana to Felipe and drinks poison, the 'one man who could not surrender and live.'

NILES, BLAIR [RICE], with her husband, a New York architect and photographer, has explored many regions of Asia and South America. Her travel accounts include: *Casual Wanderings in Ecuador* (1923); *Colombia, Land of Miracles* (1924); *Black Haiti* (1926); *The Biography of an Unknown Convict* (1928), based on a visit to Devil's Island; and several novels set in these places, including *Free* (1930), *Maria Paluna* (1934), and *Day of Immense Sun* (1936).

NILES, SAMUEL (1674–1762), Congregational clergyman of Rhode Island, was a prominent religious controversialist and historian. His works include *Tristiæ Ecclesiarum* (1745), an account of the New England churches and an attack on Whitefield; 'A Summary Historic Narrative of the Wars in New England with the French and Indians' (Collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society, 1837 and 1861); and *A Brief and Plain Essay on God's Wonder Working Providence . . . in the Reduction of Louisburg* (1747), a rimed account.

Niles' Weekly Register (1811–49), journal published at Baltimore by Hezekiah Niles (1777–1839), an ardent economic nationalist. It was also entitled *Niles' National Register* (1836–9). The paper's generally unbiased record of current events is of great value to the historiographer.

Nimrod Wildfire, character in *The Lion of the West* (q.v.).

Nina Leeds, heroine of *Strange Interlude* (q.v.).

Nine Worthies, see *Irving, William.*

1919, novel by Dos Passos published in 1932. It is the second in the trilogy *U.S.A.* (collected 1938), including *The 42nd Parallel* (q.v.,1930) and *The Big Money* (q.v., 1936). Interspersed in the narrative are brief biographies of John Reed, Randolph Bourne, Theodore Roosevelt, Paxton Hibben, Wilson, J.P.Morgan, Joe Hill, Wesley Everest, and the Unknown Soldier. For critical discussion, see *Dos Passos.*

Joe Williams deserts from the navy in Argentina, obtains a forged seaman's certificate, and makes several voyages on tankers and freighters across the Atlantic, being jailed several times, and cast adrift when his ships are torpedoed during the First World War. At one time he rises to be junior officer, marries, and hopes to settle down, but, disillusioned by his wife's infidelity, continues his wanderings at sea until the Armistice. Richard Ellsworth Savage, son of a genteelly poor New Jersey family, gets a job with the politician Hiram Halsey Cooper, who sends him to Harvard. At first an æsthete, he is later stirred by the war and joins an ambulance corps in France. When the U.S. enters the war he returns, and through Cooper's influence obtains a lieutenancy in the U.S. Army. In France he becomes a captain; after the Armistice, with his eye ever on the main chance, he gets a position at the Peace Conference with the public relations office of J.W.Moorehouse. Meanwhile he has an affair with Anne Trent, a confused Texas debutante, who, after being involved in Socialist activities with Ben Compton, has come to France on her way to do relief work in the Near East. When she becomes pregnant, Dick, fearful of losing his opportunity to rise with Moorehouse, refuses to marry her; hysterical, she goes on a joyride with a French aviator and is killed when his plane crashes. Eveline Hutchins, daughter of a wealthy Chicago minister, has a flair for the arts, and, with her friend Eleanor Stoddard, opens an interior decorating shop, which they move to New York. There they join a Bohemian group and finally go to Paris with the Red Cross. Eveline has an affair with Jerry Burnham, an American correspondent, and Eleanor resumes her friendship with Moorehouse, now head of Red Cross publicity. They quarrel over Moorehouse's fickle attentions, and Eveline, desperately seeking security, urges herself on the young doughboy Paul Johnson, inveigling him into marriage. Ben Compton, a bright young Brooklyn Jew, gets a job in a construction camp, sympathizes with his fellow workers, goes on strike, joins the Socialist party, and, becoming involved in agitation at the Passaic mill strike, is jailed. After bumming his way across the U.S. with an I.W.W. friend, and being beaten by police in Seattle, he returns home to lead radical meetings, and is sent to Atlanta for pacifist agitation.

Nipmuck Indians, Massachusetts tribe allied with King Philip (q.v.) in his war against the white colonists. Eliot's translation of the Bible was in the language of this tribe.

No Star Is Lost, novel by James T. Farrell (q.v.).

No Villain Need Be, novel by Vardis Fisher (q.v.).

NOAH, MORDECAI MANUEL (1785–1851), born in Philadelphia of a distinguished Portuguese-Jewish family, became prominent in the varied fields of law, politics, journalism, and drama. His first play, a melodrama, *Paul and Alexis* (1812), was retitled *The Wandering Boys* (1821). Other plays included: *She Would Be a Soldier* (q.v.,1819); *The Siege of Tripoli* (1820), also produced as *Yuseff Caramalli*, but never published; *Marion; or, The Hero of Lake George* (1821); and *The Grecian Captive* (1822). His most important political appointment was as consul to Tunis (1813–15), where he was to arrange the release of Americans imprisoned by the Algerian pirates. The account of this trip, and a defense of his actions which had been impugned, was published in *Travels in England, France, Spain, and the Barbary States* (1819). During the subsequent years, he founded and edited successively six daily newspapers, and a selection of his journalistic contributions was printed in *Gleanings from a Gathered Harvest* (1845).

Nobel Prizes, provided by the bequest of Alfred B. Nobel (1833–96), Swedish scientist, have been given annually since 1901 for the most significant contributions in the fields of chemistry, physics, medicine, and literature, and in the cause of peace. Awards are determined by committees at Stockholm and Oslo, and may be given to persons of any nationality. Each prize amounts to approximately

$40,000. There have been several American winners in each division, the prize for literature having been awarded to Sinclair Lewis (1930), Eugene O'Neill (1936), and Pearl Buck (1938).

NOCK, ALBERT JAY, graduated from St. Stephen's College, now a part of Columbia University, and has been professor of American history and politics there since 1930. Under the pseudonyms Historicus and Journeyman, as well as under his own name and in various collaborations, he has published such books as *How Diplomats Make War* (1915, revised 1916); *The Myth of a Guilty Nation* (1922); *Jefferson* (1926), a laudatory 'study in conduct and character'; *The Theory of Education in the United States* (1932); *A Journal of These Days* (1934), a personal record of 19 months, exhibiting the author's wit and irony as well as his many striking prejudices; *Our Enemy, the State* (1935), expressing his extreme individualism; and *Henry George: An Essay* (1939). He was an editor of *The Freeman* and has edited the works of Rabelais and Artemus Ward.

Nokomis, character in *Hiawatha* (q.v.).

NOLAN, PHILIP (*c.*1771–1801), contraband horse trader along the Mexican border, who was killed in a skirmish resulting from his activities. His name was used for the leading figure in 'The Man Without a Country,' whose author, E.E.Hale, also wrote *The Real Philip Nolan* (1901), in which he explains that the historical Nolan is not the prototype of his character, although he was the subject of his other novel, *Philip Nolan's Friends* (1876).

NOLTE, VINCENT (1779–1853?), Italian-born merchant of German parentage, traveled widely on business missions, visited the U.S. several times, resided in New Orleans during the War of 1812, and was involved in various American ventures, including the United States Bank enterprise. His adventurous career, during which he encountered such diverse figures as Napoleon, Victoria, Audubon, Jackson, Cooper, Delacroix, and Nicholas Biddle, is described in his *Fifty Years in Both Hemispheres, or, Reminiscences of the Life of a Former Merchant* (American edition, translated from the German, 1854). He was also the author of works in German on finance and political economy, and is one of the principal characters in *Anthony Adverse,* by Hervey Allen.

Nonimportation Act, although never enforced, was passed by Congress (1806) and was intended to forbid the importation of certain British articles in retaliation for her rigorous rulings concerning cargoes and sailors. It was a prelude to Jefferson's Embargo Act. Earlier nonimportation agreements were made (1765 and 1768) by New York, Philadelphia, and Boston merchants, in retaliation respectively for the Stamp Act and the Townshend Acts, and a Continental Association (1774) was formed by the Continental Congress to prohibit both exports and imports.

Nonintercourse Act, succeeded the previous Nonimportation and Embargo Acts in 1809. It forbade all commercial intercourse with Great Britain and France. The French retaliated with the Rambouillet Decree (1810), providing for the seizure and sale of American ships in ports of France or of territories occupied by Napoleon's army.

NORDHOFF, CHARLES (1830–1901), Prussian-born journalist and author, whose earliest books are based on his youthful experiences as an American sailor. These are *Man-of-War Life* (1855), *The Merchant Vessel* (1855), *Whaling and Fishing* (1856), *Stories of the Island World* (1857), and a compilation of his first three books, *Nine Years a Sailor* (1857). He served as an editor of the New York *Evening Post* (1861–71) and as Washington correspondent of the New York *Herald* (1874–90). His newspaper assignments resulted in such books as *Secession Is Rebellion* (1860); *America for Free Working Men* (1865); *Communistic Societies in the United States* (1875), his most important contribution to social history; and *The Cotton States* (1876), an impartial political and economic investigation.

CHARLES BERNARD NORDHOFF (1887–), his grandson, lives in Tahiti, where with James Norman Hall (1887–) he has written several popular novels. These include *The Hurricane* (1936), a romantic story of contemporary Polynesian life, and the trilogy concerned with the 18th-century mutineers against Captain Bligh, *Mutiny on the Bounty* (1932), *Men Against the Sea* (1934), and *Pitcairn Island* (1934). He edited his grandfather's *Nine Years a Sailor* as *In Yankee Windjammers* (1940).

NORRIS, CHARLES G[ILMAN] (1881–), brother of Frank Norris, author of

novels dealing with such problems as modern education, women in business, hereditary and environmental influences, big business ethics, and birth control, which include: *Salt* (1917), *Brass* (1921), *Bread* (1923), *Pig Iron* (1925), *Zelda Marsh* (1927), *Seed* (1930), and *Bricks without Straw* (1938).

KATHLEEN [THOMPSON] NORRIS (1880–), his wife, has issued a steady flow of popular novels since *Mother* (1911), all characterized by a wholesome sentimental concern with domestic comedies and tragedies.

NORRIS, FRANK (BENJAMIN FRANKLIN NORRIS) (1870–1902), was born in Chicago, but in 1884 moved to San Francisco with his parents. After a year in a California preparatory school, he was sent to study art in Paris, where he spent his spare time writing medieval romances. While at the University of California (1890–94), he wrote short stories and sketches for student and local publications, as well as a romantic poem in three cantos, *Yvernelle, A Tale of Feudal France* (1892). Under the influence of Zola's fiction, he soon turned from his juvenile romanticism to naturalism and began a novel of lower and middle class life in San Francisco, which he later completed as *McTeague* (q.v.,1899). He next spent a year at Harvard, where he wrote more of *McTeague* and parts of *Vandover and the Brute* (q.v.,1914). In 1895–6 he was in South Africa, but failed in his project of writing travel sketches because of fighting between the English and Boers, which he reported for *Collier's* and the San Francisco *Chronicle*. He was ordered to leave the country, after being captured by the Boers, and returned to join the staff of *The Wave*, a San Francisco magazine, in which he serialized *Moran of the Lady Letty* (q.v.,1898). From his many contributions to this periodical also came a novelette, *The Joyous Miracle* (1906), and two collections of short stories, *A Deal in Wheat* (1903) and *The Third Circle* (1909). These works exhibit his divided loyalty to the currently popular romantic realism of Kipling and the naturalistic attitude of Zola. The former influence caused him, like Stephen Crane, to go to Cuba (1898), where he reported the Santiago campaign of the Spanish-American War for *McClure's Magazine*. Upon his return (1899), he was employed by the publishing firm of Doubleday, Page, which that year issued *McTeague* and *Blix* (q.v.), a semi-autobiographical love story. *A Man's Woman* (q.v.,1900) is a romantic work in the vein of Jack London's novels. About this time, moved by his growing concern with social and economic forces, Norris conceived the plan of his 'Epic of the Wheat,' a trilogy to consist of *The Octopus*, a novel dealing with the raising of wheat in California, and the struggle of the ranchers against the railroad; *The Pit*, a tale of speculation in the Chicago wheat exchange; and *The Wolf*, about the consumption of the wheat as bread in a famine-stricken European village. He visited a wheat ranch in California and wrote *The Octopus* (q.v., 1901), which is considered his finest work. Before his sudden death following an appendix operation, he had written *The Pit* (q.v.,1903), which became extremely popular. 'The Wolf' was left unwritten. *The Responsibilities of the Novelist* (1903), a collection of essays and articles, contains a statement of his artistic credo, in which he says that the novelist 'of all men cannot think only of himself or for himself,' but must rather sacrifice money, fashion, and popularity for the greater reward of realizing that he has told the truth. The best type of novel, according to Norris, 'proves something, draws conclusions from a whole congeries of forces, social tendencies, race impulses, devotes itself not to a study of men but of man. In *McTeague* and *The Octopus*, despite their romantic elements and occasional extravagances, he is considered to have achieved his idealistic purpose and to have presented a vivid, authentic portrayal of contemporary life in California. Other posthumous publications include *Vandover and the Brute* (q.v.), printed in 1914 from the uncorrected draft of his second novel; *Frank Norris of The Wave* (1931), a selection of his magazine fiction; and the *Works* (10 vols.,1928), containing other previously uncollected articles and stories, with introductions by leading authors, including his brother Charles.

Norsemen in America, see *Vineland.*

NORTH, FREDERICK NORTH, LORD (1732–92), was the British prime minister during the American Revolution, holding office from 1770 until 1783. Against his own judgment, he supported the policies of George III, aiding in the passage of the Townshend Acts, the Boston Port Bill, and other legislation considered intolerable by the colonists. At the outbreak of

the Revolutionary War he attempted to resign, but the king would not allow this and continued to direct North's administration throughout the war.

North American Phalanx, most scientifically planned of all the American experiments in Fourierism (q.v.), was founded at Red Bank, New Jersey (1843), by Albert Brisbane, with the advice of Parke Godwin, W.H.Channing, Horace Greeley, and George Ripley. The colony maintained a three-story phalanstery, a grist mill, and a large orchard, and occupied a considerable area of fertile land. The members, mostly people of culture and refinement, ate their meals together, but each family had separate quarters, and each member was allowed to work at the task which best suited him. Careful attention was paid to the education of children. When the mill burned (1854), the association was dissolved.

North American Review, The (1815–), Boston magazine, founded as an outgrowth of *The Monthly Anthology*, was edited by William Tudor, with the assistance of E.T.Channing, R.H.Dana,Sr., and others, as a quarterly literary, critical, and historical review on the order of its English contemporaries, with the purpose of achieving a greater national scope than any previous American magazine. It was nevertheless scholarly, and was closely affiliated with Harvard and Boston Unitarianism. Among its early contributions were Bryant's 'Thanatopsis' (1817) and 'To a Waterfowl' (1818). Edward Everett, Jared Sparks, and J.G.Palfrey, as later editors, continued the magazine's high standards, but were more inclined towards history than *belles lettres*. The *Review* later became a monthly and included among its editors C.E.Norton, Lowell, Henry Adams, and H.C.Lodge. Among its contributors were Emerson, Irving, Longfellow, Parkman, E.P.Whipple, Motley, Holmes, Howells, Boyesen, Whitman, Clemens, and Henry James. It moved to New York (1878), where, separated from the Brahmin atmosphere, it plunged into a mælstrom of contemporaneity, becoming concerned with the latest political and social movements. At the turn of the century, it had a diverse list of authors, including Tolstoy, D'Annunzio, Maeterlinck, H.G.Wells, Alan Seeger, Bryan, James Bryce, Clemens, Howells, and Henry James. After the First World War, the circulation diminished greatly and the magazine became again a quarterly. Recently the editorship has been assumed by descendants of the founders, who have returned the *Review* to its earliest policies, although adapting them to contemporary conditions.

North Carolina, University of, state coeducational institution, situated at Chapel Hill, was founded as a men's college (1789) and has become one of the most important educational institutions of the South. It is distinguished for the Carolina Playmakers (q.v.), a writing and producing group founded in 1918; and for the high quality of its University Press, founded in 1922. Graduates include James K. Polk (1818), Hatcher Hughes (1907), Thomas Wolfe (1919), and Paul Green (1921).

North of Boston, poems by Robert Frost (q.v.).

North Star (1847–64), antislavery newspaper founded at Rochester, New York, by Frederick Douglass (q.v.). A weekly journal, it was later called *Frederick Douglass's Paper* and was considered a noteworthy example of contemporary journalism, irrespective of its stand against slavery. It differed from *The Liberator* by favoring peaceful political methods.

North Woods, region of lakes and coniferous forests, including northern Minnesota, Wisconsin, and Michigan, and parts of southern Canada. Northwestern Canada, the region extending as far as the Klondike (q.v.), is known as the Far North. The primitive lives of the few inhabitants of these regions, chiefly miners, trappers, woodsmen, and Indians, have been treated since Jack London by many authors of popular adventure fiction, notably James Oliver Curwood, Rex Beach, and Stewart Edward White, while the ballads of Robert Service depict conventional heroes and scoundrels in the icy Far North from a similar point of view. Ernest Thompson-Seton has written of the animals of the North Woods, as have other authors of fiction for children. In the late 19th century, the North Woods was the scene of an invasion by lumbermen, who deforested large areas. During this spectacular period, the lumberjacks developed a unique body of legends concerned with the fictional hero Paul Bunyan (q.v.).

Northwest, as distinguished from the old

Northwest Territory (q.v.), is the region including the states of Oregon, Washington, and western Montana and Idaho. Characterized on the Pacific Coast by a humid, forested area, and east of the Cascade Mountains by a high arid tableland and great fertile valleys, the region has varied industries, the most prominent being salmon fishing, lumbering, agriculture, and cattle raising. Its central waterway, the Columbia River, was discovered and claimed for the U.S. in 1792, and the Lewis and Clark expedition, as well as the fur-trading activities of John Jacob Astor, further established U.S.interests in the Northwest, later the cause of the Oregon Question (q.v.), which was not finally settled until 1846. Up to this time, the history of the territory had been that of the fur trade and of pioneer immigration by way of the Oregon Trail (q.v.), whose most famous figures were Jedediah Smith and Marcus Whitman (q.v.). After 1850 began the marked development of agriculture and industry, with later homesteading encouraged by the railroading accomplishments of Henry Villard and James J. Hill. Joaquin Miller wrote of his *Life among the Modocs* in Oregon; Washington Irving described the fur trade at *Astoria* (q.v.); Honoré Morrow's novel, *We Must March*, tells the story of Marcus Whitman; Emerson Hough's *54–40 or Fight!* and other books are concerned with the Oregon Question; Frank B. Linderman has written of frontier Montana; James Stevens and others have collected the Paul Bunyan stories of the Northwest lumber camps; Oregon in the early 1900's is described in H.L.Davis's *Honey in the Horn*; and modern life in the region is the subject of novels by Archie Binns and Robert Cantwell.

Northwest Ordinance, see *Ordinance of 1787.*

Northwest Passage, novel by Kenneth Roberts (q.v.).

Northwest Territory, the Old Northwest, as distinguished from the present Northwest (q.v.), was formed by the Great Lakes region between the Ohio and Mississippi Rivers, including the present states of Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan, Wisconsin, and a portion of Minnesota. It was first traversed by such French explorers as Duluth, LaSalle, Jolliet, Cadillac, and Marquette, and was governed in conjunction with Louisiana and Canada. After the French influence became widespread, British interests represented by the Ohio Company (q.v.) began the conflict that led to Washington's expedition and the French and Indian Wars (q.v.). After the British obtained Canada and the Old Northwest by the Treaty of Paris of 1763, the territory was involved in the uprising of Pontiac and the actions of Robert Rogers. During the Revolutionary War, it was conquered by George Rogers Clark, and by the Treaty of Paris of 1783 was given to the U.S. Various of the new states claimed the area, but it was finally placed under the control of the U.S.Congress and organized under the Ordinance of 1787 (q.v.). Subsequent unrest occurred due to Indian hostility, British agitation, and conflicts of settlers. Even after the area was split into several different territories, the conflict with British influence had much to do with precipitating the War of 1812 (q.v.), and the problem of domination did not finally end until the Treaty of Ghent. Many authors of historical fiction have written of events in the history of the Territory; among their works may be mentioned Kenneth Roberts's *Northwest Passage*, Winston Churchill's *The Crossing*, and Maurice Thompson's *Alice of Old Vincennes.*

Northwestern University, coeducational institution, founded at Evanston, Illinois (1851), under the auspices of the Methodist Episcopal Church. Besides its campus on Lake Michigan, it includes graduate colleges in Chicago, Dearborn Astronomical Observatory, and the Garrett Biblical Institute. Lew Sarett has taught English there since 1921, and Odell Shepard was a student (1902–4).

NORTON, Andrews (1786–1853), Massachusetts Biblical scholar, associated with Harvard (1811–30). He founded and edited *The General Repository and Review* (1812–13), a Unitarian magazine, and his most important work, *The Evidences of the Genuineness of the Gospels* (3 vols.,1837, 1844), examined the New Testament in light of information outside the Bible, being complemented by *Internal Evidences of the Genuineness of the Gospels* (1855). Other works written from his conservative Unitarian point of view include *Tracts on Christianity* (1852) and *On the Latest Form of Infidelity* (1839), a reply to Emerson's Divinity School Address and

the publications of George Ripley. This was in turn answered by Theodore Parker.

CHARLES ELIOT NORTON (1827–1908), his son, is best known as professor of the history of fine art at Harvard (1873–98), although his broad range of scholarship, lofty and catholic taste, and great personal charm extended his influence far beyond the confines of the university. He was a frequent contributor to the *Atlantic Monthly*, co-editor of *The North American Review* (1864–8), a founder and co-editor of *The Nation* (1865), and the author of books as widely varied as a bibliography of Michelangelo and a biography of Kipling. In addition to his Italian scholarship, whose main fruit was a prose translation of the *Divine Comedy* (3 vols.,1891–2), his editorial activities extended from *The Poems of John Donne* (2 vols.,1895) to *The Early Letters of Thomas Carlyle* (2 vols.,1886). His friendships with distinguished artists and writers of his time, on both sides of the Atlantic, formed a powerful cultural influence in the U.S. His *Letters* (2 vols.,1913) are justly famous, and separate collections of his correspondence with particular individuals have been published.

NORTON, JOHN (1606–63), after receiving the degrees of B.A. (1624) and M.A. (1627) from Cambridge and serving as a private chaplain in England, emigrated to New England (1635) because of his Puritan sympathies. He immediately assumed an important place in the Bay Colony, becoming a 'teacher' in the Ipswich church, a leading opponent of the Antinomians, a moving force in the drafting of the Cambridge Platform, and later pastor of the First Church of Boston and an overseer of Harvard. His scholarship and commanding manner gave him his prominence, which he lost in the later part of his life through his bigoted insistence on the persecution of the Quakers, and his failure to aid the colony when sent as an agent to Charles II. His writings include: *Responsio ad Guliel* (1648), a Latin treatise on New England church government; *A Discussion of that Great Point in Divinity, the Sufferings of Christ* (1653), an attack on the heresy of William Pynchon; *Abel being dead yet speaketh: or the Life and Death of . . . John Cotton* (1657), considered the first separately published biography of an American; and *The Heart of N-England rent at the Blasphemies of the Present Generation* (1659), an attack on the Quakers.

Norumbega, name of unknown origin, found particularly in 16th and 17th-century maps to indicate a region or city on the east coast of North America. This presumably mythical place has been identified with Vineland (q.v.), the Norse settlement.

Not Angels Quite, novel by Nathan H. Dole (q.v.).

Not Under Forty, essays by Willa Cather (q.v.).

Notes of a Son and Brother, autobiographical narrative by Henry James (q.v.), published in 1914. A sequel to *A Small Boy and Others* (q.v.), this volume is concerned with the years from the late 1850's to 1870, and the central figures are again the author, his brother William, and the elder Henry James.

Notes on English Verse, see *Rationale of Verse.*

Notes on the Mind, see *Edwards, Jonathan.*

Notes on the State of Virginia, by Jefferson (q.v.), privately published at Paris in 1784 (dated 1782), is an unpretentious, patriotic compendium of statistical information on the geography, fauna, and flora, and social and political life of the region. It was originally written (1781–2) in answer to questions from the Marquis de Barbé-Marbois, secretary of the French legation at Philadelphia. The first general edition was published in 1787, a year after a French translation had appeared.

Nothing to Wear, satirical poem by W.A.Butler (q.v.).

Notions of the Americans, critical work by Cooper (q.v.).

NOTT, HENRY JUNIUS (1797–1837), South Carolina jurist and professor, whose *Novelettes of a Traveller; or, Odds and Ends from the Knapsack of Thomas Singularity, Journeyman Printer* (2 vols.,1834), is a series of humorous sketches in a picaresque plan. Its realistic depiction of frontier life is a less brilliant but earlier example of the humor of the Southwest, as represented by Longstreet, Hooper, Baldwin, and others.

Nova Anglia, poem by W. Morrell (q.v.).

Nova Britannia, tract by R. Johnson (q.v.).

NOVANGLUS, pseudonym used by John

Adams (q.v.) in his attacks on Daniel Leonard (q.v.).

November Boughs, prose and verse collection by Whitman (q.v.) published in 1888. Its verse was incorporated in *Leaves of Grass* as 'Sands at Seventy,' and its prose appeared in the *Complete Writings* (1902).

Now in November, novel by Josephine Johnson (q.v.).

NOYES, JOHN HUMPHREY (1811–86), born in Vermont, after graduation from Dartmouth (1830) studied theology at Andover and Yale. He lost his license to preach (1834) when he propounded his doctrine of perfectionism (q.v.), or complete freedom from sin. His colony of Bible Communists at Putney, Vermont (1836–46), a socio-religious community of perfectionists, came to an end when he fled from charges of adultery, which arose from the colony's system of complex marriages. He carried out his theories more successfully at the Oneida Community (q.v., 1848–79), but was again threatened with legal action, and removed to Canada, where he died. His views were first expounded in *The Berean* (1847), and further developed in *Bible Communism* (1848), *Male Continence* (1848), *Scientific Propagation* (*c.*1873), and *Home Talks* (1875). He is also the author of a *History of American Socialisms* (1870).

Nullification, doctrine of the extremists of the state-rights theory (q.v.), who contended that a state has the right to declare null and void any federal law that violates the compact embodied in the Constitution and voluntarily adopted by the states. The Kentucky and Virginia Resolutions (q.v.,1798) were the first important statement of this theory, but a more complete justification of nullification was set forth in Calhoun's 'South Carolina Exposition' (1828), in opposition to the Tariff of Abominations, which favored the North. As a result of Calhoun's stand, South Carolina passed an Ordinance of Nullification, which gave the state power to resist any attempts of the federal government to put the tariff into operation. Although a 'force bill' was passed in the U.S.Senate to permit President Jackson to used armed power in executing the federal laws, a compromise led by Clay was effected, and, upon passage of the new tariff, the Ordinance of Nullification was rescinded. As state rights had led to nullification, so nullification eventually led to secession.

NÚÑEZ CABEZA DE VACA, ALVAR (*c.*1490–*c.*1557), Spanish explorer, was a commander of the expedition of Narvaez, which reached Florida (1528). One of a few survivors enslaved by Indians, he escaped to a friendly tribe (1530) and in 1534 escaped again with two comrades and a Negro slave, on a trek which took them across the continent, and as far as Mexico City. Returning to Spain, he was appointed the leader of an expedition to South America (1540), during which a thousand-mile march was made from Brazil to Paraguay. As a result of friction, he was sent back to Spain, where he was imprisoned (1545–51). His *Relacion* (1542) of his North American journey is generally accurate, and an important source. He left a similar narrative of his exploration in South America.

NYE, EDGAR WATSON (1850–96), better known as Bill Nye, was born in Maine, reared in the frontier country of Wisconsin, and removed to Wyoming Territory (1876), where he was admitted to the bar and edited the *Laramie Boomerang* (1881–4). His humorous writings were frequently reprinted and won him international fame. In 1889 he moved east and continued to write in a similar vein for the New York *World*. His writings were characterized by the loud and obvious humor typical of the period, and he employed such stylistic devices as misquotation, punning, malapropisms, and understatement, all juxtaposed in magnificently deformed sentences. Under his pseudonym, he published a series of very successful books, beginning with *Bill Nye and Boomerang* (1881). Some of these were compiled from his brief newspaper sketches, while others have a lengthy continuity of subject, as in the comic *History of the United States* (1894) and *History of England* (1896). After 1885 his reputation was increased by his humorous lectures, in which he frequently appeared with James Whitcomb Riley.

O

O Captain! My Captain!, poem by Whitman (q.v.), published in *Sequel to Drum-Taps* (1865–6) and in *Leaves of Grass* (1867). Although Whitman thought far less of this elegy on the death of Lincoln than he did of that entitled 'When Lilacs Last in the Door Yard Bloom'd,' it has attained great popularity because of its relatively regular stanzaic form, rime, rhythmic pattern, and refrain. It tells of a ship, representative of the Union, coming safely into port, with 'the people all exulting', while the poet sadly walks the deck on which lies his Captain, 'fallen cold and dead.'

O.HENRY, pseudonym of W.S.Porter (q.v.).

O Pioneers!, novel by Willa Cather (q.v.) published in 1913.

John Bergson, a strong-willed Swedish immigrant, struggles to build a farm on the Nebraska prairie, aided by his wife, their sons Loy and Oscar, and his favorite, the capable, intelligent daughter Alexandra. At his death, Alexandra assumes the responsibility for the farm and the family, since her mother lacks ingenuity or determination, and her older brothers are obstinate and plodding, while her brother Emil is a child of five. She possesses the heroic, creative quality of the passing frontier, and over a period of years her faith in the soil is rewarded by rich harvests. She is not satisfied by her increasing prosperity, however, for after the departure of Carl Linstrum, who seeks a career as an engraver, she lacks companionship in a society of weaker and meaner individuals. Emil is now a grown youth, sensitive and intelligent, for whom Alexandra has great hopes, but he has a secret affair with her friend Marie Shabata, and the two are killed by Marie's jealous husband Frank. Meanwhile Carl has visited the Bergsons on his way to the Klondike and he and Alexandra find in each other the complementary qualities each needs. When he learns of Emil's death, Carl returns to marry Alexandra, and they plan to share the responsibilities and fulfilments of life on the farm.

Oak Openings, The; or, The Bee-Hunter, romance by Cooper (q.v.) published in 1848.

In Michigan, at the opening of the War of 1812, the bee-hunter Benjamin Boden, called *Le Bourdon* (The Drone), is joined at his 'Castle Meal' (*Château au Miel*) by the drunken settler Gershom Waring, and the Indians Elksfoot and Pigeonswing. He learns that the British have captured the fort at Mackinaw, and that Pigeonswing is a U.S.army messenger, while Elksfoot is a British spy. On his way with Waring to the latter's home, Boden finds the corpse of Elksfoot, who has been scalped by Pigeonswing. At Waring's home, he meets the settler's wife and his attractive sister, Margery, and wins their gratitude by destroying Waring's supply of liquor. Just before the arrival of a band of pro-British Pottawattamies, they abandon the cabin. After rescuing Pigeonswing, they are joined by Parson Amen and the American corporal Flint, both bound for Mackinaw in the company of a renegade Indian, Onoah or Scalping Pete. At Boden's 'Castle,' they are surrounded by the Pottawattamies, with whom Pete pretends to parley while actually plotting the massacre of the whites. He is friendly to Boden, however, and urges him to marry Margery, so that the two may escape. After their marriage, Amen and Flint are killed, but, with the aid of Pigeonswing and the repentent Pete, the other whites escape.

OAKES, URIAN (*c.*1631–81). Massachusetts poet and clergyman, born in England, graduated from Harvard (1649), returned to his native country to teach and preach, but settled in New England (1671) because of his stanch Puritan orthodoxy. His one published poem, an *Elegie* (1677) on Thomas Shepard, has been highly praised, as has the prose in his various published sermons. While pastor of the Church of Cambridge, he was also acting president of Harvard (1675–80), and is accused of having allowed the near-extinction of the college.

OAKLEY, ANNIE (1860–1926), celebrated as a markswoman with rifle and pistol, was long a member of Buffalo Bill's Wild West show. Her unerring accuracy in performing such tricks as perforating a playing card tossed in the air has caused theatrical passes and other complimentary tickets distinguished by punch marks to be known as 'Annie Oakleys.'

Oakley, DORINDA, character in *Barren Ground* (q.v.).

Oath of a Free-man, legal formulary of Massachusetts probably first drafted in 1631, revised (1634) to include a statement of the freeman's obligation, again revised (*c.*1648) as the *Freemans Oath,* fitted to the status of one 'now to be made free' instead of one already an 'Inhabitant, and Freeman,' and finally revised (1664) to include an oath of allegiance to the Crown lacking in the previous forms. The 1634 version was probably the one employed for Stephen Daye's broadside (1639), the first piece of printing in what is now the United States. No copy of Daye's printed form exists but its text is known through John Child's pamphlet, *New Englands Jonas cast up at London* (1647).

OBERHOLTZER, ELLIS PAXSON (1868–1936), historian and pupil of J.B.McMaster, whose *Memoir* he wrote (1933). His *History of the United States Since the Civil War* (5 vols.,1917–36) has been accused of undue generalizations and unsubstantiated prejudices against Mormons, the labor movement, and other subjects.

Oberlin College, Ohio coeducational institution, founded in 1833, was the first college to admit Negro students (1835) and the first to give degrees to women (1837). It was originally a strong Congregational school. Thornton Wilder was a student (1915–17), and graduates include Lucy Stone (1847), R.A.Millikan (1891), D.J.Snider (1862), and Anna Louise Strong (1905).

O'BRIEN, EDWARD J[OSEPH] [HARRINGTON] (1890–1941), editor of the annual *Best Short Stories* (1914–40) and of a similar yearly compilation, *Best British Short Stories* (1921–40). He was the author of some original plays, poetry, and nonfiction, as well as the editor of various other works. From 1922 until his death he lived in England.

O'BRIEN, FITZ-JAMES (*c.*1828–62), Irish-born journalist and author, came to the U.S. (*c.*1852), where he was soon a conspicuous figure at Pfaff's and other New York Bohemian rendezvous. Although he had previously contributed to Irish and English periodicals, his reputation is based on his writings for American journals, especially his rococo short stories dealing with psychological subjects reminiscent of Poe. The most notable of these, 'The Diamond Lens' (*Atlantic Monthly,* Jan. 1858), tells of the inventor of a powerful microscope, who was enabled to see a sylph-like human being enclosed in a drop of water. After becoming obsessed by this fascinating creature, he went mad when she died. 'The Wondersmith' and 'What Was It?' were similar fantastic stories. O'Brien also wrote some plays and many commonplace verses. His most notable play was *The Gentleman from Ireland* (1854). He died as the result of a wound received in a Civil War battle. His *Poems and Stories* were collected by his friend, William Winter (1881).

O'BRIEN, FREDERICK (1869–1932), journalist and globe-trotting vagabond, whose first book, *White Shadows in the South Seas* (1919), an account of his life in the Marquesas, had a nation-wide vogue with a public weary of wartime realities. He wrote two similar books, has been credited with reviving interest in the works of Melville, and inspired a host of imitations exploiting the glamour of the Pacific islands.

Obscure Destinies, novelettes by Willa Cather (q.v.).

O'CATARACT, JOHN, pseudonym of John Neal (q.v.).

OCCIDENTE, MARIA DEL, pseudonym of Maria Brooks (q.v.).

OCCOM, SAMSON (1723–92), Mohegan Indian of Connecticut, was converted by Whitefield (1739) and educated by Eleazar Wheelock. He preached to the Montauk, Stockbridge, and other Indians, received Presbyterian orders (1759), and visited England (1766–7), where he preached to raise money for Dartmouth College. He edited a *Choice Collection of Hymns and Spiritual Songs* (1774), and several hymns are attributed to him.

OCHS, ADOLPH S[IMON] (1858–1935), born in Tennessee, began his career as a newspaper publisher by purchasing the *Chattanooga Times* (1878). In 1896 he acquired *The New York Times* (q.v.), which, by avoiding partisan or personal bias and by refusing to adopt the sensational methods of the yellow press, he raised to a position generally considered the most eminent among American papers.

O'CONNOR, WILLIAM DOUGLAS (1832–89), journalist and minor governmental official, is best known for *The Good Gray*

Poet (1866), a defense of his friend Whitman written upon the latter's dismissal from a governmental clerkship. The title of his book gave the poet his sobriquet. Whitman in turn wrote a preface for O'Connor's posthumous collection, *Three Tales* (1892), containing 'The Carpenter,' an idealized Christ-like depiction of the poet. O'Connor was also the author of an Abolitionist novel, *Harrington* (1860), and of two pamphlets that contended that Bacon was the author of Shakespeare's plays.

OCTAVE THANET, pseudonym of Alice French (q.v.).

Octavia Brigaldi, play by Charlotte Barnes (q.v.).

Octopus, *The: A Story of California,* novel by Frank Norris (q.v.), published in 1901 as the first part of his uncompleted trilogy, 'The Epic of the Wheat.'

The central theme in this realistic study of California farm life is the growing and harvesting of the wheat. Magnus Derrick operates the great Rancho de los Muertos, near Bonneville in the San Joaquin valley, and is the leading spokesman for the farmers of the community. His son Harran helps him to manage their tenants and agricultural activities, while another son, Lyman, is a corporation lawyer in San Francisco. Among the neighboring farmers are Broderson, Osterman, and Annixter, all of whom are associated in a struggle to resist the encroachments of the Pacific and Southwestern Railroad, which dominates the state government and gradually extends its monopoly over other industries. The railroad is in complete control of Bonneville, for it subsidizes Genslinger, editor of the town paper, and, through S.Behrman, its unofficial agent, influences prices, interest rates, and all financial transactions. When Dyke, a veteran engineer, quits his position rather than accept a wage-cut, and becomes a farmer, he is ruined because of exorbitant freight rates, and in desperation robs a train, later ending in prison. Presley, a poet from the East, stays for a time at Derrick's ranch and learns to sympathize with the cause of the oppressed farmers. He writes a poem about them that is widely popular, but finds it has no effect in the conflict of tremendous issues and resigns himself to being only an observer of the stirring events which follow. The farmers hold much of their land on option from the railroad, which raises the price enormously and puts up the land for public sale. Outraged by the broken promises and unfair tactics of Behrman and the corporation, the farmers form a protective league to protest and influence the state administration in their interests, electing Magnus Derrick their president. The league succeeds in placing Lyman on the state commission to fix rates, but he is bribed by the railroad and betrays his backers. When the railroad causes legal authorities to dispossess them of their land, the farmers revolt and in an armed clash many are killed, including Annixter, who has just married Hilma Tree. The railroad has now won complete domination, and the families of the insurgents are thrown into poverty and suffering. Magnus has been disgraced and ruined and is forced to enter the employment of Behrman, who is later accidentally smothered to death while watching the loading on shipboard of his own dishonestly gained wheat. Presley, indignant over the outrages he has witnessed, visits Shelgrim, president of the railroad, but instead of the inhumane criminal he had expected finds Shelgrim sentimental and genial, convinced that his actions are dictated by circumstances and economic laws.

Octoroon, *The,* melodramatic play about slavery by Dion Boucicault (q.v.), produced in 1859. It was based on *The Quadroon* (q.v.) by Mayne Reid.

Ode Recited at the Commemoration of the Living and Dead Soldiers of Harvard University, by Lowell (q.v.), privately printed in 1865 and published in *The Cathedral* (1877). It is in the irregular form of the Pindaric ode as adapted by Cowley.

Although song is 'weak-winged,' yet 'feathered words' will recall the love for Truth that inspired the sons of Harvard to sacrifice their lives and make faith 'whole with deed.' Such sacrifice for an ideal gives the world of constant change 'a high immunity from Night.' Lincoln is symbolic of the courageous warrior against falsehood, and as long as men are loyal to an inspiring goal 'outside of Self' they shall revere those who have died for its preservation. In gratitude, they shall give 'that plain civic wreath,' nobler than the feudal rewards of Europe, for it is no one man who is celebrated, but rather 'the pith and marrow of a Nation.'

Ode Sung at the Occasion of Decorating the Graves of the Confederate Dead, delivered at Charleston (1867), was written by Timrod (q.v.) and published in his *Poems* (1873). In five quatrains of octosyllabic lines, this elegy on 'martyrs of the fallen cause' declares that, though no marble column yet honors their defeated valor, the blossom of their fame is blown,

> And somewhere, waiting for its birth,
> The shaft is in the stone.

ODELL, George C[linton] D[ensmore] (1866–), professor of dramatic literature at Columbia (1895–), and author of *Shakespeare from Betterton to Irving* (1920) and *Annals of the New York Stage* (12 vols. to date, 1927–40).

ODELL, Jonathan (1737–1818), grandson of Jonathan Dickinson, was born in New Jersey, and after graduation from the College of New Jersey (1759) became a surgeon in the British army. During a residence in England he was an Anglican minister. In his native colony, at the outbreak of the Revolution, he indicated his sympathies by writing 'A Birthday Song' (1776) in honor of the king, attacking the patriots. He escaped to New York, and, remaining within the British lines until the end of the war, served as an army chaplain, as secretary to Sir Guy Carleton, and as a go-between in the treasonable negotiations of André and Benedict Arnold. He also aided the British by contributing essays and satirical poetry to *Rivington's New York Gazeteer*. Although less poetic than the other Loyalist writer, Joseph Stansbury, he was more virulent, and showed his ability at versified invective in such works as 'Word of Congress' (1779), an attack on the Continental Congress, and 'The American Times' (1780), published under the pseudonym Camillo Querno and generally attributed to him, which denounced the American leaders. His poetry was first collected in *The Loyal Verses of Joseph Stansbury and Doctor Jonathan Odell* (1860). After the war, he went temporarily to England, and spent his later life in New Brunswick.

ODETS, Clifford (1906–), born in Philadelphia and reared in the Bronx of New York, quit school at 15 to become an actor. After acting with the Theatre Guild, he became a founder of the Group Theatre (q.v., 1931), and was catapulted into fame by their production of his one-act play, *Waiting for Lefty* (q.v., 1935), dealing with a taxi strike. This success was followed by the production of *Awake and Sing* (q.v., 1935) and the one-act play, *Till the Day I Die* (1935), about the struggle of the German communists at the beginning of the Hitler regime. These plays brought Odets a reputation as the leading proletarian playwright, although he has been less concerned with the problems of the worker than with the 'fraud' of middle-class civilization, deprived by its economic insecurity of its former status and becoming aware that most of its cherished ideals no longer correspond to realities. Except for a brief period of motion-picture writing, Odets has continued to write realistic plays for the Group, mainly concerned with problems of the declining middle class: *Paradise Lost* (1935); *Golden Boy* (1937), about a young Italian-American violinist whose desire for wealth and fame leads him to become a pugilist, and who dies in an automobile crash, having attempted to find an escape in speed from the loss of his inner security; *Rocket to the Moon* (1938), portraying a Bronx dentist who attempts to find happiness in a belated love affair, but fails because his will has been vitiated by the meanness and oppression of his past life; and *Night Music* (1940), a sentimental love story of a lower-middle-class couple in New York City.

ODIORNE, Thomas (1769–1851), New Hampshire poet, graduate of Dartmouth (1791), who wrote *The Progress of Refinement* (1792), a long romantic poem displaying a philosophical interest in nature. Influenced poetically by James Thomson and Akenside, Odiorne was a precursor of the romantic movement, in his use of the philosophy of Locke and David Hartley to show the mutual adjustment of man and nature, and the way in which man can attain an ideal ethical state.

Odyssey of a Nice Girl, The, novel by Ruth Suckow (q.v.).

Of Mice and Men, novelette by Steinbeck (q.v.), published in 1937 and dramatized by the author in 1938.

George Milton and Lennie Small, itinerant farm laborers, come to work on a Salinas Valley ranch in central California. Lennie has tremendous strength but a feeble intellect, and possesses a morbid desire to handle soft objects. George supplies Lennie's deficiencies, exploiting his strength and cherishing their mutual

dream of a small farm of their own. Curley, son of the boss, is an arrogant bully whose bride's promiscuity has already caused quarrels among the farmhands. When jealousy prompts him to pick a fight with Lennie, he emerges with a crushed hand, and his wife begins to admire the unwilling Lennie. She seeks a pretext to be alone with him, and one day in the hayloft tries to arouse his desire. He begins to stroke her hair, and, when she resists, he accidentally breaks her neck. He flees to the river, planning to escape. George and a friend discover the body, and George hurriedly follows, ahead of a mob led by the enraged Curley. Finding Lennie beside a secluded pool, George calms his fears with the frequently repeated description of the farm of their hopes, and shoots him in the head.

Of Thee I Sing, musical comedy, with music by George Gershwin (q.v.) and text by George Kaufman (q.v.), Morrie Ryskind, and Ira Gershwin. Produced in 1931, it was published in 1932, when it won the Pulitzer Prize.

Lampooning U.S. politics, the action occurs during a farcical presidential campaign, in street parades, hotel-room sessions, and Madison Square Garden, and, following the election, in White House offices and the Senate chamber. The party nominees are John P. Wintergreen, an energetic romantic hero, for president, and Alexander Throttlebottom, an exceedingly modest and retiring little man, for vice president. Seeking a platform issue, 'something that everybody is interested in, and that doesn't matter a damn,' the party leaders decide that Wintergreen must fall in love, and prepare a campaign based on his romance with 'the most beautiful girl in America,' to be chosen in a contest at Atlantic City. The title is won by Diana Devereaux, a Louisiana belle, but meanwhile Wintergreen has determined to marry Mary Turner, a campaign worker. The ticket is victorious, and John and Mary are simultaneously inaugurated and married by Supreme Court justices. A later complication, caused by Diana's suit for breach of promise, is resolved when Mary regains popular favor by giving birth to twins, and the forgotten Throttlebottom appears to marry Diana.

Of Time and the River: A Legend of Man's Hunger in His Youth, semi-autobiographical novel by Thomas Wolfe (q.v.), published in 1935 as a sequel to *Look Homeward, Angel* (q.v.).

Eugene Gant leaves his Southern home for graduate work at Harvard, where the scope of his immense romantic appetite for experience is broadened, as he reads voraciously, studies playwriting in the class of Professor Hatcher, and cultivates eccentric acquaintances, including his absurdly erudite uncle, Bascom Pentland. After losing his first bewildered feeling of strangeness, he finds a valued friend in Hatcher's youthful assistant, Francis Starwick, a cultured, fastidious, and affected scholar. During these two years, Eugene tries to bend his creative talent to the exacting dramatic form, and achieves a limited success before he leaves for a brief visit at home, where his father dies after a long and terrible illness. He goes north again, this time to serve as a college instructor of English in New York City, which provides the setting for his tumultuous mystic vision of the modern 'manswarm.' Companions of this period include Abe Jones, an earnest Jewish student; Joel Pierce, who introduces Eugene to the luxurious life of the Hudson River social set, and whose sister is one of a number of girls who are the objects of his sudden passions; and bitter, disillusioned Robert Weaver and his mistress, Martha Upshaw. Careful saving makes possible a European tour, during which Eugene meets Starwick, now even more febrile and affected. With Ann and Elinor, two Boston girls, they spend several weeks as tourists in Paris and the provinces. Eugene falls in love with Ann, Elinor with Eugene, and Ann with Starwick, who responds to neither, giving himself up to dissipation during mysterious disappearances. Appalled and disgusted when he discovers that Starwick is a homosexual, Eugene leaves his friends, to tour Europe alone until he is forced by lack of funds to return to the U.S.

OGLETHORPE, JAMES EDWARD (1696–1785), English general, in 1732 obtained a charter for the colony of Georgia, as an asylum for the debtor class and persecuted Protestants of England. To raise revenue for his venture, he wrote *A New and Accurate Account of the Provinces of South-Carolina and Georgia* (1732). The following year he arrived in Georgia, and with 120 colonists under his governorship

founded the city of Savannah. During the English war with Spain (1739–43), he successfully repulsed Spanish attacks, although failing in an attempted siege of St.Augustine. His policy of religious toleration attracted many diverse sects, but dissatisfaction with his colonial policy occasioned his return to England (1743). Resigning his charter (1752), he never returned to the colonies. His administration was attacked in a book by Patrick Tailfer.

Oh! Susannah, song by Stephen Foster (q.v.) published in 1848 in his *Songs of the Sable Harmonists*. With appropriate new words, it was particularly popular during the gold rush and westward emigration of succeeding years, and has become identified with the spirit of that period.

O'HARA, JOHN [HENRY] (1905–), after a career in journalism in his native Pennsylvania and New York, published a novel, *Appointment in Samarra* (1934), dealing, in an ironic but toughly realistic manner, with the fast country-club set of an American city. *The Doctor's Son* (1935) is a collection of stories, mainly studies of character, and *Butterfield 8* (1935), based on a recent New York murder case, reveals the sordid and sensational lives of people on the fringe of night-club society and the underworld. *Hope of Heaven* (1938) is the tough story of an unhappy love affair between a scenario writer and a bookshop clerk, *Files on Parade* (1939) is a collection of acidulous short stories, and *Pal Joey* (1940) is a series of sketches in the form of letters from a night-club singer, which O'Hara dramatized with others as a musical comedy (1940).

O'Hara, SCARLETT, character in *Gone With the Wind* (q.v.).

O'HARA, THEODORE (1820–67), Kentucky poet and journalist, whose varied career included legal practice, minor diplomatic positions, and service in the Mexican War and the Civil War. Although his poetry has not been collected, the rhetorical 'The Old Pioneer' and 'The Bivouac of the Dead,' honoring Kentuckians in the Mexican War, are popular anthology pieces.

O'HIGGINS, HARVEY [JERROLD] (1876–1929), Canadian-born author, whose popularizations of special subjects, written with authorities in their fields, include: *The Beast* (1910), a study of the social environment of city-bred children; *Under the Prophet in Utah* (1911), an analysis of the Mormon church; and *The American Mind in Action* (1924), psychoanalyses of eminent Americans. His fiction includes: *Some Distinguished Americans* (1922), a fictional use of the method employed in *The American Mind in Action; Julie Crane* (1924); and *Clara Barron* (1926), portraits of modern American women. He also wrote *Polygamy* (1914), a drama of Mormon marriage, and dramatized Sinclair Lewis's *Main Street* (1921).

Ohio Company, was organized (1749) by a group of Virginians and London merchants, for the purposes of gaining control of the Ohio Valley, then in dispute between England and France, and of carrying on trade and smuggling with the Indians. George II granted the Company 500,000 acres, mostly in the present state of West Virginia, and a series of forts was established, prior to a merger with the Walpole Company (1772), which had also received territory in the region. The Revolution prevented permanent colonization and exploitation.

The Ohio Company of Associates was organized by New Englanders (1786), and the following year a grant of 1,500,000 acres was obtained for $1,000,000 in Continental obligations, valued at about eight cents to the dollar. New England colonists settled the region of the present state of Ohio, prohibited slavery, and, to protect their interests, urged the passage of the Northwest Ordinance (1787).

Oil!, novel by Upton Sinclair (q.v.) published in 1927.

Based on the oil scandals of the Harding administration, especially the Teapot Dome affair (q.v.), the narrative tells of the struggles of 'Bunny' Ross and his father, a good-natured independent oil operator, against the encroachments of monopoly. Involved in the detailed account of business transactions are the thinly disguised characters of senators, oil magnates, and other public figures. Bunny's experiences lead him to realize that the bribery of public officials, the oppression of workers, and international conflicts are inherent in the private ownership of the industry, and he turns for a solution to socialism.

Ojibway Indians (also OJIBWA or CHIPPEWA), Algonquian hunting tribe of the Great Lakes region. They sided with the

French during the French and Indian Wars, and shared in Pontiac's rebellion. Later most of them were won over to the British side in the War of 1812. One of their chiefs, George Copway (q.v.) has written about them, and they are the subject of an ethnological study by Schoolcraft. The Ojibway figure in *Hiawatha* as the tribe to which the hero belongs, and they appear in Cooper's *Oak Openings*.

Okies, name applied to refugees from Oklahoma, Texas, and other Dust Bowl states, who, because of the destruction of their farms by drought and dust storms, have emigrated to seek employment elsewhere, mainly in California. Steinbeck's novel, *The Grapes of Wrath*, is concerned with an Okie family.

Ol' Man Adam an' His Chillun, Negro folk versions of Old Testament stories, written by Roark Bradford (q.v.) and published in 1928. The book suggested *The Green Pastures* (q.v.).

Old Black Joe, song by Stephen Foster (q.v.).

Old Block, pseudonym of Alonzo Delano (q.v.).

Old Colony, name formerly given to the territory occupied by the Plymouth Colony (q.v.).

Old Creole Days, seven short stories by G.W.Cable (q.v.), published in 1879. Later editions also include the novelette, *Madame Delphine* (q.v.), and all deal with the local color of 19th-century New Orleans.

'Café des Exilés' is a romantic tale of a smuggling plot of 1835, set in the café of kindly old M. D'Hemecourt. Major Galahad Shaughnessy, gallant leader of the conspirators, causes their failure by an excess of cunning, but wins the hand of D'Hemecourt's daughter Pauline. 'Jean-ah Poquelin' tells of a former slave-trader who suddenly goes into retirement in his suburban house. Because of the disappearance of his brother Jacques, the ruinous aspect of his grounds, and his fierce exclusion of trespassers, old Poquelin comes to have an evil reputation. When he dies, it is revealed that Jacques is a helpless and gruesome leper, whom Jean has personally concealed and cared for during these years. ' 'Tite Poulette' is the story of Kristian Koppig, a young Dutchman who falls in love with Poulette, daughter of his neighbor, Madame John. Kristian is injured while championing Poulette in a quarrel, and she nurses him to health. He proposes marriage, but she refuses, heart-broken, because Madame John has a strain of Negro blood. The romance concludes happily, when the older woman reveals that she is only Poulette's foster mother, the girl's white parents having died during her infancy. 'Madame Délicieuse' tells of the 15-year-long misunderstanding between General de Villivicencio, who clings to the outmoded Creole code of honor, and his gentle and retiring son, Dr.Mossy, who champions science and common sense. Mossy will not marry his beautiful fiancée, Madame Délicieuse, because his father has disinherited him. Through a complicated intrigue, the young woman brings about their reconciliation.

Old Dan Tucker, minstrel show song by Dan Emmett (q.v.).

Old Dominion, name given to the state of Virginia, because Charles II elevated the colony to the position of a dominion by quartering the arms of the London Company on his shield.

Old Farmer's Almanac, see *Farmer's Almanack*.

Old Folks at Home, song by Stephen Foster (q.v.) published in 1851 under the name of E.P.Christy (q.v.), for whom it was written. It is also known as 'Swanee River.'

Old Fuss and Feathers, sobriquet of Winfield Scott (q.v.).

Old Glory, popular name given to the Stars and Stripes (q.v.), said to have originated with Captain William Driver, who, before setting sail from Salem on his brig *Charles Doggett*, was presented (August 1831) with a U.S.flag, which he christened Old Glory. It is uncertain whether Driver first gave the flag this name at this date, but he is credited with creating the epithet.

Old Hickory, sobriquet of Andrew Jackson (q.v.).

Old Homestead, The, play by Denman Thompson (q.v.).

Old Ironsides, popular name of the 44-gun frigate, *Constitution*, launched in 1797, which served in the Tripolitan War and the War of 1812. Under the command of Isaac Hull (1773–1843), the *Constitution* won the battle with the British vessel

Guerrière, off Cape Race, Newfoundland (Aug. 19, 1812). The frigate was ordered to be dismantled (1830), but was saved when public sentiment was aroused by Holmes's poem, 'Old Ironsides' (1830), and was rebuilt (1833).

Old Kentucky Home, see *My Old Kentucky Home*.

Old Light, see *Great Awakening*.

Old Maid, The, novelette by Edith Wharton (q.v.), published in 1924 as one of the series, 'Old New York' (q.v.). Its dramatic adaptation by Zoë Akins (1935) won the Pulitzer Prize.

Delia Lovell and her cousin Charlotte both love Clem Spender, and Charlotte has an illegitimate daughter by him after Delia leaves to marry wealthy Jim Ralston. Ever domineering and afraid of scandal, Delia takes the child Tina into her home as her own daughter, and maneuvers Charlotte into breaking her engagement to Joseph Ralston. Charlotte lives with them as the maiden aunt, stifling the truth through love of her child, even when Tina regards her as a quaint survival whose presence is rather a nuisance. The cousins quarrel violently the night before Tina's wedding, but when they are left alone Delia recognizes that she has done a 'sacrilegious thing' in interfering with another 'human being's right to love and suffer after his own fashion,' and they settle down to a quiet understanding and old age.

Old Manse, residence of the Emerson family, at Concord. Hawthorne lived there (1842–6) during the writing of his *Mosses from an Old Manse*.

Old New York, series of four novelettes by Edith Wharton (q.v.), including *False Dawn, The Old Maid* (q.v.), *The Spark*, and *New Year's Day*.

Old Northwest, see *Northwest Territory*.

Old Oaken Bucket, The, song by Samuel Woodworth (q.v.).

Old Regime in Canada, The, history by Parkman (q.v.).

Old Side, see *Great Awakening*.

Old Soak, The, narrative by Don Marquis (q.v.).

Old South, see *South*.

Old South Church, erected at Boston in 1729, was used as a meeting place of the patriots prior to the Revolution. During the siege of Boston it was occupied by the British, and the library stored there by Thomas Prince was scattered.

Old Southwest, as distinguished from the present Southwest (q.v.), included the region between the Savannah River and the Mississippi (q.v.), which constituted the southwestern frontier from colonial times to the early 19th century. The pioneer settlers of this wilderness area, some of whom were called 'crackers' (q.v.), created a distinctive folklore, which in turn gave rise to the frontier stories and sketches of T.B.Thorpe, Davy Crockett, G.W.Harris, Joseph Baldwin, J.M.Field, J.J.Hooper, Sol Smith, and A.B.Longstreet.

Old Swimmin'-Hole, The, and 'Leven More Poems, first book by James Whitcomb Riley (q.v.), published in 1883 under the pseudonym 'Benj.F.Johnson, of Boone,' but having the author's own name in brackets. The poems were originally written for *The Indianapolis Journal*, and include 'When the Frost Is on the Punkin.' These simple, sentimental, poems in the homely Hoosier dialect established Riley's popularity.

Old Uncle Ned, minstrel show song by Stephen Foster (q.v.).

OLDMIXON, JOHN (1673–1742), English poet, historian, and hack writer, whose *British Empire in America* (2 vols., 1708), although inaccurate, was advanced for its time, viewing the American colonies and the West Indies as a single community of interests in British imperialism.

OLDSTYLE, JONATHAN, pseudonym of Irving (q.v.).

OLDSTYLE, OLIVER, pseudonym of J.K.Paulding (q.v.).

Oldtown Folks, novel by Mrs.Stowe (q.v.), published in 1869 and dramatized by the author the same year.

Horace Holyoke, who has grown up in Oldtown, Massachusetts, during the post-Revolutionary period, describes the town's typical institutions, its preoccupation with theological discussion, and its leading citizens, scholarly Parson Lothrop and his aristocratic, Episcopalian wife, known as 'Lady' Lothrop. Henry and Tina Percival, foundling orphans, are taken into the family of 'Old Crab' Smith and Miss Asphyxia Smith, whose harshness and miserliness cause the children to run away, although they are brought back by Horace's

Uncle Fly and Sam Lawson, the humorous idler and oracle. Tina is now adopted by Miss Mehitable Rossiter, daughter of the former clergyman, and Henry lives with Madam Lothrop. On her annual Easter trip to Boston, the children attend Church of England services and meet leaders of Boston society, including Ellery Davenport, an aristocratic Revolutionary officer who resembles Aaron Burr. After the orphans are discovered to be members of a wealthy British family, Henry attends the academy at Cloudland, and then goes to Harvard with Horace, who falls in love with Tina. The girl marries Davenport, but her happiness is short-lived, for Miss Rossiter's sister Emily appears to accuse Davenport of seducing her and being the father of her daughter. Tina adopts the child, and goes with her husband to Europe. Henry goes to England to superintend the family estate, and later becomes an Anglican clergyman. When the Davenports return to Massachusetts, Ellery becomes a political leader, and is killed in a duel. Two years later, Horace and Tina are married.

Olenska, ELLEN, character in *The Age of Innocence* (q.v.).

Olive Chancellor, character in *The Bostonians* (q.v.).

OLIVER OLDSTYLE, pseudonym of J.K. Paulding (q.v.).

OLIVER OPTIC, pseudonym of W.T.Adams (q.v.).

OLMSTED, FREDERICK LAW (1822–1903), landscape architect and conservationist, noted for his unbiased travel books, *A Journey in the Seaboard Slave States* (1856), *A Journey Through Texas* (1857), and *A Journey in the Back Country* (1860), which were condensed and reissued as *The Cotton Kingdom* (2 vols.,1861). He also wrote *Walks and Talks of an American Farmer in England* (1852). His greatest works in landscape architecture include Central Park and Riverside Park in New York City; the Boston park system; the Capitol grounds at Washington, D.C.; the 1893 World's Fair at Chicago; and the campuses of the University of California and Stanford University. Olmsted was instrumental in making public reservations of Niagara Falls and Yosemite, and published several works relating to public parks.

OLNEY, JESSE (1798–1872), Connecticut educator, whose *Practical System of Modern Geography* (1828) was a standard American text of extensive influence during the 19th century. Its method was to familiarize the student with his own environment, and then progress to a knowledge of distant lands and geographical phenomena.

Omoo, a Narrative of Adventures in the South Seas, fictional account by Melville (q.v.) of his experiences in the Society Islands (1842). It was published in 1847 as a sequel to *Typee* (q.v.).

At Nukuheva the narrator is taken aboard the short-handed Australian trader *Julia* (actually the *Lucy Ann*). Despite his injured leg, he signs on as a seaman, being assured that he may leave the ship at the next port. He discovers that the ship is in poor condition, and that Captain Guy is ill and untrustworthy, but he admires the mate Jermin; and finds a friend in jovial, well-traveled, well-read Dr.Long Ghost. At Papeetee, the consul Wilson orders the *Julia* to sea again, but the unruly crew disobeys, bringing the ship into harbor. Imprisoned for insubordination, the men oppose efforts to force them aboard and at last are deserted, when the *Julia* sails with a new crew. They annoy the natives, whose scanty supplies they share, although the old guide 'Captain Bob' is friendly. The narrator and the doctor leave Tahiti for Imeeo, where they work for two planters. the Yankee Zeke and the cockney Shorty. Soon tiring of farm labor, they desert the plantation to explore the islands and study the people. Then, leaving Long Ghost in Tahiti, the narrator ships on a whaler, *The Leviathan.*

On the Banks of the Wabash, song by Paul Dresser (q.v.).

OÑATE, JUAN DE (*c.*1549–*c.*1624), Spanish explorer who in 1595 began his trip north from Mexico City, with some 400 men, of whom 130 took their families, to take possession of New Mexico, and explore the present region of northeast Arizona and Kansas. He took possession near El Paso (1598) and was governor of the region until in 1608 he was returned to Mexico and found guilty of disobeying orders and mistreating soldiers and Indians, and was permanently exiled from New Mexico and for four years from Mexico City. An epic poem on his expedition was written by Villagrá.

Once I Pass'd through a Populous City, poem by Whitman (q.v.) published in the 'Children of Adam' section (q.v.) of *Leaves of Grass* (1860). Although the poem in its original manuscript referred to a man, and Whitman denied that the poem was autobiographical, its declaration that 'of all that city I remember only a woman' has led biographers to contend that it refers to a love affair in New Orleans in 1848 which substantially altered his character.

One-Hoss Shay, see *Deacon's Masterpiece.*

One Man's Initiation, novel by Dos Passos (q.v.).

One More Spring, novel by Robert Nathan (q.v.).

One of Our Girls, comedy by Bronson Howard (q.v.).

One of Ours, novel by Willa Cather (q.v.).

One Woman's Life, novel by Robert Herrick (q.v.) published in 1913.

Milly Ridge, attractive, self-centered, and ambitious, moves to Chicago to establish herself in a social career. She becomes engaged to wealthy Clarence Parker, whom she does not love, but breaks with him to become a society reporter for a newspaper. After her rejection of Edgar Duncan, a Western rancher, she marries Jack Bragdon, a struggling artist, and through a legacy from her grandmother they are enabled to go to Paris, where he studies painting. Although Milly is devoted to their child, Virginia, she loses faith in Bragdon when he has an affair with Madame Saratoff, a Russian aristocrat. Upon their return to New York, she enters upon an extravagant social career, burdening her husband with debts, and he dies from overwork. Milly then goes to work for Ernestine Geyer, a successful business woman who becomes her closest friend and with whom she establishes an unsuccessful partnership. When Edgar Duncan asks her again to marry him, Milly accepts 'for the sake of the child,' and deserts Ernestine, who continues to like her despite this betrayal of trust.

O'NEALE, (O'Neill), Margaret (1796–1879), known as Peggy O'Neale, was the daughter of a Washington,D.C. tavern keeper. Her second husband, John Henry Eaton (1790–1856), whom she married in 1829, became Jackson's secretary of war that year. Because of her previous status and reputation, the cabinet and Jackson's family became involved in a social dispute, and Eaton was forced to resign (1831). He was later governor of Florida (1834) and minister to Spain (1836–40). After his death, his widow married an Italian dancing master, who after a few years defrauded her of her property and eloped with her granddaughter. Her *Autobiography*, dictated in 1873 and published in 1932, is unreliable but interesting.

Oneida Community, religious society established in central New York state by J.H.Noyes (q.v.,1848). The evolution of perfectionist doctrines, coupled with the reading of Fourierist publications, gradually led the group to communism. The original 40 members, grown to some 300, settled on a 900-acre farm, governed themselves democratically, and practiced a system of mutual criticism that took the place of trials and punishments, serving as a cure for both moral delinquencies and physical ailments. The community acquired a reputation for its excellent school system and its profitable manufactures, which included steel traps and silver plated ware. Among the many books and periodicals published from Oneida and its affiliated communities, the most popular was the weekly *Oneida Circular* (1864–76). Despite the perfectionist doctrine of immediate and total cessation of sin, public opinion was aroused by the community's system of complex marriage, which combined polygamy and polyandry, attempting to propagate children scientifically by pairing the young of one sex with the aged of the other. This was abandoned in 1879, and Noyes soon removed to Canada. When the community was reorganized as a business corporation (1881), its property was valued at $600,000.

Oneida Indians, see *Iroquois Indians.*

O'NEILL, Eugene [Gladstone] (1888–), born in New York City, as a child accompanied his father, James O'Neill, on theatrical tours, and later attended a Catholic boarding school and a Connecticut preparatory school. He entered Princeton (1906), but remained there only a year. After secretarial work in New York, he went on a gold prospecting trip to Honduras (1909), but contracted malaria, and returned to the U.S. to be assistant manager of his father's company.

Soon tiring of their mediocre vehicle, he shipped as a seaman for Buenos Aires. Employed for a time in Argentina, he then worked his way to South Africa and back on a cattle steamer, and after a period of beachcombing in Buenos Aires returned to New York. His last experience at sea followed, when he worked on ships between New York and Southampton. Next he tried acting during one of his father's tours, and reporting for a Connecticut newspaper, but suffered a physical breakdown and was sent to a sanatorium for six months. He had already written verses, and during this period of enforced rest and reflection turned to the drama as a medium for expressing the view of life he began to develop, based on his life at sea and among outcast and oppressed people in many places. During the following winter (1913–14), he wrote his first play, *The Web*, seven other one-act plays, and two long plays. He gained further experience as a student in G.P. Baker's 47 Workshop (1914–15), and spent a winter in Greenwich Village. In 1916 he became associated with the Provincetown Players, who during the next three years produced many of his one-act plays, including *Bound East for Cardiff* (q.v.,1916) and *The Moon of the Caribbees* (q.v.,1918). This period of practical experiment brought to a climax his years of apprentice work, and he began to win general recognition when three of his plays were printed in *The Smart Set*. With the New York production of *Beyond the Horizon* (q.v.,1920, Pulitzer Prize), O'Neill was acknowledged as the foremost creative American playwright. Although he was associated with Robert Edmond Jones in managing the Greenwich Village Theatre (1923–7) and was a director of the Provincetown Players and a founder of the Theatre Guild, which has produced his later plays, he became increasingly absorbed in writing, to the exclusion of other interests. He followed *Beyond the Horizon* with further naturalistic studies of tragic frustration set in modern American backgrounds: *Chris Christopherson* (1920), rewritten as '*Anna Christie*' (q.v., 1921, Pulitzer Prize 1922); *Diff'rent* (1920); *Gold* (1921); *The Straw* (1921); and *The First Man* (1922). From the same period came his achievements in symbolic expressionism: *The Emperor Jones* (q.v.,1920) and *The Hairy Ape* (q.v.,1922); but he continued the naturalistic approach in *All God's Chillun Got Wings* (q.v.,1924) and *Desire Under the Elms* (q.v.,1924). In the same year he turned to the use of symbolic masks in a Provincetown production of Coleridge's *The Ancient Mariner*, which he adapted and directed. The romantic and poetic elements of his nature, which had hitherto appeared in details of his plays, dominated *The Fountain* (q.v.,1925), an affirmation of life and spirit, and 'the Eternal Becoming which is Beauty.' His next play, *The Great God Brown* (q.v.,1926), fused symbolism, poetry, and the affirmation of a pagan idealism, in an ironic tragedy of modern materialism; and *Lazarus Laughed* (q.v.,1927) and '*Marco Millions*' (q.v.,1928) similarly attack the contemporary emphasis on acquisition and material standards, in terms of poetic emotion, exotic color, and satirical irony. Always an experimenter in forms, O'Neill attempted in *Strange Interlude* (q.v.,1928, Pulitzer Prize) to create a dramatic technique using the stream-of-consciousness method, in a nine-act tragedy of frustrated desires. This psychological analysis of motives was followed by a trilogy, *Mourning Becomes Electra* (q.v.,1931), adapting the Greek theme and preserving the dominant emotions of fear, horror, and a brooding sense of a malignant fate. O'Neill's deep interest in problems of religion in the modern world appears in two plays of this later period: *Dynamo* (1929), in which an electrical dynamo becomes a divine symbol, replacing the old God, but destroying its worshipers; and *Days Without End* (1934), in which the hero is irresistably attracted to Catholicism. *Ah, Wilderness!* (1933) is a pleasant New England folk comedy, entirely divorced from O'Neill's usual preoccupations. His plays have been frequently revived in the U.S. and produced throughout the world, and his position as a leading dramatist of the modern theater led to the award of the Nobel Prize (1936). Apparently influenced by many playwrights in his wide reading, especially the Greeks, Ibsen, and Strindberg, O'Neill has brought to his writing a fund of practical theatrical experience, and, most important, a profound knowledge of character acquired during his adventurous youth and later years of reflection. His own influence has been great, and his work is perhaps the most significant result of the revolt centering in the little-theater movement,

which has brought about the birth of a vital, sincere American theater.

O'NEILL, JAMES (1847–1920), born in Ireland, brought to the U.S. in 1850, began his career as an actor in 1876. He was best known for his portrayal of the title role in *The Count of Monte Cristo* (1882), which he played throughout his life, besides appearing in Shakespearean productions and contemporary plays. His son is Eugene O'Neill.

O'NEILL, PEGGY, see *O'Neale.*

One's-Self I Sing, poem by Whitman (q.v.), published as 'Inscription' in *Leaves of Grass* (1867) and given its present title in 1871. According to Whitman's plan, the poem is printed first in his book. It celebrates the 'simple, separate Person' as a physical, moral, intellectual, emotional, and æsthetic being, but declares that, when he sings of himself, he uses the 'word *En-masse*' to show that he represents the modern democratic man.

Only Yesterday, social history by F.L. Allen (q.v.).

Onondaga Indians, New York tribe that belonged to the Iroquois Confederacy (q.v.). The Onondaga aided the British in the French and Indian Wars and in the Revolution. Most of them have since lived in Ontario, although some remain on a New York reservation. They figure in Cooper's *Wyandotte,* and in the *Littlepage Manuscripts* an Onondaga is one of the heroes.

Open Boat, The, and Other Tales of Adventure, eight short stories by Stephen Crane (q.v.) published in 1898, mainly 'after the Fact' of his own experiences as a reporter and war correspondent.

'The Open Boat' is a realistic account of the thoughts and emotions of four men who escape in a small dinghy from the wrecked steamer *Commodore* off the Florida coast. The captain, the cook, an oiler, and a newspaper correspondent, unable to land because of the dangerous surf, see the beach tantalizingly near, but are forced to spend the night on the sea. Next morning they employ their last strength to swim ashore, and all but the oiler survive. 'Death and the Child,' reminiscent of *The Red Badge of Courage,* has for its scene a battle of the Greco-Turkish War and is concerned with the psychological reactions of a Greek newspaperman in his first experience of warfare. At first he desires to fight with his countrymen, but as he views the battle more intimately he is overcome by fear and panic, and flees to a near-by mountain, where his self-centered emotion is contrasted with the indifference of an abandoned peasant child. 'Flanagan, and His Short Filibustering Adventure' narrates a melodramatic incident of arms smuggling in Cuba before the Spanish-American War. The remaining stories are sardonically realistic adventure tales set in Mexico and the Far West.

Open Door Policy, term applied to the doctrine of equal trading opportunities for all foreign nations in China. John Hay, in proposing the policy in a note to the great powers (Sept. 1899), suggested that it be accompanied by the establishment of 'spheres of influence,' to curb the excesses of imperialistic acquisitiveness. The Open Door policy was supported by the Root-Takahira agreement (1908) and the Lansing-Ishii agreement (1917). In the latter, Lansing admitted that territorial propinquity gave Japan 'special interests' in China. Although internationally sanctioned by the Nine-Power Treaty (1922), the policy has been severely impaired by Japanese aggression.

OPPENHEIM, JAMES (1882–1932), born in Minnesota, was reared in New York City, studied at Columbia (1901–3), and became a settlement worker in the lower East Side, the background of his short stories in *Dr.Rast* (1909). The same year saw the publication of *Monday Morning,* his first book of verse. He wrote further stories, novels, and plays, expressing his radical social ideas, but it was not until *Songs for the New Age* (1914) that he clearly broke from his bourgeois background. These poems, containing both introspective analysis of the individual and a social analysis of the times, showed an indebtedness to Whitman and the Old Testament of his own Semitic background. His social fervor and personal intensity were further illustrated in *War and Laughter* (1916), but his spirit was broken by the coming of the First World War and the failure of his little magazine, *The Seven Arts* (q.v.,1916–17), due to its pacifism. He turned to psychoanalysis, and *The Book of Self* (1917) is a poetic product of this period. His collected volume, *The Sea* (1924), included *The Mystic Warrior* (1921), a free verse autobiography, *Golden Bird* (1923), love lyrics, and the previous

poems, all fused by new connecting verses.

OPTIC, OLIVER, pseudonym of W.T. Adams (q.v.).

Options, short stories by W.S.Porter (q.v.).

Oralloossa, romantic tragedy by R.M. Bird (q.v.), produced by Edwin Forrest in 1832 and first published in 1919. Set in 16th-century Peru, it deals with Oralloossa, son of the Inca, or emperor, who has been killed by Pizarro. The prince in turn kills the conquistador, but, through the treachery of the Spaniards, is betrayed and killed by his own people.

Ordinance of 1787, the Northwest Ordinance, was adopted by the Congress of the Confederation to govern the western territories ceded to the U.S. by the states, and created the Northwest Territory (q.v.). Based on Jefferson's plan of 1784, it set up a government in the region north of the Ohio River, to be administered by a governor, secretary, and three judges, all appointed by the Congress. This would retain control until 5,000 voting citizens were settled, and obtained a non-voting representative in the U.S.Senate. Five states were ultimately created in conformance with the Ordinance, each having a population of 60,000 or more. The Ordinance also stipulated that no man born in the Territory should be a slave, and that no law should impair the obligation of contract.

O'Regan, TEAGUE, character in *Modern Chivalry* (q.v.).

Oregon Question arose from the boundary settlements following the War of 1812, when the U.S. wished to extend the line of the 49th parallel to the Pacific coast. Since England would not agree, joint occupancy was arranged, but rivalry grew particularly keen after the withdrawal of the Spanish and Russian claims, for the great influx of settlers necessitated a definite form of government. 54°40′ became the new limit demanded by U.S.extremists, and war seemed imminent. In 1846, however, President Polk achieved a settlement of the original demands, and by 1849 a territorial government was established in the region defined by the present U.S.boundary.

Oregon Trail, emigrant route from Missouri to the 'Oregon country' whose western part was first traveled by the expedition sent to Astoria (q.v.,1811–12). It was not generally known until after Jedediah Smith used it (1824). Although Bonneville took wagons over part of the trail (1832), the first real emigrant train to use it was that of John Bidwell (1841). It was extensively used during the 1840's, and part of it was employed in the Mormon emigrations. Parkman's *The Oregon Trail* deals only with the eastern end of the route.

Oregon Trail, The, autobiographical narrative by Parkman (q.v.), serialized in *The Knickerbocker Magazine* (1847) and issued in book form as *The California and Oregon Trail* (1849). The original title was resumed in later editions.

This account of the author's trip over the eastern part of the Oregon Trail, with his cousin, Quincy Adams Shaw (April–August 1846), tells of their travels from St.Louis by steamboat and horseback to Fort Laramie, Wyoming, in company with guides and occasional other travelers. They encountered typical adventures in storms, buffalo hunts, and meetings with Indians, soldiers, sportsmen, and emigrants. At Fort Laramie, then a trading post, they found an encampment of Sioux and learned of a war-party that was being sent against the Snake Indians. Attempting to join this party, they met difficulties, and Parkman went on alone with a guide, promising to rejoin Shaw later. After a dangerous mountain journey, he found the Sioux band and lived with them for several weeks, sharing their food and shelter and taking part in buffalo hunts and ceremonials, although he saw no battles. Parkman was in ill health, and only managed by strenuous and painful activity to keep the respect of his untrustworthy hosts. After gaining much information and insight into Indian character which influenced his writings and made this a classic description of Indian life, Parkman rejoined Shaw, and returned east.

O'REILLY, JOHN BOYLE (1844–90), Irish-born writer, came to the U. S. (1869) after escaping from an Australian prison, where he had been confined for Fenian activities. His novel, *Moondyne* (1870), was concerned with Australian convict life, and his volumes of poetry include *Songs from Southern Seas* (1873) and *Songs, Legends, and Ballads* (1878). From 1870 to his death he edited the *Pilot,* a Catholic paper in Boston.

O'REILLY, MILES, pseudonym of C.G. Halpine (q.v.).

Ormond; or, The Secret Witness, romance by C.B.Brown (q.v.) published in 1799.

After a blindness and bankruptcy of Stephen Dudley, a Philadelphia merchant, his young daughter Constantia supports him by becoming a seamstress. They live through a yellow-fever epidemic, but Constantia can no longer find work and seeks aid from her father's former friend, Melbourne. On the way she sees Thomas Craig, the embezzler responsible for her father's bankruptcy, and follows him to the home of his friend Ormond, a wealthy eccentric. Having been defrauded by Craig and aided by Melbourne, she attracts the interest of Ormond, for her attainments confound his theory of the mental inferiority of women. He employs her as a seamstress for his mistress, Helena Cleves, and, after the women become friends, Constantia pleads with Ormond to marry Helena. His refusal results in the suicide of Helena, who leaves her wealth to the Dudleys, returning them to affluence and making possible an operation that restores Stephen's sight. Seeking to marry Constantia, Ormond is opposed by her father, whom he then causes Craig to murder. One night, while Constantia is alone, Ormond appears, bringing the corpse of Craig, whom he has murdered. He attempts to rape Constantia, who stabs him to death. Her friend, Sophia Westwyn, comes upon this scene, bears witness to Constantia's innocence, and takes her to live in England.

Ornithological Biography, see *Birds of America*.

OROZCO, JOSÉ CLEMENTE (1883–), Mexican painter, who, following Rivera, is the primary exponent of the new technique of fresco painting. His stark murals, containing a liberal social message, include *Prometheus* (Pomona College, California), a group at the New School for Social Research, and the *Epic of Culture in the New World* (Dartmouth College).

Orphan Angel, The, novel by Elinor Wylie (q.v.).

ORPHEUS C. KERR, pseudonym of R.H. Newell (q.v.).

Orphic Sayings, 50 aphorisms expressing the mystical idealism of Bronson Alcott (q.v.), published in the first number of *The Dial* (July 1840).

ORVIS, MARIANNE DWIGHT, see *Dwight, Marianne*.

Osage Indians, warlike Plains tribe (q.v.) related to the Sioux, were encountered (1673) on the Osage River in Missouri. Besides waging war on many tribes, they were allied with the French in the French and Indian Wars. Irving describes the Osage enthusiastically in *A Tour on the Prairie*, and their descendants, who have become wealthy through the discovery of oil on their Oklahoma lands, figure in Edna Ferber's *Cimarron*.

Osawatomie, see *Brown, John*.

OSBORN, HENRY FAIRFIELD (1857–1935), paleontologist and geologist, professor at Princeton (1881–90) and at Columbia (1891–1911). He was later president of the American Museum of Natural History. His books include: *From the Greeks to Darwin* (1894); *Men of the Old Stone Age* (1915); *Impressions of Great Naturalists* (1924); and *Fifty-two Years of Research, Observation, and Publication* (1930).

OSBORN, LAUGHTON (*c.*1809–78), New York litterateur, whose works include *Sixty Years of the Life of Jeremy Levis* (2 vols.,1831), a novel in the vein of *Tristram Shandy*, and *The Vision of Rubeta* (1838), a romantic story of some of New York history containing attacks on contemporary authors, particularly W.L. Stone and Wordsworth. He also wrote miscellaneous poems and unproduced dramas.

OSBOURNE, LLOYD (1868–1920), novelist and playwright, accompanied his stepfather, R.L.Stevenson, on the sojourn described in *The Silverado Squatters*, and collaborated with him on *The Wrong Box* (1889), *The Wrecker* (1892), and *The Ebb Tide* (1894).

OSGOOD, FRANCES SARGENT [LOCKE] (1811–50), Massachusetts poet whose *The Casket of Fate* (1840) and *The Poetry of Flowers and the Flowers of Poetry* (1841) are typical of the sentimental feminine verse of the Victorian era. After she moved to New York, she was a friend of Poe, who praised her work extravagantly in 'The Literati.'

OSGOOD, HERBERT LEVI (1855–1918), American historian and professor at Columbia University (1890–1918), studied American colonial history in relation to the British imperial system, and, while

emphasizing law and political institutions, tended to neglect social and economic forces. His books include *The American Colonies in the Seventeenth Century* (1904) and *The American Colonies in the Eighteenth Century* (1924). His biography was written by his son-in-law, D.R.Fox.

O'SHEEL (SHIELDS), SHAEMAS (1886–), New York poet, whose verse is in the tradition of Yeats and the Irish renaissance. *Jealous of Dead Leaves* (1928) contains poems revised and selected from his two earlier books, *The Blossomy Bough* (1911) and *The Light Feet of Goats* (1915). His poem, 'They Went Forth to Battle, But They Always Fell,' is widely known.

OSLER, SIR WILLIAM (1849–1919), Canadian physician, graduated from McGill (1872) and became one of the great medical figures of his time. His research was largely concerned with a study of the blood, and he taught pathology at McGill, Pennsylvania, Johns Hopkins, and Oxford. In addition to his specialized works, he wrote *The Principles and Practice of Medicine* (1893) and *A Concise History of Medicine* (1919). His biography was written by Harvey Cushing.

Osmond, GILBERT, character in *The Portrait of a Lady* (q.v.).

OSSOLI, MARGARET, see *Fuller, Margaret.*

Ostend Manifesto, drawn up at Ostend (1854) by Buchanan, minister to Great Britain, John Y. Mason, minister to France, and Pierre Soulé, minister to Spain, declared that, if Spain refused to sell Cuba to the U.S., the island would be taken by force. The manifesto was immediately disavowed by the U.S.government.

OSTENSO, MARTHA (1900–), Norwegian-born author, reared in Minnesota, South Dakota, and Canada, whose first novel, *Wild Geese* (1925), is a realistic portrayal of Scandinavian farm life in the Middle West. Her later novels, also concerned with life in this region, include: *The Dark Dawn* (1926), *The Mad Carews* (1927), *The Young May Moon* (1929), *The Waters Under the Earth* (1930), *There's Always Another Year* (1933), *Stone Field* (1937), and *The Mandrake Root* (1938).

OTIS, ELISHA GRAVES (1811–61), inventor of the safety brake for elevators (1852). In 1857 he installed the first passenger elevator in New York City. His invention is one of those that made possible the modern skyscraper.

OTIS, HARRISON GRAY (1765–1848), Massachusetts lawyer and statesman, whose career in Congress (1797–1801), the Senate (1817–22), and Boston and state political offices marked him as the foremost leader of the Federalist party during the era in which its power was waning. His consistent championing of the Hartford Convention in political campaigns, public speeches, and two volumes of published letters (1820,'24) cost him his position in national politics, but he continued to be prominent in Boston society and affairs, and an exemplar of the city's aristocratic interests.

OTIS, JAMES (1725–83), brother of Mercy Otis Warren, graduated from Harvard (1743) and became a prominent Boston lawyer, upholding the rights of the colonists as Englishmen in his opposition to the Sugar Act, Stamp Act, and Townshend Acts. He was a prominent champion of free speech and an opponent of royal and parliamentary prerogative, against which he invoked natural law in such pamphlets as *A Vindication of the House of Representatives . . .* (1762) and *The Rights of the British Colonies . . .* (1764), which laid the foundation for later Revolutionary writings. Although he did not champion revolution, he attacked the arguments of Soame Jenyns and Martin Howard, headed the Massachusetts Committee of Correspondence, and was active until 1769 in the colonial assembly. As the result of a political quarrel, he was physically attacked by an opponent and received injuries that put an end to his public career.

OTIS, JAMES, pseudonym of J.O.Kaler (q.v.).

Ottawa Indians, tribe originally located on the Ottawa River in Canada, were first noted by Champlain (1615). They were allied with the French and Hurons, and consequently opposed the Iroquois. The latter forced them to flee to the Great Lakes region, and their later wanderings took them throughout the central U.S. Pontiac (q.v.) was an Ottawa chieftain. The tribe figures in Rogers's *Ponteach* and in Doddridge's *Logan.*

Our American Cousin, comedy of Yankee life by the English dramatist Tom Taylor, first produced in 1858. It is remembered as the play that Lincoln was watching at Ford's Theatre in Washington (April 14, 1865), when he was assassinated by Booth.

Our New Home in the West, see *New Home, A—Who'll Follow?*

Our Old Home, sketches by Hawthorne (q.v.) published in 1863, describing his observations and experiences during his residence in England.

Our Town, play by Thornton Wilder (q.v.), produced and published in 1938, when it won the Pulitzer Prize.

The intimate history of a typical American town, Grover's Corners, New Hampshire, is sketched during the years 1901–13. On a bare, uncurtained stage, set with a few chairs and tables, the activities of the townspeople are enacted under the visible direction of the friendly Stage Manager, who addresses the audience, describing the characters and commenting on the action, in what the author calls a 'hang-over from a novelist technique.' Professor Willard and Editor Webb describe the scientific and social backgrounds, and other incidental figures are Joe Crowell, the newsboy; Howie Newsome, the milkman; Simon Stimson, a frustrated creative artist, the town organist and drunkard; Constable Warren; Mr. Morgan, the druggist; Mrs.Soames, the gossip; and Joe Stoddard, the undertaker. Interest is centered in the families of Editor Webb and Dr.Gibbs. The first act, 'Daily Life,' shows the common occupations of cooking, gardening, school, baseball, the church choir, and domestic concerns. The second act, 'Love and Marriage,' deals with the courtship and wedding of George Gibbs and Emily Webb. 'Death,' the third act, presents the funeral of Emily, who has died in childbirth. The buried dead become articulate, expressing the quiet and patience resulting from a view of the world outside of time, and their knowledge of 'something way down deep that's eternal about every human being.' Finally aware of the mysterious beauty and terror of life, they embody the author's aim 'to present illustrations of harmony and of law . . . affirmations about mankind and his ends.'

Out of the Cradle Endlessly Rocking, poem by Whitman (q.v.), published as 'A Word Out of the Sea' in *Leaves of Grass* (1860) and given its present title in 1871.

At night, a boy steals out from his Long Island farm home to listen to the calls of a pair of mocking birds by the sea. One night the female is gone, and her mate, from the nest to which she will never return, issues his plaintive call. The solitary singer becomes a symbol of the poet's dæmon, and his mysterious aria is interpreted by the whispering current of the sea as 'Death.' The sea, symbol of the spiritual world, thus shows the boy that physical love is spiritualized through death for poetic creation, and the poet says, 'my own songs awaked from that hour.'

Outcasts of Poker Flat, The, story by Bret Harte (q.v.), published in 1869 and reprinted in *The Luck of Roaring Camp and Other Sketches* (1870). It is a leading example of local-color fiction.

This study of moral contrasts tells of the exile from Poker Flat, a California mining camp of 1850, of the gambler John Oakhurst, two prostitutes known as 'the Duchess' and 'Mother Shipton,' and a drunken sluice-robber, 'Uncle Billy.' This group is joined by 'The Innocent,' Tom Simson, and the young girl Piney, who are eloping to be married. When all are trapped by the snow, Mother Shipton starves to save her rations for Piney, Oakhurst gives the one chance of safety to Tom by killing himself, and the Duchess pillows her head on Piney's breast as the two die together.

Outland, Tom, character in *The Professor's House* (q.v.).

Outlet, The, novel by Andy Adams (q.v.).

Outlook, The (1893–1935), was an outgrowth of *The Christian Union* (1870–93), a 'family magazine' edited by H.W.Beecher and Lyman Abbott, numbering among its contributors Louisa Alcott, Mrs.Stowe, Edward Eggleston, C.D.Warner, Whittier, Hayne, M.C.Tyler, Helen Hunt Jackson, Burroughs, and E.P.Roe. When the new name was adopted, the former policies were continued, but more emphasis was placed upon political commentary, and among the new contributors were Theodore Roosevelt, Riis, and Booker Washington. Roosevelt became an editor (1909) and contributed many of his writings. Another important contributor was H.W.Mabie, who was associated with *The Outlook* from 1879 to 1916. During the

1920's, it began to decline, and in 1928 it was merged with *The Independent*. It became a monthly (1932) as *The New Outlook*, with Alfred E. Smith as editor for a year.

Outre-Mer, narrative by Longfellow (q.v.).

Over the Hills to the Poorhouse, see *Carleton, Will*.

Over the Teacups, essays by Holmes (q.v.).

Over There, popular First World War song by George M. Cohan (q.v.).

Overland Monthly (1868–75, 1883–1933), California regional magazine, published from San Francisco, during its first two-and-a-half years was edited by Bret Harte, who contributed 'The Luck of Roaring Camp,' 'Plain Language from Truthful James,' and other works that made both author and magazine famous. In its early years, the *Overland* published writings by such authors as C.W.Stoddard, Ina Coolbrith, E.R.Sill, and Prentice Mulford. It was less significant when it was revived, and rested so obviously on its former reputation that Bierce dubbed it 'the warmed-Overland Monthly.' For a time it attracted such authors as Mrs. Atherton, Edwin Markham, George Sterling, J.G.Neihardt, and Jack London, but it finally died of inanition.

Overland Trail, name given to various routes of Western migration but particularly to that which began at Independence, Missouri, was for some distance identical with the Oregon Trail (q.v.), branched from it to follow the South Platte River to Fort Laramie, and continued thence to the Great Salt Lake and California. This route was first traversed by Jedediah Smith in 1826, was later used by trappers, traders, and such emigrants as the Donner Party, and was a principal route during the 1849 gold rush.

Over-Soul, The, essay by Emerson (q.v.) published in *Essays, First Series* (1841). The Over-Soul is 'that great nature in which we rest . . . that Unity within which every man's particular being is contained and made one with all other.' This Platonic concept, first stated in Emerson's early lectures and in such works as *Nature* and the 'Divinity School Address,' is here developed as a basic principle in the thought of Transcendentalism.

'We live in succession, in division, in parts, in particles. Meantime within man is the soul of the whole.' Perceptible only through intuition and not to be communicated through words, this divine spirit is the source of all moral and intellectual growth, for 'the heart, which abandons itself to the Supreme Mind, finds itself related to all its works and will travel a royal road to particular knowledge and powers.' The revelations of truth received by various original thinkers and teachers proceed from 'an influx of the Divine mind' into their minds. 'The nature of these revelations is always the same: they are perceptions of the absolute law.' What we call genius is simply the true insight derived from an influx of this 'same Omniscience . . . into the intellect.' This universal and benign omnipresence is neither 'our god of tradition' nor 'our god of rhetoric,' but a God known to men only in moments of mystic enthusiasm, whose visitation leaves them altered, self-reliant, and purified of petty aims. The man who has received intimations of the 'Highest Law' in this fashion 'will weave no longer a spotted life of shreds and patches, but he will live with a divine unity.'

OVIEDO Y VALDÉS, GONZALO FERNÁNDEZ DE (1478–1557), official Spanish historian of the Indies under Charles V, resided in San Domingo (1514–23) and made five other long visits to the colonies, which were described in his extensive *La General y natural historia de las Indias* (21 vols.,1535 et seq.; concluded 1851–5). Though in a diffuse style, his work is rich in information about flora, fauna, and native customs.

OWEN, ROBERT (1771–1858), 'the father of English socialism,' at an early age made a commercial success of his cotton mills at New Lanark, Scotland, and then, to ameliorate the conditions of his workers, instituted successful social experiments in economic, moral, and educational reform. In *A New View of Society* (1813), he set forth the principles of his educational philanthropy, contending that human character is formed by circumstances, and that to create a good man one must surround him with the proper physical, moral, and social influences. This philosophy led Owen to propose the foundation of socialized agricultural communities of some 1,200 persons. To test his theories he came to Amer-

ica (1824) and founded New Harmony (q.v.).

Robert Dale Owen (1801–77), his son, emigrated to the U.S. in 1825, and was active in the New Harmony community, as well as in the later Nashoba Community (q.v.) and other reform associations. He put his theories of public education into practice as a member of the Indiana legislature, and, while a Democratic member of Congress (1843–7), was instrumental in organizing the Smithsonian Institution. He was American charge d'affaires and minister to Italy (1853–8), and there became interested in spiritualism, about which he wrote two books. Upon his return to the U.S., he wrote *The Policy of Emancipation* (1863), which supposedly influenced Lincoln's views. Other works include: *Pocahontas* (1837), a historical drama; *The Future of the North-West* (1863); *The Wrong of Slavery* (1864); *Hints on Public Architecture* (1849); *Beyond the Breakers* (1870), a novel; and *Threading My Way* (1874), an autobiography of his youth.

Oz, mythical setting of a series of books for children by L.Frank Baum (q.v.).

P

Pacing Mustang, legendary wild stallion in the folk tales of the Western frontier, famed for his extraordinary beauty, size, strength, cunning, and untamable independence of spirit. He appears in *Moby-Dick* as 'the White Steed of the Prairies,' but his color varies in other versions, being black in 'The Pacing Mustang' by Ernest Thompson Seton. Among the other works in which he appears are Irving's *A Tour on the Prairies* and Hough's *North of 36.*

PAGE, Thomas Nelson (1853–1922), Virginia author distinguished as a leader of the local-color movement. His first short story appeared in 1884, and in 1893 he forsook his legal career to become a professional writer. His first volume of stories, *In Ole Virginia* (q.v.,1887), depicts various romantic aspects of his region before the Civil War. Frequently employing Negro dialect, his stories are generally concerned sentimentally with the aristocratic Old South, as in such collections as *Elsket and Other Stories* (1891), *The Burial of the Guns* (1894), and *Bred in the Bone* (1904). Page's novels, dealing with the same background, include: *On Newfound River* (1891), the story of a Virginia feud in the period before the Civil War; *Red Rock* (1898), telling of the oppressive military rule of the South during the Reconstruction; *The Old Gentleman of the Black Stock* (1897), a romantic tale of an old man who reunites a quarreling pair of young lovers; *Gordon Keith* (1903), contrasting a well-born Southerner with a Northern *nouveau riche; John Marvel, Assistant* (1909), presenting a typical Southerner against the background of contemporary Chicago. His essays and social studies, linked to his fiction in theme and tone, include: *The Old South* (1892); *Social Life in Old Virginia* (1897); and *The Old Dominion* (1908). He also wrote semi-historical works and eulogistic biographies, such as *Robert E. Lee, Man and Soldier* (1911), and a volume of dialect verse, *Befo' de War* (1888). His literary career ended when he became U.S.ambassador to Italy (1913–19).

PAGE, Walter Hines (1855–1918), born in North Carolina, began his journalistic career in 1880, reported on the South for the New York *World* (1881–3), edited the Raleigh *State Chronicle* (1883–5), the *Forum* (1891–5), the *Atlantic Monthly* (1895–9), and *The World's Work* (1900–13). The prestige thus acquired caused his appointment as ambassador to Great Britain (1913–18), in which position he helped Anglo-American relations, sympathizing strongly with Great Britain even while the U.S. was attempting to maintain neutrality in the First World War. His *Life and Letters* (3 vols.,1922–5) was written by Burton J. Hendrick.

PAIN, Philip, author of *Daily Meditations* (1666). Nothing is known of his life except the information on the title-page, that he 'lately suffering shipwrack, was drowned.' Since the work was published in Massachusetts, he may have been a New Englander, and the poems indicate that he was a very young man. They are concerned with the doubts, fears, and hopes of a devout man who is restive in his faith. The poetry has a deep personal note and is strongly influenced by the English metaphysical poets. If Pain was an American, as is supposed, his work is the earliest known specimen of original verse printed in the American colonies.

PAINE, Albert Bigelow (1861–1937), editor, dramatist, biographer, and author of several novels, is best known for his authorized three-volume biography of Mark Twain (1912) and for his editorship of Twain's letters (1917). The title of one of Paine's plays, *The Great White Way* (1901), gave a familiar nickname to New York City's theatrical district.

PAINE, John Knowles (1839–1906), New England composer, founded the first music department in any American university at Harvard, where he was a professor (1862–1905). Despite his pedantry and rigid academism, he was a major influence on music in the U.S., numbering among his students such composers as Foote, Converse, D.G.Mason, and Carpenter. His compositions, admired during his lifetime, include two symphonies, several symphonic poems, choral music, and an opera, *Azara* (1903).

PAINE, Robert Treat (1773–1811), was reared in the best society of Boston, but after his graduation from Harvard (1792) drifted from business into bohemianism, and through his writing and actions es-

tranged himself from his conventional background. He edited the *Federal Orrery* (1794–6), a strongly Federalist journal that specialized in satire of Jacobin politics. His marriage to an actress, constant indebtedness, and vehement manner placed him beyond the pale of Boston society, but his satirical ability, facile versification, and general eccentricity caused him to be considered a genius. His poetry, including 'The Invention of Letters' (1795) and 'The Ruling Passion' (1796), was widely read. 'Adams and Liberty' (q.v.,1798), his most famous work, was sung throughout the nation. Until 1801 he used his christened name, Thomas Paine, but that year he adopted the name of a dead brother, presumably because of his opposition to the ideas of the pamphleteer. His *Works* (1812) include early neoclassical verse, later political satire, and patriotic prose.

ROBERT TREAT PAINE (1731–1814), his father, was a Massachusetts jurist and political leader.

PAINE, THOMAS (1737–1809), born in England, was the son of a corsetmaker, to whose trade he was apprenticed when his schooling ended, at the age of 13. His unsettled life to 1774 included residence in various towns, two brief unhappy marriages, and such occupations as school teacher, tobacconist, grocer, and exciseman. He was twice dismissed from the latter post, and was forced into bankruptcy after the publication of *The Case of the Officers of Excise* (1772), a plea to Parliament for higher wages. While lobbying for the excisemen, he met Franklin, who was impressed by his learning and interests and helped him to start anew in America. Arriving at Philadelphia (1774), Paine contributed extensively to the *Pennsylvania Magazine* and achieved wide fame with the publication of *Common Sense* (q.v.,1776), which urged an immediate declaration of independence at a time when others were debating only matters of reform. Under the pseudonym Forester, in the *Pennsylvania Packet* (1776), he defended his theories against attacks by William Smith. While serving as a soldier in the Continental Army, he continued his political journalism in *The American Crisis* (q.v.,Dec. 1776–April 1783), a series of 16 pamphlets in support of the Revolutionary War. He was rewarded by an appointment (1777–9) as secretary to the Congressional committee on foreign affairs, but was forced to resign, after he charged corruption in the negotiations of Silas Deane with France and implied that the French, while still at peace with England, had aided the colonies. The plea for a strong federal union that he had made in *Common Sense* was reiterated in *Public Good* (1780), opposing Virginia's claims to western land. After an appointment as clerk of the Pennsylvania Assembly and a trip to France (1781) for money and stores, he retired to the farm at New Rochelle that New York presented to him. *Dissertations on Government . . .* (1786), a blast against paper money inflation, was his only political work during this period, when he was engaged in perfecting his invention of an iron bridge. He went to France and England (1787), had his bridge constructed in the latter country, and traveled between Paris and London in the cause of a world revolution. *The Rights of Man* (q.v.,1791–2), a defense of the French Revolution against the attacks of Edmund Burke, appealed to the English to create a republic. Having fled to France, he was not directly affected by his English trial for treason and sentence of banishment (1792). He was made a French citizen by the Assembly (1792) and was elected to the Convention, where he allied himself with the moderate republicans, who lost power during the Terror (1793). His citizenship was thereupon revoked, and, although he was outlawed by England, he was arrested by France as an enemy Englishman. In jail (Dec. 1793–Nov. 1794), he wrote *The Age of Reason* (q.v.,1794–5), his great deistic work. At this time he considered himself the victim of a plot contrived by his conservative enemy, the American minister Gouverneur Morris, but it appears that Morris deliberately left him in jail because he was unnoticed there and might be sentenced to death if his case were reopened. Released at the request of Morris's successor, Monroe, Paine returned to the Convention (1795) after the passing of the Terror. Although he did not return to the U.S. until 1802, he played a vicarious part in American politics through his *Letter to George Washington* (1796), accusing the President and Morris of plotting against him, and, through Jefferson's championing of *The Rights of Man*, causing a bitter partisan dispute with J.Q.Adams, who attacked both

Paine and Jefferson. Paine's last years in the U.S. were marked by poverty, ill-health, and ostracism. Malevolent persons of all parties, who feared his radical freethinking, accused him of drunkenness, cowardice, adultery, and atheism. He was buried on his New Rochelle farm when consecrated ground was refused, and in 1819 William Cobbett removed the remains to England, with the intention of erecting a monument to Paine. This was never accomplished, and after Cobbett's death the bones of Paine were lost.

Painted Desert, highly colored, severely eroded plateau in the desert region of northern Arizona.

Painted Veils, novel by Huneker (q.v.) published in 1920.

Set among the Bohemian society of New York artists, critics, and dilettantes, this impressionistic narrative exhibits the author's love of the exotic and the voluptuous, his acceptance of the decorative aspects of Oriental mysticism, and his intimate knowledge of art and artists in his time. His æsthetic enthusiasms are shown by the incidental inclusion of such figures as Saltus, de Reszke, Lilli Lehmann, Huysmans, Gourmont, Mary Garden, and Seidl, and digressions concerning Wagner, the *Symbolistes,* Ibsen, Henry James, Stendhal, Petronius, à Kempis, Flaubert, and others. The principal characters are fictional, and include: Esther Brandès, later called 'Easter' and finally 'Istar,' a beautiful and gifted Southern girl who wins a great success as a Wagnerian soprano, while maintaining her independence equally of men and of morals; Ulick Invern, a wealthy amateur and critic, who cherishes a hopeless passion for the singer, and, after frenetic years of sexual and alcoholic excess, artistic passions, and mysticism, dies in Paris; Mona Milton, a 'maternal nymphomaniac,' who is for a time Invern's mistress; her brother, a theological student deliberately debauched by Istar, who becomes a Catholic missionary in the Orient; Dora, a prostitute; Paul Godard, a music critic who 'shares' Dora with Invern and becomes Istar's lover, but afterward marries Mona, to become a conventional *père de famille*; and Alfred Henderson, another critic, who observes the careers of this 'queer crowd' with envious cynicism.

Pale Horse, Pale Rider, stories by Katherine Anne Porter (q.v.).

PALFREY, JOHN GORHAM (1796–1881), Unitarian clergyman of Boston, owned and edited *The North American Review* (q.v.,1835–43). In addition to books on religious subjects, he wrote a *History of New England* (5 vols.,1858–90), an example of careful scholarship in details, in its time considered impartial and revelatory because of its paralleling of colonial and English events. Later critics have found the work biased in favor of New England, particularly of Massachusetts.

Palladium, The, see *Massachusetts Mercury.*

PALMER, GEORGE HERBERT (1842–1933), professor of philosophy at Harvard (1873–1913), also known for his scholarship in Greek and English literature and for his writing of important books in these fields. In addition to his *Autobiography of a Philosopher* (1930), he wrote a *Life* (1908) of his wife, Alice Freeman Palmer (1855–1902), who was president of Wellesley College (1882–7).

PALMER, RAY (1808–87), born in Rhode Island, was reared in Boston and graduated from Yale (1830). He became a pastor of Congregational churches in Maine and New York, and is best remembered for his original hymns, published in *Hymns and Sacred Pieces* (1865), *Hymns of My Holy Hours* (1868), and other collections.

PALÓU, FRANCISCO (*c.*1722–*c.*1789), Franciscan missionary born in Mallorca, in 1749 went to Mexico with Junípero Serra and later accompanied him to Texas and Lower California. In 1773 he went to Upper California, where he explored the region of San Francisco, founded the Mission Dolores (1776), which he headed until 1784, and the following year returned to Mexico to become president of the College of San Fernando. He was the author of many reports and letters, a great chronicle of the Franciscans in California, translated as *Historical Memoirs of New California* (4 vols.,1926), and a biography of Serra, published in Mexico (1787) and translated into English (1913).

Pan in Wall Street, poem by Stedman (q.v.).

Panama Canal, across the Isthmus of Panama, was built by the U.S. (1904–14) on territory leased in perpetuity from the Republic of Panama. A French company under Ferdinand de Lesseps had attempted

a similar work, but failed in 1888 because of inadequate planning, political troubles, and inability to combat disease. Its property was purchased by the U.S. The sanitary measures that eradicated malaria and yellow fever were administered by Dr. William Crawford Gorgas (1854–1920), and the entire engineering, civil, and military power was vested in Colonel George Washington Goethals (1858–1928). Three years of preliminary work preceded seven of actual construction. The canal was formally opened (July 12, 1915) after a total expenditure of $366,650,000.

Panic, verse play by MacLeish (q.v.), produced and published in 1935. 'A Note on the Verse' explains the intention to accommodate the verse to characteristic American speech-rhythms, by the use of lines of five accents but unlimited syllables, and, in the case of crowd effects, of similar lines of three accents.

The action occurs on two planes of an undivided stage, one representing the New York office of McGafferty, 'the leading industrialist and financier of his time,' and the other a street before an electric news bulletin, during the height of the financial crisis of February 1933. As the stage lights alternate between the sets, the ironic counterpoint reveals the helplessness both of the men in the street and of McGafferty and his subordinates, as the economic tangle increases and the 'crash' dooms them to ruin. A delegation of radicals frightens McGafferty's banker allies with a prophecy of coming destruction, and his assistant Immelman loses faith, as the news of bank closings and panic is received on the ticker; McGafferty's confidence is unshaken until an associate commits suicide. Despite the appeal of his mistress, Ione, who insists that he will always possess her love, the financier collapses. His own suicide is announced to the people in the street, who are at first incredulous, but then realize that 'The walls open arousing us!'

Pansy, pseudonym of Isabella Alden (q.v.).

Paris, TREATIES OF: (1) agreement concluding the Seven Years' War (Feb. 10, 1763), signed by Great Britain, France, and Spain, by which Great Britain obtained colonial and maritime supremacy in the New World; (2) agreement concluding the American Revolution (Sept. 3, 1783), signed by Great Britain and the U.S., which recognized the independence of the former British colonies and defined the boundaries of the new nation; and (3) agreement concluding the Spanish-American War (Dec. 10, 1898), which signalized the emergence of the U.S. as a world power.

Paris Bound, play by Philip Barry (q.v.), produced in 1927 and published in 1929.

On the wedding day of Jim and Mary Hutton, his father, James, tells them that his own marriage had been destroyed because his wife, following conventional morality, had obtained a divorce on discovering his temporary infidelity. He warns them against ever letting their happiness be destroyed by such an incident. Years later, Jim has an affair with one of Mary's bridesmaids, and despite James's exhortations, Mary decides to seek a divorce. Just prior to announcing her intention, she determines, since she no longer belongs to Jim, to give herself to a young composer, Richard Parrish. Jim discovers them together, but since he adopts the attitude his father had championed and fails to question her, she conceals her knowledge of his infidelity and returns to revive their previously happy life.

PARISH, ELIJAH (1762–1825), orthodox Congregational clergyman of Connecticut, whose sermons incidentally reveal his reactionary adherence to the Federalist party. With Jedediah Morse, he wrote *A Compendious History of New England* (1804). In addition to his own works on modern and Biblical geography, he wrote a biography of Eleazar Wheelock with David McClure.

PARKE, JOHN (1754–89), Delaware soldier in the Continental Army, was known for his anonymous book, *The Lyric Works of Horace . . . to Which Are Added, A Number of Original Poems . . .* (1786). His Horatian translations are adapted to American history by such substitutions as Washington for Augustus. The original verses are in the neoclassical manner, and include, in addition to some poems by other hands, his pastoral drama, *Virginia*, and a life of Horace.

PARKER, DOROTHY [ROTHSCHILD] (1893–), after a career as a dramatic and literary critic in her native New York City, during which she achieved an almost legendary reputation for her mali-

cious and sardonic *bons mots*, published her first book of poetry, *Enough Rope* (1926). This and the two volumes which followed, *Sunset Gun* (1928) and *Death and Taxes* (1931), all collected in *Not So Deep as a Well* (1936), are works of light, satirical verse, characterized by brilliant concision, flippant cynicism, and caustic variations on certain dominant themes, such as frustrated love and cheated idealism in modern living. Her short stories and sketches, published in *Laments for the Living* (1930) and *After Such Pleasures* (1933), and collected in *Here Lies* (1939), possess the same wry quality and polished technique that are found in her poems. She was a newspaper correspondent in Spain during that country's civil war, and has written motion-picture scenarios in collaboration with her husband, Alan Campbell.

PARKER, Sir [Horatio] Gilbert (1862–1932), Canadian-born novelist, who lived in England after 1895, achieved fame as a popular author of historical fiction. His books include: *Pierre and His People: Tales of the Far North* (1892); *When Valmond Came to Pontiac* (1895), a novel; *The Seats of the Mighty* (1896), a novel concerned with the taking of Quebec, which the author dramatized in the following year; *The Right of Way* (1901), a novel of life in Quebec, dramatized in 1907; *A History of Old Quebec* (1903); *The Weavers: A Tale of England and Egypt Fifty Years Ago* (1907); *The Judgement House* (1913); and *The Power and the Glory* (1925), a romance concerning La Salle.

PARKER, Horatio William (1863–1919), Massachusetts composer and organist, taught at the National Conservatory of Music under Dvořák and became a professor at Yale (1894–1919). Considered the outstanding American composer of choral music, for which he is celebrated in England as well as the U.S., he is best known for his oratorios, *Hora Novissima* (1893) and *The Legend of St.Christopher* (1902). Other works include the cantata *The Dream King and His Love* (1892), the *Wanderer's Psalm*, and *Star Song. Mona*, an opera with a libretto by Brian Hooker, concerned with early Britain under Roman rule, was produced by the Metropolitan (1912), and Parker wrote another opera with Hooker, *Fairyland* (1915).

PARKER, James (*c.*1714–70), New Jersey-born printer and journalist, after working with the younger William Bradford (1727–33) and with Franklin (1742–8), became public printer of New York (1743–60). In addition to his various printing businesses, he established several newspapers: the *Connecticut Gazette*; the *Constitutional Courant* (q.v.,1765); and the *New York Gazette, or the Weekly Post-Boy* (1743–73); as well as the *Independent Reflector* (1752–3), the *Occasional Reverberator* (Sept.–Oct. 1753), *John Englishman* (April–July 1755), and the *Instructor* (March–May 1755).

PARKER, Jane Marsh (1836–1913), New York author, whose revolt from her father's fanatical belief in the Millerites may be seen in the semi-autobiographical *Barley Wood* (1860). *The Midnight Cry* (1886) is another novel based on the Millerites.

PARKER, Samuel (1779–1866), Congregational clergyman of Massachusetts, who in 1835 with Marcus Whitman (q.v.) went West to select sites for Indian missions. He continued to Oregon alone, while Whitman returned to organize a missionary party. His *Journal of an Exploring Tour Beyond the Rocky Mountains* (1838) is an account of this trip.

PARKER, Theodore (1810–60), born at Lexington, Massachusetts, early showed a precocious ability at scholarship, although poverty limited his schooling. From the age of 17 until he was 21, he taught at district schools, and then, after passing the Harvard entrance examination, being too poor to enroll, received special credit and graduated from the Divinity School (1836). He became a Unitarian clergyman in a Boston suburb (1837). Increasingly dependent upon the direct intuition of an Absolute Being, he turned away from the belief in miraculous revelation. In agreement with such liberal thinkers as Channing, Emerson, Alcott, Ripley, and Wendell Phillips, who were his friends, he developed his intuitive religious beliefs into a system, expressed in *The . . . Question between Mr.Andrews Norton and his Alumni . . .* (1839), written under the pseudonym Levi Blodgett, and a sermon on 'The Transient and Permanent in Christianity' (1841). Having become a Transcendentalist, he was ostracized by the orthodox Unitarian circles, and only enabled to deliver the lectures printed as *A Discourse of Matters Pertaining to Religion* (1842), when laymen invited him to Boston. After a trip to Europe

(1843–4), he still found Boston churches closed to him. When he was finally installed as minister of a new Congregational Society of Boston, he devoted his pulpit not only to religious education but to the discussion of problems of war, slavery, temperance, women's rights, and other reforms, in the belief that social wrongs would be cured when men attained consciousness of the infinite perfection of God. Outside the church, he made passionate speeches against slavery, aided New England emigrants to Kansas in the struggle that followed the passage of the Kansas-Nebraska bill, abetted John Brown, was active in attempts to rescue fugitive slaves, and wrote such works as his *Letter . . . Touching the Matter of Slavery* (1848). His strenuous public life came to an end through exhaustion and illness (1859). In an attempt to regain his health, he went to Italy, where he died. His *Works* were published in 14 volumes (1863–70).

PARKER, Thomas (1595–1677), English-born minister who emigrated to Massachusetts (1634), was an orthodox Calvinist, although in matters of ecclesiastical polity he favored Presbyterianism rather than Congregationalism, as may be seen in his *True Copy of a Letter written by Mr. T.Parker . . .* (1644). He conducted a preparatory school for Harvard students, among his pupils being Samuel Sewall, and also wrote *The Visions and Prophecies of Daniel expounded* (1646).

PARKMAN, Francis (1823–93), member of a prominent Boston family, graduated from Harvard (1844), having already indicated his interest in frontier life through excursions to the northern woods to study Indian life. After a European trip (1843–4), he attended Harvard Law School (LL.B., 1846), although he never applied for admission to the bar. In 1846 he set out from St.Louis on a journey to Wyoming, with the dual purpose of studying Indian life and improving his frail health. He observed frontiersmen and Indians at first hand, and gained valuable information, but his strenuous exercise led to a complete breakdown rather than recovery. Incapable of writing, he dictated to his cousin and companion, Quincy A. Shaw, his account of the journey, published in 1849 and properly entitled *The Oregon Trail* (q.v.). He continued to suffer from complete exhaustion and derangement of his nervous system, a mental condition prohibiting concentration, and an extreme weakness of the eyes. Although he was frequently unable to compose more than six lines a day, had to hire others to read and write for him, and employed a special instrument enabling him to write without looking at his manuscript, he nevertheless began in 1848 his *History of the Conspiracy of Pontiac* (1851), the first of a long series of histories of the French and English struggle for colonial America. His only novel is the semi-autobiographical *Vassall Morton* (1856). A new nervous crisis caused him to seek cures in European travel (1858–9) and in an interest in horticulture, which resulted in *The Book of Roses* (1866) and his later appointment as Harvard professor of horticulture (1871). By sheer will power, he forced himself to return to his historical project. The series concerning the conflict for domination in the New World includes seven separate works: *Pioneers of France in the New World* (1865), concerned with the struggle between French Huguenots and Spanish Catholics for Florida, and the history of Champlain; *The Jesuits in North America in the Seventeenth Century* (1867), telling of the struggle to Christianize the Indians, and the Iroquois victory over the converted tribes (*c.*1670); *LaSalle and the Discovery of the Great West* (1869), originally published as *The Discovery of the Great West*, dealing with LaSalle's attempts to colonize the Mississippi Valley; *The Old Regime in Canada* (1874), showing the French feudal dominion of Acadia, the problems of the missionaries, and the faults of autocratic rule; *Count Frontenac and New France under Louis XIV* (1877), depicting Frontenac as the hero who alone attempted to maintain France's untenable position; *Montcalm and Wolfe* (1884), dealing with the Seven Years' War in America, and the dramatic conclusion of French influence with the defeat of Montcalm on the Plains of Abraham; and *A Half-Century of Conflict* (1892), concerned with border warfare and the siege of Louisburg in the years 1700–1741, between Frontenac's government and the final downfall of France's colonial empire. The series was written in historical sequence, except for the last two works, and the *History of the Conspiracy of Pontiac*, which describes events following those of *Montcalm and Wolfe*. Parkman depicted history in terms of the two forces of progress and reaction, represented respectively by England and France. He saw

the former as ordered democracy, the latter as dictated military despotism, but, placing his faith in neither, admitted in *The Old Regime* what was everywhere implicit: 'My political faith lies between two vicious extremes, democracy and absolute authority . . . I do not object to a good constitutional monarchy, but prefer a conservative republic. . . .' As he was a believer in a middle-of-the-road policy for government, likewise in his approach to history he combined the romantic attitude of Scott with the scientific historical method of German scholarship, to create history that is not only accurate, but also deserves an important place in literature.

PARLEY, PETER, see *S.G.Goodrich.*

Parnassus on Wheels, novel by Christopher Morley (q.v.).

PARRINGTON, VERNON LOUIS (1871–1929), scholar of American literature, professor at the University of Washington (1908–29), whose books include: *The Connecticut Wits* (1926), *Sinclair Lewis, Our Own Diogenes* (1927), and *Main Currents in American Thought* (3 vols.,1927–30). The last work, of which the third volume was left incomplete, is a historical examination of American ideas and their primary expression in literature, written from the point of view of a Jeffersonian liberal. The first two volumes were awarded the Pulitzer Prize (1928) and the entire work had a great effect in leading others to revalue American literature, following him in an economic interpretation of literary movements.

PARRISH, ANNE (1888–), author of *The Perennial Bachelor* (1925), a fictional study of a pampered, charming ne'er-do-well, whose mother and sisters sacrifice themselves in order that he may enjoy a genteel life. Her other novels include *Semi-Attached* (1924), *Tomorrow Morning* (1926), *All Kneeling* (1928), *The Methodist Faun* (1929), *Floating Island* (1930), *Loads of Love* (1932), *Sea Level* (1934), and *Golden Wedding* (1936).

PARRISH, MAXFIELD (1870–), illustrator and mural decorator, whose works are noted for their flat masses of brilliant color, particularly the shade of blue named for the artist; their whimsical humor, as in the mural *Old King Cole*; and their romantic character, as in the illustrations for Field's *Poems of Childhood.*

PARSONS, THEOPHILUS (1750–1813), Massachusetts jurist, member of the Essex Junto (q.v.), was the foremost lawyer of his state, and as its chief justice (1806–13) set many precedents for later rulings. He was a founder of the Boston Athenæum and fellow of Harvard College.

THEOPHILUS PARSONS (1797–1882), his son, was a professor at Harvard Law School and edited the *United States Literary Gazette* (q.v.,1824–6).

PARSONS, THOMAS WILLIAM (1819–92), Massachusetts author, is best known for his translations of Dante, which began to appear in 1843 and were collected by C.E.Norton in *The Divine Comedy of Dante Alighieri* (1893), containing the entire *Inferno*, two-thirds of the *Purgatorio*, and fragments of the *Paradiso.* His original poems were collected in 1893. He is represented as 'the Poet' in *The Tales of a Wayside Inn.*

Partington, MRS., character in the works of B.P.Shillaber (q.v.).

Partisan, The, first of the 'Revolutionary Romances' by Simms (q.v.), published in 1835. Set in South Carolina, it covers the period between the capture of Charleston and the American defeat at Camden.

Robert Singleton, a young partisan (patriot) leader, comes in disguise to Dorchester, where he aids Davis, a young provincial, in his quarrel with the British officer Hastings over their love for Bella Humphries. Davis and Bella's brother Dick accordingly join Singleton's rebel band, as does Singleton's uncle, Colonel Walton, with whose daughter Katherine he is in love. In his raids on the British, Singleton captures Captain Travis and his man Ned Blonay (Goggle), whose mother in revenge aids Hastings's attempt to seduce Bella. Meanwhile, Singleton is joined by Porgy, a gourmand and Falstaffian warrior, and Frampton, a mad bloodthirsty Whig whose plantation has been burned and whose wife has been murdered by the British. All of the partisans join the 'Swamp Fox,' Marion, and with him assist Gates and De Kalb. Gates stupidly misdirects the Battle of Camden, and the Americans are defeated. With a small band, Singleton rescues Colonel Walton just as he is about to be hanged, and the story ends with Mother Blonay's death, the reuniting of Bella and Davis, and Katherine's engagement to Singleton.

Partisan Leader, The, novel by N.B. Tucker (q.v.) published in 1836 under the

pseudonym Edward William Sidney, with the fictitious publication date 1856. In order to excoriate the followers of Jackson, laud Calhoun, and promote the doctrine of secession, Tucker wrote this romantic fantasy as an account of events supposed to take place during 1849. Van Buren has become dictator of the U.S. and, in operating his great political machine for the benefit of himself and the North, has so exploited the South that South Carolina secedes and Virginia is on the point of joining in a confederacy that will trade freely with England and flourish unhampered as a great agrarian nation. The work was intended to sway the election of 1836 against Van Buren, but, because of its political philosophy, was reissued as propaganda during the Civil War.

Partisan Review (1934–), bimonthly magazine, originally associated with the Communist party, but independent since 1938. Although partisan to Marxism, it has based its fight for intellectual freedom on opposition to regimentation, whether found in German or Italian fascism or in the communism of Stalin. It was previously a monthly and quarterly; it is now a bimonthly, continuing to publish articles on current political, literary, and artistic affairs, as well as fiction and poetry. Its editors have included Jack Conroy, Philip Rahv, Erskine Caldwell, and Samuel Putnam, while among the contributors have been Dos Passos, Farrell, Wallace Stevens, W.C.Williams, Josephine Herbst, Waldo Frank, MacLeish, T.S.Eliot, and Edmund Wilson.

PARTON, JAMES (1822–91), born in England, was brought to New York (1827) and established his literary reputation with the publication of *The Life of Horace Greeley* (1855). His ability at realistic portrayal and the vivid ordering of comprehensive factual material made him a noteworthy biographer of his time. His other subjects were *Aaron Burr* (1857), *Andrew Jackson* (3 vols.,1859–60), *Benjamin Franklin* (2 vols.,1864), *John Jacob Astor* (1865), *Jefferson* (1874), and *Voltaire* (2 vols.,1881). In addition to these works, which remain excellent personal portraits, he wrote on contemporary political, social, and economic topics, and made collections of short biographies. His wife was Sara P. Willis (q.v.).

PASQUIN, ANTHONY, pseudonym of John Williams (q.v.).

Passage to India, poem by Whitman (q.v.), the title piece of a pamphlet (1871), was incorporated in *Leaves of Grass* in 1876.

Ostensibly celebrating the completion of the Suez Canal and the transcontinental railroad (1869), and such other links as the Atlantic cable (1866), which would effect 'the marriage of continents,' the poem asserts that it is not only the 'facts of modern science,' but also the 'myths and fables of eld . . . The deep diving bibles and legends,' which will unify the world. The welding process must be carried on 'not for trade or transportation only, But in God's name, and for thy sake, O soul.' The long history of mankind, from Oriental antiquity to the present culture of the West, is now to be crowned in America, when 'the Poet, worthy that name; The true Son of God shall come, singing his songs.' The new nation shall combine the physical and intellectual vigor of the West with the spirituality and mystical wisdom of the East. The voyages of the former explorers symbolize the search for God, which is to be completed by the passage of the soul to 'more than India,' through the poet who will restore the divine trinity of God (the universal), Nature (the particular), and Man (the individual).

Passionate Pilgrim, A, story by Henry James (q.v.), published in 1871 and collected in *A Passionate Pilgrim and Other Tales* (1875).

Clement Searle, a middle-aged American widower, comes to England to prosecute his claim to a rich estate. Although a melancholy invalid, he is enthusiastic concerning his pilgrimage to the mother country, which has been his lifelong dream, and he shares his new experiences with the narrator, an impressionable American tourist. Penniless, and feeling the approach of death, Searle determines to enjoy to the full his last days. With the narrator, he visits the Searle estate, is received by its furiously conservative and selfish proprietor, and falls in love with his gentle sister. The brother drives his visitors away, and the shock further weakens Searle, who that night believes he sees a traditional family spectre. With his companion, he goes to Oxford, still the 'passionate pilgrim,' but after a few days becomes weaker and dies. On his deathbed he asks for Miss Searle, who is summoned.

She appears in mourning, since her brother has been accidentally killed, leaving her 'free . . . with what use for freedom?'

Passions Spin the Plot, novel by Vardis Fisher (q.v.).

PASTOR, Tony (Antonio) (1837–1908), New York theatrical manager, whose Opera House (1865–1908) is credited with establishing variety entertainment in the U.S. His career as a performer included experience as clown, minstrel, and ballad singer of his own 2,000 songs. Among the stars whose careers were begun under his direction were Nat Goodwin, Weber and Fields, and Lillian Russell.

PASTORIUS, Francis Daniel (1651–*c.*1720), German-born colonist, lawyer, and author, emigrated to America (1683) as the agent of some Frankfurt Quakers to purchase the land on which he established Germantown, Pennsylvania. In addition to many public offices and his actions as the leading citizen, he devoted time to his diligent study in seven languages and several fields of learning. His published works include a description of Pennsylvania in German; *Four Boasting Disputers of This World Briefly Rebuked* (1697), an attack on the followers of George Keith; *A New Primmer . . . of English*; and the 'Bee-hive,' an unpublished storehouse of the honey of his reading, which contains some original verse first published in a biography (1908).

Paterson Plan, see *Federal Constitution Convention.*

Pathfinder, The; or, The Inland Sea, romance by Cooper (q.v.), published in 1840 as the third in plot sequence of the Leather-Stocking Tales (q.v.).

In 1756, Mabel Dunham is on her way to join her father at the British fort at Oswego, on Lake Ontario. Her companions are her uncle, the seaman Charles Cap; Arrowhead, a Tuscarora Indian, and his wife, Dew-in-June; Pathfinder, the frontier scout, aged about 40; the Mohican chief, Chingachgook; and Jasper Western, a young fresh-water sailor known to the French as Eau-douce. Arrowhead and his wife disappear during skirmishes with the Iroquois, but the others arrive at Oswego. During the following weeks, Sergeant Dunham's plan for a match between Mabel and Pathfinder seems to be succeeding, although Mabel receives a proposal from Lieutenant Muir. Then Dunham is sent with a party to relieve a post on one of the Thousand Islands. With him, in Jasper's ship, the *Scud*, go Muir, Cap, Pathfinder, and Mabel. Jasper's loyalty is suspected, and he is returned to Oswego. Dunham sets off with his men to destroy French supply boats, leaving Mabel with Cap and Muir at the island post, where Dew-in-June appears to warn of an approaching attack, led by Arrowhead. The Indians capture Cap and Muir, but Mabel defends the blockhouse, and, when Pathfinder joins her, promises to marry him if he will protect her father, who is now seriously wounded in a skirmish. The next day the Iroquois are routed, upon the timely return of Jasper and Chingachgook. Muir orders Jasper's arrest as a traitor, but is himself shown to be the guilty one and is killed by Arrowhead. Jasper's innocence is proved, and, though Dunham dies hoping his daughter will marry Pathfinder, the younger man has won the girl's love.

Patriots, The, play by Robert Munford (q.v.), published in 1776 and reprinted in his *Collection of Plays and Poems* (1798), but probably never produced. It represents the nonpartisan attitude at the beginning of the Revolutionary War. The soldiers are depicted as braggarts or cowards, and the rebel committee as ignorant and intolerant. Tackabout, a Tory masquerading as a rebel, causes Trueman and Meanwell, two nonpartisan pacifists, to be jailed by the committee. When his duplicity is discovered, the moderates are released.

Patroons, name given to the proprietors of manorial tracts in New Netherland (q.v.), originally granted by the Dutch West India Company (1629) to members who planted colonies. Their feudal privileges were undisturbed under the English government, and were maintained until the Anti-Rent War (q.v.) of the 1840's. This system of landholding figures in Cooper's 'Littlepage Manuscripts' (q.v.).

PATTEE, Fred Lewis (1863–), professor of American literature at Pennsylvania State College (1894–1928), is said to have been the first incumbent of a chair of American literature. His works include: *History of American Literature Since* 1870 (1915), *The Development of the American Short Story* (1923), *The New American Literature*, 1890–1930 (1930), and *The Feminine Fifties* (1940).

PATTEN, WILLIAM GILBERT (1866–), under the pseudonym Burt L. Standish has written dime novels and several series of popular juvenile stories about college life and amateur sports. The best-known series deals with Frank Merriwell, a type of wholesome college youth, noted for his fair-dealing and athletic exploits. Begun in 1896, this series includes more than 200 novels and has sold more than 25,000,000 copies. After a long silence Patten published *Mr.Frank Merriwell* (1941) presenting a mature hero facing contemporary problems.

Patterns, poem by Amy Lowell (q.v.).

PATTIE, JAMES OHIO (1804–50?), Kentucky-born explorer and trapper, engaged in several lengthy and hazardous journeys, which took him to Santa Fé, Lower California, and Mexico (1824–30). His *Personal Narrative* (1831), describing these adventures, was edited and perhaps largely written by Timothy Flint. Although a work of fiction rather than history, it is an important contribution to frontier literature. It was plagiarized in *The Hunters of Kentucky* (1847), which purported to tell the adventures of B.Bilson. Except that he went to California (1849), little is known of Pattie's later life.

PAUL, ELLIOT [HAROLD] (1891–), born in Massachusetts, served in the First World War and became an expatriate in France and elsewhere, serving as a literary editor of American newspapers abroad. His novels, frequently reflecting his interests as a musician, include: *Indelible* (1922), the story of two young musicians; *Impromptu* (1923), dealing with the warping of a young couple's lives through the effects of the World War and the intolerance of their community; *Low Run Tide* (1929), concerned with a declining New England fishing village, and *Lava Rock* (1929), a complementary work showing the vigor of a Western mining camp; *The Amazon* (1930); *The Governor of Massachusetts* (1930); and *Concert Pitch* (1938), about expatriates of the 'lost generation' in the musical world of Paris. *The Life and Death of a Spanish Town* (1937) contrasts the idyllic life in the Balearics with the havoc wrought by the Spanish civil war. He has also written satirical mystery stories.

Paul Fane, novel by N.P.Willis (q.v.).

Paul Revere's Ride, narrative poem by Longfellow (q.v.), published in 1861 and included as the landlord's tale in *The Tales of a Wayside Inn* (q.v.,1863). In galloping anapestic tetrameter, this literary ballad tells of 'the midnight ride of Paul Revere' from Charlestown to Lexington and Concord, to warn the inhabitants of the approach of British troops at the outbreak of the Revolutionary War. Although apparently based on the account of Revere, the poem, which has crystallized the legend in the American mind, is notoriously inaccurate, since Revere never waited for signals from lanterns, and it was 'a young Dr.Prescott' who carried the news to Concord, while Revere went to Lexington.

PAULDING, HIRAM (1797–1878), naval officer, distinguished himself in the Battle of Lake Champlain, the Tripolitan War, and the arrest of William Walker (1857), which delighted the Nicaraguans but caused Buchanan to relieve Paulding of his command. His *Journal of a Cruise of the United States Schooner Dolphin* (1831) tells of his pursuit of mutineers in the Pacific, and *Bolivar in His Camp* (1834) describes his 1500-mile horseback trip in the Andes (1824), carrying dispatches from Admiral Hull to Bolivar.

PAULDING, JAMES KIRKE (1778–1860), born in New York state, was reared at Tarrytown, where he became intimate with Washington Irving, whose brother William had married Paulding's sister. He was a member of their informal literary group, the 'Nine Worthies,' and with them collaborated on *Salmagundi* (q.v.,1807–8) of which he published a second series alone (1819–20). Stimulated by this venture and Irving's *History of New York,* Paulding wrote *The Diverting History of John Bull and Brother Jonathan* (1812), a comic account of the settlement, growth, and revolt of the American colonies. His flair for satire and opposition to the romanticism of Scott led him to write *The Lay of the Scottish Fiddle* (1813), while he defended his own conception of a hero as an oppressed individual who finds freedom on the frontier in the long poem, *The Backwoodsman* (1818). His admiration for homespun American qualities and dislike of Tory England led him to answer British critics in a series of books employing both realistic descriptions of the U.S. and burlesque of the English. *The United States and England* (1815) is a wholly serious work; *Letters from the South* (2 vols.,1817) is an agrarian, Jeffersonian defense of the

South; and *A Sketch of Old England, by a New England Man* (2 vols.,1822) and *John Bull in America; or, the New Munchausen* (1825) are further contributions to this cause. These books, besides making him famous, brought him an appointment to the Board of Navy Commissioners (1815–23). Having completed his work on the Anglo-American controversy, he wrote a series of realistic tales, some of which were published in *The Tales of the Good Woman* (1829) and *The Book of St.Nicholas* (1836), which continue to show his dislike of the English, attacking their current literary styles, as represented in Byron and Scott. His novels also continue this realism and satire of false romanticism, in the treatment of historical subjects. *Koningsmarke* (q.v.,1823) is concerned with the early Swedish settlement on the Delaware; *The Dutchman's Fireside* (q.v., 1831) deals with life in upper New York during the French and Indian War; *Westward Ho!* (1832) tells of a Virginia family pioneering in Kentucky; *The Old Continental; or, The Price of Liberty* (1846) is a realistic account of lower class New Yorkers during the Revolution; and *The Puritan and His Daughter* (q.v.,1849) deals with 17th-century life in Virginia and New England, condemning the mutual intolerance of Puritans and Cavaliers. Other works included: *The Merry Tales of the Three Wise Men of Gotham* (1826), satirical fiction; *The Lion of the West* (q.v., 1830), a comedy about a backwoodsman in New York; *A Life of Washington* (1835); *Slavery in the United States* (1836); and *The Bucktails; or, Americans in England* (1847), a satirical play. Paulding's writings showed, despite his affiliation with the Knickerbocker Group, that he was a consistent Jeffersonian in his social creed and that he attempted to deal with all phases of American life. His constant interest in naval affairs culminated in his appointment as Van Buren's secretary of the navy (1838–41), which capped his political career. After 1849 he retired to his estate at Hyde Park and ceased to write.

Paumanok, Indian name of Long Island, New York, which is separated from Manhattan by the East River and runs almost parallel to the shore of Connecticut. The aboriginal name is frequently used in the works of Whitman, who was born on the island.

Pau-Puk-Keewis, character in *Hiawatha* (q.v.).

Pawnee (or PANI) **Indians,** four bison-hunting Plains tribes, formerly living in Nebraska and Kansas, on the Platte and Republican Rivers, whose descendants reside in Oklahoma. They had highly developed tribal and ceremonial systems and a rich mythology. Their folk tales were collected by Grinnell (1893) and a scholarly *Mythology* was published by G.A.Dorsey (1906). The Pawnee figure in Irving's *Tour on the Prairie*, Cooper's *The Prairie*, and Custis's *The Pawnee Chief*.

PAXSON, FREDERIC LOGAN (1877–), professor of American history at the University of California, is the author of the *History of the American Frontier*, 1763–1893 (Pulitzer Prize, 1924), and other works, which establish him as one of the important students of Western history.

PAXTON, PHILIP, pseudonym of S.A. Hammett (q.v.).

PAYNE, JOHN HOWARD (1791–1852), born in New York City, showed a precocious interest in the drama, publishing the *Thespian Mirror* (1805–6), a theatrical review that attracted the attention of New York literary and theatrical figures, who encouraged him in the writing of *Julia, or The Wanderer* (1806), a melodrama, the publication of another paper, *The Pastime* (1807–8), and his debut as an actor. After the production of *Lovers' Vows* (1809), adapted from Kotzebue, and further acting, a reaction set in against the tremendous acclaim that had greeted him as a prodigy. Friends then collected a fund to send him to England to re-establish his fame and fortune. Although received fairly well upon his arrival (1813), he was forced to turn to theatrical hack work. From French melodramas he adapted *The Maid and the Magpie* (1815) and *Accusation* (1816), wrote various musical pieces, served as a press agent, read manuscripts, and performed other drudgeries, from which he was rescued by Kean's successful production of his blank-verse tragedy, *Brutus: or the Fall of Tarquin* (q.v.,1818). After this triumph, he leased Sadler's Wells Theatre to produce his own melodramas, but only incurred debts that brought him to prison, from which he was released upon the profitable production of *Thérèse, the Orphan of Geneva* (1821), adapted from a French melodrama. From

Paris, whence he had fled to escape duns, he sent several plays, which included *Adeline, the Victim of Seduction* (1822); *Ali Pacha, or the Signet Ring* (1823); and *Clari; or, The Maid of Milan* (q.v.,1823), set as an opera by Sir Henry Bishop and remembered for the heroine's song, 'Home, Sweet Home.' After his return to London, he wrote plays with his friend Irving, seven of which were produced, and two of which, *Charles the Second* (q.v.,1824) and *Richelieu* (q.v.,1826), were particularly popular. Although he continued to be friendly with Irving, both were lovers of Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley. Despite other theatrical successes, and the publication of a weekly journal, the *Opera Glass* (1826–7), Payne was as poor as ever when friends arranged for his passage back to America, where he arrived (1832), to be honored as an eminent writer. Searching for material for a history of the Cherokee Indians, he collected 14 volumes of notes, whose only use was in two newspaper articles on the wrongs against the Indians and his own difficulties in acquiring material. His literary fame was rewarded by appointment as American consul at Tunis (1842–5,1851–2). He died in Tunis, still wracked by debts and captivated by grandiose literary and dramatic schemes.

PEABODY, Andrew Preston (1811–93), Unitarian clergyman of Massachusetts, who graduated from Harvard at the precocious age of 15 and returned there from his pulpit in New Hampshire (1860) to become professor of Christian morals. He was extremely conservative in thought, and yet his importance at Harvard lay in his personal influence, rather than in the 190 works he wrote. He was editor of *The North American Review* (1853–63), to which he contributed some 1,600 pages of text.

PEABODY, Elizabeth Palmer (1804–94), sister-in-law of Hawthorne and Horace Mann, was like them interested in social reform and education. Her Boston home was the scene of the famous conversational classes of Margaret Fuller (1839–44), and her bookshop was a favorite meeting-place of the Transcendental Club. She opened the first kindergarten (1860) in the U.S., and her association with Alcott in his Temple School is described in *Record of a School* (1835). *A Last Evening with Allston* (1886) contains further reminiscences of her life, and reprints some of her essays from *The Dial*. She is said to be the prototype of Miss Birdseye in *The Bostonians*.

PEABODY, Josephine Preston (1874–1922), born in New York, was educated at Radcliffe (1894–6), where, under the influence of William Vaughn Moody, she turned from the light lyric poetry of *The Wayfarers* (1898) to poetic drama. Her plays include *Fortune and Men's Eyes* (1900), a one-act play about Shakespeare; *Marlowe* (1901), a five-act tragedy; *The Wings* (1905), a one-act play set in 8th-century Northumbria; *The Piper* (1910), a five-act drama that won the Stratford-on-Avon prize competition, using the Pied Piper theme to depict the struggle between Christianity and the power of the devil; *The Wolf of Gubbio* (1913), a drama about St.Francis, like its predecessor concerned with the conflict between love and greed; and *Portrait of Mrs.W.* (1922), a prose play dealing with the love of Mary Wollstonecraft and William Godwin. *The Singing Leaves* (1903), *Pan, a Choric Idyl* (1904), and *Harvest Moon* (1916) are collections of lyrics. Her plays and poems were collected in 1927.

Peace Democrats, see *Copperheads*.

PEALE, Charles Willson (1741–1827), born in Maryland, began his study of painting in Boston (1765) under Copley and continued in London under Benjamin West (1766–9). In 1772 he painted a full-length portrait of Washington in the uniform of a Virginia colonel. This was followed by many later likenesses, whose honesty, crude coloring, and stiff posing contrast interestingly with the refined, elegant portraits by Gilbert Stuart. After moving to Philadelphia (1776), he served in the Continental Army, some of whose officers were the subjects of further portraits. After 1779 he painted less, and turned his attention to such diverse matters as dentistry, state government, taxidermy, a museum of natural history, and the founding of the Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts. His self-portrait, *The Artist in His Museum* (1824), while weak in background, shows greater fluency and ability to portray character than his early works. Between Copley's departure for London (1774) and the return of Stuart (1793), Peale was recognized as the leading American portrait painter. His brother, James Peale (1749–1831), was a successful painter of miniatures and oils.

REMBRANDT PEALE (1778–1860), his son, was one of the last pupils of Benjamin West and, a student in France, came under the influence of the classicist David. Returning to the U.S. (1810), he devoted himself to portraiture and large allegorical canvases, became an original member of the National Academy of Design and in 1825 succeeded Trumbull as president of the American Academy of Fine Arts. His writings include *Notes on Italy* (1831), based on his residence abroad (1828–30), and *Portfolio of an Artist* (1837), which contained some of his poetry. Of the 11 children of C.W.Peale, all named for famous painters, two besides Rembrandt became prominent artists: Raphaelle (1774–1825), known for his portraits and still lifes; and Titian (1800–1885), an animal painter.

Pearl, character in *The Scarlet Letter* (q.v.).

Pearl of Orr's Island, The, novel by Mrs.Stowe (q.v.) published in 1862.

On Orr's Island, a fishing community on the Maine coast, the orphan Mara Lincoln is reared by her grandparents, Zephaniah and Mary Pennel, who consider her a 'pearl of great price.' They also adopt a Spanish boy, Moses, who is washed ashore during a shipwreck. The children grow up together in this typical provincial New England background, and among the family friends are the stern spinster, Aunt Roxy Toothacre, and the whimsical retired sea-captain who is the father of Mara's friend, Sally Kittridge. Mara adores Moses with all the intensity of her delicate, idealistic nature, but he does not realize that he loves her until his return from a voyage to China. Then he is foolishly jealous of the attentions paid her by 'a Mr.Adams of Boston,' and in retaliation woos Sally. Although capricious and a flirt, Sally is true to her friend and shows Moses that his real love is for Mara. After a brief period of happy understanding with Moses, Mara declines in health and finally dies of tuberculosis. The young man returns to his life at sea, but after four years settles on Orr's Island and marries Sally.

Pearl-Feather, character in *Hiawatha* (q.v.).

PEARSON, EDMUND [Lester] (1880–1937), New York librarian, bibliophile, and author of books and essays about murders and minor eccentricities of the past. His works include: *Books in Black or Red* (1923), *Studies in Murder* (1924), *Queer Books* (1928), and *Dime Novels* (1929).

Pearson's (1899–1925), monthly magazine devoted to literature, politics, and the arts, was founded as a New York affiliate of the London periodical of this name, some part of whose contents it reprinted. From 1916 to 1923 it was edited by Frank Harris, with a policy of being 'frankly opposed to the mad individualism we Americans name Liberty' and a 'forum of sincere opinion for the Truth and nothing but the Truth.' Much of the material was written by the editor, and other contributors included Upton Sinclair, La Follette, Debs, and such foreign authors as Shaw and Maxim Gorki.

PEARY, ROBERT EDWIN (1856–1920), Arctic explorer, described his seven early polar expeditions (1886–1906) in *Northward over the 'Great Ice'* (2 vols.,1898) and *Nearest the Pole* (1907). On a final polar expedition, he claimed to have reached the North Pole (April 6, 1909), only to learn on his return of the prior claim of Dr.Frederick Cook (q.v.). A widespread controversy followed over the question whether Peary ever reached the Pole, but the U.S. Congress finally recognized his achievement. His account of the journey is contained in *The North Pole* (1910).

PEATTIE, DONALD CULROSS (1898–), graduated from Harvard (1922) and served with the Department of Agriculture, after which he began the writing of books which vary from scholarly scientific studies of botany to popular nature studies. The best known in the latter category are: *Singing in the Wilderness: A Salute to John James Audubon* (1935); *Almanac for Moderns* (1935), the daily record of a sensitive mind in its reactions to the wonders of nature; *Green Laurels: The Lives and Achievements of the Great Naturalists* (1936); *A Book of Hours* (1937), 24 essays forming a 'pendant' to *Almanac for Moderns; A Prairie Grove* (1938), tracing the natural and social history of an acre of American soil; and *Flowering Earth* (1939). In addition to travel books and juvenile books, he has written four novels: *Up Country* (1928), with his wife; *Port of Call* (1932); *Sons of the Martian* (1932); and *The Bright Lex-*

icon (1934). *The Road of a Naturalist* (1941) is his autobiography.

PECK, GEORGE WILBUR (1840–1916), Wisconsin journalist and humorist, wrote comic articles in Irish dialect on political events, which were published as *Adventures of One Terence McGrant* (1871). In 1874 he founded his own paper, the *Sun*, in which he published humorous articles concerning the practical jokes played by a mischievous boy on his father. These were collected in *Peck's Bad Boy and His Pa* (1883) and several subsequent volumes. *How Private Geo.W.Peck Put Down the Rebellion* (1887) contains humorous sketches of his Civil War experiences. Peck's popular reputation swept him into politics as mayor of Milwaukee (1890) and governor of Wisconsin (1890–94).

PECK, HARRY THURSTON (1856–1914), professor of Latin at Columbia (1882–1910), was an author and editor of various scholarly works. He edited *The Bookman* (1895–1902), and wrote a biography of Prescott (1905) and a history from Cleveland to McKinley, *Twenty Years of the Republic* (1906). He was considered an outstanding critic until he was ostracized following a breach of promise suit (1910), which caused his collapse and suicide.

PECK, JOHN MASON (1789–1858), Baptist preacher of New York, after 1817 founded and administered missions and schools in Illinois, Indiana, and Missouri. He founded newspapers, and wrote a *Guide for Emigrants* (1831), *Life of Daniel Boone* (1847), and *Father Clark; or, the Pioneer Preacher* (1855), considered to be authoritative works on the West.

Peck's Bad Boy and His Pa, humorous sketches by George W. Peck (q.v.).

Pecos Bill, giant folk hero of Southwestern tales, whose cowboy exploits resemble those of Paul Bunyan and Tony Beaver in the logging camps.

Peder Victorious, novel by Rölvaag (q.v.), published in Norway (1923) and in translation in the U.S. (1929), the second volume of a trilogy that includes *Giants in the Earth* and *Their Father's God* (qq.v.).

Peder Victorious Holm grows up as the favorite of his widowed mother, Beret, who is aided in the work of their Dakota farm by the older sons, Ole and Store-Hans, and the daughter Anna Marie. Beret's quiet efficiency and perseverance carry them through difficult years to comparative prosperity, but her conservative Old World point of view alienates the children. Peder first attends the American school, where his chum is Charley Doheny, mischief-loving son of an Irish family, but a trivial incident causes Beret to transfer him to a Norwegian-language school. A schism divides the local church, but Beret remains in the orthodox congregation, and the new minister, Gabrielsen, settles on Peder as his special choice for the ministry. From his confirmation, however, Peder grows increasingly rebellious. Sörine, Hans Olsa's widow, marries Tambur-Ola, with whom Beret had fallen in love, and Beret is lonelier than ever when Ole and Store-Hans marry and take other farms. Peder resents both his mother's piety and the minister's ambition for him, and seeks excitement away from home. After youthful romances with Miriam, daughter of the dissenting minister Nils Nilsen, and with Else, Gabrielsen's daughter, he falls deeply in love with Charley's sister Susie, determines to become a farmer rather than enter a seminary, and is surprised by Beret's acceptance of his unorthodox marriage.

Peg o' My Heart, play by John Hartley Manners (q.v.).

PEGLER, WESTBROOK (1894–), born in Minneapolis and reared in Chicago, became a European correspondent for the United Press (1916–18), and after serving in the navy (1918–19) became the United Press sports editor (1919–25) and held a similar position with the *Chicago Tribune* (1925–33). In 1933 he inaugurated his widely syndicated column 'Fair Enough,' in which he cynically surveys contemporary events. From these columns he has collected *'Taint Right* (1936) and *The Dissenting Opinions of Mister Westbrook Pegler* (1938). He won the 1941 Pulitzer Prize for his columns exposing corruption in certain labor unions.

PEIRCE, CHARLES SANDERS (1839–1914), son of Benjamin Peirce (1809–80), Harvard professor of astronomy and mathematics, and eminent mathematician of his time, was himself a physicist, logician, and philosopher. A member of the U.S.Coast Survey, he made philosophy his avocation, and, except for rare academic appointments, pursued his work singlehanded. He was a founder of the school of pragmatism, but, since his principles were more in accord with the sepa-

rately developed idealism of Josiah Royce than with those popularized by his friend William James, he coined for his beliefs the term 'pragmaticism,' which he said was 'ugly enough to be safe from kidnappers.' He believed in the dependence of logic upon ethics, opposed a mechanical philosophy, defended the reality of absolute chance and the principle of continuity, and developed a theory of an evolutionary universe. His extreme precision, highly technical vocabulary, and lack of full explanation for those who were not on his philosophic plane, made him a philosopher's philosopher rather than a teacher, and publishers were unwilling to print his works. From his mass of manuscript were collected *Chance, Love, and Logic* (1923) and a ten-volume selection of *Papers* (1931–4).

Pelayo, romance by Simms (q.v.).

Pencillings by the Way, travel sketches by N.P.Willis (q.v.).

PENHALLOW, Samuel (1665–1726), emigrated from England to New Hampshire (1686), where he became prominent in public affairs. He wrote a *History of the Wars of New-England with the Eastern Indians* (1726), a vivid, realistic account of Indian assaults, containing frequent parallels between the heroism of Indian fighters and the deeds of Greek and Roman warriors.

Peninsular Campaign, during the Civil War, was an attempt by McClellan to capture the Confederate capital, Richmond, by way of the peninsula between the York and James Rivers. He concentrated his forces at Fort Monroe (April 2, 1862), but allowed the Confederates to evacuate Yorktown, and followed the retreating troops to Williamsburg, where an indecisive battle was fought. The Union forces were more successful in the Battle of Fair Oaks (q.v.), and the final phase of the campaign occurred in the Seven Days' Battles (q.v.), in which the Confederates suffered heavy losses. Lee outmaneuvered McClellan, however, and Richmond remained uncaptured.

Penitentes, religious order in New Mexico, distinguished by the practice of self-scourging and vicarious tribal penance through an annual passion play, including the crucifixion of one of the members during Lent. It seems to have originated with the conquistadors and Franciscan friars of the 16th century, although similar penitential customs had existed among the New Mexican Indians. The Penitentes are all Catholics, although the Church opposes their practices.

PENN, William (1644–1718), English Quaker, in 1668 published a tract attacking the doctrine of the Trinity, *The Sandy Foundation Shaken*, for which he was imprisoned in the Tower, where he wrote *No Cross, No Crown* (1669), a defense of his faith, and another pamphlet in his own defense. After another term in prison for defying the Conventicle Act, he continued to work for his faith, through books and preaching, both in England and on the Continent. He established American colonies where Quakers (q.v.) might be free from persecution, and in 1681 secured the grant of Pennsylvania, named in honor of his father by King James. In America (1682–4), he personally organized the colony, framed its liberal government guaranteeing fundamental democratic liberties, and made equitable treaties with the Indians. After the accession of William and Mary (1688), he continued on friendly terms with James, and being accused of treason temporarily lost his colony (1692–4). During this troublous time, he wrote his maxims of faith and life, *Some Fruits of Solitude* (1693), and *Essay towards the Present and Future Peace of Europe* (1693), a plan for a general European confederation for arbitration of disputes. A similar idea was applied to a plan (1697) for the union of all the American colonies. After Pennsylvania was returned to him, he revisited it (1699) and revised its charter (1701) towards further democracy. In the same year, he left it for the last time, to oppose an English plan for annexation of all proprietary colonies to the crown. He was temporarily imprisoned for debt when the colony's affairs were mismanaged by untrustworthy deputies; their administration was assumed by his wife in 1712, when he lost his memory, and was continued by his sons after her death in 1727.

PENNELL, Joseph (1857–1926), born in Pennsylvania, first achieved fame as the illustrator of Cable's *The Creoles of Louisiana* (1884) and further established himself through his illustrations for Howells's *Tuscan Cities* (1885). In 1884 he married Elizabeth Robbins (1855–1936), a niece of C.G.Leland. She had written

the texts for some of his drawings, and together they produced *A Canterbury Pilgrimage* (1885). After taking up residence in England (1884), they became intimate with such authors and artists as Henry James, Aubrey Beardsley, and Shaw. Under the influence of Whistler, Pennell turned first to etching and later to lithography, and (*c.*1909–12) created a series, 'The Wonder of Work,' which depicted such industrial subjects as the factories at Birmingham and Sheffield, and the construction of the Panama Canal. Although he also made lithographs of the Alhambra and Greek temples, he continued his industrial subjects with portrayals of British, French, and American plants engaged in war work. In the last year of the war, he returned to the U.S., where he became a teacher, art critic, and author. With his wife he wrote *The Life of James McNeill Whistler* (1908) and edited *The Whistler Journal* (1921). In 1929 Mrs. Pennell published her husband's *Life and Letters*.

Pennsylvania Chronicle (1767–73), Philadelphia newspaper founded to oppose the proprietary party in the colony. It attempted to be impartial, however, and is remembered for publishing John Dickinson's *Letters from a Farmer in Pennsylvania* (q.v.,1767–8).

Pennsylvania Dutch, popular misnomer for the German-American people of Pennsylvania, or for their language, which was originally a High German idiom, but in modern times is a corrupt German and English dialect. The region was widely colonized by German immigrant groups, beginning in 1683 with the settlement of the Mennonites and others, who migrated for religious, political, and economic reasons, the greatest numbers coming during the 18th and 19th centuries. Owing to their persistent segregation in separate settlements, each with its own school and church, the Pennsylvania German communities retained their original language and customs until a recent date. They had many authors of religious and theological works in German, and their modern dialect appears in the humorous writings of C.G.Leland and C.F.Adams. Elsie Singmaster's novels are concerned with these people, as is Thames Williamson's *D is for Dutch*.

Pennsylvania Farmer, pseudonym of John Dickinson (q.v.).

Pennsylvania Freeman, see *Lundy*.

Pennsylvania Gazette, *The* (1728–1815), was founded at Philadelphia by Samuel Keimer as *The Universal Instructor . . . and Pennsylvania Gazette,* when he heard that his rival, Franklin, was planning a similar paper. To snipe at Keimer, Franklin joined forces with *The American Weekly Mercury,* and so successfully drew attention from Keimer's paper that it was sold to Franklin (Oct. 2, 1729), who gave it the shorter title and continued to manage it until 1766. Besides making it a successful news organ, he created a number of imaginary characters with whom he engaged in dispute, wrote many essays on matters of contemporary interest, and introduced weather reports into American journalism. At the time of the Albany Congress (1754), he published and probably drew what appears to be the first American cartoon, a picture of a snake in eight parts, representing the principal colonies, with the caption 'Join or die.' The paper was continued with various changes of editorship by David Hall, Franklin's partner after 1748, and by Hall's descendants. During 1776 the *Gazette* carried the 'Cato' letters of William Smith, attacking *Common Sense*, to which Paine replied in the *Pennsylvania Packet*.

Pennsylvania Journal, see *Bradford, William* (1722–91).

Pennsylvania Magazine (Jan. 1775–July 1776), published monthly by Robert Aitken. Thomas Paine was nominally the editor (Feb. 1775–May 1776) and contributed many articles. The magazine printed war reports, letters from Washington and other leaders, a publication of the Declaration of Independence, scientific contributions by Benjamin Rush and others, and literary contributions by Francis Hopkinson, John Witherspoon, and William Smith.

Pennsylvania Packet or General Advertiser (1771–1839), Philadelphia newspaper, founded by John Dunlop. During 1776, Paine replied in its columns, under the signature Forester, to the attacks of William Smith in the *Pennsylvania Gazette*. Formerly a tri-weekly, in 1784 the paper became a daily. It passed into the hands of Dunlop's partners (1795) and was called *Claypoole's American Daily Advertiser*. It was this paper that first

published Washington's 'Farewell Address.' In 1800 it was sold to Zachariah Poulson (1761–1844), who gave it his name, and in 1839 it was absorbed by the *Philadelphia North American*, which was published until 1925.

Pennsylvania, UNIVERSITY OF, originated in an association of 24 Philadelphia citizens, which established an Academy, formally opened in 1751. Franklin, who had published *Proposals Relating to the Education of Youth in Pensilvania* (1749), was the first president of the Academy's trustees. In 1753 a charter was granted by the Penns for the Academy and Charitable School in the Province of Pennsylvania, which in turn was converted into the College and Academy of Philadelphia (1755). William Smith (q.v.) was the first provost. The General Assembly voided the charter (1779), contending that the institution had violated the state constitution's guarantee of equal privileges for all religious denominations, and a new corporation for the University of Pennsylvania was created. The former charter was restored (1789) and two years later the old college was amalgamated with the newly founded university, and called the University of Pennsylvania. Among the graduates have been: Francis Hopkinson (1757), Jacob Duché (1757), Isaac Hunt (1763), Nathaniel Evans (M.A.,1765), R.M.Bird (M.D.,1827), Crawford Long (M.D.,1839), T.D.English (M.D.,1839), E.K.Kane (M.D.,1842), S.W.Mitchell (1848), G.W.Bagby (1849), C.D.Warner (LL.B.,1858), A.S.W.Rosenbach (1898), and W.C.Williams (M.D., 1906).

Penny, HOWAT, character in *The Three Black Pennys* (q.v.).

Penrod, novel by Tarkington (q.v.) published in 1914. *Penrod and Sam* (1916) and *Penrod Jashber* (1929) are sequels.

This humorous narrative tells of the typical adventures of a 12-year-old American boy, Penrod Schofield, reared according to middle-class standards in a small Midwestern city. With his mongrel dog, Duke, and such intimates of his own age as Sam Williams and the Negro brothers Herman and Verman, Penrod is involved in characteristic frays and scrapes, and exhibits a healthy attitude toward the tyranny of parents and teachers, sometimes tolerating them but generally engaging in active warfare and subterfuge. He writes a fearsome dime novel about 'Harold Ramorez, the Roadagent'; reluctantly enacts 'the Child Sir Lancelot' in a school pageant; submits to dancing lessons, and falls under the spell of little Marjorie Jones; organizes a circus with Herman and Verman as principal performers; persecutes his sister's suitor, receiving a dollar by way of blackmail, then buying an incredible supply of sweets that makes him violently ill; is temporarily influenced by the bully, Rupe Collins; becomes comically disfigured in the 'Great Tar Fight'; and is consistently misunderstood by his elders until he meets his great-aunt, Mrs.Sarah Crim, who pronounces the realistic judgment, '"He's had to repeat the history of the race and go through all the stages from the primordial to barbarism. You don't expect boys to be civilized, do you?"'

People, Yes, The, free verse poem by Sandburg (q.v.) published in 1936.

The authentic American rhythms and idioms of the verse embody native legends, folk tales, proverbs, and slang, and employ the daily speech of the people to show their many-sided observations and experiences, their amusements and sufferings, and the values inherent in their lives. Capitalism's tyranny and social injustices are indicated, and a hope for revolution appears in many passages:

> On the horizon a cloud no larger than a man's hand rolls larger and darker when masses of people begin saying, 'Any kind of death is better than this kind of life.'

In substance, the poem is an affirmation of faith in the enduring though blundering progress of the common American people toward justice and a free society:

> They will be tricked and sold and again sold
> And go back to the nourishing earth for rootholds. . .

People's Lawyer, The, play by Joseph S. Jones (q.v.).

People's Party, see *Populist Party.*

PEPPERELL, SIR WILLIAM (1696–1759), Maine merchant, was appointed chief justice of the Massachusetts general court (1730) and head of the army that captured the French garrison at Louisburg (1745). For this achievement he was rewarded by being made a baronet (1746), joint governor of Cape Breton (1746), and *de facto* governor of Massachusetts (1756).

The *Journal* of his Louisburg expedition was published in 1911.

Pequod, whaling ship which is the scene of *Moby-Dick* (q.v.).

Pequot Indians, Algonquian tribe originally united with the Mohegans (q.v.), which moved south to the Connecticut Valley and there dominated neighboring tribes. The warlike spirit of the Pequots under Sassacus led to one of the most serious of the New England Indian wars (1637), after which members of the tribe were dispersed among other groups. The best account of the Pequot War is that of the English commander, John Mason, in his *Brief History of the Pequot War*, edited by Thomas Prince (1736). Another officer, John Underhill, described the war in his *Newes from America* (1638), as did the Reverend Philip Vincent in *A True Relation of the Late Battell Fought in New England* (1638).

Per Hansa, hero of *Giants in the Earth* (q.v.).

PERCH, PHILEMON, pseudonym of R.M. Johnston (q.v.).

PERCIVAL, JAMES GATES (1795–1856), born in Connecticut, graduated from Yale (1815), studied for his M.D. at the University of Pennsylvania and Yale, had a brief career as a doctor, was a journalist in South Carolina, Connecticut, and New York, and taught chemistry at West Point. He chiefly fancied himself as a romantic poet, and for a time shared this conviction with others, enjoying a great vogue until the ascendancy of Bryant. Percival's *Poems* (1821) included the long Spenserian 'Prometheus,' accounted by his compatriots the equal of *Childe Harold*; *Clio* (3 vols.,1822–7) consisted of dream-haunted soliloquies; and *The Dream of a Day* (1843), with more prosaic subjects, was noted for its metrical experimentation. Although he was a man of unquestionable intellect, he was a lifelong eccentric and paranoiac, and for some time resided by his own choice in the New Haven State Hospital. He shuttled pathetically between various professions, but failed to attain greatness in any of them. Besides being an able linguist and philologist, he served as state geologist of Connecticut (1835–42) and Wisconsin (1854–6), gathering much scientific information and formulating at least one important geological law.

PERCY, FLORENCE, pseudonym of Elizabeth Akers (q.v.).

PERCY, GEORGE (1580–*c.*1632), English colonist in Virginia (1607–12), became deputy governor upon the recall of John Smith (1607–10), and again during the absence of Gates (1611–12). His first administration was known as 'the starving time,' when the 500 settlers dwindled to threescore, partly because of maladministration and dissension. His 'Discourse of the Plantation of the Southern Colony in Virginia,' an account of his voyage and the early settlement, was published by Purchas. *A True Relation of the Proceedings . . . in Virginia . . .*, defending his administration against the attack of a writer, presumably John Smith, was written in 1622, and first completely printed in 1922.

Père Beret, character in *Alice of Old Vincennes* (q.v.).

Perennial Bachelor, The, novel by Anne Parrish (q.v.).

Perfectionism, radical religious doctrine, assuming the immediate and total cessation of sin, advanced by J.H.Noyes (q.v.), was the leading principle of his Oneida Community (q.v.). Perfectionism was a manifestation of the mid-19th century enthusiasm for liberal social and religious beliefs that particularly affected New England, and was allied in temperament to the spirit that created Millerism, Shaker communities, Come-outers, and even Transcendentalism. Noyes's religious Utopianism held that a church on earth was rising to meet the approaching kingdom in heaven, and that the element of connection was direct communion with God, which leads to perfect holiness or complete salvation from sin.

PERKINS, ELI, pseudonym of M.DeL. Landon (q.v.).

PERKINS, FREDERICK BEECHER (1828–99), nephew of H.W.Beecher and brother-in-law of E.E.Hale, was a journalist and librarian in his native Connecticut, Massachusetts, and California. In addition to bibliographical works, he wrote a biography of Dickens (1870); *Scrope; or, The Lost Library* (1874), a novel; and *Devil Puzzlers and Other Studies* (1877), short stories.

PERKINS, LUCY FITCH (1865–1937), author of such books for children as *The*

Dutch Twins (1911), *The Japanese Twins* (1912), and *The French Twins* (1918), intended to create an understanding of foreign nations and of their contribution to American culture.

PERLEY, pseudonym of B.P.Poore (q.v.).

PERROT, Nicolas (1644–*c.*1718), born in France, emigrated as a youth to Canada, where he became a fur trader and explorer. In 1670 he was sent by Frontenac to the West, where he used his knowledge of Indian languages to further trade with the Sioux and to persuade other Indians to suppress the hostile Iroquois. He formally claimed possession of the region of the Upper Mississippi for New France (1689). His *Mémoire* on the manners, customs, and religion of the Indians was published in 1864 and translated in 1911.

PERRY, Bliss (1860–), editor of the *Atlantic Monthly* (1899–1909), was a professor of English at Williams, Princeton, and finally Harvard (1907–30). He has edited many works on English and American literature and is the author of several novels and informal essays; biographies of Whitman and Whittier; studies of *The American Mind* (1912) and *The American Spirit in Literature* (1918); and his autobiography, *And Gladly Teach* (1935).

PERRY, Oliver Hazard (1785–1819), born in Rhode Island, entered the navy in 1799, and served in the Tripolitan War. At the outbreak of the War of 1812, he built and commanded a fleet of ten ships, headed by the *Lawrence*, and became a national hero following his defeat of the British on Lake Erie (q.v.,Sept. 10, 1813). In 1819 he was sent on a diplomatic mission to Venezuela and Argentina, where he contracted yellow fever. He died in Trinidad.

Matthew Calbraith Perry (1794–1858), his brother, was also a naval officer, and had a distinguished career before 1852, when he was commissioned by Fillmore to negotiate a treaty with Japan, a country then closed to all intercourse with the Occident. The following year he arrived at Yedo, impressed the Japanese by his armed strength, and delivered the President's request. After a trip to China, he returned to Yokohama (1854) to negotiate a treaty opening Japan to Western trade and providing for a U.S. consul in Japan. He wrote a *Narrative of the Expedition of an American Squadron to the China Seas and Japan* (3 vols.,1856).

PERRY, Ralph Barton (1876–), professor of philosophy at Harvard, a follower of William James. His books include: *The Moral Economy* (1909); *The New Realism* (1912); *The Present Conflict of Ideals* (1918); *The Thought and Character of William James* (2 vols.,1935; Pulitzer Prize, 1936), and *Shall Not Perish from the Earth* (1940), a brief analysis of American democracy.

PERRY, Thomas Sergeant (1845–1928), born in Rhode Island, after graduation from Harvard (1866) went with William James to study in Germany, returning to become a tutor in French and German at Harvard (1868–72), member of *The North American Review* staff (1872–7), and a member of the department of English at Harvard (1877–82). In his critical writings for various magazines, including *The Nation* and the *Atlantic Monthly*, he showed his interest in realism and his knowledge of contemporary foreign literature, and through his brilliant conversations with his friends Howells and Henry James is said to have introduced them to Turgenev and influenced their theories on the novel. Perry was a great student of languages and in addition to translating from foreign literature he became acquainted with many foreign authors during his travels, and on one journey served as professor of English at the University of Keiogijiku in Japan (1898–1901). His writings include: *The Life and Letters of Francis Lieber* (1882), *English Literature of the Eighteenth Century* (1883), *From Opitz to Lessing* (1885), *The Evolution of a Snob* (1887), *History of Greek Literature* (1890), and *John Fiske* (1906). Perry's *Letters* were edited by his friend E.A.Robinson in 1929.

PERSHING, John J[oseph] (1860–), Missouri-born army officer, graduated from West Point (1886) and served in Indian campaigns, in the Spanish-American War, and in the Philippines, where he was successful in suppressing Moro uprisings, and became a military governor. Stationed on the Mexican border, he led a punitive expedition against Villa (q.v.,1916), and the following year became commander-in-chief of the American Expeditionary Force (q.v.) in Europe during the First World War. His book, *My Experiences in the*

World War (1931), won the 1932 Pulitzer Prize.

Personæ, poems by Ezra Pound (q.v.).

Personal Recollections of Joan of Arc, see *Joan of Arc*.

PETER (or PETERS), HUGH (1598–1660), English Puritan clergyman, was in Massachusetts (1636–41), where he succeeded Roger Williams as pastor of the Salem church, was prominent in colonial affairs, and helped found Harvard College. He returned to England as an agent of Massachusetts Bay (1641), and there, with Thomas Weld, edited and probably wrote in part *New England's First Fruits* (q.v.,1643). An important figure in Cromwell's revolution, he was later executed.

PETER PARLEY, pseudonym of S.G.Goodrich (q.v.) and his staff.

Peter Pilgrim; *or a Rambler's Recollections*, travel sketches by R.M.Bird (q.v.).

PETER PORCUPINE, pseudonym of William Cobbett (q.v.).

Peter Rugg, story by William Austin (q.v.).

Peter Stirling, see *Honorable Peter Stirling, The*.

PETERKIN, JULIA [MOOD] (1880–), novelist of South Carolina, known for her sympathetic depiction of the Gullah Negroes (q.v.), whom she understood through long association with them as the wife of a plantation manager. The poignant characterizations of the daily lives and folklore of these tragic, isolated laborers are presented in the novels, *Black April* (q.v.,1927), *Scarlet Sister Mary* (q.v.,1928; Pulitzer Prize, 1929), and *Bright Skin* (1932); a collection of sketches, *Green Thursday* (1924); and a descriptive narrative accompanying a book of photographs, *Roll, Jordan, Roll* (1933).

Peterkin Papers, The, stories for children by Lucretia Hale (q.v.).

PETERS, SAMUEL ANDREW (1735–1826), Connecticut Loyalist and Anglican clergyman, in 1781 published his derogatory *General History of Connecticut, by a Gentleman of the Province*, famous for its account of colonial blue laws. His strong hatred for the republicanism and nonconformity of his native land, whence he fled to England just before the Revolution, led him to make misrepresentations about the stringency of blue laws that have been innocently copied by later historians. In 1805 he returned to the U.S. and purchased land claims of Jonathan Carver, which Congress in 1826 disallowed. He also wrote *A History of the Reverend Hugh Peters* (1807), falsely claiming that Hugh Peter was his great-grand-uncle.

PETERSON, CHARLES JACOBS (1819–87), Philadelphia author, editor, and publisher, was associated with *Graham's Magazine* and *The Saturday Evening Post*, prior to founding the *Ladies' National Magazine* (1842), called *Peterson's Magazine* after 1848, an imitation of *Godey's Lady's Book*, which it surpassed in circulation. It was a highly popular women's magazine until it ended publication in 1898. In addition to such historical novels as *Grace Dudley; or, Arnold at Saratoga* (1849) and *Kate Aylesford, A Story of the Refugees* (1855), Peterson wrote a *History of the United States Navy* (1852), and works on the heroes of the Revolution, the War of 1812, and the Mexican War.

Petrified Forest, The, play by Robert Sherwood (q.v.), produced in 1934 and published in 1935. Set in the Black Mesa Bar-B-Q, a gasoline station and lunch room in the Arizona desert, it melodramatically brings together representatives of a decadent civilization, in which Nature is 'taking the world away from the intellectuals and giving it back to the apes.'

Jason Maple, the proprietor, conceals mediocrity and cowardice under an American Legion uniform; his daughter Gabby, whose French mother deserted Jason to return to her native land, is frustrated in this lonely place both emotionally and in her ability as a painter; and other characters include Alan Squier, an unsuccessful New England author who is hitch-hiking to California, and a group of hunted criminals, led by desperate, cool-thinking Duke Mantee. Gabby falls in love with Alan, a 'thin, wan, vague man' about whom there is 'an afterglow of elegance,' but also a certain 'condemned' look. He is touched by her proposal of an elopement, but refuses, and is about to leave when he and the others are trapped by the gangsters, who decide to use the place as a temporary rendezvous. Alan, who characterizes Mantee as 'the last great apostle of rugged individualism' in the 'Petrified Forest . . . of outmoded ideas,' discovers that he loves Gabby, and determines to help her 'go to France—and *find* yourself.' He accord-

ingly alters his life insurance to make her his heir, and asks Mantee to shoot him. When Jason returns with other Legionnaires and the police, there is a violent battle, from which Mantee escapes after keeping his promise to kill Alan.

Pfaff's Cellar, Bohemian rendezvous on Broadway above Bleeker Street, in New York City, during the 1850's. The resort is famous as the gathering place of Whitman, Fitz-James O'Brien, Bayard Taylor, William Winter, George Arnold, Adah Menken, Henry Clapp, Louis Gottschalk, and Ada Clare. It came to an end with the dispersion of its artistic clientele during the Civil War.

Phaenomena Quaedam Apocalyptica, by Samuel Sewall (q.v.), published in 1697, bears the subtitle, 'A Description of the New Heaven . . . to those who stand upon the New Earth.' Sewall predicts that New England will be the final 'rendezvous for Gog and Magog' and the true seat of the New Jerusalem. This work is the subject of Whittier's poem, 'The Prophecy of Samuel Sewall.'

PHELPS, Elizabeth Stuart (1815–52), Massachusetts author of popular religious tales, which included *The Sunny Side; or, The Country Minister's Wife* (1851) and two semi-autobiographical novels, *A Peep at Number Five* (1851), the story of a clergyman's home, and *The Angel Over the Right Shoulder* (1851), the tale of a woman's difficulties in reconciling her domestic life with a genius for writing. These were published under the pseudonym H.Trusta. She was the mother of Elizabeth Stuart Phelps Ward (q.v.), most of whose works were published under her maiden name.

PHELPS, William Lyon (1865–), professor of English literature at Yale (1892–1933), began his career as an academic scholar with such works as *The Beginnings of the English Romantic Movement* (1893) and *Browning: How to Know Him* (1915), but is best known as a popularizer of the humanities through his many lectures and column 'As I Like It' in *Scribner's* magazine, endorsing innumerable new books and containing random commentaries on his many enthusiasms. In 1939 he published his *Autobiography with Letters.*

Phi Beta Kappa, honorary scholarship society, was founded at William and Mary (1776) as a secret social and literary club of undergraduates. It was the first college fraternity, and its name is said to derive from the initials of its Greek motto, translated as 'Philosophy the guide of life.' Chapters were soon established at other colleges, and secrecy was abandoned by 1831. Women have been admitted since 1875. Eligibility is restricted to the best students, usually selected in their senior year. Many famous poems have been first delivered as Phi Beta Kappa poems at college commencements, and it was before the Harvard chapter that Emerson delivered 'The American Scholar' (1837).

Philadelphia, largest city in Pennsylvania and third largest in the U.S., has a population of 1,935,086 and is situated on the Delaware River, 100 miles from the Atlantic. The site was occupied by an Indian settlement and a Swedish community before 1682, when William Penn founded the city as the proprietary capital of his Quaker colony, under its present Greek name ('brotherly love'). The next year, Pastorius brought German and Dutch settlers to establish Germantown in its environs. During this early period, the city was famous not only as a trading post but as a refuge for many diverse sects. In Franklin's time, Philadelphia saw the decline of the power of the Penn family and of Quaker dominance, as it became noted for its shipping industry and such figures as the wealthy merchant, Stephen Girard. Democratic feeling arose during the pre-Revolutionary period, when the city assumed leadership through the writings and actions of such men as Franklin and John Dickinson, and the gathering of the two Continental Congresses at Independence Hall, where the Declaration of Independence was adopted. Howe occupied the city following the rebels' defeats at Brandywine and Germantown, and held it through the incident known as the Battle of the Kegs, finally evacuating in the summer of 1778. After the Revolution the city was the capital of the U.S. (1790–1800), and the scene of the Constitutional Convention. During the 19th century, Philadelphia became an important industrial center, and its character changed with the influx of Irish and German immigrants. It prospered during the Civil War from various war manufactures, and fortunes were acquired by such financiers as Jay Cooke, although the fighting came no closer to the

city than the Battle of Gettysburg. Further expansion occurred during the Gilded Age, marked by labor strife, financial panics, and political corruption, and the ascendancy of such speculators as Yerkes. By the end of the century, the city had settled down as a leading metropolis, whose financial and social figures included C.H.K. Curtis, publisher of *The Saturday Evening Post*, the Drexel family, and John Wanamaker. The Philadelphia 'Centennial Exposition' (1876), an industrial and educational exhibit celebrating the 100th anniversary of the Declaration of Independence, was the first great international exposition held in America. Philadelphia has long been one of the centers of education in the U.S. As early as 1689 George Keith founded the present William Penn Charter School; the University of Pennsylvania was founded by Franklin and others in 1751; and other educational institutions include The Library Company (1731), American Philosophical Society (1744), Pennsylvania Academy of Fine Arts (1805), Franklin Institute (1824), LaSalle College (1867), Temple University (1884), Drexel Institute (1891), Dropsie College (1907), and the near-by Haverford College (1833), Swarthmore College (1864), and Bryn Mawr College (1880). Even before Franklin's time, the city was noted for its publishers, who included William Bradford, Andrew Bradford, and Samuel Keimer, while later publishers have included Claypoole, Poulson, Duane, Godey, Graham, Lippincott, Curtis, and Bok. Among other contributors to the city's cultural life have been the architects, William Strickland, Latrobe, Walter, and Robert Mills; the artists, Benjamin West, the Peale family, William Rush, Gilbert Stuart, Sully, Eakins, Mary Cassatt, E.A. Abbey, Howard Pyle, and Joseph Pennell; the Philadelphia Orchestra under Stokowski (1912–); and the actors, Joseph Jefferson, Edwin Forrest, and the Drew and Barrymore families. The city's literary history may be said to date from the tracts of Penn and Pastorius, but its fame as a literary center began in the time of Franklin. Authors associated with Philadelphia include: James Logan, Jacob Duché, Woolman, Thomas Godfrey, Nathaniel Evans, Paine, Hopkinson, Seabury, John Bartram, Robert Proud, Joseph Galloway, Crèvecœur, Brackinridge, C.B.Brown, Joseph Dennie, Cobbett, Matthew Carey, Freneau, J.N.Barker, R.M.Bird, J.A. Stone, Sarah J.B. Hale, George Lippard, T.D.English, T.S.Arthur, Poe, Whitman, Bayard Taylor, Rebecca Davis, Frank Stockton, S.W.Mitchell, T.B.Read, G.H. Boker, C.G.Leland, J.L.Long, R.H.Davis, Owen Wister, Agnes Repplier, Huneker, T.A.Daly, Langdon Mitchell, A.E.Newton, J.T.McIntyre, Hergesheimer, and Christopher Morley.

For Philadelphia newspapers other than those prefixed by the name of the city, see *American Weekly Mercury*, *Aurora*, *Gazette of the United States*, *National Gazette*, *Pennsylvania Chronicle*, *Pennsylvania Journal*, *Pennsylvania Packet*, and *Porcupine's Gazette*.

Philadelphia, COLLEGE OF, see *Pennsylvania, University of*.

Philadelphia lawyer, proverbially an ingenious person who can penetrate the most complicated problems. The phrase is considered to have originated in the years following the Revolution, when Philadelphia courts were ruled by several conflicting codes at the same time.

Philadelphia North American, see *Pennsylvania Packet*.

Philadelphia *Public Ledger* (1836–), founded as the city's first penny paper by A.S.Abell, W.H.Swain, and A.H. Simmons. Abell left (1837) to found the Baltimore *Sun*, and Simmons soon died, so that Swain was its head, advocating independent voting and a free press, and fighting the Bank of the United States. Maintaining its price, despite rising paper costs during the Civil War, caused great losses, and the *Ledger* was sold to G.W. Childs (1864), who raised the price and made it distinguished for its carefully substantiated attacks on war profiteering, monopolies, and the debased currency, and for its stringent editorials on political and moral corruption. In 1913 the paper was purchased by C.H.K.Curtis. It was later published by Cary Bok, and Stanley Walker was editor (1938).

Philadelphia Story, The, play by Philip Barry (q.v.).

PHILEMON PERCH, pseudonym of R.M. Johnston (q.v.).

PHILENIA, pseudonym of Sarah Wentworth Morton (q.v.).

PHILIP, see *King Philip*.

Philistine, see *Hubbard, Elbert*.

Philistines, The, novel by Arlo Bates (q.v.).

PHILLIPS, DAVID GRAHAM (1867–1911), born in Indiana, began his journalistic career at Cincinnati (1887) and moved to New York (1890), where he worked on the *Sun* and *World.* In 1902 he began to write muckraking magazine articles, and fiction concerned with contemporary social problems. During the few years of creative work that followed, he wrote 23 novels, a play, and a book of essays. The novels, which show his training as a reporter as well as his muckraking zeal against fraud and oppression, include: *The Great God Success* (1901); *Golden Fleece* (1903), dealing with the American adventures of a fortune-hunting earl; *The Master-Rogue* (1903), the autobiography of a modern Crœsus; *The Cost* (1904) and *The Deluge* (1905), both dealing with Wall Street manipulation; *The Plum Tree* (1905), dealing with the operations of a political boss; *Light-Fingered Gentry* (1907), a fictional treatment of recent insurance scandals; *The Second Generation* (1907), contrasting the evils of inherited wealth with the virtues of the hard-working lower classes; and *The Fashionable Adventures of Joshua Craig* (1909), *The Conflict* (1911), and *George Helm* (1912), dealing respectively with national, municipal, and state corruption. The remainder of his works deal with the contemporary interest in the 'new woman.' *Old Wives for New* (1908), *The Hungry Heart* (1909), and his play, *The Worth of a Woman* (1908), are concerned with the changed standards of women in love and marriage. *The Husband's Story* (1910) and *The Price She Paid* (1912) are novels dealing respectively with feminine social ambitions and the independence of the new woman. Phillips's greatest novel, *Susan Lenox: Her Fall and Rise* (q.v.,1917), combines his previous themes in a muckraking exposé of Cincinnati slum life and New York political corruption, which serve as a background for the life of a country girl who reaches success through prostitution. The promise that Phillips showed in this posthumously published work was cut short when he was murdered by a lunatic who believed that his family had been maligned in the novelist's books.

PHILLIPS, ULRICH BONNELL (1877–1934), born in Georgia, from whose state university he graduated (1897), later became a professor of American history at the University of Georgia, Columbia, University of Wisconsin, Tulane, University of Michigan (1911–29), and Yale (1929–34). His works include: *Georgia and State Rights* (1902), *Life of Robert Toombs* (1913), *American Negro Slavery* (1918), and *Life and Labor in the Old South* (1929).

PHILLIPS, WENDELL (1811–84), born in Boston, after graduation from Harvard (1831) and admission to the bar, became a prominent Boston Abolitionist and supporter of Garrison. He was an active lyceum lecturer for this and other causes, and was a contributor to the *Liberator* and *National Anti-Slavery Standard.* His *Speeches, Lectures, and Letters* were collected in 1863 and 1891.

Philo Vance, hero of detective novels by W.H.Wright (q.v.).

Philological Society, New York organization (*fl.*1788–9), devoted to mutual improvement and the promotion of the American language. Its members included Noah Webster and William Dunlap. It was the forerunner of the Friendly Club of New York.

Philosophy of Composition, The, critical essay by Poe (q.v.) published in *Graham's Magazine* (1846). It purports to describe the author's usual procedure in composing poetry and is mainly devoted to an analysis of 'The Raven' as an example of this procedure. Among the famous dicta announced in the essay are: 'If any literary work is too long to be read at one sitting, we must be content to dispense with the immensely important effect derivable from unity of impression . . . What we term a long poem is, in fact, merely a succession of brief ones'; 'Beauty is the sole legitimate province of the poem'; 'Beauty . . . in its supreme development, invariably excites the sensitive soul to tears. Melancholy is thus the most legitimate of all poetical tones'; 'The death of a beautiful woman is, unquestionably, the most poetical topic in the world.' Poe further discusses his principles of versification, use of a refrain, diction, and imagery, and the primary importance of the climax ('The Raven,' stanza 16), which was written first so that every effect in the poem should lead in its direction.

Philosophy of Loyalty, The, ethical work by Josiah Royce (q.v.).

PHIPS (or PHIPPS), SIR WILLIAM (1651–95), born in Maine, was knighted for his recovery of sunken West Indian treasure (reputedly worth £300,000), and was appointed provost marshal general at Boston (1687), in which position he led the colonial expedition against the French in the first French and Indian War. He aided Increase Mather to restore charter rule in Massachusetts, and, at Mather's behest, Phips was named governor under a new charter (1692). His administration was charged with neglect of military activities and other errors, for which he was summoned to answer in London, but he died before proceedings against him began. Cotton Mather's biography (1697) emphasizes the 'self-made man,' and its laudatory manner was attacked by Calef. Phips figures as 'The King's Fisher' and 'The Elephant' in Mather's *Political Fables*.

PHOENIX, JOHN, pseudonym of G.H. Derby (q.v.).

PHYFE, DUNCAN (1768–1854), Scottish-born cabinet maker, came to America (*c.*1783) and established his furniture shop in New York. His work, divided into three periods, reflects respectively the Adam style (*c.*1790–1820), the Empire style (1820–30), and, from 1830 to his retirement (1847), the nameless, over-elaborate, heavy style of the expanding industrial era, which he derisively called 'butcher furniture.' His earliest period is his best, marked by the use of solid mahogany in finely proportioned, graceful furniture. Even when the quality of his designs deteriorated with declining American taste, Phyfe retained his high standard of workmanship.

PIATT, JOHN JAMES (1835–1917), Indiana-born poet and journalist, worked with Howells on the *Ohio State Journal*, and with him wrote *Poems of Two Friends* (1860). Later a journalist, minor official in Washington, and consul in Ireland, he wrote with his wife, Sarah M.B. Piatt (1836–1919), much sympathetic but conventional poetry, some dealing with Western life.

Piazza Tales, The, stories by Melville (q.v.) collected in 1856. Besides 'The Piazza,' an account of the author's farmhouse, Arrowhead, near Pittsfield, Massachusetts, the volume contains 'Bartleby, the Scrivener,' 'The Encantadas,' and 'Benito Cereno' (qq.v.).

Picayune, see *New Orleans Picayune*.

PICKENS, ANDREW (1739–1817), South Carolina 'partisan' leader in the Revolutionary War, became a brigadier-general, and led his frontier troops in guerilla warfare against the British and their Indian allies. He distinguished himself especially at Cowpens, Augusta, and Eutaw Springs. After the close of the war, he was instrumental in subduing the hostile Cherokees, and entered politics, serving as a congressman (1793–5).

FRANCIS WILKINSON PICKENS (1805–69), his grandson, was a South Carolina planter and lawyer, and served as a Democratic congressman (1834–43). He became a leading figure in Democratic politics, being appointed minister to Russia (1858–60), and returned to become governor of his state (1860–62), in which position he continued his nullification and secession stand. Before the inauguration of Lincoln, he demanded that federal troops be withdrawn from South Carolina, and was responsible for the first shot fired in the Civil War, when he ordered an attack on the *Star of the West*, a supply ship sent to relieve Fort Sumter.

Pickerbaugh, Dr.Almus, character in *Arrowsmith* (q.v.).

PICKERING, TIMOTHY (1745–1829), Revolutionary soldier and statesman, born in Massachusetts, was a member of the Board of War and quartermaster-general, and member of the Constitutional Convention. Under Washington, he was postmaster-general (1791–5), and also served as secretary of war (1795) and secretary of state (1795–1800), but was dismissed from the cabinet because of his intrigues against President Adams and his opposition to the French in the XYZ Affair. He was a die-hard Federalist leader, and as U.S.senator (1803–11) and congressman (1813–17) continued to oppose Adams, Jefferson, and Madison, taking a strong stand with the Essex Junto. To further his beliefs, he wrote several polemical pamphlets, including *A Series of Letters Addressed to the People of the United States* (1812).

JOHN PICKERING (1777–1846), his son, was known in Boston as an eminent philologist. During his career as a lawyer, he learned 20 languages as an avocation. He was the author of an early book on Americanisms, *Vocabulary . . . of Words . . . Peculiar to the United States* (1816).

PICKFORD, MARY, pseudonym of Gladys Smith (1893–), Canadian-born motion picture actress of ingenue roles, known as 'America's Sweetheart.' She was married to Douglas Fairbanks.

Pictures of War, see *Little Regiment, The.*

PIERCE, FRANKLIN (1804–69), 14th President of the U.S. (1853–7), was born in New Hampshire, graduated from Bowdoin (1824), was admitted to the bar (1827) and entered politics as a Jacksonian Democrat. He served in the House of Representatives (1833–7) and the Senate (1837–42), after which he returned to law practice and fought in the Mexican War, rising to the rank of brigadier-general. Although he was constantly active in local politics, he was nominated for the presidency as a 'dark horse' candidate, when his party was split by disputes arising from the Compromise of 1850. A campaign biography was written by his college friend Hawthorne, whom he rewarded after his election with the consulship at Liverpool. As President, Pierce attempted to reconcile the growing antipathy between North and South through such devices as the Kansas-Nebraska Bill. His foreign policy was founded on the doctrine of 'manifest destiny,' and attempts were made to secure a base in Santo Domingo, and to annex Cuba, Hawaii, and Alaska, besides the negotiation of a trade treaty with Japan and the Gadsden Purchase. His attempts at an impartial domestic policy and a strong imperialist program generally failed, owing to his lack of ability and experience and his increasing unpopularity. He was not renominated, and spent his later life in obscurity.

PIERPONT, JOHN (1785–1866), born in Connecticut, graduated from Yale (1804) and practiced law at Newburyport, Massachusetts, where he wrote *The Portrait* (1812), a Federalist poem extolling Washington and Hamilton and excoriating Jefferson. With *Airs of Palestine* (1816), a poem in heroic couplets praising sacred music, written during a period of shopkeeping at Baltimore, this put him in the front rank of American poets of the time. After graduation from Harvard Divinity School (1818), he became minister of the Hollis Street Church in Boston (1819), where his advocacy of antislavery, pacifism, and temperance irritated his congregation, who conducted a long campaign to oust him. He was accused of failing to confine himself to proper ecclesiastical subjects and of wasting his time in 'the making of Books,' which included poems based on a trip to the Holy Land (1835–6) and hymns and odes on religious, political, and liberal subjects, such as *The Anti-Slavery Poems of John Pierpont* (1843). After his resignation (1845), he was a pastor of other Unitarian churches, a Civil War chaplain, and a clerk in the U.S. Treasury Department. J.P.Morgan was his grandson.

Pierre; or, The Ambiguities, novel by Melville (q.v.) published in 1852. It is considered to be semi-autobiographical.

Pierre Glendinning, only son of an affluent and haughty widow, is engaged to Lucy Tartan, daughter of another prominent family in upstate New York. He accidentally meets Isabel, discovers that she is his illegitimate half-sister, and feels that it is his duty to protect her in opposition to his proud mother. To acknowledge Isabel as his sister would disgrace his father's memory, so Pierre pretends to marry her. They seek refuge in New York, and Pierre, poor and without friends, turns to writing a book that no publisher will issue. Lucy, still in love with Pierre, follows him to New York. When her brother and his own cousin threaten him, Pierre kills them. Both Lucy and Mrs.Glendinning die of grief, and Pierre and Isabel, now in love with each other, commit suicide in his prison cell. In grappling with the ambiguities of good and evil, Pierre has followed the 'chronometrical' standards of ideal Christian conduct, instead of the 'horological' standards of contemporary society. He is accordingly undone by his ideals, and becomes 'the fool of Truth, the fool of Virtue, the fool of Fate.'

PIKE, ALBERT (1809–91), born in Boston, went to the Southwestern frontier (1831), and two years later settled in Arkansas, where he became a prominent journalist and lawyer, and wrote of his frontier adventures in *Prose Sketches and Poems, Written in the Western Country* (1834). After serving in the Mexican War, he continued to practice law in various Southern cities, although during the Civil War he commanded Indian troops in the Confederate Army, whose atrocities were bitterly criticized by other generals, provoking his *Letter to the President of the Confederate States* (1862) and causing his temporary arrest and flight to Canada. He was a

leader of the Freemasons and published poetry, legal works, and books on Masonic dogma and ritual. Of his poems, published in *Nugae* (1854) and *Hymns to the Gods* (1872), the best known is 'Dixie' (1861).

PIKE, Mary Hayden [Green] (1824–1908), Maine novelist, whose antislavery interests led her to write *Ida May* (1854), the story of a child sold into slavery, and *Caste* (1856), the story of a quadroon who is forbidden to marry a white man. *Agnes* (1858) is a historical novel of the Revolution.

PIKE, Zebulon Montgomery (1779–1813), New Jersey-born army officer, was commissioned by James Wilkinson to seek the source of the Mississippi, and in 1805–7 explored the region westward from St. Louis to New Mexico, Colorado, and Louisiana Territory. At this time he sighted but did not climb the peak that bears his name. He entered Mexican territory, where he was arrested and forced to leave. In 1810 he published his *Account of Expeditions to the Sources of the Mississippi and through the Western Parts of Louisiana.* He was a brigadier-general in the War of 1812 and was killed in the assault on York (Toronto) Canada.

Pike, type character in American humor, a genus of Western emigrant during the pioneering period of the mid-19th century. The Pike characters were traditionally natives of Pike County, although this locality was variously assigned to Missouri, Arkansas, southern Illinois, northern Texas, or generally to the frontier area. A man from Pike County was generally depicted as an ignorant, suspicious backwoodsman, good-natured as the butt of frequent jokes, but savagely acquisitive. His exaggerated, droll speech was characterized by an expressive, imaginative dialect. In Bayard Taylor's *At Home and Abroad* (1860), he was described as:

> the Anglo Saxon relapsed into semi-barbarism. He is long, lathy, and sallow; he expectorates vehemently; he takes naturally to whisky; he has the 'shakes' his life long at home, though he generally manages to get rid of them in California; he has little respect for the rights of others; he distrusts men in 'store clothes,' but venerates the memory of Andrew Jackson.

The Pike as a specific character was launched in the works of George Derby, but it was not until 1871 that he became generally known to the reading public, through Harte's *East and West Poems* and Hay's *Pike County Ballads.*

Pike County Ballads, dialect poems by John Hay (q.v.), published in 1871. They show an appreciation of the candor, crudeness, and self-reliance of frontiersmen in Pike County, Illinois, during the 1860's, and include 'Jim Bludso,' the story of a Mississippi steamboat engineer who is burned to death while saving his passengers from a fire, and 'Little Breeches,' about the four-year-old son of a Pike man, who is miraculously rescued from a wagon accident.

Pilgrims, name applied to the persons who came to Massachusetts on the *Mayflower* (q.v.,1620), or by extension to all the early settlers of Plymouth colony (q.v.). Unlike the Puritans, the Pilgrims were Separatists (q.v.), opposing the episcopal jurisdiction, rites, and discipline of the Church of England. They originated (*c.*1606) at Scrooby, England, whence they emigrated to Amsterdam (1608), and then to Leiden. Almost half of this group came to Plymouth on the *Mayflower.* Among them were William Bradford, William Brewster, John Carver, Edward Winslow, Myles Standish, and John Alden.

Pilgrims of Adversity, novel by William McFee (q.v.).

PILLSBURY, Parker (1809–98), Massachusetts Abolitionist and woman suffrage leader, for a time edited the *National Anti-Slavery Standard.* His *Acts of the Anti-Slavery Apostles* (1883) is a history of the New England Abolition movement.

Pilot, The, romance by Cooper (q.v.) published in 1823. The unnamed hero is supposed to represent John Paul Jones.

During the Revolutionary War, the schooner *Ariel* and an unnamed frigate appear off the coast of England near the residence of Colonel Howard, an expatriated South Carolina Loyalist. Lieutenants Griffith and Barnstable love Howard's two nieces, but their romances are thwarted by conflicting political views. The officers return to their ships with the mysterious 'Pilot,' who takes charge of the frigate. The schooner puts to sea through a channel that the frigate cannot navigate, but, during a terrible storm, the Pilot guides his ship to safety through a difficult shoal passage. The mission of the

Americans is to capture prominent Englishmen, in order to force a modification of British impressment, and they decide to raid the guarded Howard residence. In the attempt, the Pilot and others are captured, but make their escape despite the precautions of villainous Christopher Dillon, a suitor of one of the girls. Dillon warns the crew of a British cutter, which is, however, defeated in battle by the *Ariel*. Long Tom Coffin, a daring old salt, is sent with the captured Dillon to attempt an exchange, but attempts to escape, is recaptured and taken back to the ship, which is wrecked in a storm. Only Barnstable and a few others survive. The Pilot captures the Howards, and imprisons them on the cutter. In a fierce battle with British warships, the frigate escapes through the shoal waters. Colonel Howard has been wounded, but before he dies he surrenders to the inevitability of American victory in the war, and permits the marriage of his nieces with the officers. The Pilot goes to Holland, while his ship sails for America.

PINCKNEY, CHARLES (1757–1824), South Carolina statesman, fought in the Revolutionary War and was a delegate to the Federal Constitutional Convention, where he is credited with having had a greater influence than any other person on the final form and content of the Constitution. He served as governor of his state (1789–92,1796–8), during which period he turned from his Federalist allegiance to become a liberal Democratic Republican. His work in the U.S.Senate (1798–1801) and his aid in Jefferson's presidential campaign led to his appointment as minister to Spain (1801–5). Upon his return he was again governor (1806–8), and as a member of Congress (1819–21) delivered a famous speech against the Missouri Compromise. C.C.Pinckney was his cousin.

PINCKNEY, CHARLES COTESWORTH (1746–1825), born in Charleston, was educated in England and France, and after serving in the Revolutionary War entered law practice and politics. Like his cousin Charles Pinckney, he was a member of the Federal Constitutional Convention. He refused command of the army, a Supreme Court appointment, and the secretaryships of state and war, but accepted the ministry to France (1796). When the French refused to recognize his official status, he was appointed, with John Marshall and Elbridge Gerry, as a commissioner to reconcile the hostile feeling between France and America (1797). In the XYZ Affair (q.v.) that followed, the Americans refused to bribe French agents, and their mission was unsuccessful. Upon his return to the U.S., Pinckney was the Federalist candidate for Vice President (1800) and for President (1804, '08), and again practiced law.

THOMAS PINCKNEY (1750–1828), his brother, was also educated in France and England, whence he returned to serve in the Revolutionary War. He was governor of South Carolina (1787–9) and minister to England (1792–5). As envoy to Spain (1795–6) he obtained a treaty defining the boundary of Louisiana and Florida and guaranteeing free navigation of the Mississippi. He was a Federalist congressman (1797–1801), and a major-general in the War of 1812.

Pine-Tree coins, so called because of the pine tree depicted on one face, were minted in the Massachusetts Bay Colony (1652–82) in the denominations of shilling, sixpence, and threepence, and were in use throughout colonial New England. A Pine-Tree Flag was used in Massachusetts from 1700 to the outbreak of the Revolutionary War. Maine, however, is popularly known as the Pine-Tree State.

PINKERTON, ALLAN (1819–84), Scottish-born detective, became famous in Illinois for his exposure of a band of counterfeiters, and organized a private detective agency to protect the property of railroads and other corporations. He prevented an attempted assassination of Lincoln (1861), and became a leader of espionage during the Civil War, when he called himself Major E.J.Allen. This work led to the establishment of the Federal secret service. His agency, continued after his death by his sons, was notorious for its methods in suppressing labor disputes, especially in the Homestead Strike (q.v., 1892). It was subjected to a congressional investigation during industrial disputes over the recognition of unions (1937). Allan Pinkerton was the author of *Criminal Reminiscences and Detective Sketches* (1879), *The Spy of the Rebellion* (1883), and *Thirty Years a Detective* (1884).

PINKNEY, WILLIAM (1764–1822), born in Maryland, was admitted to the bar in 1786, and became a prominent political leader. He was a U.S. commissioner in

England (1796–1804) in an attempt to adjust maritime claims under the Jay Treaty, and in 1806 returned to England with Monroe in another unsuccessful attempt to deal with these matters. After serving as minister to England (1807–11), he became attorney-general (1811–14), served in the War of 1812, became a congressman (1815–16), and was minister to Russia (1816–18). As a special commissioner to Naples (1816), he vainly attempted to negotiate a commercial treaty and to obtain compensation for seized U.S. shipping. In law practice and as a U.S. senator (1819–22), he was noted for his brilliant though affected oratory. His haughty manner won him the enmity of Daniel Webster and William Wirt, and caused John Neal to attack him posthumously in the novel *Randolph* (1823).

EDWARD COOTE PINKNEY (1802–28), his son, was born in London, reared in Baltimore, and served in the U.S. Navy (1815–24). He entered law practice, was a professor at the University of Maryland (1826), and edited *The Marylander* (1827–8), a paper which supported J.Q.Adams. Following Neal's fictional attack upon his father, young Pinkney challenged the novelist to a duel, which Neal refused. Pinkney's few *Poems* (1825) exhibited a lyric gift, but were often imitative of Byron and Tom Moore. Other fragments were collected with these 21 poems in 1926.

Pioneer, The (1843), monthly literary magazine, founded by Lowell and Robert Carter, was published in only three issues, since it was a critical but not a financial success. Intended to advance the cause of a national literature, it included among its contributions Poe's 'The Tell-Tale Heart' and 'Notes on English Verse,' Hawthorne's 'Hall of Fantasy' and 'The Birthmark,' and works by Jones Very, Lowell, J.S.Dwight, and Whittier.

Pioneers! O Pioneers!, poem by Whitman (q.v.), published in *Drum-Taps* (1865) and in the 'annex' to *Leaves of Grass* (1867).

In 26 quatrains, each ending with the refrain that gives the poem its title, Whitman celebrates the frontier spirit with a pæan of praise concerning the unique American qualities of optimism, self-reliance, equality, and revolt against the European past.

Pioneers, The; or, The Sources of the Susquehanna, romance by Cooper (q.v.) published in 1823. It is the fourth in plot sequence of the Leather-Stocking Tales (q.v.).

During the decade after the Revolutionary War, Judge Marmaduke Temple, a retired Quaker merchant, is the leading landowner of Otsego County on the New York frontier, having acquired the estate of the Loyalist father of his friend, Edward Effingham. While hunting deer he accidentally shoots Oliver Edwards, young companion of Natty Bumppo (Leather-Stocking), a veteran frontiersman. The judge and his daughter, Elizabeth, befriend the young man, who becomes their overseer, although persisting in his mysterious association with Bumppo and old chief Chingachgook (John Mohegan), who is rumored to be his father. Elizabeth and her friend, Louisa Grant, the rector's daughter, disdain the company of the supposed half-breed. After Bumppo is released from jail, following his arrest for shooting deer out of season, Elizabeth visits him and is trapped by a forest fire. She is saved by Edwards, but Chingachgook dies after his rescue by Bumppo. Elizabeth and Edwards now admit their love, and his identity is made known when a searching party discovers demented old Major Effingham, and it is revealed that Edwards is his grandson, that Bumppo had been an employee of his family, and that Chingachgook had adopted them into his tribe. The young couple is betrothed and given half of the judge's estate.

Pioneers of France in the New World, history by Parkman (q.v.).

Pip, character in *Moby-Dick* (q.v.).

Piper, The, drama by Josephine Peabody (q.v.).

Pit, The: A Story of Chicago, novel by Frank Norris (q.v.), posthumously published in 1903 as the second part of his 'Epic of the Wheat.'

Laura Dearborn comes to Chicago from Massachusetts to live with her Aunt Wess' and her younger sister Page. She soon attracts three suitors: Sheldon Corthell, wealthy artist and dilettante; Landry Court, a young stockbroker who later marries Page; and Curtis Jadwin, a powerful, virile capitalist, who is lonely despite his wealth and position. She is won by Jadwin's honesty and simplicity, al-

though she does not respond fully to his possessive affection. He succumbs to the lure of the Board of Trade and becomes a leading speculator, by a combination of boldness and luck gaining a 'corner' in the wheat market. His preoccupation with business affairs causes him to neglect Laura, who drifts into an affair with Corthell, returned from a long absence in Europe. Natural laws defeat Jadwin's speculative coup, when his monopoly is broken by an unforeseen production of wheat in the West. His financial ruin is accompanied by a physical breakdown, and Laura, who has been about to elope with Corthell, nurses her husband to health, coming to realize the bond between them. Although they lose their mansion and rich possessions, they face a future of hard work and simple living in the West with renewed hope and enthusiasm.

Pit and the Pendulum, The, tale by Poe (q.v.) published in *The Gift* (1843).

A prisoner of the Spanish Inquisition at Toledo describes his horrible tortures. Sick from long suffering, he faints when the death sentence is pronounced; upon recovering consciousness, he finds himself on the stone floor of a dark dungeon. Exploring the cell, he is saved from plunging into a deep pit when he accidentally trips and falls. He sleeps, and awakes to discover that he is now strapped to a wooden framework, while a great pendulum swings slowly back and forth overhead, its end being a steel crescent sharpened to a razor edge. The menacing blade gradually descends, and rats swarm about his highly seasoned food and over his body. The pendulum reaches him, cuts his bonds, and he frees himself, only to discover that the metal walls of the cell are being heated and are slowly closing in. Just as he gives way to an agony of terror, the city is captured by French soldiers, and the hand of General Lasalle stays him from tumbling into the pit.

PITCHER, MOLLY, nickname of Mary L. Hays (or Heis) McCauley (1754–1832), who carried water in a pitcher to the Revolutionary soldiers during the Battle of Monmouth (June 27, 1778). The legend that she took her husband's place at a cannon probably arises through confusion with Margaret Corbin (1751–1800), who did perform such an act. She is the subject of a poem by Whittier (1832).

PITKIN, WALTER B[OUGHTON] (1878–), Columbia professor of psychology, and later of journalism. He has occupied many additional editorial and educational positions, but is best known as a consulting psychologist and as the author of many books popularizing writing techniques and applied psychology. Among his best-selling books are: *The Art of Rapid Reading* (1929), *The Psychology of Happiness* (1929), *A Short Introduction to the History of Human Stupidity* (1932), *Life Begins at Forty* (1932), *More Power to You* (1933), *Let's Get What We Want* (1935), and *Capitalism Carries On* (1935).

Pittsburg Landing, see *Shiloh.*

Pittsburgh, situated on the Allegheny, Monongahela, and Ohio Rivers in northwestern Pennsylvania, is the second largest city of the state, with a population of 665,384 in 1940. Founded as Fort Duquesne (1754), it was renamed four years later for the British prime minister, and was the site of actions in the French and Indian Wars and the Revolution. The center of the greatest coal-field and one of the greatest oil-fields of the continent, it is also a noted manufacturing center, in whose history such men as Carnegie, Frick, and Mellon have figured. Among its educational institutions are the University of Pittsburgh, Carnegie Institute of Technology, Duquesne University, and Pennsylvania College for Women. Victor Herbert conducted the Pittsburgh Symphony (1898–1904), and the works of Brackenridge, Margaret Deland, Pennell, and H.H.Richardson are associated with the city, while the many musicians and authors born there include Stephen Foster, Ethelbert Nevin, Gertrude Stein, Jeffers, Hervey Allen, George Kaufman, and Marc Connelly.

Pittsburgh, UNIVERSITY OF, was founded in 1787 and called Western University from 1819 to 1908. It is now a leading coeducational institution, housed in a 42 story central building known as the Cathedral of Learning. A small Gothic chapel was constructed in honor of Stephen Foster (1937). Graduates include Hervey Allen (1915).

Pity Is Not Enough, novel by Josephine Herbst (q.v.).

Plagued by the Nightingale, novel by Kay Boyle (q.v.).

Plain Language from Truthful James, comic ballad by Bret Harte (q.v.), pub-

lished in the *Overland Monthly* (Sept. 1870). This narrative of a euchre game, in which Truthful James and his friend Bill Nye intend to cheat the Chinese gambler Ah Sin, but are themselves deceived by the 'ways that are dark' of their wily opponent, soon had a popular vogue throughout the country, was frequently quoted, and was pirated in broadside and pamphlet editions as *The Heathen Chinee.*

Plains Indians, general term applied to the many tribes who lived in the Plains and Prairie regions. Their more or less homogeneous culture was based economically on the hunting of bison, although some of the eastern tribes also grew maize. Principally nomadic, they used dogs and later horses for transportation, and were noted for their vigorous and constant warfare and their mystical pursuit of visions and supernatural power. The popular conception of the heroic Indian brave—tall, muscular, and dignified, with braided hair, costume of skins, and feathered headdress, living in tepees and skilled in horsemanship—derives from contact with the Plains tribes. Among the most prominent of these were the Sioux, Comanche, Cheyenne, Pawnee, Blackfoot, Osage, and Mandan (qq.v.). The Plains Indians figure in the writings of Cooper, Neihardt, Garland, Parkman, and Lewis and Clark, and in Longfellow's *Hiawatha,* as well as in the more scientific descriptions by Schoolcraft, Catlin, Grinnell, Dorsey, and Wissler.

Plains of Abraham, see *Abraham, Plains of.*

Plains region, country sloping gradually from the Rocky Mountains eastward to the Prairie region (q.v.), includes Nebraska, Kansas, Oklahoma, and Texas, as well as the eastern parts of Montana, Wyoming, Colorado, and New Mexico, and the western parts of North and South Dakota. The region is marked by broad, level river valleys and rolling plains, which were the habitat of great herds of bison and the Plains Indians (q.v.) who hunted them. Later the plains were devoted to cattle raising, but more recently they have been planted in wheat and other crops. This change, involving the removal of grass and consequent erosion of the topsoil, has resulted in dust storms and drought, and the region is sometimes called the Dust Bowl. Oklahoma and Texas have been disastrously affected, and refugees, popularly referred to as 'Okies,' have migrated to other regions, especially California. Parkman's *Oregon Trail* is the most famous narrative of the Indians and white pioneers on the plains; Andy Adams has written of the cattle industry; the plays of Lynn Riggs deal with the transitional Indian Territory; Edna Ferber's *Cimarron* tells of the Oklahoma land rush and its aftermath; E.W.Howe and William Allen White, both Kansas editors, have written stories of local life; Willa Cather describes the life of the region in many novels; and Steinbeck's *Grapes of Wrath* tells of the Okie emigration.

Plastic Age, The, novel by Percy Marks (q.v.).

Platform of Church-Discipline, see *Cambridge Platform.*

Plattsburg, village on the shore of Lake Champlain in northern New York, near which occurred the first naval engagement of the Revolutionary War (Oct. 11, 1776), in which the British under Sir Guy Carleton defeated the Americans under Benedict Arnold. During the War of 1812, Plattsburg was the headquarters for U.S. frontier troops in that region, and the Battle of Lake Champlain (q.v.) took place near by. Plattsburg Barracks was established in 1838 as a regular U.S. military post and was the site of a training camp for officers during the First World War.

Players, THE, New York City club for actors, writers, painters, sculptors, and musicians, was founded by Edwin Booth (1888), who was president until his death, and presented the organization with a building designed by Stanford White. Later presidents included Joseph Jefferson and John Drew.

Playwrights' Company, theatrical production organization, founded in 1938 by Robert Sherwood, Maxwell Anderson, Elmer Rice, Sidney Howard, and S.N. Behrman, to produce their plays and those of others. Their greatest success has been *Abe Lincoln in Illinois.*

Playwrights Theatre, see *Provincetown Players.*

Plimmoth Plantation, History of, was begun by William Bradford (q.v.), probably shortly after the landing of the Pilgrims. Book I was completed within a year or two, Book II written between 1646

and 1650, and the list of *Mayflower* passengers added in 1651. The manuscript, probably not intended for publication, came at Bradford's death into the hands of his nephew, Nathaniel Morton, who drew on it heavily for *New Englands Memoriall*, and it was similarly used by a later owner, Thomas Prince, for his *Chronological History of New England*, as well as by Thomas Hutchinson as a source of his *History of Massachusetts Bay*. During the Revolution the manuscript disappeared. Discovered in the library of the Bishop of London (1855), it was returned to the Commonwealth of Massachusetts. The entire work was first published in 1856, although Book I had been printed from the Plymouth church records (1841). In presenting his narrative, Bradford endeavors to go to 'the very root and rise of the same,' and the opening book sketches the origin of the Separatist movement, the flight from England to Holland, the settlement at Leiden, the plans for the settlement in New England, and the *Mayflower* voyage. The second book, which includes the major part of the history, is in the form of annals from 1620 to 1646, and describes every aspect of the life of the Pilgrims. Besides being a primary historical source, the work has artistic value because of its dignified, sonorous style, deriving from the Geneva Bible. The narrative is naturally grave, but it has vigorous qualities and an occasional strain of pithy sarcasm.

Plumed Knight, The, epithet applied to Blaine (q.v.) by Robert Ingersoll, in the Republican presidential convention at Cincinnati (1876). Denying that Blaine had accepted a railroad bribe, Ingersoll declared,

> Like an armed warrior, like a plumed knight, James G. Blaine marched down the halls of the American Congress and threw his shining lance full and fair against the brazen foreheads of the defamers of his country and the maligners of his honor.

Plumes, novel by Laurence Stallings (q.v.).

Pluralistic Universe, A, lectures by William James (q.v.).

Plymouth Colony, settlement founded on the Massachusetts coast (1620) by the Pilgrims (q.v.), who arrived on the *Mayflower*. They obtained their charter from the Council for New England. John Carver was the first governor, and the 'Mayflower Compact' remained the basis of government until 1691. This group was independent of the Puritan colony of Massachusetts Bay until the merger in 1684. William Bradford was the most notable early governor of the Plymouth Colony. Among the sources of the colony's early history are *Mourt's Relation*, Bradford's *History*, Winslow's *Good News from New England*, and Winthrop's *Journal*.

Plymouth Company, see *Virginia Company*.

Plymouth Rock, boulder at Plymouth, Massachusetts, on which the *Mayflower* Pilgrims reputedly landed (Dec. 21, 1620).

PM, New York City tabloid newspaper (June 18, 1940–), published daily except Saturday and Sunday. A digest, *PM's Weekly*, is issued Saturday. The newspaper, stapled together and bearing a cover consisting of a large picture and a headline, is suggestive of a magazine. The news is departmentalized, somewhat in the fashion of a news-magazine, and there is a liberal use of photographs and specially drawn illustrations that occupy about a third of the paper. No advertising is accepted, although there is a digest of advertisements selected from the other major papers of the city; other unconventional features include a listing of 'good buys' in food and suggested menus employing these products. The paper is noted for its very liberal pro-labor policies. The editor, Ralph Ingersoll, was formerly the publisher of *Time*, and contributors include T.M.Cleland, Louis Kronenberger, Ben Hecht, Margaret Bourke-White (head photographer), J.T.Winterich, and Leane Zugsmith.

POCAHONTAS, (*c.*1595–1617), daughter of the Indian chief Powhatan (q.v.), was really named Matoaka. Her popular name means 'sportive.' The fame of Pocahontas is largely based on the story in Book III, Chapter 2, of John Smith's *Generall Historie* (1624), which is considered apocryphal. In 1608, according to Smith (q.v.), when Powhatan was about 'to beate out his brains, Pocahontas the Kings dearest daughter, when no intreaty could prevaile, got his head in her armes, and laid her owne upon his to save him from death.' The story has been frequently repeated in history and fiction, the first treatment in the latter form being by John Davis (q.v.). In 1613 Pocahontas was held as hostage for English prisoners,

and in Jamestown became converted to Christianity and married John Rolfe. She went to England with him (1616), and died there. Their descendants include many prominent Virginia families. Her name has been spelled Pokahontas, as in J.E.Cooke's novel, *My Lady Pokahontas*.

Pocket-Handkerchief, Autobiography of a, romance by Cooper (q.v.).

POE, EDGAR ALLAN (1809–49), son of itinerant actors, was born in Boston. His father died the following year, and may have deserted his wife before that time, for she continued to support herself, taking the child with her from place to place until her death at Richmond, Virginia (1811), when she left penniless Edgar and two other children: William Henry Leonard Poe (1807–31), who became a poet and may have collaborated with his brother; and Rosalie Poe (1810–74). Edgar was taken into the home of a Richmond merchant, John Allan. Although never legally adopted, for a long while he used his foster father's name, employing it as a middle name after 1824. He went to England (1815–20) with the Allans, and there attended school, as described in the semi-autobiographical story, 'William Wilson' (q.v.). After their return to Richmond, Mr.Allan, who had inherited a great fortune, was neither faithful to his wife nor sympathetic with his stepson, whose favoring of Mrs.Allan caused him to counter with remarks besmirching the character of Edgar and hinting at the possible illegitimacy of Rosalie. The relationship was further strained during Poe's attendance at the University of Virginia (1826), when Allan would give him no money, and he resorted unsuccessfully to gambling. Allan insisted on Poe's preparation for a legal career, and after a violent quarrel the youth went to Boston, where he published *Tamerlane* (q.v.,1827), issued anonymously at his own expense, which found no public. Under an assumed name and an incorrect age, he entered the U.S. Army (1827) and was sent to Sullivan's Island, South Carolina, the setting for his later stories, 'The Gold-Bug' and 'The Balloon Hoax' (qq.v.). Mrs.Allan's deathbed plea caused a cool reconciliation with Allan, who aided Poe in obtaining an appointment to West Point and sent him a small sum to live on meanwhile in Baltimore, where he stayed with his brother and his aunt, Mrs.Maria Clemm, while arranging for the publication of *Al Aaraaf* (q.v.,1829), which contained the sonnet 'To Science' (q.v.) and 'Tamerlane.' Admitted to West Point (1830), he soon set about by gross neglect of duty to get himself dismissed (1831), since his reason for attendance, the desire to reinstate himself with Allan, had already been lost. During a short stay in New York, he published *Poems by Edgar A. Poe* (1831), containing early versions of 'Israfel,' 'To Helen' (qq.v.), and 'The City in the Sea,' and then went to live with Mrs.Clemm in Baltimore (1831–5), where he began to publish stories in magazines. He first attracted attention with 'MS. Found in a Bottle' (q.v.), which won a contest and brought him to the attention of J.P.Kennedy, who got him an editorial position on the *Southern Literary Messenger*, although he was discharged because of his drinking. At Baltimore he obtained a license (1835) to marry his cousin, Mrs.Clemm's daughter Virginia, aged thirteen, and may have married her before the public ceremony (1836). Re-employed by the *Messenger*, he moved with Mrs.Clemm and Virginia to Richmond, where, before he was finally discharged (1837), he had published the unfinished tragedy *Politian* (q.v.), 83 reviews, 6 poems, 4 essays, and 3 short stories, and greatly increased the magazine's circulation. He moved his family to New York (1837–8), where he did hack work and published *The Narrative of Arthur Gordon Pym* (q.v.), then going to Philadelphia, where as co-editor of *Burton's Gentleman's Magazine* (1839–40) he contributed 'The Fall of the House of Usher,' containing the previously published 'Haunted Palace'; 'William Wilson'; 'The Journal of Julius Rodman'; 'Morella' (qq.v.); and other works; and published *Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque* (q.v.,1840), his first collection, which included 'Berenice'; 'Ligeia,' containing 'The Conqueror Worm'; 'The Assignation' (qq.v.); 'Hans Pfaall'; and other stories. Leaving Burton, he made plans for his own magazine, which led to an acquaintance with T.H.Chivers (q.v.), whose similar poetry caused attacks and counterattacks of plagiarism after Poe's death. Poe was literary editor of *Graham's Magazine* (1841–2), to which he contributed 'The Murders in the Rue Morgue,' 'A Descent into the Maelström,' 'The Masque of the Red Death' (qq.v.), and other works, including some acute criti-

cism which heightened his reputation. To the same magazine he later contributed 'The Imp of the Perverse' (q.v.,1845) and 'The Philosophy of Composition' (q.v., 1846). Here he came to know R.W.Griswold (q.v.), who followed him as editor and bitterly attacked him after his death. In 1842–3 he published 'The Mystery of Marie Rogêt' (q.v.) in a New York magazine, and won a prize in a Philadelphia newspaper for 'The Gold-Bug,' but even this did not help him, since he had wasted opportunities for further publication in Philadelphia. In New York (1844), he wrote 'The Raven' (q.v.), became associated with the *New-York Mirror*, and as literary critic (1844–5) conducted his war there with Longfellow, whom he accused of plagiarism. These attacks he continued after becoming proprietor of the *Broadway Journal* (q.v.,1845), where he also printed 'The Pit and the Pendulum,' 'Eleonora' (qq.v.), and 'The Premature Burial,' and reprinted 'The Tell-Tale Heart' (q.v.) and other works. His eighth book, *Tales* (1845), reprinted previous works selected by E.A.Duyckinck, and included 'The Black Cat' and 'The Purloined Letter' (qq.v.). *The Raven and Other Poems* appeared the same year. Next associated with *Godey's Lady's Book*, Poe published 'The Cask of Amontillado' (q.v.) and his critical articles on 'The Literati' (q.v.), whose harsh criticism of T.D.English prompted an answer, to which Poe replied with a successful libel suit. Lacking regular employment, he with his wife and Mrs.Clemm nearly starved in their Fordham home, and Virginia died of tuberculosis during the winter. Although he published 'Ulalume' and 'The Domain of Arnheim' (qq.v.), and was at work on 'The Bells' and *Eureka* (qq.v.), he was now more than ever in a thoroughly abnormal condition of body and mind, for which he attempted to find solace in the company of a Mrs.Shew, the poet Sarah Whitman, and the Mrs.Richmond addressed in 'To Annie.' Torn between the love of the latter two, he attempted suicide. His erratic mind, depressed in personal affairs, nevertheless showed extreme exaltation in the lecture *Eureka*, in which he attempted to establish an all-embracing theory of cosmogony. Upon his return to Richmond (1849), where he wrote 'Annabel Lee' (q.v.), he made a vigorous attempt to end his addiction to liquor, and became engaged to Mrs.Shelton, a former neighbor of the Allans, with whom he had had an early affair. On his way North to bring Mrs.Clemm to the wedding, he stopped in Baltimore, where five days afterward he was discovered in a delirious condition near a saloon that had been used for a voting place. It has been supposed that he was captured in a drunken condition by a political gang, which used him for the then common practice of repeating votes. Four days later he died, and was buried in Baltimore beside his wife. There have been strongly divergent evaluations of Poe's literary significance, from Emerson's dismissal of him as 'the jingle man' and Lowell's 'three-fifths genius and two-fifths sheer fudge' to Yeats's declaration, 'always and for all lands a great lyric poet.' The difference of opinion is at heart directed at his criticism, for the poetry consistently exemplifies the theories set forth in 'The Philosophy of Composition,' 'The Rationale of Verse,' and 'The Poetic Principle' (qq.v.), in which he indicated his conception of poetic unity to be one of mood or emotion, and especially emphasized the beauty of melancholy. This romantic attitude has led to the criticism that his poetry is no more than a sustained tone, entirely dominated by its atmosphere. His reputation is also grounded on his use of the short story, which he preferred to the novel on the same basis that he preferred the short poem to the long. The stories may be said to fall into two categories, those of horror, set in a crepuscular world, and those of ratiocination, which set the standard for the modern detective story and conform to the critical theories expounded in *Eureka*. Although Poe was strongly influenced by many authors: e.g. Tennyson in his poetry, Coleridge in his criticism, and C.B.Brown in his fiction; he himself proved a source of influence on such Americans as Bierce and Hart Crane, and such Englishmen as Rossetti, Swinburne, Dowson, and Stevenson, besides having a profound effect on the French *Symbolistes*.

Poet at the Breakfast-Table, sequel to *The Autocrat of the Breakfast-Table* (q.v.).

Poetic Principle, The, lecture by Poe (q.v.), delivered in various cities (1848–9) and posthumously published in *The Union Magazine* (1850). Partly an elocutionary vehicle, it contains short poems by Willis,

Longfellow, Bryant, Shelley, Thomas Moore, Hood, Byron, and Tennyson.

Developing the theories already stated in 'The Philosophy of Composition' (q.v.) and other places, Poe declares that 'a long poem does not exist . . . A poem deserves its title only inasmuch as it excites, by elevating the soul . . . That degree of excitement . . . cannot be sustained throughout a composition of any great length.' This is true because of 'that vital requisite in all works of Art, Unity,' and the 'absolute effect of even the best epic under the sun is a nullity.' He proceeds to 'the heresy of the Didactic': 'there neither exists nor *can* exist any work more thoroughly dignified, more supremely noble than [the] poem which is a poem and nothing more—[the] poem written solely for the poem's sake.' The proper mood for teaching a truth is completely opposed to the poetic mood. Poetry arises in the passionate reaching out 'to apprehend the supernal Loveliness,' to attain a vision, however brief, of the ideal beauty which is usually beyond our ken. 'I would define, in brief, the Poetry of words as *The Rhythmical Creation of Beauty*. Its sole arbiter is Taste.' Love, 'the purest and truest of all poetical themes,' is the highest variety of beauty, and beauty is 'the province of the poem . . . The incitements of Passion, or the precepts of Duty, or even the lessons of Truth, may . . . be introduced . . . but the true artist will always contribute to tone them down in proper subjection to . . . Beauty.'

Poetry: A Magazine of Verse (1912–), founded at Chicago by Harriet Monroe. The best magazine devoted exclusively to poetry, and the precursor of many other little magazines, *Poetry* has had an extremely stimulating influence on American literature. Without confining itself to any school or type, it has published the work of such diverse authors as Sandburg, Amy Lowell, T.S.Eliot, Frost, H.D., Ezra Pound (for a time an editor), Vachel Lindsay, and Hart Crane, and in many cases first brought them to public attention.

Poictesme, mythical medieval country, the scene of *Jurgen* and other romances by Cabell (q.v.).

POKAHONTAS, see *Pocahontas*.

Police Gazette, see *National Police Gazette*.

Politian: a Tragedy, unfinished blank verse drama by Poe (q.v.), of which selected scenes were published in the *Southern Literary Messenger* (1835–6). The work remained in manuscript until 1923, when it appeared in its entirety in a scholarly edition arranged by T.O.Mabbott. 'The Coliseum' (1833) was incorporated in the text by Poe. *Politian* is based on the Kentucky Tragedy (q.v.), but the scene is 16th-century Rome.

Castiglione, son of the Duke Di Broglio, seduces his father's orphan ward Lalage. When he becomes engaged to his cousin Alessandra, Lalage swears that she will be avenged. Politian, Earl of Leicester, comes to Rome from England, falls in love with Lalage, and accepts her demand that he kill Castiglione. Irresolute, he postpones the act and goes to the Coliseum to meditate. There he is joined by Lalage, who reminds him that Castiglione's marriage is about to take place, and Politian departs to fulfil his promise.

Political Fables, The, three tales by Cotton Mather (q.v.), circulated in manuscript (*c.*1692) and printed in *The Andros Tracts* (1868). They defend Sir William Phips (q.v.) and the new Massachusetts charter, warning New Englanders to abstain from internal disputes when they are endangered from outside.

Political Greenhouse, Federalist verse satire on events in 1798 by Richard Alsop, Lemuel Hopkins, and Theodore Dwight (qq.v.), reprinted in 1799 from the *Connecticut Courant*.

Political Litany, A, mock litany by Freneau (q.v.) published in 1775. Beginning with the traditional 'Libera Nos, Domine,' this slashing satire in anapestic couplets proceeds to pray for complete and final deliverance from association with the British.

Politician Outwitted, The, comedy attributed to Samuel Low, a federal official, was produced in 1788 and published in 1789. Obviously modeled on *The Contrast*, it presents its political opinions through Old Loveyet, who disinherits his son because of his adherence to the new Constitution, and Trueman, who stanchly upholds it. Old Loveyet is completely routed in love and politics, while his son Charles and Trueman emerge victorious.

POLK, JAMES KNOX (1795–1849), 11th President of the U.S. (1845–9), was born

in North Carolina, graduated from the state university (1818), and opened his law practice in Tennessee. After serving in the Tennessee legislature, he entered Congress as a supporter of the policies of Jackson (1825–39), defending the President's attack on the Bank of the United States, and becoming Speaker of the House (1835–9). Polk was governor of Tennessee (1839–41), and in 1844 was nominated as a 'dark horse' presidential candidate by the Democrats, owing to Van Buren's opposition to the annexation of Texas. Narrowly defeating Clay, he had an eventful administration, in which he fought the spoils system, attempted to settle sectional disputes, reduced the tariff, and re-established the Independent Treasury system. His militant nationalism caused the '54°40' or fight' campaign, which concluded the Oregon Question (q.v.), and the annexation of Texas, the Mexican War (q.v.), and the consequent acquisition of California and New Mexico. His *Diary* has been edited by Allan Nevins (1932).

POLLARD, [Joseph] Percival (1869–1911), born in Germany, was educated in England, and came to the U.S. (1885), where he won a great contemporary reputation as a critic, through his interpretation of European literature for the American public and his pungent attacks on sentimentality and puritanical morality in American literature. He influenced such writers as Bierce and Mencken, but collected little of his magazine writings and is now relatively obscure. *Their Day in Court* (1909) is the most important collection of his criticism. His plays, *Nocturno* (1906) and *The Ambitious Mrs.Alcott* (1907), were never published. He did much work without credit as an adapter for Richard Mansfield, whom he satirized in his novel, *The Imitator* (1901).

POLLOCK, Channing (1880–), born in Washington,D.C., became a New York journalist and dramatic critic, and began his career as a playwright with an adaptation of *The Pit* (1900). This was followed by a long series of farces, melodramas, and musical comedy librettos, but in 1922 he turned to the thesis drama with *The Fool*, about a modern minister who attempts to emulate the career of Christ. *The Enemy* (1925), another homiletic play, is a plea for pacifism, set in Austria at the beginning of the World War. *Mr.Moneypenny* (1928) is an allegory of a wage slave who sells his soul to the modern devil, Mr.Moneypenny, for enormous wealth, but eventually escapes to return to his original poverty and honesty. *The House Beautiful* (1931), another allegory, is concerned with a clerk whose wife thinks of him as a modern Sir Galahad. The critical disapproval of these plays led Pollock to retire from the theater. *The Adventures of a Happy Man* (1939) is an exposition of his philosophy of contentment.

Pollyanna, character in the juvenile novels of Eleanor Porter (q.v.).

Polyphonic prose, free verse form that employs a succession of varied rhythms and all the devices of poetry, but is printed as prose and follows a mood rather than a strict metrical pattern. French in origin, it was frequently used by Amy Lowell and John Gould Fletcher.

Pomona, character in *Rudder Grange* (q.v.).

PONCE DE LÉON, Juan (*c.*1460–1521), Spanish explorer, came to America with Columbus (1493) and later conquered Puerto Rico, of which he was governor (1509–12). Having enriched himself in this position, he set out to investigate the legend of a 'fountain of youth,' and discovered Florida (1513). He then visited Spain, where he was commissioned to colonize the new territory. It was not until 1521 that he again left Puerto Rico for Florida, but his attempt to found a settlement failed after a fierce Indian attack, in which he was mortally wounded. He figures as the hero in O'Neill's *The Fountain.*

Ponteach, *or the Savages of America,* blank verse play by Robert Rogers (q.v.), published in 1766. It was the first tragedy to be written about the Indians. Rogers had served in the expedition to crush Pontiac's rebellion, but in the play he extols the noble Indian warrior and depicts the baseness of the English methods. The facts are still regarded as authentic, aside from the idealization of the chief, and Parkman used the play as a principal source of his *History of the Conspiracy of Pontiac.*

PONTIAC (*c.*1720–69), Ottawa Indian chief, considered a moving spirit in the struggle known as Pontiac's Rebellion or Pontiac's Conspiracy, although he was present only at the siege of Detroit. Ac-

cording to the Treaty of Paris (1763), the Ohio Valley and other Western areas were assigned to the Indians, but the uprising had already commenced. From spring until winter of that year, Pontiac laid siege to Fort Detroit, but his various schemes and attacks were unsuccessful. Great slaughter occurred elsewhere, outposts were destroyed, and the frontier settlements of Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia were terrorized. The success of the English campaign in Pennsylvania led to a treaty of peace (1764), to which Pontiac finally acceded in July 1765. The English commanders included Amherst, Gage, and Sir William Johnson. Robert Rogers, who was also active in the struggle, wrote the popular drama, *Ponteach* (q.v.,1766), which was largely responsible for the reputation of the chief as a romantic hero. Parkman's *History of the Conspiracy of Pontiac* (1851) is the most famous account.

Pony Express, U.S. mail service to Sacramento, California, from St. Joseph, Missouri, the temporary terminus of the telegraph line. This picturesque service was operated from April 1860 until late in the following year, when the transcontinental telegraph was completed. The 80 riders used horses, not ponies. Each man carried 20 pounds of mail, at a cost of $5 per letter, and changed horses three times at intervals of ten miles. The total distance of 1,960 miles was usually covered in eight days, and the service was important in maintaining swift communication between the capital and the Pacific Coast, at the outbreak of the Civil War. It figures frequently in Western literature, e.g. *Roughing It.*

POOLE, Ernest (1880–), born in Chicago, graduated from Princeton (1902) and lived at University Settlement, New York City, while working for the abolition of child labor and other social reforms. He helped Upton Sinclair gather material for *The Jungle,* and in 1906 published his own first novel, *The Voice of the Street,* portraying the social background of the poverty-stricken East Side. His knowledge of New York social conditions also provided material for *The Harbor* (q.v.,1915), his best-known novel, dealing with the changing industrial activities about the wharves. Meanwhile he was serving as a war correspondent in Germany and France, and in 1917 went to Russia, where his socialist beliefs brought him into intimate contact with the October Revolution, with which he sympathized. *His Family* (q.v.,1917; Pulitzer Prize, 1918) portrays a New York family as representative of the changing standards in modern life. Making his home in New York, Poole continued his literary career with a long succession of novels and stories, including: *His Second Wife* (1918), about a woman who marries her widowed brother-in-law and wages a long struggle with the influence of her dead sister; *'The Dark People'* (1918), Russian sketches; *The Village* (1918), further sketches concerned with Russian peasants; *Blind* (1920), a semi-autobiographical novel of tenement life in New York, the European war, and revolution in Russia; *Beggar's Gold* (1921), the story of a New York teacher who, toward the end of a long life of service and suffering, achieves his dream of visiting China; *Millions* (1922), an ironic tale of a family awaiting the death of a relative, who, unknown to them, has lost his fortune; *Danger* (1923), concerned with a neurotic woman who wrecks the lives of her brother and sister-in-law; *The Avalanche* (1924), dealing with the conflict between a young neurologist's ideals and his wife's desire for their worldly success; *The Hunter's Moon* (1925), telling of a boy's dream of a trip to the peaceful woods, away from his loveless home; *The Little Dark Man* (1925), Russian sketches; *With Eastern Eyes* (1926), describing a Russian scientist's reactions to American society; *Silent Storms* (1927), a novel dealing with the conflicting standards of an American financier and his young French wife; *The Car of Cræsus* (1930), again dealing with Russian visitors in the U.S.; *The Destroyer* (1931), about a conflict between brothers, one a business man and the other a writer; *Nurses on Horseback* (1932), an account of the frontier nursing service in the Kentucky mountains; *Great Winds* (1933), a novel contrasting the complex life of a modern family with its peaceful, conservative New Hampshire background; and *One of Us* (1934), telling of the changes in New England life as observed by an old storekeeper. *The Bridge* (1940) is his autobiography.

POOLE, William Frederick (1821–94), Massachusetts librarian, as an undergraduate at Yale in 1848 began his *Alphabetical Index to Subjects Treated in the . . . Periodicals . . .* , the precursor of the present

Reader's Guide to Periodical Literature. He compiled catalogues for the Boston Athenæum, the public libraries of Cincinnati and Chicago, and the Newberry Library (Chicago), all of which he headed at different times. His writings include: *The Battle of the Dictionaries* (1856), *The Popham Colony* (1866), and *Cotton Mather and Salem Witchcraft* (1869).

Poor House, Over the Hills to the, poem by Will Carleton (q.v.).

Poor Richard's Almanack, written and published by Franklin (q.v.) at Philadelphia (1733–58), is the most famous of American almanacs (q.v.), although it followed the pattern previously established in the colonies and in England. *Poor Richard's* undoubtedly derives from *Poor Robin's,* the English almanac which began publication in 1663, and the name Richard Saunders, with which Franklin signed his prefaces, is the same as that of the English editor of *Apollo Anglicanus.* Franklin likewise owed other debts to predecessors, particularly to his Pennsylvania contemporary, Titan Leeds (q.v.), on whom he played a hoax that resembles Swift's humorous prognostication of the death of a rival almanac maker. To the almanac Franklin introduced characters on whom he draped his humor and homely wisdom, and the figures Richard and Bridget Saunders became popular in the contemporary American mind. Many of the shrewd maxims and proverbs that Franklin wrote and collected were brought together in *Father Abraham's Speech,* the harangue of a wise old man to the people attending an auction, and have frequently been reprinted from the almanac of 1758 as *The Way to Wealth.* These included, however, only those that inculcated virtue and frugality, and not the many other witty and cynical observations. The almanacs from 1748 on were called *Poor Richard Improved,* and probably did not contain any writing by Franklin, who sold the almanac (1758), although it continued to be published until 1796.

Poor White, novel by Sherwood Anderson (q.v.) published in 1920.

Hugh McVey, a telegraph operator at Pickleville, near Bidwell, Ohio, is isolated by his shyness from the people around him, whom he hopes to relieve of their back-breaking toil in cabbage planting. He invents a mechanical planter, but Steve Hunter exploits Hugh and the country people by causing them to invest in a company that, like the planter, is a failure. Hugh's next inventions, a corn-cutter and a contrivance for loading coal cars, are so successful as to make Steve a millionaire and Bidwell a booming manufacturing town. Hugh, even in prosperity, finds it impossible to bridge the gap between himself and others. His shyness is appreciated only by Clara Butterworth, who marries him after her experiences with other men have left her with a loathing for their brutality. Bidwell acquires the characteristics of a modern industrial town, with foreign workmen crowding its streets, and such craftsmen as Joe Wainsworth, who stand out against the factory, are broken in spirit. Pioneer democracy gives way to class distinctions based on wealth. Bosses and agitators appear, and there are strikes, violence, and killings. Hugh finally awakens from his calculations with gears and levers to a moral evaluation of his corrupting effect on Bidwell and its people.

POORE, Benjamin Perley (1820–87), journalist and author, known for his many popular biographies of people ranging from Louis Philippe to General Burnside, and for his reporting of Washington politics for the Boston *Journal* and other papers, under the signature Perley. He also wrote *Perley's Reminiscences of Sixty Years in the National Metropolis* (1886).

POPE, John (1822–92), born in Kentucky, graduated from West Point (1842) and served in the Mexican War. After further service in the West, he commanded the Army of the Mississippi at the outbreak of the Civil War, opening the river for Northern communication nearly as far as Memphis. In command of the Army of Virginia, he was disastrously defeated in the second Battle of Bull Run (q.v.,Aug. 1862). His lack of judgment and accusations against subordinates caused him to be removed to the Northwest, where he continued to lead Indian campaigns and frontier departments.

POPHAM, George (*c.*1550–1608), member of the Virginia Company of Plymouth, led an exploring party which settled at Fort Saint George, at the mouth of the Kennebec River, Maine (1607). The colony disbanded after his death.

Popular Sovereignty, see *Squatter Sovereignty.*

Populist Party, was formed in 1891 by a

combination of farmer and labor reform groups, chiefly from the West. For more than a decade its importance was exceeded only by that of the Republican and Democratic Parties, and in 1896 the Populist candidate, Bryan, captured the Democratic convention with his advocacy of free coinage of silver. Other Populist policies included demands for government ownership of railroads, the eight-hour day, pensions, a graduated income tax, increased paper money, and loans on non-perishable agricultural commodities. After Bryan's defeat, the party dwindled until its demise in 1904.

PORCUPINE, PETER, pseudonym of William Cobbett (q.v.).

Porcupine, The, play by E.A.Robinson (q.v.).

Porcupine's Gazette and Daily Advertiser (1797–9), Federalist, pro-British daily newspaper, published from Philadelphia by William Cobbett (q.v.). His coarse partisanship led him into a controversy with the anti-Federalist *Aurora* and its editor, B.F.Bache, as well as many others. The paper was discontinued when Benjamin Rush won a $5,000 judgment for libel.

Porgy, character in *The Partisan, Woodcraft* (qq.v.), and other Revolutionary Romances of Simms (q.v.).

Porgy, novel by DuBose Heyward (q.v.) published in 1925. The dramatization by the author and his wife, Dorothy, was awarded the 1927 Pulitzer Prize. Gershwin's *Porgy and Bess* (1935) is an opera based on the story.

In the Negro tenement section of the Charleston waterfront, known as Catfish Row, Porgy is a crippled beggar, celebrated for his luck with dice. He gambles regularly with the Negroes Robbins and Crown, until Crown kills Robbins in a quarrel and escapes to a thicket outside the town. Porgy denies knowledge of the crime, but old Peter, another denizen of the tenement, is imprisoned as a witness. Thus losing the friend who has helped him to move about, Porgy buys a goat-cart, and continues to beg. Bess, formerly 'Crown's Bess,' becomes his mistress, and for a time they live happily together, until she returns to her addiction to narcotics and discovers Crown's hiding place. Porgy is forced to stab Crown, to protect Bess from his influence. He is not suspected of the murder, but is wanted as a witness, and is jailed when he tries to escape. After his release, he resumes his life in Catfish Row, but Bess, who has lost hope of his return, has left with a group of river workers for the cotton plantations.

Port Folio, The (1801–27), Philadelphia literary magazine founded by Joseph Dennie (q.v.), was published weekly during the first eight years that constituted its most significant period. It followed Dennie's conservatism, which was both political and literary, decried the failure of American democracy and Webster's encouragement of an American idiom, and was typified by its editor's Addisonian 'Lay Preacher' essays. Other contributors included the English poet Tom Moore, Joseph Hopkinson, Alexander Wilson, Nicholas Biddle, C.B.Brown, Royall Tyler, J.Q.Adams, Gouverneur Morris, T.G. Fessenden, and James Hall. The magazine became a monthly (1809) and later had a succession of editors. After 1816 it undertook to 'vindicate the character of American literature and manners,' and published much material about the West.

Port Royal, see *French and Indian Wars.*

PORTER, DAVID (1780–1843), born in Boston, entered the navy (1798) and served in the West Indies and the Tripolitan War. Accompanied by his adopted son, David Farragut (q.v.), he cruised in the Pacific during the War of 1812, protecting American trade and capturing British whaling ships. He took possession of the Marquesas Islands, but the U.S. government never recognized this act. Porter's account of the voyage was published as *Journal of a Cruise Made to the Pacific Ocean* (1815), a passage of which suggested one of the sketches in Melville's 'The Encantadas.' Defeated in battle by the British at Valparaiso (1814), he returned to Washington and later went to the West Indies to suppress piracy (1823–5). There his hostile acts against the friendly Spanish caused him to be suspended from the navy. With his son, D.D. Porter, he then went to Mexico, whose navy he commanded (1826–9), until his friend Jackson became President, and appointed him U.S.consul-general to Algiers and later minister to Turkey. His letters to Paulding were published as *Constantinople and Its Environs* (2 vols.,1835).

DAVID DIXON PORTER (1813–91), his son, left the Mexican Navy (1829) to

enter the U S.Navy, and served in the Mexican War. He then entered the merchant marine, but in 1861 returned to the navy, assisting in Farragut's capture of New Orleans and the seizure of Vicksburg. He rose to the rank of admiral, and served as superintendent of Annapolis (1865–9), improving its organization. Besides his *Memoir* of his father (1865), he wrote novels, and histories of the Civil War.

PORTER, Eleanor Hodgman (1868–1920), author of juvenile novels, best known for her character, Pollyanna, the 'glad child.' Her works include *Cross Currents* (1907); *Miss Billy* (1911); *Pollyanna* (1913); and *Pollyanna Grows Up* (1915).

PORTER, Gene Stratton, see *Stratton-Porter.*

PORTER, Katherine Anne (1894–), Texas-born author of fiction and poetry, has been a journalist in many cities of the U.S. and Europe, and was awarded a Guggenheim Fellowship in 1931. Her fiction includes: *Flowering Judas* (1930), a collection of stories set in Mexico and the U.S., noted for their intense drama and psychological penetration, which was reissued with four additional stories in 1935; *Hacienda* (1934), a story of emotional stress, concerned with a group of Russian film workers in Mexico; *Noon Wine* (1937), a novelette of life on a Texas farm that reaches its melodramatic climax with a murder and suicide; and *Pale Horse, Pale Rider* (1939), reprinting *Noon Wine* with two other novelettes, the title piece and 'Old Mortality,' both dealing with the life of an unconventional Southern girl before and during the First World War.

PORTER, Noah (1811–92), professor of moral philosophy and metaphysics at Yale (1846–71) and president of the college (1871–86). Although a stanch Calvinist and bitter opponent of Darwinism, he is considered a leader of modern thought because his book, *The Human Intellect* (1868), was an important early work on psychology. His other books include: *The Sciences of Nature versus the Science of Man* (1871) and *Science and Humanity* (1872).

PORTER, William Sydney (1862–1910), best known by his pseudonym, O.Henry, was born in North Carolina, where after a brief schooling he worked in a drugstore. In 1882 he went to Texas to seek his fortune, and after trying his hand at various types of work, including a position as teller in an Austin bank (1891–4), founded a humorous weekly, *The Rolling Stone* (1894–5), and wrote for a Houston paper (1895–6) a daily column whose main staple was humorous anecdotes. In 1896 he was indicted for alleged embezzlement of funds at the bank for which he had worked. Since the bank was loosely run and his loss of a small sum was rather a case of technical mismanagement than crime, he might have been acquitted had he not fled to Honduras, from which he returned to Austin when his wife was on her deathbed. During his three-year imprisonment, he began to write short stories based on the life he knew in Texas, Honduras, and elsewhere, and it was the penitentiary ordeal that changed him from a newspaper columnist to a mature author. After his release he went to New York (1902) to continue his literary career, and remained there for the rest of his life, making the city the scene of much of his fiction. As a contributor to magazines he became immensely popular, turning out stories at the rate of one a week. *Cabbages and Kings* (1904), his first book, is a series of stories of revolution and adventure in Latin America, integrated by a loose general plot and a single group of characters into the form of a novel. His later collections of stories followed each other with great rapidity: *The Four Million* (1906); *Heart of the West* (1907); *The Trimmed Lamp* (1907); *The Gentle Grafter* (1908); *The Voice of the City* (1908); *Options* (1909); *Roads of Destiny* (1909); *Whirligigs* (1910); and *Strictly Business* (1910). He had written so prolifically that after his death posthumous collections continued to appear, including *Sixes and Sevens* (1911), *Rolling Stones* (1913), *Waifs and Strays* (1917), and *Postscripts* (1923). 'A Retrieved Reformation,' his story of a reformed burglar, was the basis of Paul Armstrong's popular play, *Alias Jimmy Valentine* (1909). Although his stories are set in many parts of the U.S., as well as in Central and South America, Porter is best known for his observations on the diverse lives of everyday New Yorkers, 'the four million' neglected by other writers. He had a fine gift of humor and was adept at the ingenious depiction of ironic circumstances, in plots frequently dependent upon coincidence. A master in presenting vignettes of the whirligig of fortune, he saw life always in episodic form and was incapable of longer unified work or any

philosophic generalization of his fatalistic outlook. His characters, plain, simple people, and his plots, depending often on the surprise ending, have little diversification, but he was skilled at ringing the changes on a few themes. 'The Gift of the Magi' and 'The Furnished Room,' in *The Four Million* (q.v.), are among the best known of the tales that illustrate his technique of ironic coincidence and the surprise ending. *O.Henry Encore* (1939) is a collection of stories and illustrations recovered from his early contributions to the Houston *Post*.

PORTER, WILLIAM T[ROTTER] (1809–58), born in Vermont, began his journalistic career there, before moving to New York, where in 1831 he established the *Spirit of the Times* (q.v.), a racy chronicle primarily distinguished for its publication of tales of the Southwestern frontier. From it he collected material by such authors as T.B. Thorpe, G.W.Harris, J.J.Hooper, and W.T.Thompson in *The Big Bear of Arkansas* (q.v.,1845), *A Quarter Race in Kentucky* (1847), and *Colonel Thorpe's Scenes in Arkansaw* (1858).

Porter's Spirit of the Times, see *Spirit of the Times.*

Portico, The (1816–18), monthly literary magazine, published from Baltimore by the Delphian Club (q.v.). It was chauvinistic in its admiration of the U.S. and sternly criticized foreign authors. John Neal was an editor, and J.P.Kennedy may have been an anonymous contributor.

PORTOLÁ, GASPAR DE (*fl.*1734–84), Spanish governor of the Californias, in 1769 began his thousand-mile march from Lower California to Monterey, Upper California, where he founded a mission and presidio to protect Spanish possessions from possible invasion. Among those who accompanied him were Junípero Serra, Miguel Costanso, and Juan Crespi (qq.v.), of whom the latter two kept full diaries of the expedition.

Portrait of a Lady, The, novel by Henry James (q.v.) published in 1881.

Mrs.Touchett, estranged wife of an expatriated American banker, brings to England her penniless niece, Isabel Archer, in her early twenties, intelligent and beautiful, who immediately attracts old Mr. Touchett, his invalid son Ralph, and their wealthy neighbor, Lord Warburton. The nobleman proposes marriage, but Isabel refuses him, and her courage and independence win the admiration of the Touchetts. Casper Goodwood, a sincere, persistent suitor, comes from America to renew his proposal, but Isabel tells him that her personal independence is her most valued possession and that she must have two years before giving him her answer. Ralph is also in love with her, but realizes that they cannot marry and arranges for her financial security by persuading his father to make her his heir. At the old man's death, Isabel becomes wealthy and goes to Florence with Mrs. Touchett. There Madame Merle, a gracious expatriate, introduces her to Gilbert Osmond, an American dilettante and widower. Incapable of perceiving that he desires her fortune, Isabel is won by Osmond's taste and intellectual detachment, despite the protests of Casper and her other friends. During the following years, she becomes aware of her husband's shallow æstheticism and lack of moral depth, but decides against a separation because of her pride, determination to fulfil her obligations, and sympathy for Pansy, Osmond's frail young daughter. Warburton, who still loves her, becomes a constant visitor and seeks to marry Pansy. Madame Merle is active in this new matchmaking, and she and Osmond urge Isabel to use her influence with Warburton, but Isabel withdraws when Pansy shows that she does not desire the marriage. This widens the breach between Isabel and her husband, who accuses her of an affair with Warburton. Summoned to England, where Ralph is dying, Isabel feels that she may never return to Italy, especially when she learns that Pansy's mother is Madame Merle. After comforting Ralph on his deathbed, she is joined by Casper, for whom she finally admits her affection. Conscience and her duty to Pansy dominate her desires, however, and she dismisses Casper and returns to her unhappy home.

PORY, JOHN (1572–1635), English geographer and colonist, studied under Hakluyt and came to Virginia (1619) as secretary of state for the colony. While on a trading voyage, he was wrecked in the Azores and captured by Spaniards, but managed to return to England. His lively accounts of Virginia were published in Smith's *Generall Historie* and later scholarly collections.

Possession, novel by Louis Bromfield (q.v.).

POST, EMILY (1873–), author of *Etiquette* (1922), expounds her version of modern social proprieties through a syndicated newspaper column.

POST, MELVILLE DAVISSON (1871–1930), popular author of mystery novels and detective stories, whose ability at plot structure in the latter form won him attention from serious literary critics. His books include: *The Man of Last Resort* (1897); *Corrector of Destinies* (1909); and *The Nameless Thing* (1912).

POSTL, KARL, see *Sealsfield, Charles.*

Postman Always Rings Twice, The, novel by James M. Cain (q.v.).

Postscripts, stories by W.S.Porter (q.v.).

Pot of Earth, The, free verse narrative by MacLeish (q.v.) published in 1925.

Based on a primitive fertility legend in *The Golden Bough,* concerning the gardens of Adonis, this bitter, sensuously wrought narrative is presented in three parts: 'The Sowing of the Dead Corn,' describing the mystery and terror of the heroine's sexual awakening in girlhood; 'The Shallow Grass,' telling of her marriage and pregnancy; and 'The Carrion Spring,' in which her child is born dead, and she herself dies, ending a rootless, futile life, symbolic of the poet's despairing pessimism.

Potawatami Indians, Algonquian tribe affiliated with the Ojibway and Ottawa. They aided the French in the French and Indian Wars, joined in Pontiac's Rebellion and other uprisings, and were on the side of the British during the Revolution and the War of 1812. They figure in Cooper's *Oak Openings.*

Potiphar Papers, The, seven satirical sketches of New York society by G.W. Curtis (q.v.), published in 1853. Portraying the hypocrisies and foibles of 'our best society,' the author considers this class to be composed of three types: 'first, those who are rich . . . ; second, those who belong to what are technically called "the good old families" . . . ; and, thirdly, a swarm of youths who can dance dexterously, and who are invited for that purpose' to stupid, absurd parties. Beneath the surface of comedy there is an undercurrent of serious thought, for Curtis perceived dangerous tendencies in this society. The book is notable for its depiction of such characters as the socially ambitious Mrs.Potiphar, her philosophically resigned husband, and the tenderly sympathetic Reverend Cream Cheese.

Potomac, ARMY OF THE, Union army in the Civil War, the northeastern part of the cordon thrown about the South. Organized as a division in July 1861, the Army was active under McClellan in the Peninsular Campaign (q.v.) and the Antietam Campaign (Sept. 1862), under Burnside in the Battle of Fredericksburg (Dec. 1862), under Hooker in the drive on Richmond (May 1863), under Meade in the Battle of Gettysburg (q.v.), and under Grant in the Wilderness Campaign (q.v.) and in the advance on Appomattox Courthouse.

POTTER, ISRAEL, see *Israel Potter.*

POTTER, PAUL MEREDITH (1853–1921), English-born dramatist, after his early journalistic career in the U.S., won a reputation as a dramatizer of such romantic novels as DuMaurier's *Trilby* (1895), Ouida's *Under Two Flags* (1901), and Balzac's *The Honor of the Family* (1907). Potter's best-known original play was *The Ugly Duckling* (1890).

Poulson's American Daily Advertiser, see *Pennsylvania Packet.*

POUND, EZRA [LOOMIS] (1885–), Idaho-born poet and critic, after study at the University of Pennsylvania and Hamilton College, taught briefly at Wabash College, from which he was dismissed because of his impatience with formal academic methods, despite his ability as a teacher and individualistic amateur of scholarship. He went to Italy (1908), where his first book, *A Lume Spento* (1908), was published. He has since lived in London (1909–20), in Paris (1920–24), and at Rapallo on the Riviera. In 1909 he published two volumes of verse, *Personæ* and *Exultations* (both reprinted as *Personæ*, 1926). The intensity and strictly disciplined metrical experimentation of these works attracted attention, as did his erudite and carefully employed knowledge of medieval literature, Provençal singers, and troubadour ballads. *Provença* (1910), *Canzoni* (1911), and *Ripostes* (1912) further extended the paths he had marked for himself; but also indicated his tendency to allow scholarship to become an unduly important part of his poetry. This trend continues in his translation of *The Sonnets and Ballate of Guido Cavalcanti* (1912); *Cathay* (1915), translations from the Chinese, based on the notes of Fenollosa;

and *Umbra* (1920), containing selections from his own earlier poems, and translations from Cavalcanti and Arnaut Daniel. He began to scatter his talents and interests, and became a leader of the Vorticists, the Imagists (q.v.), and other groups, for whom he edited magazines and anthologies. It was he who established the importance of such journals as *Poetry* and *The Little Review*, and he wrote much about his successive enthusiasms, which were generally acknowledged as significant following his pioneer work. Among the artists he has championed are T.S. Eliot, James Joyce, Tagore, the musician George Antheil, and the sculptor Gaudier-Brzeska. *Lustra*, a title used both for a new volume of poetry (1916) and a selection from his earlier work (1917), was followed by *Quia Pauper Amavi* (1919), containing the first three cantos of a lengthy projected work, with a flexible though definite stanzaic form that flows like conversation. His subsequent poetry has been primarily devoted to these *Cantos*, first collected in *A Draft of XVI Cantos* (1925), and intended to reach 100 and to have a structure akin to the *Divina Commedia*. They will then form a poetic human comedy, dealing with three eras—ancient history, the Renaissance, and the present—and having as leitmotifs the repetitions of history. As products of a mind that, by being uprooted from its native country, has assumed an international character, his cantos deal with the wreck of civilizations, past and present, and range in space and time over subjects seemingly far removed. Among them all, however, there is an ironic relation, which is meant to evaluate the present by comparison, and teach a morality for the individual based on Confucian thought and a morality for society based on the humanitarian use of state-controlled credit and money. Although the incomplete work, of which 71 cantos had been published by 1940, has sometimes been considered confusing and pedantic, it has already had a great influence on such works as *The Waste Land*, *The Bridge*, and *Conquistador*. Pound's critical prose includes: *The Spirit of Romance* (1910); *Certain Noble Plays of Japan* (1916) and *Noh—or, Accomplishment* (1916), both edited from the notes of Fenollosa, whose literary executor he was; *Gaudier-Brzeska* (1916), a biography; *Pavannes and Divisions* (1918); *Instigations* (1920); *Indiscretions* (1923); *Antheil and the Treatise on Harmony* (1924); *The ABC of Reading* (1934); *Make It New* (1934); *Polite Essays* (1937); and *Culture* (1938), an 'intellectual autobiography.'

POUND, Roscoe (1870–), Nebraska-born jurist, dean of the Harvard Law School (1916–37), has since been a 'roving' professor at Harvard. His books include: *The Spirit of the Common Law* (1921), *Introduction to the Philosophy of Law* (1922), *Law and Morals* (1924), and *Criminal Justice in America* (1930).

Louise Pound (1872–), his sister, is a professor at the University of Nebraska and a noted student of the American language and folklore. She edited *American Speech* (1925–33), and her books include *American Songs and Ballads* (1922).

POUND, Thomas (*c.*1650–1703), born in England, came to Massachusetts (1687), where he served as a naval captain until he turned to piracy, but after his capture (1690) was released and became a captain in the royal navy. He made the first engraved map of Boston harbor (*c.*1691).

POWDERLY, Terence V[incent] (1849–1924), Pennsylvania-born leader of the Knights of Labor (q.v.,1879–93), championed the abolition of the wage system and the substitution of a method of co-operative production. He was largely responsible for the passage of the Chinese Exclusion Act and the Contract Labor Act. In later life he became more conservative, and was an official of the Bureau of Immigration. He wrote *Thirty Years of Labor*, 1859–89 (1889) and *The Path I Trod* (1940).

POWELL, John (1882–), pianist and composer born in Richmond, Virginia, is best known for his *Rhapsodie Nègre* (1920) for piano and orchestra, his *Sonata Virginianesque* (1919), and his piano suite *At the Fair* (1912), as well as other compositions marked by a vigorous and original interpretation of the Southern spirit in music.

POWELL, Thomas (1809–87), English-born hack writer, came to the U.S. (1849) after accusations of literary forgery, and some of his works are still erroneously attributed to such authors as Leigh Hunt and Browning. He did collaborate with Wordsworth, Hunt, and others, in *The Poems of Geoffrey Chaucer Modernized* (1841). In the U.S. he was among the Bohemian frequenters of Pfaff's, and in addi-

tion to his journalism wrote a book on *The Living Authors of America* (1850). His *Leaves from My Life* is said to be untrustworthy.

POWER, [FREDERICK] TYRONE (1869–1931), grandson of Tyrone Power, a famous Irish actor, was born in England, began his stage career in the U.S. under the ægis of Augustin Daly, and later became a leading man for Mrs.Fiske, Mrs. Leslie Carter, and Julia Marlowe. He was most famous for his romantic roles, although his plays ranged from Shakespeare and Sheridan to popular light opera. His son, Tyrone Power, is a popular motion-picture actor.

Power of Sympathy, The; or, The Triumph of Nature, anonymously published in 1789, is called 'the first American novel.' Although now known to be by William Hill Brown (q.v.), it was long attributed to Sarah W. Morton (q.v.) because it deals partly with events in her life.

An epistolary romance, the work fulfils the purpose announced in its preface, 'To Expose the dangerous Consequences of Seduction' and to set forth 'the Advantages of Female Education.' The main plot deals with the threatened incestuous marriage of Harrington and Harriot, both children of the elder Harrington, the first by his legitimate marriage, the second by his mistress Maria. When the relationship is discovered, Harriot dies of shock and sadness, and Harrington commits suicide. A subordinate incident deals with the suicide of Ophelia Shepherd after her seduction by her brother-in-law Martin. This parallels the suicide of Mrs.Morton's sister after her alleged seduction by Mr.Morton.

POWERS, HIRAM (1805–73), Vermont-born sculptor, went to Italy (1837), where he created his famous marble, *Greek Slave* (1843), whose idealized plastic form was weak, but whose sentimental allusion to the cause of Greek independence attracted wide attention and paradoxically helped mitigate the stigma then attached in America to nude sculpture. Powers's home in Florence was visited by many literary notables and is described in Hawthorne's *Italian Notebooks.* From Italy, Powers continued to govern American taste for neoclassical sculpture, but the formal, idealized work that secured his reputation is considered inferior to his portrait busts.

Powhatan Indians, confederacy of Algonquian tribes in Virginia and Maryland, were visited by some of the earliest explorers and are noted for their relations with the settlement at Jamestown (1607). Hostilities provoked by the exactions of the colonists ended when Pocahontas (q.v.), daughter of the chief known as Powhatan, married the English settler, John Rolfe. After Powhatan's death (1618), a successor, Opechancanough, led a general uprising that resulted in the destruction of every white settlement except those around Jamestown. The ensuing war of extermination lasted 14 years (1622–36). Another serious uprising was led by the same chief in 1641. After his capture and execution, the confederacy was broken up and its tribes declined.

POWNALL, THOMAS (1722–1805), British statesman and colonial governor, came to America (1753), where he participated in the French and Indian War, and was governor of Massachusetts (1757–9). He returned to England without assuming his new position as governor of South Carolina, and published *The Administration of the Colonies* (1764), urging a centralized administration of all British possessions on a basis of commercial interest. In Parliament (1767–80), he opposed attempts to curb colonial liberties, but during the Revolution supported Lord North, rejecting Burke's plea for conciliation. In 1780 he introduced a peace bill, contending that British control of America was lost, and advised circumventing the French by making a commercial treaty with the revolted colonies.

Pragmatism: A New Name for Some Old Ways of Thinking, lectures by William James (q.v.) delivered at the Lowell Institute and at Columbia (1906–7), and published in 1907. *The Meaning of Truth* (q.v.) is a sequel.

Asserting the inadequacy of both rationalism and empiricism in 'the present dilemma in philosophy,' James proposes pragmatism as 'a mediating system.'

> A pragmatist . . . turns away from abstraction and insufficiency, from verbal solutions, from bad *a priori* reasons, from fixed principles, closed systems, and pretended absolutes and origins. He turns towards concreteness and adequacy, towards facts, towards action and towards power.

Pragmatism is not new; it is a more radical empiricism, which regards theories not as answers, but as instruments. The laws of science are useful only 'to summarize old facts and to lead to new ones,' and, more generally, 'ideas (which themselves are but parts of our experiences) become true just in so far as they help us to get into satisfactory relation with other parts of our experience.' A truth is anything that 'proves itself to be good in the way of belief, and good, too, for definite, assignable reasons.' Having established this distinction, James applies it to such metaphysical problems as those of substance, personal identity, materialism, design, and 'free-will.' He opposes the dogmatism of absolute monism, and states his own pluralistic belief. Common sense is on the side of pragmatism, and is indeed its origin, for truth is 'expedient thinking,' having its text and context in human experience, which is its center and justification. Finally he discusses pragmatism in relation to religious questions, and contends that here, too, it mediates between extreme views, being conducive to useful possibilities, and, in the aptest sense, moral, for it is grounded in the present world of acts and facts.

Prairie, free verse poem by Sandburg (q.v.), published in *Cornhuskers* (1918). This warm appreciation of the fertility and beauty of the lands 'between the sheds of the Rocky Mountains and the Appalachians,' which have been the poet's home, expresses an optimistic faith in the will and ability of the 'cornhusker' and the 'prairie girl,' and concludes that though 'yesterday is a wind gone down,' there is 'an ocean of to-morrows, a sky of to-morrows.'

Prairie, The, romance by Cooper (q.v.) published in 1827. It is the fifth in plot sequence of the Leather-Stocking Tales (q.v.).

Natty Bumppo, though nearly 90 in 1804, is still competent as a frontiersman and trapper on the Western plains, clinging to his faithful hound Hector and his rifle Killdeer. He encounters an emigrant train led by surly Ishmael Bush and his rascally brother-in-law Abiram White, in whose party are also the naturalist Dr. Obed Battins; a woman captive concealed in a covered wagon; her attendant, Ellen Wade; and the bee-hunter Paul Hover, who is in love with Ellen. The old trapper barely averts an Indian raid on the train, which he then guides to a safe camp. He is joined by a young soldier, Duncan Uncas Middleton, whom he is overjoyed to recognize as a descendant of an old friend, Duncan Heyward (see *Last of the Mohicans.*) Middleton, on an army mission, is also seeking his betrothed, Doña Inez de Certavallos, who has been kidnapped for ransom. Discovering that she is Ishmael's captive, he rescues her with the aid of the trapper. With Paul and Ellen, they leave the emigrants, only to be captured by the Sioux. Escaping, they are endangered successively by a prairie fire and a buffalo stampede, but saved by the skill of Bumppo. Recaptured by the Sioux, they are rescued by a successful Pawnee attack, but during the confusion Ishmael captures them. He accuses Bumppo of the murder of one of his men, but Abiram is found to be guilty. After his friends find safety with Middleton's soldiers, Bumppo finally yields to the weakness of his years, and dies quietly, surrounded by his Pawnee and white friends.

Prairie region, the level, unforested farming area, formerly grassland, that stretches westward from the Ohio River to the Plains region (q.v.). The Prairie states include Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, and Iowa, as well as eastern North and South Dakota, northern Missouri, and southern Wisconsin, Minnesota, and Michigan. The Mississippi River (q.v.) flows through the center of the region, originally the Northwest Territory (q.v.), whose autochthonous culture has come to be considered distinctively American, with Abraham Lincoln as its typical hero. Since the pioneering period of the late 18th and early 19th centuries, described by Cooper and others, the Prairie states have become the nation's food-producing center, with a large, stable farming population, and with great cities like Chicago as points of distribution. Representative authors include Edward Eggleston, Booth Tarkington, James Whitcomb Riley, and other Hoosiers; Wisconsin writers such as Hamlin Garland, Zona Gale, and Glenway Wescott; O.E.Rölvaag, who wrote of Norwegian and Irish immigrants in the Dakotas; and many whose careers are in some way associated with the Chicago school, including Dreiser, Herrick, E.L.Masters, Sandburg, Lindsay, Sinclair Lewis, Sherwood Anderson, and Hemingway. The

paintings of Grant Wood are expressive of the life of rural Iowa; Louis Sullivan and J.W.Root were the first of the Chicago school in architecture that has influenced urban construction by introducing the skyscraper; and Frank Lloyd Wright's 'Prairie style' of domestic architecture was designed to be appropriate to the Midwestern landscape.

Prairie Schooner, see *Covered wagon.*

PRATT, MINOT (1805–78), Boston printer and founding member of Brook Farm, while a resident there (1841–5) delivered lectures on botany. He quit the group because of its growing interest in Fourierism.

Prayers of Steel, free verse poem by Sandburg (q.v.) published in *Cornhuskers* (1918). Symbolizing the attitude of the modern worker, the poet represents the unformed metal as supplicating,

> Lay me on an anvil, O God. Beat me and hammer me into a steel spike . . . Let me be the great nail holding a skyscraper through blue nights into white stars.

Praying Indians, name applied to the New England tribes, including the Nauset and Massachuset, which were early converted to Christianity. They remained friendly with the colonists during King Philip's War, and were led for a time by Daniel Gookin (q.v.). Among the missionaries to these Indians were John Eliot and Thomas and Experience Mayhew (qq.v.).

Precaution, novel by Cooper (q.v.).

Preface to Morals, A, philosophic work by Walter Lippmann (q.v.).

Prejudices, six series of critical essays by H.L.Mencken (q.v.), published in 1919, '20,'22,'24,'26, and '27. A selected volume appeared in 1927.

These frankly biased, raucous effusions, on a wide variety of literary and cultural topics, won Mencken both devoted followers and indignant opponents during the 1920's. First published in *The Smart Set* and *The American Mercury,* they exhibit their author's bold iconoclasm, vital prose, and crusading zeal against university education, equalitarianism, puritanical morality, sentimentalism, religion, the New Humanism, poetry, and business-class culture. Through these essays, he inspired and campaigned for critical American fiction, championing Dreiser, Cabell, and Sinclair Lewis, and pressed his enthusiasms for such writers as Clemens, Poe, Huneker, and Bierce, and for the music of the great German composers. Besides his mélange of classicism and journalistic audacity, he was noted for his ability at destructive criticism, typified in 'The Sahara of the Bozart,' attacking the sterility of Southern culture; 'Bryan,' ridiculing the statesman's provincialism and Fundamentalism; 'Professor Veblen,' decrying the obscure style and allegedly empty generalizations of the economist; and 'The National Letters,' asserting that American literature is on a mediocre level, because of the absence of a cultural background and a civilized aristocracy.

PRENDERGAST, MAURICE [BRAZIL] (1861–1924), impressionist painter, born in Newfoundland, was reared in Boston. He painted in heavy, mosaic-like patches of vivid colors, to suggest the play of sunlight on his typical subjects of joyous crowds. He made numerous extended trips to Europe, where he painted, and in 1914 moved from New England to New York. His paintings were not popular until after his death.

PRENTICE, GEORGE DENNISON (1802–70), Connecticut-born editor of the *Louisville Daily Journal* (q.v.,1830–68), a prominent Kentucky paper, to which he contributed the caustic squibs and *bons mots* collected as *Prenticeana* (1860). His *Poems* were collected in 1876 and 1883.

PRENTISS, ELIZABETH PAYSON (1818–78), born in Maine, lived chiefly in New York, where she became known as an author of juvenile and religious fiction. Her most popular work was *Stepping Heavenward* (1869), a novel in the form of a diary dealing with the everyday life of a pious woman.

Presbyterianism, system of church polity, occupying a middle position between episcopacy and congregationalism. Its organization is administered by representative courts, composed of clerical and lay presbyters of equal status, divided, according to their functions, into ministers and ruling elders. Such polity may be found throughout the history of the Christian church, but its modern movement is primarily attributed to the doctrine of Calvin. In its simple form of worship, the Bible is considered the sole rule of faith and conduct, the two sacraments being baptism and the Lord's Supper. Presby-

terianism was first introduced in America by French Huguenot followers of Jean Ribaut, who settled in South Carolina (1562), and by followers of Laudonnière, who settled in Florida (1564). Groups of Presbyterians settled in most of the English colonies during the 17th century, many of them coming from Scotland. They flourished particularly in New England, whose churches have been described as representing 'a Congregationalized Presbyterianism.' The first organization of the various churches was accomplished by Francis Makemie in the late 17th century. During the Great Awakening, a split occurred between the evangelical New Side and the conservative Old Side, the former group, under the direction of the Tennents, being responsible for the founding of Princeton University. Presbyterians were particularly strong on the frontier, where under a Plan of Union with Congregationalists they frequently presided over mixed congregations. There have been various schisms, most of them temporary, and the nine Presbyterian bodies of the U.S. now include some two and a half million members.

PRESCOTT, HARRIET, see *Spofford, Harriet.*

PRESCOTT, WILLIAM HICKLING (1796–1859), member of a prominent Massachusetts family, was born at Salem and educated at Harvard (A.B., 1814; M.A., 1817), where the course of his life was changed when, during boyish play, he was hit in the eye by a hard crust of bread. Although blinded in one eye and virtually incapable of using the other, he determined upon a literary career. He went to Europe (1815–17) to convalesce and get background for historical writing. His first works in his chosen field of Spanish history were articles and reviews, which, with other essays and a short 'Life of Charles Brockden Brown,' were collected in *Biographical and Critical Miscellanies* (1845). Three years of preparation preceded the writing of the first chapter of the *History of Ferdinand and Isabella*, begun in 1829 and published in three volumes (1838). The reception of this accurate but picturesque history encouraged him to write his *History of the Conquest of Mexico* (3 vols.,1843), upon which he began research in 1839. This work, in an almost neglected field, has come to be considered his greatest triumph, not only because of its historical accuracy, but because of its epic sweep, which, following in the vein of Scott, arranged itself around the two heroic figures of Cortés and Montezuma to create a dramatic tragedy. The only criticism of the *Conquest of Mexico*, leveled also at Prescott's other writings, is that he was so concerned with the large panorama that he tended to neglect social and economic problems, and based his structure on documented romance rather than a philosophy of history. The *History of the Conquest of Peru* (2 vols., 1847) is a shorter companion piece, utilizing the same method of a dramatic, large-scale canvas, with the figure of Pizarro as its center. It is considered to be less unified and less valuable, however, because of its less comprehensive survey of the background of civilization. After a trip abroad (1850), during which his English reputation was signalized by an Oxford degree and a reception by the queen, Prescott returned to write the *History of the Reign of Philip the Second*, begun in 1849 and hastened by his realization that, with his failing sight, he might never cover the extensive materials. Planned to include four volumes, the work included only three by the time of his death (the first two in 1855, the last in 1858). His work on this book was interrupted by his preparation of an appendix to *The History of the Reign of the Emperor Charles the Fifth* (1857) by William Robertson, who, with Scott, was his master.

Present, The (Sept. 1843–April 1844), monthly periodical edited by W.H.Channing 'to aid all movements which seem fitted to produce union and growth in Religion, Science, and Society.' Its brief life may be attributed to the excessive breadth, enthusiasm, and indefiniteness of its program of reform. Contributions included translations from French and German authors, some of Alcott's 'Orphic Sayings,' poems by C.P.Cranch and W.E. Channing, and writings by Margaret Fuller, Lowell, and C.A.Dana.

Present State of the New-English Affairs, The, broadside printed and published by Samuel Green of Boston (1689), 'to prevent False Reports.' It was concerned with the attitude of William III towards New England after the overthrow of the Andros government, as exhibited in an account of an interview between Increase Mather and the king, a letter on the same subject from Increase to his son Cot-

ton, and an order by William to return Andros to England. Although frequently called the first American newspaper, it gives no evidence that another issue was intended.

Presidents of the U.S. (see individual biographies):

1. George Washington	(Federalist, 1789–97)
2. John Adams	(Federalist, 1797–1801)
3. Thomas Jefferson	(Democratic Republican, 1801–9)
4. James Madison	(Democratic Republican, 1809–17)
5. James Monroe	(Democratic Republican, 1817–25)
6. John Quincy Adams	(Democratic Republican, 1825–9)
7. Andrew Jackson	(Democrat, 1829–37)
8. Martin Van Buren	(Democrat, 1837–41)
9. William H. Harrison	(Whig, 1841)
10. John Tyler	(Democrat, 1841–5)
11. James K. Polk	(Democrat, 1845–9)
12. Zachary Taylor	(Whig, 1849–50)
13. Millard Fillmore	(Whig, 1850–53)
14. Franklin Pierce	(Democrat, 1853–7)
15. James Buchanan	(Democrat, 1857–61)
16. Abraham Lincoln	(Republican, 1861–5)
17. Andrew Johnson	(Democrat, 1865–9)
18. Ulysses S. Grant	(Republican, 1869–77)
19. Rutherford B. Hayes	(Republican, 1877–81)
20. James A. Garfield	(Republican, 1881)
21. Chester A. Arthur	(Republican, 1881–5)
22. Grover Cleveland	(Democrat, 1885–9)
23. Benjamin Harrison	(Republican, 1889–93)
24. Grover Cleveland	(Democrat, 1893–7)
25. William McKinley	(Republican, 1897–1901)
26. Theodore Roosevelt	(Republican, 1901–9)
27. William H. Taft	(Republican, 1909–13)
28. Woodrow Wilson	(Democrat, 1913–21)
29. Warren G. Harding	(Republican, 1921–3)
30. Calvin Coolidge	(Republican, 1923–9)
31. Herbert Hoover	(Republican, 1929–33)
32. Franklin D. Roosevelt	(Democrat, 1933–)

PRESTON, Margaret Junkin (1820–97), Pennsylvania-born poet of the Confederacy, whose works include *Beechenbrook: A Rhyme of the War* (1865), a narrative poem; *Old Song and New* (1870), and *Cartoons* (1875). Her only prose work is *Silverwood: A Book of Memories* (1856). Her sister was the wife of 'Stonewall' Jackson.

Pretty Story, A, pamphlet by Francis Hopkinson (q.v.) published under the pseudonym Peter Grievous. A satirical political allegory, tracing the events that led up to the first Continental Congress, it was issued at Philadelphia (Sept. 1774) during the assembling of the Congress.

An old Nobleman (George III), possessing a valuable farm (England), permits some of his children to settle on his new farm (America), with the provision that they must purchase from his shop all their merchandise (Navigation Acts), although they may make some of their own laws. The Nobleman's Wife (Parliament) lays taxes upon the New Farm, and sends lazy servants to spy upon it. Meanwhile the Steward (Ministry) debauches the old Nobleman's wife, and, gaining power over her, orders the children to mark all their plate with a certain mark, for which they are to pay a stipend (Stamp Act). He also orders the new settlers to pay a tax on Water-Gruel (Tea tax), but one of them named Jack (Boston), driven to despair, demolishes a cargo of this gruel (Boston Tea Party). Vengeance follows when Jack's gate is padlocked (Boston Port Bill), and an overseer (General Gage) is sent to hector him and his family. Finally Jack and the other families of the New Farm are so irritated that . . . Here the

story breaks off with a row of thirteen stars.

Priest, JUDGE, character in the stories of Irvin Cobb (q.v.).

PRIESTLEY, HERBERT INGRAM (1875–), professor of Spanish American history at the University of California (1917–), whose books include *The Mexican Nation* (1923) and *The Coming of the White Man* (1929).

PRIESTLEY, JOSEPH (1733–1804), English physicist and educator, wrote an *Essay on the First Principles of Government* (1768), which suggested the doctrine of 'the greatest happiness of the greatest number' to Jeremy Bentham. His utilitarian and republican views were extended in pamphlets favoring the American colonies and the French Revolution. Popular hostility was aroused by his *Letters to . . . Edmund Burke* (1791), with the result that his house and scientific apparatus were destroyed, and he emigrated to Philadelphia (1794). Here he continued his scientific experimentation and religious and political liberalism, expounded in such books as *Unitarianism Explained and Defended* (1796) and *A General History of the Christian Church* (1802). He was bitterly attacked by Cobbett in *Observations on Dr. Priestley's Emigration* (1794).

PRIME, BENJAMIN YOUNG (1733–91), New York physician whose poems on the French and Indian War were published in *The Patriot Muse* (1764). During the Revolution he produced several popular political songs and the lengthy poetical review of the entire war, *Columbia's Glory* (1791).

PRINCE, THOMAS (1687–1758), member of a prominent Massachusetts family, graduated from Harvard (1709), preached in England, and became pastor of the Old South Church in Boston. He was an orthodox Congregationalist, as appears in his many published sermons, writings on the Indian conversions of Experience Mayhew, and pamphlets on remarkable providences. His *Chronological History of New England in the Form of Annals* (1736) was carefully based on such sources as the manuscript *History* of Bradford, and on the plan of recording events in the order of time with exactness and brevity. Because he conceived of New England's history as the apex of the preceding history of the world, and attempted to give a succession of great events from the creation of Adam to the accession of James I, he failed to carry his proper subject beyond 1633. His religious orthodoxy was disturbed when he fell under the sway of Whitefield's evangelicalism, which he describes enthusiastically in *The Christian History* (1744–5). In 1758 he made a metrical translation of *The Psalms, Hymns, & Spiritual Songs of the Old and New Testaments.* The enormous library in which he carried on his zealous scholarship was partly destroyed during the Revolutionary War.

Prince and the Pauper, The, novel by Clemens (q.v.) published in 1882 under his pseudonym Mark Twain. Designed to be a children's book, it shows an essentially adult point of view in its attack on the social evils of Tudor England.

Prince Edward (later Edward VI) discovers Tom Canty, a pauper boy, to be his exact twin in appearance. When they change clothes, the prince is by error driven from the court, and the pauper is forced to act the part of royalty. Edward finds Tom's family, is mistreated, and runs away with Sir Miles Hendon, a disinherited knight, who takes pity on him, thinking his assertions of royal birth a sign of madness. In their wanderings, the prince sees the cruelty of church and court towards the poor, and learns the sufferings of his people through such dramatic incidents as the burning of two women whose only crime is that of being Baptists. Tom meanwhile is also thought unbalanced because of his peculiar behavior; becoming accustomed to his situation, however, he attempts to act the part of the real prince. On the morning of his coronation, Edward gets to Westminster Abbey and proves his identity by revealing the hiding place of the Great Seal, which Tom did not recognize after having taken it to crack some nuts. During his brief reign, Edward tempers the harshness of the law with a sense of justice, learned during his contact with the common people.

Prince of Parthia, The, romantic blank verse tragedy by Thomas Godfrey (q.v.), written in 1759 and published in 1765. If it was actually produced in 1767, it was the first play by an American to be produced professionally. Set at the beginning of the Christian era, it has a plot derived from Elizabethan dramatic conventions

and is a patchwork of passages imitated from Shakespeare, Addison, Marlowe, Rowe, Dryden, Beaumont, and Ambrose Philips.

Arsaces, son of King Artabanus of Parthia, is triumphantly received after his victory over the Arabians. His brother Vardanes is jealous both of Arsaces's triumph and of his successful wooing of Evanthe, a captive maid. Vardanes and his tool Lysias manage to have Arsaces imprisoned on the pretext that he is planning to usurp the throne. The king is murdered by Lysias, and Arsaces is freed from prison by his youngest brother, Gotarzes, after Queen Thermusa has threatened his life. Arsaces captures the city from Vardanes only to find that Evanthe has taken poison, believing her lover to be dead. Vardanes dies in battle, Arsaces kills himself, and Gotarzes is left to reign over the city.

Princess Casamassima, The, novel by Henry James (q.v.) published in 1886. The Princess also appears in *Roderick Hudson* (q.v.).

Hyacinth Robinson, an illegitimate orphan, is raised by the quiet spinster, Miss Pynsent, in lower-class London, where he is influenced by the anarchist musician, Anastasius Vetch, and the French communist bookbinder, M.Pupin, who teaches him his trade. The youth's sympathy for the downtrodden is further stimulated by the realistic revolutionary, Paul Muniment, who leads him to pledge his life to the cause. He also meets the Princess Casamassima, who is separated from her wealthy Italian husband and is eager to aid them. In her Hyacinth encounters for the first time a spirit like his own, combining an artistic and aristocratic temperament with a profound, restless sympathy for the oppressed. After Miss Pynsent's death, he uses her small legacy to travel in Europe, where he discovers values whose existence he has never suspected, and returns realizing that revolution cannot effect his personal salvation. He is determined, however, to devote himself to the cause, and is soon called upon by Muniment to assassinate a certain duke. The Princess, partly to save Hyacinth, partly to associate herself more closely with the revolutionaries, sets herself to fascinate Muniment, who nevertheless refuses to interfere. Hyacinth is in despair, believing that the two have abandoned him. Finally the Princess offers herself as a substitute in the assassination, and goes to inform Hyacinth. On arriving at his rooms, she finds that he has committed suicide.

Princeton, BATTLE OF, occurred on January 3, 1777, after the Battle of Trenton (q.v.), when Washington cut off Cornwallis's superior forces, causing them to retreat, leaving the road between New York and Philadelphia open to the American army.

Princeton Review, see *Biblical Repertory.*

Princeton University, chartered as the College of New Jersey (1746), was renamed for the town in which it is situated (1896). The Presbyterian founders, many of them followers of the Tennents, were leaders of the New Side in the Great Awakening controversy, and not until the presidency of John Witherspoon (q.v., 1768–94) was there a reconciliation of the opposed groups. Although the college was nominally nonsectarian, it was always under the sway of the church, and the first layman to become president was Woodrow Wilson (1902–10). Other distinguished presidents included Jonathan Dickinson (1747), Jonathan Edwards (1758), and James McCosh (1868–88). An Institute for Advanced Study was founded (1932), with a School of Mathematics headed by Albert Einstein. Among the authors who have studied at Princeton are Booth Tarkington (1893) and Eugene O'Neill (1906–7), while the graduates include Jonathan Odell (1759), H.H.Brackenridge (1771), Freneau (1771), Nicholas Biddle (1801), Philip Cooke (1834), Parke Godwin (1834), G.H.Boker (1842), C.G.Leland (1845), E.M.Royle (1883), R.B.Perry (1896), Ridgely Torrence (1897), Ernest Poole (1902), Struthers Burt (1904), James Boyd (1910), Edmund Wilson (1916), and F.Scott Fitzgerald (1917).

PRINGLE, HENRY F[OWLES] (1897–), historian and professor of journalism at Columbia, whose works include: *Alfred E. Smith, A Critical Study* (1927); *Theodore Roosevelt, A Biography* (1931; Pulitzer Prize, 1932); and *The Life and Times of William Howard Taft* (1939).

Priscilla, heroine of *The Courtship of Miles Standish* (q.v.). Another character

of this name appears in *The Blithedale Romance* (q.v.).

Private Life, The, stories by Henry James (q.v.).

Problem of Christianity, The, lectures by Josiah Royce (q.v.).

Proem, poem by Whittier (q.v.).

Professor at the Breakfast-Table, sequel to *The Autocrat of the Breakfast-Table* (q.v.).

Professor's House, The, novel by Willa Cather (q.v.) published in 1925.

Godfrey St.Peter, professor at a Midwestern university, on reaching middle age completes his great work on the Spanish adventurers in America. He is now well-to-do, but does not desire material comfort, and, when he and his pleasure-loving wife Lillian move to a beautiful new home, he keeps the homely old house whose garret study he has long shared as a workroom with the German seamstress Augusta. His daughters have grown away from him since their marriages, Rosamond to Louie Marsellus, a lavish, enterprising Jew, and Kathleen to Scott McGregor, a journalist who suppresses his artistic leanings to write 'glad' pieces for a living. Marsellus is rich, having marketed a gas patent bequeathed to his wife by her former fiancé, Tom Outland, the professor's favorite student, who died in the First World War. The story of Outland's exploration, with his companion Roddy Blake, of an ancient New Mexican cliff city, is recalled by the professor. Marsellus's patronizing attitude toward the dead Outland alienates the professor, but his generosity and love of beauty strike a sympathetic chord in Lillian, who tours Europe with him and Rosamond. During a lonely summer, the professor loses interest in life, and when gas from a faulty stove fills his study one night, he is about to let it suffocate him when he is saved by Augusta. This crisis, and his appreciation of the quiet patience of the old seamstress, reconcile him to continued existence, which he faces with a certain apathy but 'at least . . . the ground under his feet.'

Professor's Story, The, see *Elsie Venner.*

Progress and Poverty, economic treatise by Henry George (q.v.) published in 1879.

Attempting to discover why individual poverty increases while the nation is becoming more prosperous, George indicates a solution in the fact that private property in land confines interest and wages to marginal gains, while landlords, who are non-producers, reap the benefits of social advance. This follows from the nature of rent, which measures the difference between the yields per acre on the richest and on the leanest soil with a like outlay of capital. According to George, social forces are responsible for the differences in real value, hence the return on the more valuable land is an unearned increment. Land is necessary to labor, but since it belongs to private owners every increase in production only increases rent, which is the price that labor must pay for the opportunity to utilize its own power. This in turn affects capital, for capital is produced by labor, being in fact labor impressed upon matter. Therefore labor and capital should be freed of this incubus, so that the community-created value may be returned to the community. George advocates for this purpose a 'Single Tax,' amounting to the whole or almost the whole of economic rent. This would permit the abolition of all other taxation, leaving production unpenalized, and improve the conditions of both capital and labor.

Progress of Dulness, The, satirical poem in octosyllabic couplets by John Trumbull (q.v.), published in three parts (1772–3).

The first part of this satire on contemporary education tells of the difficulties at college of Tom Brainless, who learns how to manage without studying and achieves a diploma that crowns him as learned. As a conservative, he is welcomed into the ministry, and becomes a pontifical fool. The second part deals with Dick Harebrain, a wealthy fop, who, though he learns nothing solid at college, manages to pick up cheap infidelity second-hand from Hume and Voltaire, and finally, running the course of coxcombery and dissipation, ends in jail, racked by disease. The third part recounts the adventures of Miss Harriet Simper, who, lacking any sensible education, becomes a coquette, modeling her life on romantic novels. After jilting her other admirers, she falls a victim to Harebrain, and when discarded by that beau finally settles down to dulness by marrying Tom Brainless.

Progress to the Mines, A, journal written during 1732 by William Byrd (q.v.), was found among his 'Westover Manu-

scripts,' from which it was published in 1841. A brief account of his least arduous journey, it is told in the witty and observant manner of all his charming memoranda, and includes comments on London literary gossip and *The Beggar's Opera*, typical of this Virginian's influence by English authors of the time.

Progressive Party, name of two separate U.S. political organizations. The first existed during the 1912 presidential election, and was formed of insurgent Republicans opposed to Taft, who nominated Theodore Roosevelt for President and Hiram Johnson for Vice President. Frequently called the Bull Moose party (q.v.), this group drafted a platform approving woman suffrage and various measures for direct popular government and censuring Taft's policies tending toward concentration of wealth and power. The second Progressive party was organized in 1924, and nominated R.M.La Follette for President and B.K.Wheeler for vice president. Its support came from farmer, labor, and Socialist groups, and it won wide popular support for its opposition to monopoly and to the power of the conservative Supreme Court. Five million votes, one-sixth of the total cast, were given to the party's candidates, but, like its predecessor, it did not again enter the field.

Prohibition, term applied to the legal prevention of the manufacture and sale of alcoholic beverages, a result of the temperance movement (q.v.). A prohibition law was passed in New York state (1845, repealed 1847), while Maine became the first permanently 'dry' state (1851); other Eastern states had temporary prohibition laws, and Kansas was the first Midwestern state to adopt such a law (1880). The First World War lent an impetus to the movement, which was linked with the conservation of grains; and the 18th Amendment, enforced by the Volstead Act, became effective on January 1, 1920, prohibiting the manufacture, sale, importation, or exportation of alcoholic beverages in the U.S. Although this remained in force until the repeal by the 21st Amendment (Dec. 1933), there was widespread smuggling and bootlegging (q.v.) throughout the country, and illicit traffic in liquor led to a general disrespect for law and an increase in criminality. Several states still maintain laws prohibiting or restricting the use of alcoholic beverages, and the Prohibition party, organized at Oswego, New York (1869), continues to nominate candidates for national elections. Its largest vote was 270,000 (1892), and in 1940 the Prohibition candidates polled 58,600 votes.

PROKOSCH, FREDERIC (1909–), professor of English at Yale (1931–4) and New York University (1936–7). His novels are: *The Asiatics* (1935), a picaresque novel about a young American who travels across Asia; *The Seven Who Fled* (1937), concerned with the fate of demoralized Russian exiles, the torments of their flight, and their conclusion that 'There is only one victory possible for a man—that of having lost with a certain dignity of heart . . . and nobility of spirit'; and *Night of the Poor* (1939), a realistic tale of an American boy's adolescent impressions as he drifts from Wisconsin to Texas. His poems, *The Assassins* (1936), *The Carnival* (1938), and *Death at Sea* (1940), exhibit the attitude of mind of a romantic individualist facing the decay that threatens the artist with the rise of totalitarianism.

Proletarian literature, name applied to the school of writing that contends that human experience is primarily conditioned by the social, economic, and political environment, and that the author is enabled to understand this environment by Marxist theory, which explains the dialectical relationship of class cultures to the prevailing economic and social structure. The present time, according to the Marxists, is a period of class war, so that in the experience of most people social and political themes are more significant than the personal themes of other eras. Proletarian writers consequently believe that it is life itself, not the Communist party, which forces them to be interested in such phenomena as strikes, agricultural and industrial conditions, and cases of persecution and oppression. According to its champions, proletarian literature is neither dictated nor sectarian, but the result of new insights, new methods, and new forms, appropriate to the experience of a new era. In studying the history of American literature, proletarian critics find the progenitors of the movement in such men as Emerson, Thoreau, and Whitman, who were individualistic rebels against the oppressions of their day; Howells, H.B. Fuller, Markham, Garland, Norris, Her-

rick, and D.G.Phillips, who went a step farther in their concern with the collective good; Steffens and the other muckrakers, who attacked specific abuses; Jack London, Upton Sinclair, and John Reed, who subscribed definitely to socialistic theories; Dreiser, Lewis, and Sherwood Anderson, who helped to break taboos and brought literature closer to contemporary social problems. Such novelists as Steinbeck and Dos Passos are in accord with the broader aspects of proletarian literature, although they refuse to confine themselves by what they consider to be dogmatic restrictions. Among contemporary authors who have been entirely in accord with the tenets of proletarian literature are such novelists as Farrell, Waldo Frank, Josephine Herbst, Albert Halper, Robert Cantwell, Jack Conroy, and Grace Lumpkin; such dramatists as Odets, Irwin Shaw, Elmer Rice, and John Howard Lawson; and such critics as Granville Hicks, Michael Gold, V.F.Calverton, and Joseph Freeman. *The Masses* and its successor, *The New Masses*, have been the leading proletarian organs; and the movement has flourished in the theater in such organizations as the Group Theatre and the Theatre Union.

Promise of American Life, The, critical work by Herbert Croly (q.v.).

Promised Land, The, autobiography by Mary Antin (q.v.).

Protestant Episcopal Church, the U.S. institution of the Anglican Communion, directly descended from the established Church of England. The creeds are the Apostles' and the Nicene, and the standards of doctrine are the Thirty-Nine Articles and the Book of Common Prayer. Church of England services were first regularly held in America at Jamestown (1607), and the Church flourished in the Southern colonies, particularly in Virginia and Maryland. In New England the Puritans forbade Anglican services, and it was not until the revocation of the Massachusetts colonial charter (1686) that Church of England clergymen were appointed to this region, leading to the establishment three years later of King's Chapel, Boston. In the same year, Trinity Church was consecrated in New York City. The earliest educational institution founded by the Church was William and Mary (1693). King's College (Columbia University) was founded in 1754; and other Episcopalian-founded institutions include Kenyon College, Ohio; Trinity College, Connecticut; the University of the South, Tennessee; and Hobart College, New York. During the Revolution the Church was severely torn, many of its clergy being Loyalists who returned to England. The majority of the laity were patriots, however, and these included Washington and two thirds of the signers of the Declaration of Independence. In 1784 Samuel Seabury was consecrated the first bishop of the Church in America, which began its separate existence as an American ecclesiastical body with its own episcopate in 1789. There are now some 1,735,000 members of the Church.

PROUD, Robert (1728–1813), English-born schoolmaster of Philadelphia and collector of source materials for local history, which he employed in his *History of Pennsylvania* (2 vols.,1797–8), a heavily documented and authoritative work on the colony through 1742.

Providence Journal, The (1820–), Rhode Island newspaper, has been a nonpartisan paper since its founding, though committed to the protection of home industry.

Providence Plantations, earliest settlement in Rhode Island, established at Providence (1636) by Roger Williams (q.v.), who with five others had been exiled from the Massachusetts Bay Colony. He attracted other colonists of liberal beliefs, and a plantation covenant was adopted (1637) in which the civil and religious authorities were separated. Another unprecedented feature of Williams's administration was his purchase of the territory from the Narragansett Indians, through their leaders Canonicus and Miantonomo. William Coddington, Anne Hutchinson (qq.v.), and John Clark (1609–76), all Antinomians, meanwhile settled at Portsmouth (1638) and Newport (1639), and Samuel Gorton (q.v.) seceded from Williams's group to found Warwick (1643). After a struggle between Williams and Coddington for leadership, the four settlements were united (1647) under Williams's charter of 1644 for the Providence Plantations in the Narragansett Bay. The union split (1651) into two groups, the one including Providence and Warwick, the other Portsmouth and Newport, but it was reunited by Williams (1654), who obtained a new charter for

Rhode Island and Providence Plantation (1663).

Province House, Legends of the, see *Twice-Told Tales.*

Provincetown Players, The, little-theater group of authors, actors, and artists, first drawn together at Provincetown, Mass. (1915). Their association continued, with changes of place and personnel, until *c.*1929. The first plays were produced under the direction of George Cram Cook in a remodeled fishing smack, 'The Wharf Theatre.' One-act plays continued to be produced at Greenwich Village, in 'The Playwright's Theatre,' and later the expanded organization presented three-act plays in this and the 'Greenwich Village Theatre.' By 1925 the Provincetown productions had included 93 new plays by 47 playwrights, greatly influencing the standards of American drama. Among these plays were all the works of Eugene O'Neill up to that date; Edna St.Vincent Millay's *The Princess Marries the Page* and *Aria da Capo*; Susan Glaspell's *The Inheritors;* Sherwood Anderson's *The Triumph of the Egg*; and others by prominent authors. Later plays included Paul Green's *In Abraham's Bosom* and E.E.Cummings's *him* (1928). R.E.Jones, Lewis Beach, Floyd Dell, Edna Ferber, and Kenneth Macgowan were other authors and artists associated with the group, which published several volumes of *The Provincetown Plays.*

Prudence Palfrey, novel by T.B.Aldrich (q.v.).

Prue and I, sketches by G.W.Curtis (q.v.), published in 1856. They describe the fanciful reveries of an old clerk who lives in New York, but in imagination tours the world of romance with his beloved Prue.

Prufrock and Other Observations, poems by T.S.Eliot (q.v.).

Prynne, Hester, heroine of *The Scarlet Letter* (q.v.).

Psalm of Life, A, poem by Longfellow (q.v.) published in *Voices of the Night* (1839). In nine quatrains of alternately rimed trochaic tetrameters, this popular didactic piece stresses the importance of a full and sincere activity in making the most of life's brief span, rather than succumbing to moods of vain regret or dejection.

Psalms, see *Hymns.*

Public Speech, poems by MacLeish (q.v.).

Publick Occurrences, Both Forreign and Domestick, colonial newspaper published at Boston by Benjamin Harris (q.v.). It was intended to be a monthly, stressing American rather than foreign news. Since it was not licensed, the paper was suppressed by the governor after one issue (Sept. 25, 1690), because it 'contained reflections of a very high order' and 'sundry doubtful and uncertain Reports.' It is, however, considered the first American newspaper.

Publius, pseudonym of Hamilton, Madison, and Jay, in *The Federalist* (q.v.).

Puccini, Giacomo (1858–1924), Italian composer, whose works include two operas adapted from American plays: *Madame Butterfly* (q.v.,1906), by Belasco and J.L.Long; and Belasco's *The Girl of the Golden West* (q.v.,1910).

Puck (1877–1918), weekly magazine of humor and satire, noted for its brilliantly colored cartoons and for its incisive, witty text, of which a great part was written by H.C.Bunner, the editor (1878–96). Besides the sketches satirizing contemporary society, *Puck* printed trenchant attacks on Tammany and other examples of political corruption. During the 1890's the satire was lighter and less concerned with politics, and this attitude was continued under the editorship of H.L.Wilson (1896–1902) and J.K.Bangs (1904–5). Later contributors included F.P.Adams, Arthur Guiterman, G.J.Nathan, Huneker, and Ralph Barton. The paper was sold to Hearst (1917), who removed the sting and made the tone one of light persiflage.

Pudd'nhead Wilson, The Tragedy of, novel by Clemens (q.v.) published in 1894 under the pseudonym Mark Twain. It was dramatized by Frank Mayo (1895).

On the Mississippi during the 1830's, at Dawson's Landing, Missouri, lives Percy Driscoll, a prosperous slave owner. On the day that his son Tom is born, his nearly white slave Roxy gives birth to a son, Chambers, whose father is a Virginia gentleman. Since Tom's mother dies when he is only a week old, he is raised by Roxy along with Chambers, whose twin he is in appearance. Roxy, fearful that her son may some day be sold down the river, changes the two children, and upon the death of Percy, his brother Judge Driscoll

adopts Chambers, believing him to be Tom. The boy grows up a coward, a snob, and a dissipated gambler. Even though Roxy tells him that she is his mother, he sells her to pay his gambling debts. Upon escaping, she blackmails him. To obtain money he robs the judge, and murders him with a knife stolen from Luigi, one of a pair of Italian twins with whom the judge once fought a duel. The evidence is clearly against the twins, who are defended by David Wilson, an unsuccessful lawyer, whose 'tragedy' consists in the lifelong ridicule that has resulted from his eccentric originality and iconoclasm; his ironic humor, and his interest in palmistry and fingerprints, cause the people of Dawson's Landing to call him 'Pudd'nhead.' Wilson feels secure in his case for the twins, since the fingerprints on the knife are not those of the accused. One day he accidentally acquires the fingerprints of the spurious Tom, and with this unexpected evidence is able to vindicate his methods, and to win at last the admiration and praise of his fellow townsmen, by saving the twins and convicting Chambers, who is sold down the river while the real Tom is restored to his rightful position.

Pueblo Indians, see *Hopi* and *Zuñi.*

PULASKI, Casimir (*c.*1748–79), Polish soldier, came to America (1777), where he served with the Revolutionary troops at the battles of Brandywine, Germantown, and Trenton. With the cavalry unit he had organized, he was defeated by the British in New Jersey. After serving again in New York, he was mortally wounded while leading a calvary charge on Savannah.

PULITZER, Joseph (1847–1911), Hungarian-born newspaper proprietor, came to the U.S. (1864), worked in St.Louis on the German Republican paper of Carl Schurz, and published his own paper there. He purchased the New York *World* (q.v., 1883), which he made into a flamboyant paper that became a symbol of yellow journalism, although it later turned to a more conservative policy, championing the Democratic party.

Pulitzer Prizes in Journalism and Letters, created by Joseph Pulitzer's bequest of $2,500,000 to found the Columbia School of Journalism, part of the interest to be devoted to annual prizes for the 'encouragement of public service, public morals, American Literature, and the advancement of education.' The Advisory Board of the School of Journalism selects the winners for distinguished work, published or produced in the U.S. during the year, in the following categories: 'disinterested and meritorious public service' rendered by a newspaper; work by a reporter; work by a Washington or foreign correspondent; editorial writing; cartoon; novel, preferably dealing with American life; original play, preferably dealing with American life; book on U.S.history; 'biography teaching patriotic and unselfish services'; and volume of verse. The journalistic awards include a prize, usually of $500, while the literary awards include a prize of $1,000.

Pulitzer prize novels:

1918—Ernest Poole, *His Family*
1919—Booth Tarkington, *The Magnificent Ambersons*
1920—No award
1921—Edith Wharton, *The Age of Innocence*
1922—Booth Tarkington, *Alice Adams*
1923—Willa Cather, *One of Ours*
1924—Margaret Wilson, *The Able McLaughlins*
1925—Edna Ferber, *So Big*
1926—Sinclair Lewis, *Arrowsmith* (award declined by Lewis)
1927—Louis Bromfield, *Early Autumn*
1928—Thornton Wilder, *The Bridge of San Luis Rey*
1929—Julia Peterkin, *Scarlet Sister Mary*
1930—Oliver LaFarge, *Laughing Boy*
1931—Margaret Ayer Barnes, *Years of Grace*
1932—Pearl Buck, *The Good Earth*
1933—T.S.Stribling, *The Store*
1934—Caroline Miller, *Lamb in His Bosom*
1935—Josephine Johnson, *Now in November*
1936—H.L.Davis, *Honey in the Horn*
1937—Margaret Mitchell, *Gone With the Wind*
1938—J.P.Marquand, *The Late George Apley*
1939—Marjorie K. Rawlings, *The Yearling*
1940—John Steinbeck, *The Grapes of Wrath*
1941—No award

Pulitzer prize plays:

1918—Jesse L. Williams, *Why Marry?*
1919—No award
1920—Eugene O'Neill, *Beyond the Horizon*

1921—Zona Gale, *Miss Lulu Bett*
1922—Eugene O'Neill, *Anna Christie*
1923—Owen Davis, *Icebound*
1924—Hatcher Hughes, *Hell-Bent fer Heaven*
1925—Sidney Howard, *They Knew What They Wanted*
1926—George Kelly, *Craig's Wife*
1927—Paul Green, *In Abraham's Bosom*
1928—Eugene O'Neill, *Strange Interlude*
1929—Elmer Rice, *Street Scene*
1930—Marc Connelly, *The Green Pastures*
1931—Susan Glaspell, *Alison's House*
1932—George Kaufman and Morrie Ryskind, *Of Thee I Sing*
1933—Maxwell Anderson, *Both Your Houses*
1934—Sidney Kingsley, *Men in White*
1935—Zoë Akins, *The Old Maid*
1936—Robert Sherwood, *Idiot's Delight*
1937—George Kaufman, Moss Hart, and Ira Gershwin, *You Can't Take It With You*
1938—Thornton Wilder, *Our Town*
1939—Robert Sherwood, *Abe Lincoln in Illinois*
1940—William Saroyan, *The Time of Your Life* (declined)
1941—Robert Sherwood, *There Shall Be No Night*

Pulitzer prize poetry:

(Special prizes were awarded, from gifts provided by the Poetry Society, in 1918 to Sara Teasdale for *Love Songs*, and in 1919 to Margaret Widdemer for *Old Road to Paradise* and to Carl Sandburg for *Cornhuskers*.)

1922—Edwin Arlington Robinson, *Collected Poems*
1923—Edna St.Vincent Millay, *The Ballad of the Harp-Weaver; A Few Figs from Thistles; Eight Sonnets*
1924—Robert Frost, *New Hampshire*
1925—Edwin Arlington Robinson, *The Man Who Died Twice*
1926—Amy Lowell, *What's O'Clock?*
1927—Leonora Speyer, *Fiddler's Farewell*
1928—Edwin Arlington Robinson, *Tristram*
1929—Stephen Vincent Benét, *John Brown's Body*
1930—Conrad Aiken, *Selected Poems*
1931—Robert Frost, *Collected Poems*
1932—George Dillon, *The Flowering Stone*
1933—Archibald MacLeish, *Conquistadór*
1934—Robert Hillyer, *Collected Verse*
1935—Audrey Wurdemann, *Bright Ambush*
1936—Robert Coffin, *Strange Holiness*
1937—Robert Frost, *A Further Range*
1938—Marya Zaturenska, *Cold Morning Sky*
1939—John Gould Fletcher, *Selected Poems*
1940—Mark Van Doren, *Collected Poems*
1941—Leonard Bacon, *Sunderland Capture*

Pulitzer prize biographies:

1917—Laura E. Richards and Maude H. Elliott, assisted by Florence H. Hall, *Julia Ward Howe*
1918—William C. Bruce, *Benjamin Franklin, Self-Revealed*
1919—Henry Adams, *The Education of Henry Adams*
1920—Albert J. Beveridge, *The Life of John Marshall*
1921—Edward Bok, *The Americanization of Edward Bok*
1922—Hamlin Garland, *A Daughter of the Middle Border*
1923—Burton J. Hendrick, *Life and Letters of Walter Hines Page*
1924—Michael Pupin, *From Immigrant to Inventor*
1925—M.A.DeW.Howe, *Barrett Wendell and His Letters*
1926—Harvey Cushing, *Life of Sir William Osler*
1927—Emory Holloway, *Whitman: An Interpretation in Narrative*
1928—C.E.Russell, *The American Orchestra and Theodore Thomas*
1929—Burton J. Hendrick, *The Training of an American: The Earlier Life and Letters of Walter Hines Page*
1930—Marquis James, *The Raven: A Biography of Sam Houston*
1931—Henry James, *Charles W. Eliot*
1932—Henry Pringle, *Theodore Roosevelt*
1933—Allan Nevins, *Grover Cleveland*
1934—Tyler Dennett, *John Hay*
1935—Douglas Freeman, *R.E.Lee*
1936—Ralph B. Perry, *The Thought and Character of William James*
1937—Allan Nevins, *Hamilton Fish: The Inner History of the Grant Administration*
1938—Odell Shepard, *Pedlar's Progress: The Life of Bronson Alcott*; and

Marquis James, *Andrew Jackson*
1939—Carl Van Doren, *Benjamin Franklin*
1940—Ray Stannard Baker, *Woodrow Wilson* (Vols. 7 and 8)
1941—Ola Elizabeth Winslow, *Jonathan Edwards*

Pulitzer prize histories:
1917—J.J.Jusserand, *With Americans of Past and Present Days*
1918—James F. Rhodes, *A History of the Civil War*
1919—No award
1920—Justin H. Smith, *The War with Mexico*
1921—William S. Sims and Burton J. Hendrick, *The Victory at Sea*
1922—James Truslow Adams, *The Founding of New England*
1923—Charles Warren, *The Supreme Court in United States History*
1924—Charles H. McIlwain, *The American Revolution, A Constitutional Interpretation*
1925—Frederic L. Paxson, *A History of the American Frontier*, 1763–1893
1926—Edward Channing, *The War for Southern Independence*
1927—Samuel F. Bemis, *Pinckney's Treaty: A Study of America's Advantage from Europe's Distress*
1928—Vernon L. Parrington, *Main Currents in American Thought* (Vols. 1 and 2)
1929—Fred Albert Shannon, *Organization and Administration of the Union Army*, 1861–1865
1930—Claude H. Van Tyne, *The War of Independence*
1931—Bernadotte E. Schmitt, *The Coming of the War*: 1914
1932—John J. Pershing, *My Experiences in the World War*
1933—Frederick J. Turner, *The Significance of Sections in American History*
1934—Herbert Agar, *The People's Choice*
1935—Charles McL. Andrews, *The Colonial Period of American History* (Vol. 1)
1936—Andrew C. McLaughlin, *Constitutional History of the United States*
1937—Van Wyck Brooks, *The Flowering of New England*
1938—Paul H. Buck, *Road to Reunion*
1939—Frank L. Mott, *A History of American Magazines*
1940—Carl Sandburg, *Abraham Lincoln: The War Years*
1941—Marcus Lee Hansen, *The Atlantic Migration*

PULLMAN, George Mortimer (1831–97), inventor and builder of the railway sleeping cars that bear his name, constructed the first of these in 1864, after several years of experimentation. The Pullman Palace Car Company, organized by Pullman and Ben Field (1867) became the greatest manufacturer in its field, with plants in many cities, particularly in Pullman (now a part of Chicago), Illinois, which the inventor built (1881) as a model industrial town for his employes. The Pullman Strike occurred there (1894) when workers agitated against a 25 per cent wage cut, without a corresponding reduction of rentals in the company town. Members of the American Railway Union, led by Eugene Debs, refused to handle Pullman Cars, and to break the ensuing nationwide boycott U.S.troops were sent to Chicago by President Cleveland, over the vigorous protest of Governor Altgeld, and Debs and others were imprisoned for violating a federal injunction prohibiting interference with U.S. mail trains.

Pulp magazine, name applied to a periodical printed on coarse wood pulp paper, and containing short stories, novelettes, and serials usually of violent and exotic adventure. This type of magazine carries on the tradition of the dime novel, combining melodrama and conventional romance with a basis of innocent morality. Produced by hack writers in whom originality is discouraged by the editors, the fiction is based on a few accepted formulæ, which have been described as 'making all heroines very young girls, presenting the West purely as a cowboys' Valhalla, and bringing all criminals—except those of the Robin Hood type—to summary and violent justice.' The pulp magazines generally specialize in a single variety of fiction, e.g. crime detection and the chase of criminals; 'Western' adventure; 'horror'; pseudo-erotic or saccharine 'love'; and pseudo-scientific 'amazing' stories. Always the basis of the tale is sensational situation rather than plot, and development of character is frowned upon, for, as a critic has termed it, pulp-magazine publishing is

'the business of purveying predigested day-dreams to people who cannot dream for themselves.'

PUPIN, MICHAEL IDVORSKY (1858–1935), born in Serbia, at the age of five was brought to the U.S., where he graduated from Columbia University (1883) and became a professor of electro-mechanics (1901–31) there, being also known as an inventor of telephonic devices and for his discoveries concerning the X-ray. His best-known book is his autobiography, *From Immigrant to Inventor* (1923; Pulitzer Prize, 1924).

PURCHAS, SAMUEL (1575?–1626), English clergyman, whose best-known religious writing was *Purchas his Pilgrim. Microcosmus, or the histories of Man* (1619). He is famous for carrying on the work of Hakluyt, although his editions of contemporary travel narratives are considered inferior in style and scholarship to those of his predecessor. In 1613 he published his first collection, *Purchas his Pilgrimage; or, Relations of the World and the Religions observed in all Ages and places discovered, from the Creation unto this Present.* The final revision of this work (1626) constitutes a supplementary volume to his comprehensive extension of Hakluyt's collection, *Hakluytus Posthumus, or Purchas his Pilgrimes, contayning a History of the World in Sea Voyages and Lande Travells, by Englishmen and others* (4 vols., 1625). The first half of this enthusiastic work is devoted to travels in the Old World and Far East, while the second half contains narratives of voyages to America.

Puritan and His Daughter, The, novel by Paulding (q.v.) published in 1849.

After the English Restoration, the Puritan, Harold Habingdon, flees to Virginia and settles near the plantation of the Cavalier, Hugh Tyringham. In time Miriam, Habingdon's daughter, falls in love with Tyringham's son Langley. Despite the enmity of their parents, they swear eternal love, but are separated when Habingdon moves to Massachusetts. There Tobias Harpsfield, desiring Miriam's wealth, proposes marriage. She rejects him and remains faithful to Langley, even when he is reported dead in a shipwreck. When the Salem witchcraft scare begins, Tobias plots with a Dutch crone to implicate Miriam, so that he may win her gratitude by saving her. The hysteria goes beyond control, however, and Miriam is condemned to die. She is reconciled to her fate, but Langley appears in time to rescue her. At the gibbet, he forces Tobias to confess his scheme. After their marriage, Langley and Miriam return to Virginia.

Puritanism, attitude of a party within the Established Church of England, which, under Elizabeth and the Stuarts, desired a more thoroughgoing reformation of the Church in the direction of continental Protestantism. At first the Puritans wished only to eliminate certain ceremonial vestments and rituals, and, having no doctrinal quarrel, they were not Separatists (q.v.), but definitely believed in a state church. As the conflict grew that led to the Revolution of 1640–60, there arose many political Puritans, whose main interest was in the establishment of parliamentary authority as opposed to the regal theory of divine right. The Puritan movement was at its height when it found an outlet in American colonization, and, though the Pilgrims (q.v.) were Separatists, the later colonists were primarily Puritans who came from the English middle class. The Puritans' doctrine, as expressed in the Cambridge Platform (1646), was Calvinistic (q.v.) in theology and Congregational (q.v.) in church polity. The word Puritan is used to refer either to this theology or to this polity. Later the word has been used to denote a strictness in morality that verges on intolerance, and refers to a supposed parallel with the moral severity of the early New England settlers.

Purloined Letter, The, detective story by Poe (q.v.) published in his *Tales* (1845).

The prefect of Parisian police visits C. Auguste Dupin, scholarly amateur detective, for advice in a baffling case. A certain cabinet minister has gained power over a royal personage by stealing from her a letter that she cannot allow to be made public. He has been blackmailing her for some time, but she has finally appealed secretly to the prefect. After several months spent in an elaborate search, he has concluded that the letter cannot be on the minister's person or premises. Dupin, given a month, produces the letter, for which he receives a large reward. Later he explains that the police seek only obscure and difficult hiding-places, and, since the minister is a man of penetration, he must be aware of this. Therefore Dupin visited him openly, looked in the most obvious

places, and discovered the letter, turned inside out and disguised, in an exposed card-rack. Diverting the minister's attention the next day by means of a prearranged street disturbance, he substituted a facsimile and took the purloined letter with him.

Purple Cow, The, quatrain by Gelett Burgess (q.v.).

Pushcart at the Curb, A, poems by Dos Passos (q.v.).

PUTNAM, HERBERT (1861–), after graduation from Harvard (1883) and the study of law at Columbia, became a librarian, successively heading the public libraries of Minneapolis and Boston. From 1899 to 1939 he was Librarian of Congress.

PUTNAM, ISRAEL (1718–90), born at Salem, Massachusetts, became a farmer in Connecticut and served in the last French and Indian War, in which he became a major. He took part in the British expedition against Havana (1762), and commanded his colony's troops (1764) in Bradstreet's expedition for the relief of Detroit during Pontiac's Rebellion. When there was a rumor that the government intended to give grants to veterans in West Florida, Putnam made an expedition there, and his journal of this trip and the earlier one to Cuba is published as *The Two Putnams . . . In the Havana Expedition . . . and the Mississippi Exploration* (1931). As a member of the Sons of Liberty and an ardent Revolutionist, he fought at Bunker Hill and was in command at the Battle of Long Island. He was later tried for insubordination, but was exonerated and continued to command troops until a paralytic stroke ended his career (1779). He is the titular hero of a play by N.H.Bannister, and figures frequently in literature about the Revolution.

Putnam's Monthly Magazine (1853–1910), founded by the New York publishing firm, with C.F.Briggs as editor and G.W.Curtis and Parke Godwin as associates. It was distinctively an American periodical, in contrast with *Harper's*, and its contributors included Longfellow, Lowell, Thoreau, Melville, Cooper, Bryant, Bayard Taylor, C.D.Warner, J.P.Kennedy, C.E.Norton, and R.H.Stoddard. Suspended in 1857, it was revived (1868–70) as *Putnam's Magazine*, with Briggs, Stedman, and Godwin as editors. Frank Stockton, Howells, Burroughs, and J.J.Piatt were among the contributors. A third *Putnam's* was published (1906–10), before its merger with the *Atlantic Monthly*, printing works by Don Marquis, Neihardt, Henry James, H.W.Boynton, and Gelett Burgess.

PYLE, HOWARD (1853–1911), illustrator, writer, and painter, who established a great reputation in the last decades of the 19th century for his washes, colored drawings, and simple line drawings of American colonial life, buccaneers, and medieval legendry. His books for children, with his own illustrations, include: *The Merry Adventures of Robin Hood* (1883); *Men of Iron* (1892); and *Howard Pyle's Book of Pirates* (1921).

Pym, see *Narrative of Arthur Gordon Pym.*

Pyncheon, family that figures in *The House of the Seven Gables* (q.v.).

Q

Quadroon, The, novel by Mayne Reid (q.v.), published in 1856 and dramatized by the author. It formed the basis of the play, *The Octoroon* (1859), by Dion Boucicault.

Edward Rutherford, an Englishman traveling in Louisiana, saves a beautiful Creole, Eugénie Besançon, and her quadroon slave, Aurore, from drowning when the steamboat on which they are traveling explodes. Although he falls in love with Aurore, he is beloved by Eugénie, who, disguised as a man, helps him to obtain funds with which to buy the quadroon at a slave auction, when her estate is seized by the dishonest trustee, Gayarre. Failing to buy Aurore, he kidnaps her. At the ensuing trial Gayarre's embezzlement is discovered, and Aurore is freed to marry Rutherford.

Quaker City, popular name for Philadelphia (q.v.).

Quakers, the religious body properly called the Society of Friends. They originally called themselves Children of Truth, Children of Light, or Friends of Truth, and received their sobriquet either because of association with highly emotional symptoms manifested physically, or because their leader once commanded a judge to 'tremble at the word of the Lord.' The Society of Friends arose in England under the guidance of George Fox (1624–91), who after 1647 preached a simple personal religion, as opposed to formal worship and ceremonial. Their fundamental doctrines do not differ greatly from those of other Christian bodies, but they avoid rigid creeds, making their belief less a system than an attitude of mind. They believe that the same spirit that gave forth the Scriptures still guides men to a right understanding of them, and therefore they refuse set forms of worship, and have no trained leaders. Because they declined to support the Established Church, resisted the taking of oaths, and were pacifistic, they were continually persecuted in England until the Toleration Act (1689). In America, whence they came in the 1650's, they were likewise persecuted by the Puritans, because of their opposition to theocracy. They flourished nevertheless, and in 1681 the colony of Pennsylvania was granted to their leader, William Penn. They became widely known for their humanitarianism, both in their relations with the Indians and in their opposition to Negro slavery. This attitude may be seen in the writings of John Woolman, while such Quakers as Whittier and Lucretia Mott were prominent among 19th-century Abolitionists. Although for conscience's sake most Quakers refused to participate in the Revolutionary War, some of them, called Free Quakers, took up arms. In 1827 Elias Hicks pressed the doctrine of the 'inward light' to its extreme, and split the Society of Friends into two parts, the Hicksites and the orthodox group. Another schism occurred (1845), with the Wilburites following John Wilbur in returning to what they considered the original principles of the movement. Various groups, holding to common fundamental beliefs, now have some 93,700 members in the U.S.

Quality of Mercy, The, novel by Howells (q.v.).

QUANTRILL, WILLIAM CLARKE (1837–65), was a farmer, school teacher, and gambler until 1860, when he began his career as a Kansas and Missouri bandit. During the Civil War he became notorious as the leader of a band of Confederate guerillas, preying on Northern troops and civilians. Jesse James is said to have been one of his followers. After many exploits of pillage and murder, Quantrill was fatally wounded in a skirmish with Northern irregulars in Kentucky.

Quartering Act, passed by Parliament (1774) to insure successful action by the troops sent to Boston after the Tea Party. It provided that any number of troops authorized by the king and his ministers might be ordered to America and lodged and cared for by private persons, when camps or barracks would not suffice. Since the troops were used to enforce the payment of taxes and duties, and the act was passed without reference to the colonial legislatures, attempts to put it in force met with open refusal. A similar act had been passed in 1765.

Quebec, CAPTURE OF, see *Abraham, Plains of*.

Quebec Act, passed by the British Parliament (1774), replaced the temporary

government of Canada, which had been in force since 1763, by a Province of Quebec in which the French civil code was restored and the religious freedom of Roman Catholics was assured. These concessions helped keep the French Canadians loyal to England during the American Revolution. The provisions placing the country northwest of the Ohio under the jurisdiction of Quebec and the favor shown to the Catholics, added to the differences between the seaboard colonies and the mother country.

Queed, novel by H.S.Harrison (q.v.).

QUEEN, ELLERY, pseudonym of Frederic Dannay and Manfred Lee, under which they have written such detective novels as *The French Powder Mystery* (1931), *The Spanish Cape Mystery* (1935), *The Four of Hearts* (1938), and *The Devil to Pay* (1938). They have also published an anthology of detective stories, *A Challenge to the Reader* (1938).

Queen Anne's War, see *French and Indian Wars*.

Queen of Sheba, The, novel by T.B. Aldrich (q.v.).

Queen's College, see *Rutgers*.

Queen's Husband, The, comedy by Robert Sherwood (q.v.).

Queequeg, character in *Moby-Dick* (q.v.).

QUELCH, JOHN (*c.*1665–1704), Massachusetts pirate, originally a privateer sponsored by Boston citizens. His capture, trial, and execution attracted great attention in Boston, as noted in the diary of Samuel Sewall.

QUICK, [JOHN] HERBERT (1861–1925), Iowa author, served as mayor of Sioux City (1898–1900) and edited *Farm and Fireside* (1909–16). His novels include *Vandemark's Folly* (q.v.,1922), *The Hawkeye* (1923), and *The Invisible Woman* (1924), a trilogy about life on the Erie Canal and in Iowa from pioneer days through the 1890's. *One Man's Life* (1925) is an autobiography of his youth. With Edward Quick he wrote a history of *Mississippi Steamboatin'* (1926).

Quick or the Dead?, The, novelette by Amélie Rives (q.v.).

Quids, name applied to a faction of the Democratic-Republican party (1805–11), led by Randolph in opposition to Jefferson and Madison. They championed Monroe and contended that the party had yielded its original ideals as an opposition group to favor federalistic centralization. The name derives from the *tertium quid* as distinguished from the two leading parties.

QUIMBY, PHINEAS PARKHURST (1802–66), founder of mental healing in America, whose religious interests led him to call his thought and doctrines Christian science. One of his patients was Mary Baker Eddy (q.v.), who is alleged to have derived her basic ideas from his system.

QUIN, DAN, pseudonym of Alfred Henry Lewis (q.v.).

QUINCE, PETER, pseudonym of Isaac Story (q.v.).

QUINCY, JOSIAH (1744–75), member of a prominent Boston family, graduated from Harvard (1759; M.A.,1763), practiced law, and became an ardent supporter of the patriots. Although he wrote anonymous articles against Parliament, he joined John Adams in defending in court the British soldiers whose attack had resulted in the Boston Massacre. After a trip to Charleston in a vain attempt to recover from tuberculosis, he wrote an important patriot tract, *Observations on . . . the Boston Port-Bill* (1774), and in the same year was sent to England to plead the cause of the colonies, but died on the way home. What he accomplished in England has never been learned.

JOSIAH QUINCY (1772–1864), his son, graduated from Harvard (1790), was a Federalist Congressman (1805–12), opposing Jefferson and Madison, and attacked the admission of the State of Louisiana and the War of 1812. Continuing this attitude in state politics, he became mayor of Boston (1823–8), where he distinguished himself as a practical reformer. Harvard elected him president (1829–45) to obtain a businesslike administration, but his Unitarianism greatly offended conservative interests. To illustrate the liberal traditions of the university, he wrote *The History of Harvard University* (2 vols.,1840), which became a standard work. Although his relations with the students were marked by quarrels and misunderstandings, he established the law school and observatory, extended the library, obtained a good faculty, and increased the endowment and student body. After retiring he turned to

writing, and his works include a history of the Boston Athenæum (1851), a history of Boston (1852), a memoir of his father (1825), and one of J.Q.Adams (1858), as well as a work on agriculture.

EDMUND QUINCY (1808–77), his son, renounced his background as a member of Boston's hegemony to become an ardent Abolitionist and an editor of *The Liberator*. His writings included: *Wensley, a Story without a Moral* (1854), depicting colonial society; *The Haunted Adjutant* (1885), a collection of short stories; and a biography of his father (1867).

QUINN, ARTHUR HOBSON (1875–), professor of English at the University of Pennsylvania (1895–), is the author of *A History of the American Drama* (3 vols.,1923,1927), and an equally comprehensive historical and critical survey of *American Fiction* (1936).

Quint, PETER, character in *The Turn of the Screw* (q.v.).

Quivira, according to legend an Indian 'province' of great population and wealth, presumably located in the present state of Kansas, was sought in the 1540–42 expedition of Coronado (q.v.). Again sought by later explorers, it appeared on maps in many different localities.

QUOD, JOHN, pseudonym of J.T.Irving (q.v.).

Quodlibet, satire by J.P.Kennedy (q.v.).

R

Rabble in Arms, novel by Kenneth Roberts (q.v.).

Radcliffe College, associated with Harvard University, is situated at Cambridge, Massachusetts, where it was formed as the Society for the Collegiate Instruction of Women (1882), with a faculty of Harvard professors. The present name was adopted in 1894, in honor of Ann Radcliffe, Lady Mowlson (died *c.*1661), wife of the first donor of a scholarship to Harvard. Dean L.R.Briggs did much to bring the college to its present high standards. Students have included Josephine Peabody (1894–6), Gertrude Stein (1897), Katherine F. Gerould (1900), and Helen Keller (1904).

Radical Club, THE, informal association of New England ministers and laymen, who desired to abolish vestiges of Christian supernaturalism and to embody in a free religion the spiritual intuitions of humanity at large. The Club met informally at the Boston home of J.T.Sargent and included virtually all the advanced Unitarian and Transcendental thinkers. It flourished in 1867–80, and similar societies existed elsewhere. *The Radical* (1865–72), an outgrowth of the Club, was the chief organ of the heterodox religious and social thinkers of New England at this time. Contributors included Moncure Conway, the elder James, T.W.Higginson, W. Phillips, J.F.Clarke, Alcott, and E.R.Sill.

Radio broadcasting became technically possible through the inventions of Marconi and other Europeans, and the development of the vacuum tube by Lee De Forest in 1906. Used by ships and in the First World War, wireless telephony was not available to the general public as a medium of information and entertainment until about 1920, when such broadcasting began both in England and the U.S. In this country, radio has been appropriated largely by commercial sponsors for purposes of advertising, and there has been little censorship or restriction by government, but the directions of its development both in content and technique have been the same as in Europe. From the early experimental station at Pittsburgh to the present powerful 'chains' or 'networks' of hundreds of stations, radio in the U.S. has been notable for its presentation of news bulletins, coverage of political conventions, athletic contests, and other public events, dramatic and humorous programs, social and political commentaries, features intended for special audiences of women or children, variety shows, and concerts of both jazz and serious music. The broadcasting of literary materials is still in a rudimentary stage, although critical talks and book reviews are presented regularly, and such raconteurs as Alexander Woollcott have become popular. Radio drama, requiring special techniques because it must be addressed solely to the ear, cannot be compared in quality to the many fine series of music broadcasts. The possibility of reaching an audience of millions has nevertheless appealed to many established playwrights, and radio plays have been written by such authors as Archibald MacLeish, Maxwell Anderson, and Alfred Kreymborg, while such distinguished programs have been produced as the adaptations of famous novels and plays by Orson Welles, the original poetic and dramatic works of Norman Corwin and Irving Reis, and the historical and social documentaries of Gilbert Seldes, who has also been associated with the new form of television. These programs have been in the minority, however, and the widespread influence of radio drama has been due rather to humorous 'serials' like that of 'Amos 'n Andy,' melodramas like 'Gang-Busters' and 'The Lone Ranger,' and sentimental dramas like 'One Man's Family.'

Radio City (Rockefeller Center), New York City group of business buildings erected (1931–40) by John D. Rockefeller, Jr., covering three blocks between 5th and 6th Avenues from 48th to 51st Sts. The buildings, designed by Reinhard and Hofmeister; Corbett, Harrison, and MacMurray, and Raymond Hood and Fouilhoux, cover 12 acres, house 25,000 office workers, and have a daily population of 125,000. It is the only group in the world of city skyscrapers planned together as one design; the various units are centered about the 70-story Radio Corporation of America Building and its large sunken plaza. The buildings, all characterized by uninterrupted vertical lines and straightforward design, are named for the leading

organizations they house; in addition to the central building, these include: U.S. Rubber Co. Building, R.K.O. Building, Time and Life Building, Eastern Airlines Building, Italian Building, Associated Press Building, British Empire Building, Maîson Française, and International Building. The areas surrounding the buildings and many of the roofs are landscaped with gardens representative of the styles employed in various countries and are decorated with sculptures by such men as Manship, Lachaise, Zorach, and Noguchi. The Center houses a large motion-picture theater and a great music hall in addition to its big broadcasting studio. Only the western portion of the Center, containing the R.C.A. building and four others, is properly called Radio City, but by extension the title is often used for the entire group.

RADISSON, Pierre Esprit (*c.*1636–*c.*1710), French explorer, arrived in Canada (*c.*1651), and in his journals, first printed as *Voyages of Peter Esprit Radisson* (1885), writes of four voyages, the first two in the Iroquois Territory, and the latter two to Wisconsin and the region of Minnesota and Illinois. He is sometimes credited with reaching the upper Mississippi before Jolliet and Marquette. His furs were confiscated for failure to share profits with the government, and he was led to transfer allegiance to the English, impelling them to found the Hudson's Bay Company. For a short time he returned to serve the French, and plundered the Company, but by 1684 he had again joined the English.

Ragtime, see *Jazz.*

Rahel to Varnhagen, blank verse dramatic monologue by E.A.Robinson (q.v.) published in *The Three Taverns* (1920).

The poem represents an episode in the courtship (1814) of the German historical figures, Varnhagen von Ense, diplomat and biographer, and Rahel Robert, 14 years his senior but a woman of charm and intellect. Shrewdly and wittily, Rahel derides her youthful lover's presumption in seeking to win 'these aged hands.' She tells of earlier affairs, shows him old love letters, and chides his folly, but to no avail (as perhaps she has expected), for he smiles at her arguments and seems to have foreseen each of them. Finally she concedes his victory: 'You know so dismal much As that about me? . . . Well, I believe you do.'

RAIMOND, C.E., pseudonym of Elizabeth Robins (q.v.).

Rain, play by John Colton (q.v.) and Clemence Randolph.

RÂLE (or *Rasles*), Sébastien (1657?–1724), French Jesuit missionary, came to New France (1689) and established a mission among the Abnaki Indians in the disputed territory of Maine (1696). There he influenced the Indians to oppose the English, who later executed him. His *Dictionary of the Abnaki Language* was published in 1833.

RALEGH (or Raleigh), Sir Walter (1552?–1618), English statesman and navigator, made an expedition to America (1584) that took possession of Virginia for the queen and founded the ill-fated Roanoke Colony (q.v.). He sponsored several unsuccessful colonizing expeditions, and succeeded in bringing Virginia to the attention of the English by introducing potatoes and tobacco from the new territory. His writings and many other exploits are unrelated to America.

RALPH, James (*c.*1695–1762), born in America, accompanied Franklin to London (1724), where he remained to establish himself as a poet, historian, journalist, and dramatist. His ballad opera, *The Fashionable Lady* (1730), was the first play by an American to be produced in London. Although he was associated with Garrick in political journalism, Fielding in theatrical journalism, and Franklin in the writing of *An Historical Review of the Constitution and Government of Pennsylvania* (1759), Ralph was primarily a hack writer. He figures in Franklin's *Autobiography.*

Rambouillet Decree, see *Nonintercourse Act.*

Ramona, novel by Helen Hunt Jackson (q.v.) published in 1884.

On the southern California ranch of Señora Moreno, a haughty Spaniard who refuses to yield to the onrushing tide of American conquest, live her son Felipe and Ramona Ortegna, a half-Indian and half-Scotch girl who does not realize that she has been adopted. To this ranch comes Alessandro, a full-blooded Indian, who falls in love with Ramona and has his love reciprocated until Señora Moreno, enraged at the union between her adopted daughter and an Indian, attempts to sever the romance. Alessandro returns to

his native village, which he finds has been destroyed by the Americans, who have also killed his father in seizing the Indian land. He returns to the Spanish ranch, and Ramona elopes with him to San Diego. They are driven from place to place by the avaricious hordes of Americans, until Alessandro loses his reason and is killed by an American whose horse he had temporarily taken. Ramona and her child are found by Felipe, who brings them back to the old Mexican estate, now his property since Señora Moreno's death. After a temporarily peaceful period, Felipe is forced to sell the ranch to the powerful Americans, and he and his foster sister are married and remove to Mexico.

RAMSAY, David (1749–1815), South Carolina physician, historian, and political figure, is most famous for his *History of the Revolution in South Carolina* (2 vols., 1785) and the complementary *History of South Carolina from Its First Settling in 1670 to the Year 1808* (2 vols.,1809). The first part of the work is known to be partly plagiarized from the *Annual Register*, while the second occasionally borrows from the work of Alexander Hewat (q.v.). Ramsay's posthumously published works were *Universal History Americanized* (12 vols.,1819), the last four volumes dealing with America, and *History of the United States* (3 vols.,1816–17), completed by Samuel Stanhope Smith.

Rand School of Social Science, founded in New York City (1906), presents courses in economics, labor policies, socialism, and cultural subjects for young working men and women.

RANDALL, James Ryder (1839–1908), native of Baltimore, teacher in Louisiana, and author of 'Maryland, My Maryland' (1861), Civil War lyric sung to a modified tune of 'Tannenbaum, O Tannenbaum.' His complete *Poems* were published in 1910.

RANDOLPH, Edmund [Jenings] (1753–1813), Virginia lawyer and statesman, fought in the Revolutionary War and served as a member of the Virginia constitutional convention (1776), the state's attorney-general (1776–86) and governor (1786–8), delegate to the Continental Congress (1779–82), and member of the state legislature (1788–9) when its laws were codified. At the Federal Constitutional Convention, he presented the plan drafted by Madison, known as the Randolph or Virginia Plan, which advocated a strong centralized government and three executives from different sections of the country. Since the plan did not sufficiently influence the final Constitution, Randolph refused to sign, but later urged ratification when he felt that attempts at amendment might harm the Union. He served as Washington's attorney-general (1789–94) and secretary of state (1794–5). His most celebrated legal case was his defense of Aaron Burr during the latter's trial for treason.

RANDOLPH, John (1773–1833), Virginia statesman, called John Randolph of Roanoke to distinguish him from another member of the prominent Southern family. He was a half-brother of N.B.Tucker (q.v.). He served in the House of Representatives from 1799 to 1829, except for a term in the Senate (1825–7) and two earlier failures to be re-elected (1813, 1817). Randolph was an erratic free lance, consistently championing lost causes and creating a great personal impression by his brilliant, intemperate, swaggering manner. He supported Jefferson until he broke with him over the Embargo Act and the purchase of Florida; then turned to Monroe in opposition to Madison, whom he despised; broke with Monroe when he became an orthodox member of Madison's cabinet; and remained a constant critic of the administration from the point of view of state rights, opposing the War of 1812, the second Bank of the United States, the tariff, and all other nationalistic measures. He was a vigorous opponent of the Missouri Compromise, and his denunciations of Clay led to a bloodless duel. Jackson appointed Randolph minister to Russia (1830), but he resigned almost immediately because of ill-health, and returned to denounce the President's stand on nullification. In his last years his audacity turned to eccentricity and occasional insanity.

Ransom, Basil, character in *The Bostonians* (q.v.).

RANSOM, John Crowe (1888–), Tennessee poet, was educated in his native state and as a Rhodes Scholar at Oxford (1913). Since 1914 he has been a professor of English at Vanderbilt University and Kenyon College. His first verse, *Poems about God* (1919), has an acid humor that marks all his writing,

although his expression of ironic disillusion was more mature in *Chills and Fever* (1924). *Grace After Meat* (1924) is an English selection from these two books, which were followed by *Two Gentlemen in Bonds* (1927). His traditionalist criticism, expressing the same attitude, has appeared in *God Without Thunder* (1930), *The World's Body* (1938), and *The New Criticism* (1941); as well as in *I'll Take My Stand* (1930), an agrarian anthology; and *The Fugitive* (q.v., 1922–5) and the *Kenyon Review* (1938–), little magazines that he helped edit.

Ranson's Folly, title story in a collection of novelettes by Richard Harding Davis (q.v.), published in 1902. It was dramatized by the author in 1904.

Cahill, once a New York gangster, now operates a store at Fort Crockett, an army post on the Western plains. To assure a fortune for his daughter, Mary, he has several times robbed stagecoaches, disguised as the 'Red Rider,' a method that has been adopted by other outlaws in the region. Ranson, a reckless young lieutenant, robs a coach one night on a wager, but is recognized, and when a second coach is rifled the same night he is suspected and jailed. Ranson considers Cahill guilty and is willing to be punished in his place because of his love for Mary, while Cahill considers Ranson guilty and is about to sign a confession so as to spare his daughter's future husband. Both are rescued from this predicament by the dying confession of the stage driver, who had engineered the robbery but had been shot by a confederate, and Ranson and Mary announce their engagement amid the delighted rejoicing of Fort Crockett.

Rappaccini's Daughter, allegorical tale by Hawthorne (q.v.), published in 1844 and reprinted in *Mosses from an Old Manse* (1846).

Giovanni Guasconti comes to study at the University of Padua and lodges next-door to the home of Giacomo Rappaccini, a famous doctor. In the latter's garden he sees and falls in love with Rappaccini's daughter Beatrice, whose exotic beauty strangely resembles that of her father's poisonous flowers. Pietro Baglioni, a friendly professor, warns Giovanni that Rappaccini's love of science has led him beyond moral or humane considerations, and that the girl's nature seems a product of his sinister art, but the young man is undeterred. Under the cold scientific regard of her father, the affection of the two grows deeper, and Giovanni himself becomes tainted by the poisonous breath of the garden. Then he gives Beatrice a potion that Baglioni has supplied him as an antidote to all poisons. She drinks it, but 'as poison had been life, so the powerful antidote was death; and thus the poor victim of man's ingenuity and of thwarted nature, and of the fatality that attends . . . perverted wisdom, perished there, at the feet of her father and Giovanni.'

Rappahannock Station, site of a Civil War battle in Virginia (Nov. 7, 1863), in which Sedgwick routed part of Lee's army and captured many Confederates.

Rappists, German religious communist sect, founded by George Rapp (1757–1847), who led his followers to settle in American communities. The most prominent of these were the Harmony Society and New Harmony (qq.v.).

RASCOE, [ARTHUR] BURTON (1892–), liberal critic, editor, and columnist, whose books include: *Theodore Dreiser* (1925); *A Bookman's Daybook* (1929); *Titans of Literature* (1932); and *Prometheans* (1933). He edited *The Smart Set Anthology* (1934) from contributions to the magazine of this name. *Before I Forget* (1937) is an autobiography. *Belle Starr* (1941) is a biography of a 'Bandit Queen' of the early Southwest.

RASLES, see *Râle*.

Ratcliffe, SILAS P., character in *Democracy* (q.v.).

Rationale of Verse, The, essay by Poe (q.v.), published as 'Notes on English Verse' in the *Pioneer* (1843), and in its final form under the present title in the *Southern Literary Messenger* (1848). It is the most complete expression of Poe's theories of poetic technique, although critics, indicating its inconsistencies, assert that in practice he did not follow his own dicta.

Refuting the notion that prosody is concerned with the regular 'alternation of long and short syllables,' Poe establishes a distinction between 'natural' and 'unnatural' metrical units. 'The *natural* long syllables are those encumbered . . . with [difficult] consonants . . . *Accented* syllables are of course always long, but, where *un*encumbered with consonants, must be classed among the *unnaturally* long.' He

upholds a 'principle of equality,' according to which each verse foot must be pronounced in the same duration of time as every other foot in the line, regardless of the number of its syllables. This applies only to single lines, although to be effective a stanza should contain lines arranged in strict patterns; and rime, alliteration, and the use of refrains should be governed by the same rule. Further, since duration is the standard by which this 'equality' is to be judged, there should be no 'blending' or substitution of one metrical foot for another. Contractions or elisions should generally be avoided, although additional unstressed syllables may be used if they can be pronounced rapidly. The 'cæsura' (in this usage, a 'variable foot' occurring at the end or middle of a line, and consisting of one long syllable) is discussed as being one of the most important of metrical feet. The essay concludes with a passage, especially referring to Longfellow's poems, which denies the possibility of the successful use of Greek hexameters in English, because of the 'natural' pronunciation peculiar to English words.

RAUSCHENBUSCH, Walter (1861–1918), Baptist minister of New York and professor of church history at the Rochester Theological Seminary (1897–1918), was a leader of the Christian Socialist movement. His books include: *Christianity and the Social Crisis* (1907); *Prayers of the Social Gospel* (1909); *Christianizing the Social Order* (1912); and *Theology of the Social Gospel* (1917).

Raven, The, poem by Poe (q.v.), the title piece of a volume (1845), was several times revised in later publications. To Poe's account of writing it, in 'The Philosophy of Composition' (q.v.), must be added the influence upon the metre of Mrs.Browning's 'Lady Geraldine's Courtship' and Chivers's 'Isadore.' The poem consists of 18 six-line stanzas, the first five lines of each being trochaic octameters, and the sixth line trochaic tetrameter. The ryhthm is varied by frequent syncopation, caused by effects of double rime and alliteration. The rime pattern is *abcbbb*, in which the *b* rimes are based on the constant refrain, 'Nevermore,' in which are merged Poe's favorite theme of grief occasioned by the death of a beautiful woman (in this case 'Lenore'), the distinctive theme of despair at the denial of personal immortality, and the sonorous sound of the *o* and *r* in the refrain itself.

A weary student is visited in his room, one stormy midnight, by a raven who can speak the single word, 'Nevermore.' Tortured by grief over the loss of his beloved, the student questions the bird concerning the possibility of meeting her in another world. He is driven to wilder demands by the repetition of the fatal word, until the raven becomes an irremovable symbol of his dark doubts and frustrated longing.

RAWLINGS, Marjorie Kinnan (1896–), born in Washington,D.C., graduated from the University of Wisconsin (1918), became a journalist, and in 1928 'deliberately cut her civilized ties . . . and migrated to the firmly intrenched outpost of the vanishing frontier,' the hummock country of Florida that forms the setting of her fiction. Besides her first novelette of this back country, *Jacob's Ladder*, she has collected stories of its folk —poor white farmers, hunters, trappers, fishermen, and moonshiners—in *When the Whippoorwill* (1940). She has further depicted this region in her novels, *South Moon Under* (1933), *Golden Apples* (1935), and *The Yearling* (1938; Pulitzer Prize, 1939). The last tells of a young boy's love for his pet fawn, which his father is forced to kill when it ruins his meager crops.

RAYMOND, Daniel (1786–1849?), Baltimore lawyer, born in Connecticut, is known for his *Thoughts on Political Economy* (1820), which favored a protective system for the U.S. He was championed by Matthew Carey, and is thought to have influenced G.F.List.

RAYMOND, Henry Jarvis (1820–69), after a brief association with Horace Greeley, founded his own paper, *The New York Times* (q.v.,1851), to oppose the intemperate and distorted journalism of the period. His sound, impartial policies soon won the paper a great success. He was also editor of *Harper's Monthly* (1850–56), but had little time for active work on it after the first year. From 1856 the *Times* was strongly Republican, and Raymond was for a time a member of Congress (1865–7). He was the author of a history of Lincoln's administration.

RAYNAL, Guillaume Thomas François (1713–96), French author, usually called Abbé Raynal because as a young

man he received priest's orders as a Jesuit. He is best known as the author of *L'Histoire philosophique et politique des établissements et du commerce des Européens dans les deux Indes* (Amsterdam, 4 vols.,1770), written with the assistance of such *philosophes* as Diderot. Although the work lacks unity and proportion and merely summarizes the ideas of others, its vigorous indictment of royalty, attack on the tyranny of the Church, and praise of the English settlers in America, made it a popular piece of democratic propaganda. It was read with enthusiasm by Chateaubriand, Jefferson, and Crèvecœur, and the latter's *Letters from an American Farmer* were dedicated to Raynal and frequently paralleled his work, whose revised and enlarged edition in French (1772–4) was translated into English (1776), extracts being frequently issued under other titles. Paine's *Letter to the Abbé Raynal* (1782) corrects errors in Raynal's work, *The Revolution of America* (1781).

READ, Opie [Percival] (1852–1939), born in Tennessee, began his journalistic career in Kentucky, then moved to Arkansas, where he conducted the humorous paper, the *Arkansas Traveler* (1882–92). When his satirical sketches of back-country people made him unpopular in the region, he moved with the paper to Chicago (1891). His popular humorous works, such as *A Kentucky Colonel* (1890), seem to be purely ephemeral best sellers. *I Remember* (1930) is his autobiography.

READ, Thomas Buchanan (1822–72), Pennsylvania poetaster and minor painter, wrote more than 10 volumes of verse, but is best remembered for 'Sheridan's Ride,' a short piece describing the breakneck journey of P.H.Sheridan (q.v.) from Winchester, which was also the subject of his best-known painting. The poem was published in *A Summer Story, Sheridan's Ride, and Other Poems* (1865). *The Wagoner of the Alleghanies* (1862) is a poem of the Revolutionary War. His *Poetical Works* were collected in three volumes (1866).

Real Thing, The, stories by Henry James (q.v.).

REALF, Richard (1834–78), English-born poet, began his career with the precocious collection, *Guesses at the Beautiful* (1852). He came to the U.S. (1854), served as a newspaper correspondent in Kansas, and there met John Brown, whose Abolitionist plans he supported. After his service in the Civil War, and a stormy private life, friends sent him to San Francisco, where he arrived broken in health and soon committed suicide. The *Poems by Richard Realf, Poet, Soldier, Workman* (1898), though admired by Bierce, are generally considered bombastic and unduly impassioned.

Realism, critical term applied to the method of literary composition that aims at an honest interpretation of the actualities of any aspect of life, free from subjective prejudice, idealism, or romantic color. It is opposed to the concern with the unusual, which forms the basis of romance, but it does not proceed, as does naturalism (q.v.), to the philosophy of determinism and a completely amoral attitude. Although the novel has generally been considered the form best suited to the artistic treatment of reality, realism is not limited to any one form. As an attitude of the writer toward his materials, it is of a relative nature, and therefore no chronological point may be indicated as the beginning of realism in literature. It appears in the works of the earliest English novelists, such as Defoe, Fielding, and Smollett, but the 19th century is considered to mark the origin of realism as a definite literary movement. The example of science, the influence of rational philosophy, the careful use of documentation in historical study, as well as the reaction against the heritage of attenuated romanticism, all had their effect in creating the dominance of realism at this time. Such English authors as George Eliot, Trollope, Thackeray, and Dickens display the increasing significance of the trend. To a great extent, the American transition from romance to realism in fiction was indigenous, but it occurred gradually. Frontier literature, which was frequently realistic in its attitude and observation of detail, merged in the general stream of influence through the works of such authors as Clemens, while the all-inclusive zest for experience displayed in Whitman's descriptive poems is another primary source of modern realism. A realistic attitude toward their materials may be noted in the stories of Mrs.Stowe, DeForest, Trowbridge, and Mrs.R.H.Davis, but the first concerted movement was probably that exerted by the interest in local color

(q.v.). Although such writers as Harte, Miss Jewett, Page, Cable, and F.H.Smith were frequently romantic in stressing eccentric manners, they were realistic in attending to minute details, and to some extent in their treatment of character. The tendencies of these short-story writers were carried further by such novelists as Joseph Kirkland, Edward Eggleston, Hamlin Garland, and E.W.Howe. Although not concerned with the same homely themes, Howells, Henry James, and later Edith Wharton were similarly realistic in their sensitive attempts at the exact depiction of characters who move in equally limited environments. Partly under the influence of such Russian novelists as Tolstoy, Howells and James extended realism into the problem novel and the comedy of manners. Certain other novelists, such as H.B.Fuller and later Upton Sinclair and Ernest Poole, were led to expose the social evils that thwarted the happiness of their characters, and thereby turned realism to use in humanitarian protest. Realistic fictional technique continues to be dominant at the present time, and among the recent authors who are realists or strongly influenced by the realistic attitude are Ellen Glasgow, Willa Cather, Hemingway, Ruth Suckow, Lardner, Wolfe, and Steinbeck. Outside the field of fiction, the movement has had a profound effect on American literature in general, in the poetry of such men as Masters, Frost, Sandburg, and MacLeish, in the criticism of Mencken and others, and since the development of the little-theater movement in the plays of O'Neill, Elmer Rice, Odets, and other dramatists.

Realms of Being, The, general title of a series of philosophical works by Santayana (q.v.), to which *Scepticism and Animal Faith* (1923) serves as an introduction, while *The Realm of Essence* (1927), *The Realm of Matter* (1930), *The Realm of Truth* (1938), and *The Realm of Spirit* (1940) form the body. In these books, Santayana modifies and supplements his philosophy as expressed in *The Life of Reason* (q.v.,1905–6).

Investigating being, of which Nature is only one aspect, the author considers that there can be no first principle of skepticism, since such a principle is already an assumption. Hence the skeptic ultimately arrives at the conclusion that 'nothing given exists,' and all data are intuitive, without any guarantee of their existence in nature. 'The sceptic, then, as a consequence of carrying his scepticism to the greatest lengths, finds himself in the presence of more luminous and less equivocal objects than does the working and believing mind; only these objects are without meaning, they are only what they are obviously, all surface.' Such objects Santayana calls essences. Material events, then, arouse intuitions, and the system men make of these signs of their environment constitutes their concept of the realm of matter. 'This world of free expression, this drift of sensations, passions, and ideas, perpetually kindled and fading in the light of consciousness, I call the *Realm of Spirit*.' Behind this lies matter, which Santayana recognizes as the unknowable but ever present basis of action. There are, then, four realms: matter, essence, spirit, and truth. The last is considered as 'frozen history,' the standard comprehensive description of existence, a segment of the realm of essence formed of approximately correct views referring to the same system of facts. Knowledge is faith in the unknowable, symbolized by essences. Logical analysis may lead to complete skepticism concerning the existence of anything, but animal faith continues, and believes in a world whose material events have aroused intuitive essences as signs of the environment in which all animals live and suffer. Essences, in themselves significant and eternal, are logically, though not cosmologically, prior to that which they designate, so that the world remains unknowable only in its inmost intrinsic character, and comes to be comprehensible through these reports lying in the realm of essence.

Reason the Only Oracle of Man, deistic book attributed to Ethan Allen (q.v.), published in 1784. Later scholarship has contended that, though the work has been popularly known as 'Ethan Allen's Bible,' approximately four-fifths of it was written by the freethinker Dr.Thomas Young (1732–77), to whose posthumously obtained manuscript Allen gave no credit.

Reb, see *Johnny Reb*.

Rebecca; or, the Fille de Chambre, romance by Susanna Rowson (q.v.).

Rebecca of Sunnybrook Farm, novel by Kate Douglas Wiggin (q.v.), published

in 1903. The heroine of this popular story for children is precocious, lovable Rebecca Randall, whose adventures are described from her early years as one of seven children on her widowed mother's farm, to her life in Riverboro with her Aunt Miranda and her friends, Emma Jane Perkins, the stage driver Mr.Cobb, and generous Adam Ladd, her 'Mr.Aladdin.'

Rebellion, WAR OF THE, see *Civil War.*

Reconstruction, name applied to the reorganization of state governments in the South after the Civil War, the constitutional processes of their readmission to the Union, and the social adjustments made necessary by altered economic conditions, especially the emancipation and enfranchisement of Negroes. Power was in the hands of the Republican party, which was divided in its attitude toward Reconstruction policies. The conservative group, in accord with Lincoln's views, inclined toward leniency and the rapid reinstatement of the seceded governments, with which President Johnson substantially agreed, although he wished to shift control from the Southern planters to the frontiersmen and working classes. The radical Republicans, including influential cabinet members, army officers, and legislators, opposed the program of reconciliation, and favored military rule and the suppression of civil rights in the conquered states. Lincoln, before he was assassinated, applied his conservative policies in the reorganization of Louisiana, Arkansas, Tennessee, and Virginia. Upon assuming office, Johnson established similar governments in every Southern state except Texas. Although the 13th Amendment (1865) guaranteed Negro emancipation, it now appeared that the South would be again dominated by the same aristocratic white class. The new President's radical opponents consequently waged a bitter struggle for the enforcement of their own vindictive program, and succeeded in passing the Reconstruction Act (March 2, 1867), which placed the entire South, except Tennessee, under military rule. Led by Thaddeus Stevens, Sumner, and Stanton, they also obtained such measures as the Civil Rights Bill and the Freedmen's Bureau Act (q.v.), both over Johnson's veto, and the 14th (q.v.) and 15th Amendments, by which Negroes were given votes and civil rights. Ruled by carpetbaggers and scalawags (qq.v.), the so-called Black Republicans overturned the former framework of Southern society, giving rise to a reign generally characterized by corruption and misrule. Although Stevens died, and Stanton was forced to resign following the unsuccessful impeachment of Johnson, radical Republicans continued in power, their leaders now being Benjamin Butler and Johnson's successor, Grant. The social and economic ruin of the South was thus confirmed, for, although new constitutions were adopted and all the states were readmitted by 1869, it was not until years later that white Democrats organized a 'solid South,' partly through the terrorist activities of the Ku Klux Klan (q.v.) and other suppressive agencies. The Reconstruction is considered to have terminated with the presidential election of 1876, despite the doubtful victory of Hayes over the Democratic candidate, Tilden. Histories of the Reconstruction include Paul Buck's *Road to Reunion* and Claude Bowers's *The Tragic Era,* while events and social conditions in the South during this period are depicted in many novels, e.g. Cable's *John March, Southerner,* Harris's *Gabriel Tolliver,* Tourgée's *A Fool's Errand,* Page's *Red Rock,* DeForest's *Kate Beaumont,* and Dixon's *The Clansman.*

***Red Badge of Courage,** The: An Episode of the American Civil War,* novel by Stephen Crane (q.v.), published in 1895. This psychological study of a soldier's reactions was written before Crane had ever seen a battle. His knowledge was derived from *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War* and such naturalistic fiction as Tolstoy's *War and Peace.*

The Battle of Chancellorsville is the setting of this story of Henry Fleming, an ordinary inexperienced soldier, and his feelings during his baptism of gunfire. He begins with the state of mind of the raw recruit, who is anxious to get into battle so that he may show his patriotism and prove himself a hero. He swaggers to keep up his spirit, during the delay that precedes his being suddenly thrust into the slaughter. Then he is overcome by unthinking fear, and runs from the field. He is ashamed when he joins the wounded, receives a slight scratch, fights frantically, and then automatically seizes the regiment's colors in the charge that re-establishes its reputation. He moves through this sultry nightmare with unconscious

heroism, and emerges steady, quiet, and truly courageous.

Red City, The, novel by S.Weir Mitchell (q.v.).

Red Cross, see *Barton, Clara.*

Red Pony, The, story by Steinbeck, reprinted in *The Long Valley* (q.v.).

Red Rover, The, romance by Cooper (q.v.), published in 1827 and dramatized by S.H.Chapman (1828).

Lieutenant Henry Ark, on the track of the Red Rover, a notorious pirate, disguises himself as a common sailor ('Wilder') and enlists as second in command of the mysterious *Dolphin*. When the captain of the merchant ship *Caroline* is accidentally injured, Ark is sent to take his place. Both ships sail immediately from Newport, and the youthful commander's skilful seamanship disturbs the superstitious crew of the *Caroline*, who desert him. He is left with the two passengers, Gertrude Grayson and her governess, Mrs.Wyllys, to escape the sinking ship in a small boat, from which they are rescued by the *Dolphin*. Captain Heidegger (the Rover) is attracted to Mrs.Wyllys, and becomes friendly with Ark, confessing to him that he had been a seaman in the royal navy, but that his loyalty to the colonies had led him into a quarrel in which he killed an officer and escaped to become a pirate. Ark's former ship, the *Dart*, is now sighted, and, when the Rover goes aboard her, disguised as a naval officer, he learns Ark's true identity. Returning, he is persuaded to put the women and Ark aboard the *Dart*. A fierce battle ensues, in which the pirate is victorious. Ark is about to be hanged, when it is revealed that he is actually Paul de Lacey, the long-lost son of Mrs.Wyllys. At this, the Rover sets his prisoners free, sends them ashore, dismisses his crew, burns his ship, and disappears. After the close of the Revolutionary War, 20 years later, he is brought, dying, to the home of de Lacey, who has married Gertrude. He discloses that he is the brother of Mrs.Wyllys, and that after ending his piracies he reformed, led a virtuous life, and served honorably in the patriot cause.

Redburn: His First Voyage, novel by Melville (q.v.), published in 1849 and based on his own experiences during his first voyage (1837).

Wellingborough Redburn, son of an impoverished middle-class New York family, ships as a 'boy' on the *Highlander*, bound for Liverpool. Captain Riga treats him with ironic kindness until the ship sails, after which he withdraws to his solitary cabin, placing his mate in command. Clumsy and inexperienced, Redburn receives only contempt from the sailors. During six weeks in Liverpool, he explores the city, aided by his guidebook, and seeing especially the lack of democracy and the vicious living conditions of the poor. He becomes friendly with Harry Bolton, a spendthrift young aristocrat, who takes him on a riotous trip to London, shocking the boy by his excesses and reckless actions. The return voyage, on which Harry is also a sailor, is full of tragic incidents, for the steerage passengers nearly starve, an epidemic of cholera kills many, and the crew is maltreated. In New York, Captain Riga refuses to pay Redburn and Harry, and the friends part, the boy going to his home and the Englishman signing for a whaling voyage, during which he is killed.

REDPATH, JAMES (1833–91), Scottish-born journalist and reformer, came to the U.S. (*c.*1850), was Kansas correspondent for the New York *Tribune*, and became a zealous Abolitionist, as revealed in *The Roving Editor; or, Talks with Slaves in the Southern States* (1859), *A Handbook to Kansas Territory . . .* (1859), *The Public Life of Captain John Brown* (1860), *Echoes of Harper's Ferry* (1860), and *A Guide to Hayti* (1860). The last was part of his campaign to establish Haiti as a Negro asylum. In 1868 he founded the Boston Lyceum Bureau, which later bore his name, and he became the leading lecture promoter of his time. *Tales and Traditions of the Border* (1849) was an early work on Scotland in collaboration with his father, and *Talks about Ireland* (1881) was a collection of letters denouncing the English administration.

Redskins, The; or, Indian and Injin novel by Cooper (q.v.), published in 1846 as the third of The Littlepage Manuscripts, dealing with the Anti-Rent War (q.v.).

Much of the land in New York state is held by absentee landlords, in the manner of feudal estates, and during the 1840's there is a popular antirent uprising. Bands of agitators, armed and disguised as 'Injins,' intimidate wealthy families and raid

their property. Hugh Littlepage and his uncle Roger visit their estate, Ravensnest, to investigate the activities of the redskins. Hugh becomes engaged to Mary Warren, daughter of the local rector, although Seneca Newcome, an unscrupulous lawyer, attempts to arrange a match between Hugh and his daughter Opportunity. Hugh and Roger have been disguised as German peddlers, but they reveal themselves to the family after they are recognized by the faithful old Indian Susquesus, and the Negro servant Jaap. A band of antirenters arrives in 'Injin' disguise and is contrasted unfavorably with a group of Western Indians who come to confer with Susquesus. Hugh, aided by Mary and the real Indians, discovers and foils the arson plot of Newcome and the antirenters. The sheriff disperses the raiders, and, when Ravensnest is finally made safe again, Hugh and Mary are married.

Ree Indians, see *Arikara.*

REED, JOHN (1887–1920), born of wealthy parents in Portland, Oregon, graduated from Harvard (1910), after which he traveled in Europe. Aided by Lincoln Steffens, he obtained employment with the *American Magazine*, but he submitted his most sincere work to *The Masses*. His report of the Paterson Strike won him recognition, and in 1913 he was sent by the New York *World* to cover the Mexican revolt of Villa. During the same year he reported the miners' strike at Ludlow, Colorado, for the *Metropolitan Magazine*, and wrote his impressions of Villa and others in *Insurgent Mexico* (1914). As a World War correspondent for the *Metropolitan*, as well as for *The Masses* and *The Seven Arts*, he wrote the articles republished in *The War in Eastern Europe* (1916). Already sympathetic with the cause of the Russian Revolution, Reed became friendly with the Bolshevik leaders and, after reporting their coup (1917), returned to America to be active in the organization of the first Communist party of the U.S. Difficulties encountered in this enterprise sent him back to Russia, where he died and was accorded the honor of burial in the Kremlin. His eye-witness story of the Russian Revolution is contained in *Red Russia* (1919) and his most important work, *Ten Days That Shook the World* (1919). The latter graphic account was officially approved by the Soviets, and Lenin wrote an introduction to a later edition. Reed is the subject of a biography by Granville Hicks.

REED, SAMPSON (1800–80), born in Massachusetts, graduated from Harvard (1818), and left its Divinity School after being converted to the beliefs of Swedenborg. With his brother he edited the *New Jerusalem Magazine*, founded a Swedenborgian magazine for children, and otherwise spread the doctrines of his church. His *Observations on the Growth of the Mind* (1826), an essay on Swedenborgian thought, greatly impressed Emerson, who was particularly interested by the doctrine of correspondence and the prophetic optimism of its teachings, and seems to have derived from it much of his knowledge of Swedenborgianism.

REED, WALTER (1851–1902), Virginia-born army surgeon, during the Spanish-American War went to Cuba, where he directed bacteriological experiments which showed the carrier of the yellow fever parasite to be a variety of mosquito. His work has made possible the general eradication of the disease.

REEDY, WILLIAM MARION (1862–1920), Missouri journalist, in 1893 became editor of the St.Louis *Sunday Mirror*, a local society journal that he transformed into a weekly literary and critical magazine, and later published as *Reedy's Mirror* (1913–20). The *Mirror* was politically liberal, and championed the theories of Henry George, while artistically it was a little magazine, introducing such authors as Fannie Hurst, Zoë Akins, Sara Teasdale, and E.L.Masters, whose *Spoon River Anthology* it first published. Other authors whose reputations it helped establish include J.G.Fletcher, Julia Peterkin, and Babette Deutsch.

REESE, LIZETTE WOODWORTH (1856–1935), Baltimore poet and school teacher, whose poetry is distinguished for its concision, intense emotion, and simple personal interpretation of pastoral subjects. The direct and rather crisp quality of the lyrics in her early books, *A Branch of May* (1887), *A Handful of Lavender* (1891), and *A Quiet Road* (1896), mark a great advance over the Victorian sentimental treatment of nature, and she maintained her high standards in later collections: *A Wayside Lute* (1909), containing her best-known poem, 'Tears,' in which she prays for clear vision with which to 'see aright

How each hath back what once he stayed to weep'; *Spicewood* (1920); *Wild Cherry* (1923); *Little Henrietta* (1927), whose title poem is a narrative 'memorial' to a small child; *White April* (1930); *Pastures* (1933); and *The Old House in the Country* (1936). A volume of *Selected Poems* was issued in 1926. *A Victorian Village* (1929) and *The York Road* (1931) are autobiographical narratives, and *Worleys* (1936) is a fictional fragment.

Reformed Church in America, founded in colonial times by Protestant settlers from the Netherlands, is Calvinistic in faith and Presbyterian in government. Until the English conquest in 1664, it was the established church of New Netherland. In 1771 it became independent of the mother church. For a long time it was a strong denomination in New York and New Jersey, moving toward the Middle West in the mid-19th century. Among the educational institutions it has sponsored is Rutgers College.

Reformed Church in the United States, established in America in the early 18th century by German, Swiss, and French settlers, was known officially until 1869 as the German Reformed Church. Its origin stems from the works of Zwingli, Calvin, and Melanchthon, and the Heidelberg Catechism of 1563 is still its standard for Scriptural instruction. In 1793 it declared itself independent of the Classis of Amsterdam, and at later dates has been allied with other reformed churches in America.

Regionalism, intellectual movement emphasizing a recent preoccupation with locality, similar to that which previously stamped the local-color movement (q.v.). In a general sense, the term is applied to a large body of realistic fiction, and such novelists as Willa Cather, Faulkner, Steinbeck, and Ruth Suckow are called regional authors. Members of the school of regionalism that has flourished principally in the South, on the other hand, claim that their ideas are based on a creative, scientific approach to the cultural, geographic, and economic differences of particular sections of the U.S. This detached view necessitates scholarly antiquarianism in studying the relation of folklore to literature, and leads away from photographic realism to a critical interpretation of historical backgrounds. Allen Tate, one of its proponents, has declared, 'Only a return to the provinces, to the small self-contained centres of life, will put the all-destroying abstraction America safely to rest.' Tate has collaborated with J.C.Ransom, Donald Davidson, and R.P.Warren in publishing *The Fugitive* (1922–5) and the symposia, *I'll Take My Stand* (1930), *Culture in the South* (1934), and *Who Owns America?* (1936). They believe that as people adapt their lives to the geography of a region and create an economic system that gradually becomes natural, this pattern in turn becomes æsthetic. Their program is intended to combat the Northern drive toward industrializing the South, which makes for eclecticism and standardization; to champion an agrarian economy; and, as Davidson has said, to 'speak for the South as a living historic entity which is separate from America though bound to it.'

Regions, see *New England, Eastern states, Northwest Territory, Prairie region, Plains region, North Woods, Mississippi River, Old Southwest, South, Southwest, Northwest,* and *Far West.*

Regulators, colonists in western North Carolina who organized to protest excessive taxation of poor farmers, illegal collection of fees, and restriction of nonconformist ministers from performing marriage ceremonies. The movement began in 1765, but, when it led to violence, Governor Tryon commanded an armed force against some 2,000 Regulators and ended their activities (1771). Later organizations in the South known as Regulators arose during the Reconstruction, similar in attitudes and methods to the Ku Klux Klan.

REHAN, Ada (1860–1916), Irish-born actress, was brought to the U.S. as a child, and began her stage career at the age of 13. In 1879 she came under the management of Augustin Daly, in whose company she remained for 20 years, winning fame both for her grand manner in poetic roles and for her sparkling artificiality in comedies of manners. Her most famous part was that of Katharina in *The Taming of the Shrew.* Her real name was Crehan, which a printer's error transformed into a stage name at the time of her debut.

REID, [Thomas] Mayne (1818–83), Irish-born novelist, came to the U.S. (1840), where he had a varied career as journalist, storekeeper, Negro overseer, schoolmaster, captain in the Mexican

War, actor, dramatist, Indian fighter, and frontier hunter. He returned to England (1850) and was in America again only from 1867 to 1870, but during his years in the U.S. he knew not only the East but also the South, the prairies, and the Western frontier. He wrote a long series of romances, whose exciting adventures endeared him to millions of boys, and whose descriptions of the Southern and Western U.S. made him a prominent foreign follower of Cooper in depicting pioneer customs and the life of the Indians. His bibliography includes more than 90 titles, nearly 70 of which are stories of romance and adventure, and many of them concerned with the American scene. Among the most popular were *The Rifle Rangers* (1850), *The Scalp Hunters* (1851), and *The Boy Hunters* (1852). One of his plays, *The Quadroon* (q.v.,1856), was the basis of Boucicault's *The Octoroon*.

REID, WHITELAW (1837–1912), Cincinnati journalist, whose distinguished reporting of the Civil War and the South during Reconstruction, partially republished in *After the War* (1866), led Greeley to make him his assistant on the New York *Tribune*. After Greeley's death (1872) he became editor, and made the paper the most powerful and distinguished in the U.S. He was minister to France (1889–92) and ambassador to Great Britain (1905–12), besides serving on various diplomatic missions. He published several books on historical and political subjects.

Reign of Law, The, novel by J.L.Allen (q.v.).

Relief of Lucknow, The, poem by Robert Lowell (q.v.).

Religious Aspect of Philosophy, The, philosophic work by Josiah Royce (q.v.).

Remarkable Providences, essay by Increase Mather (q.v.), published in 1684 under the title, *An Essay for the Recording of Illustrious Providences*. It is based on a manuscript of 1658, containing accounts of extraordinary interpositions of Providence in human affairs, gathered by Puritan ministers in England and Ireland. The manuscript found its way to Boston, where it was discovered by Mather, who added further instances of providential events, collected by New England ministers. To this compilation he added his own observations, comments, and speculations, as well as similar information culled from other books. Although lacking any critical inspection of testimony, the work was intended to be scientific proof of the presence of supernatural forces in the world.

Rembrandt to Rembrandt, blank-verse dramatic monologue by E.A.Robinson (q.v.) published in *Avon's Harvest* (1921).

The Dutch painter contemplates his self-portrait, three years after the death of his beloved wife, Saskia, and reflects on his diminishing popularity and prestige. He wonders if the current opinion is true, that he is now 'a fellow painting in the dark,—a loon who cannot see that he is dead.' Perhaps Saskia was 'appointed well to die,' for his present poverty and obscurity would cost her grief and suffering, although his failure is due to his refusal to compromise with commercialism. He has wished only to be sincere, to paint the values in light and human nature that his discerning eye reports. He is overcome, however, with doubts of his work and of artistic 'immortality,' summing up his life to himself as 'your particular consistency in your peculiar folly.' He proposes nevertheless to continue, despite his realization that the goals he seeks are comprehensible only to himself and a hypothetical posterity.

Remember the Alamo, see *Alamo.*

Remember the Maine, see *Maine.*

REMINGTON, FREDERIC [SACKRIDER] (1861–1909), sculptor, illustrator, and painter, chose for his different media the subjects of soldiers, Indians, and cowboys, frequently in lively action. His bronze statuettes and frequently reproduced canvases are of more historical than artistic value. In addition to being a popular magazine illustrator, he was the author of several books displaying the same temper as his graphic art. These include: *Pony Tracks* (1895); *Crooked Trails* (1898); and *The Way of an Indian* (1906).

Remorse, see *Richelieu.*

Remus, see *Uncle Remus.*

Renascence, poem in octosyllabic couplets by Edna St.Vincent Millay (q.v.), published in 1912 and collected in *Renascence and Other Poems* (1917).

With an air of casual simplicity, the poet tells how 'Infinity came down and

settled over me . . . I saw and heard, and knew at last the How and Why of all things . . .' For this omniscience she pays in 'infinite remorse,' feeling as her own all the sin, regret, and agony of mankind. 'Close-sepulchred' thus, she cries to God for new birth, and, upon casting off her self-centered belief and discovering again 'Thy radiant identity,' is granted the return of her own life to enjoy the freshness and beauty of the world.

René, romance by Chateaubriand (q.v.), first published as an episode of the *Génie du christianisme* (1802) and separately in a pirated edition at Leipzig in the same year. Originally intended, along with *Atala* (q.v.), as an episode in *Les Natchez* (q.v.), the story is a brief monologue delivered by the young Frenchman, René, to his adopted father, Chactas, chief of the Natchez Indians, and the French missionary, Father Souël. Seated under a great tree in the haunts of the Natchez, René tells of his restless wanderings from country to country in search of spiritual peace, and how, after he found it in life with his sister Amélie, she entered a convent to restrain her unnaturally strong feeling for her brother. It is this tragedy that has driven René to the American wilderness.

REPPLIER, AGNES (1858–), Philadelphia author, known for her gracefully witty and scholarly essays, collected in *Books and Men* (1888); *Points of View* (1891); *Essays in Miniature* (1892); *Essays in Idleness* (1893); *In the Dozy Hours* (1894); *The Fireside Sphinx* (1901); *Compromises* (1904); *Americans and Others* (1912); *Counter Currents* (1916); *Under Dispute* (1924); *To Think of Tea!* (1932), and other volumes of familiar and critical essays. Her biographical studies include: *Père Marquette* (1929); *Mère Marie of the Ursulines* (1931); and *Junípero Serra* (1933). *In Our Convent Days* (1905) and *A Happy Half-Century* (1908) are autobiographical works. *In Pursuit of Laughter* (1936) is a historical study of types of humor.

Representative Men, seven essays by Emerson (q.v.) published in 1850. Probably suggested by Carlyle's *Heroes and Hero-Worship*, they were originally lectures delivered in Boston (1845–6), and in Manchester and London (1847). The six representative men are: Plato, the philosopher; Swedenborg, the mystic; Montaigne, the skeptic; Shakespeare, the poet; Napoleon, the man of the world; and Goethe, the writer. In the first lecture, 'On the Uses of Great Men,' Emerson contends that humanity, being pervaded by the spirit of the Deity, is not made up of a number of individuals. A great man is one who represents more of this divine essence than his fellows, and thus enables mankind in general to appreciate its own possibilities.

Republican Party, name sometimes applied to the Democratic Republicans (see *Democratic Party*), properly refers to the party that arose out of Northern antagonism against the Kansas-Nebraska Bill (1854) and included a coalition of interests opposed to slavery and secession, principally 'Conscience' Whigs, Free-Soilers, Abolitionists, and Know-Nothings. Seward and Thurlow Weed were influential in bringing New York Whigs into the party, and by 1856 the national organization was completed. Frémont, the first Republican candidate for President, was defeated after a vigorous campaign, but two years later the party was successful in electing many congressmen. In 1860 the Chicago convention nominated Lincoln for the presidency and Hannibal Hamlin for the vice presidency, with a platform favoring a protective tariff and restriction of slavery, as well as denouncing secessionism. Since the Democratic opposition was divided between followers of Douglas and Breckinridge, Lincoln was elected. The Civil War was the main concern of his administration, but Republican policy had its foundation in the establishment of a high tariff and national banking system. Lincoln was again victorious in the 1864 election, despite the nomination of McClellan by the Democrats and of Frémont by the radical Independent Republicans. After Lincoln's death, Johnson attempted to continue his moderate policies of Reconstruction (q.v.), but was successfully opposed by the radical Republicans, under such leaders as Thaddeus Stevens, Sumner, and Stanton, who nearly impeached Johnson, and conducted a vindictive campaign to subordinate the conquered Southern states. This group nominated Grant in 1868, and his popular victory at the polls was partly due to his military reputation. Although his administration is considered the most corrupt in U.S.history, and a group of Liberal Republicans left the party to nominate Greeley in 1872, Grant

was re-elected, and was succeeded by Hayes in the contested election of 1876. Through the following administrations of Garfield and Arthur, the party continued to manifest a tendency to favor large financial and industrial interests, although its regular strength derived from such diverse sources as intrenched political machines in Eastern cities, financial groups in the East and Middle West, and conservative Western farmers. On the whole, both major parties avoided definite statements of policy and agreed upon most issues. Thus it was possible for the Mugwumps (q.v.) to shift to the conservative Cleveland (1884) and promote a Democratic victory. Cleveland was again President, after the unpopular administration of Harrison, but in 1896 the coalition of Populists and liberal Democrats, which nominated Bryan, forced the Republicans to take a definitely conservative stand in favor of the gold standard, high protective tariff, and nationalist expansion. McKinley defeated Bryan, and his successors, Theodore Roosevelt and Taft, maintained Republican rule until the Progressive (q.v.) split of 1912 made possible the election of the liberal Democrat, Wilson. After the First World War there was a conservative reaction in favor of the 'old-line' Republicans, signalized by Harding's election (1920). In the following decade of increasing national prosperity, Coolidge and Hoover maintained Republican domination by a general policy of laissez-faire, but after 1929 the general depression caused a trend toward the Democratic party that resulted in the election of Franklin Roosevelt and the beginning of his New Deal administration (1932).

Retrospect of Western Travel, sketches by Harriet Martineau (q.v.).

Return of Peter Grimm, The, play by David Belasco (q.v.), based on an idea suggested by Cecil de Mille, produced in 1911 and published in 1920.

Peter Grimm, a kindly, stubborn old bachelor, carries on a horticultural business and dictates the affairs of his household, in which live his nephew, Frederik Grimm, whom he expects to succeed to the business; his ward, Catherine, who has promised him she will marry Frederik; an employe, James Hartman, with whom she is really in love; Marta, a trusted old servant; and her eight-year-old grandson, William, who is, unknown to the others, the illegitimate son of Frederik. After Peter's death, his spirit returns and discovers the true state of affairs in his household, although he is unable to convey his presence to his loved ones. Finally, through the dying William, he manages to communicate that Frederik has meanwhile disobeyed his injunction by planning to sell the business, and is also responsible for the seduction of Marta's daughter. Peter influences Catherine to break her engagement with the dishonored Frederik and to marry James. The play ends when Peter departs, taking the boy William with him.

Reunion in Vienna, play by Robert Sherwood (q.v.).

Reuben and Rachel, romance by Susanna Rowson (q.v.).

Reverberator, The, novelette by Henry James (q.v.).

REVERE, Paul (1735–1818), Boston silversmith and engraver, early associated himself with the Revolutionary cause by joining the Sons of Liberty, taking a leading part in the Boston Tea Party, and drawing satirical cartoons at the time of the Stamp Act. He was the official courier of the Massachusetts Committee of Correspondence, in which capacity he became famous for his ride from Charlestown to Lexington on the night of April 18, 1775, to announce the approach of British troops. Samuel Prescott and William Dawes also acted as couriers the same night, but Revere is remembered because he alone is mentioned in Longfellow's poem, 'Paul Revere's Ride' (q.v.). He later designed and printed the first Continental currency and the first official seals of the colonies and of Massachusetts. His subsequent military career was without distinction, and he returned to business. His own account of his celebrated ride is contained in a letter to Jeremy Belknap, first printed in the *Proceedings* of the Massachusetts Historical Society (Nov. 1878), which indicates that Longfellow's account is fictitious in such incidents as Revere's waiting for lantern signals.

Reverend Griffith Davenport, The, play by James A. Herne (q.v.), produced in 1899 but unpublished. It was adapted from *An Unofficial Patriot*, a novel by Helen H. Gardener.

Griffith Davenport, a Methodist circuit rider in Virginia, who feels that slavery is inconsistent with Christianity, frees

his Negroes and champions Lincoln, even though he is opposed by his neighbors and his son Beverly joins the Confederate Army. His wife Kathryn, a Southern patrician, disagrees with his ideas, but is reconciled by his sincerity, and they renew 'their vows of love and faith' when he is sent to prison after being captured by Beverly's company.

REVERIE, REGINALD, pseudonym of Grenville Mellen (q.v.).

Reveries of a Bachelor; or, A Book of the Heart, essays by D.G.Mitchell (q.v.), published in 1850 under his pseudonym Ik Marvel. The first 'Reverie' was originally published in the *Southern Literary Messenger* (1849). There are three other 'Reveries,' familiar essays presenting the sentimental musings of the Bachelor, on the subjects of marriage, love, and friendship, based on his knowledge gained through experience and imagination.

Review of Reviews (1891–1937), monthly magazine established as a U.S.counterpart of the English magazine of the same name. The policy was 'to follow with intelligent interest movements of contemporary history, and to understand something of the real character of men and women who rank among the living forces of our time.' The contents included editorial comment on current events, leading articles reprinted from other periodicals, and reviews of new books and magazines. The *Review of Reviews* worked for a union among 'English-speaking communities,' and tended to be Anglophile until after the First World War, when it became primarily concerned with American problems. In 1932 it absorbed *World's Work* (q.v.), but its original policy was continued by Albert Shaw, who edited it from its founding until competition from such news magazines as *Time* caused it to merge with the *Literary Digest* (q.v.,1937) but this combination failed within the year.

Reviewer, The (1921–5), little magazine published at Richmond, Virginia, edited by Emily Clark and others, including Cabell, who alone edited three issues (Oct.–Dec. 1921). Although intended to champion the cause of Southern literature, the magazine published contributions from most of the leading American authors of the time. Its Southern 'discoveries' included Frances Newman, Julia Peterkin, DuBose Heyward, and Paul Green. During its last year, it was edited by Green from North Carolina.

Revolutionary Romances, series of narratives by Simms (q.v.), dealing with life in the South during the Revolutionary War. They are: *The Partisan; Mellichampe; The Kinsmen,* revised as *The Scout; Katharine Walton; The Sword and the Distaff,* revised as *Woodcraft; The Forayers;* and *Eutaw. Joscelyn: A Tale of the Revolution* is not usually considered one of the series.

Revolutionary War, name applied to the War of Independence (1775–83) fought by the British colonies in the present U.S. against the mother country. Underlying causes were social, economic, political, religious, and geographic, but signs of the coming struggle were first marked by such difficulties between governors and assemblies as that involving Andros. Colonists were particularly stirred by the imperialist policies exhibited in the Navigation Acts, which attempted to compel importation and exportation exclusively with England, the Molasses Act, the Stamp Act, and the Townshend Acts. Opposition to these measures appeared in many published works, ranging from the constitutional objections of John Dickinson to the inflammatory writings of Samuel Adams. Despite concessions from the mother country, further cleavage occurred following the Boston Massacre, the Boston Tea Party, the Boston Port Bill, and the Quebec Act. The Continental Congresses (q.v.) were convened, and, when Governor Gage attempted to seize ammunition and stores at Concord, he met armed resistance at Lexington (April 19, 1775). Ethan Allen and Benedict Arnold captured Ticonderoga (q.v.), Seth Warner took Crown Point (q.v.), and the British suffered heavy losses in taking Bunker Hill (q.v.). Washington was appointed commander-in-chief of the Revolutionary forces (June 1775), but the colonials were split between the generally wealthy Loyalists and the middle-class and lower-class advocates of independence. Paine's *Common Sense* was a stirring call to liberty, but it was more than a year after Lexington when the Declaration of Independence was signed. During the early part of the war, the Revolutionary armies failed to take Quebec, and, although they relieved the siege of Boston (March 17, 1776), Howe captured New York during the

rapid retreat of the patriots. The first issue of *The Crisis* was published in this period of desperation, but five days later (Dec. 23, 1776) Washington recrossed the Delaware and captured Trenton and Princeton (qq.v.). In the following year, Washington suffered heavy losses, particularly at Brandywine (q.v.), and retreated to Valley Forge (q.v.) for a winter of extreme hardship, although Burgoyne surrendered at Saratoga (q.v.). In 1778 the Americans began to achieve success with troops trained under von Steuben, and while the French fleet aided on the coast George Rogers Clark was successful in the west. Charleston was captured by the British in 1780, Gates was defeated at Camden (q.v.), Benedict Arnold's treason was discovered, and minor American triumphs offset Cornwallis's success in the South. The French fleet blocked Cornwallis in Virginia, while Washington, assisted by Lafayette and Rochambeau, came south to force his surrender at Yorktown (Oct. 19, 1781). The lengthy negotiations resulting in the Treaty of Paris (1783) concluded the war. The chief naval manœuvers of the war consisted in the privateering activities of John Paul Jones (q.v.), and the aid which the French and British navies gave to the respective land campaigns. Approximately 4,044 enlisted men died as a result of the war.

REYNOLDS, Jeremiah N. (1799?–1858), reared in Ohio, came to public notice (1825) when he championed the theory of Captain J.C.Symmes,Jr., according to which the world is compounded of five concentric spheres, with a hollow core and polar openings so wide that a voyager 'might pass from the outer side of the earth over the rim and down the inner side a great distance before becoming aware of the fact at all.' After publishing a review of Symmes's theory, Reynolds made a voyage to South America, and upon his return agitated for a polar expedition. His polar theory may have influenced Poe's 'The Unparalleled Adventure of One Hans Pfaall' (*Southern Literary Messenger*, June 1835), and Poe employed part of Reynolds's address to Congress in *The Narrative of Arthur Gordon Pym* (q.v.,1838). Reynolds's tale of Mocha Dick (q.v.) was a source of *Moby-Dick*. After obtaining a grant of $300,000 for polar exploration, Reynolds became involved in difficulties, and the expedition, which produced important Antarctic research, was conducted without him.

REYNOLDS, John (1788–1865), born in Pennsylvania, was reared in frontier Tennessee and Illinois, and became a lawyer and jurist in the latter state. He was elected governor (1830), and served in the state legislature and in Congress as a pro-slavery Democrat. His *Pioneer History of Illinois* (1852) is considered a valuable source. *The Life and Adventures of John Kelly* (1853) is a semi-autobiographical romance that contains some of his scientific lectures. In addition to other works, he wrote an autobiography, *My Own Times* (1855).

REZÂNOV, Nikolai Petrovich (1764–1807), Russian colonial administrator, whose attempts at colonization in northwestern America brought him to California to obtain supplies (1806). There he became engaged to Doña Concepción Argüello, daughter of the commandant at the San Francisco presidio, possibly for reasons of state rather than love. On his way back to Russia, he died while crossing Siberia. A translation of his documents concerning the California visit was published in 1926, but this part of his career is better known through such literary treatments as a poem by Bret Harte and Gertrude Atherton's novel, *Rezánov* (1906), reprinted in *Before the Gringo Came* (1915).

RHETT, Robert Barnwell (1800–1876), South Carolina statesman, member of Congress (1837–49), was known as an ardent 'fire-eater' secessionist, and split with Calhoun because the latter's policies were not sufficiently extreme. Elected to the Senate (1851), Rhett soon resigned in protest against a state convention that was not rigorous enough in its demands for secession. Until the actual secession, he promoted his extremist position through the *Charleston Mercury* (1820–68), edited by his son. As a member of the Confederate Congress, he attacked Jefferson Davis's plans for centralized government and continued to emphasize state rights. His family name was Smith until 1837.

Rhett Butler, character in *Gone With the Wind* (q.v.).

Rhode Island College, see *Brown University*.

RHODES, Eugene Manlove (1869–1934), Nebraska-born author, lived for

some time in New Mexico, where he was both cowboy and writer, and, after a long residence in New York state, returned late in life to New Mexico and California. His many short stories and 14 novels, including *Good Men and True* (1910), *The Desire of the Moth* (1916), *West Is West* (1917), *Copper Streak Trail* (1922), *Once in the Saddle* (1927), *The Trusty Knaves* (1933), and *The Proud Sheriff* (1935), are considered to be among the best literary interpretations of cowboy life. His subject was consistently the romance of the cattle industry during the late 19th century, but his faithful depiction of the contemporary background and characters and the quality of his prose keep his work from the sentimentality and cheap melodrama of the usual tales of cowboy adventure.

RHODES, James Ford (1848–1927), historian principally famous for his *History of the United States from the Compromise of* 1850 (7 vols.,1893–1906), which covered the years 1850–77 as a clash between civilizations based on opposed abstract ideas. Other works are: *History of the Civil War* (1917; Pulitzer Prize, 1918); and *History of the United States from Hayes to McKinley* (1919). Prior to his work as a historian he had been in the iron and steel business with his brother-in-law, Marc Hanna.

Rhodes Scholarships, founded by Cecil John Rhodes (1853–1902), British statesman and South African empire builder. He left the bulk of his £6,000,000 fortune to provide scholarships to Oxford University for students from the British colonies, the U.S., and Germany. The first candidates were selected in 1903 and, like subsequent winners, were judged on the basis of previous college records, including scholarship, character, and leadership in athletics and other activities. The scholarships for Germany were cancelled during the First World War. The U.S. is awarded two scholarships for each state and territory. Among the American literary figures who have received Rhodes Scholarships are Christopher Morley, J.C.Ransom, R.P. Warren, Paul Engle, and R.P.T.Coffin. All scholarships were temporarily suspended during the First and Second World Wars.

Rhodora, The: On Being Asked, Whence Is the Flower?, poem in iambic pentameter couplets by Emerson (q.v.), written in 1834 and first published in *The Western Messenger* (1839). It is collected in *Poems* (1847). Apropos of the beautiful New England flower, the poet condemns the questioning of the divine creative power:

> . . . if eyes were made for seeing,
> Then Beauty is its own excuse for being.

Rhymes to be Traded for Bread, poems by Vachel Lindsay (q.v.).

RIBAUT, (or Ribault), Jean (*c.*1520–65), French Huguenot navigator and colonizer, with Laudonnière (q.v.) founded a colony at the present Port Royal, South Carolina, and claimed the territory of Florida for France (1562). He published an account of his expedition as *Whole and True Discovery of Terra Florida* (1563). In 1565 he returned to reinforce the colony, but in a Spanish attack he and most of the colonists were massacred. A modern account is contained in Parkman's *Pioneers of France in the New World.*

RICE, Alice [Caldwell] Hegan (1870–), Kentucky-born author of stories for children, whose best-known work is *Mrs. Wiggs of the Cabbage Patch* (q.v.,1901). *The Inky Way* (1940) is an autobiography.

Cale Young Rice (1872–), her husband, is known for his volumes of verse, poetic dramas, and an autobiography, *Bridging the Years* (1939).

RICE, Dan (1823–1900), New York circus clown and showman, entered his profession in 1841 and showed his versatility in such occupations as strong man, agent for the Mormon leader Joseph Smith, proprietor of wagon shows and showboats, song-and-dance comedian, equestrian acrobat, and temperance lecturer. The most famous of American clowns, he wore a costume accentuating his resemblance to the legendary Uncle Sam, and was noted for his speeches in the crackerbox tradition of American humor.

RICE, Elmer (Elmer Reizenstein) (1892–), New York dramatist, producer, and novelist, graduated from the New York Law School (1912), but soon abandoned this profession for writing. His first play, *On Trial* (1914), was a murder mystery employing the technique of the motion-picture 'cutback' to present scenes that are described by the trial witnesses. His works for the Morningside Players, a little-theater group, were published in *Morningside Plays* (1917). In 1923 he obtained his second success with *The Adding Machine* (q.v.), a satirical fantasy using the technique of Expressionism. His in-

terest in the social aspects of life in the U.S. has been further exhibited in the realistic play, *Street Scene* (q.v.,1929, Pulitzer Prize), and in *We, the People* (1933), a panoramic view of American life protesting against social abuses; *Judgment Day* (1934), dealing with the warring ideologies involved in the trials for the burning of the German Reichstag building; *Between Two Worlds* (1935); *American Landscape* (1938); *Two on an Island* (1940); and *Flight to the West* (1941). His other plays, mainly farces and melodramas, include: *Wake Up, Jonathan* (1928), with Hatcher Hughes; *Cock Robin* (1929), with Philip Barry; *Close Harmony* (1929), with Dorothy Parker; *The Subway* (1929); *See Naples and Die* (1929); *The Left Bank* (1931); *Counsellor-at-Law* (1931); and *Black Sheep* (1932). His novels include *A Voyage to Purilia* (1930), satirizing the motion pictures, and *Imperial City* (1937), a realistic narrative of New York life.

RICE, Thomas Dartmouth (1808–60), popular entertainer known as 'the father of American minstrelsy,' because he first popularized the Negro minstrel show (q.v.) and created the song 'Jim Crow' (q.v.).

RICH, Obadiah (1783–1850), Massachusetts bibliographer, as consul to Valencia (1816–29) and in the Balearics (1834–45) gathered great book and manuscript collections, which furnished the stock for his London bookstore (founded *c.*1829). His catalogues helped direct the scholarship of Irving, Prescott, Ticknor, and George Bancroft.

RICH, Richard (*fl.*1609–10), English soldier, sailed for Virginia on the *Sea Adventure*, when it accompanied Somers's fleet (June 1609). He witnessed the severe storm that drove the ship on the rocks off St.George's Island in the Bermudas, and participated in the near-abandonment of the Virginia colony (June 1610). He arrived in England (Sept. 1610) with Gates, and within a month or two published his *Newes from Virginia*, a ballad based on these experiences. The work contains useful information regarding the settlement in Virginia and was probably influential in the sailing of two further fleets the following year. It may have suggested scenes in Shakespeare's *The Tempest.*

Richard Carvel, novel by Winston Churchill (q.v.) published in 1899. It owes obvious debts to Thackeray and Weir Mitchell. Descendants of the hero appear in *The Crisis* (q.v.).

Richard Carvel, rebel grandson of a Maryland Tory gentleman, tells of his experiences in the colonies, among pirates at sea, in Georgian London, and as a Revolutionary officer under John Paul Jones. From childhood he loves beautiful Dorothy Manners, daughter of aristocratic Mr.Marmaduke Manners, but he is discouraged by her many flirtations. His friend Henry Swain is a patriot lawyer, whose daughter Patty cherishes a hopeless affection for Richard. After encounters with Lord Comyn, who unwillingly duels with him and then becomes his friend, and an influential friendship with Charles James Fox, Richard ends his naval adventures, having been wounded in the battle between the *Bonhomme Richard* and the *Serapis*. Taken to England to recuperate, he finds that Dorothy has always loved him. After he escapes to America, they are married, with Patty serving as bridesmaid.

Richard Cory, poem by E.A.Robinson (q.v.).

Richard Hurdis; or, The Avenger of Blood, romance by Simms (q.v.), published in 1838 as one of his series of Border Romances. Like its sequel, *Border Beagles* (q.v.), it is based on the activities of the bandit Murrell (q.v.).

Richard Hurdis, an impetuous youth, leaves home after a quarrel with his villainous half-brother John over the affections of Mary Easterly. Accompanied by a friend, he rides into Alabama, where he becomes acquainted with the sinister operations of a mysterious outlaw clan, led by the bandit Foster. After his companion is killed, Richard poses as a gambler, worms his way into Foster's confidence, and learns the organization of the gang. With this information he is able to lead a successful attack that results in the band's overthrow. Although Foster escapes, John, who has been forced to join the outlaws, is killed. Richard returns home and marries Mary.

Richard Saunders, pseudonym of Benjamin Franklin (q.v.).

RICHARDS, Laura Elizabeth (1850–), daughter of Samuel Gridley Howe and Julia Ward Howe. With her sister, Maud Howe Elliott, she wrote *The Life of Julia Ward Howe* (1916; Pulitzer Prize,

1917). She has written some 80 other books, most of them for children, which include *Captain January* (1890) and *When I Was Your Age* (1893), the latter being an account of her own childhood.

RICHARDSON, CHARLES FRANCIS (1851–1913), journalist and author, professor of English at Dartmouth (1882–1911). His *American Literature*, 1607–1885 (2 vols., 1887–8), although neither accurate nor judicious, is distinguished as an early treatment of the subject.

RICHARDSON, HENRY HOBSON (1838–86), New York architect, born in Louisiana, studied at the Beaux-Arts in Paris and became the leading exponent of the Romanesque Revival during a period of architectural romanticism. His best-known edifice, Trinity Church (1872–7) at Boston, is famous for its sturdy character and use of polychrome stone. Among his other works are: Sever Hall at Harvard, parts of the state capitol at Albany, the Quincy library, the First Baptist Church at Boston, and the Marshall Field Building at Chicago. His buildings are of rough sandstone or brick, with massive, squat towers and low arches, and manifest simplicity of mass and solid architectural structure. By entrusting important units of decoration to such men as Saint-Gaudens and John La Farge, he did much to elevate the minor crafts. His attempt to adjust the Romanesque style to contemporary American needs formed a point of departure for a more sincere architectural expression and influenced such men as Sullivan and Root.

RICHARDSON, JOHN (1796–1852), Canadian author, whose *Wacousta, or The Prophecy: A Tale of the Canadas* (3 vols., 1832), a frontier romance based on the career of Pontiac, was a literary expression of Canadian nationalism. His *War of* 1812 (1842) marked the beginning of scientific history in his country.

Richelieu: *A Domestic Tragedy*, adaptation of a French play, by J.H.Payne (q.v.), produced in London (1826), published in New York the same year, and produced in Philadelphia (1829). The central theme is the ruin of Mme Dorival, wife of a furniture dealer, by the decadent aristocrat Richelieu. Since the French ambassador to England was a descendant of Richelieu, the London production was entitled *The French Libertine*, and the villain's name changed to Rougemont. It was later produced under its proper title, and was revived in the U.S. as *Remorse* (1850).

Richmond, capital and largest city of Virginia, near the mouth of the James River, was founded by William Byrd (1733). The Virginia Convention met there (1775), and during the Civil War the city served as capital of the Confederacy, becoming the goal of several expeditions by Northern troops. It has been an important seaport and center of trade, especially in tobacco, from the earliest times, and now has a population of some 190,000. The *Southern Literary Messenger* and *The Reviewer* were published at Richmond, and besides important churches and museums the city is known for its educational institutions, including the University of Richmond, Union Theological Seminary, Richmond Normal School, and several schools for Negroes. Nathaniel Bacon, Patrick Henry, John Marshall, Jefferson Davis, Monroe, Tyler, and R.E.Lee are associated with its history, while John Powell is a Richmond musician, and the city's authors have included Poe, Cabell, Ellen Glasgow, and D.S.Freeman.

Richmond Enquirer (1804–77), semi-weekly newspaper that absorbed the Jeffersonian *Richmond Examiner* and was edited (1820–45) by Thomas Ritchie, first as a Jeffersonian paper, and later as a Democratic organ championing Jackson.

Rickaree Indians, see *Arikara.*

RICKETSON, DANIEL (1813–98), Massachusetts poet, whose miscellaneous work includes *The Factory Bell and Other Poems* (1873), revealing his sympathy with working people. He was a friend of the Transcendentalists and was intimate with Thoreau.

RIDGE, LOLA (1871–1941), Irish-born poet, after spending her early life in Australia came to the U.S. (1907), where she published her first volume, *The Ghetto and Other Poems* (1918), showing the influence of Imagism in her pictures of the beauty and brutality of New York life. Her next two volumes, *Sun-Up* (1920) and *Red Flag* (1927), were followed by *Firehead* (1929), inspired by the martyrdom of Sacco and Vanzetti, a psychological narrative of the crucifixion of Jesus as seen through the eyes of John, Peter, Mary, and Mary Magdelene. *Dance of Fire*

(1935) shows further technical development in the use of symbolism and deals with her consistent theme of the martyrdom of the downtrodden.

RIDING, Laura (1901–), born in New York, long an expatriate in Mallorca and England, is best known for her nine books of poetry, gathered in *Collected Poems* (1938). She has written several critical works, such as *Contemporaries and Snobs* (1928), and her collaborations with Robert Graves include *A Survey of Modernist Poetry* (1927). She is also the author of a novel, *A Trojan Ending* (1937), retelling the story of the Trojan War, and *Lives of Wives* (1939), concerned with such pre-Christian heroes as Cyrus, Aristotle, and Cæsar, considering them as husbands whose private lives illuminate their public careers.

RIDPATH, John Clark (1840–1900), professor at Indiana Asbury University (1869–85), which during his administration as vice president became De Pauw University. His popularization of scholarly subjects won him an extensive contemporary reputation, and his works included not only writings of his own, but the editing of encyclopedias and a library of universal literature.

RIESENBERG, Felix (1879–1939), engineer and sailor, whose voyages in both sailing craft and steamships furnished material for his books, including *Under Sail* (1915), *The Men on Deck* (1918), *Vignettes of the Sea* (1926), *Shipmates* (1928), *Clipper Ships* (1932), *Log of the Sea* (1933), *Cape Horn* (1939), and *The Pacific Ocean* (1940). His novels about life at sea include *East Side, West Side* (1927), *Red Horses* (1928), and *Mother Sea* (1933).

RIGDON, Sidney (1793–1876), Mormon leader, whose rewriting of a religious novel is sometimes said to have been the basis of the *Book of Mormon*. After he and Joseph Smith had become involved in a financial scheme in Ohio, they fled to Missouri, where they barely escaped execution for armed clashes in favor of Mormonism. At the Mormon settlement at Nauvoo, Illinois, Smith and Rigdon split, partly over the matter of polygamy; when Brigham Young succeeded Smith, Rigdon was excommunicated and at Pittsburgh founded his own Church of Christ.

RIGGS, Lynn (1899–), Oklahoma poet and dramatist, known for his plays on the people and folk themes of the southern Plains region. The most noted of these are: *Roadside* (1930), a romantic comedy; *Green Grow the Lilacs* (q.v., 1931), a folk-play set in the Indian Territory in 1900 and intended to dramatize the spirit of Western folk songs; *Russet Mantle* (q.v., 1936), a comedy concerned with the problems of youth in a transitional culture; and *The Cherokee Night* (1936), a tragedy dealing with the degradation of the Cherokee Indians following the U.S. occupation of Oklahoma. Other plays include *Big Lake* (1927), *Sump'n Like Wings* (1928), *A Lantern to See By* (1928), and *The Cream in the Well* (1941). He has also published two books of poetry, *The Iron Dish* (1930) and *Listen, Mind.*

Right of Way, The, novel by Gilbert Parker (q.v.).

Rights of Man, The, political tract by Thomas Paine (q.v.), published at London (2 parts, 1791–2). A defense of the French Revolution against the attacks of Burke, it resulted in a British law against seditious publications and in Paine's flight to France to escape prosecution.

The argument is based on the principle that sovereignty inheres in the will of the present majority, as a continuous compact reaffirmed by each generation. Men left the state of nature because moral virtue was insufficient to rule them, and the end of government is the freedom and security of the individual. In civil communities, civil rights rest on the natural rights inherited from the original condition of mankind. These natural rights include the maximum of freedom of action and thought that is compatible with the natural rights of others. Civil authority should interfere with the natural freedom of individuals only in so far as is required to insure and protect the security and happiness of the majority of the people.

RIIS, Jacob August (1849–1914), Danish-born reformer, journalist, and author, came to New York (1870), where his own experiences in the slums and his observations as a police reporter on New York papers led him to declare war on tenement conditions, child labor, and other abuses of lower-class urban life. His lone fight was aided later by Theodore Roosevelt, who, as head of the city police board, New York governor, and U.S. President, gave him great support. Among Riis's books describing his work were: *How the Other Half*

Lives (1890); *The Children of the Poor* (1892); *Out of Mulberry Street* (1898); and *The Battle with the Slum* (1902). *The Making of an American* (1901) is an autobiography.

RILEY, [Isaac] Woodbridge (1869–1933), professor of philosophy at Vassar (1908–33), was a leader in the study of American philosophic thought. His books include *American Philosophy* (1907) and *American Thought from Puritanism to Pragmatism* (1915, enlarged 1923).

RILEY, James Whitcomb (1849–1916), Indiana poet, tried his hand at such diverse occupations as acting with a patent medicine show and house painting, until his connection with a local newspaper led him into a career of journalism and the writing of verse. His popularity dates from his period on the *Indianapolis Journal* (1877–85), to which he contributed a series of genial poems in rustic dialect, ostensibly written by 'Benj. F. Johnson, of Boone.' The series, which included 'When the Frost Is on the Punkin,' was published in *The Old Swimmin'-Hole and 'Leven More Poems* (q.v.,1883). This was the first of a number of books marked by the frequent use of Hoosier dialect, a simple sentimentality, a quaint whimsical kindliness, and cheerful philosophy, blended with a frequently obtrusive pathos. The most popular of the poems were 'Little Orphant Annie,' 'The Old Man and Jim,' 'Knee-Deep in June,' and 'The Raggedy Man,' while the most successful of his books were *Afterwhiles* (1887), *Pipes o' Pan at Zekesbury* (1888), *Rhymes of Childhood* (1890), and *Poems Here at Home* (1893). He was also popular as a reader of his own poems, and frequently appeared with 'Bill' Nye, whose broad humor he complemented with his appealing sentimentality. Meredith Nicholson's *The Poet* is a fictional biography of Riley.

RIMMER, William (1816–79), English-born sculptor and painter, was brought to the U.S. (*c.*1824), and became noted as a sculptor through his interest in direct carving and sculptural form, his knowledge of anatomy gained as a physician, and his attempt to escape the formal neoclassical modeling of his time. He modelled numerous powerful though anatomical figures, such as *The Falling Gladiator* and *The Dying Centaur*, but did not justify his talents in his single public monument, that of *Alexander Hamilton* at Boston. He lectured at the Lowell Institute, Cooper Institute, and Boston Museum, and wrote *Elements of Design* (1864) and *Art Anatomy* (1877).

RINEHART, Mary Roberts (1876–), born in Pittsburgh, established herself as a leading author of mystery stories with her first books, *The Circular Staircase* (1908) and *The Man in Lower Ten* (1909). The former was dramatized with Avery Hopwood as *The Bat* (1920). She has continued to write popular stories of horror and crime detection, as well as several plays and a series of humorous novels whose heroine is the eccentric old maid 'Tish.' *My Story* (1931) is her autobiography.

RINGLING, Charles (1863–1926), and four of his brothers, Otto, Albert, Alfred, and John, performed in their own wagon show, which in 1884 became the Ringling Brothers Circus. This has been the leading American circus since 1907, when it absorbed the Barnum and Bailey combination.

Rip Van Winkle, tale by Irving (q.v.), published in *The Sketch-Book* (q.v.,1819–20). Joseph Jefferson is famous for his acting of the title role in a dramatic version, which he made with Boucicault in 1865.

Rip, an indolent, good-natured Dutch-American, lives with his shrewish wife in a village on the Hudson during the years before the Revolution. One day, while hunting in the Catskills with his dog Wolf, he meets a dwarflike stranger dressed in the ancient Dutch fashion. He helps him to carry a keg, and with him joins a party silently engaged in a game of ninepins. After drinking of the liquor they furnish, he falls into a sleep which lasts 20 years, during which the Revolutionary War takes place. He awakes as an old man, returns to his altered village, is greeted by his old dog, who dies of the excitement, and finds that his wife has long been dead. Rip and his associates are almost forgotten, but he goes to live with his daughter, now grown and the mother of a family, and soon wins new friends by his generosity and cheerfulness.

RIPLEY, George (1802–80), Massachusetts religious thinker, writer, and reformer, graduated from Harvard (1823) and its Divinity School (1826), after which he began his 15-year ministry of a Boston Unitarian church. He exhibited his

literary and philosophical interest in the German transcendental thinkers in his editorship of the *Christian Register*, a Unitarian paper which he made so liberal that he was attacked by Andrews Norton for a 'leaning toward infidelity.' He made a more direct contribution to American knowledge of idealistic philosophy in *Specimens of Foreign Standard Literature* (14 vols.,1838–42), edited with F.H.Hedge, which included contributions from Margaret Fuller, W.H.Channing, J.S.Dwight, and J.F.Clarke. This work had a considerable effect on the Transcendentalists, since it contained the foreign documents on which their philosophy was partly based. Ripley's *Discourses on the Philosophy of Religion* (1836) precipitated another attack by Norton, which he answered in *Letters on the Latest Form of Infidelity* (1840). The following year he retired from the ministry. He put his Transcendentalist theories into practice by helping to found *The Dial* and to organize Brook Farm. As president of this community, he guided it through the period of Fourierism, and he helped to found the North American Phalanx on Fourierist principles. At Brook Farm he edited *The Harbinger* (q.v.,1845–9), and after the colony's failure he continued it in New York with Parke Godwin. Ripley was the book reviewer of the New York *Tribune* (1849–80), becoming distinguished for his criticism. During these years he also continued his interest in reform, edited such works as *A Handbook of Literature on the Fine Arts* (1852) with Bayard Taylor, and *New American Cyclopœdia* (16 vols.,1858–63) with C.A.Dana, and made trips to Europe (1866,1869–70), where he became acquainted with many of the authors and philosophers whose views he had championed.

RIPLEY, WILLIAM Z[EBINA] (1867–), economist, professor at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (1895–1901) and at Harvard (1901–33). His books include: *Financial History of Virginia* (1890); *Trusts, Pools, and Corporations* (1905); and *Main Street and Wall Street* (1927); as well as several books on railroad finance.

Rise of American Civilization, The, history by Charles and Mary Beard (qq.v.).

Rise of Silas Lapham, The, novel by Howells (q.v.) published in 1885.

Colonel Silas Lapham, a typical self-made businessman, has risen from a Vermont farm to a position of wealth and prominence as a paint manufacturer. He establishes his family in Boston, where he begins to build a great mansion, and urges his wife, Persis, and their daughters, Penelope and Irene, to enter Brahmin society, for which their wealth would seem to qualify them. Tom Corey and Penelope, the older and more intelligent sister, are in love, but he belongs to the exclusive social group to which the Laphams cannot attain, and there is a misunderstanding when Irene, immature and impulsive, believes that Tom returns her love for him. Penelope refuses his proposal, and, at the Coreys' dinner party, which Penelope does not attend, Silas gets drunk and unconsciously reveals himself as a brash and sturdy *nouveau riche*. He has meanwhile been speculating unsuccessfully and faces bankruptcy. His only hope is the sale of a milling property to an English syndicate, and his former partner, Rogers, presses him to this action, although both know that this will result in disaster to the syndicate. When Lapham's fair play and integrity cause him to refuse the opportunity, he is ruined and returns to Vermont. Although he has fallen in the social scale, he has risen morally, by virtue of his homespun honesty. Tom and Penelope are married and go to Mexico to escape the unhappy background of social distinctions between their families.

Rise of the Dutch Republic, The, history by J.L.Motley (q.v.).

RIVERA, DIEGO (1886–). Mexican painter, noted for his revival of the technique of fresco painting. He is best known for his murals dealing with social problems from a Marxist point of view, but this is not completely evident in such paintings in the U.S. as those in the Stock Exchange and School of Fine Arts in San Francisco, and the depictions of industrial life in the Detroit Institute of Arts. In his representations of American liberalism in the New Workers' School (New York City), and a fresco for Rockefeller Center, which was removed because of its radical implications but repainted in Mexico City, he most completely presents his social attitude. He has collaborated with Bertram Wolfe in two books, *Portrait of America* (1934) and *Portrait of Mexico* (1936).

RIVES, AMÉLIE (1863–), Virginia-born novelist, poet, and playwright, lived for some time in England, where she fell under the influence of the attenuated impressionism of the *fin de siècle* authors, as is revealed in her novelette, *The Quick or the Dead?* (1883), a psychological study of a woman torn between love for her dead husband and for the living cousin who strongly resembles him. Her other works include: *A Brother to the Dragons* (1888), a collection of tales; *Barbara Dering* (1892), a sequel to *The Quick or the Dead?; Herod and Miriamne* (1889), *Athelwold* (1893), and *Augustine the Man* (1906), blank-verse tragedies; *Love-in-a-Mist* (1927), a comedy written with Gilbert Emery; *Seléné* (1905), a dramatic poem; and the romantic novels, *The Golden Rose* (1908), *Pan's Mountain* (1910), *Virginia of Virginia* (1888), *The Witness of the Sun* (1889), *According to St.John* (1891), *Hidden House* (1912), *World's End* (1914), *The Ghost Garden* (1918), and *Firedamp* (1930). In 1896 she married the Russian Prince Troubetzkoy.

Rivet in Grandfather's Neck, The, romance by Cabell (q.v.).

Rivington's New-York Gazeteer (1773–83), New York City Tory newspaper, founded by James Rivington (1724–1802). It was issued under the protection of the British Army, being suspended from 1775 to 1777, revived as *Rivington's New-York Loyal Gazette* and later *Royal Gazette,* and continued until the withdrawal of the army. Jonathan Odell was a contributor.

Road Not Taken, The, poem in iambic tetrameter by Robert Frost (q.v.), published in *Mountain Interval* (1916).

The poet tells how the course of his life was determined when he came upon two roads that diverged in a wood. Forced to choose, he 'took the one less traveled by, And that has made all the difference.'

Road of Ages, novel by Robert Nathan (q.v.).

Road to Rome, The, comedy by Robert Sherwood (q.v.).

Roads of Destiny, stories by W.S.Porter (q.v.).

Roan Stallion, allegorical narrative in free verse, by Jeffers (q.v.), published in *Roan Stallion, Tamar, and Other Poems* (1925).

California, a young half-breed woman, is married to Johnny, a farmer of the California mountains. Although she is devoted to her daughter Christine, she loathes her sordid life with her brutal and obscene husband, and longs for a passionate emotional experience, which even her Catholic faith fails to give her. Then her husband brings home a beautiful roan stallion, who arouses in California's primitive mind a feeling of love and adoration, partly sexual, partly religious. After a wild ride in the night, which she imagines to be a sexual encounter, she returns to the drunkenly amorous Johnny, from whose advances she escapes in disgust. She runs to the corral, where he follows, and California helps the stallion to kill her husband, by shooting a dog who interferes. After Johnny has been trampled to death, she is 'moved by some obscure human fidelity' to shoot the stallion, and then turns to her daughter 'the mask of a woman who has killed God.'

Roanoke Island, off the coast of North Carolina, south of the town of Kitty Hawk, was first settled in 1584, when Ralegh dispatched Sir Richard Grenville to plant a colony there. In 1585 Drake visited the colony, found it in bad straits, and took all the settlers back to England. A few days after his departure, Grenville arrived with a relief ship, and, finding the settlement deserted, left a party of 15 men for recolonization. Among them was Thomas Hariot (q.v.). In 1587 Ralegh sent another colony of 117 people under John White, who found that the previous 15 colonists had disappeared. White returned (1591) to the colonists he had left, but found that they too had vanished without any trace, except the single word 'Croatan,' mysteriously carved on a tree. Among those who had disappeared was White's granddaughter, Virginia Dare (1587–?), the first white child of English parents born in America. Some evidence has been advanced for the traditional belief that the colonists lived and intermarried among the Croatan Indians on a near-by island, leaving half-breed descendants who moved to the southern part of the state. Among the literature concerned with Roanoke is Paul Green's *The Lost Colony* (1937), a historical pageant produced annually on the island. The most famous event of its later history is the Battle of Roanoke Island (Feb. 8,

1862), in which Union troops and vessels under the command of Burnside captured this strategic Confederate position.

Roaring Camp, see *Luck of Roaring Camp.*

Rob of the Bowl: A Legend of St.Inigoes, romance by J.P.Kennedy (q.v.), published in 1838. This story of colonial Maryland in 1681, realistically treated although the subject is melodramatic, is concerned with the attempt by Protestant factions to overthrow the Catholic Lord Baltimore.

ROBB, JOHN S. (*fl.*1847), St.Louis journeyman printer, whose typical Southwestern frontier humor and extravagant tales about Mike Fink were collected from various periodicals in *Streaks of Squatter Life, and Far-West Scenes* (1847). He was also the author of *Kaam; or, Daylight . . . A Tale of the Rocky Mountains* (1847).

ROBERTS, SIR CHARLES GEORGE DOUGLAS (1860–), Canadian poet, novelist, editor, and university professor, after the popular success of his history of Canada (1897) and other writings, moved to New York to devote himself to literature. He published several volumes of poetry, but was best known for his historical fiction for children and adults, including *The Raid from Beauséjour* (1894), *A Sister to Evangeline* (1898), *Barbara Ladd* (1902), *The Watcher of the Trails* (1904), *Red Fox* (1905), and *Haunters of the Silences* (1907).

ROBERTS, ELIZABETH MADOX (1886–1941), born in the Kentucky mountain region, which she described in her fiction, graduated from the University of Chicago (1921). Her first publications were volumes of verse, *In the Great Steep's Garden* (1915) and *Under the Tree* (1922, enlarged 1930), and her later poetry is collected in *Song in the Meadow* (1940), containing lyrics and verse legends. *The Time of Man* (q.v.,1926), her first novel, is set in the Appalachians and deals with poor whites possessed by the restless pioneer urge. *My Heart and My Flesh* (q.v.,1927) is another novel concerned with these people, emphasizing the conditioning effect of their love for the land. The author's scrupulous and effective re-creation of folk customs and speech distinguishes her further fiction, which includes: *Jingling in the Wind* (1928), a satirical fantasy whose chief character is a rainmaker on his way to a professional convention; *The Great Meadow* (q.v.,1930), a historical novel, depicting the beauty and terror of pioneer life in Kentucky; *A Buried Treasure* (1931), a humorous narrative about a farmer and his wife who discover a pot of gold; *The Haunted Mirror* (1932), short stories of Kentucky mountain folk; *He Sent Forth a Raven* (1935), a mystical novel concerned with the relation of farmers to the soil they till; *Black Is My Truelove's Hair* (1938), the story of a village girl and the two love affairs that shape her life; and *Not by Strange Gods* (1941), short stories mainly about Kentucky women.

ROBERTS, KENNETH [LEWIS] (1885–), Maine novelist, graduated from Cornell (1908), became a journalist, and later achieved recognition as a vivid and accurate historical novelist. His fiction includes: *Arundel* (1930), the story of Benedict Arnold's expedition against Quebec; *The Lively Lady* (1931), dealing with the War of 1812; *Rabble in Arms* (1933) and *Captain Caution* (1934), sequels to *Arundel; Northwest Passage* (1937), the story of Robert Rogers, the campaigns of his Rangers against the Indians, and his later attempts to find a Northwest Passage; and *Oliver Wiswell* (1940), a tale of the American Revolution as seen through the eyes of a colonial Loyalist soldier and historian. Roberts is also the author of *Trending into Maine* (1938), including selections from other authors concerning history, mythology, and other matters about his native state; *For Authors Only* (1935), a book of essays, displaying his salty humor; and *March to Quebec* (1938), a compilation of source materials used in *Arundel.*

ROBERTSON, JAMES (1742–1814), Virginia-born frontiersman, was reared in North Carolina, and after the failure of the Regulator movement collaborated with John Sevier and others in forming the Watauga Association (1771–8), a semi-independent state on the North Carolina frontier, offering opportunities for poor settlers. Following conflicts with Indians, he explored farther west, founded what is now Nashville, Tennessee (1779), and became a prominent figure in the city's early history.

ROBERTSON, MORGAN ANDREW (1861–1915), popular author of romantic sea stories, which include: *Spun-Yarn* (1898); *Where Angels Fear to Tread* (1899); and *Land-Ho!* (1905).

ROBERTSON, WILLIAM (1721–93), Scottish historian, educator, and church leader, whose masterpiece, *The History of the Reign of the Emperor Charles the Fifth* (1769), was republished (1857) with an appendix by W.H.Prescott, an enthusiastic follower of Robertson's concepts of historical writing. An outgrowth of Robertson's interest in the New World, awakened by his research for this work, was his *History of America* (2 vols.,1777), interrupted by the outbreak of the Revolutionary War. Although criticized for its omissions and inaccuracies, this vivid and moving narrative was very popular in its time.

ROBESON, PAUL (1898–), Negro actor and singer, whose stage career has included leading roles in *All God's Chillun Got Wings*, *The Emperor Jones*, and *Show Boat*.

Robin Day, *The Adventures of*, novel by R.M.Bird (q.v.).

ROBINS, ELIZABETH (1865–), American actress, famous for her creation of Ibsen roles in London during the 1890's, has written such works as *The Magnetic North* (1904), a novel set in the Klondike, which she visited during the gold rush; *A Dark Lantern* (1905); *Come and Find Me* (1908), a novel set in Alaska and California; and *Votes for Women* (1906), a play, and *The Convert* (1907), a novel, both setting forth ideas of woman suffrage. She has written of her stage experiences in *Ibsen and the Actress* (1928), and in 1932 published *Theatre and Friendship*, a volume of letters written to her by Henry James, which she edited with an autobiographical commentary. Some of her books were published under the pseudonym C.E.Raimond.

ROBINSON, BEVERLEY (1723–92), colonel of a Loyalist regiment during the Revolutionary War, was implicated in the treason plot of Benedict Arnold and André. He was later banished from New York and lived in Canada.

ROBINSON, CHARLES (1818–94), Massachusetts antislavery leader, emigrated to California (1849), where he established a newspaper and became a member of the legislature, opposing California's entrance into the Union as a slave state. He continued his adherence to the Free-Soil program as a leader of the Emigrant Aid Society in Kansas (1854), where he became territorial governor (1856), as well as first governor of the state (1861) after it was admitted to the Union. His books include *Kansas: Its Interior and Exterior Life* (1856) and *The Kansas Conflict* (1892), histories of the struggle for Free Soil.

ROBINSON, EDWIN ARLINGTON (1869–1935), was reared in Gardiner, Maine, the prototype of his 'Tilbury Town,' and after studying at Harvard (1891–3) was employed in New York City. His first volume of poems, *The Torrent and the Night Before* (1896), was privately printed. In these early poems, strongly influenced by his reading of Hardy, he presented the first of his spare, incisive portraits of the people of Tilbury, marked by a dry New England manner that proved cryptic to his few readers. One reviewer stated that 'The world is not beautiful to him, but a prison house,' to which Robinson later replied: 'The world is not a "prison-house," but a kind of spiritual kindergarten where bewildered infants are trying to spell God with the wrong blocks.' Some of the poems of this book were reprinted, with additions, in *The Children of the Night* (1897), containing the 'Credo' in which the poet recognizes that there is 'not a glimmer' for one who 'welcomes when he fears, the black and awful chaos of the night'; but states that he feels 'the coming glory of the Light' through an intuition of a spiritual guidance that transcends the life of the senses. Many of the other poems are psychological portraits, similar in form to those of Browning, including such character studies as those of the wealthy and wise Richard Cory, who committed suicide for lack of a positive reason for being; Cliff Klingenhagen, with his mysterious ironic philosophy of life; the spiteful miser, Aaron Stark; Luke Havergal, the bereaved lover; and romantic old John Evereldown. *The Children of the Night* impressed Theodore Roosevelt, and, upon the publication of *Captain Craig* (q.v.,1902), the President helped Robinson escape from such work as inspector of subway construction to a clerkship in the New York Custom House (1905–10). Included in *Captain Craig* are such character studies as 'Isaac and Archibald' and 'The Book of Annandale' (qq.v.), while *The Town Down the River* (1910) contains 'Miniver Cheevy' (q.v.), 'How Annandale Went Out,' and other portraits. After this date, Robinson was able to give his entire

time to poetry, much of which he wrote during his annual summer residence at the MacDowell Colony in New Hampshire. His next works were plays: *Van Zorn* (1914), a 'comedy' whose titular figure, mysteriously able to learn the secrets of others, aids in solving their personal problems; and *The Porcupine* (1915), a tragedy founded on a similar psychological situation. *The Man Against the Sky* (1916) is a collection of poems, whose title piece (q.v.) sets forth the author's philosophy of life with striking symbolic power. Other poems in the volume include 'Flammonde,' 'Cassandra,' and the Shakespearean study, 'Ben Jonson Entertains a Man from Stratford' (qq.v.). With *Merlin* (q.v.,1917) he began the Arthurian trilogy completed by *Lancelot* (q.v.,1920) and *Tristram* (q.v.,1927; Pulitzer Prize, 1928), in which he studies the characters as individuals who act according to their particular passions, independently of supernatural powers. *The Three Taverns* (1920) contains poems further illustrating this attitude, such as 'Rahel to Varnhagen' and 'Rembrandt to Rembrandt' (qq.v.), and further Tilbury portraits such as 'Mr. Flood's Party,' describing the pathetically humorous old town drunkard. *Avon's Harvest* (q.v.,1921) traces the consequences of an obsessive hatred and fear on a sensitive mind, and a volume of *Collected Poems* of this year won the Pulitzer Prize (1922). Robinson's steady production of verse continued with *Roman Bartholow* (q.v.,1923), a dramatic narrative presenting a subtle psychological analysis of a sick soul; *The Man Who Died Twice* (q.v., 1924; Pulitzer Prize, 1925), telling the tragic story of a man's dissipation of his artistic genius; *Dionysus in Doubt* (1925), in which the title poem and 'Demos and Dionysus' (qq.v.) criticize the standardization and materialism of equalitarian society, which the poet finds inimical to 'romance and love and art' and to the development in a transcendental fashion of the individual 'self and soul'; *Cavender's House* (q.v.,1929), a blank-verse dialogue between Cavender and the ghost of the wife he murdered for a supposed infidelity; *The Glory of the Nightingales* (1930), a verse narrative concerned with the rivalry between two friends for the love of a woman, and their later reconciliation; *Matthias at the Door* (q.v.,1931), a narrative in which the chief figure, through bitter disillusion, loses his egocentric complacency, and learns to understand others; *Nicodemus* (1932), adding ten poems to the body of his work, including four on Biblical themes; *Talifer* (q.v.,1933), a narrative of modern life, which shows the poet in a novel mood of optimistic cheer; *Amaranth* (1934), a somber narrative concerned with a group of frustrated artists; and *King Jasper* (q.v.,1935), a poetic narrative that constitutes a final statement of Robinson's sense of the tragedy of human life in a chaotic world, and of his unfaltering mystic faith in a 'glimmer' of light beyond. He collected his *Sonnets*, 1889–1927 (1928), and a selection from his letters was published in 1940. As an heir of the New England traditions of Puritanism and Transcendentalism, with their emphasis upon the individual, Robinson has been termed a sober Transcendentalist who deals primarily with the ethical conflicts within the individual, and measures the value of the isolated person by his truth to himself. With the reserve typical of the New Englander, he most frequently employs the objective form of dramatic monologue, and, with the traditionalism inherent in his background, confines his experimentation to the use of common speech rhythms, rather than to the creation of new stanzaic forms. His quality of mind is organically expressed by his style, which itself quietly fuses tradition with originality, and romance with realism.

ROBINSON, Harriet Jane Hanson (1825–1911), Massachusetts mill worker and woman suffrage leader, contributed to *The Lowell Offering*, and, in addition to her political activities, wrote histories of women's life in factories, and such suffrage dramas as *Captain Mary Miller* (1887) and *The New Pandora* (1889).

ROBINSON, James Harvey (1863–1936), Illinois-born professor of history, was mainly associated with Columbia (1892–1919), after which he became a founder and the first director of the New School for Social Research. His influential views on history tended to minimize wars and territorial revisions, emphasizing instead the development of scientific and philosophic ideas and cultural relations. Among his writings are: *Introduction to the History of Western Europe* (1903), *The New History* (1911), *The Mind in the Making* (1921), *The Humanizing of Knowledge* (1922), and *The Ordeal of Civilization* (1926).

ROBINSON, ROWLAND EVANS (1833–1900), Vermont author, began in 1877 to write sketches on rural sports and the simple bucolic life he knew as a farmer. His first book, *Forest and Stream Fables* (1886), was followed by such similar collections as *In New England Fields and Woods* (1896), *Hunting Without a Gun, and Other Papers* (1905), and *Silver Fields, and Other Sketches of a Farmer-Sportsman* (1921). His appreciation of the scenery of his native state, understanding of the experience of Vermont farmers and English-speaking French Canadians, and sensitive ear for their dialects made him an important writer in the local-color tradition. These qualities, along with his typical Down East humor and homely philosophy, are best exhibited in his collections of fiction, including: *Uncle Lisha's Shop: Life in a Corner of Yankee-land* (1887); *Sam Lovel's Camps: Uncle Lisha's Friends Under Bark and Canvas* (1889); *Danvis Folks* (1894); *Uncle Lisha's Outing* (1897); *A Hero of Ticonderoga* (1898); *A Danvis Pioneer* (1900), a story of the Green Mountain Boys; and *Out of Bondage and Other Stories* (1905). He also wrote *Vermont: A Study of Independence* (1892). The 'Centennial Edition' (7 vols.,1933–6) of his works contains many formerly uncollected sketches and stories.

ROBINSON, SOLON (1803–80), born in Connecticut, emigrated to northern Indiana (1834), where he became a leader in politics, journalism, and trade, and wrote about the frontier society. He was instrumental in the establishment of the Department of Agriculture (1862), and his books, written in New York and Florida, present a vivid picture of rural and pioneer life. They include *The Will: A Tale of the Lake of the Red Cedars and Shabbona* (1841), *Hot Corn-Life Scenes in New York* (1854), and *Me-won-i-toc, A Tale of Frontier Life and Indian Character* (1867).

ROCHAMBEAU, JEAN BAPTISTE DONATIEN DE VIMEUR, *Comte de* (1725–1807), French general, sent with 6,000 regular soldiers to aid the American Revolution (1780). After a year in Newport, while the French fleet was blockaded off Narragansett, he joined Washington on the Hudson and proceeded with him to Yorktown. There the French fleet held the Chesapeake, while Washington and Rochambeau attacked by land and forced the surrender of Cornwallis. His *Memoirs* (translated 1838) deal in part with the Revolution, in which his son, the Vicomte de Rochambeau (1750–1813), also served.

Rock Me to Sleep, poem by Elizabeth Akers (q.v.).

Rocked in the Cradle of the Deep, poem by Emma Willard (q.v.).

ROCKEFELLER, JOHN D[AVISON] (1839–1937), born and reared in New York state, moved as a youth to Cleveland, Ohio, where he was a bookkeeper in 1855, a commission merchant in 1858, and a partner in an oil refinery in 1862. With his brother William (1841–1922), who also became an important capitalist, and other business associates, he founded the Standard Oil Company in 1870. Beginning with a capitalization of $1,000,000, within a few years the company constituted almost a complete monopoly of U.S. oil refineries and transportation facilities. The Standard Oil Trust (1882) became the Standard Oil Company of New Jersey in 1899, and this holding company had a capitalization of more than $100,000,000. John D. Rockefeller directed the operations of the company, as well as participating in the affairs of the U.S.Steel Corporation and other large business interests, until his retirement in 1911, when his son, John D. Rockefeller,Jr. (1874–), assumed control. The elder Rockefeller, one of the most powerful financiers of the U.S., had a fortune estimated in 1911 at one billion dollars. His many philanthropic activities include the endowment of Baptist churches and schools; the founding of the University of Chicago (1892); the Rockefeller Foundation (1913), established with an immense endowment to promote public health and studies in the sciences and humanities; the General Education Board (1903), which administers funds for educational and research purposes; and the Rockefeller Institute for Medical Research (1901). His son's donations have built New York's Riverside Church and rebuilt the colonial town of Williamsburg, Virginia, and his business enterprises include the construction of Radio City (q.v.). Literature on the family includes Ida M. Tarbell's *History of the Standard Oil Company* (1904), and Allen Nevins's *John D. Rockefeller: the Heroic Age of American Enterprise* (2 vols.,1940).

Rocket to the Moon, play by Clifford Odets (q.v.).

Rodeo, outdoor exhibition of sporting events, which originated in the competition of cowboys at cattle roundups of the western U.S. Organized rodeos, governed by common rules and advertised as public entertainments, date from the 1890's, and are annual events lasting several days in many Western communities. The best known are those held at Cheyenne, Wyoming; Pendleton, Oregon; and Calgary, Alberta. The events, in which professional riders as well as actual cowboys compete for trophies and money prizes, customarily include bucking-bronco riding, roping, steer wrestling (bull-dogging), trick riding, and wild-cow milking.

Roderick Hudson, novel by Henry James (q.v.) published in 1876. The character Christina also appears in *The Princess Casamassima* (q.v.).

Rowland Mallet, a wealthy connoisseur, struck by the genius of the amateur sculptor Roderick Hudson, takes the youth abroad to develop his art. Among their friends in Rome are Gloriani, a brilliant French sculptor; Sam Singleton, a modest American painter; Augusta Blanchard, an undistinguished American art student; and shrewd, benevolent old Madame Grandoni. Gloriani predicts that Roderick will 'fizzle out,' but this does not disturb the confident youth, who studies enthusiastically and produces several fine statues in the intervals between 'sterile moods.' He depends much on the stimulation of others and is considerably altered after meeting Christina Light, fascinating daughter of an expatriated American widow. He loses interest in sculpture, and Rowland summons from New England Roderick's mother and his fiancée, Mary Garland, who has also attracted Rowland. Roderick's fine bust of his mother is his last important work, for Christina, bowing to her mother's ambitious urging, marries the rich Prince Casamassima. The youth cannot overcome his infatuation, and after a time goes with his friends to Switzerland, where they meet Christina and her husband. With a sudden return of ardor, Roderick attempts to follow her, and for this purpose even attempts to borrow from Mary, at which Rowland angrily condemns him as an ungrateful egoist. Roderick walks off into the mountains, where he is caught in a thunderstorm. When his body is discovered, it is uncertain whether he fell or jumped from a cliff.

ROE, E[DWARD] P[AYSON] (1838–88), born in New York, educated at Williams College and Auburn Theological Seminary, was a Presbyterian minister until the Chicago fire (1871) attracted him as an appropriate setting for a story of spiritual conversion. The resulting novel, *Barriers Burned Away* (q.v.,1872), became immensely popular, and after the success of a novel with a similar formula, *Opening a Chestnut Burr* (1874), he resigned from the ministry to become a professional author. These two works were his most popular, and set the pattern for their successors, depending on a topical event, characters and incidents selected from personal observation or newspaper reports, an enthusiasm for rural life, and a plot of a search for a wife or a fortune, all overlaid with sentimental piety. Among his later novels were *Near to Nature's Heart* (1876), *A Knight of the Nineteenth Century* (1877), *Without a Home* (1881), *He Fell in Love with His Wife* (1886), and *The Earth Trembled* (1887).

ROEBLING, JOHN AUGUSTUS (1806–69), German-born engineer, came to the U.S. (1831) and became a pioneer in the construction of suspension bridges. His greatest work was the planning of the Brooklyn Bridge (q.v.). Construction on this work had just begun when he died as the result of an accident that occurred while he was directing operations.

WASHINGTON AUGUSTUS ROEBLING (1837–1926), his son, who had already distinguished himself in engineering work for the Union Army during the Civil War, carried out the construction of the Brooklyn Bridge, even though stricken following too many hours in the compressed air of the caissons (1872).

Roger Malvin's Burial, story by Hawthorne (q.v.), published in *The Token* (1832) and in *Mosses from an Old Manse* (1846).

Two wounded survivors of Lovewell's Fight (q.v.) make their escape through the woods. Roger Malvin, an old man mortally injured, urges his young companion, Reuben Bourne, to desert him and seek safety. Reuben protests, but is finally persuaded and promises to send help. He makes his way home, but cannot bring himself to tell Dorcas Malvin of the circumstances in which he left her father.

He claims to have buried him in the forest, is hailed as a hero, and soon marries Dorcas. Their life is not happy, for his conscience disturbs him, and, when their son Cyrus is 15, they leave the settlement to seek a new home in the wilderness. One evening Reuben accidentally shoots his son while hunting, and is horrified to discover the boy's body at the same spot where he left Malvin, years before. Dorcas discovers her son's death, and falls unconscious. The upper branch of an oak, where Reuben hung a bloody handkerchief as a signal, has withered and now crumbles and drops, while Reuben prays, feeling that at last his crime is expiated and the curse lifted.

Rogerenes, see *Rogers, John.*

ROGERS, Bruce (1870–), Indiana-born book designer, was associated with the Riverside Press at Cambridge (1900–1912), where he became distinguished for his work in relating the style of each volume to its subject matter. He was later associated with C.P.Rollins and W.E. Rudge, and gradually changed his style from a clear, simple craftsmanship to a whimsical but skilful use of type ornament.

ROGERS, John (1648–1721), Connecticut religious leader, originally a Baptist, founded the Rogerene sect, opposed to formal clergy, prayers, and church meetings, and any connection between church and state. Although he had many followers, his liberal religious ideas constantly brought him into conflict with state and ecclesiastical authorities. The most important of his defenses of his beliefs was *The Book of the Revelation of Jesus Christ* (1720).

ROGERS, John (1829–1904), Massachusetts sculptor, began during the 1860's to produce small, realistic, story-telling statuettes of bronze or plaster, known as Rogers Groups, which depict contemporary life and events of the Civil War. Among these collections of literal, earnest group figures is *The Slave's Story*, presenting portraits of Whittier, Garrison, and Beecher. Typically sentimental Victorian subjects include *The Wounded Scout, One More Shot, The Slave Auction*, and *The Charity Patient.*

ROGERS, Robert (1731–95), born in Massachusetts, distinguished himself in the last of the French and Indian Wars, commanding some 600 Rangers who used the independent guerrilla technique of Indian warfare. After the British victory Rogers was sent to Detroit to receive the surrender of western French posts, as recorded in his *Journal* (1933). He later defended Detroit against the attack of Pontiac, but his illicit trading with the Indians disgraced him, and he went to England, where he published his *Journals* (1765), *A Concise Account of North America* (1765), and his play *Ponteach* (q.v., 1766). Appointed to command a Michigan fort, he commissioned the exploration of Jonathan Carver, but again found himself in difficulties when he administered the territory for his own profit, and was suspected of treasonable relations with the French. After another period in England (1769–75), he returned to America, where he was apparently torn between the value to himself of entering the British or the American service, and was accordingly imprisoned as a spy by Washington. Escaping to the British, he took to the field unsuccessfully, and was then set to recruiting, in which he reverted to his former dishonest practices. In 1780 he returned to England, where he remained the rest of his life. He figures in most of the fiction and history concerning Pontiac, as well as in Kenneth Roberts's *Northwest Passage.*

ROGERS, Will[iam] (1879–1935), was born near Claremore, Oklahoma, of a family that was part Indian. After brief schooling he went to the Argentine and then to Africa, where he broke horses for the English during the Boer War and joined a Wild West show that took him to Australia and back to the U.S. His steer-roping act was soon altered to one of lariat tricks performed during a humorous monologue on current events. In 1913 he joined the Ziegfeld Follies, in which he remained an outstanding attraction, although after 1919 he also became a motion-picture actor. Both in his roping act and his widely syndicated newspaper column, he was a homespun philosopher in the tradition of Petroleum V. Nasby, Artemus Ward, and Mr.Dooley, and although under the guise of ignorance he declared 'All I know is just what I read in the papers,' he was a pungent commentator on society and politics. He was at his best in short aphorisms restricted to a newspaper paragraph, and his books, in-

cluding *The Cowboy Philosopher on Prohibition* (1919), *The Illiterate Digest* (1924), and *Letters of a Self-Made Diplomat to His President* (1927), are considered less important. He died in an airplane crash in Alaska.

Rogers Groups, see *Rogers, John.*

Rogêt, MARIE, see *Mystery of Marie Rogêt.*

Roland Blake, novel by S.Weir Mitchell (q.v.).

ROLFE, JOHN (1585–1622), English-born colonist, came to Virginia (1609), where he was a leading cultivator of tobacco, instrumental in making it Virginia's staple commodity. He fell in love with Pocahontas (q.v.), daughter of a leading Indian chief, and his marriage to her (1614) insured peace with the Indians for several years. While on a voyage to England his wife died (1616), and he returned to become a colonial official. In 1622 the Indians destroyed his home, and he seems to have died at their hands. As 'Rolph' he figures in Cooke's novel, *My Lady Pokahontas.*

Roll River, novel by James Boyd (q.v.).

Rolling Stones, stories by W.S.Porter (q.v.).

ROLLINS, CARL PURINGTON (1880–), Massachusetts printer, associated with the Yale University Press as typographic adviser, and distinguished for his simple design and period typography.

***Rollo* books,** series of juvenile novels by Jacob Abbott (q.v.).

RÖLVAAG, O[LE] E[DVART] (1876–1931), born in Norway, came to the U.S. in 1896, and attended St.Olaf College, Minnesota, at which he became a professor of Norwegian (1907–31). His *Letters from America* (1912), like all his works, was written in his native language. This book purported to be a collection of correspondence from a young Norwegian in America to his family at home, and was a semi-autobiographical account of the gradual adjustment of an immigrant to the U.S. Rölvaag's greatest works were *Giants in the Earth* (q.v.,1927), *Peder Victorious* (q.v., 1929), and *Their Fathers' God* (q.v.,1931), a trilogy of epic power, realistically depicting the life of the Norwegian immigrants on the northwestern frontier of the U.S., and the psychological effect of the stern pioneer life upon the people whose titanic labors are a constant struggle against the impersonal forces of nature. His other novels include *Pure Gold* (1930) and *The Boat of Longing* (1933), the latter, written before his great trilogy, foreshadowing it both in its combination of realism and mysticism, and in its theme of a young Norwegian's emigration to the U.S.

Roman Bartholow, blank-verse narrative by E.A.Robinson (q.v.), published in 1923.

Bartholow, a wealthy, middle-aged aristocrat, has gone through a long period of despair, from which his marriage to the beautiful Gabrielle does not rescue him. The instrument of his surprising deliverance is his friend, Penn-Raven, an unconventional private evangelist and bland rhetorician, who calls himself frankly a 'blackguard,' but somehow maintains a profound spiritual wisdom and influence over others. The joyous, grateful Bartholow, inspired with hope, wishes Penn-Raven to live on his bounty, and cannot understand his friend's desire to leave him. The truth is that Penn-Raven has been making love, though without success, to Gabrielle. She refuses his advances, not out of love for Bartholow, but because, without the capacity to understand his problems, she has lost during the years of their loveless marriage all contact with humanity. When Bartholow discovers her in Penn-Raven's embrace, he attacks his friend, who saves himself from being strangled by a shrewd spiritual discussion, half truthful, half hypocritical. Gabrielle drowns herself, and Bartholow forces Penn-Raven to leave, giving himself up to grief for a time, then going abroad for consolation and to share the 'Power,' which he still retains.

Roman Catholic Church, IN AMERICA, had its beginnings in the legendary connection between the Norse discoveries of the New World and the medieval church in Greenland. Its modern history began with the colonization by Spain and France. Permanent dioceses were established in Santo Domingo, Haiti, and Puerto Rico (1511), and the see of Cuba ruled the mainland churches (1522–45). The first parish within the boundaries of the present U.S. was established at St.Augustine, Florida (1565). During the ensuing centuries, much missionary work was done by the Capuchins, Jesuits, and

Franciscans (qq.v.). In the American territories outside the present U.S., colonization and proselyting have resulted in the dominance of the Catholic faith. In the English colonies, Catholicism was generally attacked, except in Maryland, which was founded by the Catholic Calvert family, and in Rhode Island and Pennsylvania, where there was religious toleration. John Carroll became the first Catholic bishop in the U.S. (1789), when there were approximately 30,000 Catholics in the country. The increase to *c.*21,000,000 by 1940, primarily due to immigration from Ireland, Germany, and Italy, occasioned in the 19th century much antagonism in this predominantly Protestant country. Although this feeling was chiefly temporary or local, it resulted in such politico-religious movements as the Know-Nothings. The denomination is governed in the U.S. by an apostolic delegate at Washington, 4 cardinals, 22 archbishops, and 124 bishops, and is represented by many schools, colleges, and periodical publications.

Romance, generic name applied to prose fiction that is conceived in terms of the fanciful and idealistic, rather than in terms of observation and faithful description of fact. In his preface to *The House of the Seven Gables*, Hawthorne states that a novel 'is presumed to aim at a very minute fidelity, not merely to the possible, but to the probable and ordinary course of man's experience.' A romance, on the other hand, while it must keep to 'the truth of the human heart—has fairly a right to present that truth under circumstances . . . of the writer's own choosing or creation . . . he may so manage his atmospherical medium as to bring out or mellow the lights and deepen and enrich the shadows of the picture.'

Romance, play by Edward Sheldon (q.v.), produced in 1913 and published in 1914.

In the prologue, Harry comes to his grandfather, Bishop Thomas Armstrong of New York, to tell him that he intends to marry an actress. The old man attempts to dissuade him by recounting an episode of his youth. The body of the play cuts back to show him as a young rector in love with Margherita Cavallini, a notorious Italian opera singer, who refuses to marry him or to become his mistress, and ultimately shows him his responsibilities. In the epilogue, Harry is still determined to marry, although he has been moved by his grandfather's story. At the end the old man is alone, reading a newspaper account of Margherita's death, and playing on his victrola her recording of the song that first captivated him.

ROMANS, BERNARD (*c.*1720–*c.*1784), born in the Netherlands, was sent by the British government as a surveyor to America (*c.*1757), where he worked in Georgia and Florida, receiving an additional appointment as king's botanist. During the Revolution he served in the Continental army, both in Canada and the southern colonies. In addition to cartography of America and the writing of historical and nautical books, he wrote *A Concise Natural History of East and West Florida* (1775).

Romantic Comedians, The, novel by Ellen Glasgow (q.v.) published in 1926.

Judge Gamaliel Bland Honeywell of Queenborough (Richmond, Virginia), although he is 65 and had been married for 36 years to his wife Cordelia, a year after her death is unable to recall her face, and finds his thoughts straying to other women. Before his marriage he had been engaged to Amanda Lightfoot, who is still unmarried although she is 58, and their friends now expect him to marry her. The Judge determines to avoid her 'tedious fidelity,' and, although he disapproves the life of his libidinous sister, Mrs.Edmonia Bredalbane, he falls in love with and marries Annabel Upchurch, a young cousin of Cordelia. Annabel has just been jilted by Angus Blount, and frankly marries the Judge for his wealth, feeling that she can never love again. After their honeymoon she is immediately unfaithful, falls in love with Dabney Birdsong, and elopes with him to New York. The Judge follows, and attempts vainly to win her back. Upon his return he is consoled by Bella, Annabel's mother, who hopes he will now marry Amanda. He becomes seriously ill, waxes disconsolate, and believes himself beyond happiness. But when it is spring again, he notices the attractiveness of his young nurse, and he thinks dreamily, 'Spring is here, and I am feeling almost as young as I felt last year.'

Romanticism, term applied to an idealistic attitude of mind toward the potentialities of life, as opposed to the sober recognition of actualities. It is associated

with imagination and boundlessness, and its critical usage is contrasted with classicism, which is commonly associated with reason and restriction. A romantic attitude may be detected in literature of any period, but as a historical movement it arose in the 18th and 19th centuries, in reaction to more rational literary, philosophic, artistic, religious, and economic standards. As it gathered force gradually in its various manifestations, it does not lend itself to the limitations of a concise summary. The most profound and comprehensive ideal of romanticism is the vision of a greater personal freedom for the individual. Its origins may be traced to the economic rise of the middle class, struggling to free itself from feudal and monarchial restrictions; to the individualism of the Renaissance; to the Reformation, which was based on the belief in an immediate relationship between man and God; to scientific deism, which emphasized the deity's benevolence; to the psychology of Locke, Hartley, and others, who contended that minds are formed by environmental conditions, thus seeming to indicate that all men are created equal, and may be improved by environmental changes; to the optimistic humanitarianism of Shaftesbury; and to the writings of Rousseau, who contended that man is naturally good, institutions alone having made him wicked. In American literature, such general influences were strengthened by the great English and French romantic authors, the 'storm and stress' writers of Germany, and the idealistic philosophy of Kant. To these were added many indigenous forces: a realized political democracy; the individualism, buoyancy, and optimism of the frontier; the idealism latent in Calvinism, as expressed by Jonathan Edwards and others; intimacy with the wilderness; a predominantly agrarian background; and recognition of the heroism of early Americans. The romantic movement in America, as elsewhere, left its impress not only on the arts, but also in the more practical spheres of action, as in revolutionary activities for political freedom and individual rights; humanitarian reform (Abolitionism and Feminism); liberal religious movements (Unitarianism and Universalism); labor reform (Knights of Labor); and economic experiments in communal living (Brook Farm and New Harmony). The most clearly defined romantic literary movement in the U.S. was Transcendentalism (q.v.), centered at Concord (*c.*1836–60). Characteristics of the romantic movement exemplified in American literature are: sentimentalism (*Charlotte Temple*, *The Sketch Book*); primitivism and the cult of the noble savage (*Hiawatha*); political liberalism (Jefferson, Paine, Barlow); the celebration of natural beauty and the simple life (Cooper, Emerson, Thoreau); introspection (Poe, Thoreau); idealization of the common man, uncorrupted by civilization (Whittier, Cooper); interest in the picturesque past (Irving, Hawthorne); interest in remote places (Melville, Bayard Taylor); medievalism (Longfellow); antiquarianism leading to the revival of the popular ballad (Longfellow, Whittier); the Gothic romance (Brown); concern with a crepuscular world of mystery (Poe, Chivers); individualism (Emerson, Thoreau, Whitman); technical innovation (Whitman's prosody); humanitarianism (*Biglow Papers*, *Uncle Tom's Cabin*); morbid melancholy (Poe); native legendry (*Evangeline*); and the historical romance (Simms, Cooper). These characteristics also appear in other arts. The interests that created the Gothic romance (q.v.) also created the Gothic revival (q.v.), an architectural movement based on medieval styles, whose design carried the eye above the actual form and conjured up imaginative associations. In painting, romanticism affected the change from the severe portraiture of the 18th century to the work of the Hudson River School (q.v.), which emphasized the charm and grandeur of the American landscape. American music, which had no important exponents until late in the 19th century, echoed contemporary European romanticism in the compositions of such men as MacDowell and Chadwick. After the original impulse of the movement declined, its forces continued as fashions down to the turn of the century. Although the local-color movement (q.v.) fostered the rise of realism, it also perpetuated the romanticist's interest in strange places and unusual customs. Sentimentalism appeared in the stories of Bret Harte, and exoticism in those of Cable and Hearn. Even such predominantly realistic authors as Clemens veered from vivid depiction of contemporary scenes to historical romancing and idyllic representations of youth. Lesser novelists like Lew Wallace and F.M.Crawford purveyed romantic ideas

to the masses. Aldrich, Boker, Taylor, Stoddard, Stedman, and Gilder tended to imitate earlier romantic poets, and, lacking originality, so relied on attenuated romantic conventions that they came to represent the last stand for the genteel elements in the movement. While the genteel tradition found many revolutionary opponents in the advocates of realism and naturalism (qq.v.), both tradition and iconoclasm were products of the romantic movement. New forces were coupled with the old, as for instance when romantic individualism changed its character under the sway of Freudian psychology, producing such novelists as Sherwood Anderson, Thomas Wolfe, and Vardis Fisher, who are realistic in attention to detail, but romantic in their concern with the inner life and a search for ideals. In the same way, realists such as Hemingway, who are considered to have broken with the past, may be viewed in another light as heirs of the spiritual *malaise* and intense bitterness of Byron, the prophets of pessimism, and the romantic cult of primal emotion.

Rome Haul, novel by Walter D. Edmonds (q.v.).

ROOSEVELT, [Anna] Eleanor (1884–), wife of Franklin D. Roosevelt, is prominent in her own right as a social welfare worker, lecturer, writer of a daily newspaper column, 'My Day,' and author of books, which include: *It's Up to the Women* (1933); *This Is My Story* (1937), an autobiography; and *This Troubled World* (1938).

ROOSEVELT, Franklin Delano (1882–), 32nd president of the U.S. (1933–), was born at Hyde Park, New York. Theodore Roosevelt was a fifth cousin, and the family had long been prominent in New York politics and finance. Educated in Europe, at Groton, Harvard (1904), and Columbia law school (1907), he practised law in New York City, and became an independent Democratic state senator in 1910. A prominent progressive, he was influential in the election of Wilson to the presidency, and was assistant secretary of the navy (1913–21) under Josephus Daniels, becoming noted as a proponent of a large navy and Naval Reserve, and serving in Europe during the First World War as a naval administrator. He was nominated for the vice presidency (1920), and after the defeat of his party returned to law practice, although stricken with infantile paralysis, from which he slowly recovered. In 1929 he succeeded Alfred E. Smith as governor of New York, holding this office until the 1932 election, in which he won the presidency by a large majority. His administrative program, designed to correct economic and social abuses in a time of depression, was widely criticized for its vast program of taxation and expenditures, revaluation of the dollar, employment of a 'brain trust' (q.v.), opposition to great fortunes and corporate power, and tendency to experimentation in government, but its popularity was proved by the unprecedented majority by which he was re-elected in 1936. For this 'New Deal' (q.v.) administration Congress granted the President greater powers than those given in peace time to any of his predecessors. In 1940 he was again elected, becoming the first President to have a third term. The opening of this administration was concerned primarily with greatly increased activity in military and naval preparedness and with rendering augmented aid to Great Britain and her allies. Besides an edition of his state papers (5 vols.,1938), he has published such books as *Whither Bound?* (1926), *The Happy Warrior—Alfred E. Smith* (1928), *Government—Not Politics* (1932), and *Looking Forward* (1933).

ROOSEVELT, Theodore (1858–1919), 26th President of the U.S. (1901–9), born in New York City of a distinguished family, graduated from Harvard (1880). After writing a history of *The Naval Operations of the War between Great Britain and the United States*—1812–1815 (1882), he entered politics, serving in the state legislature (1882–4), where he led the Republican 'insurgents' against Blaine. He retired to his ranch in Dakota Territory after Blaine's nomination for the presidency, wrote books on his life in the West and biographies of Thomas Hart Benton and Gouverneur Morris, and began *The Winning of the West*, before returning to politics in an unsuccessful campaign for the mayoralty of New York (1886). President Harrison appointed him to the Civil Service Commission (1889–95), after which he headed the New York City Police Board (1895–7), working against corrupt politics and collaborating with Jacob Riis in an attack on slum conditions. He was assistant secretary of the navy (1896–8), retiring to help organize the Rough

Riders (q.v.), in whose Spanish-American War exploits he became the popular hero. His newly won reputation brought him the governorship of New York (1898–1900), but his liberal reforms alienated conservatives, who 'shelved' him in the vice presidency (1900), only to have him become president (1901) upon McKinley's assassination. During his two terms he vigorously championed the rights of 'the little man,' made a picturesque war against 'malefactors of great wealth' in his regulation of huge trusts, and supported such reforms as the Meat Inspection Act and Pure Food and Drugs Act. Although Congress claimed he had usurped its powers, he worked for the conservation of natural resources, and in this as well as in other matters his virile technique brought opposition on the grounds that he was attempting to dominate a government based on the theory of checks and balances. His foreign policy was marked by jingoism, as exhibited in the aid advanced to Panama in its revolution against Columbia, in order that the U.S. might begin the Panama Canal, and a general 'big stick' policy giving the U.S. a sort of police power in Latin American affairs. Other matters of foreign policy included a retention of the 'Open Door' (q.v.) in China, mediation to end the Russo-Japanese War (1905), and the instigation of the Algeciras Conference to settle colonial problems of European powers. He virtually dictated the nomination of Taft (1908), but was later alienated by his successor's conservative policies, and in 1912 formed the 'Bull Moose' (q.v.) or Progressive Republican party (q.v.), which nominated him for a third presidential term, but by the split gave the election to Woodrow Wilson. In addition to the books he wrote as a young man, he used authorship to promote his favorite beliefs and tell of his various adventures in and out of the political world. *The Winning of the West* (q.v.,4 vols.,1889–96) is considered his most significant work, while others include: *American Ideals and Other Essays* (1897); *The Rough Riders* (1899), a romantic account of his troops in the Spanish-American War; *The Strenuous Life* (1900), essays and addresses concerned with personal conflicts resulting from his philosophy of life; *African Game Trails* (1910), an account of his hunting and naturalist expedition after retirement from the presidency; *African and European Addresses* (1910), a pungent discussion of colonial problems; *The New Nationalism* (1910), a statement of beliefs embodied in his Bull Moose party; *History as Literature, and Other Essays* (1913), setting forth the theory of history illustrated in *The Winning of the West; Theodore Roosevelt: An Autobiography* (1913); *Through the Brazilian Wilderness* (1914), an account of an exploration trip; and *America and the World War* (1915), *Fear God and Take Your Own Part* (1916), and *The Great Adventure* (1918), his views on the First World War.

ROOT, Elihu (1845–1937), began his career as a corporation lawyer and New York City political leader, was prominent in the Republican party, and became secretary of war under McKinley and Theodore Roosevelt (1899–1904), at which time he drew up the 'Instructions' or constitution for the Philippines. He became secretary of state under Roosevelt (1905–9) and, in addition to promoting better understanding with Latin American republics, concluded treaties of arbitration with European countries for purposes of international peace. As senator from New York (1909–15), he continued to work for similar ends, and was awarded the Nobel Prize for peace (1912). During and after the First World War he served on commissions and was particularly prominent as a founder of the World Court, for which he sought American participation. Besides his many addresses he published *The Citizen's Part in Government* (1907); *Experiment in Government and the Essentials of the Constitution* (1913); and *Military and Colonial Policy of the United States* (1916).

ROOT, George Frederick (1820–95), musician and music publisher, whose compositions with facile rimes on martial or sentimental subjects were in great favor during the Civil War. The best known are *The Battle Cry of Freedom; Tramp, Tramp, Tramp, the Boys Are Marching*; and *Just Before the Battle, Mother.*

ROOT, John Wellborn (1850–91), Chicago architect, was influenced by the honesty of structure of Richardson, and in turn influenced the work of Louis Sullivan. He was a pioneer in the construction of steel-frame office buildings, as in the 15-story Monadnock Building (Chicago), a straight vertical design with an unornamented façade. His firm planned the Columbian Exposition at Chicago (1893). He

was a brother-in-law of Harriet Monroe, who wrote his biography (1896).

Rootabaga Stories, book for children by Sandburg (q.v.).

ROPES, JOHN CODMAN (1836–99), military historian, best known for his writings on the Civil War, which include: *The Army under Pope* (1881) and *Story of the Civil War* (2 vols.,1894–8). A third volume was added to the latter (1913) by another hand, bringing the narrative to the end of the war. He was also the author of many works on Napoleonic campaigns.

ROSE, AQUILA (*c.*1695–1723), English-born poet and typographer, arrived in Philadelphia some time before 1717 and obtained a place in the printing office of Andrew Bradford, to which Franklin succeeded upon Rose's death. He was the subject of a poem by Samuel Keimer. His son, Joseph Rose, with Franklin, to whom he was then apprenticed, collected his *Poems on Several Occasions* (1740), in which his work is that of a cultured amateur in the neoclassic tradition.

Rose of Dutcher's Coolly, novel by Hamlin Garland (q.v.) published in 1895.

Rose Dutcher, left motherless, is reared by her simple, sincere father on his farm in 'Dutcher's Coolly' in a Wisconsin valley. Her girlhood is healthy and untrammeled, but the monotonous farm life fails to satisfy her imagination, and she dreams of becoming an author. She is befriended by Dr.Thatcher, a Madison physician, and lives with his family while she attends the state university, where her energy and ambition distinguish her. She discourages suitors, feeling that to become a mere housewife would be to betray her own nature. On her return to the farm, after graduation, she finds she cannot endure life there, in spite of her father's devotion and need of her. She goes to Chicago, where she meets Warren Mason, an editor and critic. He considers her poems conventional and imitative, but is moved by her exceptional beauty and integrity, and soon falls in love with her. Rose meanwhile struggles to write expressively, and her verse begins to show promise. Wealthy Elbert Harvey wishes to marry her, but she is drawn to Mason's powerful, ironic mind and deep sincerity. Both hesitate, for love and marriage mean the surrender of a freedom each values, but a dramatic shipwreck they view together during a lake storm increases their intimacy. Rose returns to the coolly for a vacation, and Mason follows to persuade her to marry him, promising that they will complement each other in a marriage of equals.

ROSECRANS, WILLIAM STARKE (1819–98), after graduation from West Point (1842) and engineering in his native Ohio, entered the Civil War as aide-de-camp to McClellan, whom he succeeded as commanding general of the Department of Ohio. In 1862 he led a wing of the Army of the Mississippi under Pope, whom he also succeeded, and distinguished himself in ensuing battles, becoming head of the Army of the Cumberland. He came into conflict with Secretary of War Stanton on questions of tactics, and after being decisively beaten at the Battle of Chickamauga (q.v.,1863) was relieved of his command. He resigned from the army (1867), became minister to Mexico (1868–9), a congressman (1881–5) from California, where he had gone to engage in mining, and finally register of the treasury (1885–93).

ROSENBACH, A[BRAHAM] S.W[OLF] (1876–), Philadelphia dealer in rare books and manuscripts, and prominent collector, whose writings include: *The Unpublishable Memoirs* (1917), a satire on bibliomania; *Books and Bidders* (1927); *A Book Hunter's Holiday* (1936); and bibliographical studies.

ROSENFELD, MORRIS (1862–1923), born in Russian Poland, came to the U.S. (1886), where he eked out an existence in New York City sweatshops. His Yiddish poems, plaintively singing the woes of the workers or satirizing social injustices, attracted the attention of Leo Wiener of Harvard, who translated his work as *Songs from the Ghetto* (1898). This, and later works on similar subjects and on the problems of his fellow Jews, brought Rosenfeld wide notice. His verses are among the earliest Yiddish literature in America.

ROSENFELD, PAUL (1890–), New York critic of music and literature, whose works include: *Musical Portraits* (1920); *Musical Chronicle* (1923); *Port of New York* (1924), essays on 14 contemporary artists and authors; *Men Seen* (1925), criticisms of modern authors; *The Boy in the Sun* (1928), a novel; *By Way of Art* (1928), essays; *An Hour with American*

Music (1929); and *Discoveries of a Music Critic* (1936). He has been an editor of *The American Caravan.*

Rosenwald Fund, THE, incorporated in 1917 as a development of the personal philanthropies of Julius Rosenwald (1862–1932), president of the Sears, Roebuck Company, who was greatly interested in Negro education. From the endowment of 227,874 shares of the stock of Sears, Roebuck, more than $13,000,000 has been expended to build Negro public schools in the South, aid higher Negro education at Howard, Fisk, Atlanta, and Dillard Universities, and other institutions, stimulate clinics and other medical services, create public libraries, and promote social studies, investigations, and surveys.

ROSIER, JAMES (*c.*1575–1635), English explorer, author of *A True Relation of the Most Prosperous Voyage Made This Present Yeere* 1605 *by Captaine George Waymouth* (London,1605), which contains the first account of exploration in Maine. It was reprinted in part by Purchas.

ROSS, ALEXANDER (1783–1856), Scottish-born fur trader in Canada and the Columbia River country, whose writings of historical importance include: *Adventures of the First Settlers on the Oregon or Columbia River* (1849); *The Fur Hunters of the Far West* (1855); and *The Red River Settlement* (1856).

ROSS, BETSY (1752–1836), Philadelphia flag-maker and upholsterer, was awarded the contract of the Continental Congress (1777) for making the first U.S. flag, known as the Stars and Stripes (q.v.), and is said to have had some part in suggesting the design. The claim has been frequently denied, however, and Francis Hopkinson is considered the actual designer. The Ross family continued the business until 1857.

Rotary International, luncheon club primarily for businessmen and others of the white-collar class, was founded in Chicago (1905) and now has 5,060 clubs in 70 countries, which include some 210,000 members. Although interested in many matters, this group, which has been proclaimed a 'luminous body composed of the concentrated torch-power of the best men in all trades in all towns,' is chiefly devoted to what is denominated as 'Service.'

Rough Riders, name generally applied to the First Regiment of the U.S.Cavalry Volunteers in the Spanish-American War, which was greatly publicized because of its spectacular action in seizing San Juan Hill in Cuba, and because it was composed of Western cowboys and adventurous young Eastern bluebloods given to melodramatic gestures. They are generally associated with Theodore Roosevelt, who recruited them, although Roosevelt was merely a lieutenant-colonel, while the command went to the more experienced Leonard Wood.

Roughing It, autobiographical narrative by Clemens (q.v.), published in 1872 under his pseudonym Mark Twain. He records a journey from St.Louis across the plains to Nevada, a visit to the Mormons, and life and adventures in Virginia City, San Francisco, and the Sandwich Islands. The book is based on Clemens's own experiences during the 1860's, but facts are left far behind in his creation of a picture of the frontier spirit and its lusty humor. Although the entire work is held together by the character of the narrator, the single episode is the unit, and no attempt is made to integrate the tall tales, the vivid descriptions, narratives of adventure, and character sketches, except in so far as all of them constitute a vigorous, many-sided portrait of the Western frontier.

Round Table, The (1863–9), New York weekly journal of opinion, had an informal staff of contributors, rather than a regular corps of editors. Its chief interest was in literary criticism, which it insisted must be from the American point of view. Among the contributors were R.H.Stoddard, Aldrich, Stedman, William Winter, and M.D.Conway. Publication was suspended (1864–5), and when a new group came into control (1866), the magazine lost its vigorously critical attitude.

ROURKE, CONSTANCE [MAYFIELD] (1885–1941), graduated from Vassar (1907), where she taught (1910–15), and began her interpretations of the American scene, particularly its 'vagaries, . . . from the belief that these have woven together a tradition which is various, subtle, sinewy, scant at times but not poor.' These fused historical, biographical, and critical studies include: *Trumpets of Jubilee* (1927), dealing with such figures as the Beechers and P.T.Barnum; *Troupers of the Gold Coast* (1928), dealing with Lotta

Crabtree, Lola Montez, Adah Menken, and other actresses of the California frontier; *American Humor* (1931); *Davy Crockett* (1934); and *Audubon* (1936).

Rousseau and Romanticism, critical work by Irving Babbitt (q.v.).

Rover Boys, series of books for boys by Edward Stratemeyer (q.v.).

Rowland Mallet, character in *Roderick* Hudson (q.v.).

ROWLANDSON, MARY [WHITE] (*c.*1635–*c.*1678), daughter of John White, an early settler and wealthy proprietor of Lancaster, Massachusetts, in 1656 married Joseph Rowlandson, a Congregational minister. During King Philip's War, when the Narragansetts attacked Lancaster (Feb. 10, 1676), she was abducted by the Indians, who held her for 11 weeks and 5 days, until she was ransomed. Her account of this captivity was published in Cambridge (1682) as *The Sovereaignty & Goodness of God, Together with the Faithfulness of His Promises Displayed; Being a Narrative of the Captivity and Restauration of Mrs.Mary Rowlandson*. This was the second edition; the first edition, which has not been found, was apparently published earlier in the same year. The book is one of the most popular examples of 17th-century American prose and has been reprinted and re-edited approximately 30 times. In pure, idiomatic, sinewy English, Mrs.Rowlandson shows the dangers in which the settlers lived, their contempt for the Indians, their devout dependence upon the Bible for support, and their actual treatment during such enforced captivities.

ROWSON, SUSANNA [HASWELL] (*c.*1762–1824), English-born author, accompanied her father, a naval lieutenant, to his station in Massachusetts. The family returned to England in 1777, where she published the novels, *Victoria* (1786) and *Mary; or the Test of Honour* (1789); *The Inquisitor; or, Invisible Rambler* (1788), modeled on Sterne's *Sentimental Journey*; *Poems on Various Subjects* (1788); and *A Trip to Parnassus* (1788), versified criticism on the theater. She first won fame with the novel, *Charlotte Temple* (q.v., 1791), a sentimental didactic romance, which was extremely popular in the U.S., where it is mainly set. This was followed by *Mentoria: or, the Young Lady's Friend* (1791), didactic tales and essays on education, and *Rebecca; or, the Fille de Chambre* (1794), a semi-autobiographical work. After the business failure of her husband, the Rowsons turned to acting careers, and came to the U.S. in 1793, where she appeared on the stage, and wrote a topical comic opera, *Slaves in Algiers* (1794); *The Volunteers* (1795), a musical farce; *The Female Patriot* (1795), adapted from Massinger's *The Bondsman*; and *Americans in England* (1796), a social comedy revised as *The Columbian Daughter*. Her excessive sympathy with American patriotism caused Cobbett to criticize her betrayal of England in *A Kick for a Bite* (1795), and she in turn called him 'a kind of loathsome reptile' in the preface to her *Trials of the Human Heart* (1795), a melodramatic romance set in London. She abandoned the stage in 1797 to conduct a girls' boarding school near Boston, and, in addition to writing texts and didactic works for students, edited a literary magazine there and wrote *Reuben and Rachel; or, Tales of Old Times* (1798), a historical novel tracing the lives of some descendants of Columbus; *Miscellaneous Poems* (1804); *Sarah; or, the Exemplary Wife* (1813), a semi-autobiographical novel; and the posthumously published *Charlotte's Daughter; or, the Three Orphans* (1828), a sequel to *Charlotte Temple*, usually known as *Lucy Temple*.

Roxy, novel by Edward Eggleston (q.v.) published in 1878.

Roxy Adams, a strong, noble young woman, wishes to leave her small Indiana town at the time of the Tippecanoe campaign (1811), to carry Methodism to Texas. She is forced to quell her crusading spirit, however, when she realizes that her mission is to stay at home in order to save her morally weak husband, Mark Bonamy, who has involved himself in an affair with Nancy Kirtley, a member of the shiftless white class. Roxy visits Nancy, offers to adopt her yet unborn child, and returns to assist and inspire her husband.

Royal American Magazine, The (Jan. 1774–Mar. 1775), Boston monthly, a 'Universal Repository of Instruction and Amusement.' Under the editorship of Isaiah Thomas (q.v.) until July 1774, it was violently patriotic. This fervor abated somewhat under the editorship of Joseph Greenleaf, who nevertheless published political burlesques and Paul Revere's political cartoons.

Royal Family, The, play by George S. Kaufman and Edna Ferber (qq.v.).

ROYALL, Anne Newport (1769–1854), born in Maryland, after the loss of property inherited from her wealthy Virginian husband (1824), supported herself by traveling through the U.S. and writing accounts of her shrewd observations. Among the ten books of this nature, describing the society of virtually every important settlement in the U.S. are: *Sketches of History, Life, and Manners in the United States* (1826); *The Black Book . . .* (3 vols.,1828–9); and *Letters from Alabama* (1830). She also published two newspapers, *Paul Pry* (1831–6) and *The Huntress* (1836–54), in which she vigorously set forth her own ideas on contemporary matters of government and religion, and bitterly attacked what she considered to be corrupt. She also wrote a novel, *The Tennessean* (1827), a romantic tale of adventures in Boston and New Orleans.

ROYCE, Josiah (1855–1916), born in California, graduated from the state university (1871), was an advanced student in Germany and at Johns Hopkins, and became an instructor of English at his alma mater (1878–82). Although the remainder of his life was spent as a professor of philosophy at Harvard, his deep feeling for his native background is exhibited in *California . . . A Study of American Character* (1886) and his only novel, *The Feud of Oakfield Creek* (1887). Brought to Harvard by William James, he at first believed himself in complete accord with James's philosophy, but, though they remained friendly, they soon split on philosophic ideas. James's *Will to Believe* referred to specific human minds, whereas Royce considered consciousness to be a universal principle; James was a pluralist, believing God only one of many; Royce was a monist, affirming the essential necessary oneness of things. *The Religious Aspect of Philosophy* (1885) first postulates a goodness at the heart of things that 'satisfies the highest moral needs,' and then proceeds to prove that there is an absolute or universal knower affirming judgments and experiencing objects transcending man's limitations. *The Conception of God* (1897) sustains the autonomy of the individual in face of this absolute, by contending that the absolute Will is distributed among human beings for independent use. His lectures at the University of Aberdeen were published as *The World and the Individual* (2 vols.,1900–01), which first analyzes other philosophies and argues for an idealism in which reality is the possession solely of an all-enveloping mind, and then applies this to practical matters on the same basis developed in *The Conception of God*. He accounts for sin in the individual by contending that the highest value of the world lies in a moral conflict and victory, and that what is sinful in the finite view is in the higher view accepted as giving the necessary resistance to the moral will. After 1900 Royce became more interested in technical logic and the application of his philosophy to specific contemporary moral issues. *The Philosophy of Loyalty* (1908) contends that individual salvation lies in loyalty to a cause, supplemented by 'loyalty to loyalty,' and these ideas are further propounded in *The Problem of Christianity* (2 vols.,1913), lectures delivered at Oxford. His emphasis on the problem of loyalty and belief that knowledge is a social affair, resulting from a community of interpretation, was applied to the moral issues of the First World War in *The Hope of the Great Community* (1916). Among his many other works, the most popular was *The Spirit of Modern Philosophy* (1892), which brilliantly examines the whole field, with particular attention to such German idealists as Fichte, to whom his beliefs were indebted. A study of Royce and his thought is contained in Santayana's *Character and Opinion in the United States*.

ROYLE, Edwin Milton (1862–), author of melodramas, romantic plays, and farces, is best known for his romantic Indian play, *The Squaw Man* (q.v.,1905).

Rudder Grange, humorous novel by Frank Stockton (q.v.) published in 1879. Its popularity led to several sequels, including *The Rudder Grangers Abroad* (1891) and *Pomona's Travels* (1894).

After an arduous search for a home that will suit their income as well as their taste, a newly married couple finally settle in an anchored canal houseboat, which they name Rudder Grange. Here they are joined by a friend who comes to board with them, and Pomona, the ingenious maid of all work, who conducts her life according to the procedure in the Gothic romances to which she is addicted. After a series of fantastic adventures, the boat is overturned one stormy night because Po-

mona has cut a window near the water line. The boarder moves to the city, while Euphemia and her harassed husband seek a new home, at last renting a small farm in the suburbs. Pomona rejoins them, and they gradually take up the agricultural life, acquiring chickens, a cow, a dog that Pomona names Lord Edward, and even a horse. The story proceeds through various humorous and sentimental adventures to the marriage of Pomona to a young farmer named Jonas, who discourages her romantic imaginings by taking her to an insane asylum for their honeymoon.

RUDGE, WILLIAM EDWIN (1876–1931), New York printer and publisher, distinguished as a typographer and designer of beautiful books, was influential in translating the ideals of the private press into commercial bookmaking. For special craftsmanship at various times he drew on the services of such men as F.W.Goudy, Bruce Rogers, Frederic Warde, and W.A. Dwiggins.

RUFFIN, EDMUND (1794–1865), born in Virginia, in his attempts to bring prosperity to his state became interested in soil chemistry, and wrote books and edited magazines on this subject. His attempt to restore the power of the South led him into politics, and he became an ardent 'fire-eater' and secessionist. He is said to have fired the first shot in the attack on Fort Sumter. He continued to serve in the Southern cause, until he concluded his melodramatic life by committing suicide after the fall of the Confederacy.

Rugg, PETER, see *Austin, William.*

Rugged individualism, phrase indicating a popular conception of American character. Its most famous use has been by Herbert Hoover, 'in eulogy of those God-fearing men and women of honesty whose stamina and character and fearless assertion of rights led them to make their own way in life.'

Ruggles of Red Gap, novel by H.L. Wilson (q.v.).

RUKEYSER, MURIEL (1913–), New York left-wing poet, whose collections include *Theory of Flight* (1935), *U.S. 1* (1938), and *A Turning Wind* (1940), known for their combination of an elliptical metaphysical style with intensity of feeling, arising from her search for the solution of personal problems in social justice.

Rules by which a Great Empire may be reduced to a Small One, satirical essay by Franklin (q.v.), published in the *Public Advertiser* (London, Sept. 1773).

In this popular hoax, Franklin ironically assumes that the minister to whom his rules are addressed wishes to reduce the extensive dominions that he must govern. The rules that he offers as solutions of this problem contain actual grievances of the American colonies against the mother country, e.g. don't send wise or good governors, don't hesitate to impose heavy taxes, don't fail to perplex colonial commerce with infinite regulations, don't notice petitions, don't treat the colonists in any way except as though they were about to revolt. He blandly affirms that such rules are infallible, and close adherence to them will assuredly have the desired result of losing the colonies.

Rum, Romanism, and Rebellion, phrase applied to the Democratic party by a New York clergyman, S.D.Burchard, at an interdenominational meeting favoring the Republican candidacy of Blaine (1884). This tactless description acted as a boomerang by alienating the Irish Catholic vote, and aided in winning the election for Cleveland.

RUMFORD, COUNT, see *Thompson, Benjamin.*

RUNYON, [ALFRED] DAMON (1884–), journalist and sports columnist, who is also known for his short stories of the underworld, professional athletes, and other American types, distinguished for their use and invention of slang. These have been collected in such volumes as *Guys and Dolls* (1932) and *Take It Easy* (1938). With Howard Lindsay he has written a farce, *A Slight Case of Murder* (1935).

RUSH, BENJAMIN (1745–1813), Philadelphia physician, surgeon-general of the Continental Army, and member of the Continental Congress. He was also a member of the Pennsylvania convention that ratified the Constitution, and became treasurer of the U.S.Mint (1799–1813). In Philadelphia he founded the first dispensary in the U.S. (1785), taught chemistry and medicine at the Philadelphia Medical College, successfully fought the yellow-fever epidemic of 1793, and established the first American antislavery society. His work on the cure of mental disorders has

caused him to be called the father of American psychiatry. His writings include *Medical Inquiries and Observations* (5 vols.,1789–93) and *Essays, Literary, Moral, and Philosophical* (1798).

RICHARD RUSH (1780–1859), his son, was controller of the U.S.Treasury (1811), attorney-general (1814–17), and acting secretary of state (1817). As minister to England (1817–25), he negotiated treaties settling the Western boundary dispute, which provided for joint occupation of Oregon, and was prominent in the negotiations leading to the Monroe Doctrine. He later served as secretary of the treasury (1825–9) and minister to France (1847–9).

RUSH, REBECCA (*fl.*1812), Philadelphia novelist, whose *Kelroy* (1812), a novel of manners in her native city, shows an advance from the didacticism, sentimentality, and elegance of earlier American feminine authors.

RUSH, WILLIAM (1756–1833), Philadelphia sculptor, like other early American sculptors worked entirely with wood and clay, because of the refractory stone found in the colonies, and, like them, began as a carver of wooden figureheads for ships when other forms of sculpture were distasteful to the practical colonials. He is known for the bronze replica of his graceful and naïvely rococo *Nymph of the Schuylkill*, his frank *Self-Portrait*, and the character study of *Joseph Wright*, all of which are characterized by a native American quality. He was a cousin of Benjamin Rush.

RUSSELL, CHARLES EDWARD (1860–), New York journalist and author, whose many books include *The Uprising of the Many* (1907), *Why I Am a Socialist* (1910), *The Story of Wendell Phillips* (1915), *Bolshevism and the United States* (1919), *Julia Marlowe* (1926), *The American Orchestra and Theodore Thomas* (1927; Pulitzer Prize, 1928), *A-Rafting on the Mississipp'* (1928), and *Blaine of Maine* (1931).

RUSSELL, IRWIN (1853–79), Mississippi poet, known for his works in Negro dialect. His accuracy of language and understanding of character were recognized by Joel Chandler Harris, who compiled Russell's single volume of verse as *Poems by Irwin Russell* (1888), in 1917 enlarged and reissued as *Christmas-Night in the Quarters.*

RUSSELL, LILLIAN, stage name of Helen Louise Leonard (1861–1922), born in Iowa and famed both for her beauty and for her talent as a singer and actress. She began her career at Tony Pastor's Opera House (1880), but later became the star of her own company.

RUSSELL, OSBORNE (1814–*c.*1865), frontiersman, associated with James Bridger, later became a California and Oregon pioneer. His *Journal of a Trapper or Nine Years in the Rocky Mountains*, 1834–43 (1914) is considered an important account of frontier life.

Russell Sage Foundation, established by Margaret O.S.Sage (1907), in memory of her husband, a New York financier and congressman, for the 'improvement of social and living conditions' in the U.S. Her gift of $15,000,000 has been used to support social agencies, establish a library of the social sciences, conduct sociological surveys, publish books, and assist adult education.

Russell's Bookstore Group, informal literary association, met in Charleston during the 1850's at the shop of John Russell. Among the members were Timrod, Simms, Hayne, W.J.Grayson, and S.H. Dickson. An outcome of these informal gatherings was the founding of *Russell's Magazine* (1857–60), a monthly magazine edited by Hayne, frankly modeled on the English *Blackwood's*, and sectional in point of view.

Russet Mantle, play by Lynn Riggs (q.v.), produced and published in 1936.

Effie Rowley, scatterbrained wife of a Kentucky banker, with her attractive, sophisticated daughter, Kay, comes to visit her sister Susanna at Santa Fé, New Mexico. Susanna, childless and commonplace, is unintelligently devoted to raising chickens, while her husband, Horace Kincaid, is concerned with his apple trees. These activities are of minor interest to Kay, who, after a rapid affair with a cowboy, Scoot, becomes interested in Susanna's new hired man, John Galt, an earnest young poet who soon penetrates the girl's defensive pose of cynical recklessness. She comes to share his sensitive, searching view of personal and social problems, and they spend the winter in a blissful secret liaison. In the spring the family learns of her pregnancy, and indignantly demands to know 'who the man is.' Kay attempts to conceal

her condition from John, for she wants him to be free, but he discovers the truth, and insists that she marry him. At first she refuses, but the conventional, shoddy attitudes of her relatives show her that she cannot continue to live in their world, and she prepares to leave with John 'to live in a world that's *our time* . . . we can help make it!'

Rutgers College, founded under a royal charter at New Brunswick, New Jersey (1766), and named Queen's College in honor of Queen Charlotte. In 1825 it took its present name in honor of a benefactor, Henry Rutgers. Originally established by the Reformed Church in America, it is now nonsectarian, although according to its charter the president must be a communicant of that church. The college is for men only, but it is affiliated with the New Jersey College for Women. Joyce Kilmer was a student at Rutgers (1904–6) and Paul Robson is a graduate (1919).

RUTH, Babe (George Herman Ruth) (1895–), baseball player with the New York Yankee team, who during his career (1914–35) hit more than 700 home runs.

RUTLEDGE, Ann (1816–35), daughter of Abraham Lincoln's landlord at New Salem, Illinois, was engaged to John McNamar, who had apparently deserted her when Lincoln fell in love with her. She became engaged to Lincoln, on the condition that she receive an honorable release from her absent lover. Her sudden death from malarial fever, while Lincoln's suit was still unsettled, has led to much sentimental speculation based on the few known facts, by biographers, poets, novelists, and playwrights. It is supposed to have oppressed him with deep melancholy, and led him into an unsuccessful attempt to find consolation in a temporary engagement to Mary Owens, and into his troubled courtship of Mary Todd.

RUXTON, George [Augustus] Frederick (1820–48), English explorer, whose *Adventures in Mexico and the Rocky Mountains* (1847) and *Life in the Far West* (1848) frequently have been used as sources by later historians and novelists.

RYAN, Abram Joseph (1838–86), Maryland poet and Catholic priest, whose mystical lyrics upholding the Confederacy won him the name of 'the Tom Moore of Dixie.' Such popular Southern poems as the melancholy 'Gather the Sacred Dust,' 'The Conquered Banner,' and 'The Lost Cause' were collected in *Father Ryan's Poems* (1879). *A Crown for Our Queen* (1882) is a book of devotions.

RYDER, Albert Pinkham (1847–1917), born at New Bedford, Massachusetts, studied at the National Academy of Design, and passed his uneventful life in hermitlike devotion to painting. His fantastic, imaginative paintings, such as *The Flying Dutchman, Death on a Pale Horse,* and *Toilers of the Sea,* are composed of simple, haunting forms, which melt into strange dark harmonies of tone. His practice of continual revision, and even adding a fresh layer of paint to one not fully dry, limited his output to about 150 small canvases and caused many of these to crack or darken. Attracted by the brooding quality of the sea, Ryder often chose it as his subject and frequently painted it by moonlight.

RYNNING, Ole (1809–38), leader of Norwegian colonists, came to Illinois (1837), where before his untimely death he wrote the book published in Norway (1838) and later translated as *A True Account of America for the Information and Help of Peasant and Commoner.* This work, comprehensively surveying American climate, soil, government, language, religious toleration, and opportunities for immigration, was known among Norwegian peasants as the 'America Book,' and was instrumental in encouraging the great Norwegian migration.

Ryswick, Treaty of, see *French and Indian Wars.*

S

Sabin's Dictionary, name generally given to *A Dictionary of Books Relating to America, from Its Discovery to the Present Time,* the foremost bibliographical work on Americana. It was begun by the English-born rare-book dealer of New York City, Joseph Sabin (1821–81) in 1856, continued by Wilberforce Eames (q.v.), and brought to completion in 1936 by a large staff under the administration of R.W.G.Vail.

SABINE, LORENZO (1803–77), New England historian, best known for his work, *The American Loyalists . . .* (1847), revised as *Biographical Sketches of the Loyalists of the American Revolution* (2 vols., 1864).

Sac Indians, see *Sauk Indians.*

SACAGAWEA (*c.*1787–1812?), Shoshone Indian squaw, was married (*c.*1800) to the French-Canadian trader, Toussaint Charbonneau, with whom she accompanied the Lewis and Clark expedition, proving valuable as interpreter, peacemaker with the Shoshone, and guide over the Great Divide. Under her own name, which is variously spelled, or the nickname 'The Bird Woman,' she is frequently mentioned by early travelers, with praise for her character and services.

Sacco-Vanzetti Case originated in the robbery (April 15, 1920) of a Massachusetts shoe company's pay roll by two men who killed the paymaster and his guard. Nicola Sacco (1891–1927) and Bartolomeo Vanzetti (1888–1927) were charged with the crime, when it was discovered that they carried firearms and laid claim to the car that police identified with the crime. In their trial at Dedham, Massachusetts (May–July 1921), both had witnesses to prove that they were not at the scene of the crime, but these statements were discredited by state witnesses. Much of the evidence against them was later refuted, but prejudice was strong in their disfavor because they had been draft-dodgers, anarchists, and labor agitators. In 1927 Governor Fuller of Massachusetts appointed an advisory investigating committee, consisting of President Lowell of Harvard, President Stratton of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, and Judge Robert Grant. Although a condemned criminal, Madeiros, exonerated Sacco and Vanzetti, and admitted he had been a member of a gang of robbers responsible for the shoe-company killings, death sentences were upheld by the committee, and in 1927 Sacco and Vanzetti were put to death. The case suggested Maxwell Anderson's plays, *Gods of Lightning* and *Winterset,* and was the subject of Upton Sinclair's novel, *Boston,* and of Edna St.Vincent Millay's 'Two Sonnets in Memory.' They have also figured as martyrs in many lesser works, and are the subject of several documentary works, notably one by Felix Frankfurter.

Sacred Fount, The, novelette by Henry James (q.v.) published in 1901.

The narrator, whose temperament and interests resemble those of the author, is a guest at an English week-end party, where his excessively refined curiosity becomes absorbed in studying Guy and Grace Brissenden, the husband not yet 30, and the wife in her middle 40's, who after a few years of marriage seem to have exchanged physical and mental ages. He derives from their case a 'law' that, in such uneven matches, the older partner always draws energy, youth, and wit from the 'sacred fount' of the other's personality, which becomes correspondingly depleted. Then he attempts to apply his law to another guest, Gilbert Long, who seems to have exchanged his character of a stupid though handsome young man for that of a witty and understanding man of the world. The narrator's prying mind seeks to discover the mistress who must have given Long this new power. Rejecting the bright, superficial Lady John, he settles on Mrs. May Server, an attractive woman who is obviously attempting to conceal a profound emotional disturbance and weakness. He even believes that he observes a realignment of the couples, resulting from the mutual weakness and defeat of Brissenden and Mrs.Server, and the common vigor and strength of will of Long and 'poor Briss' wife. His whole structure of hypothesis is overthrown, however, when Mrs.Brissenden says he is 'crazy' and repudiates his hinted accusations as 'houses of cards,' though it is never certain whether his rout is caused by lies on her part or by his own unduly fanciful conjectures.

Sacred Wood, The, essays by T.S.Eliot (q.v.).

Sag Harbor, play by James A. Herne (q.v.), a revision of his *Hearts of Oak* (1879), written with Belasco, was produced in 1899.

Martha Reese, loved by the brothers, Ben and Frank Turner, marries the older, Ben, because of a debt of gratitude she feels she owes him, although she really loves Frank. Frank urges Martha to run away with him, but she stifles her emotions and finds solace in the story told by Captain Dan Marble, who, understanding the situation, describes the fate of a wife who thought she loved another man, but sent her husband off to war and then discovered that he was the one she loved.

ST.CLAIR, ARTHUR (1734–1818), Scottish-born soldier, who came to America to serve under the British in the last French and Indian War. After resigning from the army to reside in Pennsylvania, he returned to the field during the Revolution as a major-general in the Continental army. His evacuation of Fort Ticonderoga (1777) led to a court-martial that exonerated him. He was a member of the Continental Congress (1785–7) and its president (1787), prior to his appointment as governor of the Northwest Territory and commander of forces against the Indians. His defeat by the Indians caused him to resign from the army and centralize his civil control by opposing the creation of the state of Ohio. For these overbearing actions Jefferson removed him from office (1802). *A Narrative of the Manner in which the Campaign against the Indians . . . was Conducted . . .* (1812) was his apologia, and provides an important historical source.

St.Clare, family name of characters in *Uncle Tom's Cabin* (q.v.).

St.Elmo, novel by Augusta Jane Evans published in 1866.

Edna Earl, an orphan, is taken into the home of Mrs.Murray, the widow of a wealthy Georgia planter. Mrs.Murray's arrogant, dissipated son, St.Elmo, falls in love with his mother's beautiful and brilliant ward, but she spurns him as a cynic and roué and proceeds to make her own career as the author of erudite, pious novels. To win her he finally renounces his waywardness and atheism, and proposes again by asking, 'Is Edna Earl more righteous than the Lord she worships?' Recognizing his penitence and conversion, she replies, 'Never was more implicit faith, more devoted affection, given any human being than I now give you, Mr.Murray; you are my first and my last and my only love.'

SAINT-GAUDENS, AUGUSTUS (1848–1907), Irish-born American sculptor, studied at Cooper Union, the National Academy of Design, the Beaux-Arts (1867–70), and in Rome (1870–73), where he copied ancient sculpture. His style shows the changing direction of American sculpture, in its fusion of exalted realism with more animated poses, and its broken picturesque surfaces, as opposed to the cold, formal ideal of Italian neoclassicism, practiced by such members of the previous generation as Hiram Powers and Horatio Greenough. His first public memorial, the strong *Farragut Monument* (1881) in Madison Square, New York, established his reputation as the leading American sculptor of the period. Although he occasionally lapsed into sentimentality, as in the unduly sweet *Amor Caritas*, or into empty symbolism, as in the figure of Victory in the otherwise fine *General Sherman Monument* (1903), the general high standard of his work had an important influence on monument sculpture in the U.S. The dignified and simple *Lincoln* (1887) in Chicago, with its moderate impressionistic treatment of surface; the grave, thoughtful *Adams Memorial* (1891) in Rock Creek Cemetery in Washington, D.C., a monument to the wife of his friend, Henry Adams, which Adams called 'The Peace of God'; the *Shaw Memorial* in high relief; and his many splendid bas reliefs, which include the bronze tablet of Stevenson in Edinburgh, are outstanding among Saint-Gaudens's noble, sedate sculptures. He is the prototype of Mr. Wharton in Adams's novel, *Esther* (q.v.). His *Reminiscences* (2 vols.,1913) were edited by his son.

ST.JOHN, HECTOR, pseudonym of Crèvecœur (q.v.).

Saint Katy the Virgin, story by Steinbeck (q.v.) reprinted in *The Long Valley* (q.v.).

ST.LOUIS, on the Mississippi River near its confluence with the Missouri, is the principal city of the state of Missouri, with a population (1940) of 813,000, of which

nearly 100,000 are Negroes. Founded in 1764 as a trading post of French and later Spanish Louisiana, St.Louis was a headquarters of the American fur trade and capital of Louisiana Territory; terminus of the National Road, Oregon Trail, and Santa Fé Trail (qq.v.); a port during the period of steamboating on the Mississippi (q.v.); a Union stronghold during the Civil War; and a modern railroad and manufacturing center. An important school of idealistic philosophy arose there during the late 19th century, led by W.T. Harris and D.J.Snider, and among the authors born in the city or associated with it are Joseph M. Field, Kate Chopin, Augustus Thomas, Eugene Field, W.M.Reedy, Winston Churchill, Fannie Hurst, W.C. Handy, and Zoë Akins. Washington University is the city's leading educational institution, and it was founded (1853) by William G. Eliot, whose grandson, T.S. Eliot, was born in St.Louis.

Saint-Mihiel, site of an offensive by American, French, and British soldiers in the First World War (Sept. 12–13, 1918). They were successful in their attempts to free the railways linking Verdun, Toul, and Nancy, and recovered possession of the region on the Meuse in northeastern France which had been seized by the Germans (Sept. 1914).

St.Nicholas (1873–), monthly magazine for children, was long distinguished for the high quality of its fiction, and its realization that a children's magazine should not 'be a milk-and-water variety of the periodical for adults,' or a place for 'sermonizing' or 'wearisome spinning out of facts.' In addition to Mary Mapes Dodge, the editor (1873–1905), the contributors included Mrs.R.H.Davis, D.G. Mitchell, Trowbridge, Louisa Alcott, Frank Stockton, Mrs.Burnett, C.E.Carryl, Edward Eggleston, Mayne Reid, T.N. Page, Clemens, Howard Pyle, Stevenson, Henty, Kipling, Cable, Howells, Burroughs, Harte, A.B.Paine, Palmer Cox, and Gelett Burgess. At the turn of the century, when the regular contributions seemed to be less significant, the magazine established a department of contributions from its juvenile readers. Among the authors who thus received their first publication were E.B.White, Miss Millay, Faulkner, F.Scott Fitzgerald, Lardner, the Benéts, Benchley, Elinor Wylie, Edmund Wilson, and Babette Deutsch. Since 1930 it has changed owners and policies several times, becoming a picture magazine for very young children, under the control of the Woolworth Stores (1939), and being purchased (1940) by Mrs.J.L.Stern with the intention of reviving its original high standards.

St.Peter, GODFREY, character in *The Professor's House* (q.v.).

Saint-Simonism (or SAINT-SIMONIANISM), socialistic system based on the economic, religious, and social ideas of the Frenchman, Claude-Henri de Rouvroy, Comte de Saint-Simon (1760–1825), as formulated by his disciples after his death. They aimed at the creation of an industrial society scientifically administered by a hierarchy of experts (scientists, technicians, property owners, and financiers) for the benefit of the 'poorest and most numerous classes.' The program involved the abolition of the law of inheritance, socialization of the means of production, and a system of distribution based on the merits of the individual. The distorting of certain aspects of his *New Christianity* (1825) by his disciples resulted in the discrediting and disbanding of the new sect that they had organized. The system has exerted a considerable influence on modern movements toward a scientifically planned economy. Although no communities were founded in the U.S., Orestes Brownson was a notable convert who expounded these social and religious doctrines, especially in his *Boston Quarterly Review.*

Salem witchcraft trials occurred at Salem, Massachusetts, the result of a belief in witchcraft assignable not to Puritanism, but to the temper of the times as evidenced also in England and on the continent. Before 1688 four persons had been hanged for witchcraft near Boston, but the principal outbreak of persecution took place in 1692, when an epidemic disease resembling epilepsy spread through Danvers (part of Salem). Discouraged by the inability of physicians to control this disease, and encouraged by sermons from such clergymen as Cotton Mather (q.v.), the belief was soon widespread that evil spirits in the form of witches were able to afflict the people at large. Increase Mather is frequently held responsible for fomenting the trials, although his *Cases of Conscience Concerning Evil Spirits* (1693) showed a rational attitude in disapproving 'spectral evidence.' During the prevalence

of the delusion, in the spring and summer of 1692, 19 persons were hanged; one, Giles Corey, was pressed to death; 55 were frightened or tortured into confessions of guilt; 150 were imprisoned; and more than 200 were named as deserving arrest. Learned and distinguished men promoted the delusion by acquiescing in the proceedings of the court instituted by the governor, Sir William Phips. When the governor's wife, some near relatives of Cotton Mather, and the sons of ex-Governor Bradstreet became objects of suspicion, the spell began to break. Many of the accusers published solemn recantations, and Samuel Sewall was among those who did public penance, he for his part as a member of the Special Court of Oyer and Terminer. *A Brief and True Narrative of Witchcraft at Salem Village* (1692) was written by Deodat Lawson; Cotton Mather's affirmations are to be found in *The Wonders of the Invisible World* (q.v.,1693) and *A Brand Pluck'd Out of the Burning* (1693), to which Robert Calef (q.v.) replied in *More Wonders of the Invisible World* (1700). Mather in turn replied in *Some Few Remarks upon a Scandalous Book . . . by one Robert Calef* (1701). A modern edition of the *Narratives of the Witchcraft Cases* (1914) was edited by G.L.Burr, and the trials have been frequently described in fiction and poetry, e.g. Longfellow's *New England Tragedies*, Mrs.Freeman's *Giles Corey, Yeoman*, and DeForest's *Witching Times*.

Salmagundi*; *or, the Whim-Whams and Opinions of Launcelot Langstaff, Esq. and Others, satirical essays and poems, published in 20 periodical pamphlets (Jan. 24, 1807–Jan. 25, 1808), by Washington Irving, William Irving, and J.K.Paulding (qq.v.), and collected in book form in 1808.

These whimsical essays follow the model of the *Spectator*, poking bold fun at the tastes, social activities, and political trends of contemporary New York, and reflecting the aristocratic, Federalist sympathies of the authors, who wrote under such fanciful pseudonyms as 'Anthony Evergreen,' 'Jeremy Cockloft the Younger,' 'Will Wizard,' and 'Pindar Cockloft, Esq.' A series of 'letters' from the visiting 'Mustapha Rub-a-Dub Keli Khan' to his friend 'Asem Hacchem' uses a familiar satirical device to describe the absurdities of 'mobocratic' and 'logocratic' Jeffersonian democracy, while other essays and poems deal in a humorous, pseudo-learned style with such various topics as fashions in women's clothing, the vulgarity of *parvenus*, theatrical and musical criticism, style in literature, and caricatures of celebrities. A second series of *Salmagundi* papers was written by Paulding alone (May 1819–Sept. 1820).

SALTONSTALL, GURDON (1666–1724), member of a prominent Massachusetts family, graduated from Harvard (1684), became a Congregational minister in Connecticut, and in 1707 was invited to become its governor. As governor, he called the synod that was responsible for the Saybrook Platform, and aided in the founding of Yale. Cotton Mather wrote a laudatory *Brief Essay* (1724) in his memory.

SALTUS, EDGAR [EVERTSON] (1855–1921), born in New York City, after studying at Yale and abroad and receiving the LL.B. degree from Columbia, began his literary career with a biography of Balzac (1884); volumes of translations from French fiction; *The Philosophy of Disenchantment* (1885), popularizing the pessimism of Schopenhauer and von Hartmann; and *The Anatomy of Negation* (1886), a history of antitheistic philosophies. This philosophic attitude and the resulting lack of faith in anything but an esoteric hedonism, devoid of social or moral considerations, was elaborated in his fiction dealing with New York society. *Mr.Incoul's Misadventure* (1887) was the first of a long series of novels whose melodramatic plots were clothed in an epigrammatic style, a lush use of bizarre language, and an extravagant adaptation of *fin de siècle* romanticism, as expressed in his dictum: 'In fiction as in history it is the shudder that tells.' Among the later novels were: *The Truth about Tristrem Varick* (1888); *The Pace that Kills* (1889); *Madam Sapphira* (1893); *Enthralled* (1894); *The Perfume of Eros* (1905); *The Pomps of Satan* (1904); *Vanity Square* (1906); *The Monster* (1912), which he made into an unproduced play, *The Gates of Life*; and *The Paliser Case* (1919). He also published two volumes of short stories, *A Transient Guest and Other Episodes* (1889) and *Purple and Fine Women* (1903), and his attitude of mind and manner of presentation were further illustrated in treatments of such exotic subjects as the history of the

Roman emperors, in *Imperial Purple* (1892); the history of the Romanoffs, in *The Imperial Orgy* (1920); apocryphal Bible history, in *Mary Magdalen* (1891); eroticism, in *Historia Amoris* (1906); the history of religions, in *The Lords of the Ghostland* (1907); and similar subjects in a collection of essays, *Love and Lore* (1890). His cynicism, exotic eroticism, and rebellion against conventional standards caused Saltus to be attacked by many critics, and championed by such writers as Van Vechten and Huneker, in whose novel *Painted Veils* he is a minor character. His last works show a change from the dependence upon an esthetic doctrine of art for art's sake to a belief in theosophy, in which he was largely influenced by the views of his third wife, Marie Saltus, who wrote a biography and edited his posthumous works.

Salut au Monde, poem by Whitman (q.v.), published as 'Poem of Salutation' in *Leaves of Grass* (1856) and given its present title in 1867.

In the form of a colloquy, the poem opens with the demand, 'O take my hand, Walt Whitman!' and the question, 'What widens within you, Walt Whitman?' This is answered by long catalogues of what the poet sees and hears throughout the world, and the statement,

> My spirit has passed in compassion and determination around the whole earth; I have look'd for equals and lovers, and found them ready for me in all lands; I think some divine rapport has equalized me with them.

Salvation Army, international evangelical and philanthropic movement, whose organization is patterned after that of military groups, and whose objects are charitable work and the spiritual regeneration of the underprivileged. It was originated in England (1865) by William and Catherine Booth, and the first U.S. branch was established in 1880. There are now some 103,000 members in the U.S.

Sam Lovel's Camps, stories by R.E. Robinson (q.v.).

Sam Slick, character in *The Clockmaker*, *The Attaché* (qq.v.), and other sketches by T.C.Haliburton (q.v.).

SAMPSON, DEBORAH (1760–1827), born in Massachusetts, after a rather peripatetic youth as an orphan disguised herself as a man and served in the Continental Army for more than two years. Not until after the war did she reveal herself to be a woman, but in 1784 she married and settled down to a normal quiet life. *The Female Review; or, Life of Deborah Sampson* (1797) is an anonymous biography, obviously bordering on fiction.

SAMPSON, WILLIAM THOMAS (1840–1902), after graduation from Annapolis (1861), served in the Civil War, taught at Annapolis, becoming its superintendent (1886–90), and was made commander of the North Atlantic squadron in the Spanish-American War. He planned the attack that captured the Spanish fleet at Santiago (q.v.), but a long controversy ensued over the credit for the victory since Schley (q.v.) was considered by many the actual leader in the engagement.

San Francisco, situated on one of the world's largest bays, on the central California coast, is the Far West's second largest city, with a population of some 634,000. The bay may have been sighted by Drake (1579), but the discoverer of the city's site is usually considered to be Portola, whose expedition arrived in 1770. Anza founded the mission and presidio (1776), which, under the administration of Serra, was the beginning of the pueblo Yerba Buena, the present San Francisco. The region became Mexican territory (1821), but a local insurrection, the Bear Flag War (1846), resulted in the establishment of a temporary republic, and a month later California was taken by the U.S. The gold rush of the Forty-niners caused San Francisco's mushroom growth into a busy, lawless frontier town, whose most notorious area was the Barbary Coast (q.v.). The port flourished, with trade and immigration from the Orient, around Cape Horn, and across Panama. Overland communication with the East was established in 1860 by the Pony Express, and soon afterward by rail, so that, until the recent rise of Los Angeles, San Francisco was the key city of the business and culture of the Far West. The discovery of the Comstock Lode (q.v.) created a second boom period, but later the city settled into a more conservative way of life, which has caused it to be characterized as the most Eastern of the Western cities. On April 18, 1906, occurred the San Francisco Earthquake, followed by a disastrous four-day fire that could not be controlled, owing to the destruction of water mains. The fire resulted in the loss of

some 500 lives, the demolition of a large part of the city's central business district and residential sections, and a loss of property estimated at between $500,000,000 and $1,000,000,000. The city emerged from this disaster with a better plan and more permanent buildings, but still retains its romantic cosmopolitan character, marked by its large Chinatown and Italian district. It is connected with the East-bay cities of Oakland and Berkeley by an eight-mile suspension bridge, and with suburban and rural Marin County by a bridge across the Golden Gate, the mouth of the harbor. Two famous expositions have been held in San Francisco, one celebrating the completion of the Panama Canal (1915), and another the building of the two bay bridges (1939–40). The University of California (q.v.) is located in Berkeley, and on the peninsula south of the city is Stanford University (q.v.). The period of Mexican occupation is described in *Two Years Before the Mast*, while the city's literary flowering occurred during the post-gold-rush period (*c.*1850–60), when its authors included Bret Harte, Clemens, Joaquin Miller, Bierce, C.W. Stoddard, Alonzo Delano, G.H.Derby, Prentice Mulford, Ina Coolbrith, H.H. Bancroft, E.R.Sill, John Muir, Clarence King, and Henry George, many of whom contributed to the *Overland Monthly* and the *Golden Era* (qq.v.). During the later, more settled period, the leading authors included Stevenson, a temporary resident, Frank Norris, Jack London, Gertrude Atherton, Edwin Markham, George Sterling, and the bohemian group, Les Jeunes, which published *The Lark*. The nearby artist colony of Carmel (q.v.) was a frequent resort of some of these authors, whose successors have included Steffens, Jeffers, and Steinbeck in the Carmel region, and Stewart Edward White, Harvey Fergusson, and William Saroyan.

San Quentin, largest state prison for men, is located on San Francisco Bay.

SANBORN, FRANKLIN BENJAMIN (1831–1917), born in New Hampshire, graduated from Harvard (1855), and settled in Concord as a school teacher, where his pupils included the children of Emerson, Hawthorne, and the elder Henry James. He became an Abolitionist leader, and was arrested for refusing to testify concerning his aid to John Brown. He was associated with the *Springfield Republican* (1856–1914), and was also active in humanitarian work as the head of state charities. His acquaintance with the Transcendentalists resulted in the publication of many books, which included: *Henry D. Thoreau* (1882); *A.Bronson Alcott: His Life and Philosophy* (2 vols., 1893); *The Personality of Thoreau* (1901); *Ralph Waldo Emerson* (1901), written with W.T.Harris; *Hawthorne and His Friends* (1908); and many significant passages in his *Recollections of Seventy Years* (2 vols.,1909).

Sanctuary, novel by Faulkner (q.v.) published in 1931. 'Deliberately conceived to make money,' the story is a *tour de force* of cruelty and perversion, according to its author 'the most horrific tale I could imagine.'

Temple Drake, an 18-year-old Alabama college girl, goes on a petting party with a drunken escort who wrecks his automobile on a lonely road. They walk to a near-by house, which is a bootleggers' hideout, inhabited by a number of vicious criminals of whom the chief is the killer Popeye, emasculated and of subnormal intellect as the result of a childhood accident. Temple's cowardly escort escapes after a severe beating, but the girl, whose virginity makes her the object of several attacks, is finally raped by Popeye, who incidentally murders one of his men. He then places her in the Memphis brothel of Miss Reba, who is at first pleased to have the custom of this influential man, then horrified by his degenerate conduct. Goodwin, one of the bootleggers, is arrested for the murder that Popeye committed, and is defended by Horace Benbow, a lawyer who wishes to redeem his conventional career by serving justice in this unpopular case. He learns of Popeye's guilt and of the plight of Temple, whom he persuades to testify. The girl's mind is already unbalanced, and her testimony only increases the unreasoning vindictiveness of the jurors, who convict Goodwin. The latter is brutally lynched; Benbow manages to escape with his life; Temple is taken by her broken father to live in Paris; and Popeye, who has escaped to Florida, is apprehended and hanged for a murder he did not commit.

SANDBURG, CARL [AUGUST] (1878–), born in Galesburg, Illinois, of a Swedish immigrant family, after irregular schooling, and a youth spent as an itinerant laborer throughout the Middle West,

went to Puerto Rico as a soldier in the Spanish-American War. On his return he worked his way through Lombard College in Galesburg, and after graduation (1902) became an advertising writer, journalist, and organizer for the Social-Democratic party in Wisconsin. He was secretary to the Socialist mayor of Milwaukee (1910–12). His earliest poems were privately printed in a small pamphlet (1904), but he was unknown as a poet until 1914, when *Poetry* published a number of his short pieces, including 'Chicago' (q.v.), whose fearless colloquialism and vigorous free verse stimulated a critical controversy and established him as the leading figure in the Chicago group of authors that was then beginning to flourish. *Chicago Poems* (1916), besides its title piece, contained such vivid impressionistic poems as 'Fog,' 'Grass,' and 'Nocturne in a Deserted Brickyard,' and verses defining the poet's liberal social position, such as 'I Am the People, the Mob' and 'To a Contemporary Bunk shooter.' These simple, powerful utterances depicted the crude, vital American that the author knew at first hand, and that Whitman had taught him to recognize as symbolic of a free, untrammeled, democratic promised life. His sensitive appreciation of the beauty of ordinary people and commonplace things, in which he accepted the rude and savage ('Galoots') as well as the delicate and lovely ('Smoke Rose Gold'), was expressed with a firmer touch and greater power in the succeeding collections, *Cornhuskers* (1918; special Pulitzer award, 1919), *Smoke and Steel* (1920), *Slabs of the Sunburnt West* (1922), and *Good Morning, America* (1928). These volumes included such characteristic poems as 'Cool Tombs,' 'Smoke and Steel,' 'Broken-Face Gargoyles,' 'Prairie,' 'Good Morning, America,' 'Prayers of Steel' (qq.v.), 'Four Preludes on Playthings of the Wind,' 'Clean Curtains,' and 'Losers,' all of which display a combination of precise realism, born of personal experience, with a playful fantasy and love of color. Throughout his work there is a constant, and frequently successful, attempt to capture and sustain the distinctive flavor of the common American idiom and way of thought. This interest led also to Sandburg's compilation of ballads and folk songs in *The American Songbag* (1927), and strongly influenced his original books for children, *Rootabaga Stories* (1922), *Rootabaga Pigeons* (1923), and *Potato Face* (1930). He published a selection of his poems, *Early Moon* (1930), especially for children, while an adult volume, *Selected Poems* (1926), was edited by Rebecca West. His latest poetic work, *The People, Yes* (q.v.,1936), is a panoramic depiction in verse of America and the American spirit as expressed in folklore and folk history, which sums up Sandburg's profound social sympathies and his faith in the future of the working classes. Besides his poetry and journalism, he has devoted much time and careful research to his monumental biography of Lincoln, published as *Abraham Lincoln: The Prairie Years* (2 vols.,1926) and *Abraham Lincoln: The War Years* (4 vols.,1939; Pulitzer Prize, 1940), and his other prose includes: *The Chicago Race Riots* (1919); *Steichen the Photographer* (1929), whose subject is the author's brother-in-law; and *Mary Lincoln, Wife and Widow* (1932), written with Paul M. Angle.

SANDEMAN, Robert (1718–71), Scottish-born leader of the religious sect of Sandemanians, which protested against the established Church of Scotland, believed that church and state should be separate, and contended that 'the bare Work of Jesus Christ without a Deed or Thought on the Part of Man is sufficient to present the chief of Sinners spotless before God.' Sandeman emigrated to New England in 1764, where he published *Some Thoughts on Christianity* (1764), and established his sect, despite the opposition of Congregational ministers.

SANDERSON, John (1783–1844), Pennsylvania writer and teacher, contributor to the anti-Federalist *Aurora*, was best known for his witty *Sketches of Paris: In Familiar Letters to His Friends* (1838), written during a visit abroad.

SANDOZ, Mari (1900–), Nebraska author, whose books include: *Old Jules* (1935), a biography of her Swiss emigrant father, recounting his heroic efforts to wrest a living from his frontier farm; *Slogum House* (1937), a historical novel of late-19th-century Nebraska; and *Capital City* (1939), a novel about the third-generation descendants of the Midwestern pioneers and the corruption of their civic life.

SANDS, Robert C[harles] (1799–1832), New York author and journalist, with Bryant edited *The New York Review and*

Athenæum Magazine (q.v.,1825–6), and independently edited the *Commercial Advertiser* (1827–32). For the *Talisman*, an annual, he wrote a series of essays and some poetry. As a figure in the New York literary and social life of the time, he earned a great reputation, although he published only a few separate works, such as a *Life and Correspondence of John Paul Jones* (1830). His humorous works and other writings were collected in 1834. One of his most popular poems was *Yamoyden* (q.v.,1820), written with J.W.Eastburn.

SANDYS, George (1578–1644), English-born colonist in Virginia (1621–*c.*1631), treasurer of the London Company, and member of the council. While in Virginia he made a verse translation of the last ten books of the *Metamorphoses* to accompany his previous translation of five books, and the whole was published as *Ovid's Metamorphosis Englished by G.S.* (1626). This was the first translation of a classic made in America. The remainder of his works, written when he resided in England, included poetic paraphrases of the Psalms of David, the hymns of the Old and New Testaments, and the Song of Solomon.

SANGER, Margaret [Higgins] (1883–), New York leader of the movement for birth control, author of such books as *Happiness in Marriage* (1927). *My Fight for Birth Control* (1931) and *Margaret Sanger* (1938) are autobiographical works.

SANKEY, Ira David, see *Moody,D.L.*

SANTA ANNA (or Santa Ana), Antonio López de (1795–1876), Mexican general and politician, was a leader in the war that won Mexican independence from Spain (1821), and thereafter shifted his allegiance at every opportunity to win personal power. Elected president (1833), he made himself a reactionary dictator (1834–5), and in an attempt to crush the Texan revolution brutally massacred the American defenders of the Alamo (q.v.). After his defeat at San Jacinto (1836), he lost power temporarily, but again became dictator, and was president (1841–4). An unsuccessful command in the Mexican War intervened between two periods of exile. His last power was held as dictator (1853–5), when Juárez led the reform revolution.

Santa Fé Trail, caravan route from Independence, Missouri, to Santa Fé, New Mexico, which from the time of William Becknell, its 'founder' in 1821–2, until late in the century served as an important trade route, and caused the growth of such communities as Taos (q.v.). Josiah Gregg and Lewis H. Garrard (qq.v.) wrote works on its early history, and Harvey Fergusson's trilogy, *Followers of the Sun* (1921–9), is concerned with life along the trail from Spanish times to the present.

Santa-Fé Trail, The (*A Humoresque*), poem by Vachel Lindsay (q.v.), published in *The Congo and Other Poems* (1914). With frequent onomatopoetic effects, the poet presents the vision of a cavalcade of automobiles on the Kansas highway, in which 'the United States goes by!', and alternates the cacophonous noise of the horns with the distant but persistent song of a bird 'amid a hedge of thorns.'

SANTAYANA, George (1863–), born in Spain, was christened Jorge Ruiz de Santayana y Borrais, but always used the English form of his name after he was brought to the U.S. (1872). Reared in Boston, he graduated from Harvard (1886), and after study in Germany and England received his Ph.D. from Harvard (1889). From that year until 1912 he was professor of philosophy at that university. Since 1914 he has made his home in Europe, first in France and England, and more recently in Italy. He is known both as a philosopher and man of letters, having begun his literary career with *Sonnets and Other Verses* (1894); *The Sense of Beauty* (q.v., 1896), a treatise on æsthetics; *Lucifer: A Theological Tragedy* (1899, revised 1924), a play in verse; *Interpretations of Poetry and Religion* (1900); and another book of poems, *A Hermit of Carmel* (1901). He collected his *Poems* in 1923, but after the turn of the century the body of his work was philosophical, having literary significance because of his rich style, whose cadence, reminiscent of Pater, is illumined by lucid, pithy statements of philosophical problems. His outstanding early work is *The Life of Reason* (q.v.,5 vols.,1905–6), a study of reason in common sense, society, religion, art, and science, in which he finds matter to be the only reality, and the source of the myths, institutions, and definitions that men use to describe or express that reality. With *Scepticism and Animal Faith* (1923), he introduced a new philosophy to modify and supplement this concept. This book serves as a prologue to the series entitled *The Realms of Being* (q.v.),

including *The Realm of Essence* (1927), *The Realm of Matter* (1930), *The Realm of Truth* (1937), and *The Realm of Spirit* (1940). In these works he finds knowledge to be faith in the unknowable, symbolized by essences. He contends that, though logical analysis may lead to complete skepticism concerning the existence of anything, animal faith continues to believe in a world whose material events have aroused intuitive essences, which are signs of the environment in which all animals live and suffer. Santayana's other works include: *Three Philosophical Poets* (1910), studies of Lucretius, Dante, and Goethe; *Winds of Doctrine* (1913); *Egotism in German Philosophy* (1916, revised 1940), attacking the romantic wilfulness of the Germans; *Soliloquies in England* (q.v.,1922), a subtle interpretation of the Anglo-Saxon character; *Dialogues in Limbo* (q.v.,1925), a series of Platonic dialogues; *Platonism and the Spiritual Life* (1927); and *Some Turns of Thought in Modern Philosophy* (1933). His works dealing specifically with the American character are: *Philosophical Opinion in America* (1918); *Character and Opinion in the United States* (q.v.,1920), concerned with the conflict of materialism and idealism in American life; and *The Genteel Tradition at Bay* (q.v.,1931), analysing the adulteration and formalization of Calvinism and Transcendentalism. *The Last Puritan* (q.v.,1935) is a novel set in America during the period of the waning strength of Calvinism, in which the contrasting characters, one a Puritan, the other a hedonist, represent 'potentialities which from my earliest youth I felt in myself . . .'; through such concrete externalizations Santayana gives fictional form to his argumentative philosophy. In addition to collecting lectures, essays, and reviews as *Obiter Scripta* (1936), he published his *Works* (14 vols.,1936–7).

Santiago de Cuba, city on the southern coast of eastern Cuba, founded in 1514, was the capital until it was succeeded by Havana. During the Spanish-American War, the Spanish fleet was bottled up in the port of Santiago. When it attempted to run the American blockade (July 3, 1898), it was annihilated just outside the harbor by the U.S.fleet commanded by Sampson and Schley (qq.v.). The city surrendered two weeks later, after an intensive siege.

Sapphira and the Slave Girl, novel by Willa Cather (q.v.) published in 1940.

Recalling a story current during her Virginia childhood, the author describes events that occurred in the neighborhood in 1856. The pious miller, Henry Colbert, is unusually kind to a beautiful mulatto slave, Nancy Till, illegitimate daughter of a white artist and a Negro servant. His invalid wife, Sapphira, groundlessly jealous, persecutes the girl in various subtle ways, finally inviting a philandering nephew for a visit and encouraging him to seduce Nancy. The girl resists, placing herself under the protection of the Colberts' widowed daughter, Rachel Blake, who secretly helps her to escape to Canada by way of the underground railroad. Sapphira, already estranged from her generous, humanitarian daughter by her own pride and gentility, suspects the source of the plot and refuses to recognize Mrs. Blake until the death of a beloved grandchild causes a formal reconciliation. Twenty-five years later Nancy returns to visit her mother and Mrs.Blake, and impresses them by the poise she has acquired through her experience as a housekeeper for a wealthy Canadian family.

Saracinesca, romance by F.M.Crawford (q.v.).

Saratoga, name of Schuylerville, a town in east-central New York, on the Hudson, at the time when it was the site of Gates's victory over Burgoyne (Oct. 17, 1777). The action is considered a turning point in the Revolutionary War. The part of the city called Saratoga Springs has been a popular spa since the early 19th century, and is also known for its racing season (established 1863).

Saratoga; or, Pistols for Seven, farce by Bronson Howard (q.v.), concerning the complicated experiences of a young New Yorker, Bob Sackett, who becomes engaged to four women at once. By accident he meets all four at the popular watering place, Saratoga. The play, produced in New York in 1870, was adapted for the English stage in 1874 by Frank Marshall under the title *Brighton.*

SARETT, Lew (1888–), born in Chicago, has spent a great part of his life in the Rocky Mountains and northern Canada, the background of his ruggedly pantheistic poems interpreting Indian and frontier life. He also has taught English at University of Illinois (1912–20) and

Northwestern (1921–). His books are: *Many Many Moons* (1920), *The Box of God* (1922), *Slow Smoke* (1925), and *Wings Against the Moon* (1931).

SARGENT, Epes (1813–80), Boston author and journalist, was a member of the editorial staffs of various Boston papers, and, while resident in New York (1839–47), helped edit the *New-York Mirror* and other publications. He was well known in his time for miscellaneous writings, which ranged from *American Adventure by Land and Sea* (1841) to some of the Peter Parley books, and anthologies for schools and the general public. His best works include the romantic tragedies, *The Bride of Genoa* (1837); *Velasco* (1839), set in 11th-century Spain and dealing with the Cid; and *The Priestess* (1854); the satirical comedy, *Change Makes Change* (1845); *Songs of the Sea with Other Poems* (1847), sonnets describing a voyage to Cuba, remembered for the song, 'A Life on the Ocean Wave'; *The Woman Who Dared* (1870), a long verse narrative; and the romantic novels, *Fleetwood; or, The Stain of Birth* (1845) and *Peculiar: A Tale of the Great Transition* (1864). In later years Sargent devoted most of his writing to proof of spiritualism, in such books as *The Proof Palpable of Immortality* (1875) and *The Scientific Basis of Spiritualism* (1880).

SARGENT, John Singer (1856–1925), born in Florence of American parents, went to Paris to study painting (1874), and there his precocious talent was recognized by an honorable mention in the Salon of 1878. He first visited the U.S. at the age of 20, and subsequently made numerous brief visits. During a trip to Spain (1879), he was influenced by Velásquez, and among other works painted *El Jaleo*, typical of his swift brush work and ability to capture fleeting action. His finest paintings, such as *Mrs.Charles Gifford Dyer* (1880), *Portrait of a Young Lady* (1881), and *Mme.X* (1884), in which he exhibited brilliant technical ability and a feeling for spontaneous poses, belong to his student days and to those that immediately followed, when superficial dexterity had not yet superseded sound workmanship. By the time he moved to London (1884) from Paris, his ability to catch a flattering external appearance and his quick method of brushing in a whole canvas during a single sitting attracted more commissions than he could fill. Accordingly, in his attempt to please his worldly patrons, he created such paintings as *The Wyndham Sisters*, marked by superficial elegance, shallow likeness, facile skill, and fluent use of light colors that deteriorated into empty display. After a trip to Egypt for historical research, he began (1896) a series of murals, *The History of Religion*, for the Boston Public Library, which shows variations in style, since it was not completed until 1916. Other murals at Harvard and the Boston Museum of Fine Arts were rapidly executed and not fully successful. He turned increasingly to landscape painting and watercolors after 1910, where he found media well adapted to his rapid method of painting, but these, like other later works, show a declining ability to reach beneath the surface.

SARGENT, Lucius Manlius (1786–1867), Boston author and antiquary, attended Harvard, where he wrote an invidious pamphlet on its living conditions. He then studied law but, being of independent means, turned to the writing of original Latin verse, translations from Virgil, articles on antiquarian matters for the *Boston Transcript* and a vigorous series of temperance tracts, collected as *The Temperance Tales* (6 vols.,1863–4). His humanitarianism permitted him to attack the British coolie trade but his close alliance with the Boston hegemony made it impossible for him to stomach antislavery, which he blasted in *The Ballad of the Abolition Blunder-buss* (1861), leveled against Emerson and other liberals.

SARGENT, Winthrop (1825–70), historian whose works include *The History of an Expedition against Fort DuQuesne . . .* (1855), a scholarly account of Braddock's campaign; and the *Life and Career of Major John André* (1861), a highly eulogistic study. He also edited the verses of Joseph Stansbury and Jonathan Odell.

SAROYAN, William (1908–), California author, whose short stories are marked by an impressionistic, rhapsodic manner, and a sentimental exaltation of characters ranging from Armenian-American workers like himself to middle-class businessmen, all somehow optimistically associated with the glory of an American dream. His impetuous and undiscriminating love for all sorts of people, and his ability to use what he calls the 'jump-in-the-river-and-start-to-swim-immediately'type

of writing, allow him to produce his steady flow of short fiction, published in: *The Daring Young Man on the Flying Trapeze* (1934); *Inhale and Exhale* (1936); *Three Times Three* (1936); *Little Children* (1937); *A Native American* (1938); *The Trouble with Tigers* (1938); *Love, Here Is My Hat* (1938); *Peace, It's Wonderful* (1939); and *My Name Is Aram* (1940). An English edition of his stories has been published as *The Gay and Melancholy Flux* (1937). *My Heart's in the Highlands* (1939) is an amorphous short play concerned with an unsuccessful poet and his son, an aged Shakespearean actor, an Armenian grandmother, and others, whose picturesque actions illustrate the idea that worldly success means nothing, and that only aspiration counts. *The Time of Your Life* (1939) was awarded the 1940 Pulitzer Prize, which Saroyan refused. A full-length play, it deals with a forlorn group of people at a San Francisco waterfront bar, whose essential goodness is revealed when a wealthy drunk gives them money to pursue some of their hopes and dreams. *Love's Old Sweet Song* (1940) is a farce-comedy set on a California farm, and *The Beautiful People* (1941) is a play with a theme similar to *The Time of Your Life.*

Sartain's Union Magazine, see *Union Magazine.*

Sartoris, novel by W.Faulkner (q.v.).

SASSACUS, see *Pequot Indians.*

Satanstoe, novel by Cooper (q.v.), published in 1845 as the first of The Littlepage Manuscripts (q.v.).

In 18th-century New York, Cornelius ('Corny') Littlepage lives as a young country gentleman on the family estate, Satanstoe, in Westchester County, after being educated under the guidance of Captain Hugh Littlepage, his aristocratic grandfather, and Mr.Worden, the bluff English parson. With his friends, stalwart Dirck Follock, descendant of a Dutch family, and Jason Newcome, the dry, shrewd Yankee schoolmaster, he visits New York City, whose aspect and customs at that time are vividly depicted, especially the theater and the great Negro festival of 'Pinkster.' Corny falls in love with Dirck's cousin, Anneke Mordaunt, a much-sought belle, whose suitors include Dirck and Major Bulstrode, a British aristocrat. The fathers of Dirck and Corny acquire large grants of land in upper New York, where they plan to settle tenant farmers and establish themselves as great proprietors, and now the two young men, with Jason and Mr.Worden, go to Albany, their headquarters for a surveying expedition. The Mordaunts are in Albany on a similar mission, and all are befriended by Guert Ten Eyck, a mischievous young 'buck' of the town, who loves Anneke's companion, Mary Wallace. Bulstrode is also present, for the troops are gathering to prepare for encounters in the French and Indian War. Guert accompanies Corny to Mooseridge, the Littlepage estate, but their work is interrupted by the warfare, and they are joined by Susquesus, an Onondago scout, who guides them to the troops near Ticonderoga. After the British disaster there, they go to Ravensnest, Mordaunt's estate, where they fight off an Indian attack. Guert is wounded, and dies in Mary's arms, but the others survive, and at last Anneke marries Corny.

Saturday Club, THE, dinner club founded at Boston for informal literary discussion (1855). The organization was foreshadowed by the Symposia of Emerson and Alcott (*c.*1836–44), but credit for bringing the group together is given to Horatio Woodman, a lawyer and publishing agent. At first there were really two clubs, both nameless. The one was purely social; the other, sometimes later called the Magazine Club or the Atlantic Club, was concerned with promoting a literary journal. After the founding of the *Atlantic Monthly* (1857), this group held banquets for the contributors. By 1857 the Saturday Club was named, and its membership included Emerson, Lowell, Longfellow, Dana, Motley, E.P.Whipple, Holmes, Prescott, Whittier, C.E.Norton, Parkman, Howells, Henry James, and other notable figures in New England literature. A history down to 1920 was written by E.W.Emerson and M.A.DeW.Howe (2 vols.,1918–27).

Saturday Evening Post, The (1821–), Philadelphia weekly, whose first issue appeared August 18, 1821, although since 1897 the cover page has carried the citation that it was founded by Franklin in 1728. Its only connection with Franklin is that it was originally issued from an office at one time occupied by his *Pennsylvania Gazette,* one of whose later publishers founded the *Post.* Its original purpose was to furnish light Sunday reading for Phila-

delphians, and its contributors included Cooper, Poe, N.P.Willis, and Mrs.Stowe. Its modern period did not come until it was purchased by Cyrus H.K. Curtis (1897). It was edited by George Horace Lorimer (1899–1937), who increased its circulation from 1,800 to 3,000,000 copies weekly by making it a popular literary magazine for the average American, and creating a type of short story whose morality and artistic technique would be suitable for the masses. He also made it an outstanding advertising medium, with about 60 per cent of its approximate 125 pages devoted to this purpose.

Saturday Press (1858–66), New York weekly miscellany edited by Henry Clapp, drew its literary contributions mainly from such other frequenters of Pfaff's as Aldrich, Fitz-James O'Brien, Whitman, Ada Clare, and William Winter. The paper suspended publication in 1860, but in 1865 was revived with the announcement: 'This paper was stopped in 1860 for want of means. It is now started again for the same reason.' One of its last issues (Nov. 18, 1865) contained Clemens's 'Celebrated Jumping Frog' and work by Josh Billings.

Saturday Review of Literature, The (1924–), New York weekly journal of book reviews and comment, edited by Henry S. Canby (1924–36), who was succeeded by Bernard DeVoto (1936–8). Christopher Morley and William Rose Benét as associates contribute special columns.

Saturday's Children, play by Maxwell Anderson (q.v.).

Sauk (or Sac) **Indians,** Algonquian tribe related to the Fox Indians (q.v.), inhabited the Rock River country of Illinois, and the adjacent region in Wisconsin, Iowa, and Missouri. They were united with the Fox after 1730, aided the British in the War of 1812, and in 1832 participated in the Black Hawk War.

SAUNDERS, Margaret Marshall (1861–), Canadian author, whose story of a dog, *Beautiful Joe* (1894), has become a children's classic. Many of her other books are concerned with animal pets.

SAUNDERS, Richard, pseudonym of Franklin (q.v.).

SAVAGE, Philip Henry (1868–99), Boston poet, whose *First Poems and Fragments* (1895) and *Poems* (1898), although slight in quantity, have been considered important for their simple and clear lyric quality.

SAVAGE, Thomas (1608–82), emigrated to Massachusetts (1635) from England, and three years later joined William Coddington in founding Newport, Rhode Island. Returning to Boston, he held several legislative and judicial positions. His *Account of the Late Action . . . Against the French at Canada* (London, 1691) is considered an important source.

Sawyer, Tom, see *Tom Sawyer.*

SAXE, John Godfrey (1816–87), born in Vermont, after graduating from Middlebury College was prominent in the law and politics of his native state, though he considered his other activities less important than his literary career. In addition to editing a weekly paper, the *Burlington Sentinel* (1850–56), he had a local reputation as a wit and after-dinner poet. His contributions to *The Knickerbocker Magazine* and other literary journals widened the scope of his fame in the vein of light verse, less deft and polished than that of his master Holmes, though for a time equally popular. His many volumes of familiar and comic verse include: *Progress: A Satirical Poem* (1846); *Humorous and Satirical Poems* (1850); *Clever Stories of Many Nations Rendered in Rhyme* (1865); and *Leisure-Day Rhymes* (1875). After 1860 his home was in New York state, where he consistently spent the social seasons at Saratoga Springs until personal tragedies made him a recluse.

Saybrook Platform, declaration of principles by a synod of Congregationalists, drawn up at Saybrook, Connecticut, in 1708. It reaffirmed the Savoy Confession of Faith, adopted in England (1691) by Congregationalists and Presbyterians, but differed from the Cambridge Platform (1648) in stressing the establishment of associations, and of consociations or tribunals with final and appellate jurisdiction. It thus turned from the earlier independency of Congregationalism to the centralized administration of Presbyterianism. It continued in force until 1784.

SAYE AND SELE, William Fiennes, 1st Viscount (1582–1662), a prominent English Puritan, entered into several colonization schemes with Lord Brooke and others. He received a patent in 1632 for Saybrook, Connecticut, which was named

for the two lords, and appointed the younger John Winthrop as governor. The following year they purchased a plantation in New Hampshire and planned to settle there if an aristocratic government might be set up. Encountering strong New England antagonism to their proposals, they sold their properties (1641–2).

Scalawag, opprobrious epithet applied by Southerners to their fellow citizens who aided the Republican party in carrying out severe Reconstruction measures. The name 'carpetbagger' was applied to Republican officeholders who came from the North to participate in the administration.

Scarecrow, The, play by Percy MacKaye (q.v.), published in 1908. It was produced by the Harvard Dramatic Club (1909) and in a professional performance (1910). It is based on Hawthorne's story, 'Feathertop,' in *Mosses from an Old Manse.*

Goody Rickby, a witch of 17th-century New England, fashions a scarecrow into which she breathes life, and under the name Lord Ravensbane sends him to the home of Justice Merton, her former lover. Merton is forced to betroth the scarecrow to his niece, Rachel, who, believing him to be a man, falls in love with him. Her former fiancé, Richard Talbot, reveals the scarecrow's true identity, and Ravensbane, in order to insure a happy life for Rachel, throws away the brimstone-burning pipe that gave him life, and, dignified by her love and his noble action, dies, a man.

Scarlet Letter, The, romance by Hawthorne (q.v.) published in 1850. Based on a theme that appears in 'Endicott and the Red Cross,' this somber romance of conscience and the tragic consequences of concealed guilt is set in Puritan Boston during the mid-17th century. An introductory essay describes the author's experiences as an official of the Salem Custom House, and his supposed discovery of a scarlet cloth letter and documents relating the story of Hester.

An aged English scholar sends his young wife, Hester Prynne, to establish their home in Boston. When he arrives two years later, he finds Hester in the pillory with her illegitimate child in her arms. She refuses to name her lover and is sentenced to wear a scarlet A, signifying Adultress, as a token of her sin. The husband conceals his identity, assumes the name Roger Chillingworth, and in the guise of a doctor seeks to discover her paramour. Hester, a woman of strong, independent nature, in her ostracism becomes sympathetic with other unfortunates, and her works of mercy gradually win her the respect of her neighbors. Chillingworth meanwhile discovers that the Reverend Arthur Dimmesdale, a revered, seemingly saintly young minister, is the father of Hester's beautiful, mischievous child, Pearl. Dimmesdale has struggled for years with his burden of hidden guilt, but, though he does secret penance, pride prevents him from confessing publicly, and he continues to be tortured by his conscience. Chillingworth's life is ruined by his preoccupation with his cruel search, and he becomes a morally degraded monomaniac. Hester wishes her lover to flee with her to Europe, but he refuses the plan as a temptation from the Evil One, and makes a public confession on the pillory in which Hester had once been placed. He dies there in her arms, a man broken by his concealed guilt, but Hester lives on, triumphant over her sin because she openly confessed it, to devote herself to assuring a happy life in Europe for Pearl, and helping others in misfortune.

Scarlet Sister Mary, novel by Julia Peterkin (q.v.) published in 1928, awarded the 1929 Pulitzer Prize, and dramatized in 1930.

In a Gullah Negro settlement on a South Carolina cotton plantation, the orphan 'Sister' Mary is reared by her pious, kindly, superstitious aunt, Maum Hannah. Mary, slender and spirited, at 15 marries July Pinesett, a young buck of the settlement, although Maum Hannah wanted her to marry his twin, June, the steadier and more considerate of the two. Their child, Unex ('Unexpected'), is born a few months after their marriage, and July is soon unfaithful. When he deserts Mary, she is desperately unhappy for a long time, until she becomes June's mistress, bearing him a daughter, Seraphine. During the next 15 years, she becomes vigorous and independent. Her nine children have as many different fathers, and, though she is cast out of the church and incurs the active enmity of the other Gullah women, she thrives on rivalry and adversity. Her proud self-reliance begins

to waver, however, when Unex leaves to seek work in the North, and a younger son, Keepsie, loses a leg in an accident. She nevertheless retains her gaiety and unconcern, and, when July suddenly reappears, she refuses to live with him. She accepts Seraphine's illegitimate daughter as her own, and finally Unex comes home, sick with fever and bringing his motherless child. He soon dies, and this loss of her one 'heart-child' breaks Mary's self-confidence. She seeks divine forgiveness in a night of wild prayer, which ends in a vision of her sins as a series of bloody lashes on the body of Jesus, washed white again by her penitence. Admitted into the church, she vows a life of sinless devotion, but secretly declines to give up the love-charm she has always carried: 'E's all I got now to keep me young.'

Scarlett O'Hara, character in *Gone With the Wind* (q.v.).

Scepticism and Animal Faith, see *Realms of Being.*

SCHELLING, Ernest Henry (1876–1939), New Jersey-born pianist, after an accidental injury (1919) was forced to turn to other activities, and became a noted conductor and composer. His compositions include a symphony; a violin concerto; *Impressions from an Artist's Life,* a set of variations for piano and orchestra; and *A Victory Ball,* a symphonic poem based on a poem by Alfred Noyes.

SCHLESINGER, Arthur Meier (1888–), professor of history at Harvard, whose books include *The Colonial Merchants and the American Revolution,* 1773–1776 (1918) and *Political and Social History of the United States,* 1829–1925 (1925). He is co-editor, with D.R.Fox, of the projected 12-volume *History of American Life* (1927–), a social, cultural, and economic analysis to which he has contributed *Rise of the City,* 1878–98 (1933).

SCHLEY, Winfield Scott (1839–1911), after serving in the Civil War, leading an Arctic rescue expedition described in his book, *The Rescue of Greeley* (1885), and holding various naval posts, became a commodore at the opening of the Spanish-American War. With W.T.Sampson (q.v.) he led the American ships in the defeat of the Spanish fleet at the Battle of Santiago (q.v.). A long controversy ensued over which officer was in chief command, and, although a court of inquiry reached a decision generally adverse to Schley, the public considered him the hero. His memoirs were published as *Forty-Five Years Under the Flag* (1904).

SCHMITT, Bernadotte Everly (1886–), professor of history at the University of Chicago, and author of *England and Germany* 1740–1914 (1916); *The Coming of the War*: 1914 (1930; Pulitzer Prize, 1931); and *Triple Alliance and Triple Entente* (1934).

SCHOOLCRAFT, Henry Roe (1793–1864), ethnologist and geologist, accompanied the expedition of Lewis Cass to northern Michigan and Lake Superior (1820), and wrote a *Narrative Journal of Travels through the Northwestern Regions of the United States . . .* (1821). A second journey to the sources of the Mississippi (1832) is described in a *Narrative of an Expedition through the Upper Mississippi . . .* (1834). As Indian agent at Sault Ste. Marie and Superintendent of Indian Affairs, he made careful researches into the natural history and ethnology of the North American Indians. Upon this investigation he based his voluminous studies, including *Algic Researches* (1839); *Oneóta, or Characteristics of the Red Race of America* (1844–5); and *Historical and Statistical Information Respecting the History, Condition, and Prospects of the Indian Tribes of the United States* (6 vols.,1851–7). Longfellow depended upon these works in writing *Hiawatha,* as did many other writers on Indian life.

SCHOULER, James (1839–1920), Massachusetts jurist and historian, whose works include a *History of the United States of America Under the Constitution* (7 vols.,1880–1913). Although based on new materials concerning its period (1783–1877), this work is not considered objective. It is primarily a political and constitutional survey, divided according to the presidential administrations.

SCHURZ, Carl (1829–1906), born in Germany, participated in the unsuccessful revolutionary movement (1848–9), and emigrated to the U.S. (1852), where he soon became prominent in the newly organized Republican party and was active in antislavery work. His speeches and other services in behalf of Lincoln brought him an appointment as minister to Spain (1861–2), from which he resigned to become a brigadier-general. Although his di-

vision was accused of cowardice on more than one occasion, a court of inquiry found the charges unwarranted, and commended him for his actions. After the war he was Washington correspondent of the New York *Tribune*, and edited a Detroit paper and a German daily published in St.Louis. He left journalism to become a senator from Missouri (1869–75), in which capacity he opposed political corruption and jingoism. Hayes appointed him secretary of the interior (1877–81), in which office he was noted for his installation of a merit promotion system, humanitarian treatment of the Indians, and interest in the conservation of natural resources. With E.L.Godkin and Horace White, he became editor of the New York *Evening Post* (q.v.), which they made famous for its liberal and fearless independence. After differing on editorial policies, he resigned to write for *Harper's Weekly* (1892–8), which he left when he refused to support the policy favoring war with Spain. His later years were devoted to writing and speaking on domestic and foreign matters. In addition to his *Life of Henry Clay* (1887) he left for publication *Reminiscences* (3 vols.,1907–8) and *Speeches, Correspondence, and Political Papers* (6 vols., 1913).

SCHUYLER, Philip John (1733–1804), member of a prominent New York family, served in the French and Indian Wars and was a member of the Continental Congress (1775). He was then appointed a major-general in the Continental Army, in command of northern New York. His controversy with Gates and other officers, and his indecision concerning the defense of Ticonderoga, which was abandoned in 1777, led to an extensive intrigue against him in which New Englanders participated because they disliked his support of New York's claims to the New Hampshire Grants. Accused of negligence, he was superseded by Gates, although he remained in the army until the victory at Saratoga, when he resigned after a court-martial acquitted him. He was a member of the Continental Congress (1779–81) and an ardent Federalist in the Senate (1789–91,1797–8), championing the policies of his son-in-law, Alexander Hamilton.

Science and Health with Key to the Scriptures, authorized textbook of Christian Science (q.v.), published by Mary Baker Eddy (q.v.) in 1875. In 1886 Mrs.Eddy employed the Reverend James Henry Wiggin, a former Unitarian minister and then an editor of the University Press at Cambridge, Massachusetts, to rewrite in more direct language large portions of the book. She continued to make slight changes from time to time, and at the time of her death more than 400,000 copies had been sold.

SCOLLARD, Clinton (1860–1932), professor of English at Hamilton College (1888–96,1911–12), whose long poetic career was marked by several different trends, including versions of precise classical French forms, songs of the open road in the manner of Bliss Carman and Richard Hovey, mystical pantheistic poems, lyrical romantic treatments of foreign lands in which he traveled, and poems inspired by the First World War. A selection of his poems was published as *The Singing Heart* (1934). He also collaborated with his wife Jessie B. Rittenhouse (1869–), and his friend Frank D. Sherman, as well as writing essays, travel sketches, and prose romances.

Scopes Trial, see *Fundamentalism.*

SCOTT, Dred, see *Dred Scott Case.*

SCOTT, Evelyn (1893–), born in Tennessee, was reared in New Orleans, and at the age of 20, in revolt against contemporary U.S.standards of life, became an expatriate in Brazil, which she describes in her frankly autobiographical narrative, *Escapade* (1923). Returning to the U.S., she published her first work, *Precipitations* (1920), a book of poetry, and a play, *Love* (1920). Her first two novels, *The Narrow House* (1921) and *Narcissus* (1922), attacked middle-class morality and aims, and showed a strong but morbid turn of mind. Other fiction of this period included *The Golden Door* (1925), a novel; *Migrations* (1927), 'an arabesque in histories'; and *Ideals* (1927), a collection of lighter short stories. *The Wave* (1929), her first popular novel, dealt with the Civil War. 'War itself,' she said, 'is the only Hero of the book,' for the propulsion upon the characters 'by a power that is not accountable to reason is very obviously like the action of a wave.' After another volume of poetry, *The Winter Alone* (1930), and *Blue Rum* (1930), a romantic adventure story set in Portugal and published under the pseudonym E.Souza, she re-

turned to serious fiction in *A Calendar of Sin* (1931), chronicling the tempestuous life of five generations of one family, in New England, Indiana, and the South; *Eva Gay* (1933), character studies of a woman and her two lovers; *Breathe Upon These Slain* (1934), reconstructing the lives and characters of people whom the narrator knows only through their photographs and the furniture that she finds in her rented house; *Bread and a Sword* (1937), the story of the struggles of an author for life in the modern economic order; and *Shadow of the Hawk* (1941), about a boy who grows up knowing his father had been executed for a murder he did not commit. *Background in Tennessee* (1937) is an autobiographical account of the author's youth.

SCOTT, Job (1751–93), Quaker preacher, traveled widely throughout the U.S., England, and Ireland, and was noted as a mystic who placed all his faith in the inward promptings of the divine spirit. After his death, the orthodox church disavowed him, but the liberal group under Elias Hicks considered him a prophet and published his *Works* (1831).

SCOTT, Winfield (1786–1866), born in Virginia, began his long military career in 1808, served in the War of 1812, the Black Hawk War, and other Indian campaigns, and figured as a peacemaker in such Canadian border disputes as the Caroline Affair. In 1841 he became commander of the U.S.Army, and in the Mexican War (q.v.), after capturing Vera Cruz (1847), began the long march that ended in the capture of Fort Chapultepec and Mexico City. He returned home a national hero, but was defeated as the Whig candidate for the presidency (1852). In 1859 he again acted as peacemaker in a Canadian boundary controversy. At the outbreak of the Civil War, he remained loyal to the Union, but because of age was retired from active command. His *Memoirs* appeared in 1864. Because of his love of military display and emphasis on military etiquette, he was called 'Old Fuss and Feathers.'

Scottsboro Case, *cause célèbre* concerning nine Negro boys charged with the rape of two white girls on a freight train in Alabama. The first trial in Scottsboro, Alabama (1931), resulted in death sentences for eight of the men, and after liberals and radicals came to their aid, charging that the verdict was the result of racial prejudice, the decision was appealed to the U.S. Supreme Court, which declared (1932) that the defendants' right to counsel had been infringed. Despite the recantation of one of the girls, one of the Negroes was again sentenced to death, and the case once more came before the Supreme Court, which in 1935 decided that there must be a retrial, since the constitutional rights of the defendants had been violated by the illegal exclusion of Negroes from jury service. Four of the defendants were subsequently convicted, receiving sentences equivalent to life imprisonment, and the court, although refusing a retrial for them, dropped the rape charges against the five other defendants. The case has frequently figured in literature, and has been the subject of the plays, *They Shall Not Die*, by John Wexley, and *Scottsboro Limited*, by Langston Hughes.

Scout, The; or, The Black Riders of the Congaree, romance by Simms (q.v.), published as *The Kinsmen* (1841) and reissued under the present title (1854). It is one of his Revolutionary Romances.

Clarence Conway leads the rebel partisan band known as the Black Riders, in Carolina during the Revolution, when the influence of the patriots is at a low ebb. He is aided by the scout, Jack Bannister, who reveals Clarence's half-brother Edward to be a Tory. Unsuccessful in war and in love, Edward is sentenced to be hanged. Instead, he is shot by the father of a girl whom he has seduced, and who is loved by Bannister.

Scribner's Magazine (1887–1939), literary monthly, founded by the younger Charles Scribner (1854–1930), after his father sold *Scribner's Monthly*. It immediately won distinction as a dignified literary journal for educated readers. Contributors included Stevenson, Henry and William James, Harte, Kipling, Cable, Mrs. Wharton, Meredith, Stephen Crane, and Huneker, and among the illustrators were Stanford White, Howard Pyle, A.B.Frost, and Frederic Remington. Through the years the magazine maintained its high standards, ever open to new authors, and was the first important magazine to publish the fiction of Hemingway and Wolfe. During its later period, one of its regular departments was Phelps's book reviews, 'As I Like It.' Loss of circulation resulted in its purchase by a new editor (1936), who attempted to popularize it by meeting

a lower average of public taste. When this failed, the magazine suspended publication (1939). It was purchased the same year by *The Commentator*, renamed *Scribner's Commentator*, and reissued with a propagandistic and political policy.

Scribner's Monthly (1870–81), literary journal founded by the elder Charles Scribner (1821–71), with J.G.Holland as editor. It was notable for its many departments; for its serials, including the editor's *Sevenoaks*, Hale's *Philip Nolan's Friends*, Stockton's *Rudder Grange*, Harte's *Gabriel Conroy*, Eggleston's *Roxy*, and Cable's *The Grandissimes*; for its short stories by such authors as Julian Hawthorne, Mrs. Woolson, and Helen Hunt Jackson; for its essays by C.D.Warner, Burroughs, Muir, Stedman, and W.C.Brownell; and for its poems by R.H.Stoddard, Miss Lazarus, Hayne, Lanier, Irwin Russell, and Joaquin Miller. The magazine was also distinguished for its engravings and typography. Its policies were continued after 1881 in *The Century* (q.v.).

SCUDDER, Horace Elisha (1838–1902), Boston editor and author, was associated with the publishing firm that became Houghton, Mifflin (1864–1902), and served as editor of the *Atlantic Monthly* (1890–98). In addition to novels and books for children, he wrote biographies of Noah Webster (1882), Bayard Taylor (1884), and Lowell (1901).

Sea Lions, The, novel by Cooper (q.v.).

SEABURY, Samuel (1729–96), born in Connecticut, graduated from Yale (1748) and the University of Edinburgh (1753), completed his medical study there, and became an Anglican minister in his native colony. Prior to the outbreak of the Revolution, he became an author of Loyalist pamphlets. Under the pseudonym 'A Westchester Farmer,' he published *Free Thoughts on the Proceedings of the Continental Congress* (Nov. 16, 1774), which attempted to arouse the opposition of the agricultural class to the proposals of the Congress. Twelve days later he issued *The Congress Canvassed*, further attacking Congress and pleading for allegiance to the king. Answered by Hamilton in *A Full Vindication of the Measures of Congress*, Seabury published *A View of the Controversy between Great Britain and Her Colonies* (Dec. 24, 1774), in which he proposed colonial home-rule under the authority of Parliament, preferring modification to independence. To this Hamilton replied with *The Farmer Refuted*. Seabury continued to press his view in *An Alarm to the Legislature of the Province of New York* (Jan. 17, 1775). The keen style of Seabury's pamphlets made them powerful weapons against the Revolutionary cause. He was seized by a mob (1775), imprisoned, and upon release so persecuted that at length he entered the British lines. After serving as a chaplain with the British troops, he was made a bishop, and in 1789 became presiding bishop of the Episcopal Church in the U.S., holding this office until his death. His *Discourses on Several Subjects* were published (3 vols.,1791–8).

SEALSFIELD, Charles, alias of Karl Postl (1793–1864), Moravian-born monk, who escaped from his monastery to become an author in Switzerland. During his various journeys to the U.S. (1824–5, 1826, 1827–32, 1837, 1850, 1853–8), he was upon occasion a merchant and a journalist. He was most famous for his depictions of frontier life in the Southwest, and for his humanitarian championing of the Indians. Among his translated works are: *Americans As They Are* (1828), *The United States As They Are* (1828), *Tokeah; or, The White Rose* (1828), *The Cabin Book; or, Sketches of Life in Texas* (1844), and *Frontier Life* (1856).

SEAMAN, Elizabeth Cochrane (1867–1922), journalist under the pseudonym Nelly Bly, adopted from a song by Stephen Foster, specialized in sensational exposures of abuses in domestic employment, divorce, politics, and prison conditions. While working for the New York *World*, she had herself committed to Blackwell's Island by feigning insanity, and recorded the horrible conditions there in *Ten Days in a Mad House* (1887). Sponsored by the *World*, she made a tour of the world in 72 days, 6 hours, and 11 minutes (1889), which brought her international notice and furnished material for *Nelly Bly's Book: Around the World in Seventy-two Days* (1890).

Seaside and the Fireside, The, poems by Longfellow (q.v.) published in 1849. Among them are 'The Building of the Ship' (q.v.), 'The Builders,' 'King Witlaf's Drinking-Horn,' and 'Pegasus in Pound.'

Seats of the Mighty, The, novel by Sir Gilbert Parker (q.v.).

Sea-Wolf, The, novel by Jack London (q.v.) published in 1904.

Humphrey Van Weyden, a dilettante literary critic, is picked up by the sealing schooner, *Ghost*, when the ferry boat on which he is traveling across San Francisco Bay collides with a tramp steamer. The captain of the *Ghost*, Wolf Larsen, is a man of tremendous physical power who is utterly ruthless. When the *Ghost*, on the sealing grounds off Japan, saves some refugees from an ocean disaster, a struggle commences between the hypercivilized, moral Van Weyden and the primitive, individualistic Larsen over the poet Maude Brewster. Miss Brewster and Van Weyden escape to a deserted island to which the *Ghost*, dismasted and near sinking, is later driven. Larsen, deserted by his crew, is aboard, but, blinded by cerebral cancer, is doomed to slow paralysis. Van Weyden and Miss Brewster manage to rehabilitate the vessel and sail back to civilization, but Larsen dies, indomitably pagan.

SECCOMB, JOHN (1708–92), while a student at Harvard wrote 'Father Abbey's Will' (1731), a humorous verse on the college janitor, which was extremely popular in New England, and was reprinted in London. Its sequel, 'A Letter of Courtship,' is supposedly addressed to Father Abbey's widow by the janitor of Yale. Seccomb was later a Congregational clergyman in his native Massachusetts, and, as an orthodox Calvinist, was prominent in the Great Awakening.

Secession, see *Confederacy* and *Civil War*.

Secession (1922–4), little magazine edited by Gorham B. Munson, Kenneth Burke, and Matthew Josephson. It was issued from various European cities and New York.

Second Adventists, see *Millerites*.

Secret Service, play by William Gillette (q.v.).

SEDGWICK, ANNE DOUGLAS (1873–1935), born in New Jersey, taken to England at the age of nine, lived the rest of her life abroad, where in 1908 she married the English author, Basil de Sélincourt. Her novels, which follow in the school of Henry James, are concerned with problems of social relationship and the contrasts of American with English and continental standards. The more important of her early novels include: *The Rescue* (1902) and *A Fountain Sealed* (1907), both dealing with the hatred between a mother and daughter, the former set in Paris and the latter in Boston. *Amabel Channice* (1908) is the story of a woman who idolizes her husband, Sir Hugh Channice, because he has forgiven her infidelity and reared her illegitimate child as his own, until her illusions are destroyed by the revelation of his real character by his mistress. *Franklin Winslow Kane* (1910) contrasts an American and an English couple. *Tante* (q.v., 1911) is a psychological study of a genius. *The Encounter* (1914), another study of genius, concerns an aging German philosopher and his jealous insistence upon adoration. *The Third Window* (1920) deals with the attempt of a woman to prevent by supernatural means the remarriage of the widow of the man whom she had idolized. *Adrienne Toner* (q.v., 1922) is a character study of an American girl and her power over the English among whom she lives. *The Little French Girl* (q.v., 1924) presents a contrast of French and English standards of life. *The Old Countess* (1927), a tragic story again contrasting French and English characters, was followed by *Dark Hester* (1929), dealing with hatred between a mother-in-law and daughter-in-law and their love for the same man. *Philippa* (1930) is the story of a selfish man whose wife sacrifices her life to him and their equally selfish daughter. Her collections of short stories were published as *The Nest* (1913) and *Christmas Roses* (1920), the latter published in England as *Autumn Crocuses* (1920). Her letters were edited by her husband (1936).

SEDGWICK, CATHARINE MARIA (1789–1867), Massachusetts author of fiction depicting the simple domestic virtues of the American home, which she considered the safeguard of the Republic. *A New-England Tale* (1822) and *Redwood* (1824) are conventional romantic novels, illustrating their author's moral belief, and valuable for their realistic depiction of social customs in early 19th-century New England. *Hope Leslie, or Early Times in the Massachusetts* (1827) tells of the romantic adventures which befall colonial settlers, through Indian captivities and massacres. *Clarence; or, A Tale of Our Own Times* (1830), set in and around New York City, contrasts the lives of a sensible and an adventurous girl, and *The Linwoods; or, 'Sixty Years Since' in America* (1835) presents the social life of New York City dur-

ing the last two years of the Revolution. *Married or Single?* (1857), her last novel, was again a story of society and a contrast of different types of women, with the ostensible purpose of showing the valuable activities in which an unmarried woman might engage. She also wrote many moral tracts, sometimes in the form of fiction, for children as well as adults. Besides contributing widely to periodicals, she was active in the Unitarian Church and as a feminist, although remaining apart from radical reform movements.

SUSAN [RIDLEY] SEDGWICK (1789–1867), her sister-in-law, was the author of *The Young Emigrants* (1836), a juvenile tale about a New York family's emigration to Ohio in the late 18th century. This was distinguished as an early example of non-religious fiction for children. Her other books included *Allen Prescott; or, The Fortunes of a New England Boy* (1834) and *Alida; or, Town and Country* (1844).

Sedition Law, see *Alien and Sedition Acts.*

SEEGER, ALAN (1888–1916), New York-born poet, graduated from Harvard (1910), went to Paris (1913), and at the beginning of the First World War enlisted in the French Foreign Legion. He was killed at Belloy-en-Santerre, in the Battle of the Somme. 'I Have a Rendezvous with Death' (*North American Review*, Oct. 1916) is the most famous of his war poems, which were collected in *Poems* (1916). His *Letters and Diary* were published in 1917.

Selby, COLONEL, character in *The Gilded Age* (q.v.).

SELDES, GEORGE [HENRY] (1890–), born in New Jersey, was a reporter and foreign correspondent until 1927, and has since been noted for his exposés of official and unofficial censorship of the press. His books include: *You Can't Print That!* (1929); *The Truth Behind the News* (1929); *Can These Things Be!* (1931); *Sawdust Cæsar* (1932), a study of Mussolini and Fascism; *World Panorama* (1933), a social survey of the post-war world; *The Vatican and the Modern World* (1933); *Iron, Blood and Profits* (1934), exposing munition makers; *Freedom of the Press* (1935); *Lords of the Press* (1939); *The Catholic Crisis* (1939); and *Witch Hunt* (1940), concerned with Red-baiting.

GILBERT [VIVIAN] SELDES (1893–), his brother, graduated from Harvard (1914), was a war correspondent in Europe, and returned to become a journalist, drama critic, and editor of *The Dial* (1920–23). His books include: *The United States and the War* (1917); *The Seven Lively Arts* (1924), a critical examination of such arts as the comic strip, motion pictures, vaudeville, and popular songs; *The Stammering Century* (1928), an informal survey of 19th-century America; *The Wings of the Eagle* (1929), a novel; *The Movies and the Talkies* (1929); *Lysistrata* (1930), an adaptation of Aristophanes's comedy; *The Future of Drinking* (1930), a study of the effects of the 18th Amendment on drinking manners; *Against Revolution* (1932); *The Years of the Locust* (1932), a survey of the U.S. during the depression; *Mainland* (1936), an analysis of contemporary American life; and *The Movies Come from America* (1937). He also writes detective stories under the pseudonym Foster Johns, and has written and directed for radio and television.

Self, social comedy by Sidney Bateman (q.v.), produced and pub'ished in 1856. It satirizes New York society in the vein of Anna Mowatt's *Fashion*, which obviously inspired it, and is concerned with the financial difficulties of the fashionable Apex family and its salvation by the common-sense banker, John Unit.

Self-Reliance, essay by Emerson (q.v.) published in *Essays, First Series* (1841).

'Trust thyself,' a central doctrine in the author's ethical thought, is the theme developed here. 'Envy is ignorance . . . imitation is suicide'; a man 'must take himself for better, for worse, as his portion.' 'Society everywhere is in conspiracy against the manhood of every one of its members . . . Whoso would be a man must be a nonconformist.' The two terrors that discourage originality and creative living are fear of public opinion and undue reverence for one's own consistency. The great figures of history have not cared for the opinions of their contemporaries; 'to be great is to be misunderstood'; and if a man honestly expresses his nature he will be largely consistent. Deference to authority, to institutions, or to tradition is disobedience to the inner law that each of us must follow in order to do justice to himself and to society. We must speak the truth, and truth, revealed intuitively, cannot be achieved except through the development and expression of one's individual

nature. 'Nothing is at last sacred but the integrity of your own mind.'

SELIGMAN, E[DWIN] R[OBERT] A[NDERSON] (1861–1939), professor of political economy and finance at Columbia (1885–1931), whose books include: *Essays in Taxation* (1895); *Economic Interpretation of History* (1902); *Principles of Economics* (1905); *Essays in Economics* (1925); and *The Economics of Farm Relief* (1929). He was editor of *The Encyclopædia of the Social Sciences* (1930–35).

Sellers, COLONEL BERIAH, character in *The Gilded Age* (q.v.). In the dramatization he was called Colonel Mulberry Sellers, and under the latter name reappears in *The American Claimant* (q.v.).

SELLERS, ISAIAH, see *Twain, Mark.*

Selling of Joseph, The, antislavery tract by Samuel Sewall (q.v.), published in 1700 in the form of a lawyer's brief fortified by Scriptural text. In this pamphlet occurs the sentence often cited by later Abolitionists: 'There is no proportion between twenty pieces of silver and liberty.'

Seminole Indians, Florida tribe composed mainly of refugees from the Creeks (q.v.), with a large element of Negro exslaves. Still under Spanish rule, they were hostile to the U.S. in the War of 1812. In the first Seminole War (1817–18) they were subdued by Andrew Jackson, after which Spain ceded Florida to the U.S. The attempt to remove the tribe beyond the Mississippi provoked a second Seminole War (1835–42), which, at a cost of 1,500 American lives and $20,000,000, resulted in the removal of most of the Seminoles and the death of their leader, Osceola. The present Seminoles live in Oklahoma and southern Florida.

SEMMES, RAPHAEL (1809–77), entered the U.S.Navy (1826), and served in various capacities, particularly distinguishing himself in the Mexican War. During the Civil War he was a commander in the Confederate navy, won notice for his destruction of Northern commerce, and commanded the *Alabama* under the English flag and with an English crew, which attacked and captured more than 60 vessels before it was sunk by the *Kearsarge* (June 19, 1864) off Cherbourg, France. (See *Alabama Claims*). Semmes later wrote several books on his service in the Mexican War and the Civil War.

Seneca Indians, tribe of the Iroquois Confederacy (q.v.). They were allied with Pontiac, aided the British during the Revolution, and largely supported the American side in the War of 1812. They now live mainly on several reservations in New York state.

Sense of Beauty, The, study of æsthetics by Santayana (q.v.), published in 1896 and based on lectures delivered at Harvard (1892–5). Intending to 'put together the scattered commonplaces of criticism into a system, under the inspiration of a naturalistic psychology,' the author organizes his discussion in four parts: 'The Nature of Beauty'; 'The Materials of Beauty'; 'Form'; and 'Expression.' He argues that 'as truth is . . . the co-operation of perceptions, so beauty is the co-operation of pleasures . . . [Beauty] is pleasure objectified.' He further asserts that pleasures are primarily rooted in sensation, and that the materials with which the æsthetic function is associated are based on sensuous and ideal experiences of pleasure, when these are given expression through form. 'Beauty,' he concludes, 'seems to be the clearest manifestation of perfection, and the best evidence of its possibility . . . Beauty is a pledge of the possible conformity between the soul and nature, and consequently a ground of faith in the supremacy of the good.'

Separatist Society of Zoar, see *Zoar.*

Separatists, name applied to those who split from the Established Church of England in the 17th century, organizing independent congregations. They had much in common with the Puritan party within the State Church, but went beyond them in desiring not merely a purification in ceremonial but also complete independence. Frequently they had no stated ministry, emphasizing only the bare letter of Scripture, believing in voluntary church membership, and a relatively democratic organization within the local church. The Pilgrims (q.v.) were Separatists, but most of the other New England settlers, such as those of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, were Puritans. In America the two groups tended to merge, but extreme Separatists, such as Roger Williams and Anne Hutchinson, were persecuted. Certain ministers, such as Thomas Hooker and John Wise, opposed the dominant oligarchy of New England ministers upon essentially Separatist principles.

Septimius Felton; or, The Elixir of Life, unfinished romance by Hawthorne (q.v.), posthumously published in 1871.

During the Revolutionary War, Septimius Felton, a scholar who seeks a method of attaining earthly immortality, kills a British officer who has insulted his fiancée, Rose Garfield. On the hilltop where he has buried the officer, he meets Sybil Dacy, a strange, unearthly creature, who is looking for a flower she expects to grow from the grave, and they become close friends. Before he died, the officer gave Septimius an old manuscript, containing the formula for an elixir of life, requiring the juice of the flower Sybil seeks. A Dr. Portsoaken, her uncle, visits Septimius and reveals that the scholar may be the heir to a British estate. Robert Hagburn, an American soldier and friend of Septimius, becomes engaged to Rose, after it is discovered that she is the scholar's half-sister. At the wedding of Robert and Rose, Sybil discloses to Septimius, who is about to drink the potion he has finally concocted, that the officer he killed was her lover, and that she has intended to seek revenge, but now loves Septimius. She drinks part of the potion, throws away the rest, and dies. Septimius disappears, and is believed to have gone to claim his English estate.

SEQUOYAH (*c.*1770–1843), half-breed Cherokee, also known as George Guess, who created a syllabary for his people's language by formulating a set of 85 characters. This principle has since been used for other Indian languages. He printed parts of the Bible and a newspaper, *The Cherokee Phoenix* (1828*ff.*), in his adaptation of ordinary type and numerals.

SERRA, Junípero (1713–84), Franciscan missionary, born on the island of Mallorca, came to Mexico City with Francisco Palóu and became a missionary among the Indians. In 1767 he was sent as *presidente* to Lower California, and in the same capacity led five other Franciscans on the military expedition of Portolá to Upper California (1769). During the 15 years after this thousand-mile march, he founded 9 missions on the California coast, and before his death converted some 6,000 Indians, teaching them to cultivate the land about the missions. He died at his own mission in Carmel. His biography was written by Palóu (1787), and among other contemporary documents concerning him are the diaries of Juan Crespi. He figures frequently in later literature, including works by Helen Hunt Jackson and Agnes Repplier.

Servant in the House, The, play by Charles Rann Kennedy (q.v.).

Servant to Servants, A, blank-verse dramatic monologue by Robert Frost (q.v.), published in *North of Boston* (1914).

A lonely, overworked New England farm wife talks with a visiting naturalist, and through her eager conversation reveals the tragic story of her life. Reared in a loveless family, in which her mother's life had been embittered by the necessity of caring for an obscenely mad brother-in-law, she herself had been influenced for a time by the inherited strain of insanity, and welcomed the opportunity to marry Len, the unfeeling husband who neglects her for his many business enterprises. Though she craves personal freedom, love, and the touch of beauty, she is burdened by innumerable menial tasks, including the feeding of the brutal farmhands, whose 'servant' she has become.

SERVICE, Robert W[illiam] (1874–), born in England, emigrated to Canada (1897), where he traveled up and down the Pacific Coast, following many occupations. His experiences in the Yukon and his knowledge of the Klondike gold rush furnished the material for his most popular poems, *Songs of a Sourdough* (1907), *Ballads of a Cheechako* (1907), and *The Spell of the Yukon* (1907), as well as for his novel, *Trail of '98* (1910). His work during the First World War, as a news correspondent and Canadian Army ambulance driver furnished material for *Rhymes of a Red Cross Man* (1916), while his literary life in Paris is reflected in *Ballads of a Bohemian* (1920) and *Rhymes of a Rolling Stone* (1913). He lived abroad (1912–40) and in addition to his red-blooded adventure stories has written *The Poisoned Paradise* (1922), a novel of Monte Carlo, and *Bar-Room Ballads* (1940), a further collection about people he has met in the Far North and elsewhere in his travels. His verses, of which the best known is 'The Shooting of Dan McGrew,' are characterized by a simple ballad metre and vigorous love of adventure, and they appeal to those who enjoy the heroic emotions associated with the cult of primal instincts.

Seth's Brother's Wife, novel by Harold Frederic (q.v.).

SETON, ERNEST [EVAN] THOMPSON (1860–), English-born author, artist, and naturalist, was reared in Canada, where he won a reputation for his books on wild life. These include: *Wild Animals I Have Known* (1898); *The Biography of a Grizzly* (1900); *Lives of the Hunted* (1901); and *Biography of an Arctic Fox* (1937). *Trail of an Artist-Naturalist* (1940) is his autobiography. His name was originally Ernest Seton Thompson.

Seven Arts, The (Nov. 1916–Oct. 1917), monthly little magazine intended to foster native talents and points of view and encourage freer expression than could be countenanced in the more conservative quality magazines. Its editors included James Oppenheim, Waldo Frank, and Van Wyck Brooks, and among its contributors were Anderson, Amy Lowell, Frost, John Reed, Dos Passos, R.S.Bourne, Vachel Lindsay, Dreiser, Spingarn, W.H.Wright, and Mencken. The magazine's pacifism caused its subsidy to be withdrawn, and its financial failure.

Seven Cities of Cibola, see *Zuñi Indians.*

Seven Days' Battles, series of Civil War battles near Richmond, during the last week (June 26–July 2, 1862) of the Peninsular Campaign (q.v.). The Confederate forces under Lee, assisted by Jackson, outmaneuvered McClellan and forced him to retreat.

Seven Lively Arts, The, critical work by Gilbert Seldes (q.v.).

Seven Pines, BATTLE OF, see *Fair Oaks.*

Seven Years War, see *French and Indian Wars.*

Sevenoaks, novel by J.G.Holland (q.v.) published in 1875.

The industries and social institutions of Sevenoaks, a New England village, are controlled by coarse, ambitious Robert Belcher, whose wealth is founded on patents illegally obtained from the inventor Paul Benedict. In despair over the death of his wife and the loss of his life's work, Benedict goes insane and is confined in the county poorhouse. His small son Harry wins the aid of James Fenton, an uneducated but generous backwoodsman, who abducts the inventor and takes him to his forest camp, where he nurses him back to sanity. James Balfour, a New York lawyer, befriends Benedict and takes Harry into his family. Meanwhile Belcher has gone to live in New York, and in attempting to gain information from Harry introduced the boy to his friend, the 'fast' widow, Mrs.Dillingham. She changes her way of life under the influence of the noble boy, and, discovering that Paul Benedict is her brother, uses her power over Belcher to obtain incriminating information against him. Balfour finally brings the case of 'Benedict vs. Belcher' into court, proves Belcher guilty of forgery and wins back Benedict's patent rights. The inventor returns to Sevenoaks, takes charge of industrial affairs, and proves a wise and sympathetic administrator.

Seventh Day Adventists, see *Millerites.*

Seventh Day Baptists, see *Dunkers.*

Seventh of March Speech, name generally given to the speech by Daniel Webster (q.v.), 'For the Union and Constitution,' delivered in the Senate, March 7, 1850. This reply to Calhoun's 'Fourth of March Speech,' which had attacked Clay's Compromise Bill, championed the cause of the Union and advocated that Abolitionists yield some of their principles to maintain the Union in harmony. Whittier's 'Ichabod' (q.v.) is a typical expression of the reaction of the Abolitionists, who considered that Webster had betrayed them and was now a 'lost leader.'

SEVIER, JOHN (1745–1815), Virginia-born frontiersman and Indian fighter, was associated with James Robertson (q.v.) in the Watauga Association. For his services in the Revolution he was made a brigadier-general by North Carolina, in an attempt to dissuade him from joining in the formation of the State of Franklin (q.v.), of which he nevertheless became governor. After the collapse of his government, he worked his way back into favor in North Carolina politics, and was elected to Congress (1789–91). He moved to Tennessee, where, though occasionally involved in tempestuous political activities and Indian fighting, he became on the whole a pillar of society and was the state's first governor (1796–1801, 1803–9) and a congressman (1811–15). He figures as a character in *The Crossing.*

SEWALL, JONATHAN MITCHELL (1748–1808), Massachusetts lawyer and ardent Federalist, was a grand-nephew of Samuel Sewall. His occasional poetry reflected his

patriotism and political beliefs, and included a *Versification of President Washington's Excellent Farewell-Address* (1798) and a *Eulogy on the Late General Washington* (1800). He published his *Miscellaneous Poems* in 1801.

SEWALL, Samuel (1652–1730), born in England of a family that had previously resided in the colonies, was brought at the age of nine to Boston, with which his later life is identified. After graduation from Harvard (1671), he was for a long time a tutor at the college, but in 1679 began his long political career, including such early offices as manager of the colony's printing press, deputy to the general court, and member of the Council (1684–6). While in England on business (1688–9), he aided Increase Mather in appealing to William III to recover the abrogated Massachusetts charter. Upon his return he resumed his position on the Council, and was a councillor of the new charter (1691–1725). In 1692 he was appointed by Governor Phips as a special commissioner in the Salem witchcraft trials, in which he later regretted having participated, and in 1697, on a fast day set aside for repentance concerning errors in the trials, he was the only judge publicly to recant by standing in the Old South Church while the clergyman read his confession of error and guilt. After holding several judicial posts, he became chief justice of the superior court of judicature (1718–28), and despite his lack of legal training was considered a good and rather liberal jurist. His various pamphlets give evidence of the many different matters in which he was interested. *The Revolution in New England Justified* (1691), written with Edward Rawson, is a loquacious but logical justification of the New Englanders who deposed Andros and resumed charter government in 1689. *Phænomena quædam apocalyptica . . .* (q.v.,1697) is a prediction that New England will be the eventual seat of the New Jerusalem. *The Selling of Joseph* (q.v., 1700) is an early antislavery appeal, and other works include *Proposals Touching the Accomplishment of Prophecies* (1713), and *A Memorial Relating to the Kennebeck Indians* (1721), an early argument for humane treatment of the Indians. 'Talitha Cumi' (q.v.) is an essay, not published until 1873, which argues against those who deny the resurrection of women. Both as man and as author, Sewall is now best remembered for the *Diary*, which was published by the Massachusetts Historical Society (3 vols.,1878–82), and which covers the period from 1674 to 1729, with a gap between 1677 and 1685, in a most intimate and minute manner. Because he not only related in great detail the homely activities of Boston, but also gives a completely honest revelation of his own character, he has been compared with his British contemporary, Samuel Pepys. He reveals, evidently quite unconsciously, the twilight of the old Puritan tradition and the rise of the New England Yankee period, which transition he himself represented in his religious orthodoxy, tempered by an emphasis upon mercantilism in his capacity as a merchant. His practical Yankee bent made him less concerned with large abstract ideas, and more with daily happenings and the persons among whom he moved. The more spacious abstract thought in Cotton Mather's *Diary* thus receives a complementary balance for the student of the period in the journal of Sewall, which recounts such incidents as his unsuccessful wooing of Madam Winthrop with gifts of gingerbread, sermons, and a shilling-and-a-half worth of sugar almonds, and their disputes over the marriage settlement and whether he should wear a wig and keep a coach. *The Letters of Samuel Lee and Samuel Sewall Relating to New England and the Indians* were published in the Colonial Society of Massachusetts Collections (XIV, 1913). Whittier describes Sewall in 'The Prophecy of Samuel Sewall.'

Sewanee Review (1892–), literary quarterly founded by W.P.Trent, is published by the University of the South, Sewanee, Tennessee. It is now the oldest critical and literary quarterly in the U.S., and though academic in outlook is not a university organ. Its contributors are mainly Southerners, and it devotes much attention to the reinterpretation of the role of the South in U.S.culture.

SEWARD, William Henry (1801–72), began his political career as a Whig governor of New York (1839–42), and was a senator (1849–61), vigorously opposing the Compromise of 1850, affirming 'a higher law than the Constitution' in dealing with the sectional dispute, but adopting a temporizing policy in order not to alienate party supporters. After the growth of antislavery sentiment in the North, he became a Republican, de-

nounced the Dred Scott decision, and in a speech (Oct. 1858) declared that the slavery struggle was an 'irrepressible conflict between North and South,' although again, partly for tactical reasons, he temporarily supported Douglas's 'squatter sovereignty' plan. In 1861 he became Lincoln's secretary of state, at first expecting to govern the President, and recklessly proposing to embroil the U.S. in a foreign war on the ground that it would integrate the Union. He also indulged in unauthorized machinations prior to the firing on Fort Sumter. Thereafter he recognized his position, and handled with great diplomacy the Trent Affair (q.v.) and other incidents offering possibilities for English and European intervention in the Civil War. His protests in the matter of the *Alabama* were so successful as to lead to the eventual satisfactory adjustment of the Alabama Claims. He also showed his adroitness in his suave treatment of the French establishment of Maximilian as Emperor of Mexico. An unsuccessful attempt was made upon his life at the time of Lincoln's assassination, but Seward recovered, to continue in office under Johnson, whose policies he supported at the expense of his own popularity. His consistent belief in America's 'manifest destiny' flourished in his negotiations for the purchase of Alaska from Russia (1867), at one time called 'Seward's folly,' and his unsuccessful attempts to acquire part of the Danish West Indies, the Dominican Republic, and Hawaii. His *Autobiography . . . from* 1801 to 1834 was published in 1877, and his *Works* appeared in five volumes (1884).

SEYMOUR, Horatio (1810–86), a leader of the Democratic party in New York state, was twice elected governor (1852–4, 1863–5). As the Democratic candidate for the presidency (1868), he was defeated by Grant. He was a brother-in-law of Roscoe Conkling.

Shadows on the Rock, novel by Willa Cather (q.v.) published in 1931.

Daily life in early 18th-century Quebec is depicted in the intervals of isolation on this grim 'rock' in the St.Lawrence, between visits by ships from France. Against a background of such historical figures as the Intendant, Frontenac, the rival bishops—generous, self-sacrificing old Bishop Laval and extravagant, haughty young Monseigneur de Saint-Vallier—, and Mother Juschereau and her nuns, are placed the stories of typical humble citizens. Euclide Auclair, 'the philosopher apothecary,' has followed Frontenac from France, and after his wife's death lives with his daughter Cécile, cherishing nostalgic memories of Europe. Cécile and her father befriend the boy Jacques, son of a sailor and a disreputable woman of the town, 'Toinette Gaux. Among their friends are Bishop Laval; Noël Pommier, the cobbler; Father Hector Saint-Cyr, the missionary; Antoine Frichette, the trapper; and Pierre Charron, *coureur du bois* and fur-trader, a romantic figure driven to his lonely occupation by an early love affair with a pious girl who chose to become a religious recluse. The apothecary is despondent at the death of Frontenac, and when Charron comes to cheer his friend, he discovers that he loves Cécile, now grown to womanhood. They marry, and Jacques becomes a sailor, while Auclair, no longer caring to return to France, spends his last years on 'the rock.'

Shakers, see *Lee, Ann.*

Shame Woman, The, play by Lula Vollmer (q.v.).

Shanghai Gesture, The, play by John Colton (q.v.).

SHANNON, Fred Albert (1893–), professor of history in Iowa and Kansas, author of *The Organization and Administration of the Union Army* (1861–65) (1928; Pulitzer Prize, 1929) and *The Economic History of the American People* (1934).

Shapes of Clay, poems by Ambrose Bierce (q.v.).

SHAW, Albert (1857–), Ohio-born editor and historian, after receiving his Ph.D. at Johns Hopkins (1884) and studying abroad, founded the *Review of Reviews* (q.v.,1891) and remained its editor until the magazine was suspended in 1937. His books include: *Icaria—A Chapter in the History of Communism* (1884), *Political Problems of American Development* (1907), and *Abraham Lincoln* (2 vols.,1929).

SHAW, Henry Wheeler (1818–85), Massachusetts-born humorist, better known under his pseudonym Josh Billings; until the age of 45, when he began his literary career by writing for small newspapers, he attempted a variety of occupations, including Western exploration, farming, commanding a river boat, selling real estate, and auctioneering. His writ-

ings soon attracted the attention of C.F. Browne, who arranged for the publication of his first book, *Josh Billings, His Sayings* (1865). Thereafter he became a popular crackerbox philosopher, employing the devices popular among the literary comedians of the time: ridiculous spellings, deformed grammar, monstrous logic, puns, malapropisms, incongruous juxtapositions of idea, and anticlimax. Both in his lectures and in his books, he showed his gift for aphorism rather than sustained storytelling or characterization. From 1869 to 1880 he issued annual *Allminax*, and his other works include: *Josh Billings on Ice, and Other Things* (1868); *Everybody's Friend* (1874); *Josh Billings' Trump Kards* (1877); *Old Probability; Perhaps Rain—Perhaps Not* (1879); and *Josh Billings Struggling with Things* (1881).

SHAW, Irwin (1914–), New York proletarian playwright, whose plays are: *Bury the Dead* (q.v.,1936), a pacifist play; *Siege* (1937); *The Gentle People* (q.v.,1939), a fantasy dealing with modern threats of aggression and oppressive force, and *Retreat to Pleasure* (1940). *Sailor Off the Bremen* (1939) is a book of short stories.

Shawnee Indians, Algonquian tribe related to the Sauk, Fox, and Kickapoo, migrated from the Cumberland and Savannah Rivers to Pennsylvania and Ohio, at the end of the 17th century. Their principal opposition to the whites occurred in the rebellion led by Tecumseh (q.v.). They later moved farther west, and now live in Oklahoma. The Shawnee figure in *Nick of the Woods* and other works concerned with Tecumseh.

Shays's Rebellion (1786–7), armed insurrection of western Massachusetts farmers, led by Daniel Shays (1747–1825), a Revolutionary War captain. They attempted to stop the foreclosure of mortgages on their property and to prevent their imprisonment for debts arising from high land taxes after the Revolution. Bellamy's novel, *The Duke of Stockbridge* (1900), deals with this subject.

She Would Be a Soldier, or the Plains of Chippewa, play by Mordecai M. Noah (q.v.), produced and published in 1819.

The background deals with the Battle of Chippewa (July 5, 1814), in which the American army under Generals Jacob Brown and Winfield Scott redeemed the earlier defeats of the Canadian campaign. The love story deals with Christine who, in an attempt to see her beloved, the American soldier Lenox, disguises herself as a soldier and is arrested as a spy. Refusing to give any explanation, she is condemned to death, but is finally saved by Lenox.

SHEEAN, [James] Vincent (1899–), born in Illinois, attended the University of Chicago, and became a European correspondent for the *Chicago Tribune* (1922–5) and subsequently for news syndicates, reporting the Fascist march on Rome, the French and Spanish wars on the Rif tribes, the overthrow of the Hankow government, and the Palestine riots of 1929. In *Personal History* (1935), published in England as *In Search of History*, he records the development of his mind through these experiences of the post-war decade. *Not Peace But a Sword* (1939), published in England as *The Eleventh Hour*, is a survey of contemporary European conditions. His other travel and sociological books include *An American among the Riffi* (1926) and *The New Persia* (1927), and he has also written the novels, *The Anatomy of Virtue* (1927), *Gog and Magog* (1930), *The Tide* (1933), *Sanfelice* (1936), and *A Day of Battle* (1938). *The Pieces of a Fan* (1937) is a book of short stories, and *An International Incident* (1940) is a comedy.

Shelburne Essays, on literary, philosophical, and religious subjects, by Paul Elmer More (q.v.), were published in eleven volumes (1904–21), and three supplementary volumes, *The New Shelburne Essays* (1928–35). The essays show More's great classical learning, and develop the broad thesis of the New Humanist movement (q.v.), which asked for a return to classic values in a period of romantic stress and groping for standards. More's subjects are widely varied, extending from ancient Oriental revelations to modern European and American literature, and are all marked by his rich scholarship and elevated style.

SHELBY, Isaac (1750–1826), like his father, Evan Shelby (1719–94), was a prominent frontiersman and soldier, and served in the Revolutionary War at King's Mountain and other battles. In 1783 he settled in Kentucky, whose separation from Virginia he helped secure, and whose first governor he became (1792–6,1812–16).

SHELDON, Charles Monroe (1857–), born in New York, attended

Brown University and Andover Theological Seminary, and became pastor of the Central Congregational Church of Topeka, Kansas, which he left in 1919 to edit *The Christian Herald*. His novel, *In His Steps* (1896), a story of a modern minister following the example of Jesus in his daily life, was an extraordinary success, being translated into 23 languages, and selling 20,000,000 copies. It has been called the most popular of modern novels. His other books include: *Richard Bruce* (1892); *His Brother's Keeper; or, Christian Stewardship* (1895); *The Heart of the World* (1905); *Charles M. Sheldon: His Life Story* (1925); *Let's Talk It Over* (1929); and *He Is Here* (1931).

SHELDON, EDWARD [BREWSTER] (1886–), born in Chicago, graduated from Harvard (1907), where he studied under G.P.Baker. His first play, *Salvation Nell* (1908), is the story of a reformed saloon girl. After two dramas concerned with American politics, *The Nigger* (q.v.,1909) and *The Boss* (q.v.,1911), he wrote *The Princess Zim-Zim* (1911), a romantic play whose background is a Coney Island sideshow. His other plays include: *Egypt* (1912), a melodrama dealing with gypsies; *The High Road* (1912), a character study of a woman who rises from a mean farm life to make her husband a presidential candidate; *Romance* (q.v.,1913), concerned with an old man's memories of a youthful love affair; *The Song of Songs* (1914), an adaptation with an American setting of a novel by Sudermann; *The Garden of Paradise* (1914), a poetic fantasy based on 'The Little Mermaid' of Hans Andersen; *Bewitched* (1924), an imaginative romantic play, written with Sidney Howard; *Lulu Belle* (1926), a study of the life of a Negro prostitute, written in collaboration with his nephew, Charles MacArthur; and *Jenny* (1929) and *Dishonored Lady* (1930), written with Margaret Ayer Barnes.

Sheltered Life, The, novel by Ellen Glasgow (q.v.), published in 1932.

In Queenborough (Richmond), Virginia, during the first two decades of the 20th century, Jenny Blair Archbald is reared by her widowed mother, her spinster Aunt Etta, and her grandfather, General David Archbald, a lawyer and Civil War veteran. Members of the decaying aristocratic class, they attempt to preserve the genteel social traditions of the 19th century, and continue to live in a section of the city rapidly giving way to industrial encroachments. Their neighbors and close friends are George Birdsong and his wife Eva, a famous belle of the 1890's, extravagantly in love with her gallant, handsome, but weak husband, who tries without success to be faithful to her. Jenny Blair, indestructibly innocent and self-contained, is strongly influenced by her aged grandfather's devotion to Eva, the miseries of her frustrated and complaining aunt, and the prevalent atmosphere of adversity and genteel decadence. As she reaches adolescence, she continues to 'hate boys,' especially Mrs.Birdsong's ward, John Welch, a radical-thinking youth who enters medical school. She prefers older men, such as her grandfather and George, and during an emotional crisis, when Eva, whom she adores, is critically ill, she falls in love with George. He laughs at her feeling, and at her 18 years, but gradually begins to respond, in spite of himself. He insists that he will do 'nothing to hurt her,' and they are separated during the summer vacation, from which the Birdsongs return ill, weary, and verging on nervous collapse. Jenny Blair, overcome with the ardor of adolescent love, cannot keep away from George, and Eva surprises them in each other's arms. The girl flees into the garden, whence she is recalled by John Welch's frantic announcement of an 'accident': George has killed his wife and committed suicide.

SHELTON, FREDERICK WILLIAM (1815–81), Episcopal clergyman of New York, was also known as an author, beginning with *The Trollopiad; or, Travelling Gentleman in America* (1837), a verse satire on Mrs.Trollope, Captain Basil Hall, and other English critics of American life. *Up the River* (1853) is a series of letters on the New York countryside, while *Peeps from a Belfry; or, the Parish Sketch Book* (1855) is a description of a winter in Vermont. Both show his indebtedness to Irving, as do many of his uncollected magazine tales and essays. *Salander and the Dragon; a Romance of Hartz Prison* (1850) is an allegory in the vein of *Pilgrim's Progress*, and *The Rector of St.Bardolph's* (1853) is a quiet story of a country parson.

Shenandoah, play by Bronson Howard (q.v.), first unsuccessfully produced in 1888, but revived the following year with great success, and published in 1897.

Kerchival West, with his sister Madeline, visits his former West Point classmate, Robert Ellingham, and his sister Gertrude, in their Virginia home. Their two love affairs are interrupted when, at the outbreak of the Civil War, Kerchival becomes a colonel in the Union army and Robert attains the same rank in the Confederate army. When they next meet, Robert has become a prisoner, Gertrude has been captured as a spy and brought before Kerchival, and Madeline has come to comfort Gertrude. Kerchival is wounded by Gertrude's accomplice, Captain Thornton, who to save himself tells the Union commander, General Haverhill, that Kerchival has been Mrs.Haverhill's lover. This is believed, because Kerchival possesses Mrs.Haverhill's locket, but he accounts for this when he proves that he obtained it from the young soldier, Frank Bedloe, who turns out to be the disguised son of Haverhill. Robert is exchanged for Bedloe, Bedloe is killed, Kerchival recovers to help resist a Confederate attack, and with the end of the war the two couples are reunited.

SHEPARD, THOMAS (1605–49), educated at Cambridge, became a preacher in England until banned for his puritanism, when he went to New England (1635). Here he became pastor of the church at Cambridge and was one of the leaders in New England religious and intellectual life. He was instrumental in the founding of Harvard, was one of the leaders of the synod (1637) that condemned Anne Hutchinson and the Antinomians, was prominent in the conversion of the Indians, and helped draft the Cambridge Platform. He was a tireless worker, and in his preaching and writing was an outstanding though typical representative of the New England Calvinists. His most popular work, *The Sincere Convert* (1642), was frequently reprinted, and was translated into the Indian language by John Eliot (1689). In it he preaches a gospel of love and infinite compassion, indicating that anyone might be saved if he would open his heart to God. His other works include: *The Clear Sun-shine of the Gospel Breaking Forth upon the Indians* (1648); *Theses Sabbaticae* (1649), rules for New England religious life; *The Parable of the Ten Virgins Opened and Applied* (1660); *Three Valuable Pieces* (1747), a posthumous collection containing a diary; and *The Autobiography of Thomas Shepard* (1832). His *Works* were published in three volumes (1853).

Shepherd, MATEEL, character in *The Story of a Country Town* (q.v.).

Shepherdson family, characters in *Huckleberry Finn* (q.v.).

SHERIDAN, PHILIP HENRY (1831–88), born in New York, graduated from West Point (1853), and served in the West before the outbreak of the Civil War, in which he became famous as a cavalry commander. He was prominent in such battles as Chickamauga and Chattanooga, but is remembered for clearing the way for Grant's advance with the Army of the Potomac, and later for his own campaigns in laying waste the Shenandoah Valley. In October 1864, while Sheridan was absent in conference with Grant, his forces at Cedar Creek were in danger of defeat by Early, but Sheridan rode 20 miles at breakneck speed from Winchester to turn defeat into a noted victory. This exploit is celebrated in T.B.Read's poem, 'Sheridan's Ride.' During the Reconstruction, Sheridan became notorious for his military rule of Texas and Louisiana, and in 1867 Johnson placed him in command of the Department of Missouri. He was U.S. military observer of the Franco-Prussian War, and in 1875 again served as military governor of Louisiana, where his rigorous suppression of opposition makes his name still reviled. For some time before his death he was in command of the U.S. Army. His *Personal Memoirs* were published in 1888, and among the biographies is one by Hergesheimer (1931).

Sheriffs of Bristol, see *Letter to the Sheriffs of Bristol.*

SHERMAN, FRANK DEMPSTER (1860–1916), professor of architecture and graphics at Columbia (1887–1916), who was known for his charming, witty, occasional verse, published in such books as *Lyrics for a Lute* (1890), *Little-Folk Lyrics* (1892), and *Lyrics of Joy* (1904). He frequently wrote under the pseudonym Felix Carmen. With J.K.Bangs he wrote *New Waggings of Old Tales* (1888). Clinton Scollard, with whom he had collaborated in *A Southern Flight* (1905), edited his collected *Poems* (1917).

SHERMAN, JOHN (1823–1900), Ohio Republican leader, member of Congress (1855–61) and the Senate (1861–77,1881–

97). Both in the Senate and as secretary of the treasury under Hayes (1877–81), he was distinguished as a financier, giving his name to the Sherman Silver Purchase Act (1890), which provided for the purchase and coinage of silver bullion to redeem treasury notes that were legal tender, and the Sherman Anti-Trust Act (1890), which declared illegal all combinations restraining trade or commerce among the states or with foreign nations. He was appointed secretary of state by McKinley (1897), but resigned within a year. He is sometimes considered to have been a prototype of Senator Ratcliffe, in Henry Adams's *Democracy*.

SHERMAN, Roger (1721–93), Connecticut statesman and conservative Revolutionary leader, served in the Continental Congress (1774–81,1783–4), signed the Constitution and the Articles of Association (1774), and helped to draft the Declaration of Independence and the Articles of Confederation.

SHERMAN, Stuart P[ratt] (1881–1926), after graduation from Williams College (1903) continued his studies at Harvard, where he fell under the influence of the New Humanism (q.v.) of Irving Babbitt, as may be observed in such works by Sherman as *Matthew Arnold: How to Know Him* (1917) and *On Contemporary Literature* (1917). His moderate conservatism, defense of the American Puritan tradition, and almost chauvinistic patriotism led him into many literary quarrels with such critics as H.L.Mencken. His change to a more liberal point of view may be traced through *Americans* (1922), *The Genius of America* (1923), *Points of View* (1924), and *Critical Woodcuts* (1926). He was a professor of English at the University of Illinois (1907–24), and edited the literary supplement of the New York *Herald-Tribune* (1924–6). He was an editor of the *Cambridge History of American Literature*. Jacob Zeitlin and Homer Woodbridge published his *Life and Letters* (2 vols.,1929).

SHERMAN, William Tecumseh (1820–91), Union general in the Civil War, led the western army in the general plan to split the South. After aiding Grant in the siege and capture of Vicksburg (q.v., 1863), and participating in several other successful engagements, he captured Atlanta (September 1864). He then removed the civilian population, burned the city, and with 60,000 soldiers began his famous 'march to the sea' to destroy the South's source of supply, in the hope of speedily terminating the war. After devastating the country between Atlanta and Savannah, he captured the latter city (Dec. 21), and a month later started his inexorable and destructive march northward through the Carolinas. Upon Grant's election to the presidency (1869), Sherman became supreme commander of the army, retiring in 1883. He is said to have spoken the famous phrase, 'War is hell,' in an address (1879) to the Michigan Military Academy, although there is some uncertainty concerning the actual first use of the phrase. His *Memoirs* were published in 1875.

SHERWOOD, Robert [Emmet] (1896–), New York dramatist, after graduation from Harvard (1918) and serving in the First World War, became a dramatic critic and later an editor of *Life* and *Scribner's Magazine*. His first play was *The Road to Rome* (1927), a comedy concerning Hannibal's march on Rome and his decision to turn from his goal, which served as a plea against war. This was followed by *The Love Nest* (q.v.,1927), dramatizing a story by Ring Lardner, and *The Queen's Husband* (1928), a comedy about a timid king who assumes power during the absence of his queen. *Waterloo Bridge* (1930), set in London during the World War, is concerned with a chorus girl turned prostitute, who, in order to preserve the chivalric ideals of a doughboy, refuses to give herself to him. After a melodrama, *This Is New York* (1930), Sherwood returned to comedy with *Reunion in Vienna* (1931), presenting a nostalgic assembly of the exiled Hapsburgs, at which is revived the love of Prince Maximilian Rudolph and his former mistress, Elena. He now spent several years in Hollywood and England, writing for motion pictures, but in 1935 produced *The Petrified Forest* (q.v.), a melodramatic play concerned with frustrated lives during a period of social transition, and the following year won the Pulitzer Prize with *Idiot's Delight* (q.v.), a dramatic setting of a plea for world peace. After *Tovarich* (1936), a comedy adapted from the French, he was awarded the Pulitzer Prize again, this time for *Abe Lincoln in Illinois* (q.v.,1938), concerned with Lincoln's early years and his preparation for his life work. *There Shall Be No Night*

(1940; Pulitzer Prize 1941) deals with the Russian attack on Finland, and its consequences in altering the attitude of a liberal Finnish scientist. Sherwood has also written a novel, *The Virtuous Knight* (1931).

SHILLABER, BENJAMIN PENHALLOW (1814–90), Boston author and printer, in 1847 created the character of Mrs.Partington for a newspaper on which he was employed. This character, a small town Yankee Mrs.Malaprop, who discourses amiably and ignorantly about gardening, pets, Calvinism, and current events, and is ever baffled by her mischievous nephew, Ike, became popular in such books as *Life and Sayings of Mrs.Partington* (1854), *Mrs. Partington's Knitting Work* (1859), *Partingtonian Patchwork* (1873), and *Mrs. Partington's Grab Bag* (1893). Shillaber founded a humorous weekly, *The Carpet-Bag* (q.v.,1851–3), which was important in developing the new school of American humor and for printing the first work of Clemens. Critics have discovered that Clemens was indebted to Mrs.Partington for his character Aunt Polly. In turn Shillaber was accused of having taken the character from Sydney Smith. Although he denied this, he admitted that the name came from the Englishman's allusion to Dame Partington, whose attempt to brush away the Atlantic Ocean had been compared in a speech (1831) with the opposition of the House of Lords to the progress of reform.

Shiloh, BATTLE OF (also BATTLE OF PITTSBURG LANDING), fought in southwestern Tennessee (April 6–7, 1862). The Union forces under Grant and Buell were preparing to unite in an offensive drive on Corinth, when the Confederates under Johnston and Beauregard made a surprise attack that turned into a fierce but indecisive battle.

Shimerda, ÁNTONIA, heroine of *My Ántonia* (q.v.).

SHIRLEY, WILLIAM (1694–1771), born in England and educated at Cambridge, emigrated to Boston (1731), where he became a member of the judiciary, upholding the imperial view and obviously working to ingratiate himself with the home government. He was rewarded with the governorship of Massachusetts (1741), in which he distinguished himself by a sound settlement of the colony's finances and uniting the other New England colonies in aggressive action during the French and Indian Wars, in which Sir William Pepperrell, his appointee as head of the army, won a notable victory by capturing the French garrison of Louisburg (1745). Shirley's account was contained in *A Journal of the Siege of Louisbourg* (1746). While in London (1749–53), he helped settle the French and English boundary line, but returned to pursue the war, in which, after the death of Braddock (1755), he was the military commander. His unsuccessful military campaigns and unpopular attempt to usurp authority caused him to be recalled (1756). His *Correspondence* was published in 2 volumes (1912).

Shooting of Dan McGrew, The, poem by Robert Service (q.v.).

Shore Acres, play by James A. Herne (q.v.), produced in 1893 as a revision of his play, *The Hawthornes* (1889). It is primarily a character study of the homespun philosopher, 'Uncle Nat' Berry, who circumvents the plans of his younger brother, Martin, to sell the old homestead in Maine and prohibit the marriage of their niece, Helen, to Dr.Sam Warren. Martin objects to the doctor because of his 'free-thinkin' ideas.' Although containing a melodramatic scene of the elopement of Helen, the play is mainly distinguished for its quiet realism.

SHORT, BOB, pseudonym of A.B.Longstreet (q.v.).

'Short Sixes': Stories to be Read While the Candle Burns, 13 tales by H.C.Bunner (q.v.) published in 1891.

'Col. Brereton's Aunty' tells of an absurd, hot-tempered little Southerner who comes to live in a small town in New York. His public pose is ironically contrasted with the fact that his faithful old Negro servingwoman keeps him from drinking and other misbehavior by regular spankings. 'A Round-Up' tells of a small town belle to whom eight men proposed during one week. She married a ninth, a ne'er-do-well who deserted her, but at her death, years later, amazes and upsets the town's social set by requesting her eight former admirers to be pallbearers at her funeral. 'The Love-Letters of Smith' describes the odd romance of a retired seaman and a middle-aged seamstress, who occupy adjoining rooms in a boarding-house. Smith, extremely shy and diffident, will not speak to his beloved, but passes brief, confiden-

tial notes, along with mugs of porter, from his window to hers. Finally he proposes in a formal letter, and, on being accepted, has his first personal contact with his fond but amused correspondent.

Shoshone Indians, primitive Northwestern tribe, sometimes erroneously called Snake Indians, which gave its name to a great linguistic family of various cultures, scattered through Montana, Wyoming, New Mexico, Texas, Oregon, and California. The Shoshonean tribes include the Comanche, Ute, Paiute, Hopi, Bannock, and Mission Indians. The Shoshone figure in books by Joaquin Miller, the Mission Indians in Helen Hunt Jackson's *Ramona* and Mary Austin's *Isidro*, and the Paiute in Mrs.Austin's *Land of Little Rain*.

'Show Me' State, popular name of Missouri, referring to the supposed skepticism of its residents.

Showboats, floating theaters that give performances at waterfront towns. Such companies of strolling players were known early in the American occupation of the Mississippi Basin, and performed on canal boats, flatboats, and keelboats. Later troupes, with more elegant accommodations on Ohio and Mississippi River steamboats, continued to present melodramas and variety shows, and there were also floating circuses and minstrel shows. The Chapman family, well known during the 1830's, were among the outstanding showboat actors. The main period of the showboats was during the 19th century, but they continue to exist, and an antiquarian interest has recently led to their revival and that of their early productions. The literature concerned with this form of theater includes Edna Ferber's novel, *Show Boat* (1926), adapted as an operetta by the author and Jerome Kern.

Show-Off, The, comedy by George Kelly (q.v.).

Shriners, name generally given to the Ancient Arabic Order of the Nobles of the Mystic Shrine for North America, which was founded shortly after 1870 by W.J. Florence, an American comedian who had been received into the real order at Cairo, and which gives the basis for the statement by the American organization that it is a branch of the society founded in Arabia in 656. Members must be either Knights Templar or Scottish Rite Masons, though there is no organic connection with the Masons. Wearing flamboyant costumes, the members have as their primary purpose 'to plant smiles in a world too full of sorrow and to make laughing a science.'

SHUTE, HENRY AUGUSTUS (1856–), author of *The Real Diary of a Real Boy* (1902) and other humorous narratives largely concerned with the psychology and exploits of the 'real' boys, Plupy, Beany, and Pewt.

SIDNEY, EDWARD WILLIAM, pseudonym of N.B.Tucker (q.v.).

SIDNEY, MARGARET, pseudonym of Harriet Lothrop (q.v.).

Siege of London, The, novelette by Henry James (q.v.), the title story of a volume published in 1883.

Nancy Headway, several times married and divorced and now a wealthy widow, leaves the western U.S. to exert her fascination in Europe, the constant goal of her vulgar ambition. Notorious throughout the West, she is snubbed in New York, and her dearest hope is to annoy her detractors by a social success in Paris and London. She attracts Sir Arthur Demesne, a weak, cautious, but romantically inclined English Tory, who follows her about without being able to decide to marry her. She meets a former Western acquaintance, Mr.Littlemore, who introduces her to his friend, Waterville, an undersecretary of the U.S. ministry in London. Through these two she tries to establish contacts in British society, and finally, though she arouses the enmity of Sir Arthur's careful mother, she becomes popular because of her naïvete and fresh humor. Lady Demesne appeals to Littlemore and Waterville to disclose their knowledge of Mrs.Headway's past, but, though she wrests from Littlemore the admission that Nancy is 'not respectable,' the young woman triumphs, marrying her baronet and continuing to be a novel and slightly scandalous social celebrity.

SIEGFRIED, ANDRÉ (1875–), French educator, traveler, and author, best known in the U.S. for *America Comes of Age* (1927), analyzing social, political, economic, and intellectual institutions. Considered to be among the best interpretations of the modern U.S. by a foreign observer, the work questions especially the relation between technological achieve-

ment and the incidental social standardization and loss of spiritual values.

SIGOURNEY, Lydia Huntley (1791–1865), Connecticut poetaster whose sentimental and pious verses were enormously popular, winning her the title 'the Mrs.Hemans of America.' Her lugubrious preoccupation with death caused her to look at every sick child as a potential angel, and she so consistently wrote melancholy verses on the decease of any prominent person that an elegy from her pen seemed as natural a sequence to death as interment. She wrote some 60 books, ranging from *Moral Pieces in Prose and Verse* (1815) to an autobiography, *Letters of Life* (1866). In addition to editing religious and juvenile publications, she was also a pioneer in the cause of higher education for women.

SILL, Edward Rowland (1841–87), born in Connecticut, graduated from Yale (1861) and attempted to fortify his frail health by following Dana's example in making a sea voyage around the Horn to California. During the ensuing years he held various odd jobs, read law, and studied medicine, returning East to study at the Harvard Divinity School and try his hand at New York journalism. In 1868 he published *The Hermitage and Other Poems*, the only volume of his verse issued publicly during his lifetime. After teaching school in Ohio and California, he became a professor of English at the University of California (1874–82), where he showed that, though not a great scholar, he was a man of wide culture, brilliant insight, and high spiritual quality. His last years were spent in Ohio, where he contributed essays and poems to magazines under the pseudonym Andrew Hedbrooke, and in 1883 privately issued *The Venus of Milo and Other Poems*. His collected *Poems* (1902) are marked by a classic finish and a stoic idealistic spirit in face of the problems of religious skepticism which racked his mind. His collected *Prose* (1900) contains charming treatments of slight literary subjects.

SILLIMAN, Benjamin (1779–1864), professor of chemistry and natural history at Yale (1802–53), during his lifetime was considered the most prominent American scientist. He was the founder and first editor of *The American Journal of Science* (1818–), and in addition to his scholarly work was popular as a lecturer on scientific subjects. His son-in-law, James Dwight Dana, continued his work.

Benjamin Silliman (1816–85), his son, also continued his father's broad scientific activities, although as a Yale professor (1837–85) he was primarily interested in chemistry.

Silver Cord, The, play by Sidney Howard (q.v.), produced in 1926 and published in 1927.

Mrs.Phelps, the widowed mother of David and Robert, has a pathological love for her sons that passes the maternal and causes her to employ every possible means to hold their love and destroy any attachment they may have for others. Her constant threatening and wheedling causes the younger son, Robert, to remain faithful to her, even though it means the breaking of his engagement with Hester, who in her desperation attempts suicide. David is nearly captured, but his stronger will, bolstered by that of his wife, Christina, permits him to escape from the silver cord of a mother fixation after Christina has finally made clear the nature of his mother's influence.

Silver Spoon, The, play by Joseph S. Jones (q.v.).

Silver Stallion, The, romance by Cabell (q.v.).

Silverado Squatters, The, autobiographical narrative by Stevenson (q.v.) published in 1883. Written after the author's return to Europe (1882), it describes his trip, with his bride and his stepson Lloyd Osbourne, from San Francisco through the Napa Valley to Calistoga, and their sojourn (June–July 1880) in a shanty at the deserted mining town of Silverado, on Mt. St.Helena in central California. The book is notable for its character sketches of the Hansons, who were the Stevensons' only neighbors at Silverado; Mr.Kelmar, the shrewd, good-natured Jewish merchant who directed them there; and other people of the countryside; as well as for realistic descriptions of the picturesque scene of their mountain idyl.

SIMMS, William Gilmore (1806–70), Charleston author, began his literary career by writing romantic verse in the vein of Byron, who strongly influenced the local literary standards that Simms earnestly tried to meet. He began to write novels during a brief visit to the North, but his first work, ***Martin Faber*** (q.v.,

1833), a psychological study of a criminal, was not indicative of his talents, for he made his reputation with romances of the frontier and South Carolina history. *Guy Rivers* (q.v.,1834), which he called the first of his 'regular novels,' dealt with the life of Georgia desperadoes. *The Yemassee* (q.v., 1835) is a story of Indian warfare in his own state, and *The Partisan* (q.v.,1835), also set there, is a romance of the Revolution. Thus, within two years, Simms had begun writing of the three different subjects for which he is noted. In the vein of *Guy Rivers* followed a series known as the Border Romances, concerned with colonial and 19th century life in the South, which includes *Richard Hurdis* (q.v., 1838), *Border Beagles* (q.v.,1840), *Beauchampe* (q.v.,1842), *Helen Halsey; or, the Swamp State of Conelachita* (1845), *Charlemont* (q.v.,1856), *Voltmeier; or, the Mountain Men* (1869), and *The Cub of the Panther, A Mountain Legend* (1869). Generally included with the Border Romances are *The Yemassee* and his other depictions of Indians, *The Cassique of Kiawah* (1859), a novel, and *The Wigwam and the Cabin* (q.v.,1845–6). *The Partisan* was the first of a series known as the Revolutionary Romances, dealing with life in the South during the Revolution and centering about the activities of Marion, Greene, and other generals. Among these books are *Mellichampe* (q.v.,1836); *The Kinsmen* (1841), revised as *The Scout* (q.v.,1854); *Katharine Walton* (q.v.,1851); *The Sword and the Distaff* (1853), revised as *Woodcraft* (1854); *The Forayers* (q.v.,1855); and *Eutaw* (q.v.,1856). *Joscelyn, a Tale of the Revolution* (1857) is not usually considered one of the series. Two of the Border Romances, *Beauchampe* and *Charlemont*, form a sequence dealing with the Kentucky Tragedy (q.v.), and show Simms tending toward the psychological interest of his first novel. He also made unsuccessful attempts to deal with Spanish backgrounds in *Pelayo* (1838) and its sequel, *Count Julian* (1845). *The Damsel of Darien* (1839) is concerned with Balboa, and *Vasconselos* (1853) deals with Mexican history. Simms, who was tremendously proud of South Carolina, and particularly of genteel, conservative Charleston, was, as the son of a poor storekeeper, snubbed by the social oligarchy, and yet remained loyal to the local taboos. The more he was slighted, the more he defended the society. Writing romances was an insufficient means of expressing his local patriotism, and he tried also to make himself a typical South Carolina litterateur by editing such magazines as *The Southern Quarterly Review* (1856–7), and *The Southern and Western Monthly Magazine* (1845), writing a *History* (1840) and a *Geography* (1843) of the state, and biographies of Francis Marion (1844), John Smith (1846), the Chevalier Bayard (1847), and Nathaniel Greene (1849), as well as delivering orations and writing essays, which began with the academic championing of slavery and in time became bitter denunciations of Northern attacks. His blind adoration of local economic, political, and social standards is considered to have damaged the innate realism of his novels. The leading characters are generally more aristocratic than vital, and it is only in the secondary figures, the low-life characters, among whom is included his Falstaffian creation, Captain Porgy, that he presents fully rounded figures. Because of his two great themes, the frontier and the Revolution, he is invariably called a Southern Cooper, and he does resemble the New York novelist in his themes, fluent romantic style, use of stock figures, and melodramatic plots. Though he fails to attain the poetic quality of Cooper's depictions of nature, he seldom betrays such obvious faults as those of the Northerner. If he did not create a character comparable to Natty Bumppo, or a series comparable to the Leatherstocking Tales, he was in general a more accurate delineator of life, capable of creating realistic detail in a wide romantic panorama.

Simon Legree, villain in *Uncle Tom's Cabin* (q.v.).

SIMONSON, Lee (1888–), after studying painting, became a member of the Washington Square Players (1915) and began his career as a stage designer. He has become an important figure in the U.S.theater through his sets for such plays as *Liliom*, *The Goat Song*, *Back to Methuselah*, *Peer Gynt*, and *Amphitryon* 38.

Simple Cobbler of Aggawam, The, satirical work by Nathaniel Ward (q.v.), published under the pseudonym Theodore de la Guard (London, 1647), Theodore being the Greek equivalent of the Hebrew Nathaniel, and de la Guard a free French rendering of Ward. Aggawam was the original name of Ipswich, Massachusetts,

and the sobriquet 'simple cobler' is explained in the subtitle: 'Willing to help 'mend his Native Country, lamentably tattered, both in the upper-Leather and sole, with all the honest stitches he can take.' The book is a partisan denunciation of undue tolerance in England and New England, of the strife between Parliament and Charles I, and of the frivolity of women and foppish fashions of men. In the style of a belated Euphuist, Ward grumbles sincerely but wittily concerning all his particular dislikes. His manner recalls the full-blooded Elizabethan pamphleteers, such as Nashe, Harvey, and Greene.

SIMS, WILLIAM SOWDEN (1858–1936), after a long career in the Navy, was placed in command of American operations in European waters during the World War, and became president of the Naval War College (1919). He retired as a rear admiral (1922). With B.J.Hendrick he wrote *The Victory at Sea* (1920; Pulitzer Prize, 1921).

Sincere Convert, The, tract by Thomas Shepard (q.v.).

SINCLAIR, UPTON [BEALL] (1878–), born in Baltimore of a prominent but impoverished family, began writing dime novels at the age of 15 in order to pay his way through the College of the City of New York. While doing post-graduate work at Columbia, he wrote six novels, among them *King Midas* (1901), *The Journal of Arthur Stirling* (1903), and *Manassas* (1904). The tone of these early works is suggested by Sinclair himself, who says that Jesus, Hamlet, and Shelley shaped his thought, and that he was disillusioned when the world did not meet him with the love and trust with which he approached it. After participating in an investigation of the Chicago stockyards, he wrote *The Jungle* (q.v.,1906), in which he first indicated his conversion to Socialism. The earnings from his books were later invested in his co-operative colony, The Helicon Home Colony (q.v.) at Englewood, New Jersey, and, after his removal to California (1915), in four unsuccessful campaigns for public office. In 1934 he united large sections of the unemployed and progressive elements in an EPIC league (End Poverty in California), which captured the Democratic party machinery, nearly won him the governorship, and may have aided one of his followers, Culbert L. Olson, in becoming Democratic governor in 1938. Sinclair is a prolific writer, having published between 1901 and 1940 more than 100 separate works, ranging from topical pamphlets, social studies, boys' books, and studies in health, religion, and mental telepathy, to novels, short stories, and plays. The most important of these include: *The Metropolis* (1908), describing the morals of a society created by the accumulation of great fortunes; *King Coal* (q.v.,1917); *The Profits of Religion* (1918), contending that organized religions are a capitalist tool in teaching the poor that God has allotted them their humble positions; *Jimmie Higgins* (1919), a pacifist novel; *The Brass Check* (q.v.,1919); *100%, the Story of a Patriot* (1920); *The Goose-step* (1923), a study of higher education in the U.S.; *The Goslings* (1924), concerned with American schools; *Oil!* (q.v.,1927); *Boston* (q.v.,1928); *Mountain City* (1930); *American Outpost* (1932), an autobiography; *Upton Sinclair Presents William Fox* (1933), a study of high finance in motion pictures; *The Flivver King* (1937), a study of labor conditions in the automobile industry; *World's End* (1940), a novel of the First World War, exposing the munitions industry and dollar diplomacy, as well as the confused background of the peace conference, and a sequel, *Between Two Worlds* (1941). Sinclair's various pseudonyms have included Clarke Fitch, Frederick Garrison, and Arthur Stirling.

Sing Sing (OSSINING), village on the Hudson River north of New York City, the site of a state prison for men (founded 1826).

SINGER, ISAAC MERRITT, see *Howe, Elias.*

Single Hound, The, 146 brief poems by Emily Dickinson (q.v.), posthumously edited and published by her niece, Martha Dickinson Bianchi (1914). The selection consists largely of verses sent with flowers or messages to 'Sister Sue,' Emily's sister-in-law and next-door neighbor, Susan Gilbert Dickinson. Besides several poems expressing her warm friendship for her sister-in-law, there is a lyric on the death of Elizabeth Barrett Browning. The title of the volume is derived from the first poem:

> Adventure most unto itself
> The Soul condemned to be;
> Attended by a Single Hound—
> Its own Identity.

Many of the verses are metaphysical or religious meditations, concerned with the poet's ecstatic personal concepts of the Deity and natural phenomena. Others combine gay fantasy with a mystical transcendental attitude toward Biblical subjects, birds, flowers, the seasons, and the constellations, all in her characteristically delicate, elliptical, metaphoric manner.

Single Tax, see *Progress and Poverty*.

SINGMASTER, ELSIE (1879–), Pennsylvania author, whose many novels about Pennsylvania-Dutch life include: *Katy Gaumer* (1914); *Basil Everman* (1920); *Ellen Levis* (1921); *Keller's Anna Ruth* (1926); and *The Young Ravenels* (1932).

Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God, sermon by Jonathan Edwards (q.v.), delivered in 1741 at Enfield, Massachusetts, and published the same year. This fervid, imprecatory sermon was his most famous single contribution to the exposition of God's vindictive justice and man's natural corruption, and its vivid presentation had a strong effect in connection with the Great Awakening.

Sioux (or DAKOTA) **Indians,** confederation of tribes that originally occupied much territory in the present states of Wisconsin, Minnesota, and the Dakotas, and smaller sections in Virginia and the Carolinas. The Siouan linguistic family was the most numerous among the Plains Indians, and included the Assiniboin, Mandan, Hidatsa, Crow, Omaha, Osage, and other tribes. The Sioux proper were friendly with the English, aiding them in the Revolution and the War of 1812. After several unsuccessful treaties, they rose under Little Crow (1862) and massacred more than 800 Minnesota settlers. In a subsequent revolt, when gold prospectors overran their Dakota reservation, the Sioux were led by such chiefs as Sitting Bull and Crazy Horse (qq.v.) against Custer (q.v.), whose forces they annihilated. They were finally quelled in 1891. In Cooper's *The Prairie*, the Sioux figure as the 'Ishmaelites of the American deserts,' and they appear in Neihardt's *Song of the Indian Wars*, Garland's *The Captain of the Gray Horse Troop*, and *The Song of Hiawatha*. Parkman describes the Sioux in *The Oregon Trail*, as does W.J.Snelling in his *Tales of the Northwest*.

Sister Carrie, novel by Dreiser (q.v.). The first edition was printed in 1900 but was withheld from circulation by the publisher because of the supposed immorality of the subject. The book was not publicly issued until 1912.

Carrie Meeber, penniless and 'full of the illusions of ignorance and youth,' leaves her rural home to seek work in Chicago, and becomes acquainted with Charles Drouet, a salesman who impresses her by his seeming worldliness and affluence. In Chicago she lives with her sister and brother-in-law, and works for a time at jobs that pay little and oppress her lively, imaginative spirit. Then, after a period of unemployment and desperate loneliness, she allows Drouet to establish her as his mistress, and finds temporary happiness with him. She becomes aware of his inferiority, however, and during his frequent absences falls under the influence of his friend, George Hurstwood, middle-aged, married, and comparatively intelligent and cultured, who is the manager of a celebrated bar. They finally elope, first to Montreal and then to New York, where he opens a saloon, and they live together for more than three years. During this time Carrie grows in intellectual and emotional stature, while Hurstwood, away from the atmosphere of success and elegance on which his life has been based, steadily declines in assurance. When they are impoverished, their relations become strained, until Carrie goes on the stage and begins to support Hurstwood, rising from the chorus to minor acting parts. At last she deserts him, feeling that he is too great a burden, since he has not tried to obtain work except for a brief time as a strikebreaker during a trolley strike. Carrie becomes a star of musical comedies, but in spite of her success and wealth she is lonely and dissatisfied. Without her knowledge, Hurstwood sinks lower and lower, and after becoming a beggar, commits suicide.

Sisters, The, novel by Myron Brinig (q.v.).

SITTING BULL (1834?–90), Sioux chief who was on the warpath almost continually after 1866. When a punitive expedition was sent against his tribes, Sitting Bull was instrumental in annihilating the forces of Custer at the battle of Little Big Horn in Montana Territory (June 25, 1876). He later went to Canada, but came back and was killed near Fort Yates,

N.Dak., while trying to escape arrest. He appears as the central figure in Hamlin Garland's 'The Silent Eaters,' in his *Book of the American Indian* (1923), and in Neihardt's *Song of the Indian Wars* (1925).

Six Nations, see *Iroquois.*

Sixes and Sevens, stories by W.S.Porter (q.v.).

Sketch Book, The, familiar essays and tales by Irving (q.v.), written under the pseudonym Geoffrey Crayon,Gent., published serially in the U.S. (1819–20) and in book form in England (1820). The genial humor and graceful style of the work made it immediately successful both in the U.S. and abroad, where American authors were not yet recognized. Most of the sketches are concerned with his observations as an American visitor in England, notably such chapters as those on 'Westminster Abbey,' 'The Christmas Dinner,' 'Stratford-on-Avon,' 'John Bull,' and 'The Stage-Coach'; but six chapters deal with American scenes. Of these, 'Rip Van Winkle' and 'The Legend of Sleepy Hollow' (qq.v.) are adaptations of German folk tales to the New York backgrounds of Diedrich Knickerbocker; 'English Writers of America' opposes the criticisms of the U.S. by British tourists; 'Traits of Indian Character' is a romantic defense of the American tribes, based mainly on the concept of the 'noble savage'; 'Philip of Pokanoket' is an account of King Philip; and 'The Angler' is a whimsical self-exposure of the author as preferring to read Isaak Walton rather than pursue the art of angling in person on the highlands of the Hudson.

Sketch Club, see *Bread and Cheese Club* and *Century Association.*

SKILTON, Charles Sanford (1868–1941), Massachusetts-born composer and professor of music at the University of Kansas from 1903, is best known for his compositions on American Indian themes, which include the symphonic *Indian Dances* and *Suite Primeval,* and the operas *Kalopin* and *The Sun Bride.*

SKINNER, Constance Lindsay (1879–1939), Canadian-born author, whose novels about the frontier life of the Far North include *Builder of Men* (published only in Germany, 1913), *Good Morning, Rosamond* (1917, dramatized the same year), *The Search Relentless* (1925), and *Red Willows* (1929). For the Yale Chronicles of America she wrote *Pioneers of the Old Southwest* (1919) and *Adventures in Oregon* (1919), and her other works include *Songs of the Coast Dwellers* (1930), a book of Indian poems, and *Beaver, Kings, and Cabins* (1933), a history of the American fur trade. In addition to writing many children's books, she was editor of the Rivers of America Series, an interpretation of American history in terms of its rivers and the people who were associated with them.

SKINNER, Otis (1858–), actor celebrated for his romantic roles, monologues, and playing of Falstaff in *The Merry Wives of Windsor.* He edited Edwin Booth's letters, with a biographical commentary, as *The Last Tragedian* (1939).

Cornelia Otis Skinner (1901–), his daughter, is noted for her monologues and her solo performances of such plays as *The Wives of Henry VIII* and her own adaptation of Margaret Ayer Barnes's *Edna His Wife.* She is also an author of humorous books.

Skinner, name given during the Revolutionary War to lawless marauders who pillaged neutral territory, being supposedly favorable to the rebel cause. Those who favored the Loyalists were called 'Cowboys.' The name has since been given colloquially to drivers, i.e. a mule skinner is one who drives mules.

Skipper Ireson's Ride, ballad by Whittier (q.v.) written in 1828, revised and published in the *Atlantic Monthly* (1857) and reprinted in *Home Ballads* (1860). It tells of the women in the fishing village of Marblehead, Massachusetts, and their vengeance on 'Old Floyd Ireson, for his hard heart, Tarred and feathered and carried in a cart,' because he deserted the wreck of his ship in Chaleur Bay, leaving his Marblehead sailors to drown. After the poem was published, Whittier learned that his version was inaccurate, as Ireson was innocent of the act attributed to him.

Skyscraper, steel frame building that, with comparatively little ground space, extends upward to a great height. This type of building was developed in the U.S. during the last quarter of the 19th century, when overcrowded city conditions made economic utilization of space necessary, and was made possible by new technical means of construction and the improvement of elevators. Major William Le Baron Jenney, in the Home Insurance

Building (Chicago, 1883), executed the first metal skeleton construction that supported both walls and floors. With the Tacoma Building (Chicago, 1887), Holabird and Roche transferred the entire weight of external covering to the metal framework, while Burnham and Root contemporaneously developed steel to replace cast or wrought iron. While technical potentialities of skyscraper construction were almost completely evolved by 1890, it was some time before architects developed a logical style that recognized the new materials at their disposal. L.H.Sullivan (q.v.), in the Wainwright Building (St.Louis, 1890), was the first to express the underlying steel construction with form and decoration dependent upon functionalism, while most architects, continuing to deny the architectural revolution, superimposed Gothic, Romanesque, or Classical motifs upon the modern construction. Noteworthy skyscrapers of the early 20th century are The Metropolitan Life Insurance Building (New York, 1906–9), designed by Le Brun on an Italian campanile form; the colonnaded and turreted New York Municipal Building (1912), by McKim, Mead, and White; the Flatiron Building (1902); the 57-story Woolworth Building (1911–13), decorated with Gothic motifs by its architect, Cass Gilbert (q.v.); and the Chicago Tribune Tower (1922), in which Howell and Hood employed a Gothic style. Among the recent skyscrapers with distinctly modern style are the Daily News Building (New York, 1930), by Raymond Hood; the Empire State Building, by Shreve, Lamb, and Harmon; the McGraw-Hill Building (New York, 1932), by Raymond Hood; the Philadelphia Saving Fund Society Building (1932), by Howe and Lescaze; and the Rockefeller Center Tower, by Hood, Harrison, and others. Among the highest New York skyscrapers are the Empire State Building (102 stories, 1248 feet); Chrysler Building (77 stories, 1046 feet); and Rockfeller Center (70 stories, 850 feet).

Slabs of the Sunburnt West, poems by Sandburg (q.v.).

SLATER, SAMUEL (1768–1835), English-born cotton manufacturer who, after learning the business with Richard Arkwright and his partner Jedediah Strutt, memorized the plan of the English textile works and emigrated to America in disguise (1789). The mills that he founded in the U.S. marked the beginnings of cotton manufacturing there and the breaking of the English monopoly, which had prohibited the emigration of workers and the opportunity to learn about manufacturing methods.

Slaughterhouse cases, see *Field, Stephen.*

Slave, The, novel by Richard Hildreth (q.v.).

Slavery in America may be traced to the earliest explorers. Columbus took some 500 Indian prisoners to Spain (1494), where, except for Queen Isabella's intercession, they would have been sold into slavery. Indian slavery was practiced by later Spanish explorers, and on the advice of Las Casas, who later regretted the move, Spanish residents in Haiti, Cuba, Jamaica, and Puerto Rico imported Negro slaves from Africa through Portuguese merchants. English slave traders also supplied the Spanish colonies, and, after a Dutch ship brought a few Africans to Jamestown (1619), British colonists began to import Negroes for field labor on cotton, rice, and tobacco plantations. The number of Negro slaves was small until late in the century, although the practice spread to some extent to all colonies. By 1790 Virginia alone had some 200,000 Negroes, and the total brought to British colonies in America and the West Indies, between 1680 and 1786, has been estimated at 2,130,000. Indian slavery became less common as Negro slavery increased, although captives during the Pequot War and King Philip's War were enslaved, and the practice was known as late as 1836, when many of the Creeks forced to move west were taken into slavery in Alabama. Despite the agitation of Quakers and other humanitarians in England and America against slave trading, it continued until the U.S. forbade its citizens to engage in the trade (1794); the importation of African slaves was prohibited in 1808, the year in which England also abolished slave trading. Nevertheless, smuggling was long common, and it has been estimated that 2,000,000 Negroes were illegally smuggled into the U.S. Virtually all slaves in Northern states were freed (1777–1804), and there arose a strong Abolitionist movement (q.v.), particularly after the emancipation of Negroes in English colonies (1833). Prior to the Missouri Compromise, Southerners defended slavery mainly as

necessary economic evil guaranteed by the Constitution, and on such grounds as the danger of race conflict arising from emancipation. The colonization of Liberia, a West African republic founded to repatriate Negro slaves (1822ff.), was substantially aided by Southerners. With the growth of sectional strife, marked by the annexation of Texas, the Fugitive Slave Law, the Compromise of 1850, the Kansas-Nebraska Bill, and the Dred Scott decision, such Southern leaders as Calhoun, Yancey, and Ruffin were moved to vitriolic defense of 'King Cotton,' and the idea arose that slavery was a positive good. The primary arguments were that slavery was sanctioned by the Bible, that all great civilizations had depended on slavery, that economically the U.S. needed slavery, that the superior white race would be endangered by emancipation, and that, for the Negro, slavery was a step from barbarism toward civilization. Literary apologists for the institution were many at this time, including Simms, DeBow, George Fitzhugh, Timrod, Legaré, N.B. Tucker, and William J. Grayson. The Northern victory in the Civil War insured the end of slavery, which was abolished in the territories (1862), in the South by the Emancipation Proclamation (1863), and throughout the U.S. by the 13th Amendment (1865). (See *Negroes in America* and *Abolitionist.*)

Slaves in Algiers, or a Struggle for Freedom, first and only surviving comic opera by Susanna Rowson (q.v.), produced and published in 1794. It is concerned with the barbarities practiced by Tripolitan pirates upon American citizens, prior to the Tripolitan War.

Sleepy Hollow, see *Sunnyside* and *Legend of Sleepy Hollow.*

Slick, SAM, see *Sam Slick.*

SLIDELL, JOHN, see *Trent Affair.*

SLOAN, JOHN (1871–), born in Pennsylvania, moved to New York (1905) where he became a member of 'The Eight' (q.v.) and a painter of the contemporary scene. In his numerous etchings, lithographs, and well-painted canvases, he shows a starkly honest and frequently ironical attitude toward everyday New York life. As an illustrator for numerous magazines, sponsor of the Armory Show (1913), a founder of the Society of Independent Artists (1917), and teacher and president of the Art Students' League (1918–), he has exerted influence on younger American painters, emphasizing artistic freedom and vigorous realism. His later landscapes and nudes show a new interest in æsthetic problems. *Gist of Art* (1939) is a critical work based on his lectures.

SLOAT, JOHN DRAKE (1781–1867), naval officer, served in the War of 1812 and the suppression of piracy, and was made commander of the Pacific squadron (1844). In this capacity he occupied California (July 7, 1846), proclaiming it part of the U.S., when the outbreak of the Mexican War caused him to fear that the Mexicans would seize the newly created Bear Flag Republic. Immediately thereafter, he transferred the command to Commodore Stockton.

Small Boy and Others, A, autobiographical narrative by Henry James (q.v.), published in 1913. Originally intending 'to place together some particulars of the early life of William James and present him in his setting,' the author found, he says, that 'To knock at the door of the past was . . . to see it open to me quite wide—to see the world within begin to "compose" . . . round the primary figure, see it people itself vividly and insistently.' This account, consequently, is a richly detailed narrative, vivacious and revealing, of the boyhood experiences of the celebrated brothers, their family circle, and the cosmopolitan background that formed their minds, from the period of James's earliest recollections to the year 1859. The narrative is continued in *Notes of a Son and Brother* (q.v.,1914).

Small Town Man, A, narrative by Mary Austin (q.v.).

SMALLEY, GEORGE WASHBURN (1833–1916), journalist who was famous for his first-hand reports to the New York *Tribune* of the Civil War, the Austro-Prussian War, and the Franco-Prussian War. He was connected with the London *Times* (1895–1905), where he did much to further the cause of Anglo-American amity. His books include *London Letters* (1891), *Studies of Men* (1895), and *Anglo-American Memories* (1911,1912).

Smart Set, The (1890–1930), monthly magazine founded by William D'Alton Mann as a journal for New York society, by whose members it was primarily writ-

ten. Under the editorship of Arthur Grissom and C.H.Towne, it grew beyond its original plan to become a witty literary journal of material not compatible with the standards of larger magazines, and including among its contributions the first short story by O.Henry. In 1900 it was purchased by John A. Thayer, who attracted to it such authors as Gertrude Atherton, Richard LeGallienne, Cabell, Mencken, and Nathan. Under the editorship of Willard Huntington Wright (1913–14), its primary purpose was 'to provide lively entertainment for minds that are not primitive.' Although the circulation was far greater than that of the average little magazine, its gaiety, vitality, and æsthetic credo were akin to the traits of this type of publication. Wright attracted new and stimulating American authors, and was also the first American editor to publish periodical contributions by such authors as George Moore, D.H.Lawrence, Joyce, D'Annunzio, and Ford Madox Ford. In 1914 Mencken and Nathan assumed joint editorship, and, although their policy was somewhat less stirring during the World War, after 1918 they continued Wright's vigorous policy, beginning such satirical departments as that of 'Americana,' which baited what they called the 'booboisie.' They also published the early writings of such authors as Eugene O'Neill, F.Scott Fitzgerald, J.W. Krutch, Waldo Frank, Lewis Mumford, Thomas Beer, and Julia Peterkin. When the magazine was purchased by Hearst (1924), new editors and a more conventional policy were introduced, but Mencken and Nathan held to their program in *The American Mercury* (q.v.). Burton Rascoe and Groff Conklin edited *The Smart Set Anthology* (1934).

SMIBERT, John (1688–1751), Scottish-born artist, resided in Italy (1717–20), where he copied paintings by great Italian masters. He settled in London, where he made numerous portraits, and went to America (1728) to become the first European-trained painter to establish residence here. He visited Rhode Island with Bishop Berkeley, expecting to become a professor of art in his proposed college, but when these plans failed he settled in Boston. While his work was not of the highest caliber, he was a faithful painter of formal portraits, with a background of thorough technical training. He is most famous for the group picture of *Bishop Berkeley and His Family* (1731). In 1740 he designed Faneuil Hall, which, though burned shortly after his death, was later reconstructed in general accord with his plans.

SMITH, Alfred E[manuel] (1873–), born in New York City, early entered politics as a Tammany appointee, and occupied many state and city offices before his four terms as governor (1919–20, 1923–8). He was the Democratic candidate for President in 1928, but, despite the popularity of his campaign as the 'Happy Warrior,' opposed to the 18th Amendment, was defeated by the conservative Hoover. He has since been president of the company that built the Empire State Building in New York City, and editor of a magazine, the *New Outlook* (1932–4). *Up to Now* (1929) is his autobiography.

SMITH, Charles Henry (1826–1903), Southern humorist known by his pseudonym Bill Arp, before his literary career practiced law, and, loyal to the Confederacy, had 'joined the army and succeeded in killing about as many of them as they of me.' His humorous writing was begun during the first year of the war, when he contributed to a newspaper of his native Georgia some letters addressed to 'Mr. Abe Linkhorn,' signed 'Bill Arp,' which satirized the North by sympathizing with the Yankees in a deliberately inept manner. This device, used by D.R. Locke for the North, won Smith great popularity, causing him to devote most of the remainder of his life to writing. Although he retained the character of Bill Arp, he transformed him into a shrewd, crackerbox philosopher, and by 1866 dropped the device of comic misspelling to depend upon direct satire and homespun philosophy in his comments on such contemporary interests as woman suffrage, income tax, Reconstruction, and rights for Negroes. Upon occasion he employed the dialect of the Georgia 'cracker' and the Negro, in which he is supposed to have influenced Joel Chandler Harris. His works include: *Bill Arp, So-Called* (1866), *Bill Arp's Letters* (1868), *Bill Arp's Peace Papers* (1873), *Bill Arp's Scrap Book* (1884), and *Bill Arp: From the Uncivil War to Date* (1903).

SMITH, Elihu Hubbard (1771–98), after graduation from Yale (1786) became a

practicing physician in Connecticut, where he was a minor member of the Connecticut Wits (q.v.), contributing to *The Echo* (q.v.,1791–1805). Another literary project was the editing of *American Poems* (1793), the earliest anthology of American poetry, primarily devoted to the Wits. In 1794 he moved to New York, where he became prominent as a physician, and as a member of literary society. He formed the Friendly Club, wrote a ballad opera, *Edwin and Angelina* (1796), and composed prefaces for *Alcuin* and *André*, by his friends, Brown and Dunlap. Contracting yellow fever from a patient, he died at the age of 27.

SMITH, Elizabeth Oakes (1806–93), wife of Seba Smith, was a popular novelist and contributor to literary magazines. Her novels include: *The Western Captive* (1842), *Black Hollow* (1864), *Bald Eagle* (1867), and *The Sagamore of Saco* (1868), romantic tales of the frontier; *The Salamander: A Legend for Christmas* (1848), a story of the supernatural; *Bertha and Lily* (1854), a pious sentimental treatment of social, moral, and religious problems; and *The Newsboy* (1854), a sentimental story of life in the slums. Most of her works appeared under the pseudonym Ernest Helfenstein. *Woman and Her Needs* (1851) is a work advocating woman suffrage. Her *Autobiography* was published in 1924.

SMITH, Francis Hopkinson (1838–1915), great-grandson of Francis Hopkinson, was born in Baltimore, and became an engineer with painting as an avocation. At the age of 50 he turned to literature, and his first books, *Well-Worn Roads of Spain, Holland, and Italy* (1887) and *A White Umbrella in Mexico* (1889), were charming travel sketches illustrated by his own drawings. He became widely known following the publication of *Colonel Carter of Cartersville* (q.v.,1891), a novelette in the local-color manner, portraying a Southern gentleman down on his luck. *Colonel Carter's Christmas* (1903) is a sequel. Smith's other fiction includes: *A Day at Laguerre's and Other Days* (1892), stories set in places as widely varied as the Bronx and Constantinople; *Tom Grogan* (1896), a novel about an Irishwoman who fights unions and politicians to run her business as a contracting stevedore; *The Fortunes of Oliver Horn* (1902), a semi-autobiographical story of the life of a young painter in Baltimore and New York; *The Tides of Barnegat* (1906), a story of moral contrasts in a New Jersey family; and *Kennedy Square* (1911), concerned with social codes of the Old South. He also published books of charcoal sketches, such as *In Thackeray's London* (1913) and *In Dickens's London* (1914).

SMITH, James (*c.*1737–*c.*1814), Pennsylvania frontiersman and Indian fighter, whose book, *An Account of Remarkable Occurrences in the Life and Travels of Col. James Smith* (1799), is considered a primary source concerning pioneer life in the Ohio Valley. *A Treatise on the Mode and Manner of Indian War* (1812) is mainly drawn from his earlier work.

SMITH, Jedediah Strong (1798–1831), New York-born fur-trader and explorer in the Far West, was a member of Ashley's expedition up the Missouri (1823) and led the party that established the South Pass route to the Green River Valley. Bridger, while employed by Smith, was the first white man to reach the Great Salt Lake. In 1826–7 Smith led a small exploring party from the Salt Lake, by way of the Colorado River and Santa Fé Trail, to southern California, and back across the Sierra Nevada. This was the first American crossing of the Sierra and the central overland route. He also led the first overland expedition from California to the Oregon country (1828). He was killed by Indians while guiding a party on the Santa Fé Trail. His knowledge was employed in maps and sketches by others, but his own journal was almost completely destroyed by a fire. H.C.Dale's *The Ashley-Smith Explorations* (1918) describes his early career, and he is the central figure of Neihardt's novel, *The Splendid Wayfaring* (1920).

SMITH, John (1580–1631), English explorer and adventurer, left home at the age of about 16 to begin life as a soldier of fortune, in the Low Countries and elsewhere on the continent. In 1602 he served with the Austrian forces against the Turks, on the Hungarian and Transylvanian border. The only sources of information for his life during these years are Smith's *The True Travels* and a lost Italian source mentioned by Purchas, so that his veracity has frequently been questioned. He claims to have distinguished himself in battles, and to have been granted a coat of arms (which has been authenticated), to have been enslaved and taken to Constan-

tinople, and to have been presented as a gift to Tragabigzanda, the Turkish Pasha's wife, who, falling in love with him, won him safety by sending him to her brother, the ruler of a country vaguely east of the Black Sea. Enslaved there, he escaped and passed through many exciting adventures before returning to England (*c.*1604). Although only 26 when the Virginia Company received its patent, he energetically participated in the promotion and organization of the enterprise, and set sail with the early colonists, who disembarked at Jamestown (1607). Sealed orders, opened upon arrival in Virginia, gave him a post in the council, although he was not at first allowed to serve because of charges of mutiny on the voyage. He was active in exploration and in procuring food from the hostile Indians for the famished colony. On one of his expeditions, he was supposedly captured and condemned to death by the chief Powhatan, and dramatically rescued by the intercession of Pocahontas (q.v.). This story, which Smith told in varying versions in different books, has sometimes been considered apocryphal. He returned to the colony (Jan. 1608) to find himself again faced with death, this time at the hands of his rivals on the council, who condemned him for having lost two of his men. He was rescued again, in dramatic fashion, when Christopher Newport arrived from England with supplies and settlers, on the eve of his execution. Restored to his place on the council, he continued his explorations, this time to Chesapeake Bay and the Potomac and Rappahannock Rivers. Despite continuted friction among the councilors he was selected president, because of his resourcefulness, bravery, and ability to deal with the Indians. During the winter of 1608–9, the colony again being faced by starvation, Smith divided it into three parts to search for food. During the summer, more colonists came, and with them letters from England criticizing his administration and treatment of the Indians, occasioning a demand by his enemies that he give up his office. In the midst of wrangling about authority, he was dangerously burned by a gunpowder explosion, and forced to leave for England (Oct. 1609), where the charges were dropped, though he was refused further employment by the Virginia Company. Still interested in exploration, he was next employed by some London merchants to explore the region that he named New England, and to find gold mines and kill whales for them. Because he brought back fish and furs instead of fulfilling their fantastic desires, for which he showed contempt, he received only the empty title of Admiral of New England, and had to seek elsewhere for support of his plans for exploration and colonization. Under the patronage of Gorges, he made two unsuccessful attempts to reach New England, once being captured by pirates. He next tried to interest the Puritans in guiding them to New England, but they loftily replied that, though his books and maps were valuable to them, he himself was not a desirable person. He then settled in London to continue his writings on his own life and in furtherance of colonization in the New World. His books are: *A True Relation of such Occurrences and Accidents of Note as hath hapned in Virginia since the first planting of that Colony* (1608), a pamphlet giving the earliest first-hand account of the settlement, but not mentioning Smith's rescue by Pocahontas; *A Map of Virginia with a Description of the Country* (1612), continuing the account of Smith's governorship; *A Description of New England: or the Observations and Discoveries of Captain John Smith . . .* (1616), a narrative of his later ventures in New England and unsuccessful voyages while in the employ of Gorges; *New England's Trials* (1620), a pamphlet that has been called 'essentially a plea for employment,' and which was enlarged (1622) to give an account of the successes of the Pilgrims; *The General Historie of Virginia, New-England, and the Summer Isles* (1624), a lengthy and more magniloquent reworking of his earlier writings, containing an extended account of the Pocahontas story; *An Accidence, or the Pathway to Experience necessary for all young Seamen* (1626), a pamphlet that was recast, probably by another hand, as *The Seaman's Grammar* and *A Sea Grammar* (1627); *The True Travels, Adventures, and Observations of Captain John Smith in Europe, Asia, Africa, and America, from . . . 1593 to 1629 . . .* (1630), the autobiography that furnishes information about his early life; and *Advertisements for the Unexperienced Planters of New England, or Anywhere; or, The Pathway to Erect a Plantation* (1631), which, in the manner of a wise scholar counseling a young pupil, addresses advice to Winthrop and his Massachusetts set-

tlers, and contains Smith's pathetic autobiographical poem, 'The Sea-Mark.'

SMITH, JOHNSTON, pseudonym of Stephen Crane (q.v.).

SMITH, JOSEPH (1805–44), founder of the Mormon sect (q.v.), was born in Vermont and raised in the shiftless, semi-literate society of the New England-New York frontier, which was strongly influenced by ephemeral revivalist sects. In 1820 he seems to have undergone the first of a series of annual visions, through which he gained the revelations contained in the *Book of Mormon.* In 1830, Smith founded the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints, published the *Book of Mormon,* and, aided by Sidney Rigdon (q.v.), greatly increased the number of his followers. The loyal flock was moved to Ohio, and again to Missouri after Smith and Rigdon had become fugitives from justice because of financial difficulties. Friction with non-Mormons eventually drove them to Nauvoo, Illinois (1839), where Smith ruled autocratically, and Rigdon and others seceded, partially because of the revelation (1843) sanctioning polygamy. Following the war within the church, there was an uprising of non-Mormons, in which Smith was arrested and shot, and this martyrdom stabilized the church, to whose leadership Brigham Young succeeded.

JOSEPH SMITH (1832–1914), his son, having failed to become president in 1852, founded and presided over the Reorganized Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints, which disavowed polygamy. Under his leadership this church grew to have some 70,000 members.

SMITH, JUSTIN HARVEY (1857–1930), professor of modern history at Dartmouth (1899–1908), was the author of many works on American history. Among them are *Our Struggle for the Fourteenth Colony: Canada and the American Revolution* (1907), and *The War with Mexico* (2 vols., 1919; Pulitzer Prize, 1920).

SMITH, [LLOYD] LOGAN PEARSALL (1865–), New Jersey-born essayist, reared in Philadelphia, educated at Haverford, Harvard, and Oxford, has resided in England and on the continent since 1888. His books of aphorisms and essays include *Trivia* (1917), *More Trivia* (1921), *Afterthoughts* (1931), the collection *All Trivia* (1933), and *Reperusals and Re-collections* (1936). He has also published *The Youth of Parnassus* (1895), short stories; two slight collections of poetry, *Sonnets* (1908) and *Songs and Sonnets* (1909); various pamphlets on English vocabulary; *On Reading Shakespeare* (1933); a biography of Sir Henry Wotton (1907); and editions of authors as various as Donne and Santayana. *Milton and His Modern Critics* (1941) is a defense of Milton and an attack on T.S.Eliot and Ezra Pound. His autobiography, *Unforgotten Years* (1938), describes his Quaker boyhood, his youthful acquaintance with Whitman, life at Harvard and Oxford, activities as a bibliophile, and experiences as an expatriate.

SMITH, MARGARET BAYARD (1778–1844), Washington society leader, author of the novels, *A Winter in Washington* (1824) and *What is Gentility?* (1828). Her best-known work, *The First Forty Years of Washington Society* (1906), is a posthumous collection of sprightly letters.

SMITH, RICHARD PENN (1799–1854), Philadelphia playwright, grandson of provost William Smith, was significant in American drama for introducing romantic tragedy and employing foreign sources. Of his three plays on American historical themes, *William Penn, or The Elm Tree* (1829) and *The Triumph of Plattsburg* (q.v.,1830) were original, while *The Eighth of January* (q.v.,1829), although indebted to a French melodrama, dramatized American political feeling at the time of Jackson's election as President by celebrating his victory at the Battle of New Orleans. Most of Smith's other plays were adaptations of foreign works; among those suggested by French models are: *The Disowned* (1829), a melodrama; *The Sentinels, or the Two Sergeants* (1829), employing the Damon and Pythias theme; *Is She a Brigand?* (1833), a farcical comedy of mistaken identities; *The Daughter* (1836), a domestic drama; and *The Actress of Padua* (q.v., 1836), based on a romantic tragedy by Victor Hugo. *The Deformed* (q.v.,1830), a verse drama, a revision of his own play, *The Divorce* (1825), owes a debt both to Dekker's *The Honest Whore* and Dunlap's *The Italian Father*; while *Caius Marius* (1831) was an original blank-verse romantic tragedy, produced by Forrest. Smith also dramatized two novels by Cooper, *The Water Witch* (1830) and *The Bravo* (1837). His fiction includes: *The Forsaken* (1831), a novel of the Revolution; *The Ac-*

tress of Padua and Other Tales (1836), containing a revision in narrative form of his play; and *Col.Crockett's Exploits and Adventures in Texas* (1836), which is generally considered to be Smith's work, although purporting to be by the frontiersman.

SMITH, Samuel (1720–76), Quaker public official of New Jersey, author of *The History of the Colony of Nova-Caesaria, or New Jersey . . . to the Year* 1721 (1765), a patriotic but even-tempered study which, though it begins its general account with Columbus, places primary emphasis on the 17th century.

SMITH, Samuel Francis (1808–95), Boston Baptist clergyman, who while a student at Andover Theological Seminary wrote the patriotic hymn, 'America' (q.v., 1831). His verses were collected in *Poems of Home and Country* (1895), and he was also the author of a book on mythology, travel sketches, and other prose.

SMITH, Samuel Stanhope (1750–1819), Presbyterian clergyman and president of the College of New Jersey (1795–1819), distinguished not only for improving the standards of the institution, particularly in scientific training, but also for his pragmatic philosophy, which followed the school of John Witherspoon. His books include *Lectures on the Evidences of the Christian Religion* (1809) and *Lectures . . . on the Subjects of Moral and Political Philosophy* (2 vols.,1812). He also wrote a sequel to David Ramsay's *History of the United States* (1816–17).

SMITH, Seba (1792–1868), born in Maine, graduated from Bowdoin (1818), founded the daily *Portland Courier* (1829), and achieved fame when he began to publish in his newspaper (1830) a series of letters from 'Major Jack Downing,' a Down East Yankee, whose comic rustic speech and homespun sagacity made him an outstanding character in the development of American humor. Although Smith created the character as a Yankee peddler, he soon had him turn his attention to local politics, and then, as the letters began to be printed in other newspapers and Downing began to capture the popular imagination, he made him into a confidant of Andrew Jackson, so that he might shrewdly satirize Jacksonian democracy and matters of contemporary politics. This use of his character and Smith's freedom from party politics made him the inaugurator of the American tradition of commenting on current events with great shrewdness cloaked under a guise of simplicity, and gave to the country a line of homespun political philosophers that has included Hosea Biglow, Mr.Dooley, and Will Rogers. In his own day, Smith found so many imitators, some of whom used Downing's own name, that Downing said he knew himself only by a scar on his left arm. The pirated edition of *Letters Written During the President's Tour, 'Down East,' by Myself, Major Jack Downing, of Downingville* (1833), which contained letters by Smith as well as by Charles A. Davis (q.v.) and other imitators, caused Smith to print his own letters in *The Life and Writings of Major Jack Downing of Downingville* (1833), to which, however, he added some letters by 'Uncle Josh Downing,' written by J.L. Motley. The numerous imitations of the Downing letters also called forth many cartoons of the character, who was the prototype of Uncle Sam as a symbol of the U.S. Smith continued to write for newspapers and collected his contributions in *John Smith's Letters with Picters to Match* (1839); *May-Day in New York* (1845), republished as *Jack Downing's Letters* (1845); *'Way Down East, or Portraitures of Yankee Life* (1854), a collection of local-color tales; and *My Thirty Years Out of the Senate* (1859), whose title was a satire of T.H.Benton's *Thirty Years' View of the American Government.* Smith also edited various magazines and wrote books which ranged from *Powhatan* (1841), a metrical romance, to *New Elements of Geometry* (1850). His wife was Elizabeth Oakes Smith.

SMITH, Sol[omon Franklin] (1801–69), editor, actor, theatrical manager, and lawyer of the old Southwest, whose books, *Sol Smith's Theatrical Apprenticeship* (1845) and *Theatrical Journey-Work* (1854), are important for their tall tales, which reveal the customs and characters of the region.

SMITH, Sydney (1771–1845), English clergyman and author, famous as a critic for the *Edinburgh Review* and creator of many *bons mots*, one of which made him notorious in America, because he asked in a review of Seybert's *Annals of the United States* (*Edinburgh Review*, Jan. 1820): 'In the four quarters of the globe, who reads an American book? or goes to an Ameri-

can play? or looks at an American picture or statue?' In a speech (1831) Smith compared the opposition of the House of Lords to the progress of reform with the attempt of Dame Partington to brush away the Atlantic Ocean, and this suggested to B.P. Shillaber his humorous character, Mrs. Partington.

SMITH, THORNE (1892–1934), humorist, whose first book, *Biltmore Oswald: The Diary of a Hapless Recruit* (1918), based on his experiences in the navy during the World War, was enormously popular at the time. With *Topper* (1926) he established the vein of ribald fantasy for which he is best known. This novel deals with two capricious ghosts, whose ectoplasmic reappearances and whimsically insane actions disturb the staid life of the inhibited banker, Cosmo Topper. Later books in this manner include: *Did She Fall?* (1930); *The Night Life of the Gods* (1931); *Turnabout* (1931); *The Bishop's Jaegers* (1932); *Topper Takes a Trip* (1932); and *Skin and Bones* (1933).

SMITH, WILLIAM (1727–1803), Scottish-born educator and Episcopal minister, came to America (1751), and, after outlining his theories of education in *A General Idea of the College of Mirania* (1753), was made provost of the College of Philadelphia (1755–79). He was prominent in politics as a supporter of the crown and the Penn family, opposing the Quakers and such liberals as Franklin, and his opposition to the Assembly occasioned a temporary imprisonment. To further his conservative beliefs, he edited *The American Magazine and Monthly Chronicle* (q.v., 1752–8), and at the approach of the Revolution attacked Paine's *Common Sense* in a series of weekly letters to the *Pennsylvania Gazette* (q.v.), written under the pseudonym Cato. These were answered by Paine in the *Pennsylvania Packet.* Although Smith opposed the Stamp Act as contrary to the rights of Englishmen, he was equally set against the independence of the colonies. His *Sermon on the Present Situation of American Affairs* (1775) created a sensation, and was considered by many to be a Loyalist document. The Assembly voided the charter of his college (1779), contending that the administration was hostile to the state government and opposed to equal privileges for all religious denominations. Smith then went to Maryland to found Washington College, of which he was president until the Pennsylvania college charter was restored (1789). He was again provost, until the college became the University of Pennsylvania (1791).

SMITH, WILLIAM (1728–93), born in New York, graduated from Yale (1745), became a lawyer, and with William Livingston prepared the first digest of New York statutes and *A Review of the Military Operations in North America . . .* 1753–1756 (1757). He is best known for *The History of the Province of New York* (1757), which chronicles events to 1732, with primary emphasis on the 18th century. He was inclined to the Loyalist side, went to England (1783), and was later Chief Justice of Canada (1786–93).

SMITH, WINCHELL (1871–1933), actor, playwright, and director, whose most famous accomplishment as a producer was the introduction of the plays of Shaw to the U.S. (1904ff.). His own most successful play, written with Frank Bacon, was *Lightnin'* (1918), a character study of the ingratiating, inebriated liar, 'Lightnin' Bill Jones.' This sentimental comedy had one of the longest continuous runs in American dramatic history. Smith's other plays included a dramatization of *Brewster's Millions* (q.v.,1906); *Turn to the Right* (1916), a farce; and *The Vinegar Tree* (1930), a comedy.

Smith College, situated at Northampton, Massachusetts, was founded (1871) by the bequest of Sophia Smith, to give women a higher education equal to that obtainable by men. It is one of the foremost American colleges for women. William Allan Neilson (1869–), literary critic and long the acknowledged dean of women's college presidents, was the head of Smith (1917–39). Mary Ellen Chase is a member of the faculty, and graduates include Grace Hazard Conkling (1899), on the faculty since 1914, Eleanor Carrol Chilton (1922), and Anne Morrow Lindbergh (1928).

Smithsonian Institution, THE, was founded through the bequest of James Smithson (1765–1829), an Oxford graduate and Fellow of the Royal Society, whose will presented to the U.S.government more than £100,000 for 'an establishment for the increase and diffusion of knowledge among men.' John Quincy Adams was influential in causing the ac-

ceptance of the gift, and the Institution was established at Washington,D.C. (1846) by an act of Congress. It is primarily a museum of zoology and ethnology, but possesses a great astrophysical observatory founded by one of its secretaries, S.P.Langley.

Smoke and Steel, free verse poem by Sandburg (q.v.), the title piece of a volume published in 1920.

The poem describes the great steel mills of 'Pittsburg, Youngstown, Gary . . . Homestead, Braddock, Birmingham' ('A bar of steel—it is only Smoke at the heart of it, smoke and the blood of a man . . .'). He tells of the workers' oppressed lives, of five men who were killed by falling into a pot of molten metal ('Their bones are kneaded into the bread of steel'); of the heroic ceaseless labor of the plants; and of the terrible beauty of smoke, flame, and mechanical precision.

Smoke Bellew, novel by Jack London (q.v.), published in 1912.

Christopher Bellew, a San Francisco dilettante journalist, goes to the Klondike with his uncle, and there meets Joy Gastell, a spirited girl who scorns him as a tenderfoot. In his search for gold and his attempt to prove his worth to Joy, he undergoes a series of adventures that include riding a canoe across a dangerous rapids; discovering a lake; running races for claims, once losing in a friendly rivalry with Joy's father; rescuing starving natives; captivity by Indians; and rescue by the chief's daughter, who dies as she guides him back to Joy.

SMYTH, ALBERT HENRY (1863–1907), teacher of English at a Philadelphia high school (1886–1907), is noted for his authoritative edition of the *Writings of Benjamin Franklin* (10 vols.,1905–7). He wrote other books on English and American literature.

Snake Indians, name loosely applied to the Shoshone and related tribes. It is now used by scholars to refer to certain Oregon tribes.

SNELLING, WILLIAM JOSEPH (1804–48), Boston author and journalist, as a young man lived for a time among the Dakota Indians near the present St.Paul, Minnesota, thus gathering information for his charming and accurate *Tales of the Northwest; or, Sketches of Indian Life and Character* (1830). In his own day he was better known for *Truth: A New Year's Gift for Scribblers* (1831), a verse satire on contemporary poets. Attacks by literary and political figures who disliked his satire drove him to drink, for which he was sent to the House of Correction. He wrote of this in *The Rat-Trap; or, Cogitations of a Convict in the House of Correction* (1837). In the last year of his life, he edited the *Boston Herald,* continuing his zealous work for reforms.

SNIDER, DENTON JAQUES (1841–1925), teacher in St.Louis schools, was a follower of W.T.Harris (q.v.) and the St.Louis School of Idealism, in propounding the philosophy of Hegel. His books include *Psychology and the Psychosis* (1890) and *The St.Louis Movement in Philosophy . . . With Chapters of Autobiography* (1920); as well as many other scholarly works, travel accounts, and poems.

SNOW, [CHARLES] WILBERT (1884–), Maine poet, after graduation from Bowdoin (1907) studied at Columbia, and has since taught English at New York University, Bowdoin, Williams, the University of Utah, Indiana University, Reed College, and Wesleyan University. His simple and direct poems of life in his native state have been published in *Maine Coast* (1923), *The Inner Harbor* (1926), *Down East* (1932), *Before the Wind* (1938), and *Main Tides* (1940).

Snow-Bound; A Winter Idyl, poem by Whittier (q.v.), published in 1866. It is mainly in iambic tetrameter couplets, although the verse is sometimes varied by alternating rimes.

The poet recalls the years of his boyhood, when a sudden snowstorm would transform his Quaker father's Massachusetts farm and its usual routine into an enchanted white realm of adventure. The family gathered during the evening before the fireplace, where his father told of his early experiences in the Canadian woods and the New England farms and fisheries, and his mother read from Quaker religious books, or described family adventures during Indian raids. An uncle, 'innocent of books,' offered tales of hunting and fishing, and an aunt shared memories of her girlhood, while other participants in the quiet festivities were the poet's brother and sisters, the merry schoolmaster, and a guest, the religious enthusiast Harriet Livermore. Later, after all retired, they lay awake listening to the unaccus-

tomed sounds of the storm. In the morning, the snowy blanketed world outside appeared quiet and strange, but soon there was a bustle of visits and domestic activity, although the little community might remain isolated for weeks. After the poet has given these minute Flemish pictures of his own childhood, he realizes that the 'Angel of the backward look' must clasp the book of the past, and recognizes that he must attend to the duties of later years. Yet haply, as life slopes down to death, he may pause in some lull of life, realize 'the grateful sense of sweetness near,' stretch forth the hands of memory 'and, pausing, take with forehead bare the benediction of the air.'

Snowden's Ladies' Companion, see *Ladies' Companion.*

Snow-Image, The, and Other Twice-Told Tales, seventeen short stories by Hawthorne (q.v.), published in 1851. The volume includes historical sketches, tales of the supernatural, and such allegorical stories as 'The Great Stone Face' and 'Ethan Brand' (qq.v.).

'The Snow-Image: A Childish Miracle' is an allegory in which Peony and Violet Lindsey, gay, fanciful children, build an image of snow, encouraged by their mother, who smilingly tells them it will be their snow-sister and playfellow. In their enthusiasm they are hardly surprised when the image comes to life as a beautiful child in a flimsy white dress, who plays with them in the garden. When the children's father, a matter-of-fact merchant, comes home, he disregards their remonstrances and takes the snow-child into the house, intending to clothe her warmly, feed her, and take her to her own home. But the child vanishes, and only a pool of water remains before the stove. The author concludes that 'should some phenomenon of nature or providence transcend' the system of men of Mr.Lindsey's stamp, 'they will not recognize it, even if it come to pass under their very noses. What has been established as an element of good to one being may proved absolute mischief to another.'

So Big, novel by Edna Ferber (q.v.).

Socialist Labor Party of North America, founded mainly by German socialists (1876) as the Working-Men's Party of the United States, assumed its later name (1877), and during the subsequent years of industrial depression attracted an American membership. It became less influential with returning prosperity, and support was transferred to the Greenback-Labor party and the followers of Anarchism. Another industrial decline (1886) temporarily strengthened the Party, which was split, however, by the rise of new organizations, including the United Labor party which backed Henry George. Being antagonistic to George's single-tax proposal, the socialists formed the Progressive Labor party (1887) as a fusion party of protest. In the 1890's, they resumed their independent existence, led by Daniel DeLeon, and attempted to control both the Knights of Labor and the A.F.of L. The party broke with these organizations to form the short-lived Socialist Trade and Labor Alliance (1895). Under the leadership of Morris Hillquit, the majority merged with the Social Democratic party of Debs to become the Socialist party (1900).

Socialist Party of the United States, The, was organized (1900) by combining the Socialist Labor party and Debs's Social Democratic Federation. Debs was its presidential candidate (1900–20), and his votes increased from 96,000 in the first election to 901,000 in the last, although at this time he was imprisoned for anti-war agitation. The party survived the First World War, despite vigorous opposition for its pacifist stand, which resulted in the defection of many members, including Upton Sinclair. In 1919, however, it was split by the world-wide Socialist-Communist schism. The party refused to affiliate with the Third International, which demanded allegiance to the theory that the capital-labor struggle had entered a phase of acute civil war requiring armed insurrection. Those members holding such a belief split to form the Communist Party of the United States (q.v.), while the Socialists reaffiliated with a revived Second International. Norman Thomas (q.v.) has been the foremost leader of the later period as candidate for President (1928–40). There have been further schisms within the party, and since 1932 the official party's relation with the Second International has been largely formal. Because it has been barred from the ballot in many states, it now functions primarily as an active educational and agitational force within the labor movement, rather than as an electoral organization.

Society and Solitude, essays by Emerson (q.v.), based on lectures delivered as early as 1858, revised and published in 1870. The subjects are: 'Society and Solitude,' 'Civilization,' 'Art,' 'Eloquence,' 'Domestic Life,' 'Farming,' 'Works and Days,' 'Books,' 'Clubs,' 'Courage,' 'Success,' and 'Old Age.'

The title piece is concerned with the individual's problem of social conduct. For those who have originality and a sense of personal integrity, the necessity for solitude is deeply felt and 'organic.' Constant social friction is wearing and difficult, and one naturally seeks to be alone. 'But this banishment to the rocks and echoes . . . is so against nature, such a half-view, that it must be corrected by a common sense and experience.' A man can live significantly only through contact with his fellows; sympathy and co-operation make possible the advancement of common causes; 'the benefits of affection are immense'; and, moreover, 'society cannot do without cultivated men.' On the other hand, 'the people are to be taken in very small doses.' Overmuch company is degrading, since 'men cannot afford to live together on their merits, and they adjust themselves by their demerits.' The remedy is to strike a balance between social and solitary ways of living, 'and a sound mind will derive its principles from insight, with ever a purer ascent to the sufficient and absolute right, and will accept society as the natural element in which they are to be applied.'

Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, London organization of Puritans (1649–61, reorganized 1662), best known for its distribution to the Massachusetts Indians of John Eliot's tracts, and for the work of Thomas and Experience Mayhew. An Anglican organization of the same name was founded in 1701, to foster the Church of England in the American colonies through missionary work and the distribution of tracts. It quit missionary work in the U.S. in 1785.

Society in America, see *Martineau*.

Society, Manners, and Politics in the United States, English translation (1839) of the French work (1834) by Michel Chevalier (1806–79), a young Saint-Simonian commissioned by the statesman, Thiers, to inspect U.S. public works. His book, the result of a two-year observation of the social, political, and economic machinery of the U.S., is an acute and impersonal survey of U.S.democracy, industrial conditions, Jacksonian politics, preoccupation with business, influence of the frontier, ending with a speculation on the country's future.

Society of Friends, see *Quakers*.

Society of Gentlemen, see *American Magazine and Monthly Chronicle*.

Socinianism, religious belief named for Laelius Socinus (1525–62), Italian reformer, and his nephew Faustus Socinus. Unitarian and pacifistic, the followers of Socinus believed that men are rational and innately good, and accepted the Scriptures as the authoritative guide for thought and conduct. They were attacked by New England Calvinists as heretics.

Soft Side, The, stories by Henry James (q.v.).

Soldier's Pay, novel by Faulkner (q.v.), published in 1926.

Lieutenant Donald Mahon, an American in the British air force during the World War, is discharged from the hospital where he has been treated for a critical head wound, and makes his way home to Georgia. The wound leaves a horrible scar, and causes loss of memory and later blindness. On the train from New York he is aided by Joe Gilligan, an awkward, friendly, footloose ex-soldier, and Margaret Powers, an attractive young widow whose husband was killed in the war. Margaret, strangely attracted to the dying, subhuman Donald, decides to go home with him, as does Gilligan, who is in love with her. Their reception in the Georgia town reveals the character of the fickle people; of Donald's father, an Episcopal minister whose optimism and idealism prevent his recognition of his son's tragedy, until the accumulation of ugly facts destroys his faith; Donald's pathetic, homely cousin Emmy, whom he had loved; his fiancée, Cecily Saunders, a selfish girl now in love with another man, but afraid of her conventional parents and public opinion; and George Farr, Cecily's lover, who considers nothing but his own desire. Sentiment in town soon turns against Donald, because of his fearful appearance and his suspected liaison with Margaret, who remains to nurse him. As months pass, Cecily elopes with George, and Gilligan good-naturedly stays on, despite Margaret's rejection of his proposals

and her eventual marriage to Donald. The suffering aviator finally dies, and Margaret leaves, once more refusing Gilligan, who remains for a time with the elder Mahon. The latter is a changed man as the result of his ordeal: 'Who knows; perhaps when we die we may not be required to go anywhere nor do anything at all. That would be heaven.'

Soldiers of Fortune, novel by R.H. Davis (q.v.), published in 1897 and dramatized in 1902 with the aid of Augustus Thomas.

Robert Clay, an intrepid engineer and adventurer, is engaged as director of the Valencia Mining Company in Olancho, a South American nation. Before leaving New York he meets Alice Langham, daughter of the company's president, whom he has long admired through newspaper accounts of her social career. They form an attachment, but when she comes with her father and younger sister, Hope, to visit her brother, his co-worker, he is disappointed because she does not resemble his ideal image of her, being merely a clever, unemotional, conventional product of the formal society in which she has grown up. Clay prefers the ardent, alert Hope, and the two fall in love during a local revolution, in which Clay, his friend MacWilliams, and young Langham play an important part. Clay and Hope marry, planning to share a career of romantic adventure.

Solid South, term applied to the Southern states since the Reconstruction because of their solid Democratic vote, historically based on resentment against the harsh Republican legislation, which also introduced the Negro vote.

Soliloquies in England, and Later Soliloquies, brief, familiar essays by Santayana (q.v.), published in 1922. The author spent the years of the First World War in England, and though events 'extorted' 'desperate verses' from him, three of which are included in this book, he devoted himself while at Oxford and Cambridge to composing these autobiographical and philosophic meditations, whose subjects are as widely varied as 'The English Church,' 'Death-Bed Manners,' 'Seafaring,' 'Dons,' 'Apology for Snobs,' and 'On My Friendly Critics.' The English background is everywhere implicit in his attitude, and, he states, 'What I love in Greece and in England is contentment in finitude, fair outward ways, manly perfection and simplicity.' The second half of the book contains post-war essays written mainly on the continent, dealing more generally with ethical, political, and æsthetic problems, but preserving the author's familiar manner, firm wit, and sonorous, richly textured prose.

Solon Shingle, play by Joseph S. Jones (q.v.).

Solstice, narrative poem by Jeffers (q.v.).

Some Chinese Ghosts, stories by Lafcadio Hearn (q.v.).

Son of Royal Langbrith, The, novel by Howells (q.v.), published in 1904.

Dr.Anther courts Mrs.Langbrith, widow of a New England paper manufacturer who had the reputation of a social benefactor, although he was actually a scoundrel. James Langbrith is violently opposed to the match between his mother and the doctor, and Dr.Anther is only dissuaded from revealing the dead man's true character by the hope that the son will withdraw his objections to the marriage. Instead he confers a favor upon James by curing the father of his sweetheart, Hope Hawberk. Despite James's continued resistance, Mrs.Langbrith becomes engaged to Anther, who dies before the marriage. To justify Anther's character, James's uncle reveals to him his father's true nature, but manages to retain the public illusion of Langbrith's philanthropy. Hope, who had been cool to James because the elder Langbrith had exploited her father, becomes reconciled in gratitude for Dr.Anther's aid, and marries the son of Royal Langbrith.

Son of the Middle Border, A, autobiographical narrative by Hamlin Garland (q.v.), published serially in 1914 and in book form in 1917. Beginning with the western emigration of the Garland and McClintock families in the years following the Civil War, the author tells the story of his family background and his own youthful adventures among the pioneer farmers of South Dakota, his trip to Boston and the period in which he struggled to establish himself as an author. The narrative, brought in this book to his thirty-third year, is continued in a later series: *A Daughter of the Middle Border* (1921), *Trail Makers of the Middle Border* (1926),

and *Back Trailers from the Middle Border* (1928).

Son of the Wolf, The, nine short stories by Jack London (q.v.), published in 1900. These tales of white men in the Klondike and Yukon have their tone set in the title story, in which the daughter of an Indian chief is captured by her white lover, Scruff Mackenzie, despite the racial antipathy of her native suitors.

Sondelius, GUSTAF, character in *Arrowsmith* (q.v.).

Song of Hiawatha, see *Hiawatha.*

Song of Marion's Men, ballad by Bryant (q.v.) published in 1831. It celebrates the Revolutionary exploits of the frontier troops led by Francis Marion.

Song of Myself, poem by Whitman (q.v.), the untitled introduction to the first edition of *Leaves of Grass* (1855), later called 'A Poem of Walt Whitman, An American' and 'Walt Whitman,' and given its present title in 1881.

Declaring 'I celebrate myself . . . Walt Whitman am I, a Kosmos,' the poet sets forth two principal beliefs: the first, a theory of universality ('of every hue and cast am I, of every rank and religion'), is illustrated by lengthy catalogues of people and things; the second is that all things are equal in value ('I am the poet of the body; and . . . of the soul . . . not the poet of goodness only . . . of wickedness also . . . I believe a leaf of grass is no less than the journey-work of the stars.') This equalitarian doctrine is based both on the theory of evolution and on a pantheistic belief; at one time Whitman is a mystic, and at another he proclaims, 'Hurrah for positive science!,' while yet admitting that facts serve only to give entrance to 'an area of my dwelling.' This inconsistency, however, he confesses and accepts: 'Do I contradict myself? Very well, then, I contradict myself; (I am large—I contain multitudes.)'; and at the end he reiterates his mystical pantheism ('I bequeathe myself to the earth, to grow from the grass I love; If you want me again, look for me under your bootsoles . . .').

Song of the Broad-Axe, poem by Whitman (q.v.), published in *Leaves of Grass* (1856) as 'Broad-Axe Poem,' and given its present title in 1867.

The 'weapon, shapely, naked, wan,' is traced from the extraction of the rough ore from the earth to its shaping for the utilitarian purposes to which it has been put in different periods of history. The use of the axe by American pioneers, firemen, shipbuilders, carpenters, and butchers is contrasted with its use in foreign countries at earlier periods by sacrificial priests, warriors, and executioners. Thus it becomes symbolic of the freedom of democracy, contrasted with the restrictions of autocratic rule.

Song of the Chattahoochee, The, poem by Lanier (q.v.), published in 1883 and reprinted in *Poems* (1884). Mainly in iambics, with a variation of metres to produce musical sounds, the poem is an onomatopoetic expression of the river's flow 'to be mixed with the main,' obeying 'the voices of Duty' to turn the mills and water the fields during its course.

Song of the Indian Wars, The, narrative poem in heroic couplets by J.G.Neihardt (q.v.), published in 1925. Set in the decade following the Civil War, it 'deals with the last great fight for the bison pastures of the Plains between the westering white men and the prairie tribes,' and forms the third part of the author's 'Epic Cycle of the West.'

The 14 dramatically conceived episodes tell of the treaty council of 1866 at Fort Laramie; the rebellion of the Indians at the excessive demands of the whites; the council of the tribes at Red Cloud's Powder River camp; the battle at Fort Phil Kearney, and subsequent fights in the Bozeman Trail country, with the battle of Little Big Horn as a climax; and finally the death of Crazy Horse. The protagonists also include Sitting Bull, Red Hawk, Custer, Reno, and others, but the most powerful forces are shown to be tribal and racial impulses, and the rugged natural environment, as aspects of the necessity of events in which individual will and daring play a secondary though vivid role.

Song of the Lark, The, novel by Willa Cather (q.v.) published in 1915.

Thea Kronborg, daughter of a Swedish minister in Colorado, during her growth to adolescence develops a possessing interest in music. Her ability on the piano is encouraged by her eccentric German music teacher, Professor Wunsch, and by Dr. Howard Archie, a kindly, educated physician whose unfortunate marriage taints his life. Set apart from the townspeople by her talents and ardent nature, she prefers

such friends as 'Spanish Johnny' Tellamantez and the railroad worker, Ray Kennedy, who falls in love with her but dies in a train wreck, leaving her his insurance. With this sum she goes to Chicago, at 17, to study with the pianist, Andor Harsanyi, who finds in her the same innate taste and artistic integrity that mark his own character. When he discovers that she is earning her way by singing in a church choir, he listens to her voice, and finds it has great possibilities. He sends her to study voice with Madison Bowers, whose chill, selfish attitude repels her, but through him, she meets the wealthy young brewer, Fred Ottenburg, who introduces her to such socially prominent friends and art patrons as the Nathanmeyers. After she becomes ill and discouraged, despite her progress, Ottenburg invites her to his father's Arizona ranch. They fall in love, and travel together in Mexico, but separate because Fred, already married, is unable to obtain a divorce. Dr.Archie advances her the money necessary for study in Europe, and after ten years she becomes a great Wagnerian soprano of the Metropolitan Opera. Although she later marries Ottenburg, her life is expressed and bound up in her career, in which she finds not happiness but the fulfillment of the driving artistic impulse that has always ruled her.

Songs for the Nursery; or, Mother Goose's Melodies, nursery rimes said to have been first printed at Boston (1719) by Thomas Fleet, from verses known by his mother-in-law, Mrs.Elizabeth Goose or Vergoose. This claim, advanced in 1860 and apparently unfounded, is denied by later bibliographers, who generally agree that the collection was first published at London (1760), from English and French sources including Perrault's *Contes de ma mère l'oye* (1697).

Songs from the Ghetto, poems by Morris Rosenfeld (q.v.).

Songs from Vagabondia, poems by Bliss Carman and Richard Hovey (qq.v.).

Songs of Labor, group of six poems and a dedication, by Whittier (q.v.), forming the title section of a volume published in 1850. The poems, in various metres, celebrate the dignity and delights of labor for 'The Shoemakers,' 'The Fishermen,' 'The Lumbermen,' 'The Ship-Builders,' 'The Drovers,' and 'The Huskers.'

Songs of the Sierras, poems by Joaquin Miller (q.v.).

Sonnets of a Portrait Painter, poems by A.D.Ficke (q.v.).

Sons of Liberty, secret organizations that arose in protest against the Stamp Act, and helped precipitate the Revolutionary struggle. Samuel Adams and Paul Revere were among the leaders in New England. See also *Copperhead*.

Sooner State, popular name of Oklahoma, so-called because when it was open for homesteading, many settlers entered sooner than they were permitted under official regulation.

Sophie, comedy by Philip Moeller (q.v.).

Sorosis, see *Croly, Jane*.

SOTHERN, Edward Askew (1826–81), English-born actor, came to the U.S. (1852), and during his long stage career was most popular for the role of Lord Dundreary in *Our American Cousin* (q.v.). He was appearing in this part the night of Lincoln's assassination.

Edward Hugh Sothern (1859–1933) was the most famous of his three sons who became actors. He first appeared with his father's company (1879), and later in comedies under the management of Daniel Frohman. Later he organized his own company, and toured the U.S., becoming noted for romantic and Shakespearean roles, especially in collaboration with Julia Marlowe, whom he married (1911). *The Melancholy Tale of 'Me'* (1916) is his autobiography.

Sot-Weed Factor, The, Hudibrastic satirical poem by Ebenezer Cook (q.v.), published at London (1708). It is ostensibly the record of an Englishman's visit to Maryland, although it is now considered to be by an American. The subtitle amply indicates the contents: 'A Voyage to Maryland, A Satyr. In which Is Described, The Laws, Government, Courts, and Constitutions of the Country; and also the Buildings, Feasts, Frolics, Entertainments and Drunken Humours of the Inhabitants of that Part of America. In Burlesque Verse.' *Sot-Weed Redivivus: or The Planter's Looking Glass . . . by E.C., Gent.* (1730) has been attributed to the same author.

SOULÉ, Pierre (1801–70), French-born lawyer and diplomat, came to the U.S. (1825) to escape punishment for his revo-

lutionary actions. He was elected to the Senate from Louisiana (1847–53), and showed himself an ardent believer in state rights and American imperialism. He served as Pierce's minister to Spain (1853–4), and his extreme unpopularity abroad, because of his desire that the U.S. seize Cuba, reached a climax in the framing of the Ostend Manifesto (q.v.).

Sound and the Fury, The, novel by Faulkner (q.v.), published in 1929. The story is told in four parts, through the stream of consciousness of three characters (the sons, Benjy, Quentin, and Jason), and finally in an objective account.

The Compson family, formerly genteel Southern patricians, now lead a degenerate, perverted life on their shrunken plantation near Jefferson, Mississippi. The disintegration of the family, which clings to outworn aristocratic conventions, is counterpointed by the strength of the Negro servants, who include old Dilsey and her son Luster. The latter tends the idiot, Benjy Compson, who is 33 and incapable of speech or any but the simplest actions. Through his broken thoughts, which revert to his childhood at every chance stimulation of his acute senses, is disclosed the tragedy of his drunken father; his proud, sniveling, hypochondriac mother; his weak-minded Uncle Maury; his sister Candace (Caddy), whom he adores because she is kind to him; his mean, dishonest brother Jason; and his sensitive brother Quentin, a promising student at Harvard, who goes mad, obsessed by love of Caddy, and, shamed by her seduction, commits suicide. When Caddy is forced to marry and leave home, Benjy is desolate, but he plays like a child with her illegitimate daughter, until she grows up, gives evidence of her mother's nymphomaniac strain, runs away with a tent-show performer, and steals a sum of money from Jason.

SOUSA, John Philip (1854–1932), violinist, bandmaster, and composer, was the leader of the U.S.Marine Band (1880–92), and later toured the U.S. and Europe with his own band. He composed a dozen comic operas, and became famous as 'the march king' for his many military marches, including *Semper Fidelis* (1888), *Washington Post March* (1889), *El Capitan* (1896), and *Stars and Stripes Forever* (1897). He was a musical director for the U.S.Army during the Spanish-American War and the World War. *Marching Along* (1928) is his autobiography.

South, The, region including the present states of Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina, Georgia, Kentucky, Tennessee, Louisiana, Mississippi, Alabama, Missouri, Arkansas, Florida, West Virginia, eastern Texas, and formerly Delaware. The area was explored and colonized by the French and Spanish during the 16th century, among their leaders being Narvaez, Ponce de Leon, Cabeza de Vaca, De Soto, Ribault, Laudonnière, Jolliet, Marquette, and La Salle. The first settlement was made at St.Augustine, Florida (1565), and Franciscan and Jesuit missionaries were prominent in the early colonization, although the settlers also included Huguenots. Roanoke and Jamestown (qq.v.) were the first English settlements, the latter being founded by the Virginia Company (q.v.). Except for the books of Sandys and John Smith, the English writing of this period was mainly promotional or descriptive, e.g. the works of Whitaker, Pory, Alsop, Hammond, Strachey, Hariot, and the authors of the 'Burwell Papers.' From the beginning, the South was characteristically agrarian, and the second wave of colonists, led by wealthy Cavaliers who came during the interregnum, stimulated the growth of the aristocratic plantation system, in which the staple crops of tobacco, rice, and later cotton were worked under the institution of slavery (q.v.). There was little popular education, and, even after the founding of William and Mary (1693), education tended to be restricted to the upper classes. Southern culture thus tended to follow the aristocratic Cavalier tradition. The dominant Episcopal Church crushed dissent in most of the colonies, although Catholicism flourished in Maryland under the Calverts, Oglethorpe's Georgia was nonsectarian, and in the 18th century Virginia became comparatively tolerant. As a result of various restraining forces, art and literature in the early South were of little consequence. Most of the writing was historical, as in the works of Beverley, Lawson, Blair, Stith, and Hugh Jones, although there were also the satires of Tailfer and Ebenezer Cook, and the charming journals of Byrd. Southern patriot leaders in the Revolutionary struggle included Patrick Henry, Washington, Jefferson, the

Lees, Madison, the Randolphs, Francis Marion, George Mason, and Pickens, and many battles in the later phases of the war took place in the South. These men continued as leaders of the new republic; of the first five presidents, four were Southerners, while Washington,D.C. (q.v.) became the capital of the U.S. During the 19th century, however, the economic system of the South, based on slave labor, separated the region from the North, which became increasingly industrial, and, with the frontier West, assumed greater political and financial power. Such differences as had appeared in the Federal Constitutional Convention led to the Southern emphasis on state rights, especially after the Louisiana Purchase (q.v.,1803), which brought within the U.S. the whole region of the Mississippi River (q.v.). The widening schism was marked by such crises as the Missouri Compromise (1820), Calhoun's opposition to the Northern 'Tariff of Abominations,' the conflict over the Mexican War and its spoils, the Compromise of 1850, the struggles in Kansas and Nebraska, and the Dred Scott case. Although the South thus tended to become a political unit, its ante-bellum culture was various, as represented in the leading cities, Richmond, Charleston, Atlanta, St.Louis, and New Orleans (qq.v.), and in the principal rural types: the genteelly patrician, semifeudal society that flourished on the coastal plains; the nonslaveholding white farmers of the uplands; and the brash, intensely democratic Old Southwest (q.v.). The survival of Spanish and French traditions, especially among the Creoles and Cajuns of Louisiana, made for further distinctions, as did the tendency of the Border States (q.v.) to share the interests of the North. Southern aristocrats tended toward statesmanship rather than literature. The agrarian emphasis may be seen in Jefferson and John Taylor of Caroline, the feudal gentility in J.P.Kennedy and the laudatory biographies of Marshall, Wirt, and Weems. The English Augustan tradition appears in the Tuesday Club of Annapolis, the Delphian Club of Baltimore, and the Russell's Bookstore Group (q.v.) in Charleston, influenced both by neoclassical views and the romanticism of Scott, as is evident in the writings of Legaré, Simms, and others. The fiction of N.B.Tucker was based on Calhoun's philosophy; William J. Grayson was an apologist for slavery; W.A.Carruthers and J.E.Cooke were slight historical romancers; Lamar shows the influence of Byron; and Poe and Chivers represent Southern romanticism carried into the realm of metaphysical mysticism. Regional periodicals included the *Southern Literary Messenger*, *DeBow's Review*, and the *Southern Quarterly Review*. The sectional feeling expressed through these and other media reached its peak in the Civil War (q.v.), when the South seceded from the Union, to form the temporary political association of the Confederacy (q.v.). Among the poets of the war and its sequel were Hayne, Timrod, J.R.Randall, Father Ryan, Lanier, J.R.Thompson, and Margaret Preston. During the period of Reconstruction (q.v.), the former social and economic framework was overturned by the abolition of slavery and the new status of the Negroes (q.v.). 'Carpetbaggers' and 'scalawags' controlled politics, and Southerners were led to retaliate through such organizations as the Ku Klux Klan (q.v.). Literature was crushed during this period of ruin, from which the South has never fully recovered. Some authors, like Irwin Russell, G.W.Bagby, and T.N.Page, wrote nostalgically of the lost cause. Others, like H.W.Grady, Watterson, and W.H.Page, turned to the active work of readjustment. The local-color movement included such Southern authors as J.C. Harris, R.M.Johnston, Cable, Kate Chopin, Mary Murfree, Fox, Hearn, and J.T. Moore, while the earlier South was also the subject of Clemens's realistic narratives and Mary Johnston's romances. Father Tabb, Lizette Reese, and Madison Cawein are among the few later poets. During the 20th century there has been an expansion and diversification of industry, but, despite its effects on the cities, Southern culture remains largely agrarian. The region has consistently supported the Democratic party, causing it to be known as the 'Solid South,' but intense economic and social changes have caused the emergence of political leaders ranging from conservative followers of the party line to such radical demagogues as Huey Long (q.v.). Besides regionalism (q.v.), literary manifestations of the contemporary Southern mind include the romances of Cabell, Margaret Mitchell, and Hervey Allen; portraits of Negro life by DuBose Heyward, Julia Peterkin, and Paul Green; realistic studies of industrialism by T.S. Stribling and Olive Dargan; the works of

Caldwell, Faulkner, and others who depict the lives of poor-white farmers and decadent patricians; poetry and fiction concerned with the relation of people to the land, by Elizabeth Roberts, Caroline Lamb, Jesse Stuart, and Marjorie Rawlings; and the writings of individual authors who combine these concerns with expressions of protest or irony, like Thomas Wolfe and Ellen Glasgow. Southern educational institutions include Washington and Lee, Duke, Vanderbilt, the University of North Carolina, University of Virginia, and such Negro schools as Fisk University, Tuskegee, and Hampton. Regional periodicals of recent times have included the *Sewanee Review*, *The Virginia Quarterly Review*, the *South Atlantic Quarterly*, the *Southern Review*, *The Fugitive*, and *The Reviewer*.

South Atlantic Quarterly (1902–), founded by J.S.Bassett at Durham, North Carolina, as a medium of opinion for historical, economic, and literary discussion of Southern problems. Since the end of Bassett's editorship (1905) it has continued the same policy of attempting to enlighten the North on Southern questions, although avoiding a sectional approach.

Southampton Insurrection, rebellion of some 60 slaves in Southampton County, Virginia (1831), led by the Negro Nat Turner, who considered himself divinely sanctioned to lead his fellows to freedom. Before Turner and the other leaders were hanged, they killed 54 white persons.

Southern and Western Monthly Magazine and Review, The (1845), Charleston periodical edited by Simms, whose policy combined the serious tone of a literary review with the attractive qualities of a popular magazine. Simms was the principal contributor, and others included E.A.Duyckinck and T.H.Chivers. The magazine was absorbed by the *Southern Literary Messenger*.

Southern Literary Journal and Monthly Magazine (1835–8), Charleston periodical that championed the cause of slavery and recorded the progress of Southern culture. Its most distinguished contributor was Simms, whose leading article was 'American Criticism and Critics.'

Southern Literary Messenger (1834–64), magazine founded at Richmond by Thomas W. White, whose first nine numbers were edited by James E Heath. Poe's first contribution was 'Berenice' (March 1835), and in December of that year he became the editor, at a salary of $15 per week. He published 83 reviews, 6 poems, 4 essays, and 3 stories, and increased the magazine's subscription list from 500 to more than 3,500. His 'tomahawk' method of criticism made the *Messenger* famous, and led to literary feuds with such authors as those of the Knickerbocker Group. His persistent drinking led to his loss of the editorship (Jan. 1837). White then became editor, with aid from others, until his death (1843), after which Benjamin B. Minor became publisher and editor. Although Poe wrote two unimportant articles, and other former contributors continued, the magazine declined in literary significance, and gave great attention to military and naval affairs. Under J.R. Thompson (1847–60), G.W.Bagby (1860–64), and Frank H. Alfriend (1864), it dwindled to death. *The Contributors and Contributions to the Southern Literary Messenger* was published in 1936, and in 1939 the magazine was revived.

Southern Quarterly Review, The (1842–57), pro-slavery journal mainly issued from Charleston, which opposed British aggression and advocated state rights and free trade. It was not as important as *The Southern Review* but included notable contributions under the editorship of DeBow (1844–5) and Simms (1856–7).

Southern Review, The (1828–32), quarterly literary magazine, published from Charleston as an expression of the culture of the South. Hugh S. Legaré was an editor and contributor. Another quarterly of the name (1867–79) had a similar purpose. A third quarterly *Southern Review* (1935–) was founded in Baton Rouge, Louisiana. Although issued by the Louisiana State University Press, it is not a university organ, but is primarily a regional review. Its editors include R.P.Warren, and it has printed contributions from J.P. Bishop, Kenneth Burke, Herbert Agar, Katherine Anne Porter, J.C.Ransom, and Allen Tate.

Southwest, as distinguished from the Old Southwest (q.v.) of the early 19th-century frontier, is the region including the border states of Arizona, New Mexico, and western Texas. Although there are some arable areas, the region is generally

composed of arid deserts and mountains, and its sparse white population is mainly engaged in mining or in raising cattle and sheep. The Santa Fé Trail (q.v.) was an important trade route during the 19th century, leading to the growth of such communities as Santa Fé and Taos (q.v.), the home of Kit Carson and other scouts. As the native region of the Navajo, Apache, Hopi, and Zuñi Indians (qq.v.), and the refuge of such frontier types as the cowboy, the prospector, and the two-gun sheriff, the Southwest is a favorite setting for the popular romantic fiction of such authors as Zane Grey and Harold Bell Wright. Cowboy folk ballads and tales have been collected by Lomax, Sandburg, J.Frank Dobie, and others, and the literature of the Southwest includes works about the Indians by Adolf Bandelier, Oliver LaFarge, and Mary Austin; Stanley Vestal's books about Kit Carson; local-color stories of Arizona mining towns and cattle ranches by Stephen Crane, A.H. Lewis, and others; Willa Cather's *Death Comes for the Archbishop*, concerned with Catholic missionaries in New Mexico; and the writings of authors associated with the Taos and Santa Fé artist colonies, including Mabel Dodge Luhan, D.H.Lawrence, Harvey Fergusson, Paul Horgan, and Maxwell Anderson.

SOUTHWORTH, E[MMA] D[OROTHY] E[LIZA] N[EVITTE] (1819–99), popular feminine novelist of the domestic-sentimental school, lived most of her life in Washington,D.C. Her *Retribution* (1849) was followed by some 60 similar romances with melodramatic plots, originally written as magazine serials, and usually set in the South. Among the most popular were *The Curse of the Clifton* (1852), *The Missing Bride* (1855), *The Hidden Hand* (1859), *The Fatal Marriage* (1869), *The Maiden Widow* (1870), and *Self-Raised* (1876).

SOUZA, E., pseudonym of Evelyn Scott (q.v.).

SOWER (SAUER), CHRISTOPHER (1693–1758), German-born printer, whose Pennsylvania press issued a Bible in German (1743), the second Bible to be printed in America, since it was preceded only by the Indian translation of John Eliot.

SPANGENBERG, AUGUSTUS GOTTLIEB (1704–92), follower of Count Zinzendorf, came from Germany to America (1735) to found a branch of the Moravian Church, for which he worked, mainly in this country, during the rest of his life. His *Idea Fidei Fratrum* (1782) is a declaration of the Moravian faith, and his other writings include a biography of Zinzendorf.

Spanish-American War, fought (April–Aug. 1898) between Spain and the U.S., following years of antagonism over the growing struggle for the independence of Cuba. The U.S. supported Cuban liberals because of the island's strategic position, American financial interests in Cuban agriculture and industry, and sympathy for the oppressed people. These motives and the feeling of 'manifest destiny' led to U.S.intervention, after the sinking of the *Maine* (q.v.) and the publication of a letter from the Spanish minister at Washington, which insulted President McKinley. Feeling was aroused by provocative articles in the yellow press, and in rapid order Manila was captured by Commodore Dewey (q.v.), General Shafter and his troops invaded Cuba, and the Spanish fleet was destroyed at Santiago (q.v.) by a U.S.fleet under Sampson and Schley. The Rough Riders (q.v.), under Leonard Wood and Theodore Roosevelt, figured in the highly publicized capture of San Juan Hill. By the Treaty of Paris (Dec. 10), Spain relinquished her power in Cuba, gave Puerto Rico and Guam to the U.S. as indemnity, and sold the Philippines to the U.S. for $20,000,000. The U.S. was now first considered a world power, and important revisions of foreign policy resulted, including involvement in the Far East. Approximately 6,472 enlisted men died as a result of the war.

SPARKS, JARED (1789–1866), born in Connecticut, after graduation from Harvard (1815) became a tutor at the college (1817–19), a Unitarian minister at Baltimore (1819–23), and editor of *The North American Review* (1817–18,1824–30). Returning to Harvard to become the first professor of history in any American university (1839–49), he was elected president (1849–53), in which capacity he failed to further the historical program he had so promisingly begun. In his writings he broke the ground for the modern study of American history, and as editor of the *Library of American Biography* contributed lives of John Ledyard (1828) and of Gouverneur Morris (3 vols.,1832). Although his editorship did much to make known previously unprinted manuscripts,

he was not a scientific historian, and frequently bowdlerized in order to present his subjects as gentlemen and heroes, in such works as *The Writings of George Washington* (containing a biography in Vol.I; 12 vols.,1834–7), *The Diplomatic Correspondence of the American Revolution* (12 vols.,1829–30), and *The Works of Benjamin Franklin* (10 vols.,1836–40).

Spartacus to the Gladiators, see *Kellogg, Elijah.*

Specimen Days and Collect, autobiographical narrative by Whitman (q.v.), published in 1882. It incorporates *Memoranda During the War* (1875).

The first part contains the author's reminiscences of his early life and the fascinating panorama of New York. This is followed by journal-jottings and memoranda of the Civil War, both on the front and in Washington hospitals. The last part of the book deals with his observations of nature and his own sensations, and incorporates travel sketches of his excursions to the West, Canada, and Boston, with literary criticism of the authors he met, and others who interested him, such as Carlyle.

Spectra, satirical parody of the technique and diction of modern poetry, was published in 1916. Written by Witter Bynner (q.v.), under the pseudonym Emanuel Morgan, and A.D.Ficke (q.v.), under the pseudonym Anne Knish, the hoax was for a time considered to be a serious contribution to contemporary experimentation in verse.

Speedwell, see *Mayflower.*

SPEYER, LEONORA (1872–), New York poet, whose lyrics in her first volume, *A Canopic Jar* (1921), promised the command of form and intense personal idiom which were fulfilled in *Fiddler's Farewell* (1926; Pulitzer Prize, 1927), especially noted for its wit and understanding of feminine character. The poems in a later volume, *Naked Heel* (1931), have been criticized as emotionally 'thin' and excessively formal.

Sphinx, The, poem by Emerson (q.v.), first published in *The Dial* (1841) and collected in his *Poems* (1847). Arranged in stanzas containing two quatrains of irregular two- and three-stress lines, the poem describes an encounter of a poet with the Sphinx, and his solution of her riddle. The Sphinx is 'the great mother,' the all-inclusive divine spirit, who confesses, 'Who telleth one of my meanings, Is master of all I am.' Emerson paraphrased the poem in his notebook (1859): 'The perception of identity unites all things and explains one by another. . . But if the mind live only in particulars, and see only differences . . ., then the world addresses to this mind a question it cannot answer . . . and it is vanquished by the distracting variety.'

SPINGARN, J[OEL] E[LIAS] (1875–1939), professor of comparative literature at Columbia (1899–1911) and literary critic, whose books include *A History of Literary Criticism in the Renaissance* (1899), *The New Criticism* (1911), *Creative Criticism* (1917), and volumes of verse including *The New Hesperides* (1911) and *Poems* (1924). *A Spingarn Enchiridion* (1929) is his reply to P.E.More's contention that he taught that criticism is 'only impression.' He also edited many works, and in 1914 established the award of the Spingarn Medal, granted annually to an outstanding Negro.

Spirit of the Age, The (Feb.1849–Apr. 1850), New York weekly journal, edited by W.H.Channing with the purpose of seeking 'the Peaceful Transformation of human society from isolated to associated interests.' The many reforms it advocated included antislavery, abolition of the death penalty, universal education, pacifism, and temperance. Contributors included C.A.Dana, Parke Godwin, the elder Henry James, J.S.Dwight, Albert Brisbane, and Ripley, and there were also translations from foreign socialist writers.

Spirit of the Times (1831–58), New York periodical published by W.T.Porter (q.v.). This racy 'Chronicle of the Turf, Agriculture, Field Sports, Literature, and the Stage' at one time probably had a circulation over 40,000, and was the medium for many 'original contributions' from subscribers in every section of the country, but particularly in the old Southwest. These contributions were distinctly masculine tales based on oral humor of the frontier. Some of the Sut Lovingood sketches were first published here, and other contributions included 'The Big Bear of Arkansas' and work by J.J. Hooper, W.T.Thompson, Sol Smith, and J.M.Field. The magazine was renamed *Porter's Spirit of the Times* (1856), and after his death (1858) became *Wilkes'*

Spirit of the Times, owned and edited by George Wilkes (1819–85).

Spiritual, religious folk song of the Negroes, perhaps stemming from the camp-meeting songs and spirituals of the white evangelistic sects, and characterized by the melancholy, pathos, and naïve faith of the Negro. It frequently consists of stanzas in which a single line is repeated several times with a line of refrain which unites the whole. The songs are essentially folk creations, often the result of mass extemporizing, lending themselves to many variations, and are chiefly of social value as literature. Among the more famous are: *Golden Slippers; Roll, Jordan, Roll;* and *Swing Low, Sweet Chariot.*

SPOFFORD, HARRIET [ELIZABETH] PRESCOTT (1835–1921), New England author best known for her numerous romantic short stories. Her reputation began when the *Atlantic Monthly* published 'In a Cellar' (Feb. 1859), a tale of adventure characterized by its glowing descriptive passages. Her first novel, *Sir Rohan's Ghost* (1860), in the tradition of Poe and the Gothic romance, is the story of a man who tries to kill his mistress, and is later plagued by her daughter, with whom he falls in love. *Azarian: An Episode* (1864) is a poetic tale, concerning Constant Azarian, an artistic Bostonian who is too self-centered to appreciate the devotion of idealistic Ruth Yetton. *The Amber Gods, and Other Stories* (1863) was the first of Mrs.Spofford's many collections of romantic tales, which include *New-England Legends* (1871), *A Scarlet Poppy and Other Stories* (1894), *Hester Stanley's Friends* (1898), *Old Madame and Other Tragedies* (1900), and *The Elder's People* (1920). After her marriage (1865) she lived much of the time in Washington,D.C., and her interest in the local color of this city is shown in *Old Washington* (1906). She wrote other novels, and published many volumes of poetry, including *In Titian's Garden* (1903). Some of her many literary friendships in New England are recalled in *A Little Book of Friends* (1916).

Spoilers, The, novel by Rex Beach (q.v.).

Spoils of Poynton, The, novel by Henry James (q.v.) published in 1897.

Old Mrs.Gereth and young Fleda Vetch, while visiting the English country place of the vulgar Brigstocks, find a bond of sympathy in their dislike of their hosts' bad taste. Mrs.Gereth, who has been seeking a desirable wife for her undistinguished son Owen, invites Fleda to visit her. Her great interest is her house at Poynton, where she has assembled a magnificent collection of furniture and objects of art, and Fleda is moved to tears by its splendor. She falls in love with Owen, but he has decided to marry Mona Brigstock, whom he brings to visit Poynton, his property under his father's will. The antipathy of Mona and Mrs.Gereth flares up at once, and Owen, realizing that his mother must vacate the house, asks Fleda's aid in persuading her to leave. Mrs.Gereth takes revenge by removing her greatest treasures from Poynton, and Mona threatens to break with Owen unless they are returned. He has meanwhile fallen in love with Fleda, who urges his mother to send the 'spoils' back to Poynton. When Owen comes to Fleda's shabby home and asks her to marry him, she tells him that he must first break with Mona. The next news received by Mrs.Gereth and Fleda is that of his sudden marriage to Mona. After a time Fleda receives a letter from Owen, asking her to take from the house whatever object she values most. On arriving at Poynton, she finds the place in ruins as the result of an accidental fire. Its treasures, which have twisted so many lives, have been entirely destroyed.

Spoils system, see *Marcy, William.*

Spontaneous Me, poem by Whitman (q.v.), published in *Leaves of Grass* (1856) as 'Bunch Poem,' included in 'Children of Adam' (1860), and given its present title in 1867. It illustrates the author's pantheism and his amorous hypersensitivity by a catalogue of vital experiences—'the real poems, (what we call poems being merely pictures).'

Spoon River Anthology, free-verse poems of Edgar Lee Masters (q.v.), first printed in *Reedy's Mirror*, and published in book form in 1915. Basing his form on that of the Greek *Anthology*, the author presents a series of realistic, candid epitaphs, in which some 250 people buried in the cemetery of a small town of the Middle West reveal the essence of their secret lives. Many of the portraits are interrelated, so that 19 family histories are presented in the form of individual confessions, showing the typical frustrated ideals, petty intrigues, monotonous lives, and occasional exalted experiences of these

representative characters. *The New Spoon River* (1924) is a less successful employment of the same method.

Among the best known of the epitaphs are those of 'Anne Rutledge,' presenting Lincoln's youthful love as the inspiration of his later humanity and charity, 'Wedded to him, not through union, But through separation,' and the source of 'vibrations of deathless music'; 'Petit, The Poet,' expressing the futility of the career of the town's poetaster, who ignored the real life of the place, devoting himself to 'little iambics, While Homer and Whitman roared in the pines!'; 'Lucinda Matlock,' the epitaph of a vigorous old woman, who died at 96 because she 'had lived enough, that is all,' and who looks with scorn on the 'anger, discontent, and drooping hopes' of a 'degenerate' generation, having learned that 'It takes life to love Life'; 'Benjamin Pantier' and 'Mrs. Benjamin Pantier,' showing the two sides of a domestic tragedy; 'The Village Atheist,' telling of the tubercular 'infidel' who found that 'Immortality is an achievement; And only those who strive mightily Shall possess it'; and 'Fiddler Jones,' the epitaph of a farmer who spent his life making music for others, ending with 'forty acres . . . a broken fiddle . . . And not a single regret.'

SPOTSWOOD, ALEXANDER (1676–1740), colonial governor of Virginia (1710–22), was at first popular because of the favorable concessions he acquired from the Indians, his introduction of the writ of habeas corpus, and his improvement of trade conditions. He was removed from office (1722) because of difficulties over ecclesiastical patronage. His *Official Letters* (1885) are a valuable source for students of the economic and social problems of 18th-century Virginia, and his career is the basis of W.A.Carruthers's novel, *The Knights of the Horse-shoe* (1845).

Spotsylvania Court House, BATTLE OF, Civil War action in northeastern Virginia, in which the armies of Grant and Lee contended (May 8–21, 1864). In this continuation of the Battle of the Wilderness, Grant was unable to penetrate the strong Confederate defense.

SPRAGUE, CHARLES (1791–1875), Boston poet, whose work ranges from the influence of Collins and Gray, in his 'Shakespeare Ode,' through the sentimentalized vein of the graveyard school, in 'The Funeral,' and a simple statement of deism in 'The Winged Worshippers,' to the homely sincerity of 'The Brothers.' He collected his *Writings* (1841).

Springfield Republican, The (1824–), Massachusetts newspaper, founded as a weekly by Samuel Bowles. It became a daily under the direction of his son, the younger Samuel Bowles (q.v.,1844ff.). Although it originally supported the Whigs, it became politically independent as the result of opposition to slavery and the Mexican War, and has consistently maintained an independent policy. Despite its national importance, the *Republican* has always been considered a New England product, and has given much space to such contributors as J.G.Holland, who reflected local views. During the Civil War it supported Lincoln, but it later attacked the corruption of Grant's administration. The paper has continued in the hands of the Bowles family, who in 1926 bought the town's three other newspapers to maintain them independently, with different policies.

Spy, The: A Tale of the Neutral Ground, romance by Cooper (q.v.), published in 1821, and dramatized by C.P.Clinch (1822).

Harvey Birch, supposed to be a Loyalist spy, but secretly in the intelligence service of General Washington, operates in the 'neutral ground' of his native Westchester County, New York, and aids his neighbors, Henry Wharton, a Loyalist who pretends to be neutral, his daughters Sarah and Frances, and a son, Captain Henry Wharton of the British army. In 1780, Washington, in his accustomed disguise as Mr.Harper, is sheltered at the Wharton home, where he is impressed by the rebel sympathies of Frances. To repay the family's hospitality, Birch warns Henry of his impending capture, but the young man, refusing to leave, is taken by a rebel force under Captain Jack Lawton. Frances appeals to her fiancé, the patriot Major Peyton Dunwoodie, but meanwhile Captain Henry escapes during a battle, only to be recaptured with Colonel Wellemere, Sarah's British admirer. Birch is almost captured by Lawton, who mistakes him for a spy, but in their struggle he spares Lawton's life, a good deed repaid by Lawton when Birch is later turned over to him by the 'Skinners,' a band of marauding patriots. The wedding of Wellemere

and Sarah is interrupted by Birch, who reveals that Wellemere is already married, and the Englishman escapes during a raid by the marauders, who destroy the Wharton home. Henry is sentenced to be executed as a spy, but Birch helps him escape, and Frances, seeking them, goes to Birch's mountain retreat, where she finds 'Mr.Harper' and persuades him to end the pursuit of her brother. Birch takes Henry to a British ship, Frances and Dunwoodie are married, Lawton is killed in battle, and Birch, ending his service to Washington, refuses rewards, preferring to remain an itinerant peddler.

Squatter Sovereignty, doctrine of local choice of policies and forms of government in a frontier region, before state or territorial governments are set up. Particularly applied to the issue of slavery, the doctrine was championed by Stephen Douglas (q.v.), and in Kansas and Nebraska led to the formation of such companies as the Emigrant Aid Society (q.v.).

Squaw Man, The, play by E.M.Royle (q.v.), produced in 1905 and revived in England as *The White Man* (1908). It was adapted by Brian Hooker and W.H.Post as the libretto of the musical play, *White Eagle* (1927).

Captain James Wynnegate, an Englishman, after quarreling with his family adopts the alias Jim Carson and goes to the American Far West. There he marries the Indian squaw Nat-u-ritch, who has saved his life. When a British solicitor arrives to tell Wynnegate that he has inherited an earldom, Nat-u-ritch, realizing that she stands in his way, leaves him and their child, and goes into the hills to commit suicide.

SQUIBOB, pseudonym of G.H.Derby (q.v.).

SQUIER, Ephraim George (1821–88), New York archæologist, whose writings include: *Ancient Monuments of the Mississippi Valley* (1848); and *Aboriginal Monuments of the State of New York* (1851). His other books, *Nicaragua* (1852), *The States of Central America* (1858), and *Peru* (1877), were based on knowledge gathered during diplomatic missions to Central and South America.

Stack Arms, poem by J.B.Allston (q.v.).

STALLINGS, Laurence (1894–), born in Georgia, had a brief journalistic career, served in the First World War, in which he was seriously wounded, and returned to become a critic on the New York *World.* His war experiences furnished the background for his novel, *Plumes* (1924), and for the play *What Price Glory* (q.v.,1924), written in collaboration with Maxwell Anderson. With Anderson he also wrote *First Flight* (1925), concerned with an episode in the youth of Andrew Jackson, and *The Buccaneer* (1925), dealing with the pirate Morgan. These were published as *Three American Plays* (1926). Stallings next wrote the books and lyrics for two operettas, *Deep River* (1926), set in 19th-century New Orleans, and *Rainbow* (1928), set in the Far West. He has also dramatized *A Farewell to Arms* (1930), written many motion-picture scenarios, and edited *The First World War* (1933), a collection of photographs and commentary. In 1935 he served as a foreign correspondent in the Ethiopian War.

Stamp Act, British revenue measure, designed by George Grenville, chancellor of the exchequer, requiring that all legal documents, commercial papers, pamphlets, newspapers, almanacs, cards, and dice bear stamps representing the tax paid upon them. It was extended to the American colonies (1765), where it was considered to be 'taxation without representation,' and severely attacked by Samuel Adams, James Otis, and other Sons of Liberty, as well as by more conservative spokesmen. A Stamp Act Congress was convened (Oct. 1765) to issue a *Declaration of Rights* (q.v.) and a *Petition to the King.* The act was repealed the following year.

Standard, The, weekly journal edited by Henry George (q.v.).

Standard Oil Company, see *Rockefeller, John D.*

STANDISH, Burt L., pseudonym of W.G.Patten (q.v.).

STANDISH, Myles (or Miles) (*c.*1584–1656), born in England, served in the Low Countries as a mercenary soldier, and was engaged by the Pilgrims to sail with them on the *Mayflower* (1620) as a military leader. His measures of defense and diplomatic ability in handling his soldiers soon made him more than an employe, and he may have become a member of the church. Among his important actions were the building of the first port; the dispersal of

the settlement of Thomas Morton by whom he was called 'Captain Shrimp, a quondam drummer'; the negotiation for loans and property rights from English merchants and the Council for New England; the administration of the post of treasurer; and the founding with John Alden of the town of Duxbury. There is no historical basis for Longfellow's 'The Courtship of Miles Standish' (q.v.), for Standish was twice married.

STANFORD, [AMASA] LELAND (1824–93), after several years as an unsuccessful lawyer in New York and Wisconsin, became a California merchant during the 1850's, entered state politics, and served as governor (1861–3). While in office he helped to promote the company that built the Central Pacific Railroad, in which his partners included C.P.Huntington. Stanford was president of the Central Pacific and Southern Pacific systems until 1890. Having continued in Republican politics, he was elected to the U.S.Senate (1885–93), in which he served without distinction.

Stanford University, name generally applied to Leland Stanford Junior University, a coeducational institution founded at Palo Alto, California (1885), by Leland Stanford, in memory of his son, who died in boyhood. Besides the usual college departments, the university is noted for its school of medicine and its school of ichthyology, founded by the first president, David Starr Jordan (q.v.). Graduates include Herbert Hoover (1895), Will Irwin (1897), Dane Coolidge (1898), and Henry Suzzallo (1899), and others who have attended include Wallace Irwin (1896–9), Maxwell Anderson (M.A., 1914), and John Steinbeck (1919–20, 1922–3, 1924–5).

STANLEY, SIR HENRY MORTON (1841–1904), English-born explorer, came to the U.S. (1859), where he adopted the name of his employer, and dropped his original name, John Rowlands. After serving in the Confederate army and U.S.navy, he became a reporter for the New York *Herald*, and his most exciting of many dramatic assignments was the search in central Africa (1871) for the lost Scottish missionary and explorer, David Livingstone, whom he finally discovered and greeted with the famous sentence, 'Dr.Livingstone, I presume?' Then and on later trips he continued the explorations of Livingstone, and for some time worked to establish the Congo Free State. Although an American citizen (1862–95), he resumed his English citizenship and was knighted (1899). His writings include: *How I Found Livingstone* (1872), *Through the Dark Continent* (1878), and *In Darkest Africa* (1890).

STANSBURY, JOSEPH (1742–1809), English-born Loyalist poet, came to Philadelphia (1767), where during the Revolution he was in high favor with the British as an urbane and witty satirist of the patriots. Although he opposed the Revolution he did not, like the other major Loyalist poet, Jonathan Odell, become virulent or descend to invective, but chose instead with gay humor to show the foibles and inconsistencies of the patriots. His opposition took a more serious turn when he acted as a go-between in the treasonable negotiations of Benedict Arnold and André. Although he tolerantly tried to forget differences of opinion after the war, destroyed his earlier political verse, and wrote some conciliatory lines, the erstwhile rebels temporarily imprisoned him, causing him to flee to Nova Scotia. Not until 1793 was he able to return in safety to the U.S. His poetry was first collected in *The Loyal Verses of Joseph Stansbury and Jonathan Odell* (1860). Caroline Kirkland was his granddaughter.

STANTON, EDWIN MCMASTERS (1814–69), born in Ohio, attended Kenyon College (1831–3), was admitted to the bar (1836), and practiced law in Ohio until 1847, when he moved to Pittsburgh. With an increasing number of important cases before the Supreme Court, he moved to Washington,D.C. (1856). In 1860 he became Buchanan's attorney-general, in which position, although he was a Jacksonian Democrat and an opponent of slavery, he placed all emphasis on preserving the Union and upheld the constitutional rights of slaveholders. He was a prominent critic of Lincoln's policies, but entered the cabinet as secretary of war (1862), and proved himself an efficient, forceful administrator. His vindictiveness toward the South made him a leader of the radical Republicans who opposed Lincoln's conciliatory attitude, and, when he continued as secretary of war under Johnson, he joined with Thaddeus Stevens and Seward in forcing an oppressive Reconstruction

program. As a result, Johnson attempted to oust him (1867), furnishing the pretext for the impeachment proceedings against the President. Stanton was reinstated by the Senate (1868), and resolved to remain in office, despite friction, until the failure of the impeachment made his resignation necessary. He was appointed to the Supreme Court just before his death.

STANTON, Elizabeth Cady (1815–1902), Abolitionist and woman suffrage leader, was an editor of the *Revolution* (1868–70), a militant feminist magazine, and one of the authors of a *History of Woman Suffrage* (1881–7). Her autobiography, *Eighty Years and More*, appeared in 1898. She was the mother of Harriot Blatch (q.v.).

STANTON, Frank Lebby (1857–1927), Georgia poet, popular for his simple, optimistic, patriotic lyrics which earned him the title 'Riley of the South.' These were published in such volumes as *Comes One with a Song* (1898) and *Songs from Dixie Land* (1900). His daily newspaper column in the *Atlanta Constitution* was republished in part in *Frank L. Stanton's Just from Georgia* (1927).

Star of the West, see *Sumter.*

Star Wagon, *The,* play by Maxwell Anderson (q.v.).

Starbuck, character in *Moby-Dick* (q.v.).

Star-Spangled Banner, *The,* song by Francis Scott Key (q.v.), became the U.S. national anthem by act of Congress (1931), although it had long been popularly considered the anthem and had been officially used by the army and navy since the Spanish-American War. Key, on a legal mission, was detained by the British and forced to view the bombardment of Fort McHenry, near Baltimore, during the night of Sept. 13–14, 1814. The sight of the flag still flying after the night bombing inspired his verses, set to the music of 'Anacreon in Heaven' by the Englishman John Stafford Smith (1750–1836), the anthem of the Anacreontic Societies, clubs of musical amateurs. Key's song was published as 'The Bombardment of Fort McHenry' in broadside form (Sept. 1814), reprinted the same month in *The Baltimore Patriot,* and in the author's *Poems* (1857).

Star-Splitter, *The,* blank verse narrative by Robert Frost (q.v.) published in *New Hampshire* (1923).

Brad McLaughlin's 'life-long curiosity About our place among the infinities' culminates in his burning his house down for the fire insurance, in order to spend the proceeds on a telescope. Disregarding his reputation as an eccentric, he earns a living as a railroad ticket agent, and uses his leisure 'for star-gazing' through his glass, 'the Star-splitter.' Brad and his friend, the poet, often spend their nights in this activity, but, though it provides material for 'some of the best things we ever said,' they remain in ignorance of the real nature of the universe: 'We've looked and looked, but after all where are we?'

Stars and Bars, *The,* first flag of the Confederacy (q.v.), consisted of a horizontal white bar between two red bars, with a blue field containing seven white stars. The design was changed three times before the fall of the government.

Stars and Stripes, *The,* flag of the U.S., adopted by the Continental Congress (June 14, 1777). The flag of the thirteen united states was designed by Francis Hopkinson, and first contained thirteen stripes, alternately white and red, with thirteen white stars on a blue ground. Fifteen stripes and fifteen stars were used to designate the addition to the Union of Vermont and Kentucky (1794–1818), but after 1797 five further states had been admitted, and an Act of Congress (1818) provided for a flag of thirteen stripes, with a new star to be added at the accession of each new state. Betsy Ross (q.v.) is said to have been the first manufacturer of the flag, although this has frequently been denied. The flag is also referred to as 'Old Glory' (q.v.).

State Fair, novel by Phil Stong (q.v.).

State rights, a term that includes both Calhoun's doctrine of absolute state sovereignty and Jefferson's interpretation of the Constitution as reserving to the state all powers not specifically granted to the federal government. This theory, which with Calhoun (q.v.) led to the doctrine of nullification (q.v.), was best expressed by him in his 'South Carolina Exposition.' Famous statements of the state rights theory occur in the Kentucky and Virginia Resolutions, the Hartford Convention (qq.v.), and the disputes leading up to the Civil War.

States, with dates of admission into the Union (see also *Regions*):

Alabama	—Dec. 14, 1819
Arizona	—Feb. 14, 1912
Arkansas	—June 15, 1836
California	—Sept. 9, 1850
Colorado	—Aug. 1, 1876
Connecticut	—Jan. 9, 1788
Delaware	—Dec. 7, 1787
Florida	—Mar. 3, 1845
Georgia	—Jan. 2, 1788
Idaho	—July 3, 1890
Illinois	—Dec. 3, 1818
Indiana	—Dec. 11, 1816
Iowa	—Dec. 28, 1846
Kansas	—Jan. 29, 1861
Kentucky	—June 1, 1792
Louisiana	—Apr. 8, 1812
Maine	—Mar. 15, 1820
Maryland	—Apr. 28, 1788
Massachusetts	—Feb. 6, 1788
Michigan	—Jan. 26, 1837
Minnesota	—May 11, 1858
Mississippi	—Dec. 10, 1817
Missouri	—Aug. 10, 1821
Montana	—Nov. 8, 1889
Nebraska	—Feb. 9, 1867
Nevada	—Oct. 31, 1864
New Hampshire	—June 21, 1788
New Jersey	—Dec. 18, 1787
New Mexico	—Jan. 6, 1912
New York	—July 26, 1788
North Carolina	—Nov. 21, 1789
North Dakota	—Nov. 2, 1889
Ohio	—Mar. 1, 1803
Oklahoma	—Nov. 16, 1907
Oregon	—Feb. 14, 1859
Pennsylvania	—Dec. 12, 1787
Rhode Island	—May 29, 1790
South Carolina	—May 23, 1788
South Dakota	—Nov. 2, 1889
Tennessee	—June 1, 1796
Texas	—Dec. 29, 1845
Utah	—Jan. 4, 1896
Vermont	—Mar. 4, 1791
Virginia	—June 25, 1788
Washington	—Nov. 11, 1889
West Virginia	—June 20, 1863
Wisconsin	—May 29, 1848
Wyoming	—July 10, 1890

Statue of Liberty, see *Liberty, Statue of.*

STEARNS, HAROLD [EDMUND] (1891–), critic of American life, in *America and the Young Intellectual* (1921) stated the credo of the post-war generation, which he said '*is* in revolt; it *does* dislike, almost to the point of hatred and certainly to the point of contempt, the type of people who dominate in our present civilization . . .' A definitive statement of this attitude appeared in the symposium that he edited, *Civilization in the United States: An Inquiry by Thirty Americans* (1922). With the author's return from expatriation in France and his growing awareness of social action in place of escape, chronicled in the autobiographical *The Street I Know* (1935), he prepared a new manifesto, *America: A Re-appraisal* (1937), again a symposium by leading critics.

STEARNS, OLIVER (1807–85), after graduation from Harvard (1826) and Harvard Divinity School, became a Unitarian clergyman. His liberal ideas are expressed in such works as *The Gospel As Applied to the Fugitive Slave Law* (1851). With J.F. Clarke and F.H.Hedge he was in the vanguard of the progressive Unitarian thinkers, and is credited with being the first American theologian to champion the theory of evolution as a cosmic law. He was a professor at Harvard Divinity School (1863–78).

STEDMAN, EDMUND CLARENCE (1833–1908), was both a poet and a successful Wall Street broker, as may be seen in his most famous work, 'Pan in Wall Street,' a poem published in *The Blameless Prince* (1869). Also an essayist and critic, and a leader of the circle that included R.H. Stoddard, William Winter, and Bayard Taylor, he was a noted literary figure in his time, although later critics have considered his several volumes of verse, collected in *Poetical Works* (1873), to be rather frigid reflections of the genteel tradition, or echoes of Tennyson and other contemporary poets. His work as a critic was of higher rank, particularly in his notable edition of Poe with G.E.Woodberry, and in *The Poets of America* (2 vols., 1885). This work, along with *A Library of American Literature* (11 vols.,1888–90) edited with Ellen M. Hutchinson, and *An American Anthology* (1900), as well as his other critical and editorial work, did much to establish both a finer appreciation of and a greater interest in American literature.

STEELE, WILBUR DANIEL (1886–), born in North Carolina and reared in Denver, is best known as a short-story writer whose plots are frequently set in New England and South Carolina, his later homes. His short stories have been collected in: *Land's End* (1918); *The Shame*

Dance (1923); *Urkey Island* (1926); *The Man Who Saw Through Heaven* (1927); *Tower of Sand* (1929); and other volumes. His novels include *Storm* (1914), *Isles of the Blest* (1924), *Taboo* (1925), *Meat* (1928), and *Sound of Rowlocks* (1938). A collection of one-act plays was published as *The Terrible Woman* (1925), and in collaboration with his wife, Norma Mitchell Steele, he has written *Post Road* (1934) and *Penny*, full-length plays. With Anthony Brown he dramatized his short story, *How Beautiful with Shoes* (q.v., 1935).

STEENDAM, Jacob (*c.*1616–*c.*1672), Dutch-born poet, who had been in the service of the Dutch West India Company and in Africa before he came to New Netherland (*c.*1650) as a merchant and trader. In order to attract colonists to America, he published poems whose English translations bear the titles: *Complaint of New Amsterdam in New Netherland* (1659), a petition for aid from Holland; *Praise of New Netherland* (1661), a lavish eulogy; and 'Spurring Verses' (1662), prefixed to a pamphlet concerning a plan for colonization on the Delaware River. Steendam seems to have returned to Holland (*c.*1662), and his later life was spent in the East Indies. His poems have been reprinted in a biography (1861) by H.C. Murphy, who also published them in an *Anthology of New Netherland* (1865).

STEFÁNSSON, Vilhjálmur (1879–), Canadian-born anthropologist, archæologist, and Arctic explorer, resident in the U.S. since his youth, whose books include: *Life with the Eskimo* (1913); *Friendly Arctic* (1921); *The Northward Course of Empire* (1922); *Hunters of the Great North* (1922); *The Adventure of Wrangell Island* (1925); *The Standardization of Error* (1927); *Adventures in Error* (1936); *Unsolved Mysteries of the Arctic* (1939); *Iceland: The First American Republic* (1939), and *Ultima Thule* (1940).

STEFFENS, [Joseph] Lincoln (1866–1936), born in San Francisco, graduated from the University of California (1889), studied abroad, and entered New York journalism (1892). He is best known for his leadership of the muckraking movement. As managing editor of *McClure's* magazine (1902–6) and associate editor of the *American Magazine* and *Everybody's* (1906–11), he was a prominent contributor to the journalistic exposé of business and government corruption. His articles were collected in *The Shame of the Cities* (1904), *The Struggle for Self-Government* (1906), and *Upbuilders* (1909). His *Autobiography* (1931) tells the story of his gradual evolution of a theory of government and his transition from sensational reporting to the belief that there was a fundamental relation between the various forms of corruption he had discovered. It also contains an interesting account of modern liberal and radical movements, with which he was affiliated during much of his life. *Lincoln Steffens Speaking* (1936) is a posthumous collection of articles and essays written during his later years, and his *Letters* were collected in 1938.

STEICHEN, Edward J. (1879–), photographer and painter, whose works have been widely exhibited in the U.S. and Europe. He commanded the Photographic Division of the U.S. air corps in the First World War. He is the subject of a biography by his brother-in-law, Sandburg.

STEIN, Gertrude (1874–), born in Pennsylvania, was educated abroad, at California schools, and at Radcliffe, from which she graduated (1897). She was stimulated at college by William James, and her psychological experiments led her to study the anatomy of the brain at Johns Hopkins. Suddenly tiring of scientific work, she went abroad (1902), and has continued to live in France, where members of her *salon* have included prominent painters and writers. Her early fiction, including *Three Lives* (q.v.,1909), stories of two servant girls and an unhappy Negress, *The Making of Americans* (q.v.,1925), and *A Long Gay Book* (1932), show a complete breakdown of traditional plot structure and discursive writing, and a dependence upon immediate or perhaps intuitive means of expressing the actual present. Her later writings include: *Tender Buttons* (1914), poetry without conventional logic or grammar, intended to express vividly and literally the qualities of objects; *Geography and Plays* (1922); *Composition as Explanation* (1926), lectures delivered at Oxford and Cambridge; *Lucy Church Amiably* (1930), a descriptive novel; *How to Write* (1931), a book of examples; *The Autobiography of Alice B. Toklas* (1933), her own autobiography, composed as though by her secretary; *Four Saints in Three Acts* (1934), an opera with music by

Virgil Thomson; *Portraits and Prayers* (1934); *Narration* (1935), four critical lectures delivered at the University of Chicago; *The Geographical History of America* (1936), a purposely formless work, illustrating her literary theories; *Everybody's Autobiography* (1937), an account of her American lecture tour; *Picasso* (1938); *The World Is Round* (1939), a book for children; *Paris France* (1940), a sympathetic study of the French way of life; and *Ida* (1941), a novel about a character said to be based on the Duchess of Windsor. Her *Lectures in America* (1935) best explains her philosophy of composition, which is partly indebted to the æsthetic theories of William James and Bergson's concept of time. She contends that it is the 'business of art' to live in 'the complete actual present,' and in describing her technique to convey this actuality she compares it with that of the cinema. No two frames of a motion picture are exactly alike, yet the rapid sequence presents to the eye a flowing continuity. Similarly Miss Stein, by the emphatic use of partly repetitive statements, each making a limited advance in the theme, presents an uninterrupted series of instantaneous visions, so that one grasps a living moment in precise, ordered forms. This 'moment to moment emphasis in what is happening' appears particularly in her early 'portraits,' and in *Three Lives* and *The Making of Americans*. Another of her concerns was 'to tell what each one is without telling stories . . . so that the essence of what happened would be . . . the essence of the portraits.' She was also interested in 'the relation between color and sound.' In order to convey her concept of movement in the motion-picture manner, she set up a rhythmic pattern and placed her emphasis upon the verb. Nouns being names, she felt that 'things once they are named the name does not go on doing anything to them and so why write in nouns.' She felt that most punctuation is 'an unnecessary name of something.' 'It is evident that when you ask a question you ask a question . . . and so why add to it the question mark.' Other punctuation also interfered with the need for capturing motion: 'if writing should go on what had colons and semi-colons to do with it.' 'A comma by helping you along holding your coat for you and putting on your shoes keeps you from living your life as actively as you should lead it . . .' In her poetry Miss Stein holds a different theory about language; for, though naming, or noun-using, does nothing to carry prose forward, 'you can love a name and if you love a name then saying that name any number of times only makes you love it more . . .' and poetry is 'really loving the name of anything.' Thus, for her, poetry is a method of dealing 'with everything that was not movement in space.' Not only has she put her theories carefully into practice in her own writings, but they have widely influenced other authors. Sherwood Anderson has felt that she extended the province of the artist by revivifying language, and he has been stimulated by her method of repetition with minute variations. Hemingway has been similarly influenced, in the rhythms of his precise, clipped prose, and in his art of conveying emotions as immediate experience.

STEINBECK, JOHN [ERNST] (1902–), California novelist, attended Stanford University (1919–20, 1922–3, 1924–5), and worked at odd jobs, beginning his literary career with *Cup of Gold* (1929), a romantic novel based on the career of Sir Henry Morgan, the buccaneer. This was followed by *The Pastures of Heaven* (1932), a collection of short stories portraying the people of a farm community in a California valley. His second novel, *To a God Unknown* (1933), tells of a California farmer whose pagan religion of fertility becomes a mystical obsession, and after a season of drought leads to his suicide as a sacrifice on the sylvan altar at which he has worshipped. *Tortilla Flat* (q.v.,1935) won Steinbeck popular attention for the first time, with its sympathetically humorous depiction of the lives of Monterey *paisanos*. *In Dubious Battle* (q.v.,1936), the story of a strike of migratory fruit pickers, was the first of his novels concerned with the conditions of this class, which has continued to hold his interest. In *Of Mice and Men* (q.v.,1937), the story of two itinerant farmhands represents the tragedy of a class that yearns for a home, of which it is perpetually deprived. After dramatizing this work with great success (1937), Steinbeck published a volume of short stories, *The Long Valley* (q.v.,1938), containing the previously published *Saint Katy the Virgin* (1936) and *The Red Pony* (1937). His concern with the problems of the landless farm laborer received greatest

emphasis in *The Grapes of Wrath* (q.v., 1939; Pulitzer Prize, 1940), a saga of a typical refugee family from the dust bowl, its migration to California, and the struggle to find work under an almost feudal system of agricultural exploitation. In his books Steinbeck has always employed a combination of romance and realism, not always harmoniously managed. His settings are mainly rural areas, where people live close to the earth, and where malevolent forces, whether drought or labor and market conditions imposed by an inequitable social system, come to destroy this vital relation. In dealing with the consequent problems, he has tended to develop from a lyric to a sociological approach, but his realism retains an admixture of romanticism. His greatest characters are simple, direct, and drawn from life, but they associate with figures that are highly sentimental. The dialogue is also sharply divergent, and the backgrounds are treated by turns with brutal directness and with tender symbolism. This failure to resolve his approach appears in his style, now direct, now rhythmically poetic; his juxtaposition of a pagan love of fertility with a solemn, matter-of-fact view of the land from an economic standpoint; and even his failure to complete the story of *The Grapes of Wrath*, the value of whose conclusion is purely symbolic. The main body of this novel, however, is generally considered to rank among the best of modern realistic fiction in the U.S., and in its crusading purpose of awakening the nation to the baneful conditions of migrant labor has been compared with *Uncle Tom's Cabin*. From the ironic humor of *Tortilla Flat* to the sober severity of *In Dubious Battle* and *The Grapes of Wrath*, Steinbeck has displayed a many-sided comprehension of common people and their problems, and an increasing ability to embody the facts of their lives in moving fiction.

STEINMETZ, Charles Proteus (1865–1923), German-born mathematician and electrical engineer, came to the U.S. (1889), and was professor of electrical engineering and electrophysics at Union College, Schenectady, New York (1902–23). He was associated with the General Electric Company, for which he prepared studies on alternating current phenomena, magnetism, and lightning.

STEPHENS, Alexander Hamilton (1812–83), after graduation from the University of Georgia (1832), practiced law, served in the state legislature (1836–42), and represented Georgia in Congress (1843–59). Although he was a Whig, he defied his constituents by denouncing the Mexican War, because he was essentially devoted to peace. Similarly, though eventually driven to become a leader of the secessionists, he for a long time hoped to keep the theory from becoming a fact by working for conciliation. Upon the nomination of Winfield Scott (1852) as a Whig candidate favoring Free Soil, Stephens shifted to the Democratic party, and gradually turned from defending slavery in the abstract to approving the reopening of African trade to create more slave states. His inability to yield a point finally made him a supporter of the Confederacy, of which he became Vice President, although remaining a moderate. His desire to maintain civil rights even in wartime brought him into conflict with Jefferson Davis, and he worked for an early though honorable peace. After a brief imprisonment, he was elected to the U.S.Senate (1866), where he was not then allowed to take his seat, although he later served as a member of Congress (1873–82). He was elected governor of Georgia just before his death. *A Constitutional View of the Late War Between the States* (2 vols.,1868–70) was a series of fictitious colloquies with those who opposed his policies, and he refuted its critics in *The Reviewers Reviewed* (1872).

STEPHENS, Ann Sophia (1813–86), popular novelist, in addition to steady contributions to the leading literary magazines and an editorial position on *Graham's Magazine*, wrote some 25 books, primarily romantic fictionized treatments of English and American history. *Alice Copley: A Tale of Queen Mary's Time* (1844) and *The Diamond Necklace, and Other Tales* (1846) were typical of her flamboyant depictions of the nobility of old England. *Fashion and Famine* (1854) is a melodramatic story of the contrasts of New York life, and *The Rejected Wife* (1863) is representative of her free handling of American history. *Malaeska, or the Indian Wife of the White Hunter* (1860), a tale of frontiersmen and Indians, is probably her most famous book, since it sold some 300,000 copies, was the first dime novel, a genre to which she later contributed other adventure stories. *High Life in New York*

(1843), written under the pseudonym Jonathan Slick, is a humorous book in the Down East tradition.

Stepping Heavenward, novel by Elizabeth P. Prentiss (q.v.).

STERLING, GEORGE (1869–1926), born in New York, was educated under Father Tabb in Maryland, went to California as a young man, and was thereafter identified with the state as a noted author and Bohemian. He soon fell under the influence of Bierce, 'the Great Cham' of literature on the West Coast, and consistently submitted his poetry for criticism and revision to his master. Although in later life he was able to recognize the significance of modern poets, as evidenced in his appreciative *Robinson Jeffers, the Man and the Artist* (1926), his own verse consistently harked back to what he had been taught to admire by Bierce, and, with its emphasis upon exotic romanticism and rhythmical regularity, looked backward rather than forward, and failed to appeal to Eastern critics. He was best known for his sonnets, obviously influenced by Keats, his simple, musical lyrics, and lush, grandiose longer poems, which strained after an imposing and extravagant treatment in accord with a vast or mysterious subject matter. His most important books, whose titles reveal his characteristic attitude, include *The Testimony of the Suns* (1903), *A Wine of Wizardry* (1909), and *The House of Orchids* (1911). Among his later books are *Thirty-five Sonnets* (1917) and *Selected Poems* (1923). He committed suicide in 1926. He is said to be the prototype of Brissenden in London's *Martin Eden*.

STERLING, JAMES (1701?–63), Irish-born poet and dramatist, emigrated to Maryland (1737) as an Anglican clergyman, and turned his pen to the poetic expression of colonial ideals in a series of conventional 18th-century verses. He also wrote *An Epistle to the Hon. Arthur Dobbs* (1752), setting forth the idea that Britain's future greatness lay in America, and *Zeal against the Enemies of Our Country Pathetically Recommended* (1755), a sermon against French interests in America.

STEUBEN, FRIEDRICH WILHELM AUGUST, BARON VON (1730–94), Prussian officer, came to America (1777) to instruct the Continental Army. He was appointed inspector-general, and the result of his discipline and organization at Valley Forge was apparent at the Battle of Monmouth, where he aided in rallying General Charles Lee's retreating army. He was also a commander in Virginia, sending supplies to Greene in the Carolinas, and served at Yorktown. After the war he received a pension and tracts of land, and became a U.S.citizen (1783). He wrote two works which were translated as *Regulations for the Order and Discipline of the Troops of the United States* (1779) and *A Letter on the Subject of an Established Militia* (1784).

STEVENS, ABEL (1815–97), Methodist clergyman, best known for his historical works on his church, which include: *The History of the Religious Movement of the Eighteenth Century, Called Methodism* (3 vols., 1858–61); and *History of the Methodist Episcopal Church in the United States* (4 vols., 1864–7).

STEVENS, BENJAMIN FRANKLIN (1833–1902), bibliographer of Americana, born in Vermont, was a London bookseller after 1860. His works include: *Catalogue Index of Manuscripts in the Archives of England, France, Holland, and Spain Relating to America, 1763 to 1783* (1902); and *B.F. Stevens's Facsimiles of Manuscripts Relating to America, 1773–1783* (1889–95).

HENRY STEVENS (1819–86), his brother, was also a bibliographer and bookseller, resident in London after 1845. He was instrumental in increasing the British Museum collection relating to the Western Hemisphere, and in building the collections of the Library of Congress, the Smithsonian Institution, and the private libraries of John Carter Brown and James Lenox, later donated respectively to Brown University and the New York Public Library.

STEVENS, JAMES [FLOYD] (1892–), born in Iowa, after serving in the First World War lived for a time in the Northwest, which furnished the background for his semi-autobiographical novels, *Brawnyman* (1926) and *Mattock* (1927). His study of the tall tales of the lumbermen of this region provided the material for *Paul Bunyan* (1925) and *Saginaw Paul Bunyan* (1932); *Homer in the Sagebrush* (1928) is a book of short stories with a Western locale.

STEVENS, JOHN (1749–1838), engineer and inventor, operated a steamboat on the Hudson River (1798), and inaugurated a steam ferry system between New York and Hoboken (1811), later removed to

Long Island Sound because of Fulton's monopoly. Stevens also constructed an iron-clad vessel (1813), which was a forerunner of the *Monitor*, and built a small circular track for his steam locomotive (1826), which, though never commercially employed, was the first steam railroad in the U.S.

STEVENS, THADDEUS (1792–1868), born in Vermont, graduated from Dartmouth (1814) and practiced law in Pennsylvania, before entering the state legislature. He was elected to Congress (1849–53) as a 'Conscience' Whig, and took a leading place among Free Soil agitators, distinguishing himself by his fiery denunciations of all who condoned or practiced slavery. He became a leading Republican in Congress (1859–68), where with harsh invective he criticized Lincoln and others who did not believe that the purpose of the war was utterly to annihilate the South in order to destroy slavery. With brilliant speech and bitter threats, he continued to advocate radical Reconstruction policies, and the reduction of the South to a 'territorial condition.' Having won his campaign for military rule in the South, he next used the excuse of Johnson's removal of Stanton to introduce impeachment charges, which failed. He was implacable to the end, indicating the sincerity of his desire for justice for the Negroes by choosing to be buried in a cemetery open to all races.

STEVENS, WALLACE (1879–), Pennsylvania-born poet, resident in Connecticut, first collected his poems in *Harmonium* (1923), revealing a technique of highly polished elegance in treating subjects which are often luxuriantly exotic, and placing him among the latter day followers of Impressionism. His hypersensitive intellectual view of decadence in the civilized world is further exhibited in a second collection of poems (1931) under the same title, and in *Ideas of Order* (1935), *Owl's Clover* (1936), and *The Man with the Blue Guitar* (1937).

STEVENSON, ROBERT LOUIS (1850–94), Scottish novelist, essayist, poet, and traveler, in 1880 married an American, Fanny Van de Grift Osbourne, whom he had followed from Europe to California, and they spent about a year in the U.S. Among the literary results of this sojourn are *The Amateur Emigrant*, *Across the Plains*, *The Silverado Squatters* (qq.v.), and an unpublished 'experiment in sensation,' 'Arizona Breckonridge; or, a Vendetta of the West,' of which he finished only three parts. In 1887–8 he lived for several months in the eastern U.S., mainly at Saranac Lake, where his writings included essays for *Scribner's Magazine* and a farcical story *The Wrong Box* (1888), written with his stepson, Lloyd Osbourne (q.v.). In June 1888, Stevenson left for the South Pacific on a voyage financed by S.S.McClure, for whose newspapers he wrote a series of letters. His many celebrated writings, during his last years at his home in Samoa and traveling in the South Seas, include a vindication of the career of Father Damien (q.v.), and, with Lloyd Osbourne, *The Wrecker* (1892), in which the character of Pinkerton is based on S.S.McClure, and *The Ebb-Tide* (1894).

STEWART, DONALD OGDEN (1894–), humorist, whose books include *A Parody Outline of History* (1921), *Aunt Polly's Story of Mankind* (1923), *Mr. and Mrs.Haddock Abroad* (1924), *The Crazy Fool* (1925), *Mr. and Mrs.Haddock in Paris, France* (1926), and *Father William* (1929). He has also appeared on the stage, written for motion pictures, and acted in his own play, *Rebound* (1930).

STICKNEY, [JOSEPH] TRUMBULL (1874–1904), New England poet, was known during his lifetime only as a classical student, despite the publication of his *Dramatic Verses* (1902). When his *Poems* were published by William Vaughn Moody and others (1905), it was discovered that he was a representative poet of his period, whose matter and manner somewhat resembled that of Moody.

STIEGEL, HENRY WILLIAM (1729–85), German-born manufacturer of iron and glass, came to Philadelphia (1750), and later founded the town of Manheim, where he led a religious community and established his glass foundry, presumed to be the first to manufacture flint glass in America. Stiegel glass is of fine quality and renowned for its rich amethyst, green, deep blue, and clear colors.

STIEGLITZ, ALFRED (1864–), New York photographer and champion of modern painting, experimented with three-color photography during the 1890's, and established himself by his own works as well as through his editorship of *The American Amateur Photographer* (1892–6),

Camera Notes (1897–1903), and the quarterly *Camera Work* (1903–). In his small New York gallery, he introduced modern French painting to the U.S. as early as 1908, and he has been a leader in such progressive art movements as those exhibited at the Armory Show. He is also the author of *Picturesque Bits of Old New York, and Other Stories* (1897).

STILES, Ezra (1727–95), grandson of Edward Taylor, graduated from Yale (1746) and became a tutor at the college (1749–55). During two of these years he practiced law at New Haven, after which for 22 years he was a pastor of Congregational churches in Rhode Island and New Hampshire, returning to Yale to become its president (1778–95). He was one of the most learned Americans of his time, and his ruling passion was to be a universal scholar. He was engaged in activities that ranged from the promulgation of silk manufacture in New England to helping found Brown University, and his boundless intellectual pleasure in the acquisition of knowledge is evidenced in the posthumously published *Literary Diary* (3 vols., 1901), the *Extracts from the Itineraries and Other Miscellanies* (1916), and *Letters and Papers* (1933), although he wrote little for publication during his lifetime. Except for a few Latin orations and some sermons, he produced only *An Account of the Settlement of Bristol, Rhode Island* (1785), and *A History of Three of the Judges of King Charles I* (1794), a study of the regicides, Whalley, Dixwell, and Goffe, who had fled to New England. *The Life of Ezra Stiles* (1798) was written by his son-in-law, Abiel Holmes.

Stillwater Tragedy, The, novel by Aldrich (q.v.) published in 1880.

At Stillwater, a New England village whose residents are employed by the Miantowona Iron-Works and Slocum's Marble-Yard, occurs the brutal murder of the miser, Lemuel Shackford. His wealth is inherited by his nephew, Richard Shackford, whom he has raised from a child. Richard is now the fiancé of Margaret Slocum, and an executive of the Marble-Yard, where he has recently suppressed a strike fomented by his former friend, Durgin, and the labor leader, Torrini. Richard goes to New York on business, having posted a reward for the apprehension of the murderer, and during his absence the detective, Edward Taggett, collects circumstantial evidence pointing to Richard's guilt. Margaret clings to belief in his innocence, and on his return he befriends the dying Torrini, whose gratitude causes him to confess his part in the murder, whose principal was Durgin. Taggett's evidence is reinterpreted, the guilty man is arrested, Torrini's family is rewarded, and Richard marries Margaret and becomes a partner in Slocum's firm.

STIMSON, Frederic Jesup (1855–), Massachusetts lawyer and author, after holding other government posts became the first U.S.ambassador to Argentina (1914–21). He was a professor of law at Harvard (1903–14), and besides many law books wrote *Government by Injunction* (1894), *Labor in Its Relation to Law* (1894), *The American Constitution* (1906), *The American Constitution as It Protects Private Rights* (1923), *The Western Way—American Democracy* (1929), and *My United States* (1931). His earlier writings, published under the pseudonym J.S. of Dale, included such fiction as *Rollo's Journey to Cambridge* (1879); *The Crime of Henry Vane* (1884); *The Sentimental Calendar* (1886); *Mrs.Knollys and Other Stories* (1894); *King Noanett* (1896), dealing with 17th-century England and America; *Jethro Bacon of Sandwich* (1901); and *In Cure of Her Soul* (1906).

STIRLING, Arthur, pseudonym of Upton Sinclair (q.v.).

Stirling, Peter, see *Honorable Peter Stirling, The.*

STITH, William (1707–55), born in Virginia, was educated at William and Mary and at Oxford, and wrote *The History of the First Discovery and Settlement of Virginia* (1747), based on careful study of the writings of John Smith, Robert Beverley, and the records of the London Company. This is the earliest important secondary account of the colony to 1624, and shows Stith's sympathies to lie with the Company and against James I. He was chaplain to the House of Burgesses, and published several sermons, besides serving as president of William and Mary (1752–5).

STOBO, Robert (1727–*c.*1772), Scottish-born soldier, migrated to Virginia and served in the French and Indian Wars under Amherst and Wolfe. There is no record of him after 1770, but his *Memoirs* were published in 1800. He figures in Sir Gilbert Parker's novel, *The Seats of the*

Mighty, and is considered the prototype of Lismahago in *Humphrey Clinker*, written by his friend Smollett.

Stockbridge Indians, name given to the Mahicans (q.v.) who gathered in the Massachusetts town of that name (1736). They were converted to Christianity, and at various times were taught in the mission school by Jonathan Edwards and Samson Occom. They now live on a reservation in Wisconsin.

STOCKTON, Frank R. (Francis Richard) (1834–1902), Philadelphia novelist and short-story writer, was first known as an author of children's stories, some of which were contributed to *St.Nicholas* (q.v.), of which he was an editor (1873–81). His juvenile stories are collected in *Ting-a-Ling* (1870), *The Floating Prince and Other Fairy Tales* (1881), and *The Bee Man of Orn and Other Fanciful Tales* (1887). After the publication of his whimsically fantastic novel, *Rudder Grange* (q.v.,1879), he began to write for adults, although continuing the same use of absurd situations that had made his juvenile tales popular. His chief books, after *Rudder Grange*, were the volume of short stories (1884) whose title piece was the sensationally popular 'The Lady or the Tiger?' (q.v.), and the amusing novel, *The Casting Away of Mrs.Lecks and Mrs.Aleshine* (q.v.,1886), and its sequel, *The Dusantes* (1888). The public also clamored for sequels to his first novel, which he furnished in *The Rudder Grangers Abroad* (1891) and *Pomona's Travels* (1894). His lively fancy continued to create many other tales and novels, but in later life took a somewhat different direction in such works as *The Great Stone of Sardis* (1898), *A Vizier of the Two Horned Alexander* (1899), and *The Great War Syndicate* (1889), which are sometimes humorously, sometimes seriously, concerned with pseudo-scientific matters. The comic *Buccaneers and Pirates of Our Coast* (1898) indicates another interest, continued in *Kate Bonnet* (1902), a satirical novel of 17th-century piracy, ridiculing conventional romances on the subject. During the last three years of his life, Stockton lived in West Virginia, which he had already known and described in his novels, *The Late Mrs.Null* (1886) and *Ardis Claverden* (1890). A collected edition of his fiction was published (23 vols.,1899–1904).

STOCKTON, Robert Field (1795–1866), naval officer in the War of 1812 and the Algerine War, became commander of the Pacific squadron (1846). Capturing Santa Barbara and San Pedro (Aug.1846), and having command of Monterey, which Sloat had captured, he proclaimed himself governor of the U.S.territory of California, but shortly turned over the government to Frémont. He served in the Senate (1851–3).

STODDARD, Charles Warren (1843–1909), California author, whose *Poems* (1867), edited by Bret Harte, preceded his wide travels that furnished material for his more famous works. Before 1873 he made two trips to Hawaii and one to Tahiti, resulting in the sketches, *South-Sea Idyls* (1873; English edition, *Summer Cruising in the South Seas*, 1874), which range from delicately tinted description to the lush prose which caused him to be compared with Pierre Loti. His voyage to Egypt and the Holy Land (1876–7) formed the basis for his narratives, *Mashallah!* (1880) and *A Cruise under the Crescent* (1898). He returned to live in Hawaii (1881–4), where he wrote *The Lepers of Molokai* (1885), first calling public attention to Father Damien (q.v.), and probably prompting his friend Stevenson to write his famous defense of the missionary. Other books resulting from this residence were *Hawaiian Life* (1894) and *The Island of Tranquil Delights* (1904). While in Hawaii he also wrote *A Troubled Heart* (1885), the story of his conversion to Catholicism. Upon his return he was a professor of English at the University of Notre Dame (1885–6), and at the Catholic University of America (Washington,D.C., 1889–1902). His last years were spent in California, where, among other books, he wrote *In the Footprints of the Padres* (1903). A posthumous collection of his *Poems* was made by Ina Coolbrith (1917), and a *Diary of a Visit to Molokai in* 1884 was published in 1933.

STODDARD, Richard Henry (1825–1903), born in Massachusetts, was reared in squalid surroundings there and in New York, and educated himself while working as an iron molder. He published a volume of romantic *Poems* (1852), and through Hawthorne's aid obtained a position as inspector of customs in New York (1853–70). After occupying other political posts, he became the literary editor of the New

York *Mail and Express* (1880–1903), having during the previous 20 years written reviews for the New York *World*. His poetry, published in such volumes as *Songs of Summer* (1857), *Abraham Lincoln: An Horatian Ode* (1865), *Poems* (1880), and *The Lion's Cub; with Other Verse* (1890), was greatly admired in his day, but has come to be considered artificial, sentimental, and lacking in force, despite his gifts of melody and imagery. After 1870 Stoddard and his wife held a salon that was considered a center of New York literary life, and included not only such prominent contemporaries as Bayard Taylor and E.C.Stedman, but lesser-known figures like Melville, whom he befriended. During the last quarter of the century, Stoddard was a literary arbiter of the U.S., both through his newspaper criticisms and his editorial work, which included an edition of Poe (1894), with a complacent memoir attacking the character of this acquaintance of his youth. His autobiography, *Recollections Personal and Literary*, was published in 1903.

ELIZABETH DREW [BARSTOW] STODDARD (1823–1902), his wife, in addition to their collaborations, wrote *The Morgesons* (1862), *Two Men* (1865), and *Temple House* (1867), realistic novels set in her native Massachusetts. Although praised by Hawthorne, these were considered too grim for the average reader, because of their truthful use of local color, anticipating Sarah Orne Jewett and Mary W. Freeman. Her *Poems* (1895) displayed poor technique, but had an intense, sometimes morbid, quality of personal revelation.

STODDARD, SOLOMON (1643–1729), Congregational clergyman, graduated from Harvard (1662), served as the college librarian (1667–74), was for a time a chaplain in Barbados (1667–9), and became pastor at Northampton (1672–1729). One of the most influential men in Massachusetts, he was concerned not only with theology but also with governmental policy and public morals. He was an early champion of the Half-Way Covenant, and introduced in his church the practice called Stoddardianism, which required merely a profession of faith and repentance, and not a relation of a personal experience of grace, as the prerequisite for the communion and other privileges of full church membership. He defended this policy against the attacks of Increase Mather in *The Doctrine of Instituted Churches* (1700), *The Inexcusableness of Neglecting the Worship of God, Under a Pretense of Being in an Unconverted Condition* (1708), and *An Appeal to the Learned* (1709). In these pamphlets he also advocated a national church, and the vesting of greater power in the clergy. In *An Answer to Some Cases of Conscience Respecting the Country* (1722), he attacked contemporary foibles, immorality, wigs, lavish dress, and undue bibulousness. His belief that ministers should frighten congregations with threats of damnation is expounded in *The Efficacy of the Fear of Hell to Restrain Men from Sin* (1713) and *A Guide to Christ* (1714). His grandson, Jonathan Edwards, who followed him at Northampton, did not believe in Stoddardianism.

STODDARD, WILLIAM OSBORN (1835–1925), served for some time as a secretary to Lincoln, of whom he wrote a biography (1884), and whose *Table Talk* he collected (1894). In addition to a book concerning his life, *Inside the White House in War Times* (1890) and *The Lives of the Presidents* (10 vols.,1886–89), he wrote some seventy books for boys, of which the best known was *Little Smoke: A Tale of the Sioux* (1891).

STOKOWSKI, LEOPOLD [ANTONI STANISLAW] (1882–), born in England, was educated at the Royal College of Music, Oxford, and the Paris Conservatory, and came to the U.S. (1905). He is best known as the conductor of the Cincinnati Orchestra (1909–12) and the Philadelphia Orchestra (1912–36), for his symphonic arrangements of German and Russian music, and for his experiments in broadcasting, motion pictures, recording, and new musical instruments.

STONE, BARTON WARREN (1772–1844), frontier evangelist who seceded from the Presbyterian Church (1804). He and his associates called themselves simply 'Christians,' and acknowledged no creed but the Bible. In 1832 they united with the Disciples of Christ of Alexander Campbell (q.v.). In addition to theological treatises, Stone wrote an autobiography (1847).

STONE, GRACE ZARING (1896–), popular novelist, whose books include: *The Heaven and Earth of Doña Elena* (1929), the story of a Spanish nun; *The Bitter Tea of General Yen* (1930), the story of a New England girl involved in a Chi-

nese uprising; *The Almond Tree* (1931); and *The Cold Journey* (1934).

STONE, JOHN AUGUSTUS (1800–1834), Massachusetts actor and playwright, best known for his romantic tragedy, *Metamora, or the Last of the Wampanoags* (q.v., 1829), written for Edwin Forrest. He acted in his own plays, *Tancred: King of Sicily* (1831) and *The Demoniac; or, The Prophet's Bride* (1831), and revised Paulding's *The Lion of the West* (q.v.,1831). Another play for Forrest, *The Ancient Briton* (1833), concerned Boadicea. Stone committed suicide in Philadelphia, where Forrest erected a monument to his memory.

STONE, LUCY (1818–93), after graduation from Oberlin (1847) began her life work in her native Massachusetts, New Jersey, and elsewhere, for the causes of woman suffrage and antislavery. Although she was married (1855) she retained her maiden name as a matter of principle. She founded the *Woman's Journal* (1870), which for nearly half a century was the official publication of the National American Woman Suffrage Association.

STONE, SAMUEL (1602–63), English nonconformist, emigrated to America (1633) with Thomas Hooker, where he selected the site of Hartford, Connecticut, and removed there from Cambridge, with members of his congregation (1636). He was a leader of the New England synods, and after Hooker's death (1647) became sole minister of the Hartford Church. During the latter part of his life, he entered into a violent controversy on matters of church polity, which seems to have originated in personal antagonism toward William Goodwin, the ruling elder. Stone's idea of church government, which verged on Presbyterianism, was proclaimed by Cotton Mather in his *Magnalia* to be 'a speaking *Aristocracy* in the Face of a silent *Democracy*.' His only published work was *A Congregational Church is a Catholike Visible Church* (1652).

STONE, WILLIAM LEETE (1792–1844), New York journalist and author, whose *Tales and Sketches* (2 vols.,1834) and *The Mysterious Bridal and Other Tales* (3 vols., 1835) depict the colonial life of Connecticut and other parts of New England. His interest in Indian life led him to write a *Life of Joseph Brant* (1838), *Life and Times of Red Jacket* (1841), *The Poetry and History of Wyoming* (1841), *Uncas and Miantonomoh* (1842), and *Border Wars of the American Revolution* (1843). Among his works on topical subjects was an exposé of Maria Monk (1836). As editor of the *Commercial Advertiser*, he was successfully sued for slanderous criticism of Cooper's *History of the Navy* and *Home As Found*, and he was the subject of a satire by Laughton Osborne.

WILLIAM LEETE STONE,JR. (1835–1908), his son, continued his father's career of journalist, and completed his *Life and Times of Sir William Johnson* (1863). He was the author of several books on the Revolution, and of a *History of New York City* (1868).

Stonewall Jackson, sobriquet of Thomas J. Jackson (q.v.).

STONG, PHIL[IP DUFFIELD] (1899–), Iowa author, journalist, and Hollywood scenarist, has written many novels of rural life in his native state, including: *State Fair* (1932), a robust tale of the Frake family and their week at the fair; *Stranger's Return* (1933), telling of a New York girl's visit to her grandfather's Iowa farm; *Village Tale* (1934); *The Farmer in the Dell* (1935), concerned with a retired farmer and his success in Hollywood motion pictures; *Week-end* (1935); *Career* (1936), telling of a crime wave in an Iowa town; *Buckskin Breeches* (1937), a story of pioneer life in the 1830's and 1840's; *The Long Lane* (1939); *Ivanhoe Keeler* (1939); and *Miss Edeson* (1941). Stong is also noted for his humorous fantasies and books for boys, which include: *Honk: the Moose* (1935); *No-Sitch: the Hound* (1936); *High Water* (1937); *Young Settler* (1938); and *Edgar: the* 7:58 (1938). He supplied the text for *County Fair* (1938), a book of photographs, and in *Horses and Americans* (1939) described the role played by the horse in the development of the U.S. *Hawkeyes* (1940) is a 'biography of the State of Iowa,' and *If School Keeps* (1940) is an account of the author's education and school teaching.

Stony Point, fortified promontory on the west bank of the Hudson River, 35 miles north of New York City. It was the scene of a battle (July 15–16, 1779) between Clinton's British force and Anthony Wayne's American Corps of Light Infantry. Wayne surprised the fort in a night attack planned by Washington, and captured the garrison. Although the patriots

held the position only briefly, the victory was important for improving the morale of the troops and winning public confidence.

Stopping by Woods on a Snowy Evening, lyric poem in iambic tetrameter quatrains, by Robert Frost (q.v.), published in *New Hampshire* (1923). The poet pictures himself as stopping his horse in the winter twilight to observe the beauty of the forest scene, and then being moved to continue his journey:

> The woods are lovely, dark and deep.
> But I have promises to keep,
> And miles to go before I sleep . . .

Store, The, novel by T.S.Stribling (q.v.).

STORY, Isaac (1774–1803), Massachusetts author, whose *A Parnassian Shop, Opened in the Pindaric Stile; by Peter Quince, Esq.* (1801), a verse satire against Democrats, was modeled after the English 'Peter Pindar.' *Liberty* (1795) and *All the World's a Stage* (1796) were conventional 18th-century poems, and his essays 'From the Desk of Beri Hesdin,' contributed to the *Farmer's Weekly Museum*, imitated the 'Lay Preacher' essays of the editor, Joseph Dennie.

STORY, Joseph (1779–1845), Massachusetts jurist, was active in state politics and was a Democratic Republican congressman (1808–9), before he was appointed to the U.S.Supreme Court (1811). He held this position for the rest of his life, made many important decisions on admiralty and prize law, and virtually established American patent law. After 1829 he held a professorship of law at Harvard, where he was distinguished both as a teacher and as a pioneer in modern law-school training. In addition to other writings, his series of *Commentaries* (1832–45) is particularly important for the three volumes *On the Constitution* (1833) and *Equity Jurisprudence* (2 vols., 1836).

William Wetmore Story (1819–95), his son, graduated from Harvard (1838) and followed a legal career varied by his avocation of sculpture and his literary interests, indicated in his *Poems* (1847). In 1847 he determined to make sculpture his career, and most of the remainder of his life was spent in Rome, where he was strongly influenced by the prevailing sentimental neoclassicism. Such works as *Cleopatra* and *Medea*, the former described at length in Hawthorne's *The Marble Faun*, are representative of his choice of subjects, to which he gave plastic expression in a smooth, cool, but rather lifeless form. His books on Italy include *Roba di Roma* (1862), *Vallombrosa* (1881), *Fiammetta: A Summer Idyl* (1886), and *Excursions in Art and Letters* (1891). *Graffiti d'Italia* (1868), a book of poems, shows the influence of his friend Browning. He edited the *Life and Letters* (2 vols., 1851) and *Miscellaneous Writings* (1852) of his father. He was the subject of a biography by Henry James (2 vols., 1903).

Story (1931–), monthly magazine founded at Vienna by Whit Burnett and his wife, Martha Foley. It is devoted to the short story, 'seeking literary merit over and above any dependency on "names," printing stories which in general have had no chance in magazines of huge commercial circulation because of tabooed subject matter or treatment . . .' The magazine was printed for a time in Mallorca, and was moved to New York (1933). The policy remained the same, even after its purchase by a new publisher (1935), and its publication as a bi-monthly after 1938, although it added a book review department and critical statements on the short story.

Story of a Bad Boy, The, semi-autobiographical novel by Aldrich (q.v.), published in 1869 but dated 1870.

Tom Bailey's adventures begin with his sea voyage from New Orleans to Rivermouth (Portsmouth, New Hampshire), in the course of which he meets an old tar, 'Sailor Ben.' In Rivermouth he lives with his Grandfather Nutter, his maiden grand-aunt Miss Abigail, and the trusted Irish maid, Kitty Collins. Sent to grammar school, he enjoys a typical boy's life, and among his adventures with his gang, the Rivermouth Centipedes, are the presentation of plays, the burning of a stagecoach, snow fights, the thrashing of the town bully, and the firing of a collection of old cannon. Later, when he again meets Sailor Ben and brings him home to visit, it is discovered that the seaman is the long-lost husband of Kitty Collins. The story closes with the death of Tom's father, and the boy's going to seek a position in a counting-house.

Story of a Country Town, The, novel by E.W.Howe (q.v.) published in 1883.

Ned Westlock tells of his early years in the midwestern farm village of Fairview

and later in Twin Mounds, a near-by town. His father, the Reverend John Westlock, a stern, domineering farmer, on Sundays preaches his harsh religion to their neighbors, who find in hymn-singing and Bible discussion the only release from their monotonous material preoccupations. Ned's close friends are his mother's young brother, Jo Erring, who works on the Westlock farm until he is apprenticed to the miller, Damon Barker; and the young school teacher, Agnes Deming. The miller tells the boys of the varied world beyond their narrow horizon, and Jo's ambition is stimulated when he falls in love with Mateel, daughter of the Reverend Goode Shepherd, although he is jealous of the Shepherds' friend, Clinton Bragg, a blackguard. Ned's brooding father suddenly moves his family to Twin Mounds, where he trades in land and buys the weekly newspaper, editing it with his son. Jo builds his own mill and home, and marries Mateel. John Westlock elopes with Barker's sister, revealing his liaison with her, and Ned takes charge of the newspaper, while his mother grows ill with despair, dying just before her husband's return, broken and alone, after which he again disappears. Barker proves to be Agnes's lost father, and she goes to live at his mill, attended by Big Adam, the eccentric hired man. Tragedy overtakes Jo in his new prosperity, when he finds that Bragg was once Mateel's lover, and he becomes insanely jealous. He forces Mateel to desert him, makes impossible the reconciliation both desire, and divorces her. When Bragg marries the dying Mateel, Jo strangles him, surrenders to the police, and soon commits suicide. Ned and Agnes marry and live happily, but the desolate life of the country continues unchanged.

Story of Kennett, The, novel by Bayard Taylor (q.v.).

Story of the Other Wise Man, The, essay by Henry Van Dyke (q.v.).

Story Teller's Story, A, autobiographical narrative by Sherwood Anderson (q.v.) published in 1924. In this 'tale of an American writer's journey through his own imaginative world and through the world of facts,' the author describes his poverty-stricken 'mid-American' boyhood; his service in the Spanish-American War; the people and experiences influential in his development; his various manual and managerial occupations, for which his active, vivid imagination unfitted him; and the escapes into creative pursuits that made him finally a 'teller of tales.'

STOUGHTON, WILLIAM (1631–1701), was probably born in England, graduated from Harvard (1650), continued his studies at Oxford, and after losing his fellowship, because of nonconformist ideas returned to Massachusetts (1662) to hold various political posts. He was on the council of Andros, but turned against the governor, and was later lieutenant-governor under Phips. After the latter's departure (1694), Stoughton was acting governor, except for one year, until his death. He presided at the Salem witchcraft trials, and was largely responsible for their severe results.

STOUT, REX [TODHUNTER] (1886–), novelist, whose works include such studies of contemporary character as *How Like a God* (1929), *Seed on the Wind* (1930), and *Forest Fire* (1933). He is best known for his popular detective novels featuring Nero Wolfe, noted for his qualities as gourmet and connoisseur. Among the Nero Wolfe stories are *Fer-de-Lance* (1934), *The League of Frightened Men* (1935), *The Hand in the Glove* (1937), *Too Many Cooks* (1938), and *Some Buried Cæsar* (1939).

Stover at Yale, boy's novel by Owen Johnson (q.v.).

STOWE, CALVIN ELLIS (1802–86), born in Massachusetts, graduated from Bowdoin (1824), studied at Andover Theological Seminary, and became professor of Greek at Dartmouth (1831–3) and of Biblical literature at Lane Theological Seminary, Cincinnati (1833–50). His interest in education led him to be appointed commissioner for investigating European public schools, and his *Report on Elementary Instruction in Europe* (1837) had a great effect on American pedagogy. He was later professor of natural and revealed religion at Bowdoin (1850–52) and of sacred literature at Andover (1852–64). His books include *Introduction to the Criticism and Interpretation of the Bible* (1835) and *Origin and History of the Books of the Bible* (1867). He was married to Harriet Beecher Stowe.

STOWE, HARRIET [ELIZABETH] BEECHER (1811–96), the daughter of Lyman Beecher, was reared in Connecticut under the strict Calvinist tutelage of her father, which made her youth one of morbid

introspection, tempered only partly by the liberal beliefs of her uncle, Samuel Foote, and the reading of such romantic fiction as that of Scott, which influenced her own later work. In 1832 she moved with her family to Cincinnati, where with an older sister she taught at a girls' school, and began to write sketches of New England life. In 1836 she married C.E.Stowe, who was then professor of Biblical literature in her father's theological seminary. Although she now found no time for writing she observed the life of the slaves during a visit to Kentucky, was influenced by the antislavery sentiment prevailing at her father's school, and stored impressions that she used later in fiction. Upon moving to Maine (1850), she was stirred more than ever by antislavery discussion and availed herself of leisure time to write *Uncle Tom's Cabin* (q.v.,1852), which suddenly brought her nation-wide prominence. Although she was not an Abolitionist, she found her only supporters among those who were, and, to defend herself from attacks on the accuracy of her book, she wrote *A Key to Uncle Tom's Cabin* (1853), a compilation of facts drawn from laws, court records, newspapers, and private letters. At the height of her fame, she made a trip to England (1853), where she was enthusiastically received, and of which she wrote in *Sunny Memories of Foreign Lands* (1854). To further the antislavery cause, she wrote her second novel, *Dred, A Tale of the Great Dismal Swamp* (q.v.,1856), which formed a complement to the first by showing the demoralizing influence of slavery upon the whites. After another successful trip abroad, during which she was honored by Queen Victoria, Mrs.Stowe returned to begin the writing of a series of books set in the New England she knew, and having fiction rather than propaganda for their purpose. The first of these was *The Minister's Wooing* (q.v.,1859), a romance partly based upon events in her sister's life, and containing an attack on the injustices of Calvinism, a religion that she eventually deserted. *The Pearl of Orr's Island* (q.v., 1862) was another novel distinguished for its use of New England local color, as was also *Oldtown Folks* (q.v.,1869). In 1869 she again visited abroad and met Lady Byron, from whom she obtained the information that she published in *Lady Byron Vindicated* (1870). Her charge that Byron had had incestuous relations with his sister caused her to be accused of scandal-mongering, and turned a great part of the English public against her. After this unhappy excursion into a subject that brought her unpleasant notoriety, she returned to New England themes in *Sam Lawson's Oldtown Fireside Stories* (1872), continuing tales of Oldtown, and in *Poganuc People* (1878) she wrote a novel closely based on her own childhood. She had also attempted other subjects in *Agnes of Sorrento* (1862), a historical novel set in Italy; *Pink and White Tyranny* (1871), a social satire; and *My Wife and I* (1871), a fictional essay defending woman's right to a career, which had as its sequel *We and Our Neighbors* (1875). Her *Religious Poems* were published in 1867, and some of her many lesser works were issued under the pseudonym Christopher Crowfield. After the Civil War, Mrs.Stowe lived mainly in Florida, and she described her quiet life there in *Palmetto Leaves* (1873). During the last 15 years of her life, she lapsed into a state of senile irresponsibility.

STRACHEY, WILLIAM (*fl.*1606–18), first secretary of the Virginia colony, after a literary career in England and a position as secretary of the ambassador to Constantinople (1606) accompanied Gates and Somers on the Virginia expedition of the *Sea Adventure*, which was wrecked in the Bermudas (July 1609), reaching Virginia the following May. During the year that he remained in the colony, he wrote a letter describing the wreck, which was first printed by Purchas (1625). There is a possibility that the manuscript describing the storm influenced Shakespeare in writing *The Tempest*. Strachey's other works include *For the Colony of Virginea Britannia: Lawes Divine, Morall, and Martiall* (1612), the first legal codification for Virginia, and *The Historie of Travaile into Virginia Britannia . . .*, inscribed to Bacon in 1618, but first published by the Hakluyt Society (1849).

Strange Interlude, drama in two parts and nine acts by O'Neill (q.v.), produced and published in 1928 and awarded the Pulitzer Prize. It is notable technically for its stream-of-consciousness technique, using asides to reveal the inner thoughts of the characters, often in ironic contrast with their speech.

Nina Leeds is the daughter of a New England professor, who, in his anxiety to

keep her with him, persuaded her fiancé, Gordon Shaw, not to marry her before he went to France as an aviator in the World War. Gordon was killed, and Nina despises herself because she did not give herself to him, and hates her father. She grows neurotic, and as a nurse in a soldiers' hospital offers herself indiscriminately to the men in sacrifice to her dead lover. After her father dies, she feels a filial affection for Charles Marsden, a novelist secretly in love with her but excessively attached to his mother. On his advice and that of Dr.Edmund Darrell, another admirer, who represses his love for her in the interests of his scientific career, she marries Sam Evans, ineffectual and adoring, for whom she cares little. When Nina is about to give birth to a child, Sam's mother reveals to her a strain of insanity in his family, and as a result Nina has an abortion. Hiding this from her husband, she has a child by Dr.Darrell, whom she comes to love. Sam, believing the child to be his, is inspired by his supposed fatherhood to confidence and success in his business career. Marsden jealously suspects the relations of Darrell and Nina, but they are not disclosed, since Nina refuses Darrell's request that she divorce Sam and marry him, and they do not meet again for 11 years. Then the boy, Gordon, prefers Sam to his real father, and grows away from the influence of his passionate mother. Nina has lost both Darrell and her son, and Sam's sudden death prevents her from disillusioning him about Gordon. After the funeral, she is unable to destroy her son's love for Madeline Arnold, and the two go off to be married. Nina is left with the quiet affection of Marsden, whom she marries, and the bitter conclusion that 'our lives are merely strange dark interludes in the electrical display of God the Father.'

STRATEMEYER, Edward (1863–1930), author of juvenile fiction for boys, who under the pseudonym Arthur M. Winfield wrote the Rover Boys series, exciting tales of preparatory school and college life. His Stratemeyer Literary Syndicate was responsible for such similar juvenile series as those concerned with Tom Swift and the Motor Boys. He also wrote several series that romantically depicted American history.

STRATTON-PORTER, Gene (1868–1924), Indiana author of books for girls, including sentimental novels and nature studies illustrated by her own drawings. Her most popular novels are *Freckles* (1904), about an Indiana waif who believes himself to be an orphan, but who is eventually reclaimed by his wealthy father; *A Girl of the Limberlost* (1909), the story of the companion of Freckles, Eleonora, who hunts the swamps for moths, which she sells to obtain money for an education; and *The Harvester* (1911), another story of the Limberlost region, about a naturalist who resembles Thoreau. The author was known in private life as Mrs. Porter but signed her books by hyphenating her maiden and married names.

Straw, The, play by Eugene O'Neill (q.v.).

Stream-of-consciousness, a development of realism (q.v.), influenced by modern psychological knowledge, is a method of the contemporary novel concerned with the depiction of the mental and emotional reactions of characters to external events, rather than the events themselves. As opposed to the usages of conventional plot structure, description, and characterization, the action is presented in terms of images and attitudes within the mind of one or more central figures. Poe, especially in such stories as 'The Tell-Tale Heart,' and Melville and Henry James are Americans considered to be among the predecessors of the French innovators and of James Joyce, whose *Ulysses* is the prototype of many contemporary works dominated by this interest. Americans who have upon occasion used the stream-of-consciousness technique include Hemingway, Sherwood Anderson, E.M.Roberts, W.C.Williams, Dos Passos, Conrad Aiken, William Faulkner, and James T. Farrell. In *Strange Interlude*, O'Neill attempted to transfer this approach to the theater, by the use of soliloquies and asides.

STREET, Alfred Billings (1811–81), New York lawyer and librarian, whose books of poetry, greatly admired in their time, include *The Burning of Schenectady* (1842) and *Frontenac* (1849). His faithful descriptions of nature were especially appreciated.

Street Scene, play by Elmer Rice (q.v.), produced and published in 1929 and awarded the Pulitzer Prize.

Against the background of life in a New

York tenement are presented the lives of the Kaplan and Maurrant families: Samuel Kaplan, an intellectual Jewish youth, falls in love with Rose Maurrant, an Irish girl, whose browbeaten mother, Anna, has taken as her lover the flashy milk driver, Steve Sankey. Her father, Frank, infuriated by his wife's actions and the gossip of the neighbors, in a drunken rage kills her and Sankey. Rose, meanwhile, having refused a prosperous married man who wants to take her 'away from all this,' tells Sam that though she loves him she can never belong to anyone, for she must care for her brother and save him from an environment that leaves no life unblighted.

STREETER, EDWARD (1891–), humorist, whose books *Dere Mable: Love Letters of a Rookie* (1918), *'Same Old Bill, eh Mable!'* (1919), and *As You Were, Bill!* (1920) were the most popular humorous treatments of the American soldier in the First World War.

Streets of Night, novel by Dos Passos (q.v.).

STREIT, CLARENCE (1896–), Missouri-born journalist and political scientist, after holding a minor post with the U.S.Peace Delegation in Paris (1918–19), studying at the Sorbonne and Oxford, and serving as a correspondent in Geneva (1929–39), evolved the plan presented in *Union Now* (1939) and *Union Now With Britain* (1941). His aim is to institute a federal union of democratic states, patterned after the relation of the states to the federal government of the U.S. under the Constitution. A large Federal Union organization in U.S. and Great Britain attempts to promote his ideas.

Strenuous Life, The, essays by Theodore Roosevelt (q.v.).

Strether, LAMBERT, character in *The Ambassadors* (q.v.).

STRIBLING, T[HOMAS] S[IGISMUND] (1881–), born in Tennessee, graduated from the University of Alabama (1904), studied and practiced law, and served on the staff of the *Taylor-Trotwood Magazine. Birthright* (1922), his first important novel, is concerned with the hopeless struggle of an educated mulatto to make his way in a world dominated by race prejudice. The author's residence in Venezuela provided the background for the adventure stories, *Fombombo* (1923) and *Red Sand* (1924), but *Teeftallow* (1926), dramatized as *Rope* (1928), is a bitterly realistic novel of a Tennessee mountain town, exhibiting the community's bigoted ignorance and its crushing of the love of a couple who do not conform to convention. *Bright Metal* (1928) is the story of a sophisticated woman's marriage into a Tennessee mountain family, and her adjustment to this new environment. Stribling again turned to Venezuela in *Strange Moon* (1929), a novel, and *Clues of the Caribbees* (1929), a book of detective stories with exotic settings. After writing *Backwater* (1930), a novel set in Arkansas, he began his most ambitious work, a trilogy on life in the South. *The Forge* (1931), the first of this series, is a realistic study of the middle-class Vaiden family in Alabama just prior to, during, and after the Civil War. Jimmy Vaiden, after rising from poor white, hard shell Baptist beginnings, loses his slaves and cotton gin when he falls into debt to J.Handback, the local storekeeper. His son Miltiades Vaiden is forced to become the overseer of the Lacefield manor. *The Store* (1932; Pulitzer Prize, 1933) opens in 1884, when Miltiades, a retired colonel and former Klan leader, is settling into a shiftless middle age, out of tune with the new South. Having lost his job as overseer, he is bitter against Handback, and by slow, unscrupulous means he works until he acquires the store. The trilogy is concluded in *Unfinished Cathedral* (1934), set in contemporary Alabama. Miltiades is now president of the local bank, the most feared and consequently the most respected man of the town. As the force behind a real-estate boom, he builds a cathedral that is to be his monument. The disgruntled son of a man he has cheated bombs the edifice, and Miltiades is pinned to death beneath the wreckage. Stribling has since written *The Sound Wagon* (1935), a satirical novel of politics, law, and social inequality in the contemporary U.S., and *These Bars of Flesh* (1938), an amusing satire of educators, politicians, and radicals at the Northern university of Megalopolis.

STRICKLAND, WILLIAM (*c.*1787–1854), Philadelphia architect, studied under Latrobe, and was, like him, an important leader in the Greek Revival (q.v.). His buildings of classical design in Philadelphia include the Bank of the United States (1824), now the Custom House; the Merchants' Exchange (1834); and the

United States Naval Asylum (1827). He was also known as an engraver and engineer.

Strict Construction, see *Constitution.*

Strictly Business, stories by W.S.Porter (q.v.).

STRONG, JOSIAH (1847–1916), born in Illinois, after graduation from Western Reserve University (1869) became a Congregational minister preaching the 'social gospel' outlined in his book, *Our Country* (1885), which called for a humanitarian purification of capitalism and a spreading of Christianity and this liberalized Anglo-Saxon civilization throughout the world. His other books include: *The Twentieth Century City* (1898); *Religious Movements for Social Betterment* (1900); and *The Next Great Awakening* (1902).

STRUBBERG, FRIEDRICH ARMAND (1806–89), German author, lived in the U.S. (1826–9), and again as a Texas colonist (*c.*1839–54). His observations of frontier life afforded him material for many novels depicting German colonization in the Southwest, the lives of slaves, the Mexican War, the life of the Indians, and frontier conditions. Although none of his works was translated into English, he attained great fame abroad as a counterpart of Fenimore Cooper and an accurate portrayer of American life. He wrote under the pseudonym Armand.

STUART, CHARLES (1783–1865), born in Jamaica, served in the British East India Company, and emigrated to the U.S., where he became converted to antislavery. His tract, *The West India Question: Immediate Emancipation Safe and Practical* (1832), became the great text of abolitionists both in Great Britain and America, and was followed by many similar pamphlets. His most famous American disciple was Theodore Weld.

STUART, GILBERT (1755–1828), born in Rhode Island, went to London (1775) to study painting under Benjamin West, and soon achieved success with his half-length portraits. After six successful but extravagant years in London, he found himself in financial straits and moved to Dublin, where he again accumulated debts. He returned to New York (*c.*1792) to paint Washington, and in 1795 finished his first portrait, called the *Vaughan* type. His other paintings from life are the full-length *Landsdowne* portrait and the famous unfinished *Athenæum* head, from which he painted many replicas. It is from these works that the accepted likeness of Washington derives. He painted other portraits of Washington from memory. After living and working in New York, Philadelphia, and Washington, Stuart moved to Boston (1806), where he painted other leaders of the new republic, generally in the same poses and backgrounds, emphasizing mainly the face and hands. Since he seldom signed his canvases, and since many younger painters copied his unfinished portrait of Washington, controversy periodically arises as to the authenticity of Stuart's own facsmiles. In most Stuart portraits there is a typical 18th-century tendency toward idealization rather than statement of fact, and in the Washington portraits he depicts the noble statesman rather than the man.

STUART, JAMES EWELL BROWN (1833–64), Confederate general and cavalry commander, distinguished himself in the battles of Bull Run, the Seven Days' Battles, Antietam, and Chancellorsville, at the last of which he commanded the corps of Stonewall Jackson after Jackson was wounded. He was a great aid in his daring raids into Union territory, but his absence on such an expedition at the beginning of the Battle of Gettysburg is sometimes held to be among the reasons for the Southern defeat. While serving in the Wilderness Campaign, he was mortally wounded in battle. From his initials was derived the nickname, 'Jeb' Stuart. He figures as a character in J.E.Cooke's *Surry of Eagle's Nest* and its sequels.

STUART, JESSE (1905–), Kentucky author, whose 700 sonnets in *Man with a Bull-Tongue Plow* (1934), dealing with the land and people of his state and his own experiences, were hailed as indigenous poetry close to the traditions of his native mountains. He is also the author of *Head o' W-Hollow* (1936) and *Men of the Mountains* (1941), short stories of the region; *Beyond Dark Hills* (1938), an autobiographical narrative; and *Trees of Heaven* (1940), a novel that tells of a proud farm couple, and their son's love for the daughter of poor-white squatters.

STUART, ROBERT (1785–1848), Scottish-born fur trader, was one of the party that went from New York by sea to found Astoria (1811). His return overland (1811–12) in a hazardous expedition is de-

scribed at length in Irving's *Astoria*, and Stuart's own journal was first printed in P.A.Rollins's *The Discovery of the Oregon Trail* (1935).

STUART, Ruth [McEnery] (1849–1917), Louisiana author of local-color stories, which depict the characters of the South in post-bellum times. Her sentimentality, optimism, and ability at dialect won her a wide popularity. Her collections include *A Golden Wedding and Other Tales* (1893), *In Simpkinsville: Character Tales* (1897), and *Aunt Amity's Silver Wedding, and Other Stories* (1909). *Sonny* (1896) is a long story, told in monologues, about the poor whites of Arkansas.

Stubb, character in *Moby-Dick* (q.v.).

Studs Lonigan, fictional trilogy by James T. Farrell (q.v.), which includes *Young Lonigan*, *The Young Manhood of Studs Lonigan*, and *Judgment Day* (qq.v.).

STURGIS, Howard Overing (1855–1920), born in London of wealthy Massachusetts parents, lived most of his life abroad, where he was an intimate of such literary celebrities as Henry James, Edith Wharton, and his 'quasi-cousin' Santayana. He wrote several novels with English settings, the best known being *Belchamber* (1904), the story of a tender young marquis in opposition to his own class and bent upon creating a universal brotherhood.

STUYVESANT, Peter (1592–1672), last Dutch governor or director-general of New Netherland (1647–64). He ruled despotically and arbitrarily, until forced by the English to surrender the colony. His violent temper, his remarkable appearance, and his famous ornamented silver leg caused him to figure often as a character in fiction. He is satirized as 'Peter the Headstrong' in Irving's *History of New York* (q.v.). The farm or *bouwerie* on which he lived the last seven years of his life gave the name to the Bowery.

Such Counsels You Gave to Me, free verse narrative by Jeffers (q.v.), the title poem of a volume published in 1937. It is based on the old Scottish ballad, 'Edward, Edward.'

Howard Howren, eager for knowledge and success, has worked his way through high school and a year of college, unaided by his brutal, stupid father. Ill and overworked, he fears a nervous collapse, and returns to the family farm on the California coast, carrying a phial of poison with which to kill himself if his demand for financial aid is refused. His neurotic mother suspects his purpose, and, after his father laughs at his request, she persuades her son that it is better to live, even though he must work on the farm. At the same time she reveals her hatred and fear of her husband, of whose death she says she has been dreaming. A few months later, during an emotional crisis, Howard poisons his father. His mother then reveals her incestuous passion for him, and he realizes that his ambition and inner conflict have arisen from an unnatural love for her. He refuses to possess her, however, and she becomes insane. He acknowledges to himself that his crime developed inevitably from 'divided desire and the split will,' but decides that, rather than 'escape easily' by suicide, he must undergo the ordeal of trial and execution. 'There are certain duties,' he tells himself, 'Even for . . . what did you say? . . . modern man.'

SUCKOW, Ruth (1892–), Iowa author, whose first novel, *Country People* (1924), is a strongly realistic study of three generations in a German-American family, the Kaetterhenrys, from their settlement in Iowa (1850) to their contemporary wealth and consequent loss of their original culture. *The Odyssey of a Nice Girl* (1925) tells of a young Iowa girl's struggle against the repressions of her family and the surrounding culture, and her eventual escape through marriage. Her subsequent fiction on the life of the region includes: *Iowa Interiors* (1926), a collection of short stories published in England as *People and Houses* (1927); *The Bonney Family* (1928), a novel about a minister's household in the mean, unimaginative surroundings of a small Iowa town; *Cora* (1929), relating the Americanization of a German immigrant girl and her family; *The Kramer Girls* (1930), a novel; *Children and Older People* (1931), short stories; *The Folks* (1934), a detailed fictional portrait of the good but dully unimaginative middle-class Fergusons; and *Carry-over* (1936), republishing *Country People*, *The Bonney Family*, and 16 short stories.

Suffragette, see *Woman Suffrage.*

Sugar Act, see *Molasses Act.*

Sugg, Simon, character in humorous sketches by J.J.Hooper (q.v.).

SULLIVAN, JOHN L[AWRENCE] (1858–1918), heavyweight boxing champion of the world (1882–92) until his defeat by J.J.Corbett. He is the subject of a poem by Vachel Lindsay, 'John L. Sullivan, the Strong Boy of Boston.'

SULLIVAN, LOUIS HENRI (1856–1924), Boston-born architect, studied at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, worked under Major Jenney, architect of the first steel-frame skyscraper, and studied in France and Italy. In Chicago, as a member of the firm of Adler and Sullivan, he fought against the architectural eclecticism and classical dominance of C.F.McKim and Stanford White, and created a number of buildings in which form followed function, and superimposed traditional ornamentation was repudiated. In the Wainwright Building (1890) at St.Louis, he executed the first skyscraper that freely recognized the steel skeleton, and in the Transportation Building (1893) at the Columbian Exposition, his original design foreshadowed modern architecture. Although conventional architects were more prominent in his day, he later became famous for his expression of function, frank use of materials, and emphasis on vertical piers to stress the loftiness of the skyscraper, in such structures as the Condict Building (New York) and the Gage Building and Stock Exchange Building (Chicago). His theories, expounded in *Autobiography of an Idea* (1924), have been carried on by his pupil Frank Lloyd Wright.

SULLIVAN, MARK (1874–), journalist who, through his newspaper column on political events, is considered a spokesman for the conservative Republican tradition. He is best known for *Our Times: the United States*, 1900–1925 (6 vols.,1926–36), a survey of the American scene, divided into eras studied both in their larger events and in the more informal matters that helped mold contemporary opinion. His autobiography, *The Education of an American* (1938), deals with his youth in Pennsylvania, schooling at Harvard, muckraking journalism with such magazines as *McClure's* and *Collier's*, and militant liberalism in behalf of the early Progressive party, and carries the account of his life to his mid-forties

SULLY, THOMAS (1783–1872), born in England, was brought to Charleston at the age of nine, and later studied portrait painting under Gilbert Stuart and in London under Benjamin West (1809–10). Upon his return to Philadelphia he began his best work, which includes such characterizations as the portraits of *Doctor Rush*, *Doctor Coates*, and Cooke the actor as *Richard III*. In 1837 he went abroad to do a portrait of Queen Victoria, but upon his return (1838) found that his popularity had declined with the rise of realism, superseding the elegant, aristocratic portrait tradition of the English school to which he belonged.

Summer, novelette by Edith Wharton (q.v.).

Summer in Arcady, A, novel by J.L. Allen (q.v.).

SUMMERFIELD, CHARLES, pseudonym of Alfred W. Arrington (q.v.).

SUMNER, CHARLES (1811–74), Boston lawyer, was elected on the Free Soil ticket to the Senate (1851), where he became the spearhead of New England liberal opposition to the South. His vehement oratory in opposition to the Fugitive Slave Law and the Kansas-Nebraska Bill reached its height in the speech, 'The Crime against Kansas' (May 19–20, 1856), invidiously attacking Senator Butler of South Carolina and other Southerners. Two days later he was physically assaulted in the Senate by Representative Preston S. Brooks, a relative of Butler. This brutal beating made Sumner a martyr, and, though he was forced by ill-health to be absent from the Senate for three and a half years, he continued to hold his position, and was re-elected. Upon his return he was the leading representative of the Republican party, which he had helped to found, and was not only among the first to suggest emancipation, but also urged equal civil rights for Negroes. As chairman of the committee on foreign affairs, his tactful handling of such matters as the Trent Affair did much to preserve smooth foreign relations, but in national affairs he opposed Lincoln by contending that the seceded states had no rights under the Constitution. Under Johnson this difference on Reconstruction policy grew to such an extent that he was a leader of the radical Republicans, and took a prominent part in the impeachment proceedings. He also opposed Grant, particularly on his desire to annex Santo Domingo, and his demotion from the chair-

manship of the committee on foreign relations, presumably because of the President's wish, caused him to turn against his own party. Throughout his life he was known for his courageous crusading and the lofty eloquence of his speeches, which have been preserved in his *Works* (1870–83).

SUMNER, WILLIAM GRAHAM (1840–1910), professor of political and social science at Yale (1872–1909), is famous both for his economic and his sociological treatises. In economics he championed free trade, and is usually considered an advocate of laissez-faire, although his opposition to governmental control and labor organization was founded on the theory that they were likely to be unintelligent experimentation instead of scientific and unsentimental correction. In sociology, he believed that the science of society must be based on the study of the full interrelations of all institutions, from their most primitive to their most complex forms. He found that custom was the basis of all institutions, and in his book *Folkways* (1907) made a careful study of this underlying factor, showing the anthropological and sociological evolution of social institutions. His books on economics include *What Social Classes Owe to Each Other* (1883) and *Protectionism* (1885). His unfinished book, *Science of Society* (4 vols., 1927), was completed by A.G.Keller, who edited other works under the titles *War and Other Essays* (1911), *Earth Hunger and Other Essays* (1913), and *The Forgotten Man and Other Essays* (1919).

Sumter, FORT, in the harbor of Charleston, South Carolina, was the site of the first military action of the Civil War. Major Anderson, commandant of Union forces at Charleston, evacuated other fortifications, placing his 129 men at Sumter (Dec. 1860). Governor Pickens demanded their withdrawal, and, following Anderson's refusal, a volunteer army under Beauregard besieged the fort. The *Star of the West*, a Northern merchant ship, was sent with reinforcements; before it could land its men and supplies, it was fired upon by the Southerners and forced to put to sea again. When President Lincoln announced his intention of sustaining the resistance (April 8, 1861), Pickens ordered the fort bombarded. Anderson endured the severe fire for two days (April 12–14) but because of lack of provisions was forced to surrender. Until their evacuation of Charleston (1865), the Confederates occupied Sumter.

Sun Also Rises, The, novel by Hemingway (q.v.) published in 1926. The title is derived from a pessimistic passage in Ecclesiastes, expressing a cynical disillusion in keeping with the post-war attitude. The English title of the work is *Fiesta.*

Lady Brett Ashley, 'as charming when she is drunk as when she is sober,' is traveling on the continent, waiting for a divorce in order to marry Michael Campbell. Among her other satellites are Jake Barnes, an American newspaper correspondent; his friend Bill Gorton; Robert Cohn, an American Jewish novelist; and an eccentric Greek count. Cohn is weary of his mistress, Frances Clyne, and falls in love with Brett, although neither she nor his other acquaintances feel any real affection for him. The group leave Paris for an excursion in Spain, where they visit the fiesta at Pamplona. They are enthusiastic fans of the bullfights, finding in the ritualistic spectacle a mysterious beauty of precision. Brett and Jake are in love, but unhappily, because a wartime injury has emasculated him. She falls in love with a young bullfighter, Pedro Romero, with whom she elopes; and Cohn departs, expressing his anger by knocking out Jake, Michael, and Romero. When Romero wants to marry her, Brett decides to return to Michael, who is one of her own kind. She tells Jake, 'we could have had such a damned good time together,' and he concludes, 'Yes. Isn't it pretty to think so?'

Sunnyside, country estate of Irving (q.v.) on the Hudson River near Tarrytown, New York. He lived there (1836–42, 1846–59), receiving the visits of other men of letters, and writing such works as *Astoria, The Crayon Miscellany, Wolfert's Roost*, and *The Life of George Washington.* The region about Sunnyside is described by Irving in many places, notably in 'Sleepy Hollow' (in *Wolfert's Roost*) and 'The Legend of Sleepy Hollow.'

Sunthin' in the Pastoral Line, dialect verse by Lowell, in *The Biglow Papers* (q.v.).

Sun-Up, play by Lula Vollmer (q.v.), produced in 1923 and published in 1925.

Rufe Cagle, hearing of the World War, leaves his native North Carolina moun-

tains to take part in the 'Guv'ment feud.' Meanwhile his mother is harboring a deserter, whom she discovers to be the son of the law officer who killed her husband and father for bootlegging. She is further embittered by the news of Rufe's death in the war, and is about to kill the deserter, when she imagines she hears her son's voice telling her that her kind of hatred, which destroys the innocent, killed him, and that the hope of the world lies in love. She releases her prisoner, defies the sheriff who had come for him, and returns quietly to her cabin.

Superstition, blank verse tragedy by J.N.Barker (q.v.), produced in 1824 and published in 1826.

Charles Fitzroy discovers that his sweetheart, Mary Ravensworth, is being molested by George Edgerton, nephew of Sir Reginald Edgerton, sent to New England by Charles II to find Goffe. He challenges his rival to a duel, and the feeling of the colonists runs high against him when George is wounded. Mary's father, a clergyman, dislikes Charles, who has formerly offended him. Attention is drawn to a more important matter, however, when Indians suddenly attack the village, which is saved by Charles and a mysterious man called The Unknown. The Unknown, really Charles's maternal grandfather, the regicide Goffe, is considered to be an agent of the devil, summoned by Charles's mother, Isabella. She and Charles are put on trial for witchcraft, and Ravensworth, the clergyman, gives damning testimony. Charles is executed, but Isabella is saved when Sir Reginald and The Unknown appear and reveal that she was once the wife of Charles II, the present King of England, thus explaining her son's surname. Isabella dies of grief, and The Unknown is pardoned.

Suppressed Desires, play by Susan Glaspell and George Cram Cook (qq.v.).

Surry of Eagle's Nest, novel by J.E. Cooke (q.v.).

Survey Graphic (1897–), 'magazine of social interpretation,' was founded as *The Survey*, a journal published by the New York Charity Organization Society. In 1912 the Society withdrew its support, because of the publication of an article advocating the candidacy of Theodore Roosevelt, and since that time the magazine has been known as a liberal journal dealing with contemporary American problems. Its contributors have included Lincoln Steffens, Ida Tarbell, W.A.White, R.S.Baker, Jacob Riis, C.A.Beard, Stuart Chase, and Dorothy Thompson.

Survey of the Summe of Church Discipline, treatise by Thomas Hooker (q.v.).

Susan Lenox: Her Fall and Rise, novel by D.G.Phillips (q.v.), written in 1908 and posthumously published (2 vols., 1917).

Susan, daughter of an unwed mother who died at her birth, is reared by her aunt in an Ohio town. When she is 17, a jealous cousin reveals her true history, telling her that no 'decent man' will marry her; Susan runs away, is overtaken by her uncle, and is forced to marry Jeb Ferguson, a coarse, ignorant farmer. Horrified by Jeb's conduct, Susan escapes, is befriended by a young newspaperman, Roderick Spenser, and after his disappearance is employed as a showboat entertainer by Burlingham. When his boat is wrecked, Burlingham takes Susan to Cincinnati, where they are nearly penniless. He falls ill, and Susan sells herself to provide hospital care for him. After his death she works for starvation wages in a box factory, then becomes the mistress of a law student, whose proposal of marriage she declines in order not to hurt his career. She meets Spenser and accompanies him to New York, where he wastes his money and fails to find a producer for his play. Loving him, and realizing that his passion for her is ruining him, Susan gives him her money and leaves. She becomes a cloak model, works in a millinery sweatshop, loses health and hope, and in revolt becomes a prostitute for the organization led by the ambitious gangster, Freddie Palmer. She refuses to become Freddie's mistress, and, afraid of his vengeance, leaves his district, having a series of misadventures as singer, worker, and prostitute, until she finds Spenser, ill and desperate, and helps him to recovery. She is then befriended by the playwright, Brent, who is impressed by her experiences, and provides for her training as an actress, at the same time aiding Spenser to produce his play. Things go well until Brent leaves for Europe, and Susan mistakenly believes he has abandoned her because she has no talent. She meets Freddie, now wealthy and a 'respectable' contractor, and accepts his proposal that they share his resources

and climb the social ladder together. In Paris they meet Brent, who tells Susan it is not too late to resume her stage career. She discovers that she loves him, although he does not return her feeling. The jealous Freddie accompanies them when Susan goes on tour in England; when Brent sails for America, Freddie goes with him, but returns immediately. News of Brent's murder arrives, and Freddie, telling Susan that he is responsible, suddenly leaves her in an outburst of hatred. She returns to New York, having inherited Brent's fortune. Extremely successful as an actress in his plays, she has a lonely personal life, dominated by the memory of her love for him.

Sut Lovingood Yarns, 25 sketches by G.W.Harris (q.v.), contributed to the *Spirit of the Times* and Tennessee newspapers, and collected in 1867.

Sut is a lanky, uncouth Tennessee mountaineer, who loves two things—corn whiskey and a joke. Hence come his humorous adventures in breaking up a Negro funeral, a wedding party, and a quilting, and being blown up by seidlitz powders. His vivid, earthy dialect and tall tales come close to the true oral humor of the southwestern frontier, and he foreshadows Huckleberry Finn, whose adventures have been called parlor versions of Sut's crude pranks.

SUTTER, John Augustus (Johann August) (1803–80), Swiss adventurer and colonist, settled in California (1839) as proprietor of the wealthy New Helvetia Colony, protected by Sutter's Fort (Sacramento). When gold was discovered on the site of his sawmill, on the South Fork of the American River at Coloma, by his partner James W. Marshall (q.v.), the influx of avaricious miners ruined his property, and as a result he died in poverty. His *Diary*, first published in the San Francisco *Argonaut* (1878), was republished in 1932, and his *New Helvetia Diary* (Sept. 1845–May 1848) was published in 1939.

SUZZALLO, Henry (1875–1933), born in California, graduated from Stanford (1899), and, after administrative work in San Francisco public schools and teaching at Stanford, became a professor of the philosophy of education at Teacher's College, Columbia (1909–15), and president of the University of Washington (1915–26). During the latter period he also served for a time as acting governor of the state, and was noted as a lecturer, writer, and active worker in diverse educational, governmental, and administrative capacities. He returned to his former post at Columbia and was president of the Carnegie Foundation for the Advancement of Teaching. *Our Faith in Education* (1924) shows his stress upon a liberal education in relation to the broad social aspects of democracy.

Swallow Barn; or, A Sojourn in the Old Dominion, 49 interrelated sketches by J.P.Kennedy (q.v.), published in 1832 and revised in 1851. In an Addisonian style, and undoubtedly under the influence of Irving, the work is a sketch book of country life in Virginia during the first quarter of the 19th century. The slender thread of story, concerned with a friendly litigation between neighbors, which terminates in a love affair, has as a background a charming picture of Virginian life and local types, including the old Southern gentleman, the eccentric, oracular country lawyer, and the lovely young Southern girl.

Swamp Fight, see *Narragansett Indians.*

Swamp Fox, sobriquet of Francis Marion (q.v.).

Swanee River, see *Old Folks at Home.*

Sweatshop, term applied to an industrial establishment, usually in trades involving piecework by unskilled hands, where excessive hours, low wages, and oppressive working conditions prevail. The sweating system arose in England in the early 19th century, and agitation against its evils began when Charles Kingsley wrote his pamphlet, *Cheap Clothes and Nasty* (1850). In the U.S. the system first appeared during the Civil War, in the manufacture of uniforms, and spread from the garment trades to other industries, especially affecting immigrant laborers in eastern cities. Minimum wage laws, sanitary ordinances, and collective bargaining by unions have tended to eliminate sweatshop conditions. The poems of Morris Rosenfeld picture the life of a worker in the sweated garment factories of New York City, and many controversial works have attacked the system.

Swedenborgianism, religious system incorporated in the Church of the New Jerusalem, based on the beliefs of the Swedish theologian Emanuel Swedenborg (1688–1772). He contended that the inner meaning of the Bible is made clear through un-

derstanding that each natural object is the expression of a spiritual cause. He taught that there is one God, and that the Trinity is a division of essences, not of persons. The Father is the divine essence of love, the Son the divine Wisdom or Word to accomplish the redemption of mankind, and the Holy Spirit the divine proceeding by which life and love flow forth in act. The death and resurrection of Jesus symbolize the fate of man, who, if he has worked with the spirit of Jesus in love and obedience, will put aside his material body to pass from this probationary world to assume a spiritual body, becoming subject to a process of infinite perfectibility. The Church of the New Jerusalem held its first meeting in London (1788), although its teachings were known previously, and had reached America in 1785. The formal organization was begun in America (1792), and has been strongest in Boston, Philadelphia, and Baltimore. One of its leaders was Sampson Reed, whose writings influenced Emerson, and the philosophy of Transcendentalism is indebted to Swedenborgianism for its prophetic optimism and doctrine of correspondence. The elder Henry James was also strongly impressed by these doctrines.

Sweet Adeline, sentimental ballad by Richard Gerard and Harry Armstrong, published in 1903. It became widely popular in quartet arrangements of 'barbershop' harmony, and has been frequently paraphrased and parodied.

Sweet Singer of Michigan, The, sobriquet of Julia A. Moore (q.v.).

SWIFT, GUSTAVUS FRANKLIN (1839–1903), was a Massachusetts butcher before founding (1875) the Chicago firm of meat packers that he incorporated as Swift and Company in 1885. By the development of a railway refrigerator car and discovering new economic uses of by-products, the firm acquired a world-wide market, and became the chief competitor of Armour's.

Swing music, see *Jazz.*

SWINTON, WILLIAM (1833–92), born in Scotland, was taken to Canada in 1843 and later removed to the U.S., where he joined the staff of *The New York Times.* His experiences as a correspondent furnished the background for his several books on the Civil War, which include *Campaigns of the Army of the Potomac* (1866) and *The Twelve Decisive Battles of the War* (1867). He was professor of English at the University of California (1869–74).

Sword of Youth, The, novelette by J.L. Allen (q.v.).

SYLVIS, WILLIAM H. (1828–69), the foremost trade unionist of his time, founded the Iron Moulders International Union (1859), and was prominent in agitation for such reforms as the eight-hour day, a labor party, arbitration of labor conflicts, money reforms, improvement of housing conditions, and establishment of workers' schools. Some of his speeches and essays were collected by J.C.Sylvis (1872).

Symphony, The, poem by Lanier (q.v.), published in 1875 and collected in his *Poems* (1884). Employing a rich, complex versification to give an onomatopoetic expression to the different instruments in an orchestra, Lanier personifies each of them to discuss social questions of the time, particularly the inhumanities of trade and industrialism, and to set forth a philosophy of æsthetics, ending 'Music is Love in search of a word.'

Symposium Club, see *Transcendental Club.*

Synod of Dort, assembly of representatives from the leading Reformed churches, held in Dort, Holland (1618). It denounced the Arminian doctrine of free will and propounded the five essential points of Calvinism, which came to be the criteria of orthodoxy for English and American Congregational and Presbyterian churches.

T

TABB, JOHN B[ANISTER] (1845–1909), Virginia-born poet, served as a Confederate blockade runner in the Civil War, and taught school in Baltimore. He was converted to Catholicism, and after ordination as a priest taught at St.Charles's College, near Baltimore (1884–1909), where George Sterling was one of his students. Tabb began early to write poetry, but first attained fame when he published his *Poems* (1894). Later books included *Lyrics* (1897), *Later Lyrics* (1902), and *The Rosary in Rhyme* (1904). His brief, classically modeled poems, generally in the form of quatrains or musical lyrics were marked by religious intensity and a cryptic, epigrammatic manner. His occasional humor, based on conceits, has caused his poetry to be compared both to that of his contemporary, Emily Dickinson, and to the work of the 17th-century English metaphysical poets.

Tablets, essays by Alcott (q.v.) published in 1868. The book is divided into two parts, the first 'Practical,' containing discussions on 'The Garden,' 'Books,' 'Counsels,' 'Friendship,' and other subjects in a manner somewhat reminiscent of Montaigne; the second 'Speculative,' dealing with 'Instrumentalities,' 'Mind,' 'Genesis,' and 'Metamorphoses,' in a more transcendental vein. The philosophic ideas in both sections are interspersed by original poems, which supplement the prose and frequently carry it beyond the logical development onto a more spiritual plane.

TAFT, LORADO (1860–1936), Chicago sculptor, trained in Paris, whose pictorial and symbolic works for the Columbian Exposition and other sites, such as the *Fountain of the Great Lakes*, *Fountain of Time*, and *Soldier's Monument*, are less significant than his two pleasant but rather unsound books, *The History of American Sculpture* (1903, revised 1924), and *Recent Tendencies in Sculpture* (1921). He figures in *A Son of the Middle Border* and *A Daughter of the Middle Border*, by his brother-in-law Hamlin Garland.

TAFT, WILLIAM HOWARD (1857–1930), 27th President of the U.S. (1909–13), was born at Cincinnati, graduated from Yale (1878), and after graduation from Cincinnati Law School (1880) was admitted to the bar. He practiced briefly, soon entering politics, and in 1890 was appointed Solicitor-General of the U.S., two years later becoming a U.S. circuit judge. He proved his efficiency and tact as an administrator, when President McKinley appointed him president of the Philippine commission (1900), and from 1901 to 1904 he was the first civil governor of the Philippines. His friend Theodore Roosevelt appointed him Secretary of War (1904–8), in which office he toured many countries as the president's unofficial observer and reorganized the work of construction on the Panama Canal. Roosevelt chose him as his successor, and he received a considerable majority over his Democratic opponent, Bryan, in the 1908 election. On the whole he continued the policies of his predecessor, including the vigorous prosecution of trusts and the maintenance of 'dollar diplomacy.' There were nevertheless specific differences of opinion, and Taft ousted certain associates of Roosevelt, so that when the former President returned from his African hunting trip a split appeared between the two. Roosevelt announced that he would seek the Republican candidacy, and, when Taft was nominated on the first ballot, he seceded to run on his own 'Bull Moose' ticket. As a result, the Democratic party won the election (1912). Taft became a professor of law at Yale, lectured widely, served as president of the American Bar Association, and was a leader of the League to Enforce Peace. He supported Wilson's war policies, however, and was an arbitrator of labor disputes, later urging that the U.S. join the League of Nations. As a Harding appointee, he was Chief Justice of the Supreme Court (1921–30). His writings include *Popular Government* (1913), *The United States and Peace* (1914), *Ethics in Service* (1915), and *Our Chief Magistrate and His Powers* (1916).

TAGGARD, GENEVIEVE (1894–), born in Washington, reared in Hawaii, graduated from the University of California (1919), and began her career as a poet with the publication of *For Eager Lovers* (1922) and *Hawaiian Hilltop* (1923). *Words for the Chisel* (1926) showed a greater maturity and a more metaphysical style, and *Traveling Standing Still*

(1928) is a selection from these earlier volumes. Her only prose work, *The Life and Mind of Emily Dickinson* (1930), was followed by further poetry, including *Remembering Vaughan in New England* (1933), *Not Mine to Finish* (1934), *Calling Western Union* (1936), and *Collected Poems* (1938). Her literary interests are indicated by the anthologies she has edited: *May Days* (1925), a selection of verse from *The Masses* and *The Liberator*; and *Circumference* (1929), a collection of metaphysical verse from Donne to E.E.Cummings. She has taught English at Mount Holyoke (1929–31) and Sarah Lawrence (1935–).

TAILFER, PATRICK (*fl.*1740), an original settler of Georgia, quarreled with Governor Oglethorpe and fled to Charleston, where he published *A True and Historical Narrative of the Colony of Georgia* (1740). This work, in which he was assisted by Hugh Anderson and David Douglass, is a carefully documented history of early Georgia, though its primary purpose is to satirize Oglethorpe's administration, which in a politely cold style he characterizes as despotic and corrupt.

Taji, character in *Mardi* (q.v.).

Tales of a Traveller, 32 stories and sketches by Irving (q.v.), published in 1824. The volume, resembling its predecessors, *The Sketch Book* and *Bracebridge Hall*, was the product of notes and anecdotes gathered mainly during a tour of Germany (1822–3). The first three sections deal with European backgrounds: 'Strange Stories by a Nervous Gentleman'; 'Buckthorne and His Friends'; and 'The Italian Banditti'; while the fourth section, 'The Money-Diggers,' contains five tales 'found among the papers of the late Diedrich Knickerbocker,' set in New York, and dealing with buried-treasure legends about Captain Kidd and other pirates.

Tales of a Wayside Inn, series of narrative poems by Longfellow (q.v.), published in three parts (1863, 1872, and 1874) and collected in 1886. The concept of a succession of tales by a group of congenial acquaintances was obviously derived from Chaucer, Boccaccio, and other authors. The setting is at a real inn near Boston, and the characters are based on Longfellow's friends. The musician is Ole Bull (q.v.); the Spanish Jew, Israel Edrehi; the poet, T.W.Parsons (q.v.); the theologian, Professor Daniel Treadwell; the student, Henry Ware Wales, a young Harvard scholar; the Sicilian, Luigi Monti; and the landlord, Lyman Howe, actual keeper of the inn at Sudbury. Of the 21 stories, only three deal directly with American themes.

Part First opens with the description of the inn and the members of the group. The first tale is 'Paul Revere's Ride' (q.v.), told by the landlord. The second is the student's tale, 'The Falcon of Ser Federigo,' derived from Boccaccio, and telling of a knight who kills his beloved falcon to furnish a breakfast for his lady. The Jew tells 'The Legend of Rabbi Ben Levi,' a tale from the Talmud, and the Sicilian relates the story of 'King Robert of Sicily,' whose exalted spirit is broken when an angel in disguise takes his place on the throne and he is forced to serve as the jester until his arrogance disappears. The musician's tale, 'The Saga of King Olaf,' is derived from Snorre Sturleson's account of the king who championed Christianity among his heathen countrymen. The theologian's tale, 'Torquemada,' tells of a father who denounces his daughters for some doctrinal heresy during the Inquisition. The poet's tale, 'The Birds of Killingworth,' concerns Connecticut farmers who killed the small birds that destroyed their crops, and the way in which the birds were avenged by a plague of caterpillars who made the lands a desert.

In Parts Second and Third, each of the friends relates two further narratives, most of them based on European legends, although 'Elizabeth,' the theologian's tale in Part Third, is a love-story set in rural New England.

Tales of Soldiers and Civilians, 19 stories by Ambrose Bierce (q.v.), published in 1891 and retitled *In the Midst of Life* (1892, revised 1898). These grim, vivid stories, reminiscent of Poe's tales of horror, are marked by an ingenious use of the surprise ending, and a realistic study of tense emotional states. Among the tales of soldiers, dealing with Civil War scenes, are 'A Horseman in the Sky,' telling of a soldier in the Union army, who, stationed as a picket near his Southern mountain home, encounters his father, a Confederate cavalry officer, and is forced to shoot, plunging him over a steep cliff to

his death; 'An Occurence at Owl Creek Bridge,' which is concerned with the illusory thoughts of a Southern planter who is being hanged by Union soldiers, depicting his mind in the interval between the tightening of the rope and the breaking of his neck, during which he imagines that he has escaped; and 'Chickamauga,' a lurid account of a deaf-mute child amid the horrors of a bloody battle that destroys his home and family. The tales of civilians also deal with sensational effects of mystery and terror, as in 'The Middle Toe of the Right Foot,' the story of a ghostly return of a wife to terrify the husband who murdered her, causing his death in a duel.

Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque, first collection of stories by Poe (q.v.), published in two volumes in December 1839, dated 1840. The title was suggested by an essay of Sir Walter Scott, and the collection included 25 stories, among them 'MS. Found in a Bottle,' 'The Assignation,' 'Berenice,' 'Morella,' 'Ligeia,' 'The Fall of the House of Usher,' and 'William Wilson' (qq.v.).

TALIAFERRO, HARDEN E. (1818–75), Baptist minister and editor in North Carolina and Alabama, known for his volume of *Fisher's River (North Carolina) Scenes and Characters* (1859), describing the Old Southwest frontier on which he grew up, in the manner of Longstreet's *Georgia Scenes.* A second series of sketches, contributed under the pseudonym Skitt to the *Southern Literary Messenger* between 1860 and 1863, was issued in book form as *Carolina Humor* (1938).

Talifer, blank verse narrative by E.A. Robinson (q.v.), published in 1933.

Samuel Talifer, a middle-aged businessman, who has been engaged to the attractive but rather immature Althea, is now about to marry Karen, a woman of exotic beauty and complex intellect, with whom he claims to have 'found Peace.' This assertion amused his wise and witty friend, Dr.Quick, who sees that, while Althea genuinely loves and admires Talifer, Karen is motivated chiefly by a jealous hatred of Althea, and is interested in the theft of his affections rather than the man himself. Althea is meanwhile heartbroken, and the solitary Quick, who in his own way loves both women, can comfort her only by advising patience. Talifer and Karen are married, but immediately suffer from their extreme incompatibility. Karen, scholarly and remote, despises her undiscerning husband, who finds her impossibly refined and unsympathetic. The natural course of events, with Quick as catalyst, precipitates a crisis, during which Talifer secretly promises Althea that he will return to her, and Karen, because of an hysterical, ungrounded fear of murder by her husband, flees to the doctor's home. Quick sends her to his estate in Wales, where he follows, while Talifer obtains a divorce and marries Althea. Two years later, the genial physician returns to find the Talifers happy at the birth of a son, and tells them that Karen has now devoted herself to study at Oxford.

Talisman, The (1827–30), New York gift book, published the works of Bryant, Verplanck, and R.C.Sands, all under the pseudonym Francis Herbert.

Talitha Cumi, essay by Samuel Sewall (q.v.), attacking theologians who denied the resurrection of women. It is subtitled 'An Invitation to Women to look after their Inheritance in the Heavenly Mansions,' and with characteristic wit, the author says, 'If we should wait till all the ancients are agreed in their opinions, neither men nor women would ever get to heaven.' It was first printed in the *Proceedings* of the Massachusetts Historical Society (1873). The title in Aramaic means 'maiden arise,' and is from Mark 5:41.

Tall tale, term applied to the type of frontier anecdote characterized by exaggeration or violent understatement, with realistic details of character or local customs that work toward a cumulative effect of the grotesque, romantic, or humorous. Tall tales depend for their humor partly upon the incongruity between the realism in which the scene and narrator are portrayed, and the fantastically comic world of the enclosed narrative. Frontier story-tellers created the oral tradition of the tall tale, and folk legends and myths were developed through this medium, especially about such heroes as Paul Bunyan, Mike Fink, and Davy Crockett (qq.v.). Later, the anecdotes began to be printed, and the tall tale became a distinct literary genre, which delightfully pictures the social life of the frontier. These mock oral tales were frequently published in almanacs, and in such newspapers as *The Spirit of the Times* (q.v.), and were of a length dictated by the necessities of such publication. They were

not only the creation of the frontier journalist, but the occasional amusement of lawyers, merchants, doctors, soldiers, actors, travelers, and gamblers, who turned amateur writer. Among the most famous literary examples are Longstreet's *Georgia Scenes*, Hooper's *Simon Suggs*, Thompson's *Major Jones*, Harris's *Sut Lovingood*, Baldwin's *Flush Times of Alabama and Mississippi*, Thorpe's 'Big Bear of Arkansas' (qq.v.), and many passages in the works of Clemens.

Tamar and Other Poems, collection by Jeffers (q.v.) published in 1924. The volume contains 'The Tower Beyond Tragedy,' 'Night' (qq.v.), 'Shine, Perishing Republic,' and 'The Coast Range Christ.' The title piece is a free verse narrative, suggested by a passage in II Samuel 13.

An incestuous strain in the Cauldwell family, farmers on the California coast, begins with the passion of David and his sister Helen. Helen dies, but a generation later David's son and daughter by his wife, Lee and Tamar, break the same moral law, and Tamar becomes pregnant. She has desired 'a love sterile and sacred as the stars,' and now, terrified, attempts to conceal her sin by taking Will Andrews, a former suitor, as her lover. David's sister Stella becomes a psychic medium for the restless spirit of the dead Helen, impelling Tamar to further crime, for Tamar is jealous of Lee, who is about to leave for France to serve in the World War, and stirs her father to lust. In a paroxysm of contempt and desire, she brings Lee, Will, and David together in her bedroom, and by a fabric of lies sets them to fighting. During this violent encounter, an idiot aunt, Jinny, sets fire to the house, which is destroyed with all its occupants. This dramatic tale, of 'passions turned inward, incestuous desires, and a fighting against ghosts,' embodies the poet's allegorical warning to humanity against its growing introversion of values. Ending with desolation after a holocaust, it serves to demonstrate his vision of a culminating disaster, to be desired rather than feared, which threatens mankind because of its foolish and perverse attempt at self-deification.

Tamerlane and Other Poems, first collection by Poe (q.v.), anonymously published in Boston (1827). The title piece is a narrative poem, revised in later editions, which shows the strong influence of Byron, and purports to be the dying confession of the Asiatic conqueror to a strange friar, mainly concerned with memories of a passionate love.

Tammany, New York political society named for the Delaware Indian chief Tammany (*fl.*1685), who is said to have welcomed Penn and to have been a great friend of the white settlers. In the 1770's he began to be considered the patron saint of Americans opposed to British tyranny, and after the Revolution he was a symbol of democracy versus aristocracy. His name was accordingly assumed by patriotic societies and later by Democratic societies, of which only one (organized 1789) endured. Early in the 19th century this organization entered politics, and by 1850 it had become a Democratic stronghold in New York City. Since the time of the Tweed Ring (q.v.), Tammany has had an established 'boss' system, interrupted by occasional reform movements. The symbol of the Tammany tiger was created by Thomas Nast in his cartoons attacking the society. The Indian Tammany appears as a character in *The Last of the Mohicans* and other works. *Tammany* with a score by James Hewitt, was produced under the auspices of the New York City society (1794), and was one of the first American operas.

TANEY, ROGER BROOKE (1777–1864), Maryland lawyer and jurist, served in the state senate (1816–21) and as state attorney-general (1827–31). He supported Jackson for President, and became U.S. Attorney-General (1831–3), being the chief adviser of the President in his opposition to the Bank of the United States. When Jackson appointed him secretary of the treasury (1833), with the specific purpose of removing government deposits from the bank, the Senate refused to confirm the appointment, but he continued his association with the administration, and in 1835 became Chief Justice of the Supreme Court. During his long occupation of this office, the court became predominantly Southern, Democratic, and proslavery, and his own decisions were frequently in accordance with state rights doctrine, as in the Dred Scott case (q.v., 1857). Taney was a brother-in-law of Francis Scott Key, to whose *Poems* he wrote an introduction.

Tanglewood Tales, see *Wonder Book*.

Tante, novel by Anne Sedgwick (q.v.) published in 1911.

Madame Okraska, a great concert pianist, insists upon adoration from her young protégée, Karen Woodruff, who blindly admires her as her 'Tante.' While the pianist is absent on an American tour, Karen marries Gregory Jardine, a conventional Englishman, but their happy life together ends when the hatred of the older woman for Jardine causes Karen to leave him. Madame Okraska's latest lover, Drew, wearies of her and falls in love with Karen, at which the older woman in a fury turns upon her. Karen now realizes the true character of her tyrannical mentor, and returns to Jardine.

Taos, village in New Mexico, north of Santa Fé, was a leading commercial center of the Santa Fé Trail (q.v.), and the home of such scouts as Kit Carson. It is now known for its Taos Indian pueblo, the finest example of Indian architecture in the Southwest, probably built in the 17th century, and for its artist colony. Maxwell Anderson's play, *Night over Taos*, deals with the downfall of Mexican rule there in 1847, and Kit Carson's home is described in *Death Comes for the Archbishop*. Harvey Fergusson's *Footloose McGarnigal* (1930) is concerned with the artist colony, of which such members as Mabel Dodge Luhan have also written. D.H.Lawrence was a resident (1922,1924).

TAPPAN, Arthur (1786–1865), Massachusetts-born merchant, philanthropist, and reformer, resident in New York after the War of 1812. He founded Oberlin College and the National Tract Society, and was an Abolitionist leader, allied for a time with Garrison. Later he headed a separate antislavery organization, and founded magazines in behalf of the cause.

Lewis Tappan (1788–1873), his brother, was associated with him in business and in his reform activities. Together they founded the New York *Journal of Commerce* (1827). His books include *Is It Right to be Rich* (1869).

Tar, a Midwest Childhood, autobiographical novel by Sherwood Anderson (q.v.).

TARBELL, Ida M[inerva] (1857–), Pennsylvania author, editor, and lecturer, first became known as a leader of the muckraking movement, for her articles in *McClure's* magazine. From some of these was gathered her sensational exposé, *The History of the Standard Oil Company* (2 vols.,1904). For the same magazine she had earlier written a *Life of Abraham Lincoln* (2 vols.,1900). She is the author of other books on Lincoln, *The Nationalizing of Business*, 1878–1898 (1936), and an autobiography, *All in the Day's Work* (1939).

Tarheels, name applied to the mountaineers of North Carolina, perhaps in reference to the production of tar as one of their principal industries.

Tariff of Abominations, see *Abominations.*

TARKINGTON, [Newton] Booth (1869–), Indiana novelist, first won popularity with his romance, *Monsieur Beaucaire* (1900), telling of the adventures in 18th-century England of the French Duke of Orleans, who travels disguised as a barber and has an affair with Lady Mary Carlisle from which he emerges a hero and she a cheat. Tarkington had already published *The Gentleman from Indiana* (1899), concerned with the crusade of an honorable country editor against political corruption, and he now wrote a series of realistic novels of life in the Middle West, of which two won the Pulitzer Prize. These were *The Magnificent Ambersons* (q.v.,1918), the chronicle of three generations of a leading Indiana family and their decline during a period of transition, and *Alice Adams* (q.v.,1921), a study of a commonplace girl whose romantic illusions are destroyed when a love affair with a man above her in social rank is ended by his acquaintance with her mediocre family. *Growth* (1927) is the title given to his trilogy of Midwestern city life: *The Turmoil* (1915), *The Magnificent Ambersons*, and *The Midlander* (1923); and other novels of the region include *The Conquest of Canaan* (1905), the story of an Indiana town, and *The Plutocrat* (1927), a study of a self-made businessman traveling abroad. Tarkington is also noted for his books about boys and adolescents, of which the most famous are *Penrod* (q.v., 1914), its sequels, *Penrod and Sam* (1916) and *Penrod Jashber* (1929), and *Seventeen* (1916). His many plays include dramatizations of *Monsieur Beaucaire* (1901) and *Clarence* (1919), and several comedies with Harry Leon Wilson and Julian Street. He has also written short stories, essays, and *The World Does Move* (1928), a book of reminiscences.

Tarzan, hero of juvenile adventure stories by Edgar Rice Burroughs (q.v.).

Tashtego, character in *Moby-Dick* (q.v.).

TATE, ALLEN [JOHN ORLEY] (1899–), Tennessee author, began his literary career as an editor of *The Fugitive* (q.v.,1922), and has continued to show interest in regionalism through his contributions to the symposia, *I'll Take My Stand* (1930), *The Critique of Humanism* (1930), and *Who Owns America?* (1936). His sectionalism is also to be observed in his interpretive biographies of Stonewall Jackson (1928) and Jefferson Davis (1929). He is best known for his poems, published in *Mr.Pope and Other Poems* (1928), *Three Poems* (1930), *Poems, 1928–1931* (1932), *The Mediterranean and Other Poems* (1936), and *Selected Poems* (1937). His metaphysical poetry is distinguished by a neoclassical polish and satire, occasionally achieving sharp contrasts through sonorous use of archaisms verging on the baroque. He describes his technique as 'gradually circling round the subject, threatening it and filling it with suspense, and finally accomplishing its demise without ever quite using the ultimate violence upon it.' His criticism has been published as *Reactionary Essays on Poetry and Ideas* (1936) and *Reason in Madness* (1941), and he has written a novel of pre-Civil War Virginia, *The Fathers* (1938).

CAROLINE GORDON (1895–), his wife, is the author of novels about the South, *Pennhally* (1931), *Aleck Maury, Sportsman* (1934), and *None Shall Look Back* (1937), and many short stories.

TAUSSIG, FRANK WILLIAM (1859–1940), professor of economics at Harvard (1882–1935), also served as chairman of the U.S. Tariff Commission (1917–19), and at the end of the First World War advised in the adjustment of commercial treaties. His books include *A Tariff History of the United States* (1888, revised 1923), *Wages and Capital* (1896), *Principles of Economics* (1911), *Free Trade, Tariff, and Reciprocity* (1919), and *International Trade* (1927).

Taxation no Tyranny, tract by Dr.Samuel Johnson (q.v.).

TAYLOR, BAYARD (1825–78), born in Pennsylvania of a Quaker family, early showed a poetic gift and desire to escape from his quiet surroundings. After the publication of his romantic verse, *Ximena* (1844), he went to England and the continent, writing letters for the *New-York Tribune* and collecting material for *Views A-foot* (1846). The *Tribune,* delighted by his charming exoticism, made him manager of its literary section and sent him to California during the gold rush. After a year, he returned to publish *Eldorado* (2 vols.,1850), which augmented his popularity as an adventurous hero. The following year, he departed for travels in Egypt, Abyssinia, Turkey, India, and China, and joined the Pacific squadron of Commodore Perry. Upon his return to New York (1853), he published in quick succession *A Journey to Central Africa* (1854), *The Lands of the Saracen* (1855), and *A Visit to India, China, and Japan, in the Year* 1853 (1855), and was in steady demand as a lyceum lecturer. His prose accounts were supplemented by *Rhymes of Travel, Ballads and Poems* (1849), *A Book of Romances, Lyrics, and Songs* (1852), *Poems of the Orient* (1855), and other verse. Although he preferred to live as a conventional great man of letters, habit, public demand, and need of funds sent him off again in 1856 for two more years of romantic voyages, whose results were embodied in *Northern Travel* (1858), *Travels in Greece and Russia* (1859), and *At Home and Abroad* (1860). After his return he was engaged in journalism during the Civil War and a good deal of hack work, which was interrupted by a year (1862) as secretary of legation in St.Petersburg. From 1863 to 1870 he wrote novels, in which for the first time he considered his native country. *Hannah Thurston* (1863), a conventional love story set in upstate New York, was peppered by shots at the small-town mind and social reformers. *John Godfrey's Fortunes* (1864) was a realistic story of contemporary New York literary life. *The Story of Kennett* (1866) was a character study set in his native town of Kennett Square during the 18th century. *Joseph and His Friend* (1870) was another study of rural life in Pennsylvania, and *Beauty and the Beast and Tales of Home* (1872) was a collection of short stories that ranged from romantic depictions of Russia and realistic studies of Quaker life, to satires on 19th-century reform. His poetry showed the same versatility, ranging from *Lars: A Pastoral of Norway* (1873) and *Home Pastorals, Ballads and Lyrics* (1875) to *The Echo Club and Other Literary Diversions* (1876), containing parodies of Whitman and other new poets. Taylor's last years were devoted to a translation of

Faust, in the original metres (2 vols., 1870–71), which brought him a nonresident professorship of German at Cornell (1870–77) and the ministry to Germany (1878). This has come to be considered his most lasting work, even though the poetry itself rarely rises beyond the mediocrity that stamps all his sonorous but shallow verse, and which won him the somewhat hollow title of 'laureate of the gilded age.'

TAYLOR, [JOSEPH] DEEMS (1885–), New York composer and critic, after graduating from New York University, entered journalism, becoming a war correspondent and later a music critic, and editing *Musical America* (1927–9). He studied under Oscar Coon (1908–11), but as a composer is mainly self-taught. He had written songs and musical comedies, but first won attention as a composer of serious music with the cantatas, *The Chambered Nautilus* (1914) and *The Highwayman* (1914), based on poems by Holmes and Alfred Noyes, and the symphonic poems, *The Siren Song* (1912), *The Portrait of a Lady* (1919), *Circus Day* (1925), and *Jurgen* (1925). *Through the Looking Glass* (1918), his best-known work, is an impressionistic suite for orchestra based on Lewis Carroll's fantasy. Taylor's two operas, commissioned by the Metropolitan Opera, are *The King's Henchman* (1927), a Wagnerian romance of medieval England, the libretto being by Edna St.Vincent Millay (q.v.), and *Peter Ibbetson* (1931), based on a novel by Du Maurier. Besides a suite for string quartet (1934) and many songs, he has composed incidental music for Broadway productions of such plays as *Beggar on Horseback* and *The Adding Machine* (qq.v.). *Of Men and Music* (1937) and *The Well-Tempered Listener* (1940) are books of criticism collected from his radio talks.

TAYLOR, EDWARD (*c.*1644–1729), English-born poet, emigrated to Boston (1668) and after graduation from Harvard (1671) became the pastor and physician of the Massachusetts frontier town, Westfield, where he remained until his death. Not until 1937, when some of his poems were first published from manuscript, was he discovered to be an author of importance. His work as a Puritan sacred poet has been hailed as the finest 17th-century American verse. He is in the direct line of the English devotional metaphysical poets, such as Herbert Crashaw, and Quarles, and though considered less important than those of his masters, his writings are matched by none of his colonial contemporaries. His grandson, Ezra Stiles, in accordance with the request that none of his 'poetical works' should be published, deposited the manuscript in the Yale library. A collection was published in 1939.

TAYLOR, EDWARD THOMPSON (1793–1871), as an orphan of seven began his life at sea, which lasted ten years. Ashore at Boston, he experienced an old-fashioned conversion in a Methodist chapel. Although he was not formally schooled, his fervor and unusual natural gifts brought him a ministry in the Methodist Episcopal Church. In 1830 the Seamen's Bethel was established at Boston to further the moral and religious welfare of sailors, and 'Father Taylor,' as he was affectionately known, was chosen to be its minister. His manner, which was like a sea-captain's rather than a preacher's, and his sermons, which were full of imagery and language of the sea, are reproduced in the sermon of Father Mapple in *Moby-Dick*. His popularity may be judged by Dana's remark in *Two Years Before the Mast* that the first inquiry of the far-off California sailors was for Father Taylor. He is mentioned in Harriet Martineau's *Retrospect of Western Travel*, Dickens's *American Notes*, and Emerson's *Journals*, and is the subject of an article by Whitman.

TAYLOR, GRAHAM (1851–1938), began his career as a religious and social thinker as a pastor of the Dutch Reformed Church, became a professor at the Chicago Theological Seminary, and founded the Chicago Commons Social Settlement (1894). His writings include: *Religion and Social Action* (1913), setting forth his belief that men can be truly devout only if they negate their individuality and recognize themselves to be members of society; *Pioneering on Social Frontiers* (1930), an autobiography; and *Chicago Commons through Forty Years* (1936).

TAYLOR, JOHN (1753–1824), called 'John Taylor of Caroline,' was born in Virginia, and educated privately and at William and Mary (1770). After practicing law and serving in the Revolutionary army, he was elected to the Virginia House of Delegates (1779–81, 1783–5, 1796–1800). He served as U.S.senator (1792–4), joining Patrick Henry and

George Mason in opposing ratification of the Constitution, on the ground that it failed adequately to provide individual and state rights. Taylor was considered the theorist of Jeffersonian democracy, and fear of aristocracy and commercial autocracy permeates all his writings, in which he looks upon politics from the point of view of an economist believing in local government and state rights. *An Inquiry into the Principles and Policy of the Government of the United States* (1814), is an attack on the Hamiltonian fiscal system, and on John Adams's theory of a natural aristocracy. In *Construction Construed and Constitutions Vindicated* (1820), a reply to Marshall's decisions, he contended the Supreme Court had no jurisdiction over appeals from state courts. *Tyranny Unmasked* (1822) was an attack on a congressional committee that recommended the enactment of high protective tariffs to establish industry in this country. These three works rounded out the theories he had earlier promulgated while a member of the Senate, when he contributed two pamphlets to a condemnation of Hamilton's funding operations and banking methods. *The Arator* (1813), a series of 61 'agricultural essays, practical and political,' sets forth his belief in an agrarian order, and his attitude toward constitutional government is expressed in *New Views of the Constitution* (1823).

TAYLOR, LAURETTE, see *Manners, J.H.*

TAYLOR, WILLIAM (1821–1902), Methodist missionary and evangelist, was active in San Francisco during the gold rush days, of which he wrote in *Seven Years' Street Preaching in San Francisco* (1857) and *California Life, Illustrated* (1858). He later preached elsewhere in the U.S., and in England, Australia, South Africa, and South America. In addition to books about his missionary work abroad, he wrote a *Story of My Life* (1895).

TAYLOR, ZACHARY (1784–1850), 12th President of the U.S. (1849–50), born in Virginia, achieved fame through his military career of 40 years. He served in the War of 1812, the Black Hawk War, and during the Mexican War commanded the army at the Texas border, pushed south through disputed territory and won the battles of Palo Alto, Monterey, and Buena Vista, ending the war in the northern provinces. Public enthusiasm led to his nomination for President on the Whig ticket, but he died soon after inauguration, and his only important act was the recommendation to admit California and New Mexico to the Union, to settle the Texas boundary dispute.

Tea Act, see *Townshend Acts.*

TEACH, EDWARD, see *Blackbeard.*

Teague O'Regan, character in *Modern Chivalry* (q.v.).

Teapot Dome, government oil reserve in Wyoming, created by President Wilson (1913). In 1920 Congress authorized the Secretary of the Navy to conserve and develop these deposits, and to use his discretion in leasing or exchanging any portion of them. President Harding transferred the reserve (1921) from the department of Secretary of the Navy Denby to that of Secretary of the Interior Fall, and the following year they leased the area to the Mammoth Oil Company of Harry F. Sinclair. In addition, Fall leased the Elk Hills reserves in California to the Doheny Oil Company, producing an incident in which Edward Doheny gave Fall a black satchel containing $100,000, which both men declared was a loan. A Senate investigation was made (1923), and Fall resigned, later being convicted of accepting a bribe. Secretary Denby and Attorney-General Daugherty resigned under pressure of public opinion (1924). Doheny and his son were indicted but not convicted, and, though Sinclair was acquitted, he was convicted of contempt of court for employing private detectives to shadow jurors at his trials. The U.S.Supreme Court ruled the Teapot Dome and Elk Hills leases to be fraudulent (1927), and ordered the properties returned to the government. Upton Sinclair's *Oil!* (q.v.) is based on these scandals.

Tears, poem by Lizette W. Reese (q.v.).

TEASDALE, SARA (1884–1933), lyric poet born in Missouri, made her home in New York, and became known for her unaffected quatrains, which, almost bare of imagery and sparing in metaphor, attempt the articulation of a mood, rather than the quest of universals. Her works include: *Sonnets to Duse and Other Poems* (1907), *Helen of Troy* (1911), *Rivers to the Sea* (1915), *Love Songs* (1917; special Pulitzer award, 1918), *Flame and Shadow* (1920), *Dark of the Moon* (1926), *Strange Victory* (1933), and *Collected Poems* (1937).

TECUMSEH (1768?–1813), Shawnee Indian chief, who established a confederacy of tribes, and was led into a war (1811) with the U.S. when the government refused to recognize his principle that all Indian lands were a common possession that could not be ceded by or purchased from individual tribes. During his absence, Tenskwatawa (1768?–1834?), the Shawnee Prophet, who is considered to have been Tecumseh's twin brother, was maneuvered by W.H.Harrison into the disastrous battle of Tippecanoe (q.v.,1811), and the war came to an end. During the War of 1812, Tecumseh was made a brigadier general by the British, and was killed in battle. In 1836 Dr.William Emmons published 'a national drama' called *Tecumseh*, a subject he had previously employed in his epic, *The Fredoniad*, and the Indian chief figures elsewhere in literature.

Teeftallow, novel by T.S.Stribling (q.v.).

Telling the Bees, poem by Whittier (q.v.), in an approximation of ballad metre, published in 1858 and collected in *Home Ballads* (1860). A young man passes the farm of his beloved, where he sees the hired girl observing the old New England custom of dressing the hives in mourning and informing the bees of a death. He thinks his Mary's grandfather has died, but is stunned to hear the chore-girl tell the bees 'Mistress Mary is dead and gone!'

Tell-Tale Heart, The, story by Poe (q.v.), published in *The Pioneer* (1843). It has been considered the most influential of Poe's stories in the later development of stream-of-consciousness fiction.

A victim of a nervous disease is overcome by homicidal mania and murders an innocent old man in whose home he lives. He confuses the ticking of the old man's watch with an excited heartbeat, and although he dismembers the body he neglects to remove the watch when he buries the pieces beneath the floor. The old man's dying shriek has been overheard, and three police officers come to investigate. They discover nothing, and the murderer claims that the old man is absent in the country, but when they remain to question him he hears a loud rhythmic sound that he believes to be the beating of the buried heart. This so distracts his diseased mind that he suspects the officers know the truth and are merely trying his patience, and in an insane fit he confesses his crime.

Temperance movement, to prevent the use of intoxicating beverages, arose in the U.S. at the beginning of the 19th century. The first temperance organization was formed at Saratoga, New York (1808), and the American Society for the Promotion of Temperance was founded at Boston (1826). Prominent leaders of the movement included J.B.Gough, Benjamin Rush, Lyman Beecher, W.L.Garrison, Elihu Burritt, and Frances Willard, while assistance was provided by such religious groups as the Salvation Army, and by various industrial organizations. The Woman's Christian Temperance Union (1874) became international in scope under the presidency of Miss Willard. The Anti-Saloon League (1893) was another group supported by religious bodies, which wielded political influence through lobbyists and was largely responsible for the adoption of prohibition (q.v.) in the U.S. The most picturesque temperance agitator was Carry Nation (q.v.), but other reformers, whose work continues despite the repeal of the 18th Amendment, have attempted milder forms of persuasion. The movement has caused the passage of many state and local laws, and there is still agitation for national prohibition. Temperance literature ranges from the fictional tracts of T.S.Arthur, Dunlap's *Thirty Years Ago*, and Whitman's *Franklin Evans*, to Jack London's semi-autobiographical *John Barleycorn*.

Temple, family name of characters in the Leather-Stocking Tales (q.v.) and other novels of Cooper.

Temple, CHARLOTTE, see *Charlotte Temple*.

Ten Days That Shook the World, history by John Reed (q.v.).

Ten Nights in a Barroom and What I Saw There, melodramatic story by T.S. Arthur (q.v.), published in 1854. It became a favorite text for temperance lecturers, and was popular in the dramatic version by William W. Pratt (1858).

A traveler, who visits the town of Cedarville from time to time during a period of ten years, notes the changing fortunes of the citizens, and places the responsibility on the evil influences of Simon Slade's saloon, the 'Sickle and Sheaf.' The landlord rises to affluence but then gradually sinks into poverty and degradation, and among the gruesome events that are de-

scribed are Slade's accidental murder of little Mary, the daughter of Joe Morgan the drunkard, who comes to fetch her father home from the saloon and is hit by a glass which is thrown at him in a brawl; the disastrous gambling experiences of Willy Hammond with the cheating Harvey Green, who murders him; the insanity of Mrs.Slade, resulting from her son's rowdyism, and finally the son's murder of his father. Following this last outrage, the townspeople hold a mass-meeting, decree a prohibition on the sale of liquor, destroy the saloon's stock, and disperse with new hope for the town's future.

Ten Times One Is Ten, novelette by E.E.Hale (q.v.).

TENNENT, WILLIAM (1673–1745), Irish-born Presbyterian clergyman, emigrated to Philadelphia (*c.*1718), near which he became pastor of a church, and founded his 'Log College' (1736) to educate candidates for the ministry. He was strongly evangelistic, and his activity in the Great Awakening led to a decree aimed against him and his son by the synod of 1738. When this and other matters of contention led to the schism of 1741, he became a leader of the New Side. The Log College ended with his death, but its supporters helped to organize the College of New Jersey, now Princeton University.

GILBERT TENNENT (1703–64), his son, was also a Presbyterian clergyman and a leader of the Great Awakening. He insisted upon the need of a conscious inner experience by those who professed Christianity, and was convinced that those without it were damned to a Hell of which he preached fervently. His strenuous condemnation of more conservative Presbyterians, whom he considered lacking in true religion, caused the synods of 1737 and 1738 to try to restrain his growing popularity, by forbidding members of one Presbytery to preach in another and demanding that ministers present diplomas from a European or New England college. His violation of these rulings, in making an evangelistic tour to New England with his friend Whitefield, and his attacks on his fellow churchmen precipitated a schism (1741) in which he became a leader of the New Side, leaving his New Jersey church for another congregation in Philadelphia. He later worked for the reunion which occurred in 1758.

Tennessee's Partner, tale by Bret Harte (q.v.), published in the *Overland Monthly* (1869) and in *The Luck of Roaring Camp and Other Sketches* (1870).

Tennessee, 'known to be a gambler . . . suspected to be a thief,' works a mining claim at Sandy Bar, California, with his unnamed 'Partner.' Although Tennessee once eloped with his Partner's wife, returning after she deserted him too, the Partner remains his affectionate friend. One day Tennessee is captured as a highway robber, and during an impromptu trial his Partner innocently offers his entire 'stake' in return for Tennessee's life. This strengthens the determination of the 'court' to punish the thief, and he is hanged to a near-by tree. Tennessee's Partner arrives with a donkey cart to claim the body of 'the diseased,' and the crowd joins him in a rude but tender funeral ceremony. After this loss, the Partner declines in health. When he dies the following spring, he imagines that he sees his friend coming to welcome him.

TENNEY, TABITHA [GILMAN] (1762–1837), New Hampshire novelist, resided in Washington (1800–1807) during her husband's terms in Congress, and wrote there her only novel, *Female Quixotism* (q.v., 1801). This satire is in itself somewhat crude, but it is important for its understanding of the absurdities of contemporary feminine fiction.

TENSAS, MADISON,M.D., pseudonym of an unknown humorist of the old Southwestern frontier, author of *Odd Leaves of a Louisiana 'Swamp Doctor'* (1843). The book has been attributed to one Henry Clay Lewis.

TENSKWATAWA, see *Tecumseh.*

Tent on the Beach, The, poems by Whittier (q.v.).

Tenth Muse, see *Bradstreet, Anne.*

Tenting on the Old Camp Ground, Civil War song by Walter Kittredge (q.v.).

TERHUNE, MARY VIRGINIA (1830–1922), popular romantic novelist, whose more than 25 books, mostly concerned with the South before or during the Civil War, marked by a strongly moral manner, include *Alone* (1854), *Sunnybank* (1866), and *A Gallant Fight* (1888). She wrote under the pseudonym Marion Harland, and was also well known for her travel books, biographical studies, and works on household management.

ALBERT PAYSON TERHUNE (1872–), her son, is best known for his stories of collies, which include: *Lad: A Dog* (1919), *Bruce* (1920), and *Lad of Sunnybank* (1928). He collaborated with his mother on *Dr.Dale—A Story Without a Moral* (1900), and wrote his autobiography, *To the Best of My Memory* (1930).

Terminations, stories by Henry James (q.v.).

Terrible Tractoration, satire by T.G. Fessenden (q.v.).

Tertium Quids, see *Quids*.

TEUFFEL, BARONESS VON, see *Howard, Blanche*.

THACHER, JAMES (1754–1844), Massachusetts physician, served as a surgeon in the Continental Army, and published an account of his experiences in *A Military Journal during the American Revolutionary War* (1823), which, like his *American Medical Biography* (1828), is a valuable source.

THACKERAY, WILLIAM MAKEPEACE (1811–63), English novelist, twice visited the U.S. (Nov. 1852–Apr. 1853; Oct. 1855–Apr. 1856), delivering lectures on English literature and history in Eastern and Southern cities. Prior to his first trip he had published *Henry Esmond* (q.v.), the conclusion of which deals with colonial Virginia. Its sequel, *The Virginians* (q.v.), was the result of research begun during the second visit, when he outlined the idea to Cooke, and received information and suggestions from J.P.Kennedy.

Thanatopsis, blank-verse poem by Bryant (q.v.) written when he was 16 years old, after reading Blair's *Grave*, Cowper's *Task*, and various poems by Southey and Henry Kirke White. The early version of 'Thanatopsis,' whose Greek title means 'view of death,' was published in *The North American Review* (1817). It lacked the first 17 lines and the last 15 of the present work, which was first collected in the author's *Poems* (1821). These passages materially altered the philosophic significance of the poem, in which Nature, rather than the author's 'better genius,' now discusses death. Nature speaks a varied language to man, the poet observes; when 'thoughts of the last bitter hour' come, it teaches that earth claims all it has nourished. Man must therefore learn to conduct his life in such a way that he need have no fear when his summons comes to join the 'innumerable caravan.'

THANET, OCTAVE, pseudonym of Alice French (q.v.).

Thanksgiving Day, annual holiday devoted to church services and family reunions, originated at Plymouth (Nov. 1623) as a festival in commemoration of the harvest, traditionally celebrated by a turkey feast. The holiday was observed at various times until 1864, when President Lincoln designated the fourth Thursday in November as a day of national thanksgiving, and later Presidents issued similar proclamations each year. President Franklin Roosevelt named the third Thursday, in order to aid business by allowing an extra week for Christmas shopping which usually begins only after Thanksgiving Day. Sarah J. Hale was largely responsible for the movement that led to the establishment of this national holiday.

That Fortune, novel by C.D.Warner (q.v.).

Thatcher, BECKY, see *Becky Thatcher*.

THATCHER, BENJAMIN BUSSEY (1809–40), Boston antislavery leader, opposed the policies of Garrison and urged African repatriation. In addition to his *Memoir* of Phillis Wheatley (1834), he wrote other books on Negroes, and was also known for his *Indian Biography* (1832) and *Indian Traits* (1833).

THAXTER, CELIA [LAIGHTON] (1835–94), was the daughter of a lighthouse keeper on the Isles of Shoals, off the New Hampshire coast, where she spent most of her life. Her sympathetic depiction of the various moods of the sea formed the subject matter of her *Poems* (1872), *Drift-Weed* (1879), *Idyls and Pastorals* (1886), and other volumes. Her prose sketches devoted to the same subjects appeared in *Among the Isles of Shoals* (1873) and *An Island Garden* (1894). During her lifetime she was as well known for her personality as for her poetry, and visitors at the summer hotel conducted by her family included her friends Thoreau, Lowell, Whittier, and many other authors and artists.

THAYER, CAROLINE, see *Warren, Caroline*.

THAYER, ELI (1819–99), Massachusetts Free Soil leader, founder of the Emigrant Aid Company for antislavery colonization in Kansas. He was later a Republican

member of Congress (1857–61), and wrote *The New England Emigrant Aid Company* (1887).

THAYER, WILLIAM ROSCOE (1859–1923), Boston author and editor, whose works include *The Life and Letters of John Hay* (1915), *Theodore Roosevelt: An Intimate Biography* (1919), and several important works on Italian history.

Theater in the U.S., see *Vaudeville, Burlesque, Circus, Medicine show, Rodeo, Showboat, Motion pictures, Radio broadcasting, Little Theater,* and individual actors, playwrights, and producers.

Theatre Arts Magazine (1916–), founded as a quarterly journal dealing with all the arts of the theater in the U.S. and abroad, with a progressive policy sympathetic to experimentation. Since 1924 it has continued this policy under its new title, *Theatre Arts Monthly.*

Theatre Guild, THE, was founded by former members of the Washington Square Players (q.v.,1918). Although it has specialized in the production of contemporary work, producing all of Shaw's plays since *Heartbreak House* (1920), and O'Neill's plays since *Marco Millions* (1928), it has also revived such plays as Jonson's *Volpone.* Originally founded as a little-theater group, the shrewdness in play selection, skill in production, and ability in financial management permitted the Guild to build its own million-dollar theater (1925) and thus take it beyond the usual scope of the movement. The Group Theatre (q.v.) is a later outgrowth of the Theatre Guild, and both organizations continue as leading production groups in New York.

Their Fathers' God, novel by Rölvaag (q.v.), published in Norway (1931) and in translation in the U.S. the same year. It is the concluding volume of a trilogy which includes *Giants in the Earth* and *Peder Victorious* (qq.v.).

After Peder Holm marries Susie Doheny (1894), he takes over the management of his mother's farm. Beret continues to live with her son and his Irish wife, making every effort to overlook their social and religious differences. She is delighted at the birth of their son, Petie, but there is constant friction between the parents over the child's rearing. Susie is a devout, superstitious Catholic, while Peder, educated as a Lutheran, is influenced by deistic ideas and is intolerant of superstition. Susie's father is injured in a farm accident, and her long absence, while she nurses him, widens the breach between husband and wife. Beret has Petie baptized in the Lutheran faith, concealing the fact from Susie, who with equal secrecy has had him baptized by her priest. Meanwhile a drought ends all hope of profit from wheat, and Peder begins an ambitious cattle-raising enterprise. He also enters politics, becoming a candidate for county committeeman, and touring the state in behalf of the Republican opposition to Bryan. The local rivalry between Norwegian and Irish factions becomes bitter, and is accentuated for Peder by his meeting with attractive Nikoline Johansen, a recent emigrant. Beret falls ill and dies, first confessing her baptism of Petie, and Susie, who has returned and is again pregnant, is so shocked by this revelation that she has a miscarriage. She nearly dies, but the faithful Peder nurses her to health, and their relation seems once more secure. Peder and Nikoline, acknowledging their love, decide that they must separate, and she returns to Norway. Then, at the height of his political campaign, Peder overhears a scurrilous attack by his opponent, Tom McDougal, containing references to his personal life that only Susie could have divulged. He is revolted by this betrayal, and in a rage destroys her crucifix; appalled, Susie deserts him, returning with Petie to her father.

Their Wedding Journey, novel by Howells (q.v.) published in 1871. *A Hazard of New Fortunes* (q.v.,1890), *An Open-Eyed Conspiracy* (1897), and *Their Silver Wedding Journey* (1899) also deal with the Marches.

This simple, episodic story deals with the honeymoon trip of Basil and Isabel March from Boston to Niagara, Montreal, and other scenic points. There is no stirring incident and the book depends upon its evocation of a charming mood, the description of types met in transit, and of places visited.

Theory of the Leisure Class, The, economic treatise by Thorstein Veblen (q.v.), published in 1899. The book enjoyed a popular vogue and profoundly influenced economic thought, but provoked controversial replies, of which the most sensational was Mencken's 'Professor Veblen' in *Prejudices* (1919).

This description of habits and customs in modern life as 'atavistic cultural survivals' contends that the institution of the Leisure Class arose during a predatory stage of barbarism, in conjunction with the institution of ownership. This was foreshadowed during the initial stage of peaceful savagery, when there began to be distinctions between the status of men and women. Woman's work, creation by the manipulation of inanimate materials, symbolized the instinct of workmanship and the beginning of industry. Man's work came to symbolize the advent of nonindustrial employments by acts of exploit, 'the conversion to his own ends of energies previously directed to some other by another agent.' Employment of other classes for wages is the modern form of exploit of that class, which emerges from the predatory stage as a social group living without recourse to industrial employment. The Leisure Class in the modern environment consists of those who enjoy freedom from irksome and undignified labor, and who through successful acts of aggression are bent upon establishing their honorific distinction by conspicuous leisure and notable accumulations of wealth. Entrance to this class is by pecuniary fitness, which is exhibited by conspicuously wasteful consumption, setting standards according to canons of taste determined by wealth. This class, by force of mutual interest and instinct, and by precept and proscriptive example, not only perpetuates the existing maladjustment of institutions, but even favors a reversion to a somewhat more archaic scheme of life.

There Was a Child Went Forth, poem by Whitman (q.v.), published without title in *Leaves of Grass* (1855), later as 'Poem of the Child That Went Forth, and Always Goes Forth, Forever and Forever,' and under its present title in 1871.

This short poem states in simple terms Whitman's concept of man's identification with nature and the persons who surround him, and declares that those objects and people that he looked upon 'became part of that child who went forth every day and who now goes, and will always go forth, every day.'

There's a Long Long Trail, written by Stoddard King and Zo Elliott (1913) as a Yale college song, became widely popular during the First World War.

They Knew What They Wanted, play by Sidney Howard (q.v.), produced in 1924 and published in 1925, when it won the Pulitzer Prize.

Tony, an aging Italian wine grower of California, proposes by mail to Amy, a San Francisco waitress, and wins her by sending a photograph of Joe, his handsome young hired man. When she arrives at his home, she is shocked to find that Tony has just been crippled in an automobile accident. Nevertheless, she marries him, and though she spends her wedding night with Joe this affair quickly ends, and she becomes faithfully devoted to her husband. Joe is about to leave for another job when Amy discovers that she is pregnant, and the two, though not in love, decide they must elope. Learning the truth, Tony is at first infuriated, but then he realizes his need for Amy, and asks her to stay with him, offering to accept her child as his own.

They Shall Not Die, play by John Wexley (q.v.).

They Stooped to Folly: A Comedy of Morals, novel by Ellen Glasgow (q.v.) published in 1929.

Virginius Littlepage, a lawyer in Queenborough (Richmond, Virginia) at 57 believes that life has disappointed his hopes. His wife, Victoria, has long been his moral support, but he finds little satisfaction now in family life and feels more affection for Milly Burden, his secretary. During the World War, Milly had a child by Martin Welding, concealing the fact from him to spare him anxiety, but he never returned to her. Mary Victoria, Littlepage's daughter, returns from European war work and philanthropy, after an absence of five years, bringing Martin, now her husband, whom she 'rescued' from illness and despair in France. She is a domineering, rigidly moral young woman, who administers the lives of all about her, and Martin feels 'smothered' by excessive managing. Virginius drifts with comical caution into an affair with the amiable widow, Amy Dalrymple, but when Victoria dies he feels lonely and lost. Martin deserts Mary Victoria, tries to persuade Milly to elope with him, but she refuses, deciding he desires only loneliness, and he leaves alone for Europe. Milly at last feels free of her bond to Martin, and Mary Victoria, after a brief period of frantic grief, turns to her duties to her unborn child

and her father, sustained by her moral sense and essential egoism.

Thirteen Colonies, THE, British colonies that in 1776 became the original states of the U.S. They were: Virginia, New York, Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Connecticut, Maryland, Rhode Island, Delaware, North Carolina, New Jersey, South Carolina, Pennsylvania, and Georgia.

This Side of Paradise, novel by F.Scott Fitzgerald (q.v.) published in 1920.

Amory Blaine, after a pampered childhood with his wealthy, affected mother, Beatrice, attends preparatory school, where his indolence and aristocratic pose set him apart, until after an unhappy year he is accepted as a brilliant though eccentric athlete and leader. Although he is never religious, he has an affectionate father-and-son relation with his mother's friend, Monsignor Darcy, a hedonist converted to Catholicism. He goes to Princeton, and there becomes a 'literary bird,' writing for the *Princetonian,* joining the Triangle Club, and discovering the English *fin de siècle* poets. Among his companions are Alec Connage, an unoriginal youth, and Tom D'Invilliers, whose radicalism and poetry they try to reform. Amory has a romance with a childhood friend, Isabelle; is involved in a student revolt led by Burne Holiday, an earnest radical who becomes a pacifist during the World War; nearly falls in love with his widowed cousin Clara, a beautiful 'St.Cecilia' who has 'never been in love'; and goes to France as a lieutenant. On his return he finds Beatrice dead and his wealth diminished, and becomes an advertising writer. He has a passionate affair with Alec's debutante sister, Rosaline—his one unselfish emotional experience—but she marries another man because she believes she cannot be happy without wealth. Amory drowns his disillusion in drink, but on a visit to Maryland meets Eleanor, a vivid, nervous personality even more egocentric than himself. They love for a few 'bitter-sweet' weeks, and Amory continues his search for inner peace. He is penniless, and seeks employment. After Darcy's death, Amory realizes that his own unselfishness is 'the most living part' of himself, and considers his total experience at 24: ' "I know myself," he cried, "but that is all." '

THOMAS, AUGUSTUS (1857–1934), popular dramatist, whose more than 60 plays cover a wide range of subject matter and treatment, but whose most significant work had as its purpose the depiction of American background, as in *Alabama* (1891), *In Mizzoura* (1893), *The Capitol* (1895), *Arizona* (1899), and *The Copperhead* (1918), or the presentation of a character whose desire for individual liberty is obstructed by immediate surroundings or fate. Plays developing this theme include *The Witching Hour* (1907) and *The Harvest Moon* (1909), about hypnotism and psychological domination; and *As a Man Thinks* (1911), a problem play partly concerned with mental healing. Thomas also adapted Mrs.Burnett's *Editha's Burglar,* first as a one-act, and then as a four-act play, *The Burglar* (1889); and F.H.Smith's *Colonel Carter of Cartersville* (1892). With R.H.Davis he dramatized *Soldiers of Fortune* (1902).

THOMAS, EDITH MATILDA (1854–1925), Ohio-born poet, whose works include *Lyrics and Sonnets* (1887), *The Inverted Torch* (1890), *In Sunshine Land* (1895), and *The Flower from the Ashes* (1915), distinguished by a classical craftsmanship and called 'more Greek than American.'

THOMAS, FREDERICK WILLIAM (1806–66), novelist whose various residences, in Rhode Island, Maryland, the Middle West, Kentucky, and Washington,D.C., and activities in such undertakings as journalism, legal practice, teaching, and the ministry gave him the backgrounds for his fiction. This realistic knowledge marks his novels, which include *Clinton Bradshaw; or, The Adventures of a Lawyer* (1835), *East and West* (1836), *Howard Pinckney* (1840), and *An Autobiography of William Russell* (1852), as well as his essays, *Sketches of Character, and Tales Founded on Fact* (1849), and his long poem, *The Emigrant* (1833). In addition to his own writing, he is remembered as a friend of Poe.

THOMAS, ISAIAH (1749–1831), printer, editor, and publisher of Worcester, Massachusetts, whose publications included the *Massachusetts Spy* and *The Royal American Magazine* (qq.v.). He was the leading publisher of his day, the quality of his work causing Franklin to call him 'the Baskerville of America,' and the quantity of his printing, which included numerous chapbooks, causing him to establish branches in other New England towns. He issued *A Specimen* of his types (1785),

which gives important evidence concerning early American printing. His *History of Printing in America* (1810), in two volumes, is the most significant early work on the subject. His interest in American history led him to found the American Antiquarian Society (1812).

THOMAS, Norman [Mattoon] (1884–), born in Ohio, graduated from Princeton (1905) and was a Presbyterian minister in New York City until his Socialist interest caused him to turn to other activities. He was an editor of the *Nation* (1921–2), and has been an active writer, speaker, and editor on subjects pertaining to social reform and pacifism. His prominent but unsuccessful Socialist candidacies for public office include those for governor of New York (1924), mayor of New York City (1925, 1929), Representative (1930), and President of the U.S. (1928–40). Among his writings are *The Challenge of War* (1925), *What is Industrial Democracy?* (1927), *Socialism of Our Time* (1929), and *The Choice before Us* (1934).

THOMAS, Theodore (1835–1905), German-born musician, was brought to the U.S. in 1845, where he began his career as a concert violinist. He joined the New York Philharmonic (1854), from 1855 was first violinist in the quartet of William Mason, and finally found his vocation as conductor (1858). With his own symphony orchestra, organized in 1862, he made regular tours of the U.S., bringing symphonic music to places where it had been unknown and providing an important stimulus for the development of musical taste in this country. He continued these tours (1869–91), briefly interrupting them by directorships of the Cincinnati College of Music (1878–80), and the American Opera Company (1885–8). He was in charge of musical events at the Cincinnati Festivals (beginning 1873), the Philadelphia Centennial Exposition (1876) and the Chicago World's Fair (1893), and is especially noted for his programs as conductor of the Chicago Orchestra (1891–1905).

THOMES, William Henry (1824–95), born in Maine, as a young boy was inspired by *Two Years Before the Mast* to ship to California (1842), where he engaged in the hide trade, as recounted in *On Land and Sea* (1883). Of his adventurous life in California until 1846 he left an account in the semi-fictional *Lewey and I* (1884). Making his way back to Boston via England, he was soon attracted by the gold rush, and returned to San Francisco in 1849. Lack of success there and in Hawaii, the Philippines, China, and the gold mines of Victoria, led him to return to Boston (1855). Five years later he founded a highly successful publishing firm, for which he wrote a series of melodramatic works resembling the quality of the dime novel. These include *The Gold Hunters' Adventures; or, Life in Australia* (1864), *The Bushrangers* (1866), *The Whaleman's Adventures* (1872), *A Slaver's Adventures* (1872), and *The Ocean Rovers* (1896).

THOMPSON, Benjamin (1753–1814), born in Massachusetts, early showed an interest in mathematics and science, which was interrupted during the Revolution, when he was a Loyalist soldier and served in the Colonial Office in England. After being knighted for his services, he joined the army of the Elector of Bavaria (1783), who made him head of the war department (1788) and a count of the Holy Roman Empire (1791). His title, Count Rumford, is derived from the name of the home of his wife, from whom he had long been separated. He returned to England (1795) to continue his experiments on gunpowder, heat transmission, and moisture absorption, and published his *Essays, Political, Economical, and Philosophical* (4 vols., 1796–1802). In Munich (1796–8) he served on the council of regency, reorganized the Bavarian army, and headed the police. During another brief period in London, he attended to the organization of the Royal Institution (1800), based on his *Proposals for Forming . . . a Public Institution . . . for the Application of Science to the Common Purposes of Life* (1799). After 1802 he lived in France, where he married Madame Lavoisier, widow of the chemist. He had meanwhile contributed to English, American, and European scientific institutes, and continued his own experiments, some of which were described in reports published in *Philosophical Papers* (1802).

THOMPSON, Daniel Pierce (1795–1868), Vermont author and lawyer, whose political career led him into literature when he published *The Adventures of Timothy Peacock, Esquire* (1835), a satire on Masonry in his state. This was followed by another novel, *May Martin; or, The Money Diggers* (1835), which dealt with

local traditions. As a natural antiquarian and born story teller, obviously influenced by Scott and Cooper, Thompson came into his own as an author with *The Green Mountain Boys* (q.v.,1839), a historical romance dealing with Ethan Allen and the New Hampshire land grants. *Locke Amsden; or, The Schoolmaster* (1847) presents a faithful picture of Vermont frontier life, and embodies the author's theories on education. *The Rangers; or, The Tory's Daughter* (1851) is a novel of the Revolution in Vermont. His other works, more lurid and less significant, include: *Gaut Gurley; or, The Trappers of Umbabog* (1857), a tale of border smuggling; *The Doomed Chief* (1860), an Indian story; *Lucy Hosmer; or, The Guardian and the Ghost* (1848); and collections of short stories, including *The Shaker Lovers, and Other Tales* (1847) and *Centeola and Other Tales* (1864). In addition to his novels of the region, Thompson wrote a *History of Vermont, and the Northern Campaign of 1777* (1851) and a *History of the Town of Montpelier* (1860).

THOMPSON, David (1770–1857), English-born explorer, geographer, and trader, at the age of 14 was apprenticed to the Hudson's Bay Company and spent the rest of his life in Canada, surveying and mapping nearly all the western region. His journals were published as *David Thompson's Narrative of His Explorations in Western America* (1916).

THOMPSON, Denman (1833–1911), Pennsylvania-born itinerant actor and dramatist, developed his play, *Joshua Whitcomb* (1877), into *The Old Homestead* (1886), a homely rural drama of Yankee life whose chief claim to notice is its popularity for more than 20 years.

THOMPSON, Dorothy (1894–), social worker and later a foreign correspondent, became a columnist for the New York *Herald Tribune* (1936). Her syndicated column, 'On the Record,' deals with foreign and domestic political affairs, from the point of view of a rather liberal conservative. Her books include *I Saw Hitler* (1932), which contended that Hitler would never achieve national power; *The New Russia* (1928), which won notoriety because she accused Dreiser of plagiarizing it; *Dorothy Thompson's Political Guide* (1938); and *Let the Record Speak* (1939), a compilation from her columns. She married Sinclair Lewis (1928). In 1941 she left the *Herald Tribune* for the New York *Post* and her column is syndicated in some 200 other daily papers, having a combined circulation of 9,000,000 copies.

THOMPSON, Ernest Seton, see *Seton.*

THOMPSON, John Reuben (1823–73), Virginia author, owned and edited the *Southern Literary Messenger* (1847–60). He supported the Confederacy, both during a residence in England (1864–6) and in the U.S., by literary contributions that included the poem 'Lee to the Rear.' His *Collected Poems* on Southern life and conditions were issued in 1920, and his lecture on his friend Poe was first published as *The Genius and Character of Edgar Allan Poe* (1929).

THOMPSON, [James] Maurice (1844–1901), Indiana author, whose first book, *Hoosier Mosaics* (1875), a forceful series of dialect sketches, was followed by several nature books, collections of poems that included *Songs of Fair Weather* (1883) and *Poems* (1892), and the romantic regional novels for which he is best known. His first novels, which included *A Tallahassee Girl* (1881) and *At Love's Extremes* (1885), were sentimental depictions of the South, where he had been reared. *His Second Campaign* (1883) contrasts characters from the South and the West, and looked forward to his development of the romantic historical novel, a form in which he achieved greatest success in *Alice of Old Vincennes* (q.v.,1900), a story of the Northwest Territory and George Rogers Clark.

THOMPSON, Mortimer Neal, see *Thomson.*

THOMPSON, Vance [Charles] (1863–1925), founder and editor of the urbane bi-weekly little magazine, *M'lle New York* (1895–8), was an author of romantic novels, plays, verse, and essays, and was noted for his impressionistic literary criticism in such books as *French Portraits* (1900) and *Strindberg and His Plays* (1921).

THOMPSON, William Tappan (1812–82), Ohio-born humorist of the old Southwest, after 1835 lived mainly in Georgia, where for a time he was associated as a newspaper editor with A.B.Longstreet, his model in his humorous depictions of the Georgia cracker. His dialect short stories, which captured the quality of the oral story teller, realistically portrayed the

life of Georgia in the way in which Seba Smith's letters had treated the Down East background. These tales were collected in *Major Jones's Courtship* (1843, enlarged 1844); *Major Jones's Chronicles of Pineville* (1845), republished as *Scenes in Georgia* (1858?); and *Major Jones's Sketches of Travels* (1847). In addition to his editorial work on various newspapers, Thompson wrote a book of Southern propaganda, *The Slaveholder Abroad* (1860); *Rancy Cottem's Courtship* (1879); and *John's Alive . . . and Other Sketches* (1883).

THOMPSON, Zadock (1796–1856), Vermont historian and naturalist, whose *History of Vermont, Natural, Civil and Statistical* (1842) is considered a primary source book for the region.

THOMSON (or Thompson), Mortimer Neal (1831–75), New York author, one of the earliest of American professional humorists, wrote under the pseudonym Q.K. Philander Doesticks,P.B. His contributions to such papers as the *Spirit of the Times*, which he called 'roving unsubstantial ink-brats,' were collected in *Doesticks, What He Says* (q.v.,1855), sketches of American persons, places, and events, 'dressed up in a lingual garb so quaint, eccentric, fantastic, or extravagant, that each lender will be sadly puzzled to recognize his own.' *Plu-ri-bus-tah, A Song That's By No Author* (1856), a long parody of *Hiawatha*, was important for its satire on feminism, Barnum, the Kansas civil war, the Know-Nothing movement, spiritualism, free love, and the almighty dollar. Thomson next parodied W.A.Butler's *Nothing to Wear*, in a satire entitled *Nothing to Say: A Slight Slap at Mobocratic Snobbery, Which Has 'Nothing to Do' with 'Nothing to Wear'* (1857). His articles for the *New-York Tribune* on criminal life were collected as *The History and Records of the Elephant Club* (1856), and those on fortune-telling frauds as *The Witches, Prophets, and Planet Readers of New York* (1859).

THOREAU, Henry David (1817–62), born in Concord of a family whose French, Scottish, Quaker, and Puritan stock helps to account for his temper of mind. Just as his heritage was mixed, so his philosophy of life combined diverse strains, and he called himself 'a mystic, a transcendentalist, and a natural philosopher to boot.' At heart, he was predominantly individualistic, and his great interest was 'to observe what transpires, not in the street, but in the mind and heart of me!' Although his reading carried him far afield, he could truthfully say 'I have travelled a good deal in Concord.' In addition to his natural education in the woods near Concord, and the ordinary preparatory schooling, he graduated from Harvard (1837), where he was primarily influenced by E.T. Channing's teaching of composition, and the knowledge of Greek and the metaphysical poets that he derived from Jones Very. His temporary residence in the home of Orestes Brownson, from whom he learned German, was also influential. Above all he fell under the sway of Emerson, and it has been frequently said that he was the answer to Emerson's plea for an 'American Scholar.' After graduation he taught school in his native town, for a time in collaboration with his brother John, following the principles of Bronson Alcott. With his brother he also made a trip on the Concord and Merrimack rivers (1839), of which he wrote during his residence at Walden in his book, *A Week on the Concord and Merrimack Rivers* (q.v., 1849). After closing his school, he lived with Emerson (1841–3), serving him as a general handy man, although their relation was also one of master and disciple. At this time he became an intimate of the members of the Transcendental Club, and a contributor to *The Dial* and other magazines. During 1843 he was a tutor in the Staten Island home of William Emerson, where he made the acquaintance of Horace Greeley, Lucretia Mott, and the elder Henry James. After his return to Concord, Thoreau built himself a hut at near-by Walden Pond, where he lived from July 4, 1845, to September 6, 1847, a period of which he wrote in his most famous book, *Walden* (q.v.,1854). While other Transcendentalists sought a retreat at Brook Farm, Thoreau, ever an individualist, having no use for co-operative plans, found his solution at Walden. He wanted to get back to the naked simplicity of life, where he might 'subdue and cultivate a few cubic feet of flesh,' chew the cud of his thoughts, and get to the very core of the universe, by living deep and sucking out all the 'marrow of life.' His desire was 'so to love wisdom as to live according to its dictates, a life of simplicity, independence, magnanimity, and trust . . . to solve some of the problems of life, not only the-

oretically, but practically.' He wanted neither to be interfered with nor to interfere with others, and he declared 'I would not have anyone adopt my mode of living, each should find out his own way, not his neighbor's or his parents.' His residence at the Pond was interrupted by a day's imprisonment for refusal to pay a poll tax to a government that supported the Mexican War, a war he considered merely a land-grabbing scheme of the Southern slaveholders. This action was in accord with his belief in passive resistance, a means of protest he explained in his essay, 'Civil Disobedience' (q.v.,1849). It was a means of accentuating his belief, expressed in *Walden*, that each man should save himself and all would be saved. He not only believed with Jefferson that that government is best which governs least, but he also contended that 'they are the lovers of law and order who observe the law when the government breaks it.' His belief in the individual and in a moral law superior to statutes and constitutions was also expressed in 'Life without Principle' (q.v., 1863). After his return to Concord, he lived for a year in Emerson's home while the essayist was abroad, and during this period formed his close friendship with the younger W.E.Channing, who in writing the first biography of Thoreau aptly called him 'the poet-naturalist.' His observations of nature were distinguished not merely by his scientific knowledge, which was occasionally erroneous, but by his all-inclusive love of life, expressed now in an earthy manner with a Yankee twang, now with a sweet, pure English, having as Lowell said, 'an antique purity like wine grown colorless with age.' Though he enjoyed the scientific view of nature, he was also a Transcendentalist, and defined his attitude when he said he wanted more the wideness of heaven than the limit of the microscope. His statement that he liked 'better the surliness with which the wood chopper speaks of his woods, handling them as indifferently as his axe, than the mealy-mouthed enthusiasm of the lover of nature' shows him as an observer who wanted his answers concerning nature not only in facts but in terms of faith. He made several brief trips (1849–53), which supplied the material for his posthumously published books, *Excursions* (q.v., 1863), *The Maine Woods* (q.v.,1864), *Cape Cod* (q.v.,1865), and *A Yankee in Canada* (q.v.,1866). Meanwhile he continued his outwardly parochial life in Concord, where he wrote his journals, containing some two million words, the basis of all his books. During these years he became increasingly involved in the antislavery movement, and delivered such speeches as the one on 'Slavery in Massachusetts' (1854). He was profoundly stirred by his meeting with John Brown at Emerson's home (1857) and praised Brown's actions at Harpers Ferry, for here was a man who was carrying out the principles that he himself championed. He eulogized him in three lectures, 'A Plea for Captain John Brown,' 'The Last Days of John Brown,' and 'After the Death of John Brown.' During his last years, Thoreau made further trips to Cape Cod and Maine, and to New York, where he met Whitman, but he was a victim of tuberculosis, which gradually weakened him and finally caused his death. He worked indefatigably, in spite of this handicap, on a long, unpublished ethnological study of the Indians, continued to make scientific observations, and to carry on his own way of life both privately and as a lyceum lecturer. Already an invalid, he made a fruitless attempt to recapture health by journeying to the region of the Great Lakes and the Mississippi (1861), but returned home, knowing that he was shortly to die, to engage in a last feverish attempt to edit his journals for publication. He published only two books and a few articles and speeches during his lifetime, but his *Journal* was posthumously issued (14 vols., 1906), and selections were edited by his friend, Harrison G.O.Blake as *Early Spring in Massachusetts* (1881), *Summer* (1884), *Winter* (1888), and *Autumn* (1892). Other miscellaneous work has been published in his collected *Writings* (20 vols.,1906), and Emerson's edition of the *Letters* (1865) was enlarged (1894). His *Poems of Nature* were collected in 1895.

THORFINN KARLSEFNI (*fl.*1002–7), Icelandic leader, supposedly left Greenland (*c.*1002) for the Vineland that Leif Ericsson had discovered. The authorities for this information are the 'Saga of Eric the Red' (in the *Hauksbók*) and the 'Saga of Olaf Tryggvason' (in the *Flateyjarbók*), of which the former is considered the more trustworthy. His expedition of three vessels, with more than 160 cohorts, spent more than a year in searching for Vine-

land and finally reached a place called Hop where they wintered (1004–5). After unsuccessful skirmishes with the natives, they returned to a previous landing place, Streamfiord, generally identified with some Nova Scotian bay, as Hop is generally identified with New England. After one ship deserted to Iceland, the remainder turned back.

THORNTON, William (1759–1828), born in the West Indies, came from London to the U.S. (1793), where he was selected by Washington as the architect of the Capitol (q.v.), whose construction he supervised with the assistance of James Hoban and others. He was the author of books on subjects as varied as the origin of steamboats, the education of the deaf, the abolition of slavery, and a plan for uniting North and South America with a Panama Canal.

THORPE, Rose Hartwick (1850–1939), author of 'Curfew Must Not Ring Tonight,' a popular ballad contributed to a Detroit newspaper in 1867. It deals with the son of an English lord of the manor, who is arrested as a spy, condemned to death, and saved by his sweetheart, who clings to the clapper of the bell that is supposed to toll curfew, the time of his execution.

THORPE, T[homas] B[angs] (1815–78), humorist of the old Southwest, was born in Massachusetts, but lived in Louisiana (1833–53) during the years in which he wrote tales of the frontier. The best of these is 'The Big Bear of Arkansas' (q.v.), first printed in *The Spirit of the Times*, and from this and other magazines he collected his sketches in *The Mysteries of the Backwoods* (1846) and *The Hive of the Bee Hunter* (1854). *Colonel Thorpe's Scenes in Arkansaw* (1858) is an anthology whose title comes from one of his stories. His service in the Mexican War resulted in *Our Army on the Rio Grande* (1846), *Our Army at Monterey* (1847), and *The Taylor Anecdote Book* (1848). He was later an editor of *The Spirit of the Times*, and served in the Civil War. His other books include *The Master's House* (1854) and *A Voice to America* (1855). He was also known for his vivid landscape paintings and portraits.

Three Black Pennys, The, novel in three parts by Hergesheimer (q.v.), published in 1917.

I. The Furnace. The Pennys, who established an iron foundry in colonial Pennsylvania, are descendants of an aristocratic English family with a Welsh strain, which recurrently produced individuals who were dark, passionate, and rebellious. Howat, the 'black Penny' of the pre-Revolutionary generation, entertains English visitors, Felix Winscombe and his fascinating wife, Ludowika. Against his will, Howat falls passionately in love with Ludowika, and during her husband's temporary absence the two are lovers, although she has no intention of remaining with him. However, Winscombe, upon returning, falls ill and dies, and his wife, trapped by circumstance, becomes Ludowika Penny. II. The Forge. The 'black Penny' of two generations later is Jasper, head of the family, whose wife Phebe has died, and who neglects his degraded mistress, Essie Scofield and their child Eunice. When Eunice is seven he enters her in Susan Brundon's school for girls. He falls in love with the quiet and virtuous Susan, and they are to be married, but Essie in a quarrel kills Daniel Culsor, a younger man with whom she is infatuated, and a scandal follows, involving Jasper and Eunice, so that Susan refuses to marry Jasper while Essie is alive. III. The Metal. The last of the Pennys, Howat, is the grandson of Jasper and Susan, who married late in life. Howat is an effete, elderly bachelor, interested only in the arts, who feels no affection whatever except for his cousin, gay, young Mariana Jannan, a 'black Penny.' The girl falls in love with James Polder, operator of the foundry and member of the *déclassé* branch of the family descended from Eunice. His energy and obstinacy appeal to her passionate nature, but she refuses to marry him. James defiantly marries an actress, with whom he is unhappy, and when Mariana exercises her powerful will to regain him he comes to live with her. They are not conventionally happy, but Mariana tells Howat that she and James are inevitably united by something 'outside personal happiness.'

Three Lives, stories by Gertrude Stein (q.v.) published in 1909.

These unconventional character portraits, the author's first published fiction, exhibit her typical experimental attitude toward style and subject matter, and her attempt to reach an intuitive expression of consciousness and emotions. 'The Good Anna' tells of Anna Federner, a sober,

faithful housekeeper 'of solid lower middle-class south german stock,' who comes to the American city of Bridgepoint, and works successively for Miss Mary Wadsmith, 'a large, fair, helpless woman,' whose nephew and niece she helps to raise; Dr.Shonjen, a friendly physician; and Miss Mathilda, who goes to Europe and leaves Anna her house. She takes in boarders, but loses money by her simple generosity, and dies as a result of overwork. 'The Gentle Lena' is concerned with a German girl who works as a maid in Bridgepoint, is married by her aunt to a stupid German tailor, apathetically endures her miserable life, and dies at the birth of her fourth child. The long story, 'Melanctha,' tells of the 'subtle, intelligent, attractive, half white girl,' Melanctha Herbert, who grows up in a Southern town, unloved by her brutal Negro father and weak mulatto mother. She has an unhappy love affair with the mulatto Dr. Jeff Campbell, who never returns her passionate affection. After she breaks with Jeff, she is engaged to a Negro gambler, Jem Richards, but, after he deserts her, she contracts consumption and dies.

Three Soldiers, novel by John Dos Passos (q.v.) published in 1921.

The effect of the World War upon the characters of ordinary doughboys is shown in the lives of three privates: Dan Fuselli, an Italian-American who is a fatuously cheerful conformist, and only desires to secure an advance in rank; Chrisfield, a homesick Indiana farm boy, who hates the horrors and regimentation of wartime and vents his feelings in violent outbursts; and his friend John Andrews, a hypersensitive introverted college graduate, whose ambition is to be a musician. He too hates the war, but, unable to find an outlet for his emotions, he is sullenly resigned until he achieves a temporary escape in a leave to Paris, where he studies music. When he returns to the army, he and Chrisfield desert. Andrews, realizing that he will soon be apprehended, but willing to risk everything for freedom, hides in the country with a French girl companion, and begins to compose a symphonic work. When he is discovered, he faces the prospect of the firing squad with calm defiance, and leaves his manuscript to be scattered by the wind.

Three Taverns, The, poems by A.E. Robinson (q.v.).

Threnody, elegiac poem by Emerson (q.v.) published in *Poems* (1847). Arranged in alternately rimed couplets of irregular four-stress lines, the work is a lyric expression of the poet's sorrow at the death of his five-year-old son, Waldo. Following a passage of deep grief and lamentation, he concludes by finding consolation in the Platonic theory of an eternal, changeless divinity into which all transitory appearances are finally resolved:

> House and tenant go to ground,
> Lost in God, in Godhead found.

Through the Eye of the Needle, epistolary novel by Howells (q.v.), published in 1907 as a sequel to *A Traveler from Altruria* (q.v.).

Mr.Homos, a visitor from Utopian Altruria, is staying at the New York home of Mrs.Makely, a fashionable bourgeois intellectual, while courting Mrs.Eveleth Strange. He is amazed at the paradoxes of American society, where businessmen ruin their health and bankrupt competitors in the savage scramble for money that they lavishly throw away once it is acquired. After their marriage Homos and Mrs. Strange go to Altruria, whose larger outlines, sketched in *A Traveler from Altruria*, are here revealed in more detail. National wealth, which other societies devoted to war, the Altrurians used to improve their land. Productive agencies are combined to eliminate waste, and excess labor is used for works of general public benefit. In this moneyless society, crime is virtually eliminated, and the few malefactors are forced to expiate their misdeeds by good works.

Through the Wheat, novel by Thomas Boyd (q.v.).

THURBER, JAMES [GROVER] (1894–), Ohio-born humorist, has long been associated with *The New Yorker*, in which most of his work has first appeared. His writings, illustrated by his own distinctive drawings, include: *Is Sex Necessary?* (1929), written with E.B.White, satirizing pseudo-scientific sex literature; *The Owl in the Attic and Other Perplexities* (1931); *The Seal in the Bedroom and Other Predicaments* (1932); *My Life and Hard Times* (1933); *The Middle Aged Man on the Flying Trapeze* (1935); *Let Your Mind Alone* (1937), satirizing inspirational books and popularizations of psychology; and *The Last Flower* (1939), an ironic parable of modern war. With Elliott Nugent,

he wrote *The Male Animal* (1940), a comedy dealing with the rivalry of an English professor and an ex-football hero over the love of the professor's wife. Thurber's humorous prose and drawings are never gay or raucous, for, as he has said, 'the little wheels of their invention are set in motion by the damp hand of melancholy.' His fantastic people and animals, moving with sad persistence through incredible upsets, are all misshapen and repressed, the cynical products of a malignant fate. This attitude is succinctly stated in his artistic credo: 'Humor is a kind of emotional chaos told about calmly and quietly in retrospect.'

Thurso's Landing, free verse narrative by Jeffers (q.v.), the title poem of a volume published in 1932.

This tale of suffering, violence, and desperate courage on a California coast farm is principally concerned with stubborn, powerful Reave Thurso, his wife Helen, and his brother Mark, who has been crippled in the World War, but loves and sympathizes with his lonely sister-in-law as her unfeeling husband cannot. Grim old Mrs.Thurso hates Helen, realizing the younger woman's passionate, sensual nature and her dissatisfaction with the limited life of the Landing, but is powerless to prevent Reave from bringing her home again, after she elopes with his friend, Rick Armstrong. When Reave takes a girl servant as his mistress, Helen is wildly jealous, but he is soon crippled and made impotent when a cable snaps while he is felling trees. A struggle of wills ensues between husband and wife, he clinging grimly to his useless life, and she wishing him dead but admiring his immense courage. Mark goes mad because of his lust for Helen and visions of his father's ghost, and hangs himself, after which Helen kills Reave and commits suicide. Old Mrs. Thurso, who says of Helen that she 'had a wasteful gallant spirit,' calls herself 'the last And worst of four: and at last the unhappiest: but that's nothing.'

THWAITES, Reuben Gold (1853–1913), American historian, editor, and librarian, whose most important works are editions of *Early Western Travels*, 1748–1846 (32 vols.,1904–7), and *The Jesuit Relations* (73 vols.,1896–1901), carefully edited reprints of important source materials on the West. Besides an edition of the *Original Journals of the Lewis and Clark Expedition* (8 vols.,1904–5), he was a prolific author of original works on the West and French colonization.

TICKNOR, George (1791–1871), born in Boston and graduated from Dartmouth (1807), became an important literary historian and scholar of his time. His education came from contacts with leading Americans and Europeans during his grand tour of the Atlantic states (1814–15) and his *wanderjahre* abroad with Edward Everett (1815–19). Study at Göttingen and extensive travel through the Latin countries further prepared him for his position as first Smith Professor of the French and Spanish languages at Harvard (1819–35). In addition to improving instruction in modern languages, Ticknor affected the rising generation of American poets by stimulating interest in romantic lore. After another visit to Europe (1835–8), he began his *History of Spanish Literature* (3 vols.,1849; final revision, 1872), which illustrated his acute scholarship in a pioneer field. He wrote a biography of Prescott (1864), and his *Life, Letters, and Journals* were published in two volumes (1876). He was a cousin of W.D.Ticknor and an uncle of Charles W. Eliot.

TICKNOR, William Davis (1810–64), Boston publisher, in 1832 founded the firm known after 1854 as Ticknor and Fields, which published the works of his friends Longfellow, Holmes, Lowell, Emerson, Thoreau, Hawthorne, and many of their distinguished contemporaries. The firm published the *Atlantic Monthly* and *The North American Review* (1854–64).

Ticonderoga, strategic point near the foot of Lake Champlain and on a route to Canada, the site of several battles during the French and Indian Wars. The French Fort Carillon, built in 1755, was captured by Amherst (1759), and then captured from the British during the Revolution (May 10, 1775), by Benedict Arnold and Ethan Allen, the latter, according to his own unverified account, calling upon the fort to surrender 'in the name of the great Jehovah and the Continental Congress.' The Americans evacuated (1777), and the fort was held by the British until the surrender of Burgoyne.

TIERNAN, Mary Spear (1836–91), Baltimore novelist long resident in Virginia, whose pre-Civil War life she described in many novels, including *Homoselle* (1881) and *Suzette* (1885).

TIETJENS, EUNICE (1884–), Chicago poet, best known for her *Profiles from China* (1917), free-verse sketches of the country in which she lived for two years. *Profiles from Home* (1925), on American life, is less distinguished. *Leaves in Windy Weather* (1929) is a miscellaneous collection of her poems, and *Poetry of the Orient* (1928) is an anthology containing her translations. *The World at My Shoulder* (1938) is an autobiography.

TILDEN, SAMUEL JONES (1814–86), New York political leader, was educated at Yale and the College of the City of New York, and became a leading corporation lawyer, entering politics as a Barnburner and member of the Free-Soil party. He supported Lincoln's policies during the Civil War, but afterward became a Democratic leader, and helped to destroy the Tweed Ring. Popular because of his reform activities, he was elected governor (1874) and won national fame for attacking the fraudulent 'canal ring.' The Democratic party nominated him for the presidency (1876) against Hayes. The election appeared to have been won by Tilden, but conflicting returns from several states were challenged by the Republicans. An Electoral Commission was set up, composed of five Senators, five Representatives, and five Supreme Court justices. This body, which was predominantly Republican, rendered a decision for Hayes, and Tilden retired from politics. His bequest helped found the New York Public Library.

TILDEN, WILLIAM T[ATEM] JR. (1893–), tennis champion of the U.S. and of the world (1920–25), and a member of the Davis Cup teams (1920–31), after which he became a professional player. He is the author of several books on tennis.

Till the Day I Die, play by Odets (q.v.).

TILTON, THEODORE (1835–1907), New York author and journalist, noted for his editorship of the *Independent* (q.v., 1856–71), a Congregationalist journal that attracted wide attention for its championing of such reform movements as antislavery and woman suffrage. Tilton was also extremely popular as a lyceum lecturer, until he brought suit against Henry Ward Beecher for adultery with his wife (1874). The nation-wide scandal caused a division of public opinion reflected in the hung jury, but so completely ruined Tilton's reputation that he went abroad (1883), where he spent the remainder of his life. His publications include a sensational romance, *Tempest Tossed* (1874); some musical ballads, *Swabian Stories* (1882); and *Sonnets to the Memory of Frederick Douglass* (1895).

Time (1923–), New York weekly 'newsmagazine,' founded by Briton Hadden and Henry Robinson Luce to present an impartial, concise, and comprehensive summary of current news related to its larger background. It maintains correspondents throughout the world, and has a staff of research workers, in addition to subscribing to news services and depending upon other periodicals. It is written in an impersonal though lively style, characterized by inversion of sentences, concentrated language, use of vivid adjectives, a rather flip manner, unusual inquiry into personal details, coinage of words, and such neologisms as 'radiorator' and 'cinemaddict.' In 1938 the magazine absorbed *The Literary Digest*, and Time, Inc. also owns *Fortune*, a magazine of business, and *Life*, a magazine of news pictures, as well as *The March of Time* for radio and motion-picture presentations of news.

Time of Man, The, novel by Elizabeth M. Roberts (q.v.) published in 1926.

During her childhood, Ellen Chesser wanders with her parents through Kentucky, Tennessee, and Georgia, when her restless father seeks work as a farmhand or sharecropper. She grows up barefooted and ill-fed, working in the fields, and feeling an intimate relation with things of earth. When the family finally settles in one place, Ellen falls in love with Jasper Kent, a fellow worker. Although he leaves temporarily, to escape punishment for accidentally burning a barn, he returns to marry her. Ellen bears children, they try sharecropping, and then Jasper returns to his former employer, Joe Phillips. Jasper and Ellen quarrel over his interest in Hester Shuck and Joe's in Ellen, but they are reconciled by the birth and early death of their fifth child. They become more prosperous, and hope to buy the farm they are working, but a neighbor's barn burns, and rumors of the old accusation against Jasper lead a group of rioters to drive them away. Once more Ellen packs her belongings in a wagon, headed, as she tells her children, 'somewheres . . .'

Time of Your Life, The, play by William Saroyan (q.v.).

Timoleon, poems by Melville (q.v.) privately printed in 1891. Besides the title piece, the volume contains some 40 other light poems inspired by the author's travels in Greece and Italy (1856), as well as the unique and contrasting 'After the Pleasure Party,' which is concerned with 'the sexual feud that clogs the aspiring life' and a bitter arraignment of the fate that makes 'selfhood' seem 'incomplete' and yet seldom allows the mating of 'matching halves.'

TIMOTHY TITCOMB, pseudonym of J.G. Holland (q.v.).

TIMROD, HENRY (1828–67), born in Charleston, was educated at Franklin College (the present University of Georgia), and was a member of the Russell's Bookstore group (q.v.). During his brief life he published only one volume of *Poems* (1860), delicate treatments of nature showing his training in the classics. During the Civil War, the tuberculosis from which he later died made him unfit for military service, and he unsuccessfully attempted to eke out a living by editing a Columbia newspaper and writing poetry. These sad last years he summed up when he wrote to his friend Hayne, 'You ask me to tell you my story for the last year . . . I can embody it all in a few words: beggary, starvation, death, bitter grief, utter want of hope!' Nevertheless, his trials stirred him to write his greatest poetry, which, no longer showing the dependence of his earlier work, included such poems as 'Ethnogenesis,' 'The Cotton Boll,' and 'Ode' on the graves of the Confederate dead (qq.v.), whose passionate emotion is the more effective because of the cool, severe utterance. After his death, his friend Hayne collected his *Poems* (1873), with a sympathetic introduction. Later publications include *Katie* (1884), a long love lyric addressed to his wife, and *Complete Poems* (1899). He is called 'the laureate of the Confederacy.'

Tin Pan Alley, name applied to the New York City district engaged in the composing and publishing of popular dance music and ballads, and more generally to the industry as a whole. The distinctive name and the conception of such an industry is credited to the song writer and publisher, Charles K. Harris (1865–1930), author of 'After the Ball Is Over' (1892). Tin Pan Alley had its inception in the Fourteenth Street section of New York, gradually moving uptown with the theater and amusement district, and later, because of its combination with the motion-picture industry and radio, became a general term applied to all its ramifications, whether in Hollywood or New York. Famous Tin Pan Alley composers include George M. Cohan, Irving Berlin, W.C.Handy, Jerome Kern, George Gershwin, Rudolph Friml, and Sigmund Romberg. The commercialism and superficiality of Tin Pan Alley have been frequently satirized, as in *Beggar on Horseback* by Marc Connelly and George Kaufman, and *June Moon* by Kaufman and Ring Lardner.

Tippecanoe, BATTLE OF, occurred on the Tippecanoe River in Indiana (Nov. 7, 1811), when the rebellious Indian forces of Tecumseh (q.v.) were engaged by the army of W.H.Harrison (q.v.). Tecumseh was not present. Although many lives were lost, and the Indians had to give up their position, the alleged American victory has been questioned, since Harrison and his men were also forced to retreat. Tecumseh's rebellion was quelled, however, and Harrison was thereafter nicknamed Tippecanoe.

Titan, The, novel by Dreiser (q.v.), published in 1914 as a sequel to *The Financier* (q.v.) and based on the career of C.T. Yerkes (q.v.).

Frank Cowperwood, having married his mistress Aileen Butler, establishes a home in Chicago. Their history becomes known, and they fail to make their desired entry into society, but Cowperwood's business affairs prosper. After successful speculations in the grain exchange and in stocks, he effects a great merger of the growing city's public utilities, and acquires a tremendous fortune, as well as political power and prestige, through his street railway transactions, his gift of an observatory to a university, and his fine collection of paintings made during trips to Europe. Meanwhile he is dissatisfied with Aileen, and pursues other women, arousing her bitter resentment. Once she physically attacks a current mistress, but even this cannot restore her control of him, and she becomes increasingly coarse and dissipated, taking several lovers herself. When he establishes a palatial residence in New York City, Cowperwood discovers his

'ideal' in Berenice Fleming, the beautiful, sensitive, and innocent daughter of a former brothel keeper. Although he is twice her age, he succeeds in winning the girl's love, and she accompanies him to Europe after he is finally ousted by his Chicago competitors.

To a God Unknown, novel by Steinbeck (q.v.).

To a Waterfowl, lyric poem by Bryant (q.v.), written in 1815, published in 1818, and collected in *Poems* (1821). Called by Matthew Arnold, 'the most perfect brief poem in the language,' it is arranged in alternately rimed quatrains, and expresses the poet's grateful vision, at the close of a day of self-doubt and despair, of a solitary bird on the horizon, and his sense of the protective guidance of everything in nature by a divine Power, who 'In the long way that I must tread alone, Will lead my steps aright.'

To Cuba and Back, travel narrative by R.H.Dana,Jr. (q.v.).

To Earthward, lyric poem in three- and two-stress iambic metre, by Robert Frost (q.v.), published in *New Hampshire* (1923). The poet contrasts the sweet joys of youthful experience ('The petal of the rose It was that stung') with the bitter passions of maturity ('Now no joy but lacks salt That is not dashed with pain And weariness and fault . . .')

To Have and Have Not, novel by Hemingway (q.v.) published in 1937.

Harry Morgan, a tough 'conch,' as natives of Key West, Florida, call themselves, has devoted his life to the single-minded effort to keep himself, his wife, and his children on the upper fringe of the 'have-nots.' He hires his powerboat to wealthy men for fishing trips, but, when the depression destroys this source of income and a rich tourist welshes on payment for lost fishing tackle, he is obliged to turn to illegal activities. He contracts to smuggle Chinese from Cuba into the U.S., but, taking their money, murders their leader and abandons the others. While smuggling illegal liquor, he is captured in a gun battle by federal officers, loses an arm, and has his boat confiscated. In a last desperate attempt to obtain money, he aids in the escape of four bank robbers, although realizing that unless he kills them, they will kill him. This he does, but they wound him fatally. Picked up by the Coast Guard and accused of being a member of the gang, he stammers, '"A man . . . ain't got no hasn't got any can't really isn't any way out . . . One man alone ain't got . . . no chance." He shut his eyes. It had taken him a long time to get it out and it had taken him all his life to learn it.'

To Have and To Hold, novel by Mary Johnston (q.v.) published in 1900.

Ralph Percy, an aristocratic adventurer in the Virginia colony in 1621, chooses a wife by lot from a shipload of girls sent from England for that purpose. She is beautiful Jocelyn Leigh, a ward of the king, who has fled the court in disguise to escape marriage to despicable Lord Carnal. When Carnal follows her and treacherously attempts to do away with Percy, the hero protects the wife he now loves. An order arrives from England for their arrest, and the pair flee in a small boat with Jeremy Sparrow, the friendly minister; Diccon, a servant; and their prisoner, Carnal. On a desert island, they come upon a band of buccaneers, of whom Percy, pretending to be the pirate Kirby, assumes command. When he refuses to attack a British ship, the crew mutinies and the ship is run aground. They are rescued, and only the pleading of Jocelyn saves her husband from execution for piracy. After adventures among the Indians in Virginia, and Carnal's suicide, Percy and Jocelyn, now free, return together to England.

To Helen, title of two lyric poems by Poe (q.v.).

To One in Paradise, poem by Poe (q.v.).

To Science, sonnet by Poe (q.v.), published as a prologue to 'Al Aaraaf' (q.v.) in *Al Aaraaf, Tamerlane, and Minor Poems* (1829). The poet apostrophizes Science as one whose peering eyes alter all things, as a destroyer of beauty, preying upon the heart of its lover, and as a 'Vulture, whose wings are dull realities.' Poe developed the theme of the conflict of scientific thought and poetic feeling in his prose, but later, as in *Eureka*, considered that the beauty of poetry depended on its representing a scientific concept of an ordered universe.

To the Fringed Gentian, poem by Bryant (q.v.) published in *Poems* (1832). In iambic tetrameter quatrains, it depicts the blossom, 'colored with heaven's own blue,' which blooms late in autumn after other

flowers are gone, and expresses the poet's wish that, as death approaches, 'Hope, blossoming within my heart, May look to heaven as I depart.'

To the Ladies, play by George Kaufman and Marc Connelly (qq.v.).

Tobacco Road, novel by Erskine Caldwell (q.v.), published in 1932. The sensational dramatization by Jack Kirkland (1933) is said to have had a longer continuous run than any other American play.

In the squalid, cotton-raising back country of contemporary Georgia live the sharecropper Jeeter Lester and his miserable, starving family, which includes his sick wife Ada, his neglected mother, his 16-year-old son Dude, and his repulsive, hare-lipped daughter, Ellie May. Near-by lives the railroad worker, Lov Benson, who has recently married Jeeter's twelve-year-old daughter Pearl. Lov comes to ask Jeeter's aid in forcing the unwilling Pearl to sleep with him, and, while Lov's attention is diverted by the sex-hungry Ellie May, Jeeter steals the turnips that Lov has been carrying. The Lesters devour Lov's turnips, being joined by ugly Sister Bessie Rice, a widowed preacher who then leads them in penitential prayer. It is six years since Jeeter has been able to plant cotton, because he has neither money nor credit to buy seed and fertilizer. A 'born' farmer, he stubbornly persists on his sterile acres, refusing to seek work in town as most of his 15 children have already done. Sister Bessie, who wants a husband to help her preach and 'for other purposes,' induces Dude to marry her by buying a new automobile. Subsequent events include futile attempts by Jeeter to obtain credit, further sexual diversions by the entire group, and the rapid ruin of the new auto, owing to Dude's ignorance and reckless driving, which also results in the accidental deaths of Jeeter's mother and a Negro farmer. Pearl runs away to find work and escape her husband's attempt to rape her, and Ellie May goes to live with Lov. Jeeter and Ada are left alone one night. The house catches fire and burns to the ground, ending their oppressed and degraded lives.

TOCQUEVILLE, Alexis, Comte de (1805–59), French liberal politician and writer, at the request of his government came to the U.S. (May 1831–Feb. 1832), to report on the penitentiary system and its possible application in France. His general observations of American society during this period resulted in *De la Démocratie en Amérique* (2 vols.,1835; 2 supplementary vols.,1840; first American edition, 1838). The work deals with the social conditions in the U.S. and the governmental and administrative systems. The advantages and disadvantages of democracies are treated according to their influences on American intellect, feelings, manners, and politics. Generally impartial, the study has taken its place as the earliest important analysis of its subject. In his survey of American literature, Tocqueville finds a retardation attributable to the disrepute in which art and letters were held by early settlers, as well as to lack of leisure and easily accessible English writings. Since there was a large, heterogeneous potential reading public, he expected that a literature would be created that would be free from conventional rules, vehement and bold, lacking in profundity, of great variety, quickly read, easily understood, and obsessed with a magnificent image of patriotic exaltation. He thought that equalitarianism would give poets an instinctive distaste for the ancient, make the use of demigods or heroes impossible, and leave as the only subject man himself, his passions, doubts, propensities, and wretchedness, standing in the presence of nature and of God.

TODD, Mabel Loomis (1856–1932), Massachusetts author, wife of the professor of astronomy at Amherst, came to know Emily Dickinson, and, with T.W. Higginson, edited two series of her friend's *Poems* (1890–91). She alone edited a third series (1896) and the *Letters of Emily Dickinson* (2 vols.,1894). Her own books include popular works on science, a novel, and *A Cycle of Sonnets* (1896).

Together, novel by Robert Herrick (q.v.) published in 1908.

Isabelle and John Lane are unhappily married, since she does not share his interest in the Atlantic and Pacific Railroad, in whose administration he is rapidly advancing, hates the terminus at which he is temporarily stationed, yearns for an ever higher social position, and fails to respond to his passionate love. Their friends, Bessie and Robert Falkner and Margaret and Laurence Cole, are likewise unhappy, because of the failure of the women to understand and sympathize with their husbands. Only the marriage of Steve and

Alice Johnston is successful, but Isabelle spurns these poor cousins. Her weak brother Vickers, a musician, elopes with Stacia Conry, a concert singer, and is disinherited by his father. When he understands how he has ruined his life by 'rescuing' Stacia from her husband, he prevents Isabelle's elopement with Tom Cairy by goading Tom into shooting him. Although his death is pronounced accidental, Isabelle realizes the truth. She goes to Maine, where she meets Dr.Renault, a healer of nervous diseases, who makes her realize her egotism, selfishness, and vapid romanticism. Chastened, she returns to John, finds him being made the scapegoat in a governmental investigation of the railroad, and gives him her confidence and encouragement during his trial, planning a new life 'together' after its conclusion.

Token, The (1827–42), Boston gift book, published by S.G.Goodrich. It was the first medium to give Hawthorne's work wide circulation, and the *Twice-Told Tales* were mostly reprinted from *The Token*. Among other prose contributors were Timothy Flint, Lydia Child, Edward Everett, Longfellow, James Hall, Sarah J. Hale, and Mrs.Stowe. The level of its poetry is indicated by the prominent representation of Goodrich and Mrs. Sigourney, although Holmes, Longfellow, and Lowell contributed occasionally. N.P.Willis edited the 1829 issue.

TOKLAS, ALICE B., see *Stein, Gertrude.*

Tol'able David, story by Hergesheimer (q.v.) published in *The Happy End* (1919).

David, a West Virginia mountain boy who accepts the local code of honor and primitive justice, envies the manhood and position of his brother Allen, a stage driver, and admires the courage of their father, Hunter Kinemon, who has a diseased heart but continues to work as a tenant farmer. Allen is hopelessly crippled in an altercation with the cruel Hatburn family at neighboring Elbow Barren, and Hunter, preparing grimly to murder the Hatburns, dies of heart failure. David wants to carry out his father's plan, but his mother tells him he must remain to provide for her and Allen. They are ousted from the farm, and David is temporarily given his brother's job on the stage route. He suppresses his urge for revenge, and drives faster when passing through Elbow Barren, but on his second trip loses a mailbag there, and returns for it. The Hatburns have seized it, and when he enters their house taunt him cruelly and begin firing at him. He kills two of them, but the third, a powerful giant who reminds him of the Biblical Goliath, wounds him and handles him brutally, until David shoots him also and escapes.

Tom Sawyer, The Adventures of, novel by Clemens (q.v.), published in 1876 under his pseudonym Mark Twain. Its classic sequel, *Huckleberry Finn* (q.v.) was followed by the relatively unimportant *Tom Sawyer Abroad* and *Tom Sawyer, Detective.*

In the drowsy Mississippi River town of St.Petersburg, Missouri, Tom Sawyer, imaginative and mischievous, and his priggish brother Sid, live with their simple, kind-hearted Aunt Polly. Sid 'peaches' on Tom for playing hookey, and Tom is punished by being made to whitewash a fence, but ingeniously leads his friends to do this job for him, by pretending it is a privilege. When his sweetheart, Becky Thatcher, is angered because Tom reveals that he has previously been in love, he forsakes a temporary effort at virtue, plays hookey, and decides to become a pirate or a Robin Hood. With his boon companion, Huck Finn, a good-natured, irresponsible river-rat, Tom goes to a graveyard at midnight to swing a dead cat, an act advised by Huck as a cure for warts. They watch Injun Joe, a half-breed criminal, who stabs the town doctor to death, and places the knife in the hands of drunken Muff Potter. After being further scolded by Aunt Polly, and further spurned by Becky, Tom, with Huck and Joe Harper, hide on near-by Jackson's Island. Their friends believe them drowned, but their funeral service is interrupted by the discovery of the 'corpses,' who are listening from the church gallery. Tom returns to school, is reconciled with Becky and his aunt, and becomes a hero at the trial of Muff Potter, when he reveals Injun Joe's guilt. Tom and Becky attend a school picnic, and are lost for several days in a cave where Tom spies Injun Joe. Later the half-breed is found dead, and his treasure is divided between Tom and Huck, after which the latter is adopted by the Widow Douglas. His only consolation, since he has surrendered his state of unwashed happiness, lies in Tom's promise to admit him to his robber gang on the strength of his social standing.

Tom Swift, hero of a series of books for boys by Edward Stratemeyer (q.v.).

TOM THUMB, GENERAL, name given to an American dwarf, Charles Sherwood Stratton (1838–83), who gained fame as an exhibit in the shows of P.T.Barnum (q.v.). He was 40 inches tall when fully grown.

Tom Thumb, first steam locomotive constructed in America, was built by Peter Cooper (q.v.,1829), and on its first trip made a 13-mile run in one hour and twelve minutes.

Tombs, THE, prison in New York City, whose site was that of the gibbet in colonial times. Used mainly for prisoners awaiting trial, it is connected with the criminal law courts by an enclosed passage popularly called the 'bridge of sighs.'

Tomorrow and Tomorrow, play by Philip Barry (q.v.), produced and published in 1931.

Eve Redman and her wealthy husband Gail are happily married, although they long to have a child. Eve, in her desire for a deeper affection, gives herself to Nicholas Hay, a psychoanalyst. When she bears a son, Christian, Gail believes the boy to be his own, and in attempting to lead him into his own ideal of life crushes his spirit. To restore Christian after his nervous breakdown, Eve calls for Nicholas, who rids him of the fear and hatred he had felt for Gail. Discovering that Christian is his son, Nicholas asks Eve to leave her husband for him, but when she realizes how much she and the boy mean to Gail, she determines to remain with him.

TOMPSON, BENJAMIN (1642–1714), born in Quincy, Massachusetts, graduated from Harvard (1662) and became a physician and a teacher at the Boston Latin School and the Roxbury Latin School. He is known today as the first native-born colonial poet. *New Englands Crisis. Or a Brief Narrative, of New-Englands Lamentable Estate at present . . .* (1676) is a satirical depiction in heroic couplets of what he considered to be the degeneracy of the period of King Philip's War. Most of this was reprinted in *New-Englands Tears for her Present Miseries* (1676). Lesser verse was contributed to the *Magnalia* of Cotton Mather, and the *Narrative* of King Philip's War by William Hubbard.

TONTY, HENRI DE (1650–1704), cousin of Duluth, was born in France or Italy, and joined LaSalle (1678) on his voyage to North America, accompanying him in discovering the mouth of the Mississippi (1682). He was famed in his own right as an explorer and Indian fighter, was a founder of Illinois, and joined the colony of Iberville in Louisiana. His memoirs were published in English translation in *Early Narratives of the Northwest* (1917).

TONY BEAVER, see *Beaver, Tony.*

Too Much Johnson, farce by William Gillette (q.v.).

TOOMBS, ROBERT [AUGUSTUS] (1810–85), Georgia statesman, entered national politics as a conservative Whig congressman (1845–53), approving the Compromise of 1850 and the Kansas-Nebraska Bill, but was impelled by the current of events to become more and more a champion of the South. Elected to the Senate (1853–61), by the Constitutional Union Party, which he helped to found, he went over to the Democrats and finally came out for secession upon the election of Lincoln. He was made Secretary of State of the Confederacy, but, because of opposition to Jefferson Davis's policies, resigned to enter military service. After the war, he refused to regain his citizenship by taking the oath of allegiance to the U.S., and steadfastly worked against radical Reconstruction plans.

TOOMER, JEAN (1894–), Negro author, born in Washington,D.C., after graduation from New York University (1918) wrote *Cane* (1923), a miscellany of stories, verses, and a drama concerned with the emotional life of the Negro. His other books are *Essentials* (1931), aphorisms; and *Portage Potential* (1932).

Topper, novel by Thorne Smith (q.v.).

Topsy, character in *Uncle Tom's Cabin* (q.v.).

Torch-Bearers, The, comedy by George Kelly (q.v.).

Tories, members of the conservative political party in England, and in America prior to the Revolution. During the Revolutionary War the name was applied to the Loyalists (q.v.). In modern politics, it refers to conservatives or reactionaries.

TORRENCE, [FREDERIC] RIDGELY (1875–), New York poet, dramatist, and journalist, whose first volume of poetry, *The House of a Hundred Lights* (1900), a whimsical, sentimental mixture

of *fin de siècle* ideas, was very unlike his more mature poetry in *Hesperides* (1925), an expression of his mystical philosophy. *Poems* (1941) is his first collection since 1925. Among his plays are: *El Dorado* (1903); *Abelard and Heloise* (1907); and *Granny Maumee*, *The Rider of Dreams*, and *Simon the Cyrenian* (1917), a group of Negro plays.

TORREY, CHARLES TURNER (1813–46), Massachusetts Abolitionist, broke with Garrison to found his own antislavery society, edit newspapers, and otherwise worked for the cause. He became a martyr, dying while imprisoned for aiding runaway slaves.

Tortesa, the Usurer, blank verse romantic drama by N.P.Willis (q.v.), produced and published in 1839. Tortesa, the money lender, determines to marry Isabella, the daughter of Count Falcone, for her social position. She is in love with the painter Angelo, and to escape from marriage with Tortesa feigns death. When it is discovered that she is still alive, Tortesa is so touched by her devotion to Angelo that he gives her up, and comforts himself by marrying Zippa, a girl of his own class.

Tortilla Flat, novel by Steinbeck (q.v.), published in 1935 and unsuccessfully dramatized by Jack Kirkland in 1937.

Concerned with the lives of the California *paisanos*, to whom the author ascribes 'a mixture of Spanish, Indian, Mexican, and assorted Caucasian bloods' and a color 'like that of a well-browned meerschaum pipe,' this is a humorous, picaresque tale of romance and adventure 'in that uphill district above the town of Monterey called Tortilla Flat, although it isn't a flat at all.' The narrative tells of bow-legged Danny, a mule-skinner in Texas during the First World War, who returned to Tortilla Flat to find himself the heir to two small houses. His friend Pilon shares the burden of this new responsibility by renting one of the houses for $15 a month, which he never pays, and by a similar arrangement, their drinking companion Pablo comes to live with Pilon. Together they steal from their neighbors, drink gallons of wine from the saloon of the formidable Torrelli, and pursue amours with such gallant ladies as Sweets Ramirez, Tia Ignacia, Mrs.Morales, and the incredibly promiscuous Cornelia Ruiz. Other *paisano* figures who join the circle of 'Danny's friends' include Big Joe Portagee, Jesus Maria Corcoran, and the half-witted Pirate and his five canine companions. These amiable rascals exhibit aspects of the *paisano* character, such as an innocent amorality, a superstitious but appealing affection for the Church, a ruthless instinct for survival, and a primitive love of pleasure and endurance of hardship, which result in a satisfyingly integrated way of life. The episodic narrative ends with Danny's spectacular death during a particularly uproarious party, and the subsequent burning of his house and final dispersion of his 'Round Table' of friends.

TOSCANINI, ARTURO (1867–), Italian symphony conductor, in addition to a notable European and South American career, has been conductor at the Metropolitan Opera (1908–15), and of the New York Philharmonic-Symphony (1926–36) and the National Broadcasting Company Symphony (1937–).

TOTHEROH, DAN (1895–), California dramatist, whose first play, *Wild Birds*, was produced at the state university (1922) before its New York production (1925). It is a tragic love story of an orphan girl and a reform school boy, whose attempt to escape from the farm where they work leads to his being beaten to death and her suicide. His other plays include: *One-Act Plays for Everyone* (1931); *Distant Drums* (1932), a play of the pioneer West; *Moor Born* (1934), a play about the Brontës; *Mother Lode* (1934), concerned with early San Francisco; and *Searching for the Sun* (1936). He has also written and produced outdoor pageants, and directed the Greek Theatre at the University of California. His novels include *Wild Orchard* (1927) and *Men Call Me Fool* (1929).

Touchett, RALPH, character in *The Portrait of a Lady* (q.v.).

Touchstone, The, novelette by Edith Wharton (q.v.).

Tour on the Prairies, A, autobiographical narrative by Irving (q.v.), published as the first volume of *The Crayon Miscellanies* (1835). The narrative describes the author's adventures in the Indian territories of the midwestern frontier, during a journey (Oct.–Nov. 1832) in which he was accompanied by Charles J. Latrobe, a British traveler; Count de Pourtalès, a Swiss youth; Henry L. Ellsworth, a gov-

ernment commissioner; and 'a little swarthy, meagre, wiry French creole, named Antoine, but familiarly dubbed Tonish: a kind of Gil Blas of the frontier.' From Fort Gibson, in the present Oklahoma, Irving and his companions traveled westward living among the frontiersmen and in camps and buffalo-hunting grounds of the Pawnee, Osage, and Creek tribes. Irving was particularly interested in gathering examples of folklore, and the *Tour* recounts such legends as that of the Pacing Mustang (q.v.). The descriptions of Western life are presented in Irving's characteristically softened and romanticized manner, and when compared with Ellsworth's manuscript account show many omissions and alterations of fact.

TOURGÉE, Albion Winegar (1838–1905), born in Ohio, was for two years a student at the University of Rochester, but left to become a Union officer in the Civil War, in which he was seriously wounded. In 1865 he moved his family to North Carolina, where he practiced law and entered politics as a carpetbagger. His venomous political stand and obviously biased attitude as a judge made him unpopular with his fellow citizens, but he became wealthy through corrupt administration of the courts. He founded and edited journals primarily devoted to a radical Reconstruction policy, and wrote several novels setting forth his political beliefs and depicting the South during the Reconstruction. After 1878 he made his home in New York, and his only political affiliation was an appointment as consul at Bordeaux (1897). His fiction, which is romantic in plot but realistic in its presentation of the contemporary scene, includes: *'Toinette* (1874), republished as *A Royal Gentleman* (1881), a story of the ante-bellum and Civil War South; *Figs and Thistles* (1879), set in Ohio and the South during the Civil War, and said to be a fictional account of the political career of Garfield, though others claim it to be semi-autobiographical; *A Fool's Errand* (q.v.,1879), a story of the Reconstruction, definitely based on the author's own life and considered his best work; *Bricks Without Straw* (q.v.,1880), again concerned with Negroes and whites in North Carolina during the turbulent postwar period; *John Eax and Mamelon* (1882) and *Hot Plowshares* (1883), also dealing with this period; and *Pactolus Prime* (1890), set in Washington and telling of a Negro who brings up his own light-complexioned child as a white. He published and edited *The Continent* (1882–4), a weekly literary magazine that serialized his own work and was flavored by his strong Republican attitude, defense of the Negro, and antipathy to the Ku Klux Klan.

Tower beyond Tragedy, The, free verse drama by Jeffers (q.v.) published in *Tamar and Other Poems* (1924).

In this original treatment of the Electra theme, Jeffers represents the homecoming of Agamemnon to Mycenæ; his murder by his queen Clytemnestra and her lover Ægisthus; the entry of Agamemnon's spirit into the body of the captive Trojan princess, Cassandra, to prophesy the retribution at the hands of Orestes; and the escape of the child Orestes with his sister Electra. When Orestes reaches manhood, he and Electra, determined to accomplish their filial obligation, return to Mycenæ, where Clytemnestra and Ægisthus have established their rule. With the assistance of Cassandra, who has served as the queen's slave, they arouse the palace, and Orestes kills both his mother and her consort. The people choose their returned prince to be king, but the horror of matricide drives him temporarily insane, and he spends a night in the hills. The following morning he reappears, announcing to Electra his return to sanity, despite a dream vision in which he possessed her, 'entered the fountain,' as he had, in a different sense, by killing his mother. Electra tries to persuade him to remain as ruler, even offering, with some eagerness, to accept him as her lover. The youth declines, asserting that his crime and the consequent derangement have left him with a new wisdom, which impels him to lead a wandering life away from the city. Lying on the hillside at night, he came to realize that men have gone mad by a sort of racial introversion. He himself has discovered peace by a pantheistic identification of himself with all nature. He has attained 'the pure flame and the white,' having 'fallen in love outward.' With this phrase, the key to the author's philosophic pantheism, Orestes dismisses Electra's plea, and departs to pass his life in exile from humanity, having

> . . . climbed the tower beyond time, consciously, and
> cast humanity, entered the earlier fountain.

Town and Country, see *Home Journal.*

Town Down the River, The, poems by E.A.Robinson (q.v.).

TOWNSEND, GEORGE ALFRED (1841–1914), journalist, who was among the earliest syndicated correspondents, writing for some hundred newspapers under the pseudonym Gath. Although he also wrote many books on contemporary matters, he is best remembered for his *Tales of the Chesapeake* (1880), a collection of local-color stories, and *The Entailed Hat* (1884), a novel about the kidnapping of free Negroes before the Civil War.

TOWNSEND, MARY ASHLEY (1832–1901), New York novelist, whose residence in New Orleans provided the background for her melodramatic novel, *The Brother Clerks* (1857), and *The Captain's Story* (1874), a novel concerning a supposedly white man who discovers his mother to have been a mulatto. She also wrote *Down the Bayou and Other Poems* (1882).

Townshend Acts, revenue acts of the British Parliament (1767), named for Pitt's chancellor of the exchequer, which placed colonial import duties on various articles. A notable American protest occurs in Dickinson's *Letters from a Pennsylvania Farmer* (q.v.,1767–8). English soldiers were sent to keep peace, but after the Boston Massacre (1770) the remonstrance became so acute that most of the duties were repealed. The duty on tea was retained to assert Parliamentary power, and this precipitated further protest in the Boston Tea Party (1773), adding to the friction which culminated in the Revolutionary War.

Tragic Muse, The, novel by Henry James (q.v.) published in 1890.

To Paris from London comes widowed Lady Agnes Dormer, who wishes to 'settle' the lives of her children: Nick, whom she desires to turn from painting to politics; Grace, a conventional girl for whom she seeks a successful marriage; and young Biddy (Bridget), who shares Nick's artistic interests, and whom she also wishes to be married. Among their acquaintances are the æsthete, Gabriel Nash, who encourages Nick to paint; Peter Sherringham, a cousin in the diplomatic service, whose avocation is theatergoing; Miriam Rooth, a bold, talented girl, whose genteelly poor mother fosters her ambition to be an actress and uses Peter to obtain an introduction to the great Mme Carré, who trains the girl; and Julia Dallow, Peter's widowed sister, who loves Nick and employs her fortune to back him in a Parliamentary election, which causes the family's return to England. To please his mother, Nick proposes to Julia after his election, and for a time concentrates on his political career. He drifts back to painting, however, and one day, when Miriam is posing for a portrait, Julia pays him a visit, after which she breaks their engagement. Nick resigns his seat in Parliament and devotes himself to portraiture. Although Biddy is obviously in love with Peter, the latter has become infatuated with Miriam, who develops into a fine and famous London actress. She refuses Peter, marries her leading man, Basil Dashwood, and causes Peter to pass through a period of despair, from which he emerges to fall in love with Biddy, whom he marries and takes to America. Nick has achieved a modest success as a portraitist, and the unhappy Julia, who has abandoned her political ambitions, invites him to paint her. It seems, to the immense relief of Lady Agnes, that the two may yet marry.

Trail of the Lonesome Pine, The, novel by John Fox (q.v.), published in 1908 and dramatized by Eugene Walter (1912).

John Hale, a young engineer, comes to the lawless Kentucky mountain region, to develop a coal mine on the property of 'Devil' Judd Tolliver, leader of his family in the feud against the Falin clan. Hale's attempts to keep order arouse the hatred of both families, and the Tollivers are particularly bitter when Judd's daughter June falls in love with him, although her cousin Dave looks upon her as his future wife. Hale sends June east for an education, and upon her return she testifies against her own family in the trial of a Tolliver for killing a policeman. After the deaths of Judd and Dave, she marries Hale.

TRAIN, ARTHUR [CHENEY] (1875–), born in Massachusetts, became prominent both as a New York lawyer and public official and as an author of fiction. He is particularly noted for his stories with a legal background, concerned with Mr.Tutt, an aging lawyer whose ingenuous manner conceals a shrewd wit and brilliant knowledge of his profession. The many tales in

which he figures have been collected in such volumes as *Tutt and Mr.Tutt* (1920), *The Adventures of Ephraim Tutt* (1930), and *Mr.Tutt's Case Book* (1936). *Puritan's Progress* (1931) is an informal account of the puritan tradition in America. *My Day in Court* (1939) is an autobiography; *From the District Attorney's Office* (1939) is an explanation of the administration of criminal justice; and *Tassels on Her Boots* (1940) is a novel of New York during the days of Boss Tweed.

Tramp Abroad, A, travel narrative by Clemens (q.v.), published in 1880 under his pseudonym Mark Twain. It is a record of his European tour (1878) with Joseph H. Twichell, whom he calls 'Harris,' and describes their adventures in Germany, Italy, and Switzerland, chiefly during a walking trip through the Black Forest and the Alps. Besides the serious, journalistic account of European natural beauties, society, folklore, and history, including enthusiastic descriptions of Alpine scenery that do not fail to praise comparable regions of the U.S., there are passages ranging from crude farce to tall tales and typical satire. Thus a retelling of Whymper's conquest of the Matterhorn is complemented by the author's humorous 'ascent of Mont Blanc by telescope,' and a description of ravens in the Black Forest prompts him to recount 'Baker's Blue-Jay Yarn,' concerned with the fabulous sense of humor of California jays. Characteristic humor also appears in Clemens's studiously inept drawings, purportedly the work of an earnest art student, and the satirical passages on subjects alien to the average American, such as 'the awful German language,' Wagnerian opera, and 'The Great French Duel.'

Tramp, Tramp, Tramp, Civil War marching song by G.F.Root (q.v.). It was revived with new words during the Spanish-American War.

Transcendental Club, name applied by outsiders to the New England intellectuals who met occasionally and informally, during the seven or eight years following 1836, at Emerson's home in Concord and elsewhere, to discuss philosophy, theology, and literature. The members called themselves the Symposium, or the Hedge Club, the latter name being due to the fact that meetings were frequently called when Dr.F.H.Hedge made a trip from his Bangor home to Boston. The assemblage, which assumed the nature of an open forum, included Emerson, Alcott, J.F.Clarke, the younger W.E.Channing, Parker, Margaret Fuller, Ripley, Brownson, Elizabeth Peabody, Thoreau, Hawthorne, Jones Very, C.P.Cranch, Charles Follen, W.H.Channing, Convers Francis, Cyrus Bartol, Caleb Stetson, and others. The Brook Farm enterprise was only remotely connected with the Club, whereas *The Dial* was more intimately associated with the group, who led the Transcendental movement (q.v.).

Transcendentalism, a philosophic and literary movement that flourished in New England, particularly at Concord (*c.*1836–60), as a reaction against 18th-century rationalism, the skeptical philosophy of Locke, and the confining religious orthodoxy of New England Calvinism. This romantic, idealistic, mystical, and individualistic belief was more a cast of thought than a systematic philosophy. It was eclectic in nature and had many sources. Its qualities may be discerned in Jonathan Edwards's belief in 'a Divine and Supernatural Light, immediately imparted to the soul by the spirit of God,' and the idealism of Channing, whose Unitarianism was a religious predecessor of this belief in an indwelling God and intuitive thought. It was also a manifestation of the general humanitarian trend of 19th-century thought. The name, as well as many of the ideas, was derived from Kant's *Critique of Practical Reason* (1788), in which he declares: 'I call all knowledge *transcendental* which is concerned, not with objects, but with our mode of knowing objects so far as this is possible *a priori*.' From other German philosophers, such as Jacobi, Fichte, Schleiermacher, Schelling, and Herder, it received impulses toward mysticism and toward practical action as an expression of the will. Through Goethe, Richter, Novalis, and other literary figures, the philosophy was more easily communicated to American authors, and, at second remove, the doctrines of German transcendentalism were reflected in the poetry and criticism of such English authors as Coleridge, Carlyle, and Wordsworth. In addition, the New England transcendantalist belief was shaped by the ideas of Plato, Plotinus, and such English neo-Platonists as Cudworth and More, as well as by certain aspects of the teachings of Confucious, the

Mohammedan Sufis, the writers of the Upanishads and the Bhagavadgita, the Buddhists, the eclectic idealist Victor Cousin, the Hebrew and Greek scriptural authors, Thomas à Kempis, Pascal, and Swedenborg.

Although the very spirit of transcendentalism permitted contradiction, and its eclectic sources made for diverse concepts, in its larger outlines the belief had as its fundamental base a monism holding to the unity of the world and God, and the immanence of God in the world. Because of this indwelling of divinity, everything in the world is a microcosm containing within itself all the laws and meaning of existence. Likewise, the soul of each individual is identical with the soul of the world, and latently contains all that the world contains. Man may fulfil his divine potentialities either through a rapt mystical state, in which the divine is infused into the human, or through coming into contact with the truth, beauty, and goodness embodied in nature, and originating in the Over-Soul. Thus occurs the doctrine of correspondence between the tangible world and the human mind, and the identity of moral and physical laws. Through belief in the divine authority of the soul's intuitions and impulses, based on this identification of the individual soul with God, there developed the doctrine of self-reliance and individualism, the disregard of external authority, tradition, and logical demonstration, and the absolute optimism of the movement.

These primary beliefs varied greatly as they were interpreted in the writings of different authors, although the most important literary expression of transcendental thought is considered to lie in Thoreau's *Walden* (q.v.) and in such works of Emerson as *Nature*, *The American Scholar*, the Divinity School Address, 'The Over-Soul', 'Self-Reliance,' and 'Compensation' (qq.v.). Other members of the informal Transcendental Club (q.v.) whose prose and poetry express similar ideas, included Alcott, Margaret Fuller, the younger W.E.Channing, Ripley, Jones Very, C.P.Cranch, J.F.Clarke, Theodore Parker, Brownson, Elizabeth Peabody, and W.H.Channing. Since there was no formal association, many writers of the time, such as Hawthorne and Julia Ward Howe, were on the fringe of the steadfast believers, and in one way or another the beliefs affected many not usually associated with the movement, including Lowell, Longfellow, Bryant, Whittier, Melville, and Whitman. So far as the movement had a central voice, *The Dial* (q.v.,1840–44) may be considered its organ, and, although it necessarily remained on an idealistic plane, it was instrumental in the formation of such social experiments as Brook Farm and Fruitlands (qq.v.).

Transformation, see *Marble Faun, The.*

Transition (1927–), monthly little magazine, founded in Paris as 'an international magazine for creative experiment.' Its editors, Eugene Jolas and Elliot Paul, believed that the literary imagination of the time was too photographic, and that the study of the irrational was an *a priori* condition for giving the imagination a new dimension. They therefore explored 'a night-world hitherto neglected,' and tried to liberate conventional language, using new words and new grammar to evoke such states of mind as dream, hallucination, and half-sleep. Joyce's 'Work in Progress' (*Finnegans Wake*), which attempted, according to the editor, 'to give a time-and-spaceless panorama of the nocturnal world,' was one of their leading documents. Other contributors included Gertrude Stein, Hemingway, Hart Crane, and W.C.Williams, and the magazine published translations from foreign authors. In the summer of 1928 it became a quarterly, and it was discontinued in 1930, when 'it threatened to become a mercantile success.' Shortly thereafter it resumed publication, and in 1940 it was moved by Jolas to Mt.Vernon, Iowa.

Transylvania, region between the Cumberland and Kentucky Rivers, settled by a pioneer land company (1775) under the direction of Daniel Boone and Richard Henderson (1735–85). At the end of 1776, in answer to the colonists' petitions, the area was absorbed by Virginia.

TRAUBEL, HORACE L[OGO] (1858–1919), author and journalist of Camden, New Jersey, after 1873 became an intimate friend of Whitman. He founded the *Conservator* (1890–1919), a monthly magazine issued from Philadelphia, which attempted to popularize Marxian socialism and showed the obvious influence of Whitman. In addition to *Chants Communal* (1904), *Optimos* (1910), and *Collects* (1915), Traubel wrote *With Walt Whitman*

in Camden (3 vols.,1906–14), a minutely detailed diary of his visits to Whitman after 1888, containing opinions and criticisms as well as facts. As one of the poet's literary executors, he was an editor of *In Re Walt Whitman* (1893) and *The Complete Writings of Walt Whitman* (10 vols., 1902).

Traveler from Altruria, A, novel by Howells (q.v.) published in 1893. *Through the Eye of the Needle* (q.v.) is a sequel.

Mr.Homos, a visitor from the Utopian republic, Altruria, founded on principles of altruism, comes to spend his vacation at a fashionable American summer resort. In a series of discussions with Mr.Twelvemough, a fashionable novelist, and other wealthy Americans, he applies his naïve Christian socialism to modern society. Mrs.Makely, a fashionable bourgeois intellectual, arranges for Homos to lecture on Altrurian conditions, and, though his point of view is antithetical to that of most of the hotel guests, he is loudly cheered by the impoverished farmers of the neighborhood. The local minister looks upon Altruria as heaven on earth, a manufacturer's faith in the profit system is shaken, Professor Lumen, avoiding principles, damns the republic as a rehash of famous Utopias, and Mrs.Makely is entirely unmoved by the results of her stimulating evening. The economy of Altruria, as outlined by Homos, requires all citizens to work three hours a day at manual tasks, in return for food and other goods from government sources. In this thoroughly equalitarian state, property is communally owned, most modern machinery is outlawed, family life is subordinated to civic life, and fashions in everything from dress to architecture are under the supervision of æsthetic commissioners.

Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, see *French and Indian Wars.*

Treaty of Ghent, see *War of* 1812.

Treaty of Paris, see *Paris, Treaties of.*

TRENT, WILLIAM PETERFIELD (1862–1939), professor of English at the University of the South (1888–1900), and at Columbia (1900–1929). His writings include *English Culture in Virginia* (1889), a life of W.G.Simms (1892), *Robert E. Lee* (1899), *A History of American Literature* (1903), *Greatness in Literature* (1905), *Longfellow, and Other Essays* (1910), *Great American Writers* (1912), and *Defoe—How to Know Him* (1916). He founded the *Sewanee Review* and was an editor of *The Cambridge History of American Literature.*

Trent Affair, diplomatic incident involving the U.S. and England, which followed the unauthorized seizure (Nov. 8, 1861) by Captain Charles Wilkes of James Murray Mason and John Slidell, commissioners of the Confederacy, on board the British ship *Trent.* It seemed at first that Great Britain would recognize the Confederacy and declare war against the U.S., but trouble was averted when Secretary of State Seward disavowed Wilkes's act and released the prisoners.

Trenton, BATTLE OF, occurred during the Revolutionary War, shortly after the British successes around New York compelled Washington to retreat into Pennsylvania (Nov. 1776). On Christmas night, Washington had his 2,500 soldiers ferried across the icy Delaware, about eight miles above the town of Trenton, which was occupied by some 1,200 Hessian mercenaries. Dividing his forces into two parts, he surprised the Hessians, closed their avenues of retreat, and mortally wounded their leader, Colonel Rall, at which some 950 of them surrendered. The Battle of Princeton (q.v.) occurred on January 3. The Battle of Trenton is remembered popularly through Leutze's melodramatic, inaccurate painting of *Washington Crossing the Delaware.*

TREVELYAN, SIR GEORGE OTTO (1838–1928), English historian and politician, a Whig and Liberal member of the House of Commons for 30 years. His writings include *The American Revolution* (6 vols., 1899–1914), which stresses the virtues of the Americans in order to criticize George III from a Whig point of view.

Trifles, play by Susan Glaspell (q.v.).

Trigger, play by Lula Vollmer (q.v.).

Trimmed Lamp, The, stories by W.S. Porter (q.v.).

Trina Sieppe, character in *McTeague* (q.v.).

Trip to Chinatown, A, play by C.H. Hoyt (q.v.).

Tripolitan War, or BARBARY WARS, naval expeditions against the Barbary states (Morocco, Algiers, Tripoli, and Tunis), which for more than two centuries had preyed on the commerce of Christian na-

tions and captured Christians as slaves. Forbearance was customarily obtained by paying annual tribute, but Jefferson opposed this practice, sending successful expeditions against the pirates (1801–5), led by Preble and Decatur (q.v.). While the U.S. was engaged in the War of 1812, the Barbary states renewed their ship raiding, and Algiers declared war (1815). Decatur and others were responsible for the rapid conclusion of the war by an American victory. The various campaigns furnished the theme of Mrs.Rowson's *Slaves in Algiers*, Payne's *Fall of Algiers*, Tyler's *The Algerine Captive*, James Butler's *Fortune's Foot-ball*, and other contemporary literature.

Tristram, blank verse dramatic narrative by E.A.Robinson (q.v.), published in 1927 and awarded the 1928 Pulitzer Prize. It belongs with *Lancelot* and *Merlin* (qq.v.) in the author's Arthurian trilogy.

Prince Tristram of Lyonesse, wounded in combat in Ireland, is nursed to health by Princess Isolt. He tells his uncle, King Mark of Cornwall, of Isolt's dark beauty, and Mark sends him to bring her to be his queen. During the return voyage, Tristram falls in love with the princess, but feels honor bound to carry out his mission. He contemplates suicide, and refuses to attend the marriage feast. Three messengers are sent to persuade him: Gouvernail, his friend and counselor; Queen Morgan, who attempts to renew her former hold on him; and Brangwaine, Isolt's attendant. All three fail, and Isolt herself comes. Their farewell embrace is spied by his treacherous cousin, Andred, whom Tristram wounds. For this act Mark exiles Tristram, and Gouvernail follows him, rescuing Tristram when a fever overcomes him in the forest. While he is recuperating, Morgan tries unsuccessfully to make him love her. He goes with Gouvernail to Brittany, where another Isolt—Isolt of the White Hands—daughter of King Howel, counters his indifference with her passionate love, and he marries her. Later he becomes a knight of Arthur's Round Table, and, when Mark is imprisoned for opposing the papal government, Tristram and Isolt of Ireland spend a blissful time together in Joyous Gard. Mark is released, and takes his queen back to Cornwall. She is dying, and Mark, resigned and generous, allows Tristram to attend her. The final embrace of the lovers is interrupted by Andred, who brings about the death of Tristram and Isolt in each other's arms.

Triumph at Plattsburg, The, play by R.P.Smith (q.v.), produced in 1830 and first published in Quinn's *Representative American Plays* (1917). The background of the play deals with the defeat of the British fleet at Plattsburg Bay in the War of 1812, and the plot centers on the escape of Major McCrea from the British, and the actions of his daughter, Elinor, who is married to Captain Stanley of the British Army.

Triumph of Infidelity, poem by Timothy Dwight (q.v.) published anonymously in 1788. Written in heroic couplets, this satire lacks the light touch of Dwight's master, Pope, and is characterized by heavy abusiveness that has led it to be compared with 'good old-fashioned pulpit-thumping.' He violently defends Calvinist orthodoxy, and defies Voltaire, Hume, Priestly, and their 'infidel' followers.

Triumph of the Egg, The, collection by Sherwood Anderson (q.v.), published in 1921, is subtitled 'A Book of Impressions from American Life in Tales and Poems.' 'The Dumb Man,' the allegorical introductory poem, is concerned with the author's difficulty in expressing his understanding of life, and the concluding poem, 'The Man with the Trumpet,' sums up what he tried to say: 'I said that life was life, that men in streets and cities might build temples to their souls . . . I told my people life was sweet, that men might live . . .' The 13 tales depict aspects of psychological frustration and maladjustment in typical American backgrounds.

'The Egg,' from which the collection takes its title, is a comic study of the grotesque struggles of men with an environment that does not fit their hands. A Midwestern couple fail in their long effort to operate a chicken farm and move into town where their attempt to run a restaurant also fails. The episode ends with an unsuccessful egg trick by which the man tries to entertain a customer. His son wonders 'why eggs had to be and why from the egg came the hen who again laid the egg . . . ' 'I Want to Know Why' is the story of a boy from the Middle West who runs away to see the horse racing at Saratoga, finds a sympathetic friend in the trainer Jerry Tillford, and then loses his enthusiastic delight in this new life when he dis-

covers Jerry making love to a prostitute. 'Out of Nowhere into Nothing' is a novelette whose heroine is Rosalind Wescott, an Iowa girl, who spends several lonely years in Chicago until she falls in love with her employer, Walter Sayers. He is unhappily married and Rosalind's love gives him a new grasp on life, but she feels that before she can give herself to him she must tell her mother what is happening to her. Her mother's dreary marriage with a man lacking delicacy or imagination causes her to warn Rosalind that love is a desecration to be avoided. The daughter's experience has taught her otherwise, and she returns to her lover.

Triumphs of Love, The, or Happy Reconciliation, play by John Murdock, produced and printed in 1795. It deals with the Quakers, the Whiskey Rebellion, the troubles with the Tripolitan pirates, and other matters of contemporary interest. The play is chiefly remembered for its character Sambo, the first American stage Negro.

TROLLOPE, Frances (1780–1863), English author, resided in the U.S. (1827–30), during which time her husband operated a fancy-goods bazaar in Cincinnati. The business failed, but Mrs.Trollope's book, *Domestic Manners of the Americans* (1832), attained great notoriety. Although she admitted that the material status of Americans was superior to that of Europeans, she remarked on the tendency of democracy to lower the level of intellectual attainment, bitterly attacked slavery, was offended by revivals, disliked the affected delicacy of American women, and criticized the general boastfulness and sharp practices in business. The work caused a sensation and prompted many spirited replies both in magazines and in book form. Mrs.Trollope wrote other travel books and novels, of which four deal with America: *The Refugee in America* (1832); *Jonathan Jefferson Whitlaw* (1836), attacking Negro slavery; *The Barnabys in America* (1843); and *The Old World and the New* (1849). Her sons, the novelist Anthony Trollope, and Thomas Adolphus Trollope, both wrote studies of American institutions.

TROUBETZKOY, Princess, see *Rives, Amélie.*

TROWBRIDGE, J[ohn] T[ownsend] (1827–1916), New York-born author, lived in Boston after 1848, and there wrote some 40 novels for boys, which had much to do with raising juvenile literature from didacticism to a higher artistic plane. The best known of his books are the antislavery novels, *Cudjo's Cave* (q.v.,1864), written for children, and *Neighbor Jackwood* (q.v.,1857). *Coupon Bonds* (1866), which the author dramatized in 1876, is a realistic story of a rural New England family whose sole interest is money. His poems, collected in 1903, include several long narratives and some popular light verse, such as 'Darius Green and His Flying Machine.' His autobiography, *My Own Story*, was published in 1903.

True Relation, A, of . . . Occurrences . . . in Virginia, account of the Jamestown settlement by John Smith (q.v.).

True Travels, The, autobiographical narrative by John Smith (q.v.).

TRUMBULL, Benjamin (1735–1820), Connecticut Congregational clergyman, wrote *A Complete History of Connecticut* (1797, revised 1818), which was an accurate but heavy work. Only one volume of his projected *General History of the United States* was published (1810), although *A Compendium of the Indian Wars in New England* was edited and published (1924) from materials he had collected.

TRUMBULL, John (1750–1831), member of the Connecticut Wits (q.v.), like the rest of this group graduated from Yale (1767), where with Timothy Dwight and David Humphreys he attempted to liberalize the course of studies and create an interest in modern literature. His valedictory oration, *An Essay on the Uses and Advantages of the Fine Arts*, attacked subservience to neoclassical rules, but its concluding verses, 'Prospect of the Future Glory of America,' were, ironically, perfect examples of neoclassical versification. After receiving his master's degree (1770), and while tutoring at the college, he wrote *The Progress of Dulness* (q.v.,1772–3), a lengthy satire on the errors of college education, as well as a series of Addisonian essays and some graceful verse. Removing to Boston (1773), he studied law in the office of John Adams, and was stimulated by him to interest himself in the patriotic movement and write his bombastic poem, *An Elegy on the Times* (1774). While practicing law at New Haven and Hartford (1774–1825), he was drawn more inti-

mately into the poetic circle of the Wits and into political activities. Although he aligned himself on the side of the revolutionaries, he was consistently cautious and moderate, as he indicated in his literary contributions to the cause. He was always a thinker rather than a man of action. At the instigation of 'some leading members of the first Congress,' he wrote the mock epic, *M'Fingal* (q.v.,1782), satirizing the stupidity and cowardice of the British. After the Revolution, he became more conservative, and, like the other Wits, was an ardent Federalist, co-operating with them in *The Anarchiad* and *The Echo* (qq.v.), satirizing democratic liberalism. Although he remained active in legal matters, he outlived his literary vitality, and did no more than contribute to these collections during the last half century of his life. He was a first cousin of Jonathan Trumbull.

TRUMBULL, JONATHAN (1710–85), chief justice of the Connecticut supreme court (1766–9) and governor of the colony and later the state (1769–84), was the only colonial governor to champion the Revolutionary cause. He was an adviser of Washington and has been considered the original of the name 'Brother Jonathan' (q.v.).

JOHN TRUMBULL (1756–1843), his son, manifested an early interest in painting, which was interrupted by his service in the Revolutionary War. He went to France and England to study painting (1780), but in London was imprisoned for republican sympathies, and deported. He returned to study under Benjamin West (1784), under whose influence he painted the *Battle of Bunker Hill* and *Death of General Montgomery*. While visiting Jefferson in Paris (1787), he sketched numerous French officers of the Revolution in order to incorporate them in his canvas, *The Surrender of Lord Cornwallis*. He later employed the same technique in the U.S., making miniatures of American officers and statesmen for his *Signing of the Declaration of Independence*. He was trained in the grand style, with an admiration for large mythological and historical canvases, and only reluctantly turned to protraiture, which he considered an inferior though more lucrative art form. Paradoxically, the large paintings for the rotunda of the National Capitol, the *Signing of the Declaration of Independence*, *Surrender of Cornwallis*, *Surrender of General Burgoyne*, and *Washington Resigning His Commission*, are weak in composition and color, showing his powers declining from his earlier fine portraits. *The Autobiographical Reminiscences and Letters of John Trumbull* were published in 1841.

Trumps, novel by G.W.Curtis (q.v.).

Tubal Cain, novel by Hergesheimer (q.v.).

TUCKER, GEORGE (1775–1861), born in Bermuda and reared in Virginia, was a member of Congress (1819–25), where his views attracted the attention of Jefferson, who appointed him professor of moral philosophy at the University of Virginia (1825–45). He had already written a volume of essays, *Letters from Virginia* (1816), satirizing the decadent gentility of the Old Dominion, and two novels, *The Valley of Shenandoah* (1824) and *A Voyage to the Moon* (1827), the latter being a Swiftian satire of human follies, but during his later years his literary reputation was based on his histories and writings on political economy. His *Progress of the United States . . .* (1843; appendix, 1855) shows the influence of Malthus, and his *History of the United States* (4 vols., 1856–7) is a conservative Virginian's championing of the theory of state rights. His *Life of Thomas Jefferson* (2 vols., 1837), although laudatory, is considered the most satisfactory and impartial of the early biographies. His works on political economy, *The Law of Wages, Profits, and Rent Investigated* (1837), *The Theory of Money and Banks Investigated* (1839), and *Political Economy for the People* (1859), follow the theories of Adam Smith.

TUCKER, ST.GEORGE (1752–1827), Virginia jurist, in addition to his legal writings was the author of a *Dissertation on Slavery* (1796), suggesting a plan for gradual emancipation; *Liberty, a Poem on the Independence of America* (1788); and *The Probationary Odes of Jonathan Pindar* (1796), a volume of political satires. He was the stepfather of John Randolph.

NATHANIEL BEVERLEY TUCKER (1784–1851), his son, was a professor of law at William and Mary, and author of several works on political economy and law, which show him to be a highly reactionary Virginia aristocrat. He is best known for his novels; *George Balcombe* (1836), a realistic picture of contemporary Virginia and Missouri; and *The Partisan Leader* (q.v.,

1836), an intensely sectional romance telling of events supposed to take place in 1849, which was intended to sway the election of 1836 against Van Buren, but whose political philosophy made it more than a campaign document, and caused it to be reissued as propaganda during the Civil War. He is sometimes known as Beverley Tucker, and he used the pseudonym Edward William Sidney.

TUCKERMAN, Frederick Goddard (1821–73), Massachusetts poet, lived as a recluse and was generally unknown because during his lifetime he published only one volume of *Poems* (1860). He was discovered by Witter Bynner, who republished the best of this volume, together with three hitherto unpublished sonnet sequences as *Sonnets* (1931). In a highly eulogistic introduction Bynner calls these works among 'the noblest in the language' for their expression of grief, their imagery, and radical use of a conventional form.

TUCKERMAN, Henry Theodore (1813–71), Boston-born author, after 1845 lived in New York, where he wrote serenely sympathetic books of criticism, such as *Thoughts on the Poets* (1846), *Characteristics of Literature* (1849,1851); leisurely essays, *The Optimist* (1850) and *The Criterion* (1866); sketches in the vein of Irving, *Leaves from the Diary of a Dreamer* (1853); biographies, including one of J.P. Kennedy (1871); a scholarly work on travel in the U.S., *America and Her Commentators* (1864); a volume of sentimental *Poems* (1851); and romantic travel books.

TUDOR, William (1779–1830), Boston merchant, was a founder of the Anthology Club, and contributed to its magazine as well as to *The North American Review*, of which he was the first editor. His *Miscellanies* (1821) range from the serious 'Secret Causes of the American and French Revolutions' to the playful satires on scholarly papers, in his essays 'On Cranberry Sauce' and 'A Dissertation upon Things in General.' His other books were *Letters on the Eastern States* (1820), social criticism; *Life of James Otis* (1823); and a novel, *Gebel Teir* (1829).

Tuesday Club of Annapolis (1745–56), founded by Dr.Alexander Hamilton and Jonas Green, editor of *The Maryland Gazette*. It was a typical colonial coffee-house gathering of literary figures and other intellectuals. Hamilton's records of the meetings were written under the pseudonym Loquacious Scribble,Esq.

Tuesday Club of Philadelphia (1800–?), founded by Joseph Dennie and the group that supported his *Port-Folio* (q.v.). In the tradition of the English clubs, its sympathies were Federalist, aristocratic, and intensely pro-English. Among the members were Joseph Hopkinson and Nicholas Biddle. Little is known of the club after 1804.

TULLEY, John (*c.*1639–1701), born in England, lived most of his life in Connecticut, where from 1687 until his death he issued annual almanacs, significant as the first continuous series in this form. The edition of 1687 is said to have begun the tradition of the humorous almanac in America.

TULLY, Jim (1891–), born in Ohio of poor Irish parents, was reared in an orphan asylum, and before becoming a writer was successively a farm laborer, a tramp, a circus roustabout, and a professional pugilist. His books, written in a forthright style, include: *Emmett Lawler* (1922), a semi-autobiographical novel; *Beggars of Life* (1924), an autobiographical account of his youthful adventures, which was dramatized by Maxwell Anderson as *Outside Looking In* (1928); *Jarnegan* (1925), an episodic novel of the lusty life of a man who is jailed for killing his opponent in a fist fight, and after his release uses his energies more constructively, eventually becoming a Hollywood director; *Circus Parade* (1927), sketches based on his travels with a small circus; *Shanty Irish* (1928), autobiographical tales of a poor Irish family; *Shadows of Men* (1929), sketches of jailmates encountered during imprisonments for vagrancy; *Laughter in Hell* (1932), the story of an Irishman who murders his wife and her lover; and *A Hollywood Decameron* (1937).

TULLY, Richard Walton (1877–), California playwright whose works include: *Rose of the Rancho* (1906), written with Belasco; *The Bird of Paradise* (1912), a play about an American's love for a Hawaiian girl, adapted by H.E.Rogers and Rudolf Friml as a musical comedy (1930); *Omar the Tentmaker* (1914); and *The Flame* (1916), contrasting American businessmen in Mexico with the native people.

TUNNEY, Gene (James Joseph Tunney) (1898–), heavyweight boxing cham-

pion of the world from his defeat of Dempsey (1926) until his retirement (1928). He wrote his autobiography, *A Man Must Fight* (1932).

TURELL, JANE [COLMAN] (1708–35), daughter of Benjamin Colman, and wife of another Congregational minister, Ebenezer Turell (1702–78), was the author of some pious poems, published in *Reliquiae Turellae* (1735), reprinted as *Memoirs . . .* (1741). The latter also includes her verses on Waller and Richard Blackmore, and all are more significant as an example of contemporary taste than as poetry.

Turkey in the Straw, originally called 'Zip Coon,' frontier folk song of the Old Southwest, based on the tune of a rough jig dance, 'Natchez under the Hill.' The song dates back at least to 1815, but its wide popularity began during the 1830's, when it was first used in minstrel shows. Its best-known version is the modern arrangement by David Guion.

Turn of the Screw, The, story by Henry James (q.v.) published in 1898.

This mysterious tale of ghastly apparitions is recounted from the diary of a neurotic spinster who in her youth was a governess on a lonely British estate. Her unusually beautiful and precocious pupils, the children Miles and Flora, are subjected, she believes, respectively to the evil influence of two ghosts: Peter Quint, once steward of the estate, and Miss Jessel, their former governess. The frustrated new governess, infatuated by the children and particularly by the boy, pits her will against that of the ghosts, for these specters, she believes, morally dominate the children and have an evil relationship with them. She justifies her belief by winning the housekeeper to her cause, although this kindly, simple woman never sees the apparitions. Fearing to report the untoward events to her employer, the children's uncle, for whom she entertains an unrealized and thwarted passion, the governess attempts to exorcise the malicious influences by directly challenging Flora, whose resultant fear is so great she cannot again face the governess. A similarly impassioned attack on Miles results in his death in the arms of the governess, who thought she was saving his life from a demon.

TURNER, FREDERICK JACKSON (1861–1932), born in Wisconsin, taught history at the state university (1889–1910) and at Harvard (1910–24), and was later associated in his research with the Huntington Library. Before the American Historical Association (Chicago, July, 1893), he read a paper on 'The Significance of the Frontier in American History' (printed 1894), which inaugurated a new interpretation of the West. He wrote little, and when he published *The Frontier in American History* (1920) there were only a dozen short essays that he cared to reprint along with his original paper on the frontier. *The Significance of Sections in American History* (1932) was a posthumous recipient of the Pulitzer Prize. In the *Rise of the New West* (1906), a volume in A.B.Hart's co-operative work *The American Nation,* he disclosed the sectional unities of the period 1819–29. At his death he left incomplete a continuation of this work, published as *The United States, 1830–1850: The Nation and Its Sections* (1935). (For a brief survey of his theory, see *Frontier.*)

TURNER, NAT, see *Southampton Insurrection.*

Tuscarora Indians, tribe related to the Iroquois, which was driven by white settlers from its original home in North Carolina to take refuge with the Iroquois Confederacy, which then became the Six Nations. Because they remained friendly with the Americans in the Revolution, they were attacked and dispersed by the British. The Tuscarora chief, Wyandotté, is the central figure in Cooper's novel of that name.

Tuskegee Normal and Industrial Institute, coeducational, privately controlled institute and college for Negroes, founded (1881) by Booker T. Washington. It emphasizes industrial training, with a close correlation between the classroom and actual practice in shop and field. The Institute owns more than 2,000 acres of land in Alabama, and has an endowment of over $7,000,000.

Tutt, MR., character in the short stories of Arthur Train (q.v.).

TWACHTMAN, JOHN HENRY (1853–1902), Ohio painter, after employing the slashing brush work and dark-brown toned method of the Munich school, during a residence in Paris (1883) came under the influence of the Impressionist style of painting, with small dabs of pure color juxtaposed on the canvas to give the vi-

bration of light. He taught this method to the younger generation of American painters, on whom he exerted a great influence. His own quiet, well-composed landscapes, in which the atmospheric light rarely destroys the substance of the forms, are based on delicate colors.

TWAIN, MARK, pseudonym of Clemens (q.v.). The phrase, meaning 'two fathoms deep,' was employed in making soundings on the Mississippi river boats, and had been used previously by an older pilot, Isaiah Sellers (*c.*1802–64), to sign the pompous articles he contributed to the *New Orleans Picayune*. Clemens burlesqued these in the New Orleans *True Delta*, and the parody so affected Sellers that he never published again. Clemens may have adopted the name as a form of reparation, and in *Life on the Mississippi* he later paid tribute to Sellers as 'the patriarch of the craft' of steamboat piloting.

'Twas the Night Before Christmas, poem by C.C.Moore (q.v.).

Tweed Ring, corrupt Democratic political group in New York City, led by 'Boss' William Marcy Tweed (1823–78), who headed Tammany Hall (q.v.) when this organization controlled the city's expenses from the early 1860's to 1871. The campaign of *The New York Times* and the cartoons of Thomas Nast in *Harper's Weekly* were largely instrumental in ending the Ring's activities.

Twelve Men, sketches by Dreiser (q.v.).

Twentieth Century Magazine (1909–13), Boston monthly journal, prominent in the muckraking movement. Its contributors included Hamlin Garland and Edwin Markham.

Twice-Told Tales, 39 short stories by Hawthorne (q.v.) first printed in *The Token*, collected (1837) and enlarged (1842). Among the tales, many of them marked by the author's interest in the supernatural, are sketches of New England history, like 'The Grey Champion,' 'Endicott and the Red Cross,' 'The Maypole of Merrymount' (qq.v.), and the four 'Legends of the Province House,' which include 'Howe's Masquerade' and 'Lady Eleanore's Mantle' (qq.v.); stories of incident, like 'Mr.Higginbotham's Catastrophe' (q.v.); and moral allegories, like 'The Minister's Black Veil,' 'Dr.Heidegger's Experiment,' and 'The Ambitious Guest' (qq.v.).

TWICHELL, JOSEPH HOPKINS (1838–1918), Congregational clergyman of Hartford, Connecticut, was an intimate member of the circle which included Mrs. Stowe, C.D.Warner, and Clemens. He suggested that Clemens write *Life on the Mississippi*, and accompanied him on the European tour described in *A Tramp Abroad*, in which Twichell figures as 'Harris.' His own writings include a biography of John Winthrop (1891), whose letters he edited.

Two Admirals, The, romance by Cooper (q.v.).

Two Look at Two, blank verse poem by Robert Frost (q.v.) published in *New Hampshire* (1923).

A pair of lovers climb a wooded mountain, and at the approach of night prepare to turn back, but are halted on seeing a doe staring at them across a fence. The spell broken when she walks calmly off, they are about to go on again, but are stopped a second time by the appearance in the same place of 'an antlered buck of lusty nostril' who 'viewed them quizzically with jerks of head.' After a moment he too disappears, but the lovers stand spell-bound,

> As if the earth in one unlooked-for favor
> Had made them certain earth returned their love.

Two Magics, The, tales of the supernatural by Henry James (q.v.).

Two Rivulets, discursive work by Whitman (q.v.), the second volume of a collected edition (1876) whose first volume was *Leaves of Grass*. The title suggests not only the blending of prose and verse, but also the combination of thoughts on American politics and literature with realistic and imaginative speculations on death and immortality. *Two Rivulets* incorporated *Democratic Vistas* (q.v.,1871) and *Memoranda During the War* (1875) as prose, and its poetry included the previous pamphlets, *As a Strong Bird on Pinions Free* (1872), *Passage to India* (q.v., 1871), a group of 'Centennial Songs,' and other fugitive writings.

Two Years Before the Mast, personal narrative of life at sea, by R.H.Dana,Jr. (q.v.), published anonymously in 1840. It is written in the form of an extended diary, based on a journal that the author kept during his voyage, for the purpose of presenting 'the life of a common sailor at

sea as it really is,—the light and the dark together.' A concluding chapter furnishes a general statement of conditions prevailing on merchant ships at the time, and suggests measures to diminish the hardships of the sailors' daily lives.

The narrative begins with Dana's abrupt change from the life of a Harvard undergraduate to that of an ordinary seaman, sailing on the brig *Pilgrim* (August 14, 1834) for a voyage from Boston around Cape Horn to California. In a clear-sighted, hard-headed, and self-controlled manner, he describes the 150-day voyage, with all its petty details and routine, as well as the sailors' off-hour occupations and conversation. One of the most dramatic events is the flogging of two of his shipmates, and his vow 'to redress the grievances and sufferings of that class of beings with whom my lot had so long been cast.' During his residence on the California coast (Jan. 13, 1835–May 8, 1836), he describes with similar detailed realism his life on shore, curing hides and gathering them at such ports as Santa Barbara, San Diego, Monterey, and San Francisco. There are also character portraits of such persons as Hope, a Kanaka 'noble savage' who blindly adored Dana; his young shipmate, self-educated Tom Harris; the older high-tempered sailor, John the Swede; and the cruel Captain Thompson, who could gladly knock a sailor down with a handspike. Although designed to be purely objective, the narrative also reveals the author as torn between antagonistic points of view, and during the return trip on the ship *Alert* (May 8–September 20, 1836) and the stormy rounding of Cape Horn, tells of his intense desire to return to his original *milieu*, and his eventual discovery that when the hardships and the realities of the voyage were finished, it assumed the character of a symbol of liberation, so that 'the emotions which I had so long anticipated feeling I did not find, and in their place was a state of very nearly entire apathy.' To later editions was added a chapter, 'Twenty-Four Years After,' describing Dana's nostalgic return to California in 1859.

TYLER, John (1790–1862), 10th President of the U.S. (1841–5), was born in Virginia, graduated from William and Mary (1807), and was admitted to the bar (1809). After serving in the state legislature, he was a congressman (1816–21), governor of Virginia (1825–7), and U.S. senator (1827–36), continuing to support the Jeffersonian policies of state rights and strict construction of the Constitution. An opponent of Jackson, he broke with the Democratic party over the question of nullification, resigned from the Senate, and became a leader of the Whig party. As Harrison's running mate on the 'Tippecanoe and Tyler too' ticket, he was elected Vice President (1840). When Harrison died, a month after his inauguration, Tyler succeeded to the presidency. He soon showed that his only alliance with his party was a mutual opposition to Jacksonian policies, and his lack of sympathy with the Whigs, as represented by Clay, led all but one of his cabinet to resign within six months. Without party support during his administration, he could accomplish little in domestic affairs, although he reorganized the navy, annexed Texas, and concluded the Webster-Ashburton treaty, settling the international boundary between Maine and Canada. In later politics he was important only for presiding over the unsuccessful Peace Conference at Washington (1861).

TYLER, Moses Coit (1835–1900), professor of English at the University of Michigan (1867–81) and of American History at Cornell (1881–1900), was a pioneer in the scholarly study of American literature. His *History of American Literature* 1607–1765 (2 vols.,1878), and *The Literary History of the American Revolution*, 1763–1783 (2 vols.,1897), are still important works in their field. His other works include a life of Patrick Henry (1887) and *Three Men of Letters* (1895), a study of Timothy Dwight, and Joel Barlow, and Berkeley's American visit. His *Letters and Diaries* were published in 1911.

TYLER, Royall (1757–1826), born in Boston, after graduation from Harvard (1776) practiced law, and helped to suppress Shays's Rebellion. While on a temporary visit to New York, he saw a production of *The School for Scandal*, and within three weeks wrote *The Contrast* (q.v.,1787), a social comedy contrasting homespun American dignity with the alien foppery of Britishers, the second play and the first comedy to be written by an American. Within a month of its production, he followed it with a two-act comic opera, *May Day in Town*; *or*, *New York in an Uproar*, which has not sur-

vived and is known only to have been a satire on contemporary manners, concerned with the confusion caused by spring housecleaning and moving. Another comedy, *The Georgia Spec; or, Land in the Moon* (1797), is also lost, but is known to have ridiculed the Yazoo Frauds. In addition, Tyler wrote four unproduced and unpublished plays: *The Island of Barrataria*, a farce based on *Don Quixote; The Origin of the Feast of Purim, Joseph and His Brethren*, and *The Judgment of Solomon*, blank verse Biblical dramas. Having moved from Boston to Vermont (1790) to continue his legal career, eventually becoming chief justice of the state supreme court (1807–13) and professor of jurisprudence at the University of Vermont (1811–14), he entered into a close friendship with Joseph Dennie. Using the pseudonym Spondee, while Dennie employed that of Colon, he collaborated in writing satirical verse and light essays, frequently showing a Federalist bias, which they contributed to the *Farmer's Weekly Museum* and other journals. In addition to a long poem, *The Chestnut Tree*, written in 1824 and first published in 1931, which depicts contemporary rural life but prophesies the rise of industrialism, Tyler is known for his picaresque novel, *The Algerine Captive* (q.v.,1797) and his *Yankey in London* (1809), a series of letters supposedly written by an American resident in England.

Typee, fictional narrative by Melville (q.v.) published in 1846. It is based on the author's experiences when he deserted the whaler *Acushnet* (1842).

Tom and Toby desert their whaling ship because the poor food, hard work, and tyranny of the captain have become unbearable. They take refuge with the peaceful Typee savages on a Marquesan island. When Toby is captured by the cannibalistic Happar tribe, Tom is left alone with the Typees. He makes sharp observation of the social, religious, and moral standards of the natives. Tom enjoys the idyllic life with Fayaway, a native belle, and is aroused from his pleasant captivity of three months only when the tribe insists he be tattooed and when he fears the cannibals may turn their attention from eating Happars to eating white men. He finally escapes aboard an Australian trading vessel, and a sequel tells the story of Toby's safe return.

U

U.S.A., trilogy by Dos Passos (q.v.), which includes the novels *The 42nd Parallel, 1919*, and *The Big Money* (qq.v.).

Ulalume, poem by Poe (q.v.), published in the *American Whig Review* (1847). This lyrical ballad, expressing the poet's grief over the death of his beloved 'Ulalume,' is composed of nine stanzas of approximately ten lines each, the metre being anapaestic trimeter.

ULLOA, ANTONIO DE (1716–95), Spanish naval officer, scientist, and government official, was governor of Louisiana (1766–8). He is best known for his books translated as *A Voyage to South America* (1758), *Secret Information Concerning America* (1826), and *Secret Expedition to Peru . . .* (1851), the last written with Jorge Juan y Santacilia.

Ulster County Gazette (1798–1822), New York Federalist newspaper, widely known for the issue (Jan. 4, 1800) that contained an account of Washington's funeral and the Congressional proceedings upon his death. No original copy of this issue is known, but there have been 21 spurious reprints, often sold at high prices as rare antiques.

UNCAS (*fl.*1626–83), chief of the Mohegan Indians (q.v.), sided with the British in the Pequot War (1637), figures as the titular character in *The Last of the Mohicans* (q.v.), and is also a character in several other works by Cooper. The historical Uncas was tolerated by the English colonists of Massachusetts and Connecticut because he made war on Miantonomo, the Indian protector of Roger Williams, who was anathema to their religious hegemony, but was later considered an 'underminer of praying to God' because he attacked Massasoit, the friend of the Massachusetts colony. He is the subject of a biography by W.L.Stone, and has only his name in common with Cooper's hero.

Uncle Lisha's Shop, stories by R.E. Robinson (q.v.).

Uncle Ned, minstrel show song by Stephen Foster (q.v.).

Uncle Remus: His Songs and His Sayings, verses and tales based on Negro folklore, by Joel Chandler Harris (q.v.), published in periodicals and collected in 1881. Whimsical, lovable old Uncle Remus, once a slave, is now a trusted family servant who entertains the young son of his employers with traditional fables of his race. Included in the collection are the famous 'Tar-Baby' stories, and others in which the chief figures are such animals endowed with human qualities as Brer Rabbit, Brer Fox, and Brer Wolf. The dialect is authentic and the author gathered his materials at first hand among Southern Negroes. He published many other 'Uncle Remus' collections.

Uncle Sam, nickname for the people or government of the U.S. The first recorded use occurs in the *Troy Post* (Sept. 7, 1813), where it is said to be derived from the letters U.S. on government wagons. Thereafter it appears frequently in upstate New York newspapers, and seems to have been derisively used by those who opposed the War of 1812. Other theories concerning its origin may be found, but the one above seems the most acceptable. The first appearance of the name in book form was in *The Adventures of Uncle Sam* (1816) by 'Frederick Augustus Fidfaddy,Esq.' The first foreigner to use the term was W. Faux, who employed it frequently in his *Memorable Days in America* (1823). By 1860 the term had passed into the dictionary without any opprobrious connotation. The costume of Uncle Sam derives from that of Jack Downing (q.v.), whom he replaced as the national symbol in cartoons. The clown Dan Rice performed in such a costume.

Uncle Tom's Cabin, or, Life among the Lowly, novel by Mrs.Stowe (q.v.), published serially in *The National Era* (1851–2) and in book form in 1852. During its first year after publication, more than 300,000 copies were sold, and it became the most popular American novel, having a powerful antislavery influence. Attacks upon its truth caused Mrs.Stowe to publish *A Key to Uncle Tom's Cabin* (1853), defending the accuracy of its facts. The story was frequently translated and republished, and was successfully dramatized by George Aiken (q.v.,1852), without Mrs.Stowe's consent.

Uncle Tom is a noble, high-minded, devoutly Christian Negro slave in the kindly Shelby family. The Shelbys, in financial

difficulties, are about to sell their slaves, and the mulatto girl Eliza and her child escape across the frozen Ohio River, but Tom remains because he does not wish to embarrass his master. Separated from his wife and children, he is sold to a slave trader, and young George Shelby promises some day to redeem him. On the voyage down the Mississippi, Tom saves the life of little Eva, the daughter of St.Clare, who in gratitude purchases him as a servant in his New Orleans home. Tom is happy for two years with the easy-going St.Clare, the angelic little Eva, and her mischievous companion, the Negro child Topsy, who, when questioned about her family, says: 'Never was born, never had no father, nor mother, nor nothin' . . . I 'spect I growed.' Eva's delicate constitution fails, and she soon dies. St.Clare is accidentally killed, and Tom is sold at auction to Simon Legree, a brutal, drunken, degenerate planter. The slave's courage and religious fortitude impress his criminal master, who becomes desperately fear-ridden. Cassie and Emmaline, two female slaves, take advantage of his state of mind and pretend to escape. When Tom refuses to reveal their hiding-place, Legree is furious, and has him flogged to death. George Shelby arrives as Tom is dying, and vows to devote himself to the cause of abolition.

Undefeated, The, story by Hemingway, published in *Men Without Women* (q.v.).

Under the Gaslight, melodrama by Augustin Daly (q.v.).

Underground Railroad, name applied to the system, generally irregular and informal, by which fugitive slaves were conducted to freedom in the North or in Canada. Abolitionists and other opponents of slavery offered their homes as 'stations' in the Railroad, provided food and assistance for the fugitives, and otherwise defied the stringent laws prohibiting such activities. John Brown was one of the most prominent workers for the Railroad, which originated in the late 1820's, and by the outbreak of the Civil War the system was in wide use throughout the East and Middle West.

UNDERHILL, JOHN (*c.*1597–1672), Massachusetts military leader in the war against the Pequot Indians, of which he published an account in *Newes from America* (1638). Because he was an Antinomian he was banished and excommunicated, but later he was allowed to return and helped the English to gain control of New Amsterdam. He is the subject of a poem by Whittier.

UNDERWOOD, FRANCIS HENRY (1825–94), Massachusetts author and lawyer, was one of the founders of the *Atlantic Monthly*, which he helped to edit (1857–9). Of his several novels the best known is *Quabbin: The Story of a Small Town* (1893).

Union Colony, see *Meeker*.

Union Magazine, The (1847–52), New York monthly, edited for the first year by Mrs.Kirkland, who contributed Western stories, and obtained reviews, essays, sketches, and sentimental, moral, and didactic tales from Simms, C.F.Hoffman, Mrs.Sigourney, T.S.Arthur, and Park Benjamin. Poe contributed 'An Enigma' and 'To Helen.' The magazine was purchased by John Sartain (1848), who added his name to the title. Contributors under his editorship included Longfellow, Lowell, N.P.Willis, Boker, Stoddard, T.D. English, Griswold, J.G.Saxe, and T.B. Read. At this time Poe contributed 'The Bells,' and 'The Poetic Principle,' and Thoreau contributed the first part of *The Maine Woods*.

Unitarianism, religious doctrine of the single personality of God, as contrasted with the Trinitarian concept. The name does not fully indicate the significance of the Unitarian movement, which lies in its liberal rationalism and its opposition to the doctrines of inherited guilt, loss of free will, eternal punishment, and vicarious atonement. Modern Unitarianism traces its origin to the Reformation, and its history in England and America began in the 17th and 18th centuries. More a cast of thought than a systematic theology, the movement in America was at first a reaction against the confining orthodoxy of New England Calvinism, and was to a large extent the result of liberal scientific thought. It was first evidenced in the rationalistic teachings of such divines as Jonathan Mayhew (1720–66), but the first congregation to be officially severed from the Congregational Church was that of King's Chapel, Boston, which adopted a new liturgy eliminating the doctrine of the Trinity (1785). Impetus was added by the English Unitarian, Joseph Priestley, who emigrated to organize Unitarian churches

in the U.S. (1794). Henry Ware was instrumental in promulgating Unitarian ideas as the first nonorthodox professor of divinity at Harvard (1805–40) and as founder of the college's Divinity School (1819). William Ellery Channing, whose sermon at the ordination of Jared Sparks (1819) indicated a clear break with orthodox Calvinism, was looked upon as the great apostle of Unitarianism. The thought at this time was an attempt to combine rationalism with a modified supernaturalism, and was devoted to practical Christianity and humanitarianism. From about 1835, it was strongly influenced by German idealistic philosophy, in both its mystical and rationalistic aspects, and Theodore Parker, George Ripley, and J.F.Clarke were its great exponents. As a stimulating force in the intellectual life of New England, it did much to prepare the way for Transcendentalism, whose leaders included former Unitarian ministers. Since 1885 Unitarianism has been increasingly rational, employing independent judgment, common sense, and the scientific method. It now has some 59,000 members.

United Brethren, see *Moravian Church.*

United Colonies of New England, see *New England Confederation.*

United Empire Loyalists, see *Loyalists.*

United Labor Party, political organization of New York City labor unions, which existed from 1886 to 1888. Its chief plank was the single-tax plan of Henry George (q.v.), one of its promoters, who was its candidate for mayor (1886), receiving more votes than the Republican nominee, Theodore Roosevelt, but being defeated by the Democratic candidate. The party also advocated government ownership of telegraphs and railroads, prohibition of child labor and convict labor, reduction of working hours, and legal, judicial, and electoral reforms. It merged with the Democrats (1888).

United Society of Believers, see *Shakers.*

United States Bank, see *Bank of the United States.*

United States Gazette, see *Gazette of the United States.*

United States Literary Gazette (1824–6), Boston semi-monthly periodical of literary news and criticism. Edited by Theophilus Parsons, it contained writing by Bryant, R.H.Dana,Sr., Longfellow, and J.G.Percival. In 1826 it merged with *The New York Review and Athenæum Magazine* (q.v.), and for one year, under the editorship of Charles Folsom and Bryant, appeared as the *United States Review and Literary Gazette.*

United States Magazine, The (Jan.–Dec. 1779), Philadelphia monthly periodical, edited by H.H.Brackenridge. Contributions included a satire on James Rivington by John Witherspoon, Freneau's parody of Psalm 137, and other witty and sometimes scurrilous works.

United States Magazine and Democratic Review (1837–49), monthly literary and political journal founded at Washington. Among its contributors were Whittier ('Songs of Labor'), Hawthorne ('Legends of the Province House'), Poe ('Marginalia'), Whitman (short stories), Bryant, Paulding, Simms, C.P.Cranch, and Epes Sargent. It was moved to New York (1841) and the following year absorbed Brownson's *Boston Quarterly Review,* becoming further devoted to politics and serving as the mouthpiece of exuberant nationalism. In an article (1845), John L. O'Sullivan, the founder and editor, coined the jingoistic phrase, 'manifest destiny.' The magazine merged with the *United States Review* (1846) and thereafter declined.

Another *United States Magazine* (1854–58) was edited at New York by Seba Smith.

United States Military Academy, see *West Point.*

United States Naval Academy, see *Annapolis.*

Universal Asylum, see *Columbian Magazine.*

Universal Instructor, see *Keimer.*

Universalism, religious belief in universal salvation or the eternal progress of all souls. Since its followers consider that truth and righteousness are the controlling powers of the universe, good inevitably triumphs over evil and all mankind is brought into harmony with God. This belief has existed in one form or another since the earliest days of the Christian church, but as an organized Protestant denomination it is primarily centered in the U.S., where it owes its origin to John

Murray (q.v.), an English minister who came to this country in 1770. The church now has more than 55,000 members. Early forerunners of Universalism include Samuel Gorton, the younger Henry Vane, Charles Chauncey, and Jonathan Mayhew (qq.v.), and later important members included Adin and Hosea Ballou (qq.v.).

Unleavened Bread, novel by Robert Grant (q.v.), published in 1900 and dramatized by Grant and Leo Ditrichstein (1901).

Selma White, a ruthless egoist who believes that her actions are motivated by an emancipated idealism, marries Lewis Babcock, an enterprising but uncultured merchant of varnish, whose complacency, together with the limitations of life in the small Western town of Benham, soon cause her to be dissatisfied. When she discovers that he has been unfaithful, she divorces him and goes to New York to become a writer. There she marries an architect, Wilbur Littleton, but again finds her social ambitions unfulfilled, and urges her husband to such effort that he dies of overwork. Selma returns to Benham and marries James Lyons, a member of Congress, who she determines shall be a senator. Through a 'deal' with a large corporation, he is made governor in return for his promise to sign a bill favorable to the interests of the corporation. Then he has an opportunity to become a senator, providing that he does not sign the bill. Selma, who has no conception of duty except to her own ambition, advises him to break his promise, and he vetoes the bill, making possible their joint entry into Washington society, where Selma feels that she will finally achieve the position she deserves.

Unpopular Review, The (1914–21), quarterly journal which analyzed contemporary social, economic, philosophic, and æsthetic problems from an avowedly conservative point of view. Its contributors included P.E.More, D.S.Jordan, Brander Matthews, Dorothy Canfield Fisher, Mary Austin, and Amy Lowell. The name was changed to *The Unpartisan Review* (1919).

UNTERMEYER, Louis (1885–), New York poet, whose writings may be classified in four categories: his original poetry, distinguished by a luxurious romantic quality, such as the collections, *Roast Leviathan* (1923) and *Burning Bush* (1928); paraphrases of Horace as various poets would have rendered his subjects, and similar witty imitations of modern poets, in *Collected Parodies* (1926); translations, such as those which form the first volume of his biography, *Heinrich Heine: Paradox and Poet* (1937); and critical anthologies, such as *Modern American Poetry* (1919, frequently revised). He is also known for his *Moses* (1928), a free handling in prose of the Biblical narrative; *The Donkey of God* (1932), a children's travel book about Italy; and *Play in Poetry* (1938), a critical study. *From Another World* (1939) is his autobiography.

Jean Starr Untermeyer (1886–), his former wife, also a poet, is known for *Steep Ascent* (1927) and other volumes, marked by a simple austerity that has been termed 'classically Hebraic.' Her poems have been collected in *Love and Need* (1940).

UPDIKE, Daniel Berkeley (1860–), Massachusetts printer, whose Merrymount Press was founded in 1893. Although he began by introducing the heavily ornamented style of William Morris, all of his later work is distinguished by a simple use of type without embellishment, depending for effect upon harmonious proportion. His writings include *Printing Types: Their History, Forms, and Use* (2 vols.,1922) and *In the Day's Work* (1924), essays on typography.

UPHAM, Charles Wentworth (1802–75), Unitarian minister at Salem, Massachusetts, best known for his scholarly investigations, *Salem Witchcraft* (1867) and *Salem Witchcraft and Cotton Mather* (1869). He was a brother-in-law of Oliver Wendell Holmes, and is said to be the prototype of Judge Pyncheon in *The House of the Seven Gables*.

UPJOHN, Richard (1802–78), English-born architect, came to New York (1829), where he constructed Trinity Church (1839–46), whose Gothic style was based upon scholarly knowledge of structural principles, and inaugurated a new period of the Gothic Revival, which, until the advent of complete eclecticism (*c.*1860), shared architectural supremacy with the Roman and Greek Revivals. He also designed the chapel of Bowdoin College and numerous residences, and was the founder and first president (1857–76) of the American Institute of Architects.

Upstream, autobiography by Ludwig Lewisohn (q.v.).

URBAN, JOSEPH (1872–1933), Austrian-born stage designer and architect, known for his florid, colorful stage sets for large productions, including those of the Metropolitan Opera and a series of the Ziegfeld Follies.

Usher, RODERICK, character in 'The Fall of the House of Usher' (q.v.).

Utrecht, PEACE OF, see *French and Indian Wars*.

V

V.V.'s Eyes, novel by H.S.Harrison (q.v.).

VACA, CABEZA DE, see *Núñez Cabeza de Vaca.*

Vagabondia, *Songs from,* poems by Richard Hovey and Bliss Carman (qq.v.).

Vaillant, FATHER, character in *Death Comes for the Archbishop* (q.v.).

VALENTINE, DAVID THOMAS (1801–69), New York antiquarian whose yearly *Manual of the Corporation of the City of New York* (1841–67), a conglomeration of historical and contemporary material, furnishes a primary source for the city's history.

Valentine, *Alias Jimmy,* see *Porter, W.S.*

VALENTINO, RUDOLPH (1895–1926), Italian-born motion picture actor, won great popularity and extravagant acclaim for his exotic and romantic roles.

VALLANDIGHAM, CLEMENT LAIRD (1820–71), Ohio lawyer, editor, and politician, served in Congress (1858–63). Favoring compromise between North and South, he stanchly supported the doctrine of state rights and attacked Lincoln and other Republicans, holding them to be responsible for the war. He was court-martialed for treasonable statements (1863) and banished by Lincoln to the Confederacy. He was in Canada (1863–4), and while there was nominated for the governorship of Ohio, nearly winning the election. On his return, he was the most prominent of the Copperheads (q.v.) and became president of the Knights of the Golden Circle. After the war he was unsuccessful in his political aspirations.

VALLEJO, MARIANO GUADALUPE (1808–90), California military leader, in the rebellion against Mexico (1836) helped create the so-called 'free state of California.' A quarrel with his nephew, the governor, led him to retire to his large holdings as a semi-independent chieftain, interrupted by a temporary imprisonment during the Bear Flag Republic (1846).

VALLENTINE, BENJAMIN BENNATON (1843–1926), English-born journalist, came to New York in 1871, where he was one of the founders of *Puck.* He wrote a series of satirical articles for this journal supposedly by a British fop, collected as *The Fitznoodle Papers* and *Fitznoodle in America.* He was also the author of some plays and a comic opera, *Fadette* (1892).

Valley Forge, site on the Schuylkill River, about 20 miles northwest of Philadephia. Washington's army wintered there in 1777–8, following the defeats at Brandywine and Germantown. The severe suffering and persistent patriotism of most of the soldiers have made the locality a national shrine.

Valley Forge, verse play by Maxwell Anderson (q.v.) produced and published in 1934.

The action takes place in January 1778, during the severe winter when the Revolutionary army had dwindled to a few thousand ill-clad and starving men, and when the lack of adequate supplies came near defeating the rebel cause. Washington and such loyal officers as Lafayette and Tench are shown to be opposed, in the camp at Valley Forge, by General Conway and others who intrigue for Washington's replacement by General Gates, as well as by spies for the commercially minded Continental Congress, which negotiates secretly for a surrender. The soldiers, loyal to their chief, are weakened and discouraged by virtual starvation and recent defeats, and the Philadelphia headquarters of Sir William Howe, the British commander, are contrasted as luxuriously elegant. Mary Philipse, whom Washington had loved in his youth, is allowed by Howe to cross the lines in order to see him once more, being given false information concerning the failure of the French alliance. This further discourages Washington, at the same time that he makes plain the change from his youth, and his all-absorbing devotion to the Revolutionary cause. The desperate need for food occasions the seeming desertion of a number of soldiers, who go to raid the British supplies of corn and accidentally make their camp in a barn that has been chosen as the scene of peace negotiations by Washington and Howe. The end of the war seems imminent, but news of the French alliance reaches Washington, and when he learns of the new stock of corn he determines to continue the desperate fight for liberty.

Valley of Decision, The, historical novel

by Edith Wharton (q.v.) published in 1902.

Odo Valsecca, a young Italian nobleman, preserves from his neglected childhood among the family servants an interest in the lower classes, which brings him into accord with the liberal tendencies of the 18th century. In spite of his attitude, when he becomes heir presumptive to the duchy of Pianura (Lombardy), he is befriended by the minister of state, Trescorre, the duchess's lover, who represents the conservative aristocratic and clerical classes. Odo continues to sympathize, however, with the intellectual group led by the philosopher Orazio Vivaldi, whose daughter Fulvia he loves. When Vivaldi is exiled because of his political beliefs, Odo rescues Fulvia from the convent in which she is imprisoned, and takes her to Switzerland. From there he is recalled by his cousin's death to become Duke of Pianura, but he intends to help his people to gain political liberty. Trescorre arranges a marriage between Odo and the widowed duchess, and when Fulvia returns to encourage his liberal program and become his mistress, she is killed by a shot intended for him. He passes through an illness and spiritual crisis, from which he emerges with his popular sympathies dissipated. He withdraws the constitution he has offered the people, and, when the influence of the French Revolution reaches Pianura, he is unable to agree with the advanced liberals who openly revolt under their leader Gamba. Odo is forced into exile, embittered and defeated.

Valley of the Moon, The, novel by Jack London (q.v.) published in 1913.

Saxon Brown, a young girl who works in a laundry at Oakland, California, falls in love with Billy Roberts, a teamster and ex-prizefighter, who is also attempting to maintain himself in the industrial society of the town. Shortly after their marriage, the teamsters' union goes on strike, and Billy, although an ardent advocate of the strike, becomes poverty-stricken. Saxon's baby is born dead when she witnesses a horrible fight between police and strikers, in which Billy's best friend is killed. Brutalized by his ensuing economic struggle, Billy is jailed for assault. Upon his release, he and Saxon leave the town and the unsuccessful strike, determining to find a homestead. At Carmel they are befriended by various Bohemians, on whose advice they go to the 'Valley of the Moon,' in Sonoma County, where they find peace and economic stability, and await the birth of another child.

Van Bibber and Others, stories by R.H. Davis (q.v.).

VAN BUREN, MARTIN (1782–1862), 8th President of the U.S. (1837–41), was admitted to the bar in 1803, and became active in the politics of his native New York state as a Jeffersonian Democrat, using his paper, the Albany *Argus*, as a party organ. In the Senate (1821–8), as a member of the Albany Regency (q.v.), he was more distinguished as a Democratic party leader than for his legislative abilities. After a brief term as governor of New York (1828–9), to hold the state for the Jacksonian Democrats he became Jackson's Secretary of State (1829–31), in which post he was the President's right-hand man and worked against Calhoun, whom he replaced as Vice President (1833). Through the influence of his predecessor, he was elected President (1836). He attempted to follow Jackson's policies, but his actions in the financial panic of 1837 made him unpopular, and his work for an independent Treasury alienated the conservative or bank Democrats, while the Whigs condemned him for refusing to resort to inflation and failing to further extensive relief measures. When war with Great Britain was threatened because of the Caroline Affair (q.v.), he adopted a conciliatory policy, alienating Northern voters. He likewise displeased Southerners when he opposed the annexation of Texas, believing it might mean war with Mexico. The rising Whig party defeated him in its 'Log Cabin and Hard Cider' campaign (1840), and he retired to New York, although continuing in politics and nearly winning the Democratic nomination for the presidency (1844). He became a prominent member of the Barnburners (q.v.), and in 1848 was the Free-Soil candidate for President. His son edited his unpublished writings as *An Inquiry into the Origin and Course of Political Parties of the United States* (1867).

VANCOUVER, GEORGE (1758?–98), English naval explorer who came to the Northwest coast of America in 1792 via Australia and the Hawaiian Islands. The record of his extended explorations during the next three years was published in his

Voyage of Discovery to the North Pacific Ocean, and Round the World (3 vols.,1798).

Vandemark's Folly, novel by Herbert Quick (q.v.) published in 1922. It is the first volume of a trilogy including *The Hawkeye* (1923) and *The Invisible Woman* (1924).

Jacobus Vandemark, a Dutch-American boy, runs away from his cruel stepfather to work as a driver on the Erie Canal. When he returns to his home, he finds that his beloved mother has died and that his stepfather has cheated him of his inheritance. As compensation, he is given an Iowa farm and a little money, with which he buys cows and attempts to make himself a home on the prairie, aided by his Norwegian neighbor, Magnus Thorkelson. He has little success as a farmer, but wins the respect of the community by rescuing Virginia Royall from her brother-in-law, Buckner Gowdy, a dandified Kentucky rake. He hopes to marry Virginia, whom he places in the home of Elder and Grandma Thorndyke, but determines to sacrifice his desires by gallantly offering to marry Rowena Fewkes, who has been seduced by Gowdy. Realizing that Vandemark does not love her, Rowena attempts suicide, but the problem is solved for both when Magnus falls in love and marries her. Vandemark serves in Gowdy's company during the Civil War, but afterward vanquishes the other in a fight during a blizzard, when both are trying to save Virginia from the storm. Vandemark and Virginia are married, and become leaders of the township, which is named for him.

Vanderbank, character in *The Awkward Age* (q.v.).

VANDERBILT, CORNELIUS (1794–1877), New York capitalist, as a boy began a freight and passenger ferrying business between Staten Island and New York City, which he gradually extended until he controlled a great part of the state's steamboat interests, and came to be known as 'Commodore.' After the discovery of gold in California, he opened a steamship line, with ports on the two coasts of Nicaragua, and a connecting road, which made his the quickest route to San Francisco. In a struggle between two groups to control this company, William Walker, who had been subsidized in his Nicaraguan filibuster by Vanderbilt, turned against the Commodore, who withdrew his support, causing Walker's downfall. After crushing the opposition in his own company, Vanderbilt quit the business in favor of competitors on receipt from them, 'for his yacht,' of $400,000 and a monthly stipend of $40,000, increased the following year to $56,000 monthly, when, in spite of his bargain, he threatened to reopen his line. As he neared 70, he turned from shipping to enter the railroad field, and, repeating his earlier methods, gained control of the New York Central by outmaneuvering his opponents. He left an estate of more than $100,000,000, mainly to his son, William H. Vanderbilt (1821–85), who successfully continued his father's promotion schemes, and indicated a similar attitude of mind in his famous utterance, 'The public be damned!'

VANDERLYN, JOHN (1775–1852), New York painter, studied under Gilbert Stuart, and later lived in Paris and Rome (1796–1815), where he painted *Marius amid the Ruins of Carthage*, *Ariadne*, and other neoclassical works. Upon his return to America, he was forced to turn to portraiture, for which he felt contempt. In 1842 he was commissioned to paint *The Landing of Columbus* in the rotunda of the Capitol. Because of declining talents, dislike of portraiture, and inability to earn an adequate living from the type of work he preferred to do, Vanderlyn died an embittered man, although, paradoxically, his portraits are now considered his best work.

VAN DINE, S.S., pseudonym of W.H. Wright (q.v.).

VAN DOREN, CARL [CLINTON] (1885–), professor of English at Columbia (1911–34) and literary editor of the *Nation* (1919–22) and *Century* (1922–5), is the author of many critical works, including: *The American Novel* (1921, revised 1940), *Contemporary American Novelists*, 1900–1920 (1922), *James Branch Cabell* (1925), *Swift* (1930), *Sinclair Lewis* (1933), and *Benjamin Franklin* (1938; Pulitzer Prize, 1939). He was managing editor of the *Cambridge History of American Literature* (1917–20). *Three Worlds* (1936) is his autobiography.

MARK [ALBERT] VAN DOREN (1894–), his brother, has also been a professor of English at Columbia and literary editor of the *Nation* (1924–8). He has written critical studies of Thoreau (1916), Dryden (1920), and Shakespeare (1939), and edited various works on American

and English literature. *The Transients* (1935) and *Windless Cabins* (1940) are novels, the latter being a psychological study of a conscientious youth who inadvertently kills an evil man and is thereafter haunted by fear. Van Doren's several volumes of poetry include *Spring Thunder* (1924), bucolic verse; *Now the Sky* (1928), metaphysical verse; *Jonathan Gentry* (1931), a narrative poem; and *Collected Poems* (1939; Pulitzer Prize, 1940).

Vandover and the Brute, novel by Frank Norris (q.v.), written in 1894–5 and posthumously published from an unfinished manuscript in 1914.

Vandover, a young artist and dilettante of San Francisco, has always considered his natural passions as an expression of the baser side of his nature, but after graduating from Harvard he drifts into dissipation, and his prudishness is overcome. The respectable factors of his life—father, social position, fortune, fiancée, and art—are slowly lost to him, and his brutal desires manifest themselves in vice, idleness, luxury, and self-indulgence. To amuse his friends, he has sometimes imitated a wolf, but now as his character weakens the 'wolf' becomes identified with the 'brute' he feels within him. Years pass, and he squanders all he owns by gambling and extravagance, sinking to the lowest plane of society and squalid living. Finally, broken in body and spirit, he is reduced to earning a bare subsistence by cleaning filthy tenement cottages.

VAN DYKE, Henry (1852–1933), Presbyterian minister, later a professor of English at Princeton (1900–1923), was the author of a great many books, extremely popular in their time, which include essays on outdoor life, such as *Little Rivers* (1895) and *Fisherman's Luck* (1899); moralistic and sentimental essays, first delivered as sermons, such as *The Story of the Other Wise Man* (1896) and *The First Christmas Tree* (1897); collections of short stories and romances, including *The Ruling Passion* (1901), *The Blue Flower* (1902), and *The Unknown Quantity* (1912); volumes of travel sketches; melodious but facile poems; and volumes of literary criticism, distinguished for their graceful style, but representative of the Victorian standards of taste. He served as minister to the Netherlands (1913–17), but resigned because he could not reconcile service in a neutral country with his ardent desire to arouse public opinion against Germany.

VANE, Sir Henry (1613–62), English Puritan, came to New England (1635) where he became the governor of Massachusetts (1636–7), but was forced to return to England after his support of Anne Hutchinson split the colony into factions. He was knighted (1640), became a leader of the war party (1642), and, although he had no part in the king's execution, he was a member of the council of state. His advocacy of reform in the elective system caused a break with Cromwell. After serving in Parliament under Richard Cromwell he favored the restoration of the Long Parliament, but after the Restoration he was executed on general charges of high treason. He figures as a character in Hawthorne's story, 'Howe's Masquerade.'

Vanity Fair (1859–63), New York humorous weekly, which, although concerned with national, social, and political affairs, had no editorial policy other than to bring its sophisticated wit to bear upon matters of contemporary interest. It was edited by C.G.Leland (1860–61), and C.F. Browne (1862). Its contributors included Aldrich, Stoddard, Howells, J.G.Saxe, Ada Clare, Fitz-James O'Brien, George Arnold, and William Winter. Among its features were the burlesques of Arnold (q.v.) and the fantastic interviews of Artemus Ward. The magazine was also known for its cartoons.

Another *Vanity Fair* (1868–1936) was issued in New York with various subtitles. Its purpose was 'a weekly show of political, social, literary, and financial wares.' It was edited for a time by Frank Harris. In 1913 it was purchased by Condé Nast, and until it was absorbed by *Vogue* (1936), a women's fashion magazine, it was edited by Frank Crowninshield as a sophisticated review of contemporary literature, art, and society.

VAN LOON, Hendrik Willem (1882–), born in Holland, came to the U.S. as a young man and graduated from Cornell (1905). He served as a foreign correspondent, attended the University of Munich (Ph.D.,1911), and continued his journalistic career abroad while writing his first books. These early works were *The Fall of the Dutch Republic* (1913), *The Rise of the Dutch Kingdom* (1915), and *The Golden Book of Dutch Navigators* (1916). *A Short History of Discovery*

(1918) was the first of the books that won him a reputation as a popularizer of encyclopedic subjects. His surveys, marked by a genially familiar style that is reflected in his own sketchy illustrations, include: *Ancient Man* (1920); *The Story of Mankind* (1921); *The Story of the Bible* (1923); *Tolerance* (1925), a history of the rise of tolerance; *America* (1927); *Man, the Miracle Maker* (1928); *Van Loon's Geography* (1932); *Ships and How They Sailed the Seven Seas* (1935); *The Arts* (1937); and *The Story of the Pacific* (1940). His other works include *The Life and Times of Pieter Stuyvesant* (1928); *R. v. R.* (1930), a fictional biography of Rembrandt; and several books for children.

VAN TWILLER, WOUTER (1580?–1656?), Dutch governor of New Netherland (1633–7). Although ably attending to the commercial interests of the colony, he was considered incompetent, and was constantly quarreling with the English of Massachusetts and Connecticut colonies. He is satirized as Walter the Doubter in Irving's *History of New York.*

VAN VECHTEN, CARL (1880–), born in Iowa, graduated from the University of Chicago (1903), and became assistant music critic for *The New York Times* and dramatic critic for the New York *Press.* His critical articles were collected in several books, and the leading contents of these are preserved in two later selections, *Red* (1925) and *Excavations* (1926). At the age of 40 he declared that his intellectual arteries had hardened for criticism, and, turning to fiction, he wrote *Peter Whiffle* (1922), a witty, pseudo-biographical novel revealing the author's refined dilettante temperament. With continued urbanity, Gallic sophistication, watered æsthetics, and an agile pen, Van Vechten described the manners and mannerisms of his era's decadent elegance in several other novels: *The Blind Bow-Boy* (1923) and *Firecrackers* (1925), dealing with the sophisticated artistic set of New York; *Spider Boy* (1928), a satirical extravaganza on Hollywood; and *Parties* (1930), dealing with a group of sophisticated New York idlers. *The Tattooed Countess* (1924) is a novel set in the Iowa of the author's youth, and *Nigger Heaven* (q.v.,1926) is a sympathetic, realistic treatment of Harlem life, which did much to stimulate the sophisticated interest in Negro culture. *The Tiger in the House* (1920) is a book about cats. With the publication of the autobiographical essays collected as *Sacred and Profane Memories* (1932), he turned from writing to a new interest in photography.

Van Zorn, play by E.A.Robinson (q.v.).

Varieties of Religious Experience, The, psychological study by William James (q.v.) published in 1902, originally delivered in two courses of lectures at the University of Edinburgh (1901–2).

This 'description of man's religious constitution' is written from the point of view of a psychologist, and based on the principle that 'All states of mind are neurally conditioned' and that 'Their significance must be tested not by their origin but by the value of their fruits.' Asserting that institutional religion is 'an external art' of 'ritual acts,' the author limits his study to personal religion, in which 'the inner dispositions of man himself . . . form the center of interest, his conscience, his deserts, his helplessness, his incompleteness.' He offers an 'arbitrary' definition of religion: 'the feelings, acts, and experiences of individual men in their solitude, so far as they apprehend themselves to stand in relation to whatever they may consider the divine.' Pointing out that it is thus a 'way of accepting the universe,' and is of great value 'from the biological point of view,' he proceeds to the consideration, profusely documented by individual case-histories, of such phenomena as 'the religion of healthy-mindedness,' 'the sick soul,' 'the divided self, and the process of its unification,' conversion, and saintliness. The study concludes with a discussion of values in the religious life, mysticism, and religious philosophy, as well as a definition of the author's own position as a refined 'piecemeal supernaturalism' and philosophic pluralism.

Variety (1905–), New York theatrical trade journal, founded and edited by Sime Silverman (1873–1933). It is distinguished not only for its impartial reporting of theatrical events, but also for a cynical humor expressed in its own faithful usage of the racy argot of Broadway. An example of this cryptic headline style may be noticed in an article, which, discussing the unpopularity with rural audiences of pictures burlesquing their own lives, was headed: 'Sticks Nix Hicks Pix.' In 1933 a daily supplement for Hollywood was

founded, although the original publication remains a weekly.

Variety theater, see *Vaudeville.*

Vasconselos, romance by Simms (q.v.).

Vassall Morton, novel by Parkman (q.v.).

Vassar College, nonsectarian school for women at Poughkeepsie, New York, founded in 1861. It has long been one of the foremost American colleges for women. Graduates include Adelaide Crapsey (1901), Constance Rourke (1907), and Edna St.Vincent Millay (1917).

Vaudeville, form of popular stage entertainment derived from the English and American variety theater, originated at Boston (1883) when B.F.Keith began to produce continuous performances of songs, dances, short plays, acrobatic acts, humorous skits and monologues, and other features of variety programs, in which his predecessors included such showmen as Tony Pastor. In 1885 Keith was joined by E.F.Albee, and the two soon acquired theaters throughout the U.S., organizing the most extensive system of theaters in the world. Other proprietors of vaudeville circuits during the following years included Kohl and Middleton, Gustave Walters, F.F.Proctor, Oscar Hammerstein, and Alexander Pantages. The most widely attended type of popular entertainment in the U.S. in its heyday (1885–*c.*1928), vaudeville employed many famous stars of musical comedy, opera, and the legitimate theater, including the Barrymores, the Drews, and Sarah Bernhardt, but its own typical stars were such comedians and song-and-dance performers as Weber and Fields, Montgomery and Stone, the Marx brothers, Moran and Mack, Van and Schenck, Will Rogers, Fannie Brice, Al Jolson, Sophie Tucker, Jimmy Durante, and Eddie Cantor. Silent motion pictures were included in vaudeville programs, but at the end of the 1920's, despite the powerful merger of the Keith-Albee and Orpheum circuits, vaudeville virtually disappeared from the stage, bequeathing its techniques, and performers to radio and sound motion pictures.

VAUGHAN, Sir William (1577–1641), Welsh poet and physician, purchased a tract of land in Newfoundland, where he lived (1622–5). *The Golden Fleece* (1626), a compound of prose and verse, sets forth the evils of life in England and the beauties of Newfoundland, to which he wished to attract settlers, and *The Newlander's Cure* (1630) is in part a description of his Newfoundland settlement.

VEBLEN, Thorstein [Bunde] (1857–1929), born of Norwegian immigrant parents in Wisconsin, studied at Carleton College, Johns Hopkins, and Yale (Ph.D., 1884), and taught at the University of Chicago (1892). In 1899 he published *The Theory of the Leisure Class* (q.v.), a merciless attack on the commercialistic values of the moneyed class, which was received with hostility by the academic world, but at once secured the author a solid place as an economist and writer. *The Theory of Business Enterprise* (1904) was a more direct analysis of business and the price system. Veblen taught at Stanford University (1906–9), the University of Missouri (1911–18), and the New School for Social Research. *The Instinct of Workmanship* (1914) established his leadership of the institutional school of economics, and contended that the instinct of workmanship, deeply ingrained in man since his days of savagery, has been thwarted throughout history by predatory and pecuniary institutions. *The Vested Interests and the State of the Industrial Arts* (1919) began a change in thought from subtle statement and intellectual detachment to more direct attacks on the dominant financial order, which was definitely stated in *The Engineers and the Price System* (1921), a sketch of the technique of revolution through organization of a soviet of engineers and technicians, who could assume leadership of the productive activities of the nation. Although his last book, *Absentee Ownership and Business Enterprise in Recent Times* (1923), summarized his ideas, it showed that in his last years he had lost his trenchant power of attack. Veblen's works were crucial in weakening the hold of neoclassical theory and in introducing a more realistic outlook through the institutional school, which is recognized as an American contribution to the science of economics. Veblen was in part responsible for a trend toward social control, and, although the implications of his criticisms of capitalism were revolutionary, his intellectual attitude and methods were liberal.

VEDDER, Elihu (1836–1923), painter known for his mystical subjects treated in a symbolic manner. Besides his easel can-

vases, he painted large murals, the most famous of which are at the Library of Congress, and his drawings for the *Rubaiyat* show him at his best in illustration. After 1867 he lived abroad, and published a rambling, whimsical memoir, *The Digressions of V* (1910).

Vein of Iron, novel by Ellen Glasgow (q.v.) published in 1935.

Ada Fincastle is reared in Shut-In Valley, in the Virginia mountains, where her ancestors have been ministers and leaders since colonial days. Her father, John, repudiated by his congregation for his unorthodox ideas, has become a school teacher, and Ada is accustomed to the pinch of poverty. The Fincastles nevertheless retain the respect of the community, through the activities of John's proud old mother, his devoted wife, Mary Evelyn, who works herself to an early death, his homely, pious sister Meggie, and the Negro servant, Aunt Abigail Geddy. Wilful, inquisitive, and passionate, Ada is jealous of Janet Rowan, a petulant beauty who marries her father's brilliant student, Ralph McBride. Ralph gives up the law to sell automobiles, and, tormented by his loveless marriage, grows morose and longs for escape. Six years afterward, Janet seeks a divorce to marry a wealthy lover, and Ralph enlists to fight in the World War. Before he leaves, he and Ada become lovers. To spare him in his already neurotic condition, she does not disclose her pregnancy; ostracized by the village, after her grandmother's death she moves the household to Queenborough (Richmond), where the boy Rannie is born and she becomes a department store saleswoman. When Ralph returns they are married, and he becomes prosperous until an automobile accident temporarily paralyzes him. Employed only occasionally, he grows bitter and cynical, and Ada returns to work. Her gentle old father rapidly declines, having completed his great idealistic metaphysical treatise, which is neglected except by a few foreign scholars. During the depression of the 1930's, the family is sustained only by the 'vein of iron' in Ada's character. After her father's death, his insurance enables the others to buy back the old family home, to which they return, determined to make a new life in this more primitive environment.

Velasco, romantic tragedy by Epes Sargent (q.v.).

VENABLE, WILLIAM HENRY (1836–1920), Cincinnati high-school teacher, known for his book, *Beginnings of Literary Culture in the Ohio Valley* (1891).

Venetian Glass Nephew, The, novel by Elinor Wylie (q.v.).

Venetian Life, travel narrative by Howells (q.v.).

Venezuela Affair, diplomatic controversy concerning the Venezuela-British Guiana boundary, which led the U. S. to interfere in accordance with the Monroe Doctrine (q.v.) and for a time seemed to threaten war between the U.S. and Great Britain. The boundary dispute had existed since the early 19th century, but during the 1880's Venezuela appealed for help in forcing the issue to arbitration, which the British had refused. President Cleveland and Secretary of State Olney vainly demanded arbitration for a second time (1895), after which the President, in a forceful message to Congress (Dec. 17, 1895), denounced the British attitude and asked for a commission of inquiry, warning that the U.S. would resist British aggression beyond the boundary thus determined. The British, preoccupied with affairs in South Africa and Europe, returned a conciliatory reply, recognizing a broad interpretation of the Monroe Doctrine and authorizing arbitration by an American commission, whose findings (1899) were generally favorable to the British claims.

Venner, ELSIE, see *Elsie Venner*.

VERENA TARRANT, character in *The Bostonians* (q.v.).

VÉRENDRYE, PIERRE, see *La Vérendrye*.

Verge, The, play by Susan Glaspell (q.v.)

VERPLANCK, GULIAN CROMMELIN (1786–1870), New York lawyer, journalist, politician, and author, who carried on a pamphlet war for almost 10 years with DeWitt Clinton, whom he satirized in such erudite and invidious publications as *A Fable for Statesmen and Politicians* (1815) and *The State Triumvirate* (1819). He served in Congress (1825–33), and upon returning to literary life published a scholarly edition of Shakespeare, helped edit *The Talisman* (q.v.), and delivered many lectures and wrote essays, collected in *Discourses and Addresses on Subjects of*

American History, Arts, and Literature (1833).

VERRAZANO, GIOVANNI DA (*c.*1480–1527?), Italian navigator in the service of the French, made a voyage to North America (1524), in which he probably explored the coast from Newfoundland to North Carolina, and discovered the mouth of the Hudson River.

Vers libre, see *Free verse.*

Versailles, TREATY OF, (1) preliminary treaty of peace signed by Great Britain and the U.S. (Nov. 30, 1782) at the end of the Revolutionary War. The final treaty was signed at Paris (Sept. 3, 1783). (2) Treaty of peace after the First World War, signed (June 28, 1919) by representatives of the Allied and Central Powers. The Senate of the U.S. refused to ratify this treaty, and the U.S. was not a party to it. A separate treaty of peace was signed by the U.S. and Germany at Berlin (Aug. 25, 1921).

VERY, JONES (1813–80), born at Salem, Massachusetts, graduated from Harvard (1836) and was a tutor of Greek while studying at the Divinity School. During this period he turned from his previous mild Unitarianism under the influence of a spiritual exaltation in which he had poetic visions of the Holy Ghost. He claimed that his religious sonnets were communicated to him in these visions. Although Emerson appreciated his poetry and prose and arranged for him to speak at Concord the Harvard faculty questioned his sanity, and he allowed himself to be committed to an asylum for the insane. He continued to write, however, and some of his verse was published in the *Western Messenger,* through the influence of J.F.Clarke, who in answer to critics declared that, instead of 'monomania, Very had 'monosania.' Emerson, who also thought him 'profoundly sane,' helped in the selection of his *Essays and Poems* (1839), the only book of Very's published during his lifetime. He was a friend of the Transcendentalists, but his poems show that he was a mystic, whose belief in the absolute surrender of the will to God made his theological and spiritual affiliations closer to those of the early Puritans and Quakers. His poems of religious experience rightly caused him to be compared with George Herbert and other 17th-century metaphysical poets. His essays in literary criticism, such as 'Epic Poetry,' 'Hamlet,' and 'Shakespeare,' also reveal his mystic approach. After leaving the asylum, Very, without a degree in divinity, held temporary pastorates in Maine and Massachusetts, but, being too shy to preach well, retired to live as a recluse under the care of his sister. He wrote little during his remaining 40 years. Two posthumous editions of his works were published, *Poems* (1883) and *Poems and Essays* (1886), 'a complete' edition containing some 600 poems, edited by J.F.Clarke.

LYDIA LOUISE ANN VERY (1823–1901), his sister, also wrote verse, published in *Poems* (1856), which, however, shows none of her brother's Transcendental mysticism in interpreting nature, although this was her primary subject. Most of her life was devoted to caring for him, but after his death she returned to writing and published *Poems and Prose Writings* (1890) reprinting her earlier work together with sketches of Salem scenery. Later works included *Sayings and Doings among the Insects and Flowers* (1897), simple stories of nature; *The Better Path* (1898), *A Strange Disclosure* (1898), and *A Strange Recluse* (1899), romantic novels; and *An Old-Fashioned Garden, and Walks and Musings Therein* (1900), a volume of charmingly simple anecdotes about her life.

VESPUCCI, AMERIGO (1451–1512), born in Florence, early entered the commercial house of the Medici, and after 1492 resided in Spain as their agent. According to his own account, he obtained a commission to fit out 12 ships for the king of Spain (1495), and set sail from Cadiz (May 10, 1497), reaching the mainland of the American continent (June 16, 1497), eight days before John Cabot. These statements are not convincing and the consensus of scholarly opinion is that he never made this voyage. He made a 'second' voyage across the Atlantic (1499), entered the service of Dom Manuel of Portugal (1501), and made a 'third' voyage to America via Cape Verde (1502); also in the service of Portugal, he made his last voyage (1503), intending to reach Malacca, whose location he completely misjudged. He landed at Bahia in the present Brazil, returning to Lisbon (1504). All knowledge concerning these voyages rests on Vespucci's doubtful accounts. He received Spanish letters of naturalization (1505), and the following year was ap-

pointed chief pilot of Spain, a post he held until his death. In 1503 he wrote to Lorenzo di Medici from Lisbon, describing the alleged Portuguese voyage of 1501–2, and the supposed 1499 voyage. This document is lost, but a Latin translation was printed variously as *Mundus Novus* and *Epistola Albericii de Novo Mundo*. His letter written from Portugal (1504) to Pier Soderini, Gonfalonier of the Republic of Florence, still exists in the original printing in Italian. From this a French version was made, and from this in turn a Latin translation was published (1507). The last was used in Waldseemüller's *Cosmographiæ Introductio* (1507), which contains the first use of the name America (q.v.). An English translation of his letters has been published by the Hakluyt Society (1894).

VESTAL, STANLEY, pseudonym of W.S. Campbell (q.v.).

Via Crucis, romance by F.M.Crawford (q.v.).

Vicksburg, SIEGE OF, occurred during the Civil War, when Grant attempted to prevent the Confederates from establishing themselves at Vicksburg, at the mouth of the Yazoo River on the Mississippi. After his first attempt failed (1862), he proceeded with Sherman, aided by the navy, to shut up the Confederate forces in Vicksburg, while he besieged the city for 48 days. He received an unconditional surrender (July 4, 1863), which left the North in control of the Mississippi River.

Vicksburg Daily Citizen (1863), newspaper published at Vicksburg during the siege. Like other Southern editors, J.M. Swords was forced by the scarcity of materials to print his news on the blank side of wall paper. After the surrender, the victorious Union soldiers found the *Citizen* for July 2, still on the press; adding a 'valedictory footnote,' they ran it off with all its tirades against the Yankees just as they found it. Reprints of this issue have been made, and many so-called original copies are spurious.

VICTOR, FRANCES FULLER (1826–1902), began her literary career with *Poems of Sentiment and Imagination* (1851), written in collaboration with her sister, Metta Victoria Victor (1831–86). Frances moved from New York to the West, where she wrote a *History of Oregon* (2 vols.,1886–8) and materially assisted H.H.Bancroft in his *History of the Pacific States*. Metta, after marrying Orville James Victor (1827–1910), a publisher of dime novels, wrote many works in this genre, of which the best known is the antislavery story, *Maum Guinea and Her Plantation Children* (1862).

Vigilantes, members of secret volunteer organizations for the summary suppression of lawless conditions, where formal means of law enforcement are lacking, or where they are considered to be inadequate. Such vigilance committees consistently flourished on the frontier, and were particularly prominent in California during the gold-rush era, and in other parts of the West as the result of cattle and horse thefts. The committees frequently resorted to lynch law (q.v.). Even during periods of settled order, vigilance committees have been formed as the result of racial conflict, crime waves, labor disorders, and radical activities. Literary examples include those in 'The Outcasts of Poker Flat,' *The Octopus*, and *In Dubious Battle*.

Vikings, see *Leif Ericsson*, *Thorfinn Karlsefni*, and *Vineland*.

VILLA, PANCHO, name adopted by Doroteo Arango (1877–1923), Mexican revolutionary bandit who was active from 1910 to 1920. Although little more than a brigand, he was considered to be in rebellion against the social abuses of the Mexican government and was looked upon as a modern Robin Hood. He captured Mexico City (1914), declaring himself dictator, but in January 1915, was driven out by Obregón, head of the army of the Carranza administration. Angered at U.S.recognition of Carranza and aid to Obregón, Villa is said to have raided Columbus, New Mexico, killing 16 citizens. Whether he or other Mexicans were responsible is uncertain, but Wilson dispatched Pershing with a punitive force to capture him (March–June 1916). Carranza objected to U.S.invasion of Mexico, and when war was threatened the troops were withdrawn without achieving their purpose. Villa was assassinated in 1923. John Reed, who accompanied Villa as a newspaper correspondent during the revolutionist's earlier activities, published his impressions in *Insurgent Mexico* (1914).

Village Blacksmith, The, eight-stanza poem in ballad measure by Longfellow

(q.v.) published in *Ballads and Other Poems* (1841). The smith is described at work, with the children stopping on the way from school to watch his flaming forge and roaring bellows, his mighty arms and hands, and his brow 'wet with honest sweat.' At church, his daughter's voice in the choir reminds him of 'her mother's voice, Singing in Paradise!' In the last stanza, the poet makes of him a symbol of the proper conduct of life. The poem was suggested by a smithy under a spreading chestnut tree, near the poet's house in Cambridge.

VILLAGRÁ, Gaspar Pérez de (*c.*1555–*c.*1620), Spanish explorer and officer on the expedition of Juan de Oñate (q.v.), of which he wrote an epic poem (1610), translated as *History of New Mexico* (1933).

VILLARD, Henry (1835–1900), Bavarian-born journalist and financier, emigrated to the U.S. (1853) and studied law in Illinois, where in 1858 began his friendship with Lincoln. He participated in the Pike's Peak gold rush (1859) and wrote a guidebook, *The Past and Present of the Pike's Peak Gold Regions* (1860). He then became a reporter and war correspondent for various Eastern papers. His later career was mainly concerned with railroad building and finance in the Northwest, where besides controlling Oregon and California railways he was president of the Northern Pacific (1881–4). Villard helped found the Edison General Electric Company (1889), and bought the New York *Evening Post* (1881). He married the daughter of W.L.Garrison.

Oswald Garrison Villard (1872–), his son, born in Germany, was educated at Harvard and began his journalistic career in Philadelphia (1896). He was an editorial writer for the New York *Evening Post* (1897–1918), of which he was owner and president after his father's death. Villard purchased the *Nation* (q.v., 1908), which, during his editorship until 1933, was established as a leading journal of liberal opinion. His books include *John Brown—A Biography Fifty Years After* (1910), *Newspapers and Newspaper Men* (1923), and an autobiography, *Fighting Years* (1939).

Vindication of the Government of New-England Churches, A, by John Wise (q.v.), published in 1717, is a forceful exposition of the principles of ecclesiastical polity of New England Congregationalism, based on the theory that the best government of the church derives from the best government of the state, which Wise believed to be founded on the idea of human equality. His discussion of the rights of man present him as one of the forerunners of Jeffersonian ideas. Because of the democratic theme, which transcends the specific issues, the book was republished in 1772 and widely read prior to the Revolution and again in 1860 before the Civil War.

Vineland, North American region supposedly discovered by Leif Ericsson (q.v.), and possibly by Thorfinn Karlsefni (q.v.), whose name is derived from the legend that grapes were found there. The region is generally considered to be a part of the present Massachusetts. Longfellow's poem, 'The Skeleton in Armor,' is among the modern literary accounts of Vineland.

Virginia, novel by Ellen Glasgow (q.v.) published in 1913.

In Dinwiddie, Virginia, during the 1880's, Virginia Pendleton is reared according to Southern ideals of gentility and propriety, 'the perfect flower of the Victorian ideal' and 'logical result of an inordinate sense of duty, the crowning achievement of the code of beautiful behavior and the Episcopal Church.' Her mother and the Dinwiddie Academy for Young Ladies teach her that a woman's duty is to sacrifice her own mind to her husband's will and to subordinate her life to that of her family. When she marries Oliver Treadwell, a penniless young man whose ambition is to be a dramatist, she automatically devotes herself to her three children and her husband's comfort. He is an egoist, preoccupied with his own problems, and accepts her services, although her limited mind prevents her sharing his work and interests. For years he is unsuccessful and they are poverty-stricken, but finally his plays begin to be produced in New York. By this time Virginia is middle-aged and worn, but Oliver is still youthful, and in Margaret Oldcastle, the star of his plays, he finds the companionship he has needed. He deserts his wife for the actress, and, in this supreme tragedy for her type, Virginia is left without a purpose in life except the devotion of her brilliant son Harry, since she can feel little in common with her independent and aggres-

sive daughters, products of a feminist world.

Virginia City, see *Comstock Lode.*

Virginia Comedians, The; or, Old Days in the Old Dominion, romance by J.E. Cooke (q.v.) published anonymously in 1854. *Henry St.John, Gentleman* (q.v.) is a sequel.

A troupe of English actors, Mr.Hallam's 'Virginia Company of Comedians,' performs at Williamsburg in 1763. The youthful leading lady, Beatrice Hallam, attracts the affected aristocrat, Champ Effingham, who joins the company in order to be near her, although she prefers honest young Charley Waters. An old letter reveals that Beatrice is the orphan daughter of Charley's uncle. Confessing their love, Beatrice and Charley set out for his father's home, but the passionate Effingham follows, and, in attempting to abduct the girl, stabs her fiancé, leaving him for dead. Effingham flees to Europe, but Charley recovers, marries Beatrice, and moves to a family estate in the mountains. Two years later the tale resumes, with a complicated plot of romantic intrigue that involves Charley's bluff, generous soldier brother, Captain Ralph, and Henrietta Effingham; Captain Ralph's servant, Lanky, and the village belle, Donsy Smith; Champ Effingham, who has returned, reformed but melancholy, and at last happily marries his cousin Clare, who hem had jilted for Beatrice; and Champ's friend, Jack Hamilton, who woos Alethea Effingham. Having brought these matches to a successful matrimonial climax, the book closes with the outbreak of rebellion over the Stamp Tax issue, and the patriotic exultation of Patrick Henry, who has figured incidentally in the narrative as the mysterious 'stranger in the red cloak.'

Virginia Company, joint-stock corporation chartered by James I (1606) to settle colonies in America. There were two branches. That which had jurisdiction over the southern colonies, from 34° to 41° north latitude, was known as the Virginia Company of London, since its headquarters were in that city. That which was to manage the northern colonies, from 45° to 38° south latitude, was called the Virginia Company of Plymouth, and its office was in Plymouth, Devonshire. In 1607 the London Company sent an expedition under Christopher Newport (q.v.), which settled Jamestown (q.v.). The Plymouth Company failing to establish a settlement, the London Company obtained a new charter (1609), when Sir Thomas Gates was made absolute governor in Virginia. De la Warr (q.v.) arrived in 1610, when the colony was on the verge of dissolution, and served as governor until 1618. In 1612, a third charter made the Company self-governing, and in 1619 the first legislative assembly convened. James I annulled the charter (1624) and the colony became a royal province, directly administered under the king's authority. John Smith (q.v.) was long the actual, if not the titular, head of the colony. Among the important sources of the colony's early history are Smith's *True Relation,* Beverley's *History of Virginia,* Stith's *History of . . . Virginia,* and the Company's records edited by S.M.Kingsbury (1906).

Virginia Gazette, first newspaper in Virginia, founded at Williamsburg (1736) by William Parks, who was its editor until his death (1750). The paper was under the influence of the governor, but in addition to its news it is significant for its essays, many of which were concerned with London life in the spirit of the Queen Anne writers, but are considered to have originated in Virginia. After Parks's death, it changed hands several times, and in 1766 another paper of the same name was founded, since the original *Gazette* was entirely under the influence of the governor. The second *Gazette* lasted until 1773.

Virginia Plan, see *Federal Constitutional Convention.*

Virginia Quarterly Review, The (1925–), journal of liberal opinion on social and economic affairs, which also publishes fiction, poetry, and literary criticism. Although issued at the University of Virginia, the review is neither an academic organ nor sectional in point of view. In addition to foreign authors, its contributors have included Allen Tate, Robert Frost, Sherwood Anderson, Thomas Wolfe, Conrad Aiken, T.S.Eliot, C.A. Beard, E.A.Robinson, and Elizabeth Madox Roberts.

Virginia Resolutions, see *Kentucky and Virginia Resolutions.*

Virginia, UNIVERSITY OF, state university founded at Charlottesville (1819), in accordance with plans proposed by Jefferson, who devoted much attention to it

during his last years and designed its buildings, as well as serving as its first rector. Opened in 1825, it now has approximately 2,000 students, of whom about 100 are women. The graduate schools include those of law (founded 1826), medicine (1837), and engineering (1909). Prominent students have included Poe (1826), J.R.Thompson (A.B.,1845), T.N. Page (LL.B.,1874), W.C.Bruce (1879–80), Woodrow Wilson (1879–80), and Erskine Caldwell (1922,1925–6).

Virginian, The: A Horseman of the Plains, romantic novel by Owen Wister (q.v.), published in 1902 as a companion piece to his *Lin McLean* (1898). This tale of the cowpunchers of the Wyoming cattle country during the exciting 1870's and '80's is chiefly concerned with the adventures of a handsome, heroic figure known only as 'the Virginian,' his chivalry and daring, and his successful wooing of Molly Wood, a pretty school teacher from Vermont. The celebrated phrase, 'When you call me that, *smile!*,' is one of the many colloquial expressions with which the book is peppered.

Virginians, The; A Tale of the Last Century, romance by Thackeray (q.v.), published in England (2 vols.,1858–9); in the U.S. in 1859. Thackeray conceived the idea and began his research during a visit to the U.S. (1855–6) and received information and suggestions from J.P.Kennedy, who accompanied him on a tour of Virginia. The work is a sequel to *Henry Esmond* (q.v.).

Rachel Warrington, widowed daughter of Henry Esmond, affectionately dominates her twin sons, Harry and George, whom she rears at Castlewood, the Virginia estate inherited from her father. George accompanies Washington, then a young officer and friend of his mother, on the expedition of Braddock, and in the rout of the British force is believed to have been killed. Harry goes to England as heir to the estate, where he meets the English Castlewoods. They cultivate him because of his wealth and he is led into a life of extravagance and dissipation by Baroness Bernstein, once his father's fiancée Beatrix, but now twice widowed and an unscrupulous social leader. Imprisoned for gambling debts, he is released on the arrival of George, who had only been injured and captured by the French. Harry serves in Canada under Wolfe, then settles at Castlewood with his mother, after marrying his childhood sweetheart, Hetty Mountain. Meanwhile George stays in London, having been disinherited for marrying penniless Theo Lambert. His financial difficulties end when he inherits the Warrington estate and becomes Sir George. During the Revolutionary War he is a member of the British army, and Harry joins the patriots. Later reconciled, they live happily in Virginia.

Vision of Columbus, The, see *Columbiad*.

Vision of Sir Launfal, The, verse parable by Lowell (q.v.) published in 1848. The work is in two parts, each with a prelude, and the basic metre is iambic tetrameter. The plot is derived from legends of the Holy Grail in Malory, and perhaps influenced by Tennyson.

Beginning with a joyous pæan to summer's beauty ('And what is so rare as a day in June?'), the poet tells of Sir Launfal's decision to search for the Grail. He orders his armor prepared, and, sleeping, dreams that he has started on his journey. As he rides out, he encounters a begging leper, and, displeased at this 'one blot on the summer morn,' out of a sense of duty scornfully tosses a piece of gold, which the leper leaves where it falls. After the passage of many years, Sir Launfal returns at Christmas to his winter-bound castle, 'an old, bent man, worn out and frail.' His search has been fruitless, 'but deep in his soul the sign he wore, The badge of the suffering and the poor.' Again he meets the leper, beholding in him now the image of Christ, for whose sake he shares with him his crust of bread. The musing knight sees the leper glorified before him as Christ himself, who tells Sir Launfal the Grail is the wooden cup of charity from which they have drunk from the brook, and 'Who bestows himself with his alms feeds three,—Himself, his hungering neighbor, and Me.' Sir Launfal awakes from this dream vision, and abandons preparations for the journey. ('He must be fenced with stronger mail Who would seek and find the Holy Grail.') The lesson learned, he turns philanthropist, and alters his feudal rule so that 'there's no poor man in the North Countree But is lord of the earldom as much as he.'

Visionary, The, original title of 'The Assignation' (q.v.).

Visit from St.Nicholas, A, poem by C.C.Moore (q.v.).

VIZETELLY, FRANK HORACE (1864–1938), English-born lexicographer, came to the U.S. (1895), and is best known for his editorship of Funk and Wagnall's *New Standard Dictionary*. He wrote some 20 books pertaining to the English language and other philological subjects, and was a popular authority in sanctioning American colloquialisms.

Voice of the City, The, stories by W.S. Porter (q.v.).

Voices of the Night, first collection of poems by Longfellow (q.v.), published in 1839. It contains such famous works as 'Hymn to the Night,' 'A Psalm of Life' (qq.v.), and 'The Beleaguered City.'

VOLLMER, LULA, North Carolina dramatist, whose plays concerned with the character of the people of her native mountains include: '*Sun-Up*' (q.v.,1923); *The Shame Woman* (1923), the story of a woman who willingly meets the death sentence in order to kill the man who had once been her lover and later her daughter's paramour; *The Dunce Boy* (1925), dealing with a mother's love for her half-wit son; and *Trigger* (1927), the story of a girl struggling against the stultifying standards of her native mountain people.

Volstead Act, see *Prohibition*.

Voltmeier, romance by Simms (q.v.).

Voluntaries, poem by Emerson (q.v.) published in the *Atlantic Monthly* (1863) to commemorate the death in battle of Colonel Robert G. Shaw, leader of a regiment of Negro soldiers in the Civil War. It was collected in *May-Day* (1867). In five stanzas of alternately rimed, irregular four-stress lines, it celebrates the heroism of those who sacrifice their lives in the cause of freedom:

> So nigh is grandeur to our dust,
> So near is God to man,
> When Duty whispers low, *Thou must*,
> The youth replies, *I can*.

VON HOLST, HERMANN, see *Holst*.

VON TEUFFEL, BARONESS, see *Howard, Blanche*.

VORSE, MARY [MARVIN] HEATON, left-wing author, whose novels include *The Very Little Person* (1911), *The Prestons* (1918), *Men and Steel* (1921), *Passaic* (1926), *Second Cabin* (1928), and *Strike—A Novel of Gastonia* (1930). *A Footnote to Folly* (1935) is an autobiography.

W

W.C.T.U., see *Temperance.*

Waifs and Strays, stories by W.S.Porter (q.v.).

Waiting for Lefty, short play by Clifford Odets (q.v.), produced by the Group Theatre in 1935 and published the same year.

Members of the taxicab drivers' union meet to decide whether or not to strike, and while they await the arival of the popular committeeman, Lefty Costello, they are addressed by the capitalist agent, Harry Fatt, who attempts to discourage the plan. Six blackout scenes show the causes of the strike in terms of injustice, corrupt practices, and personal tragedy: 'Joe and Edna' and 'The Young Hack and His Girl' depict estrangement and frustration resulting from economic difficulties; 'Lab Assistant Episode' and 'Interne Episode' show demoralized capitalistic ethics; 'The Young Actor' demonstrates the unequal conflict between art and commercialism; and 'Labor Spy Episode' presents the perjured evidence of a bribed witness. The labor leader Agate Keller confutes the spy's testimony, and, when a messenger arrives to report the murder of Lefty, arouses the men's fighting spirit and leads them in declaring the strike.

Walden, or Life in the Woods, narrative by Thoreau (q.v.) published in 1854. Between the end of March 1845, and July 4, when he began occupation, the author constructed a cabin on the shore of Walden Pond, near Concord. There he lived alone until September 1847, supplying his needs by his own labor and developing and testing his Transcendental philosophy of individualism, self-reliance, and material economy for the sake of spiritual wealth. He sought to reduce his physical needs to a minimum, in order to free himself for study, thought, and observation of nature and himself; therefore his cabin was a simple room and he wore the cheapest essential clothing and restricted his diet to what he found growing wild and the beans and vegetables he himself raised. When not engaged in domestic and agricultural labors, or in fishing, swimming, and rowing, Thoreau devoted himself enthusiastically to careful observation and recording of the flora and fauna of the locality, to writing his voluminous journals, and to reading ancient and modern poetry and philosophy. His thought about this experience was developed in the journals over a period of years, and the result is *Walden*, a series of 18 essays describing Thoreau's idealistic creed as affected by and expressed in his life at the Pond. The chapter on 'Economy' asserts that the only standard of value is in vital experience, and that the complexities of civilization stand in the way of significant living. To escape the demands of society and to realize the best powers of mind and body, Thoreau decides for an ascetic withdrawal from organized society, since in his desire 'to live deep and suck out all the marrow of life,' he found that the essential necessity was to 'simplify, simplify.' Among the matters described in subsequent chapters are the practical operation of this economy; Thoreau's intimacy with such different neighbors as the moles in his cellar, an educated Canadian woodcutter, and the pickerel in Walden Pond; his temporary imprisonment for refusing to pay a poll tax, because he would not support a state that returned fugitive slaves to the South; the music of the wind in the telegraph wires, and the distant railroad whistle; the varied seasonal aspects of the woods; and the joys of outdoor labor and solitary study. From this many-sided discussion, expressed in an agile, compact, lucid, and often poetic style, emerges Thoreau's philosophy of individualism brought almost to the point of anarchy, and his idealistic exaltation of arts and ideas balanced by a vital appreciation of the life of the senses.

WALDSEEMÜLLER, MARTIN, see *America.*

WALKER, FRANCIS AMASA (1840–97), professor of political economy and history at Yale (1873–81) and president of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology (1881–97), was known for his economic theories, which included championing of international bimetallism and free trade, and the idea that, wages being dependent on the current productivity of labor, the profits of the entrepreneur were like rent, and the laborer should be the final claimant of the remaining portion. His books include *The Wages Question* (1876), *Money* (1878), *Money in Its Relation to*

Trade and Industry (1879), and *Land and Its Rent* (1883).

WALKER, WILLIAM (1824–60), born in Nashville, emigrated to California (1850), where he practiced law and edited newspapers. In 1853 he became interested in 'colonizing' the Mexican states of Sonora and Lower California on the pretext that some Mexicans had invited him to protect them from the Apache Indians. With a small force he managed to make himself president of a newly created republic, but shortly was forced back to San Francisco where he was tried and acquitted for violating neutrality laws. His second filibustering expedition occurred when with some 50 followers he landed in Nicaragua (1855), and the following year proclaimed himself president. His grandiose schemes were ended (1857) after he opposed Cornelius Vanderbilt's side in a struggle between two groups in the Accessory Transit Company, the country's great transportation and shipping line. Vanderbilt withdrew his support, and Walker was forced to surrender. In one of his later attempts to regain Nicaragua he was captured and executed by the Honduran authorities. His book, *The War in Nicaragua* (1860), is an accurate and impartial account.

WALKER, WILLISTON (1860–1922), professor of ecclesiastical history at Yale (1901–22), whose writings include: *The Creeds and Platforms of Congregationalism* (1893), *A History of the Congregational Churches in the United States* (1894), and *Ten New England Leaders* (1901).

Wall Street, narrow thoroughfare of New York City, situated in lower Manhattan, received its name from a stockade erected there by Stuyvesant. It has long been the greatest financial district of the U.S., and by extension the name implies international corporate finance. During the 19th century, it was the center of operations for such celebrated financiers as Vanderbilt, Drew, and Morgan. Literature dealing with Wall Street includes novels by Richard B. Kimball, Charles Dudley Warner, and Brander Matthews; Bronson Howard's satirical play, *The Henreitta*; Stedman's whimsical poem, 'Pan in Wall Street' (1867), in which Pan visits the 'bulls' and 'bears' of the Street, but is removed by a blue-coated policeman; and more recently *The Big Money* and other novels by Dos Passos, as well as such studies as *The Robber Barons* by Matthew Josephson.

WALLACE, HORACE BINNEY (1817–52), Philadelphia lawyer and author, best known for his posthumous collections of essays, *Art, Scenery, and Philosophy in Europe* (1855) and *Literary Criticisms and Other Papers* (1856), which show him to have been an early follower of the positivist philosophy of Comte.

WALLACE, LEW[IS] (1827–1905), Indiana author, whose early career included military service in the Mexican War, and in the Civil War, in which he rose to the rank of major-general and was instrumental in defending Washington from capture by the Confederate army. After a residence in Mexico, where he interested himself in the attempt of Juarez to gain power, he returned to his native state to practice law and complete his novel, *The Fair God* (q.v.,1873), a story of the Spanish conquest of Mexico. The success of this romance caused him to write *Ben-Hur* (q.v.,1880), a romantic depiction of the late Roman empire and the rise of Christianity, which is said to have sold 2,000,000 copies, besides being translated into many foreign languages. He followed this with a narrative of *The Boyhood of Christ* (1888). After having served as territorial governor of New Mexico (1878–81), he became minister to Turkey (1881–5), and his interest in that country inspired him to write *The Prince of India* (1893), a turgid novel based on the story of the Wandering Jew. His other works include *The Wooing of Malkatoon* (1898), a long poem which incorporated his earlier tragedy, *Commodus* (1877); and *Lew Wallace: An Autobiography* (1906), completed by his wife, Susan Arnold Wallace (1830–1907), an author in her own right.

WALLACE, WILLIAM ROSS (1819–81), born in Kentucky, moved in 1841 to New York, where he became a lawyer and poet. His works include: *Alban the Pirate* (1848), a long verse romance; *Meditations in America, and Other Poems* (1851), ardently patriotic in describing American scenery; and *The Liberty Bell* (1862), militant poems upholding the Union, which were set to music. Although he himself has been forgotten, his poem, 'The Hand that Rocks the Cradle,' has been a popular anthology piece. He was an intimate friend of Poe, whom he is said to have resembled both in appearance and temperament, and

whom he defended against the attacks of John Neal.

WALLACK, Henry John (1790–1870), English-born actor, member of a prominent theatrical family that included his brother James William (*c.*1795–1864); his son James William (1818–73), known for his performances of romantic tragedies; and his nephew Lester (1820–88), who in addition to his acting was a popular dramatist of works ranging from melodrama to comedy.

Walpole Literary Club, New Hampshire social and literary coterie led by Joseph Dennie. Its members contributed to his paper, the *Farmer's Weekly Museum* (q.v.). Among them were Royall Tyler and T.G.Fessenden.

WALTER, Eugene (1874–), born in Cleveland, was the author of 16 plays, which included *Paid in Full* (1908), *The Easiest Way* (1908), and *Fine Feathers* (1913), successful melodramas that were considered steps in the direction of realistic drama. He dramatized *The Trail of the Lonesome Pine* (1912) and *The Little Shepherd of Kingdom Come* (1916), and analyzed his technique in *How to Write a Play* (1925).

WALTER, Thomas (1696–1725), Congregational minister of Massachusetts, author of *The Grounds and Rules of Musick Explained; or, an Introduction to the Art of Singing by Note* (1721); a book of poems, *The Sweet Psalmist of Israel* (1722); and an attack on radical theological views, *A Choice Dialogue Between John Faustus, a Conjuror, and Jack Tory, His Friend* (1720), for which material was gathered by his uncle, Cotton Mather.

WALTER, Thomas Ustick (1804–87), Philadelphia architect, studied under Strickland and followed him in championing the Greek Revival. He was the government architect (1861–5), during which time he added the wings for the Congress and Senate to the Capitol building, and the imposing dome which dominates the building.

Wampanoag Indians, Algonquian tribe of Massachusetts, was the first to be encountered by the Pilgrims. Under Massasoit (q.v.) they were friendly with the whites, but his son, King Philip (q.v.), precipitated a war (1675) that ended disastrously, the Indians being nearly exterminated. They figure in *Metamora* and in the many accounts of King Philip.

WANAMAKER, John (1838–1922), Philadelphia merchant, founder of one of the first department stores, served as U.S. postmaster-general (1889–93), and was also noted as a leader of the Young Men's Christian Association.

War between the States, see *Civil War.*

War Hawks, see *War of* 1812.

War Is Kind, poems by Stephen Crane (q.v.).

War of 1812, fought between the U.S. and Great Britain (1812–15). During the Napoleonic Wars, American shipping flourished to such an extent that it harmed both French and English commerce and led the British to impress British sailors on board American ships. In one such case (the *Chesapeake* affair, 1806), American rights were clearly infringed and war was threatened. A series of American embargo and nonintercourse acts led to further difficulty. Meanwhile Clay, Calhoun, and other 'war hawks' in Congress felt that the British were unfairly preventing American expansion in the West by such means as inciting Indians to hostilities along the frontier, and they desired war to conquer Canada and west Florida. War was declared June 18, 1812, and the land forces were soon forced to surrender to the British. At sea the Americans were more successful; for the *Constitution* (q.v.) defeated the *Guerrière*; and the *United States*, commanded by Decatur, defeated the *Macedonian*, although the *Chesapeake* under James Lawrence (q.v.) was defeated by the *Shannon*. Perry's victory on Lake Erie (q.v.,September 1813) and the recapture of Detroit were in 1814 offset by fears that England, temporarily free from the Napoleonic wars, would crush the Americans, and at the Hartford Convention (q.v.) New England talked of secession. The war, which was dubbed 'Mr. Madison's War' by the President's opponents, was completely opposed by the Federalists, and while the Southern Republicans were unenthusiastic about the attempts to capture Canada, the Northern Republicans were equally disinterested in seizing Florida. The British blockaded the Atlantic Coast, captured Washington (1814), and burned the White House and Capitol, but were stopped before Baltimore (see *Star-Spangled Banner*), and the invasion from Canada was halted at Plattsburg. The indecisive victories on both sides and English fear of European

war led to peace negotiations ending in the Treaty of Ghent (December 24, 1814). Not a single aim of the war was attained, and the American commissioners did not even feel strong enough to demand the abandonment of impressment or to ask for more than the surrender of territory gained by Great Britain during the war. Jackson's victory at New Orleans (q.v., Jan. 8, 1815) occurred before he was notified of the treaty, and this last American success did much to restore national confidence. Approximately 1,877 enlisted men died as a result of the war.

War of Independence, see *Revolutionary War.*

War of the Rebellion, see *Civil War.*

Warburton, Lord, character in *The Portrait of a Lady* (q.v.).

WARD, Artemus, pseudonym of C.F. Browne (q.v.).

WARD, Elizabeth Stuart Phelps (1844–1911), Massachusetts author, daughter of Elizabeth Stuart Phelps (q.v.), continued her mother's interest in religious fiction by writing her fervently emotional novel, *The Gates Ajar* (q.v., 1868), which was less a novel than a series of conversations by fictional characters concerning the beauties of Heaven. The immense popularity of this work, which seems to have brought solace to innumerable women, was continued in other fictional discussions of the future life: *Beyond the Gates* (1883), recounting the dream of a woman who thinks she dies and goes to Heaven; *The Gates Between* (1887), telling the after-life adventures of an agnostic doctor; and *Within the Gates* (1901), a reworking of the latter novel. *Hedged In* (1870), a novel having as its theme the hypocrisy of society in its treatment of women who transgress against conventional moral standards, was followed by other pleas for social justice for women. These were *The Silent Partner* (1871), a story of New England mill girls; *The Story of Avis* (1877), concerned with a woman's attempt to have a career as a painter; and *Dr.Zay* (1882), an account of a woman physician. *The Madonna of the Tubs* (1886) and *Jack, the Fisherman* (1887) were novelettes, more realistic in their presentation of the lives of Gloucester fishermen. *A Singular Life* (1894) parallels the life of Christ in that of a young New England minister whose sincerity causes him to be rejected by the orthodox church. In addition to other lesser novels and collections of short stories whose themes parallel those of her longer works, she wrote spiritual poetry and the autobiographical *Chapters from a Life* (1896), and collaborated with her husband, Herbert Dickinson Ward (1861–1932), in several Biblical romances.

WARD, John Quincy Adams (1830–1910), Ohio-born sculptor, studied under Henry Kirke Brown, and in his fine craftsmanship showed a healthy reaction from the sentimental idealism of Italian-trained sculptors. He occupies a position in sculpture analogous to that of Homer and Eakins in painting. Such early works as *Indian Hunter* (1864) are forthright and honest, though somewhat overladen with detail, and from these he progressed, with a broader sense of form and a more fluent feeling for mass, to well-characterized portrait and monument sculpture, as in the figure of *Washington* in front of the New York Subtreasury Building.

WARD, Lester Frank (1841–1913), sociologist who, in addition to writing many works on the natural sciences, developed a theory that the human mind, when honestly and scientifically instructed, can take an active rather than a passive part in planning the process of human evolution, thus proceeding beyond the bounds of the ordinary evolutionary hypothesis. These ideas were developed in such books as *Dynamic Sociology* (1883), *The Psychic Factors of Civilization* (1893), and *Pure Sociology* (1903). His *Glimpses of the Cosmos* (6 vols.,1913–18) reprinted many of his works in their biographical context, developing what he called his 'mental autobiography.'

WARD, Nathaniel (*c.*1578–1652), English-born Congregational clergyman, emigrated to Massachusetts (1634), where he served as minister (1634–6) at Aggawam (now Ipswich). Upon retiring from the ministry, he formulated the colony's first code of laws, 'The Body of Liberties' (1641), which is considered fundamental in American constitutional history. His best-known work, *The Simple Cobler of Aggawam* (q.v.,1647), is a crotchety and amusing satirical blast against religious toleration and other matters of annoyance to him. Ward also wrote commendatory verse prefixed to the poems of Anne

Bradstreet, and published some poetry in his own book. He returned to England as a clergyman (1647) and several later political and ecclesiastical tracts have been attributed to him.

WARD, NED [EDWARD] (1667–1731), English poet, satirist, and tavern-keeper, came to America (*c.*1698–9), which he described in *A Trip to New-England. With a Character of the Country and People, both English and Indians* (London, 1699). This lively, witty account briefly discusses blue laws, witchcraft, and various racy aspects of the life of the Puritans whom he characterizes as '*Saints* without *Religion*, *Traders* without *Honesty*, *Christians* without *Charity*, *Magistrates* without *Mercy*, *Subjects* without *Loyalty*, *Neighbours* without *Amity*, *Faithless Friends*, *Implacable Enemies*, and *Rich Men* without *Money*.'

WARE, HENRY (1764–1845), Massachusetts clergyman of the liberal branch of the Congregational Church, was instrumental in the establishment of Unitarianism in the U.S., being the first nonorthodox professor of divinity at Harvard (1805–40) and a founder of the college's Divinity School (1819). He wrote several controversial works, including *Letters to Trinitarians and Calvinists* (1820). His son, Henry Ware (1794–1843), was also a Unitarian clergyman.

WILLIAM WARE (1797–1852), another son, was a Unitarian clergyman and author of a popular trilogy on the social and political struggles between the early Christians and the dominant hierarchies of their time. The three epistolary novels are: *Zenobia*, first called *Letters . . . from Palmyra* (1837); *Aurelian*, first called *Probus* (1838); and *Julian* (1841). He is also the author of *Lectures on . . . Washington Allston* (1852).

Ware, THERON, see *Damnation of Theron Ware.*

WARFIELD, DAVID (1866–), popular actor, first achieved fame under the ægis of Belasco in Charles Klein's plays, *The Auctioneer* (1900) and *The Music Master* (1903). His favorite role was that of a kindly, crotchety, eccentric old man, and he was noted for his acting of the title part in *The Return of Peter Grimm* (1911).

WARNER, CHARLES DUDLEY (1829–1900), was born in Massachusetts, reared in western New York, and graduated from Hamilton College (1851). After publishing his commencement oration as *The Book of Eloquence* (1851), he went to Missouri as a railroad surveyor, then to the University of Pennsylvania (LL.B.,1858), and practiced law in Chicago (1858–60). Determining upon a literary and journalistic career, he made his home in Hartford, Connecticut, and after 1861 was editor of the *Courant*, although frequently occupied in other matters. His first mature book, *My Summer in a Garden* (1870), a series of essays about his farm, possessed the quiet humor and mellow grace of Irving, which also characterized his later essays, ranging from recollections of his childhood to literary criticism, and including *Backlog Studies* (1873), *Baddeck* (1874), *Being a Boy* (1878), *On Horseback* (1888), *As We Were Saying* (1891), *The Relation of Literature to Life* (1896), and *Fashions in Literature* (1902). His travel sketches, concerning his five trips to Europe and other journeys, are marked by similar qualities and include: *Saunterings* (1872), *My Winter on the Nile* (1876), *In the Levant* (1877), *In the Wilderness* (1878), *A Roundabout Journey* (1883), and *Our Italy* (1891). His first novel, written with his friend Clemens, was *The Gilded Age* (q.v., 1873). The original idea has been attributed to Warner, and the character Philip Sterling is considered partly autobiographical, but the book's realism is more attributable to Clemens. Possibly prompted by this investigation of the shoddy Reconstruction era of big finance, Warner forsook the easy, rather shallow character of his essays, to write his trilogy on the creation, immoral use, and dissipation of a great fortune. *A Little Journey in the World* (1889) depicts the ruin of the character of Margaret Debree through her reconciliation with the ruthless methods employed by her husband, Rodney Henderson, in accumulating his great fortune. *The Golden House* (1894) centers about Henderson's second wife Carmen, whose morality in her affair with Jack Delancy is shown to be on the same plane as that of her husband, who financially ruins the young aristocrat. *That Fortune* (1899) concerns the marriage of Carmen, after her husband's death, to Mavick, a wily politician who loses her fortune and thus destroys the sole distinction she enjoyed. The regeneration of values is suggested by the marriage of her daughter to Philip Burnett, an honest but socially undistinguished young lawyer, who becomes a

journalist. As editor of the 'American Men of Letters Series,' Warner wrote two biographies, *Captain John Smith* (1881) and *Washington Irving* (1881).

WARNER, Olin Levi (1844–96), sculptor trained in Paris, best known for portrait heads such as that of *Garrison*, combining classic beauty with individuality and strong plastic form, and for the graceful, idealized marble figure of *Diana* and a pair of decorative bronze doors for the Library of Congress.

WARNER, Seth (1743–84), member of the Green Mountain Boys (q.v.). With Ethan Allen he helped capture Fort Ticonderoga, and he led his own force in seizing Crown Point (q.v.). He later served on the Canadian border.

WARNER, Susan Bogert (1819–85), New York author of juvenile novels, distinguished by sentimental piety, who wrote under the pseudonym Elizabeth Wetherell. *The Wide, Wide World* (3 vols., 1851) recounts the moral development of a young orphan. *Queechy* (1852) was another popular work.

Anna Bartlett Warner (1827–1915), her sister, collaborated with her on several works, and independently wrote similar novels.

WARREN, Caroline Matilda (1787?–1844), New England school teacher, and author of *The Gamesters; or, Ruins of Innocence* (1805), a typical sentimental didactic novel of the period. She is sometimes known by her married name of Thayer, and was the author of an American history for children and some religious tracts.

WARREN, Charles (1868–), Boston lawyer and lecturer on history and jurisprudence. His books include: *History of the Harvard Law School and Early Legal Conditions in America* (3 vols.,1909); *The Supreme Court in United States History* (3 vols.,1922; Pulitzer Prize, 1923); *Congress, the Constitution and the Supreme Court* (1925); and *Jacobin and Junto* (1931).

WARREN, Mercy Otis (1728–1814), sister of James Otis, wife of James Warren (1726–1808), president of the Provincial Congress of Massachusetts, was herself in the center of Revolutionary politics and a frequent correspondent with the leaders. Her political satires in dramatic form, *The Adulateur* (q.v.,1773) and *The Group* (q.v.,1775), deal with contemporary events and attack Governor Hutchinson and other Loyalists. Probably neither play was performed, and both are conversations rather than dramas. Her *History of the Rise, Progress, and Termination of the American Revolution* (3 vols.,1805) is a lively and astute work, important as a contemporary record. *The Blockheads* (1776), a prose farce in answer to Burgoyne's *The Blockade* (q.v.,1775), has been attributed to her, probably erroneously. *The Motley Assembly* (1779), also attributed to her, is a farce in which such individuals as Esquire Rent, Mr.Turncoat, Mrs.Flourish, Mr.Taxall, and Mrs. Bubble are ridiculed as types of Boston society who opposed the Revolution as incompatible with their aristocratic notions. Her *Poems Dramatic and Miscellaneous* (1790) contains two verse tragedies, 'The Sack of Rome' and 'The Ladies of Castile,' which, lacking dramatic qualities, were never produced.

WARREN, Robert Penn (1905–), born in Kentucky, while attending Vanderbilt University was a member of the regionalist group which published *The Fugitive* (q.v.). After further education at the University of California and Yale, he became a Rhodes Scholar (1929). His first book, *John Brown* (1929), a biography, was followed by *Pondy Woods and Other Poems* (1930) and *Thirty-six Poems* (1935), which show his continuing adherence to regionalism, as do his contributions to the symposia, *I'll Take My Stand* (1930) and *Who Owns America?* (1936), and also his novel, *Night Rider* (1939), dealing with the Kentucky tobacco country. He is a professor of English at Louisiana State University, where he edits *The Southern Review* (q.v.).

WASHINGTON, Booker T[aliaferro] (1856–1915), son of a Negro slave and a white man, became a leading educator of Negroes in the U.S. After graduation from the Negro vocational school, Hampton Institute, he founded Tuskegee Normal and Industrial Institute (q.v.) in Alabama, which emphasized the need of industrial training. Washington's books include his autobiography, *Up from Slavery* (1901); *The Future of the American Negro* (1899), and *The Story of the Negro* (1909).

WASHINGTON, George (1732–99), 1st President of the U.S. (1789–97), was born on the family estate in Westmoreland

county, Virginia. His education was elementary, and after his father's death (1743) he was guided mainly by his half-brother Lawrence, who obtained him a position as surveyor. His first military experience (1753) was in the Ohio country against the French and Indians, and is recorded in his report, *The Journal of Major George Washington* (1754). His next service was to build Fort Necessity at Great Meadows, near the present site of Pittsburgh, where he defeated the French of Fort Duquesne (May 1754), but was soon forced to retreat and arrange a peace. He then accompanied Braddock (q.v.) in his unsuccessful attack (1755) on Fort Duquesne. On his return, Washington was engaged for two years as commander of the Virginia forces in repelling attacks on the colony's western frontier. In 1759 he married Mrs.Martha Dandridge Custis (1732–1802), and settled down on the Mount Vernon (q.v.) estate inherited from his brother, to lead the life of a country gentleman, though also serving in the House of Burgesses. The conflict with Great Britain drew him into larger colonial politics, and he was a member of both Continental Congresses, upon the outbreak of the Revolutionary War (q.v.) being chosen commander-in-chief of the Continental Army (June 1775). After assuming command of a raw, loosely organized army at Cambridge (July 1775), he began his first campaign, which ended with the capture of Dorchester Heights and the British evacuation of Boston (March 1776). He then attempted the untenable defense of New York, in which he was forced to retreat, although he soon recrossed the Delaware (Christmas, 1776) into New Jersey, and took Trenton and Princeton in a counterattack. The next months were consumed by attempts to build a larger and better disciplined army, but ended with the defeat by Howe at Brandywine (Sept. 1777), and the loss of Philadelphia to the British. The failure to destroy Howe's army at Germantown (Oct. 1777) caused him to retreat to Valley Forge for the hard winter, which was made even more difficult by the Conway Cabal (q.v.). His army nevertheless emerged stronger and better drilled after the arduous winter, and at the Battle of Monmouth (June 1778) showed itself the equal of the British. The assistance of the French troops and a strong southern campaign aided his final victory over Cornwallis at Yorktown (Oct. 1781). The war dragged to an end, and after indignantly refusing the suggestion of some of his soldiers that he be crowned king, Washington retired to Mount Vernon, only to return to public affairs as president of the Federal Constitutional Convention (q.v., 1787). He was elected President of the new government, and drew his cabinet from all factions. He mainly supported the national or federalistic policies of Hamilton, basing financial stability on manufacturing and commerce, and, when Jefferson resigned from the cabinet because of this and the failure to aid France in the war against Great Britain, the two-party system came into being, Jefferson leading the Democratic Republicans and Hamilton the Federalists. Washington's second administration was definitely Federalist, and there was much opposition to his so-called aristocratic tendencies, to Jay's Treaty, and to the tax that led to the Whisky Rebellion (1794). Nevertheless, he had brought the country power, credit, and prestige, had through the exploits of Anthony Wayne temporarily ended severe Indian troubles, opened the Mississippi to navigation through treaties with Spain and Great Britain, and settled financial difficulties through the policies of Hamilton. His writings are important historically, but lack the literary merit of similar contemporary documents. Of these the foremost is the *Farewell Address* (q.v.,1796), a monument of American policy, probably written with the aid of Hamilton and Madison. His *Letters and Papers* (12 vols.,1837) were first collected by Jared Sparks, who bowdlerized the material to present him as a gentlemanly hero. He has figured prominently as a character in American fiction and drama, and the Washington legend owes much to the biography by M.L.Weems (q.v.,*c.*1800), which first tells the cherry-tree story. The best of the early biographies are those by Marshall (5 vols.,1804–7) and Irving (5 vols.,1855–9). The famous phrase, 'First in war, first in peace, and first in the hearts of his countrymen,' was spoken by 'Light-Horse Harry' Lee in his memorial resolution delivered before Congress (Dec. 26, 1799).

Washington, District of Columbia, situated on the Potomac River 40 miles southwest of Baltimore, has been capital of the U.S. since 1800. In 1940 it had a

population of 663,000, of whom 130,000 were Negroes. The seat of all departments of the federal government, Washington is governed by commissioners acting for Congress, and was the first national capital in the world to be planned and built expressly for the purpose. Its site was chosen by Washington and approved by Congress (1790), and the plan by L'Enfant (q.v.) has been generally followed, although it was ignored during the 19th century. After their establishment here in 1800, the governmental departments left the city only temporarily, when it was occupied by the British army (1814). Situated here are the Capitol, White House, Washington National Monument (qq.v.), Treasury Building, Senate and House Office Buildings, Supreme Court Building, and Lincoln Memorial. Mount Vernon and Arlington Cemetery (qq.v.) are located near by. Among the educational institutions are the Library of Congress, the Smithsonian Institution, and the Folger Library (qq.v.); George Washington, Howard, Georgetown, American, and Catholic Universities; the Carnegie Institution of Washington; the Corcoran Gallery of Arts; the National Gallery of Art (q.v.); and many museums and headquarters of learned societies.

Washington and Lee University, situated in Lexington, Virginia, was founded (*c.*1749) as Augusta Academy, renamed Liberty Hall Academy (1776) and then named Washington Academy (1798), having received a gift from George Washington. The present name was adopted (1871) after the death of its president, R.E.Lee. Prominent students have included W.A. Carruthers (1819–20), W.H.McGuffey (grad.1826), T.N.Page (1869–72), and Harvey Fergusson (grad.1911).

Washington National Monument, THE, erected from an original design by Robert Mills (q.v.), is a white marble obelisk, 555 feet high and 55 feet square at the base, situated in Washington,D.C. With funds obtained by popular subscription, it was constructed (1848–54,1876–84) and dedicated (1885). The interior walls contain inscribed memorial stones from foreign countries and native states, cities, and organizations. The cost of the monument was $1,300,000.

Washington Square, novel by Henry James (q.v.) published in 1881.

As Catherine Sloper grows up in her father's New York house in Washington Square, she realizes that he has been embittered by the early loss of his wife and son, and that her own plainness and lack of wit further disappoint him. At 20, Catherine's one advantage is her prospect of inheriting a fortune, and this attracts a suitor, Morris Townsend. The girl is overjoyed, but Dr.Sloper investigates Townsend's status, and finds him penniless. When Catherine dutifully tells her father that she has accepted Townsend's proposal, the doctor refuses his consent, stating that if she marries she will forfeit her inheritance. She is deeply hurt, and after her father forbids Townsend's visits she continues to meet him secretly, finally promising to marry him when he is ready, for she does not realize that what he is waiting for is a change in Dr.Sloper's attitude. Exasperated at his daughter's obstinacy, the doctor takes her to Europe for a year, but this only strengthens her feeling for Townsend. At length, however, she realizes the reason for his interest, and, assuming a stolid calm, informs her father that she has broken the engagement. She refuses to see Townsend again, although later she declines her father's dying request that she vow never to marry Townsend, and he consequently reduces his bequest to her. After a time, Townsend proposes again, abetted by Catherine's aunt, Mrs.Penniman, who had encouraged his suit before, but the disillusioned girl refuses him. She feels that emotion and affection are now past in her life, and remains with the integrity of her sentiment and her position as 'maiden-aunt to the younger portion of society.'

Washington Square Players, THE, New York City little theater, founded in 1915, became famous for developing such talents as those of R.E.Jones and Katherine Cornell. Its members were responsible for the founding of the Theatre Guild (q.v., 1918).

Waste Land, The, poem on the theme of the sterility and chaos of the contemporary world, by T.S.Eliot (q.v.), published in 1922. This most widely known expression of the despair of the post-war era has as a structural framework the symbolism of certain fertility myths that reputedly formed the pagan origins of the Christian Grail legend. The Waste Land itself is a desolate and sterile country ruled by an impotent king, and the poem is divided

into five parts: 'The Burial of the Dead,' representing the rebirth of the land after the barren winter; 'The Game of Chess,' a contrast between the splendor of the past and the squalor of modern life; 'The Fire Sermon,' vignettes of the sordidness of modern life; 'Death by Water,' the vision of a drowned Phœnician sailor who at least dies by water, not thirst; and 'What the Thunder Said,' representing the decay of modern Europe through symbols of the Grail legend. On this structure Eliot builds a poetic representation of modern spiritual barrenness. In the 403 lines of the poem have been included quotations from, allusions to, or imitations of some 35 different writers, as well as several popular songs and passages in six foreign languages, including Sanskrit. Rather than producing an obscure literary medley, as has sometimes been claimed, the connotations of this erudite usage add to the poetic impact of the work, and the rhythms have been varied to harmonize with the changing subject matter.

Watauga Association, see *Robertson, James.*

Watch and Ward, novelette by Henry James (q.v.).

Water Witch, The, romance by Cooper (q.v.) published in 1830. Several dramatic versions, including one by R.P.Smith, were produced in 1830 and 1831.

Set in the region of New York City, at the close of the 17th century, the story is concerned with the admirable small brigantine, *Water Witch,* and its pirate captain, known as 'The Skimmer of the Seas,' whose romantic abduction of a beautiful heiress, Alinda de Barberie, begins the action. Pursued by the English sloop of war, the *Coquette,* whose commander, Captain Ludlow, is Alinda's suitor, the *Water Witch* manages to escape, though remaining in Long Island Sound, until the *Coquette* is engaged in battle by two French ships. The Skimmer of the Seas cannot desert his fellow-countryman in time of danger, and joins forces with Ludlow, helping to destroy the enemy craft. Ludlow is doubly grateful when his fiancée is restored to him, and offers his protection to the patriotic pirate, but The Skimmer of the Seas embarks for new adventures in his own favorite, the *Water Witch.*

Waterloo Bridge, play by Robert Sherwood (q.v.).

WATSON, JOHN B[ROADUS] (1878–), professor of psychology at the University of Chicago (1903–8) and Johns Hopkins (1908–20), is known as the founder of behaviorism, a school of objective psychology holding to the theory that human behavior is conditioned exclusively by physiological reactions and responses to material stimuli. His books include *Psychology from the Standpoint of the Behaviorist* (1919), *Behaviorism* (1925, revised 1931), and *Ways of Behaviorism* (1928).

Watson, MISS, character in *Huckleberry Finn* (q.v.).

WATTERSON, HENRY (1840–1921), editor of the Louisville *Courier-Journal* (q.v.,1868–1918). He was considered a typical Southerner and was called 'Marse Henry,' the title also of his autobiography (1919). A collection of his *Editorials* was published in 1923.

WATTS, MARY S[TANBERY] (1868–), Ohio novelist, whose works include: *Nathan Burke* (1910), a story of an Ohio backwoods boy in the Mexican War; *Van Cleve* (1913), dealing with the Middle West during the period of the Spanish-American War; *From Father to Son* (1919), a story showing the changing standards of the 20th century by the refusal of a boy to accept the fortune of a profiteering grandfather; *The Rise of Jennie Cushing* (1914), dealing with the career of a slum girl and her humanitarian work; *The Boardman Family* (1918); *The House of Rimmon* (1922); *Luther Nichols* (1923); and *The Fabric of the Loom* (1924).

Wave, The, novel by Evelyn Scott (q.v.).

Way Down East, sentimental melodrama by Lottie Blair Parker, produced in 1898, which was for many years one of the most popular vehicles of the stock companies.

Way to Wealth, The, see *Poor Richard's Almanack.*

WAYNE, ANTHONY (1745–96), Pennsylvanian brigadier-general in the Revolutionary War, commanded a division at Brandywine and Germantown, and later made successful raids on British supplies for the troops camped at Valley Forge. His most famous achievement was the capture in a night attack (July 1779) of Stony Point, the northernmost British fort on the Hudson. He accompanied Lafayette in Virginia, and aided in the capture of Yorktown. He was called 'Mad Anthony' because of his daring exploits. After the

war, as head of the army, he defeated the hostile Indians of the Northwest Territory near the present site of Toledo, Ohio (Aug. 1794).

Ways of the Hour, The, romance by Cooper (q.v.).

Wayside Inn, located near the village of Sudbury, about 20 miles from Cambridge, Massachusetts, is also known as the Red-Horse Inn (founded 1686). It was originally the country house of an English family named Howe, who later kept it as a public place. It is most famous as the scene of Longfellow's *Tales of a Wayside Inn* (q.v.), and was purchased by Henry Ford as a Longfellow shrine and colonial museum (1923).

We Are Betrayed, novel by Vardis Fisher (q.v.).

We Are Coming, Father Abraham, *Three Hundred Thousand More,* poem by James Sloan Gibbons (1810–92), a Quaker Abolitionist. Prompted by Lincoln's call for 300,000 new troops in 1862, the poem appeared in the New York *Evening Post* (July 1862), and, in musical settings by Luther O. Emerson, Stephen Foster, and others, became a favorite song of Union partisans.

WEAVER, JOHN V[AN] A[LSTYN] (1893–1938), born in North Carolina, was best known for his poetry, although he served as a New York critic, Hollywood screen writer, and wrote novels and plays. His poems, *In American* (1921), *Finders* (1923), *More 'In American'* (1925), *To Youth* (1927), *Turning Point* (1930), and *Trial Balance* (1931), employ American slang in depicting shopgirls, salesmen, and other average residents of great cities, in a solemn, toughly sentimental manner. His best-known play, written with George Abbott, is *Love 'Em and Leave 'Em* (1926).

Web and the Rock, The, novel by Thomas Wolfe (q.v.).

WEBBER, CHARLES WILKINS (1819–56), born in Kentucky, after a short residence in Texas went to New York, where he became a prominent journalist. He returned to attempt frontier explorations, and was a member of Walker's filibustering party, being killed in a Nicaraguan battle. His melodramatic stories of the wild West include: *Old Hicks, the Guide* (1848), *The Gold Mines of the Gila* (1849), and *Tales of the Southern Border* (1852). His close friendship with Audubon may have inspired his books of natural history, *The Hunter-Naturalist* (1851) and *Wild Scenes and Song Birds* (1854).

WEBER AND FIELDS, comic vaudeville team of Joseph Weber (1867–), and Lew Fields (1867–), whose co-operation in German-Jewish dialect sketches began in 1877. Their partnership continued through the establishment of their own theater (1885), their appearance in musical comedies, and later in motion pictures and radio.

WEBSTER, DANIEL (1782–1852), born in New Hampshire, graduated from Dartmouth (1801), and was admitted to the bar (1805). He was a Federalist congressman (1813–17,1823–7), championing the New England shipping and mercantile interests, and meanwhile gaining a great reputation as a Boston lawyer and orator. As senator (1827–41) he became a leading Whig opponent of Calhoun's theory of state rights and Jackson's war on the Bank of the United States, which was one of Webster's principal clients. Although he was considered for the Whig presidential candidacy, he never attained this ambition. He served as secretary of state (1841–3) in the cabinets of Harrison and Tyler, but after terminating the Webster-Ashburton Treaty negotiations (1842), which settled the Maine-Canada boundary dispute with Great Britain, he followed the other Whigs in resigning from the cabinet because Tyler showed himself to be a believer in state rights and an opponent of the main principles of the party. Webster returned to the Senate (1845–50), where he championed the protective tariff views of New England's vested interests, for he had been ruined financially in the panic of 1837 and was virtually a hired retainer of the conservative Massachusetts businessmen. Although he continued his moderate stand against slavery, he adhered to the constitutional rights of the slaveholders, since he realized that Southern Whigs must be propitiated if the wealthy Northerners were to obtain revision of the tariff toward further protection. He was consequently reviled as a traitor by the antislavery Northerners when he championed the Compromise of 1850 in his conciliatory 'Seventh of March Speech' (q.v.) on 'The Constitution and the Union.' Whittier attacked Webster in his poem, 'Ichabod' (q.v.), and Emerson

declared that 'all the drops of his blood have eyes that look downward' and he was a fallen star in the regard of all liberal thinkers. Webster's last office was that of secretary of state in Fillmore's cabinet (1850–52), where he continued to work for Clay's compromise measures. Among his famous legal arguments were the Dartmouth College Case (q.v.,1816–19) and the Rhode Island Case, concerned with Dorr's Rebellion. His reputation as an orator was based on such legal cases, his many public addresses, such as those at Bunker Hill (1825, '43) and a *Discourse in Commemoration of Jefferson and Adams* (1826), the speeches in the Senate and House of Representatives, and other addresses, all characterized by an eloquent Ciceronian rhetoric. His *Writings and Speeches* were collected in 18 volumes (1903).

WEBSTER, Henry Kitchell (1875–1932), Illinois novelist, best known for his romantic glorifications of captains of industry in such works, written with Samuel Merwin, as *The Short-Line War* (1899); *Calumet 'K'* (1901); and *Comrade John* (1907). He was the author of some 25 other novels, including *The Banker and the Bear* (1900).

WEBSTER, Jean (1876–1916), New York author of juvenile novels, whose best-known works were *Daddy-Long-Legs* (1912), a sentimental, humorous story of orphanage life, and the *Patty* series about a young college girl. The prototype of the heroine of both the novel and the series is said to have been her friend, Adelaide Crapsey, whose *Verse* she edited (1915).

WEBSTER, Noah (1758–1843), Connecticut lexicographer and philologist, after graduation from Yale (1778) began his career with the publication of *A Grammatical Institute of the English Language* (1783–5). The first part of this work became his famous *Spelling Book*, which was designed to meet American needs, and long played a fundamental part in American education by its aid in standardizing spellings that differed from the English. It was so widely used that by 1890 this work, with its various revisions, had sold more than 60,000,000 copies. His attempts to obtain a copyright for his book led Webster into politics as a zealous Federalist, for his need to obtain the proper legislation in thirteen states caused him to champion a strong central government that could control matters of this sort. His ideas on a federal union were set forth in *Sketches of American Policy* (1785). Between periods of school teaching and legal practice, he edited the Federalist journals, *American Minerva* (q.v.,1793–1803) and *Herald* (1794–1803). He also wrote graceful essays, works on economics, science, and medicine, edited the *Journal* of John Winthrop, and, prompted by Franklin, wrote *Dissertations on the English Language* (1789), with radical views on reformed spelling, although his other orthographical works were on the whole traditional. His *Compendious Dictionary of the English Language* (1806) was a forerunner of his scholarly work, *An American Dictionary of the English Language* (2 vols., 1828). At the time of its publication, there raged a 'War of the Dictionaries' with the rival lexicographer, Joseph Worcester (q.v.), but Webster's work, adding some 5,000 words not before included in English dictionaries, making use of Americanisms, and basing its definitions on the usage of American as well as English writers, soon became the recognized authority. In 1840 Webster revised his work to include 70,000 words instead of the original 38,000, and it has remained a recognized American authority in the many revisions made since his death.

WEED, Thurlow (1797–1882), New York journalist and political leader, used the Rochester *Telegraph* to oppose the Democratic 'Albany Regency,' and as editor of the *Albany Evening Journal* (1830–62) became a power in the Whig party. His antislavery interest drew him into the Republican party, in which he co-operated with Seward and supported Lincoln.

Week on the Concord and Merrimack Rivers, A, autobiographical narrative by Thoreau (q.v.) published in 1849. It was written, mainly during the period described in Walden, from earlier journal entries, poems, and essays. The narrative describes seven days in a small boat during a trip (Aug. 31–Sept. 13, 1839), which the author made with his brother John to the White Mountains in New Hampshire. From the description of the homemade dory, which was 'painted green below, with a border of blue, with reference to the two elements in which it was to spend its existence,' to the account of New Hampshire people, the book maintains a certain air of romantic adventure, but the travel

narrative is generally subordinated to learned digressions into history, religion, and philosophy; poetry; discussions of literary classics; and such Emersonian essays as the one on friendship. Some of the passages have been frequently quoted, for Thoreau's lucid, sententious style was already fully developed, and was said by Lowell to have 'an antique purity like wine grown colorless with age.' During the author's lifetime, the book was not popular, and such editors as H.S.Canby have since attempted to give it a more compact form by eliminating 'indoor additions.'

Weekly Rehearsal, *The* (1731–5), Boston newspaper, was founded by Jeremy Gridley, who filled half the paper with his Addisonian essays. It was taken over by his printer, Thomas Fleet (1733), who impartially opened its columns to any political views. Fleet renamed the paper the *Boston Evening Post* (q.v.,1735).

WEEMS, Mason Locke (1759–1825), Episcopal clergyman, temporarily at Pohick Church, Mount Vernon parish, where Washington is supposed to have been one of his parishioners. For more than 30 years he was also an author and peddler of chapbooks, and a book agent, mainly for Matthew Carey, contending that the selling of 'good books' was but a wider missionary field for God's work. Among his short biographies the best known is *The Life and Memorable Actions of George Washington* (*c.*1800), which first gives the story of the cherry-tree episode in the so-called Fifth Edition of 1806, and is primarily responsible for much of the Washington myth. He also wrote biographies of Franklin, Penn, and Francis Marion, and several moral tracts, ranging from *Hymen's Recruiting Serjeant* (*c.*1799), a plea for brotherly love verging on Universalism, to *God's Revenge against Adultery* (1815).

WEIR, Julian Alden (1852–1919), New York painter, first studied under his father, Robert Walter Weir (1803–89), an academic artist of large historical canvases. He then went to Paris, where he was influenced by Impressionism, painting with spots of unmixed color to create a natural luminous atmosphere. With Twachtmann, he introduced this method to the U.S., and became noted for his cool, silvery landscapes, with quiet, delicate light effects, as well as for such figure paintings as *The Donkey Ride*, *The Green Bodice*, and *The Orchid*, in which gradations of light tone are relieved by spots of pure color, with the simple masses of figures unsacrificed to the veil of atmosphere that envelops them. His etchings display the same interest in effects of light.

WEISS, John (1818–79), Unitarian minister of Massachusetts, and prominent reformer, upon returning from Heidelberg helped to introduce idealistic German literature to New England with his translations of Schiller (1845) and other authors. His other works were the *Life and Correspondence of Theodore Parker* (2 vols., 1863) and *American Religion* (1871).

WELD, Theodore Dwight (1803–95), Massachusetts reformer, was a disciple of Charles Stuart and himself the earliest and most influential of American abolitionists. His eloquent speeches and active campaigning in New York, Ohio, the Southern states, and elsewhere, were largely responsible for consolidating anti-slavery feeling and for converting such later leaders as J.G.Birney, E.M.Stanton, Lyman Beecher, and the Grimké sisters. Mrs.Stowe attributed to his tract, *American Slavery As It Is* (1839), the inspiration for *Uncle Tom's Cabin*. Among his few published works is *The Bible Against Slavery* (1837), for though he made many speeches his passion for anonymity, which kept him from holding office or attending conventions, caused him to refuse permission for publishing them. In 1838 he married Angelina Grimké (1805–79) who with her sister, Sarah Moore Grimké (1792–1873), deserted the beliefs of their father, a South Carolina planter and slaveholder, to write and lecture on Abolition and woman suffrage.

WELD (or Welde), Thomas (1595–1661), English Congregational minister, resided in Massachusetts (1632–41), where he took a leading part in combating the teachings of Anne Hutchinson, and with John Eliot and Richard Mather wrote the *Bay Psalm Book* (q.v.,1640). In 1641, with Hugh Peter, he returned to England to represent the colony, and never returned to America. With Peter he edited and in part wrote *New England's First Fruits* (q.v.,1643), but his failure to stop Roger Williams from acquiring a grant of land, and his inefficient handling of funds caused his dismissal, after which he turned his attention to English religious and political affairs. His interest in New England continued, as may be seen

in his publication of *An Answer to W.R.* . . . (1644), attacking William Rathband's criticisms of New England's 'Godly and Orthodoxicall Churches'; *A Short Story of the Rise, Reign, and Ruine of the Antinomians* . . . (1644), which was compiled from Winthrop's account of the Anne Hutchinson episode; and *A Brief Narration of the Practices of the Churches in New-England* (1645).

WELLES, GIDEON (1802–78), born in Connecticut, edited the *Hartford Times* (1826–36), which helped organize Jacksonian Democracy in his state, and held several positions in the state and federal government until he broke with his party on the slavery question. He helped found the Republican party, and was chosen by Lincoln to be his secretary of the navy, a post which he held until 1869 under Johnson. He was distinguished both in conducting his department and in supervising naval warfare, although previously untrained in naval matters, and remained ardently loyal to the policies of both Lincoln and Johnson. In addition to his book, *Lincoln and Seward* (1874), his *Diary* (3 vols.,1911) is of great historical value, although somewhat damaged by the many revisions made in later years.

WELLES, [GEORGE] ORSON (1915–), born in Wisconsin, after graduation from high school became an actor in Ireland and the U.S. and was a director of the New York Federal Theatre. His successful productions of *Dr.Faustus* and a Negro adaptation of *Macbeth* led to the founding of his Mercury Theatre (1937), where he won attention by his adaptation of *Julius Cæsar* in modern dress and without scenery. His series of radio adaptations of famous novels and plays brought him notoriety in 1938, when a realistic production of H.G.Wells's *The War of the Worlds* caused a widespread panic, being mistaken for an actual report of a Martian invasion of the earth. He produced, directed, and acted in the motion picture, *Citizen Kane* (1941), whose alleged resemblance to the life of W.R.Hearst brought Welles further notoriety.

Wellesley College, founded in 1875, is a leading educational institution for women, situated at Wellesley, Massachusetts, some 15 miles southwest of Boston. Katherine Lee Bates was a professor there.

WELLS, HELENA (*fl.*1799–1800), writer of didactic sentimental novels, is described on the title page of her novel, *The Stepmother* (1799), as being a resident 'of Charleston, South Carolina,' and seems to have been a Loyalist who later served as a governess in London. Her other novel is *Constantia Neville; or, The West Indian* (1800).

WELLS, HORACE (1815–48), Boston dentist, associated with W.T.G.Morton (q.v., 1841–3). Although they later had a controversy over which was the first in using anesthetics, Wells has been credited with experiments in this field as early as 1840. C.W.Long (q.v.), a Georgia surgeon, contested the priority of both Morton and Wells. The latter experimented with nitrous oxide, popularly known as 'laughing gas,' instead of ether, and followed his first printed statement (1846) with a pamphlet outlining his work (1847). While experimenting with chloroform, he was imprisoned for creating a disturbance, and in dejection committed suicide.

WENDELL, BARRETT (1855–1921), professor of English at Harvard (1880–1917), is known both for his teaching and scholarship and as an early instructor in American literature. His works include the leading biography of *Cotton Mather* (1891), a critical study of *William Shakespere* (1894), *A Literary History of America* (1900), and *The Temper of the Seventeenth Century in English Literature* (1904).

Wenonah, character in *Hiawatha* (q.v.).

Wept of Wish-ton-Wish, The, romance by Cooper (q.v.) published in 1829. An anonymous dramatic version, produced in 1834, was published in 1856.

The story opens in 1666, and is set in the Connecticut settlement of Wish-ton-Wish, the home of the old colonist Mark Heathcote and his family. There are constant threats of Indian attacks, but Heathcote is aided by the advice and warnings of the mysterious stranger, Submission (the regicide Goffe), and a captive Indian lad who is especially befriended by Heathcote's daughter-in-law, Ruth. The boy disappears during an attack, taking with him her small daughter, also named Ruth. The main part of the story deals with King Philip's War, ten years later. The Heathcote settlement is attacked by Indians under Metacomet (King Philip) and Conanchet (Canonchet), the latter being the former boy captive, now grown

and a chief of the Narragansetts. His wife, Narra-mattah, is the kidnapped Ruth, and when the Heathcotes are captured, she and Conanchet save them from execution. A few days later, Conanchet's intervention in behalf of Submission and the Heathcotes results in his capture and execution in Philip's camp, following a chase by his old enemies, the Pequots and Mohegans, under their chief, Uncas. Narra-mattah dies beside the body of her husband, and her mother dies soon afterward, 'the wept of Wish-ton-Wish.'

WERNER, M[ORRIS] R[OBERT] (1897–), journalist and author, known for his debunking studies of famous American persons and institutions: *Barnum* (1923), *Brigham Young* (1925), *Tammany Hall* (1928), *Bryan* (1929), *Little Napoleons and Dummy Directors* (1933), and *Privileged Characters* (1935), the last a survey of post-war graft. He has also written of his war experiences in *'Orderly!'* (1930), and edited *Stalin's Kampf* (1940), a collection of excerpts from the pronouncements of the Soviet leader.

WESCOTT, GLENWAY (1901–), Wisconsin author, known for his writings about his native region, although he has lived mainly abroad. After publishing *The Bitterns* (1920), poems, he wrote *The Apple of the Eye* (1924), a novel of the frontier West about a boy torn between the crabbed orthodoxy of his aunt, a typical pioneer woman, and the pagan acceptance of the beauty of life taught him by a friend. After *Natives of Rock* (1925), a volume of poems, and *Like a Lover* (1926), short stories, he wrote his best-known work, *The Grandmothers* (1927), published in England as *A Family Portrait.* This is the story of a pioneer Midwestern family told through the imagination of a youth, Alwyn Tower, who, having escaped to Europe from his uncongenial background, nostalgically turns the pages of a photograph album, and from the faces of his ancestors reconstructs their sad, frustrated lives. *Good-Bye, Wisconsin* (1928) is a collection of short stories presenting the same dour interpretation of the Middle West. Wescott's other books include: *The Babe's Bed* (1930), an allegorical story about a young man who returns to his Midwestern home to ponder on the future of a newly born child; *Fear and Trembling* (1932), a book of essays on the current political and social crisis, based on a trip through Central Europe; and *A Calendar of Saints for Unbelievers* (1932), marked by a confused mysticism and agnosticism. *The Pilgrim Hawk* (1940), his first work of fiction in 10 years, is set in a Paris suburb during the 1920's and concerns three couples, linked by three different types of love.

WEST, BENJAMIN (1738–1820), born in Pennsylvania, had a brief career as a portrait painter and left for further study in Italy (1760), where he became popular because of his personal charm and the romantic interest attached to anyone from America. He went to London (1763), where he remained for the rest of his life. Under the patronage of George III he received many commissions and was appointed historical painter to the king (1772). He succeeded his friend, Sir Joshua Reynolds, as president of the Royal Academy (1792). West was a prolific painter of mythological, Biblical, and historical canvases, whose heroic scale Copley dubbed 'ten-acre.' Among his best-known works are *Death of General Wolfe*, *Penn's Treaty with the Indians*, and *Christ Healing the Sick.* Although technically a competent artist, West placed undue emphasis on didacticism, and adhered too closely to the classical formula to develop a character of his own. The color of his paintings is thin, the figures are sharply outlined with hard contours, and the general effect of his enormous production is cold and formal. He nevertheless dominated American painting for almost half a century, through his teaching and example influencing such younger artists as Gilbert Stuart, C.W.Peale, Rembrandt Peale, Trumbull, Dunlap, Allston, S.F.B. Morse, and Sully.

West, JULIAN, hero of *Looking Backward* (q.v.).

WEST, THOMAS, see *De La Warr.*

West Point, site on the western bank of the Hudson River, 45 miles north of New York City, on which is located the U.S. Military Academy (founded 1802). The authorized number of the present corps of cadets is 1,960, of whom 6 are appointed from each state, 3 from each Congressional district, 3 from each territory, 3 from Puerto Rico, 5 from the District of Columbia, 172 from the U.S. at large, and 180 from among the enlisted men in the army and the National Guard. During the Revolutionary War,

Washington's headquarters were at West Point (1779) and the following year, when Benedict Arnold was in command there, he plotted to deliver it to André. In addition to most of the distinguished officers of the U.S.Army, students at West Point have included Poe, G.H.Derby, and Whistler.

WESTCHESTER FARMER, pseudonym of Samuel Seabury (q.v.).

WESTCOTT, EDWARD NOYES (1846–98), after a successful career as a banker in Syracuse, New York, wrote the posthumously published *David Harum, A Story of American Life* (q.v.,1898), a popular novel built around the character of a shrewd, humorous country banker in upstate New York. A short story was posthumously published with his letters in *The Teller* (1901).

Western Messenger, The (1835–41), monthly religious and literary magazine, edited from Cincinnati and Louisville by W.H.Channing, assisted by J.F.Clarke (1836–9). Some attempt was made to interpret the West to the East, but the literary contributions were mainly Transcendental and Unitarian discussions or interpretations of German and Oriental literature, in which, as in other particulars, the *Messenger* preceded *The Dial.* Emerson contributed 'Good-bye,' 'The Rhodora,' 'Each and All,' and 'The Humble-Bee,' while Keats's 'Ode to Apollo' and a part of his journal were contributed by his brother George. Other contributors included Margaret Fuller, Jones Very, Parker, C.P.Cranch, Elizabeth Peabody, and Parkman.

Western Monthly Magazine, see *Illinois Monthly Magazine.*

Western Monthly Review, see *Flint, Timothy.*

Western Reserve University, nonsectarian coeducational institution at Cleveland, Ohio, founded as a men's college at Hudson, Ohio (1826), and chartered as a university in 1884. Graduates include Josiah Strong (1869) and Rupert Hughes (1892).

Western Review and Miscellaneous Magazine, see *Hunt, W.G.*

Western Travel, Retrospect of, sketches by Harriet Martineau (q.v.).

Western University, see *Pittsburgh, University of.*

Westervelt, character in *The Blithedale Romance* (q.v.).

Westlock, JOHN, character in *The Story of a Country Town* (q.v.).

Westmoreland Association, organized by R.H.Lee (Feb. 1776) to draw the citizens of Westmoreland County, Virginia, into an agreement to import no British goods until the Stamp Act should be repealed. It is significant as the first of many boycotting measures prior to the Revolution.

Westover Manuscripts, journals of William Byrd (q.v.), which remained unpublished from 1728 to 1841. They contain his *History of the Dividing Line, Journey to the Land of Eden,* and *Progress to the Mines* (qq.v.), records of his frontier expeditions. The name refers to the author's estate, Westover, on the James River.

West-Running Brook, poems by Robert Frost (q.v.).

Westways, novel by S.W.Mitchell (q.v.).

WETHERELL, ELIZABETH, pseudonym of Susan B. Warner (q.v.).

WETZEL (or WEITZEL), LEWIS (1764–1808?), Indian fighter and border scout, famous as a frontier figure in West Virginia and Ohio. As a youth he was captured by Indians, and as a result became their confirmed and barbarous opponent. He figures as Timothy Weasel in Paulding's *The Dutchman's Fireside.*

WEXLEY, JOHN (1907–), New York dramatist, whose plays include: *The Last Mile* (1930), dealing with the last days of a condemned prisoner; *Steel* (1931); *They Shall Not Die* (1934), concerned with the Scottsboro Case (q.v.); and *Running Dogs* (1938), dealing with the struggle between Chinese conservatives and Communists prior to the Japanese invasion.

Whale, The, see *Moby-Dick.*

WHALLEY, EDWARD, see *Goffe.*

Wharf Theatre, see *Provincetown Players.*

WHARTON, EDITH [NEWBOLD JONES] (1862–1937), member of a distinguished New York family, was privately educated in the U.S. and abroad. Her short stories, *The Greater Inclination* (1899), were followed by *The Touchstone* (1900), published in England as *A Gift from the Grave,* which showed the influence of Henry James both in its form as a novelette and

in its occupation with ethical values. It is concerned with a man torn between his desire to obtain money to marry the woman he loves, and his reluctance to sell the love letters written to him by a celebrated woman. *The Valley of Decision* (q.v.,1902), her first long novel, is notable for its depiction of an 18th-century Italian aristocrat of liberal sympathies. After another novelette, *Sanctuary* (1903), she wrote *The House of Mirth* (q.v.,1905), the story of a New York girl whose attempts to make a brilliant marriage lead to ostracism because she breaks conventional standards. As in Henry James, her study of the effects of false values here rises above the level of the novel of manners to become tragedy. In 1907 Mrs.Wharton moved to France, which she made the scene of her novelette, *Madame de Treymes* (1907), contrasting French and American concepts of honor. Her next novel, *The Fruit of the Tree* (1907), set with a background of a great American woolen mill, is concerned with the inner conflict of a business executive between the demands of his work and those of the two women he loves. *Ethan Frome* (q.v.,1911), a sharply etched novelette concerning simple New England people, is considered her greatest tragic story, and shows a marked departure from the ironic contemplation of aristocratic mores and highly complex characters. Yet, as in *The House of Mirth*, the central problem is that of the barriers imposed by local conventions upon an individual whose happiness depends on rising above them. From the fine simplicity of this work the author returned to complex treatments of moral and social conflicts in *The Reef* (1912) and *The Custom of the Country* (1913), stories of Americans in France. The latter is an international novel of manners, contrasting the background of an American social climber with the standards of her third husband, a French patrician. *Summer* (1917) again employed the direct realism of *Ethan Frome*, in the study of a New England girl who returns to live with a degenerate group of outlaws, in order to escape the mean life of the village to which she has been taken. During the First World War, Mrs.Wharton not only gave her energy to relief work, as described in *Fighting France, from Dunkerque to Belfort* (1915), but also made the events of the time the subject of her fiction in *The Marne* (1918) and *A Son at the Front* (1923). *The Age of Innocence* (q.v.,1920; Pulitzer Prize, 1921), considered her most skilfully constructed work, shows the obvious influence of James in the unified view of the action as revealed through the consciousness of one character, and in the ironic handling of Victorian social standards in New York high society. After an international novel of manners, *The Glimpses of the Moon* (1922), the author returned to the American scene in 'Old New York' (1924), four novelettes, *False Dawn*, *The Old Maid* (q.v.), *The Spark*, and *New Year's Day*, depicting the decades from the 1840's to the 1870's. Her next three novels deal with the relations of parents and children, and include *The Mother's Recompense* (q.v.,1925), *Twilight Sleep* (1927), and *The Children* (1928). *Hudson River Bracketed* (1929) is a contrast of the culture of the Middle West with that of settled New York society, and its sequel, *The Gods Arrive* (1932), carries the contrast of morals and social conventions to England and the continent. Although she wrote two volumes of poetry, *Artemis to Actæon* (1909) and *Twelve Poems* (1926), Mrs.Wharton's main form outside the novel was the short story. Her stories were collected in: *Crucial Instances* (1901); *The Descent of Man* (1904); *The Hermit and the Wild Woman* (1908); *Tales of Men and Ghosts* (1910), cerebral ghost stories in the James manner, in which the ghosts are projections of men's mental obsessions; *Xingu and Other Stories* (q.v., 1916), which in brief form uses her major themes—the brittle standards of high society, the supernatural, the background of the World War, the historical study, the stunted middle-class lives in 19th-century New York; *Here and Beyond* (1926); *Certain People* (1930); *Human Nature* (1933); *The World Over* (1936); and *Ghosts* (1937). *The Writing of Fiction* (1925) shows her artistic credo to be that of James, who felt, she said, 'every great novel must first of all be based on a profound sense of moral values, and then constructed with a classical unity and economy of means.' She insists that the author must 'bear in mind at each step that his business is not to ask what the situation would be likely to make of his characters, but what his characters, being what they are, would make of the situation . . .' In addition to travel books, such as *Italian Backgrounds* (1905), *A Motor-Flight through France* (1908), and *In Morocco* (1920), she wrote an autobiography, *A Backward Glance*

(1934). She left an unfinished novel, *The Buccaneers* (1938), concerned with the attempt of socially unsuccessful American girls to enter English society.

What Is Man?, essay by Clemens (q.v.) based on his paper, 'What Is Happiness?,' delivered before the Monday Evening Club of Hartford (Feb. 1883), rewritten (1898), privately published without the author's name (1906), and posthumously collected in *What Is Man? and Other Essays* (1917).

In this Platonic dialogue between a Young Man and a disillusioned Old Man, the mouthpiece of the author's pessimistic view of mankind, the Old Man considers human beings to be merely mechanisms, lacking free will, motivated selfishly by a need for self-approval, and completely the products of their environment. In an 'Admonition to the Human Race,' he pleads for the raising of ideals of conduct to a point where the individual's satisfaction will coincide with the best interests of the community.

What Maisie Knew, novel by Henry James (q.v.) published in 1897.

Beale and Ida Farange, an idle, spendthrift English couple, are divorced when their daughter Maisie is six. Each sues for custody of the unwanted child, and the court arranges that she shall live with them alternately for six-month periods. This serves their purpose of spite, and they earnestly indoctrinate Maisie with hateful notions of each other. First she stays with Beale, and then with her mother and a governess, attractive Miss Overmore. The governess is apparently strongly attached to her pupil, but quarrels with Ida, who discharges her in favor of Mrs.Wix, an untidy, incompetent old woman, whose sentimentality and motherliness win Maisie's confidence. The child, precociously acute, has become aware of her position and knows the wisdom of silence, which is misunderstood as a symptom of stupidity. At Beale's again, she finds Miss Overmore as governess, but the young woman now neglects Maisie to busy herself in the affairs of Beale. Mrs.Wix announces the engagement of Ida to Sir Claude, with whom she says Maisie is to stay, but Miss Overmore retorts by telling of her own marriage to Beale. Maisie is now an encumbrance, and, when Ida tires of Sir Claude and has a succession of lovers, he in turn falls in love with 'Mrs. Beale.' Mrs.Wix appeals to him to leave the 'bad women' and devote himself to Maisie. The appeal is futile, though Sir Claude goes to France with Maisie, after she refuses to accompany Beale to America with his latest consort. Mrs.Wix joins them in France, informing Sir Claude that 'Mrs.Beale' is now free, which causes him to hurry back to England. When he returns, he asks Maisie to give up Mrs.Wix, whom 'Mrs.Beale' hates, and come to live with them. The child replies that she will give up Mrs.Wix if he will give up 'Mrs. Beale.' He loves Maisie, but cannot do this, and Maisie and Mrs.Wix return to England, their income assured by Sir Claude. Still a 'little girl,' Maisie is far beyond her years in 'what she knows,' for in her strange situation, aided by her sharp vision and the constant moralizing of Mrs. Wix, she has come to understand 'everything.'

What Price Glory, play by Maxwell Anderson and Laurence Stallings (qq.v.), produced in 1924 and published in 1926.

At the headquarters of a company of U.S.marines in France (1918), Captain Flagg is a rough professional soldier who outdoes his men in profanity, brutality, and amorous adventure. First Sergeant Quirt, another professional soldier with whom the captain maintains a friendly enmity, comes to take charge of the company during Flagg's week of leave in Paris, and during that time appropriates Flagg's 'girl' Charmaine, daughter of the innkeeper Pete de la Cognac. Pete demands that Quirt marry the girl he has 'ruined' or pay him 500 francs, and Flagg takes advantage of this opportunity for retaliation by ordering the Sergeant to marry Charmaine or face a court-martial. The wedding is interrupted by orders for the company to proceed into action, and they are promised a month's leave if they can find a prisoner for the Intelligence Service. Quirt is wounded and returns to Charmaine, while Flagg goes into action and gets his prisoner. Flagg and Quirt, together again, drink and quarrel in their customary way, then gamble for Charmaine. Flagg wins, but headquarters suddenly revokes the promised leave, and the weary soldiers leave for the front again, forgetting their quarrels and Charmaine, as Quirt concludes: 'What a lot of God damn fools it takes to make a war! Hey, Flagg, wait for baby!'

WHEATLEY, PHILLIS (1753?–84), Negro poet brought from Africa, became a slave of the Boston merchant, John Wheatley, who encouraged her talent. *Poems on Various Subjects* (1773) is representative of her derivative poetry, typical of her century. Her work was famous among American intellectuals, and when the source of their authorship was questioned in England, many people vouched for her originality, including Jefferson, who nevertheless said her poetry was beneath the dignity of criticism.

WHEATON, HENRY (1785–1848), born in Rhode Island, studied law in the U.S. and abroad, and became a leading New York lawyer and an editor of a Jeffersonian newspaper. While chargé d'affaires to Denmark (1827–35), he wrote *History of the Northmen* (1831), defending the pre-Columbian discovery of America. Holding a similar post in Berlin (1835–46), he published *Elements of International Law* (1836) and *History of the Law of Nations* (1845), complementary volumes that caused him to be ranked as the outstanding American expounder and historian of international law. The former work was later edited in a notable edition by R.H. Dana,Jr. (q.v.).

Wheel of Time, The, stories by Henry James (q.v.).

WHEELER, EDWARD L., see *Deadwood Dick.*

WHEELOCK, ELEAZAR (1711–79), Congregational clergyman of Connecticut, became the first president of Dartmouth College (1769–79) when this institution was founded both as a classical seminary and to continue his former school for Indians (founded 1754). His *Plain and Faithful Narrative of the . . . Indian Charity-School at Lebanon* was published in 1763, with additions following until 1775.

WHEELOCK, JOHN HALL (1886–), New York poet, while at Harvard wrote with Van Wyck Brooks, *Verses by Two Undergraduates* (1905). His next works, *The Human Fantasy* (1911) and *The Beloved Adventure* (1912), are exuberant, athletic lyrics indicating the influence of Whitman and Henley. His later verse, in *Love and Liberation* (1913), *Dust and Light* (1919), *The Black Panther* (1922), *The Bright Doom* (1927), and other volumes, show a change to philosophic poetry, tinged by ethereal mysticism, though still possessed of the same rhetorical qualities. A collection, *Poems*, 1911–1936, was issued in 1936.

WHEELWRIGHT, JOHN (*c.*1592–1679), Congregational clergyman, emigrated to New England (1636), where in the ensuing Antinomian controversy he supported the views of his sister-in-law Anne Hutchinson. He was therefore banished (1637), and became a pastor of churches outside the Massachusetts jurisdiction. His *Mercurius Americanus* (1745) was a reply to the history of the Antinomians written by Thomas Weld (q.v.). He was later allowed to return to the colony and held a pastorate.

When Johnny Comes Marching Home, Civil War marching song, based on an old Negro melody, composed by the bandmaster P.S.Gilmore in 1863 under the pseudonym Louis Lambert. The words are by T.B.Bishop (q.v.). Roy Harris has written an overture based on the tune.

When Knighthood Was in Flower, novel by Charles Major (q.v.).

When Lilacs Last in the Door Yard Bloom'd, elegy on the death of Lincoln by Whitman (q.v.), first published in *Sequel to Drum-Taps* (1865–6) and incorporated in *Leaves of Grass* (1867).

The poet, lamenting the death of his hero, brings a sprig of lilac, symbolic of love, for the 'coffin that slowly passes . . .,' and perfumes 'the grave of him I love' with 'the breath of my chant' and 'sea-winds, blown from east and west,' representative of eternal life. Held by the lilac of human love and the drooping star in the west, representative of Lincoln the man, the poet cannot yet answer the 'shy and hidden' thrush, symbolic of the poet and his 'song of the bleeding throat,' which represents the carol of death, deliverer of the soul. He flees to the shores of the sea, representative of eternal life, and, forgetting this world, finds consolation in the thought of immortality announced in the carol of death sung by the gray-brown bird. Hearing it 'joyously sing the dead, . . . Laved in the flood of thy bliss, O death,' the poet sees a vision of the late war, whose dead are at rest, and whose living alone suffer. Finally the song of the thrush arouses an echo in the poet's soul, and

> Lilac and star and bird twined with the chant of my soul,
> There in the fragrant pines and the cedars dusk and dim.

Where the Blue Begins, fantasy by Christopher Morley (q.v.) published in 1922.

Mr.Gissing, a romantically-minded dog, lives a comfortable bachelor life in suburban Canine Estates, until his vague desire to attain the blue horizon is accentuated by the coming of spring. When he adopts three puppies, Bunks, Groups, and Yelpers, his Japanese pug servant Fuji deserts him, and he hires Mrs.Spaniel to care for the 'children.' Tired of domestication, he seeks adventure in employment as a floorwalker and then as manager of Beagle and Company; seeks spiritual truth as a preacher for the wealthy congregation on Dalmatian Heights, but is hounded out of his position by the orthodox, and escapes on a steam-roller; and finally seeks the blue horizon itself as a stowaway on the *Pomerania*. Captain Scottie, overcome by Gissing's theological arguments, relinquishes command to the stowaway, who finds the 'blue' no nearer. In a foreign port he discovers a human tramp whom he takes to be God, and worships. Just in time for a Christmas celebration, he returns to the puppies and Mrs.Spaniel, and finds the flame of the coals in the domestic furnace to be 'a clear immortal blue.'

Whig Party, first formally organized in 1836, although its origins are traced to the earliest opposition to Jacksonian Democracy in the 1820's, and the name was applied before the Revolution to followers of British Whig politics. The Anti-Masonic and National Republican parties (qq.v.) combined with other dissident groups in supporting Clay for the presidency (1832), and in 1836 they formed the Whig party, although, failing to select a compromise candidate, they had three nominees, Webster, Harrison, and H.L.White, thus giving the election to the Democrats. From this time the Whigs increased in power, with Webster and Clay remaining the principal leaders. Sectional differences again split the party after its victory of 1840, in which Harrison was elected, since the President's death placed his vice president, Tyler, in office, and the latter lost the support of Congress and his cabinet by his stand on the national bank issue. Clay, the Whig nominee in 1844, was defeated by Polk, but four years later the party succeeded in electing Zachary Taylor. The sectional dissension following the Compromise of 1850 ended the influence of the Whigs, although Winfield Scott was a compromise candidate in 1852, with a paradoxical platform endorsing slavery. At this time, those who favored a maintenance of the *status quo* were called 'Cotton Whigs,' while antislavery and free soil advocates were known as 'Conscience Whigs.' The former joined the Democratic party after 1852, while the latter entered the Abolitionist, Free-Soil, and Know-Nothing groups until the founding of the Republican party.

Whilomville Stories, 13 tales by Stephen Crane (q.v.) published in 1900. Except for 'The Knife,' concerned with the humorous tribulations of two colored citizens of Whilomville, when both try to steal the same watermelon, the stories deal with typical childhood incidents among boys and girls of this small New York town.

'The Angel Child' tells of an ingenious birthday entertainment invented by little Cora Trescott, who treats her friends to haircuts at the shop of an unperceptive barber, to the alarm and sorrow of their parents. 'Lynx-Hunting' details the adventures of three small boys with a rifle, who seek a lynx, aim at a chipmunk, and hit a farmer's cow. 'The Lover and the Telltale' is concerned with the tragedy of Jimmie Trescott, who attacks his schoolfellows because they have derided him for writing a love letter to his cousin Cora, and is kept after school by his teacher. 'The Trial, Execution, and Burial of Homer Phelps' tells of the imaginative play of a group of boys, and the misfortunes of their unwilling victim. 'A Little Pilgrimage' deals with the disastrous error of Jimmie Trescott, who leaves his Sunday school because it has been announced there will be no Christmas tree this year, only to join another that follows the same policy. '"Showin' Off"' is a humorous account of the rivalry between two youngsters for the favors of a vain little girl in a red hood.

WHIPPLE, Edwin Percy (1819–86), Massachusetts author and lyceum lecturer, who in his day was ranked with Poe and Lowell as an authoritative American critic. He is now best remembered for his rather generous estimates of early American writers in *American Literature and Other Papers* (1887) and *Recollections of Eminent Men* (1887). More discriminating appraisals of foreign literature are in-

cluded in *Essays and Reviews* (1849), *Lectures on Subjects Connected with Literature and Life* (1850), and *Literature of the Age of Elizabeth* (1869), collected from his addresses, lectures, and articles first published in *The North American Review* and other periodicals. *Charles Dickens, The Man and His Work* (2 vols.,1912) was posthumously published.

WHIPPLE, T[HOMAS] K[ING] (1890–1939), professor of English literature at the University of California, and author of *Spokesmen* (1928), a critical study of modern writers and American life.

Whirligigs, stories by W.S.Porter (q.v.).

Whisky Rebellion, THE, western Pennsylvania insurrection (1794) occurred when the Scotch-Irish settlers resented Hamilton's excise tax on liquors (1791), as discriminatory and detrimental to their livelihood. Washington dispatched 15,000 militia under Henry Lee and brought about peaceful submission.

WHISTLER, JAMES ABBOTT MCNEILL (1834–1903), born in Lowell, Massachusetts, was reared in Russia, England, and the U.S., and attended West Point, from which he was dismissed (1854) because of failure in chemistry. 'Had silicon been a gas, I would have been a major-general' was one of his later *bons mots.* In 1855 he went abroad for the remainder of his life, first to study art in Paris, where he was influenced by Courbet, Manet, Dégas, and Fantin-Latour. His adherence to the French realistic movement is evident in *The White Girl* (1862), exhibited with great acclaim just before he moved to London. There he continued to live except for brief visits to the continent and a sudden trip to Valparaiso (1866) on an abortive filibustering campaign. In England his eccentric dress and quick wit made him a conspicuous figure of the time. His increasing interest in Japanese prints, already evident in *The Little White Girl* (1864), became paramount in the Thames series, which began in 1865. In the paintings of this period, called nocturnes, harmonies, and symphonies, Whistler rejected the illusion of the third dimension, and replaced contrasts of color by an all-pervading gray tone. This technique, and his proclamation that art is justified for its own sake, enraged the academicians, who exalted story-telling, and the Pre-Raphaelite brotherhood, who emphasized meticulous detail. His *Black and Gold—The Falling Rocket,* exhibited in 1877, led Ruskin, the leading English art critic, to denounce him for his 'Cockney impudence' in 'flinging a pot of paint in the public's face.' A lawsuit was brought by Whistler, who was awarded one farthing and was forced into bankruptcy by the heavy expenses of the trial. Among his most famous works are the portrait of his mother, painted about 1865 and entitled *An Arrangement in Grey and Black,* and the *Portrait of Carlyle.* While the contours are soft and the forms fade into gray tonal harmonies, these qualities are not carried to excess as in the later paintings, whose blurred tones often destroy the substance and envelop the form completely. His most famous large decorative work is the blue and gold Peacock Room created for Leyland House (now in the National Gallery of American Art, Washington,D.C.). He was equally renowned for his fine etching, an art which he did much to revive. His fine linear rhythm is at its best in his early Little French series, which was later followed by the Thames series and the two Venice series, in which his superb technique deteriorates into virtuosity, and the keen line disappears in the diffused pattern. His acidulous, epigrammatic humor is expressed in *Whistler v. Ruskin: Art v. Art Critics* (1878); *Mr.Whistler's 'Ten O'Clock'* (1888), a statement of his artistic creed, both of which were reprinted and further developed in *The Gentle Art of Making Enemies* (1890); two series of *Propositions*; and *Eden versus Whistler, The Baronet and the Butterfly* (1899), a record of his lawsuit over his portrait of Lady Eden. His friends, Joseph and Elizabeth Pennell, wrote his official *Life* (1908) and edited his *Journals* (1921).

WHITAKER, ALEXANDER (1585–1614), Anglican clergyman, emigrated to Virginia (1611), where he resided as a minister. He is best remembered for his instruction and conversion of Pocahontas, and for his book, *Good News from Virginia* (1613), a sermon which, in urging greater support from the mother country, gives a clear picture of the character and climate of the region and the native tribes.

WHITCHER, FRANCES MIRIAM (1814–52), New York author of a popular series of humorous sketches in colloquial dialect. These sketches of Yankee characters con-

tained the first American feminine comic figures to be portrayed at length, and with good-natured satire depicted typical feminine foibles of the time. After publication in *Godey's Lady's Book* and other magazines, they were collected in *The Widow Bedott Papers* (1856) and *Widow Spriggins, Mary Elmer, and Other Sketches* (1867). In 1879 Petroleum V. Nasby dramatized the Widow Bedott sketches, preserving much of the original dialogue.

WHITE, Andrew Dickson (1832–1918), born in New York, graduated from Yale (1853), studied abroad, and became a professor of history at the University of Michigan (1857–63). He was instrumental in founding Cornell University and was its first president (1867–85). This co-educational and nonsectarian institution followed his plan for a university that should 'battle mercantile morality and temper military passion,' teach 'a Moral Philosophy, History, and Political Economy unwarped to suit present abuses in politics and religion,' and emphasize the natural sciences, agriculture, and engineering. He is considered a leader of higher education in the U.S., ranking with C.W.Eliot and D.C.Gilman. He later served as Minister to Germany (1879–81) and Russia (1892–4), and Ambassador to Germany (1897), as well as heading the American delegation to the Hague Conference (1899) for creating an international court of arbitration. His books include the rationalistic *History of the Warfare of Science with Theology in Christendom* (2 vols.,1896), *Seven Great Statesmen in the Warfare of Humanity with Unreason* (1910), and an *Autobiography* (2 vols.,1905).

WHITE, Edward Lucas (1866–1934), romantic novelist, whose books include *Andivius Hedulio* (1921), set in the later Roman empire, and *El Supremo* (1916), set in 19th-century Paraguay.

WHITE, E[lwyn] B[rooks] (1899–), satirist of contemporary culture, has been associated with *The New Yorker*, and, more recently, with *Harper's Magazine*. Besides collaborations with James Thurber, his books include: *Alice through the Cellophane* (1933), a witty criticism of trends in modern life; *The Fox of Peapack, and Other Poems* (1938), a volume of humorous verse; and *Quo Vadimus? or, The Case for the Bicycle* (1939), a collection of stories and sketches mainly concerned with the bewildering complexities of urban and suburban existence.

WHITE, Horace (1834–1916), editor of the *Chicago Tribune* (1865–74), in which capacity he supported civil-service reform, fiscal reform, and liberal Republican views. In 1881 he became an editor of both the New York *Evening Post* and *The Nation*, becoming editor-in-chief of the former (1899–1903). His editorship was distinguished for independence in politics, opposition to imperialist views, championship of sound money, and civil service reform. His best-known book is *Money and Banking: Illustrated by American History* (1895).

WHITE, John (1575–1648), English clergyman, with other Puritans and West Country merchants founded the Dorchester Company (q.v.,1623) to establish a New England fishing and farming colony. After the failure of this project, White helped establish the Massachusetts Bay Company (q.v.,1629). His tract, *The Planter's Plea* (1630), shows the economic and social value of emigration and furnishes a pleasant account of the colony's early history. He was long interested in the New England settlement, but never emigrated.

WHITE, John (*fl.*1585–93), Virginia colonist, noted for his watercolors of the flora and fauna of America, and of the native Indians, published to illustrate the *Briefe and True Report of . . . Virginia* by Thomas Hariot (q.v.,1590). A John White, considered to be the same man, was sent by Ralegh as governor of the Roanoke colony (1587) and was the grandfather of Virginia Dare. This White was the author of an account of his voyage to Virginia (1590), published by Hakluyt.

WHITE, Richard Grant (1821–85), New York critic, self-appointed arbiter of literature, music, and art for the literary and journalistic society of the city. Despite his emphasis on social distinctions and his occasional scholastic errors, he was a graceful man of letters somewhat akin to his friend C.E.Norton, and obviously of Brahmin stock. In addition to his many contributions to periodicals, he was the author of *Handbook of Christian Art* (1853); *The New Gospel of Peace* (1863–6), a satire on the Copperheads; *Words and Their Uses* (1870); *Studies in Shakespeare* (1885); and an edition of Shakespeare republished as the *Riverside* text.

STANFORD WHITE (1853–1906), his son, was a prominent New York architect who first worked with H.H.Richardson and then, after informal study in Europe in the company of Saint-Gaudens, joined the firm of C.F.McKim (q.v.). He was mainly interested in the decorative aspect of building and interior design, and helped in the planning of the Boston Public Library, Madison Square Garden, the Washington Arch, the Colony Club, Century Club, and Tiffany and Gorham Buildings, all but the first in New York City, and was also largely responsible for the buildings of New York University. White was killed by Harry K. Thaw.

WHITE, STEWART EDWARD (1873–), Michigan author, long resident in California, whose early experiences among rivermen, miners, and lumberjacks furnished the setting and subjects for his novels of rugged outdoor life, including *The Claim Jumpers* (1901), *The Blazed Trail* (1902), and *The Rules of the Game* (1910). His *Story of California* (1927) is a trilogy composed of three historical romances, *Gold* (1913), *The Gray Dawn* (1915), and *The Rose Dawn* (1920). Later novels include *The Long Rifle* (1932), *Ranchero* (1933), and *Folded Hills* (1934), set in California, and *Wild Geese Calling* (1940), dealing with pioneer farmers in Alaska.

WHITE, WILLIAM ALLEN (1868–), born in Emporia, Kansas, purchased the Emporia *Gazette* (1895) and became famous as an independent editor following the publication of his editorial, 'What's the Matter with Kansas?' (Aug. 15, 1896), a conservative attack upon the Populist party, which indirectly aided the election of McKinley. White was prominent in the Bull Moose party, and he has been a leader of the Republican party. His *Gazette* editorials have been collected in *The Editor and His People* (1924) and *Forty Years on Main Street* (1937), and besides his numerous magazine contributions he has expressed his political and social views in such books as *The Real Issue and Other Stories* (1896), *The Court of Boyville* (1899), *Stratagems and Spoils* (1901), *In Our Town* (1906), *A Certain Rich Man* (q.v.,1909), *The Old Order Changeth* (1910), *God's Puppets* (1916), *In the Heart of a Fool* (1918), *Masks in a Pageant* (1928), *A Puritan in Babylon: The Story of Calvin Coolidge* (1938), and *The Changing West* (1939).

White Buildings, poems by Hart Crane (q.v.).

White Desert, play by Maxwell Anderson (q.v.).

White Fang, novel by Jack London (q.v.), published in 1906 as a complement to *The Call of the Wild* (q.v.).

White Fang, offspring of an Indian wolf-dog and a wolf, is sold by his Indian owner to Beauty Smith, a sadistic white man who torments him to make him even more savage, in order that he may win in professional dogfights. He is rescued from this life by a mining engineer, Weedon Scott, who subdues his ferocity by kindness. His master takes White Fang from his home on the Yukon to California where the process of domestication is completed. White Fang dies while saving the Scott home from a murderous attack by an escaped convict.

White Heron, A, stories by Sarah Orne Jewett (q.v.).

White House, THE, popular name of the Executive Mansion or official residence of the President of the U.S. at Washington, D.C. The design of the building, probably suggested by the Duke of Leinster's palace (Dublin), was planned by the Irish-born architect, James Hoban, and stands on a site chosen by L'Enfant and approved by Washington. The cornerstone was laid in 1792. John Adams was the first President to live there. The name arises from the fact that its sandstone walls are painted white. After having been burned by the British troops (1814), the building was restored by Hoban, and major additions have been made by Latrobe and the firm of McKim, Mead and White.

White-Jacket; or, The World in a Man-of-War, semi-autobiographical novel by Melville (q.v.) published in 1850. The work is a fictional account of the author's service (Aug. 1843–Oct. 1844) on the U.S. man-of-war *United States,* and its exposure of abuses, particularly flogging as a punishment, led to immediate legislative reforms.

The narrator, a youthful seaman nearing the end of his three-year cruise on the U.S.frigate *Neversink,* acquires the nickname of 'White-Jacket' following his purchase in Callao, Peru, of a white pea-jacket. On the voyage around Cape Horn and up the Atlantic coast, this garment serves to protect him against rough

weather, is his distinguishing feature among the crew, and nearly causes his death when it wraps about his head in a storm, so that he falls from a yard-arm into the sea. He is rescued in this episode, and there are few other catastrophes, for the interest of the tale derives not from plot but from character and observed detail. The most striking characters include: Jack Chase, 'our noble first captain of the top,' handsome, cultured, 'incomparable' young officer, who wins the love and admiration of 'White-Jacket' and all the crew; Captain Claret, 'a large, portly man, a Harry the Eighth afloat, bluff and hearty'; Mr.Pert, the youthful midshipman; and Surgeon Cuticle, whose indifference to suffering and human values is shown in his unnecessary amputation of the leg of a seaman, which results in the patient's death. During the long voyage from Peru to Virginia, these officers and the diversely characterized crew are depicted in their daily activities, including scenes of ferocious punishment for minor misdeeds, and other malpractices; and the author discusses other evils inherent in the autocratic system, the inhumane regimentation of the men, and the degrading effects of the prevailing living conditions, partly counteracted by the exuberant joys of sea life.

White Sister, The, romance by F.M. Crawford (q.v.).

White Slave, The, novel by Richard Hildreth (q.v.).

White Steed of the Prairies, see *Pacing Mustang.*

White Wings, dramatic fantasy by Philip Barry (q.v.), produced in 1926 and published in 1927.

Archie Inch, the last of a long line of 'white wings,' or street-cleaning contractors, has inherited the family admiration of the horse as the symbol of all that is fine in civilization. Although he loves Mary Todd, he renounces her because her father has invented the automobile, which threatens to drive the horse from the streets. The success of Todd's invention caused Archie, his father, and his pompous grandfather, Major Inch, to lose their money and descend in the social scale, ever holding to their outworn creed and belief in their own importance. Archie finally becomes so embittered that he would be willing to turn against his former beliefs, were it not that he is bound by a deathbed promise to his mother that he will never enter another profession as long as a single horse remains. Mary, still in love with him, settles this matter by shooting Joseph, the last horse, and Archie learns to drive a taxi, carting off in it the mortal remains of Joseph and the Major, who had remained faithful to the family tradition unto death.

WHITEFIELD, GEORGE (1714–70), English evangelist, while at Oxford (1735) came under the influence of John and Charles Wesley, the founders of Methodism (q.v.). His histrionic ability, zeal, and belief in himself as a divinely inspired teacher, made him the leader of the Methodists after the departure of the Wesleys for Georgia, and he drew large audiences throughout England. After a short stay in Georgia (May–Sept. 1738), he returned to preach in England at outdoor meetings, since the Church of England was now closed to him. He returned to America (1739) and was instrumental in promoting the Great Awakening. Although he made many enemies and was suspended from his ecclesiastical office for his irregular doctrine and actions, he nevertheless attracted such diverse adherents as the Tennents and Jonathan Edwards, and even won the financial support of Franklin. In England (1741–4) Whitefield continued his inflexible but emotional way, even breaking with the Wesleys and becoming a leader of the Calvinistic Methodists, although on his next trip to America (1744–8) many Congregationalists turned against him, the fervor of the Great Awakening having waned. He made later visits to America (1751,1754–5,1763–4,1769–70), continuing to be famous for his dynamic preaching, since the manner more than the matter attracted his large audiences, and his many sermons, pamphlets, and letters, though widely read, were less effective. A selection of his *Works* was published (6 vols.,1770–72).

WHITEHEAD, ALFRED NORTH (1861–), English philosopher and mathematician, was a leading author and educator in his native country, and a professor of philosophy at Harvard (1924–36). He has developed a philosophy of 'organism,' based on modern scientific knowledge but essentially idealistic, conceiving a universal, impersonal deity as the source of all existence, and religious experience as the

unifying and supremely rational path to knowledge. Objects in nature are then viewed as organically interrelated and engaged in a constant process of evolutionary change which is divinely ordered. Written in occasionally highly technical language, his principle works include: *Principia Mathematica* (3 vols., 1910–13), written with Bertrand Russell; *The Organization of Thought* (1916); *The Principles of Natural Knowledge* (1919); *The Concept of Nature* (1920); *The Principle of Relativity* (1922); *Science and the Modern World* (1925); *Religion in the Making* (1926); *Symbolism: Its Meaning and Effect* (1927); *The Aim of Education* (1928); *Process and Reality* (1929); *The Function of Reason* (1929); *Adventures of Ideas* (1933); *Nature and Life* (1934); and *Modes of Thought* (1938), the last being a summary introduction to his philosophy.

WHITHORNE, Emerson (1884–), Ohio-born composer, studied abroad, and became a New York critic and editor until he turned exclusively to composing (1922). His works, distinctively modern in rhythm, but relatively traditional in melodic content, include: *New York Days and Nights*, a suite for piano, frequently performed in orchestral arrangements; a *Poem* for piano and orchestra; a quintet for piano and strings; *Fata Morgana*, a symphonic poem; *Sooner or Later* (1925), a ballet; incidental music for *Marco Millions* (1928); and *The Grim Troubadour* and *Saturday's Child*, song cycles based on poems by Countée Cullen.

WHITLOCK, Brand (1869–1934), Ohio journalist and lawyer, after serving as a liberal reform mayor of Toledo (1905–13), was appointed Minister (later Ambassador) to Belgium (1913–22). During the war he distinguished himself as a humanitarian worker, both in behalf of such individuals as Edith Cavell and in relief administration. His liberal interests were shown in novels that belong to the nascent period of realism, mainly set in the town of Macochee, whose original was his home, Urbana, Ohio. These include: *The Thirteenth District* (1902), an objective depiction of the corruption of American politics and the inevitable moral disintegration of those concerned in it; *Her Infinite Variety* (1904), a light account of the embroilments of suffragettes in politics; *The Happy Average* (1904), a semi-autobiographical novel; *The Turn of the Balance* (1907), a realistic story of the relation of criminals to modern society; and a humanitarian plea for social and prison reform; *J. Hardin and Son* (1923), a character study of the contrasts between two generations; *Uprooted* (1926) and *Transplanted* (1927), novels contrasting American and continental standards; and *Big Matt* (1928), a character study of a typical machine politician. In addition to his autobiography, *Forty Years of It* (1910), Whitlock wrote *Belgium: A Personal Record* (1919), books on contemporary politics, and biographies.

WHITMAN, Albery Allson (1851–1901), Negro poet and clergyman, whose poems, *Not a Man and Yet a Man* (1877), *The Rape of Florida* (1884), reprinted as *Twasinta's Seminoles* (1885), and *An Idyll of the South* (1901), are narratives dealing with Negroes and Indians.

WHITMAN, Marcus (1802–47), Oregon pioneer, born in New York, was sent by the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions (Presbyterian) as a physician and missionary to the Indians of the Pacific Northwest (1835), and settled near the site of the present Walla Walla, Washington (1836). Conflicts with missionaries of other denominations led him to make an arduous seven-months' horseback trip east (1842–3). His purpose was to strengthen his missionary position, and not, as is often claimed, to 'save Oregon' politically for the U.S. He returned (1843) with a great company of emigrants, whose actions and introduction of an epidemic turned the Indians against Whitman and caused an uprising in which he and his wife were murdered. This tragedy and the Indian war that ensued may have hastened the passage of the Oregon Territory law. Whitman was the author of many pamphlets and newspaper articles pointing out the resources of the Territory. He and his wife are the subjects of Honoré Morrow's novel, *We Must March* (1925).

WHITMAN, Sarah Helen [Power] (1803–78), Rhode Island poet, after the death of her husband became engaged to Poe (*c.*1848). Several of her poems concern him and more bear the obvious influence of his style. Some of her verse was collected in *Hours of Life* (1853), and a complete edition appeared posthumously (1879). She defended Poe against Griswold and others in her book, *Edgar Poe*

and His Critics (1860). The second of Poe's poems entitled 'To Helen' was addressed to her, and his *Last Letters* to her were published in 1909.

WHITMAN, WALT[ER] (1819–92), was born on Long Island, of English, Dutch, and Welsh stock. His family lived in Brooklyn (*c.*1823–33), where Walt was educated, and he later served as printer's devil, journeyman compositor, and itinerant school teacher, besides editing the *Long Islander* (1838–9). Meanwhile he was reading the Bible, Shakespeare, Ossian, Scott, Homer, and something of the Greek and Hindu poets, the Nibelungenlied, and Dante, all of which, either in rhythm or thought, influenced his later writing. He entered politics as a Democrat, and after 1841 was actively associated with at least 10 newspapers and magazines in New York and Brooklyn. Such poems as he published were conventional and mediocre, and to the *Democratic Review* (1841–5) he contributed many thin, sentimental, melancholy stories. These early writings were gathered in *The Uncollected Poetry and Prose of Walt Whitman* (2 vols.,1921) and *The Half-Breed and Other Stories* (1927). At this time he also wrote a temperance tract, *Franklin Evans; or, The Inebriate: A Tale of the Times* (1842). He became editor of the Brooklyn *Eagle* (1846), a Democratic party paper in which he denounced the 'mad fanaticism' of the Abolitionists, but so obviously favored the Free-Soil party that he was discharged (1848). His writings for this paper have been collected as *The Gathering of the Forces* (2 vols.,1920). In February 1848 he went to New Orleans with his brother Jeff, who with George was the most intimate with him among his nine brothers and sisters. He was an editor of the New Orleans *Crescent* for three months, during which many biographers have contended he had a love affair with an octoroon, which was the chief force in altering his character. Such assertions are primarily based on interpretations of 'Once I Pass'd through a Populous City' (q.v.), which is probably more literary than biographical. Whitman's later statement to J.A.Symonds and others that he was the father of illegitimate children is probably one of the legends with which he liked to endow himself. Returning to Brooklyn, he came by way of St.Louis, Chicago, and upstate New York, for the first time seeing something of the frontier that so strongly affected his philosophy, as in such poems as 'Pioneers! O Pioneers!' and 'The Song of the Broad Axe' (qq.v.) He edited various papers, including the Brooklyn *Times*, from which his contributions have been collected in *I Sit and Look Out* (1932). Meanwhile, as before, he was acquainted with the varying aspects of the metropolis, listening to the oratory of the time, becoming intimate with drivers of omnibuses and ferryboat pilots, joining the crowds at bathing beaches, and hearing Shakespeare and Italian opera, all of which had an effect on the themes and manner of his poetry. Although he had earlier affected the mien of a dandy, he now dressed as a 'rough,' and his actions and ideas were leading toward the climax of 1855. Just as it has been supposed that he underwent a transformation in New Orleans, it is thought that he passed through some mystical experience at this time. It is probably more realistic to suppose that his book grew out of a slow and conscious effort to employ his experiences and his own maturity. Although he consistently celebrated himself as an average man, he was probably feeling his unique qualities more definitely than ever. Divided between faith in democratic equality and belief in the individual rebel against society's restrictions, he combined the figure of the average man and the superman in his conception of himself. He certainly differed in the hypersensitivity that made him as zealous in pursuing emotional freedom through love as he had been in pursuing social freedom through democracy. He differed also in his frequent, forceful declarations of his democratic love for man, and he has been considered a homosexual. Such abnormal sensitivity and extreme sensuousness appear to be primary forces in his poetry. Other influences included Goethe's autobiography, which showed him a man surveying the universe in terms of himself; Hegel's philosophy, which supplied the idea of a cosmic consciousness evolving through conflict and contradiction toward a definite objective; and Carlyle's *Heroes and Hero Worship*, which suggested that a superior individual is a power above man-made laws. Above all literary influences was that of the Transcendentalists, particularly Emerson, from whom he learned that the individual was not merely an eccentric but an impersonal seer at one with Nature, perceiving what is

permanent in flux, and revealing its development. He was affected by the typical interest of his period in science, although he considered it cold and intellectual as compared with faith in a divine purpose. He was also concerned with such pseudosciences as phrenology, adopting its specialized terms for his poetry, though his unique use of words comes from sources as widely separated as George Sand and the American Indian. The first 12 poems written under these many influences were collected, with a critical preface, as *Leaves of Grass* (q.v.,1855). Although Whitman uncritically accepted many divergent philosophies and seems at first to have been unconscious of any unifying purpose in the *Leaves*, he eventually worked out the belief that it was to show how man might achieve for himself the greatest possible freedom within the limits of natural law, for the mind and body through democracy, for the heart through love, and for the soul through religion. Although his ideas of prosody were also refined later, he already illustrated his belief in a simple style devoid of the ordinary usages of rime, metre, or ornament, and distinguished by a natural organic growth, with each part in proportion with the whole. He himself compared his poetry with the 'liquid, billowy waves,' and some of its most distinctive features are the use of repetition, parallelism, rhetorical mannerisms, and the employment of the phrase instead of the foot as a unit of rhythm, to create forms later called free verse. Except for his own anonymous and enthusiastic reviews, the *Leaves* received comparatively little attention, though Emerson wrote a letter of high praise. Whitman published an enlarged second edition (1856), and during the following years, continuing his writing, became prominent among the Bohemian frequenters of Pfaff's (q.v.). The 1860 edition of *Leaves of Grass* for the first time found a regular publisher, and was greatly enlarged, containing two new sections, 'Children of Adam' and 'Calamus' (qq.v.) The poet was not intimately affected by the Civil War until late in 1862, when he went to Virginia to see his wounded brother George, and then to Washington to become an unofficial nurse to Northern and Southern soldiers in the army hospitals. He left a record of this period in his prose *Memoranda During the War* (1875), reprinted in *Specimen Days and Collect* (q.v., 1882), and in the poems published in *Drum-Taps* (q.v.,1865) and *Sequel to Drum-Taps* (1865–6), containing his dirges for Lincoln, 'When Lilacs Last in the Dooryard Bloom'd' and 'O Captain! My Captain!' (qq.v.). Nominally a Republican at this time, he became a clerk in the Indian Bureau of the Department of the Interior, but was shortly dismissed by the Secretary, on the ground that *Leaves of Grass* was an immoral book. Whitman was defended by his friends, William O'Connor, who wrote *The Good Gray Poet* (1866), and John Burroughs, who with Whitman's assistance published *Notes on Walt Whitman as Poet and Person* (1867). During these years, Whitman issued two new editions of *Leaves of Grass* (1867,'71); *Democratic Vistas* (q.v.,1871), a prose work; and *Passage to India* (q.v., 1871), embodying the concept of the regeneration of the human race through uniting the spiritual wisdom of the East with the materialism of the West. His Washington residence ended (1873), when he suffered a paralytic stroke, possibly induced by an infection during his hospital work. From this time his writing shows a change of thought. His realistic style is altered to one of indirection and suggestion; his materialistic pantheism becomes a more spiritualized idealism; his political views change from individualism to nationalism, and even internationalism; and in general he becomes less interested in freedom than in regulation. During his last 19 years he lived at Camden, New Jersey, continuing to revise *Leaves of Grass* and to publish new editions. *Two Rivulets* (q.v.,1876) incorporated *Democratic Vistas* and some new poems. His newspaper poems were collected as *November Boughs* (1888), incorporated in the *Leaves* (1889), and contained the preface, 'A Backward Glance o'er Travel'd Roads' (q.v.). *Good-Bye, My Fancy* (1891) was a final collection of poems and prose. Although not previously neglected, he was particularly in the public eye during the 1870's, when such English writers as William Rossetti, Swinburne, Symonds, Mrs.Anne Gilchrist, and Stevenson contended that Americans did not fully appreciate him. He also had a circle of immediate disciples, including the Canadian physician, R.M.Bucke, whose official biography (1883) was partly written by Whitman, and Horace Traubel (q.v.), an enthusiastic young Boswell who preserved every scrap of the poet's con-

versation in his book, *With Walt Whitman in Camden* (3 vols.,1906–14). During the final years, the poet mellowed, and was content to live quietly at Camden, except for a brief trip to Colorado (1879) for his health, to Canada (1880) to visit Dr. Bucke, and to Boston (1881), where he visited Emerson, for whom he still felt a strong sympathy, although he had long since set himself up as an original genius owing no debt to his one-time master. His executors published a standard edition of his *Complete Writings* (10 vols.,1902).

WHITNEY, Eli (1765–1825), Massachusetts inventor, after graduation from Yale (1792) served as a tutor on a Georgia plantation, where he became interested in the cotton planters' problem of cleaning the fiber of the seeds, and produced a model of his cotton gin (1793). Curious crowds carried away and copied his model, and though Whitney received a patent (1794), constant litigation prevented profitable manufacture. He had an enormous effect on the cotton industry, for in 1792 the U.S. exported only 138,328 pounds of cotton, while in 1795 the exports reached 6,276,000 pounds. In 1798 he began production of firearms with standardized, interchangeable parts, and from this enterprise he became affluent.

WHITTIER, John Greenleaf (1807–92), Massachusetts poet, born of Quaker stock, had little formal education but found his most important intellectual influences in his religion and in the books he read as a boy, especially Burns, whose poetry led him to see the romance underlying the everyday rural life of New England. His earliest poems were published in Garrison's newspaper, and similar country journals, and through the aid of Garrison he was given an editorial position on a Boston paper (1829), soon followed by similar work on country newspapers. His first book, *Legends of New-England in Prose and Verse* (1831), showed his interest in local historical themes, as did his pamphlet, *Moll Pitcher* (q.v.,1832), and *Mogg Megone* (1836), a narrative of Indian life in colonial times. Through the influence of Garrison and his own Quaker conscience, Whittier was now deflected from his original purpose of interpreting the American background to ally his writing with activities in the cause of social justice. As he says, he 'left the Muses' haunt to turn the crank of an opinion mill' (*c.*1833–59), becoming an ardent Abolitionist. He was elected to the Massachusetts legislature (1835), spoke at antislavery meetings, edited the *Pennsylvania Freeman* (q.v.,1838–40), and wrote tracts and the verse collected in *Poems Written During the Progress of the Abolition Question* (1838). Disliking the methods of Garrison, Whittier became a founder of the Liberty party, for which he also edited newspapers. He had published *Lays of My Home and Other Poems* (1843), but his antislavery verse was collected in *Voices of Freedom* (1846), which included 'Massachusetts to Virginia' (q.v.). As an editor of the *National Era* (1847–60), he contributed to this paper most of the poems and articles which he wrote, and though he continued his antislavery work he had not forgotten his earlier interests, as may be seen in *Leaves from Margaret Smith's Journal in the Province of Massachusetts Bay*, 1678–79 (1849). This, his only long work of fiction, is based on records of the period of the Salem witchcraft trials, and is a semi-fictional romance uncovering the mind of Puritan New England in the manner of Hawthorne, steering a middle course between vilification and praise. Other prose works collected from this paper were *Old Portraits and Modern Sketches* (1850) and *Literary Recreations and Miscellanies* (1854). That his humanitarian interests were still predominant may be seen in 'Proem' in his first collected *Poems* (1849), in which he says that though he cannot equal 'the old melodious lays' of Spenser and Sidney, he can atone for his artistic limitations by 'a hate of tyranny intense' and a sympathy for his 'brother's pain and sorrow.' This creed was responsible for his *Songs of Labor* (q.v.,1850). Whittier continued also to write on antislavery matters during the eventful years prior to and during the Civil War, on subjects ranging from the Kansas-Nebraska Bill and Webster's defection in 'Ichabod' (q.v.) to the Fourteenth Amendment in 'Laus Deo!' (q.v.). Meanwhile his reputation as a pure poet of the countryside was increased with *The Chapel of the Hermits* (1853); *The Panorama and Other Poems* (1856), containing 'Maud Muller' and 'The Barefoot Boy' (qq.v.); and *Home Ballads, Poems and Lyrics* (1860), containing 'Skipper Ireson's Ride' and 'Telling the Bees' (qq.v.). Another volume of verse, dealing with contemporary matters,

was published as *In War Time and Other Poems* (1864), which included 'Barbara Frietchie' (q.v.). After the Civil War, Whittier returned to his poetic interest in the New England scene to write his winter idyl, *Snow-Bound* (q.v.,1866), which is considered his greatest work. This was followed by *The Tent on the Beach* (1867), a cycle of verse narratives in the manner of the *Tales of a Wayside Inn*, but also containing his poem, 'The Eternal Goodness,' which praises the 'pitying love' of God and sets forth the poet's 'fixed trust' in 'His goodness and His love.' Other volumes of this period, showing his recaptured interest in rural life and colonial history, include *Among the Hills* (1869), *Miriam and Other Poems* (1871), *Hazel-Blossoms* (1875), *The Vision of Echard* (1878), *St. Gregory's Guest* (1886), and *At Sundown* (1890). Many of his poems have been set to music as hymns. In addition, he edited or contributed introductions to many other works, of which the best known is his sympathetic edition of Woolman's *Journal* (1871). Whittier's work, which falls roughly into three periods, has been variously estimated at different times. The poems written up to 1833, in which he is a romantic follower of Burns, are youthful works that he himself attempted to suppress. The poems from 1833 to 1859 present him as a militant Quaker, with liberal political and humanitarian beliefs, and have been most appreciated in recent years. The poems from 1859 to his death show him both as a poet of nature and of homely incidents, rising to his loftiest in *Snow-Bound*, and as a thinker assured of a comprehensive religious faith that led him to become devoted to tolerance, humanism, and democratic justice. Whittier has consistently been praised for his ballads and such long narratives as *Snow-Bound*. Many of his poems suffer either from sentimentality or from lack of technical ability, and even his best works are not altogether free from faults. Much of his poetry, which is still widely read for its simple sentiment or moral beauty, is marred by a flaccidity, diffuseness, undue affection for preaching, and lack of discipline. He properly estimated one of his technical faults by saying he wrote 'good Yankee rhymes, but out of New England they would be cashiered.' Both his virtues and his vices probably derive from the fact that he was a man of conscience rather than of intellect, and lacked the power to discriminate between his poems of force and spontaneity and his inferior verse.

Who's Who in America, biographical dictionary of notable living men and women of the U.S., revised and reissued biennially. It was founded in 1900 by A.N.Marquis, who remains the editor.

WIDDEMER, MARGARET, Pennsylvania poet, whose first book, *Factories with Other Lyrics* (1915), contains poems passionately championing the rights of oppressed workers. *Old Road to Paradise* (1918; special Pulitzer award, 1919) contains softer and more sentimental verse, as does *Ballads and Lyrics* (1925). *The Singing Wood* is a play in verse, and *A Tree with a Bird in It* (1923) is a volume of satirical verse. Miss Widdemer has also written novels and short stories.

WIDOW BEDOTT, pseudonym of Frances Whitcher (q.v.).

Widow Douglas, character in *Tom Sawyer* and *Huckleberry Finn* (qq.v.).

Widow's Son, The; or, Which is the Traitor?, domestic tragedy by Samuel Woodworth (q.v.), produced and published in 1825.

William Darby, falsely accused of being a Tory during the Revolutionary War, revenges himself on the patriots by actual treachery as a British spy. His mother, Margaret, chagrined by her son's treason, offers her services to Washington as a spy. Although her work is so successful as to undo that of her son, who is executed by the British, she is content with the knowledge that she has worked for the good of her country and saved him from dishonorable execution by his own countrymen.

Wieland; or, The Transformation, epistolary Gothic romance by C.B.Brown (q.v.) published in 1798.

The elder Wieland, a German mystic, emigrates to Pennsylvania, erects a mysterious temple on his estate, and dies there one night by spontaneous combustion. His wife dies soon afterward, and their children, Clara and the younger Wieland, depend for friendship on Catharine Pleyel. Wieland marries Catharine, and Clara falls in love with Henry Pleyel, who is engaged to a woman in Germany. Into their happy circle enters a mysterious vagabond, Carwin (see *Memoirs of Carwin*), and at the same time comes the first of a series of warnings from unearthly voices. Henry falls in love with Clara, after one of

these disembodied voices announces the death of his German fiancée. When circumstances force him to believe that Clara and Carwin have had an affair, Pleyel deserts her, discovers his former fiancée to be alive, and marries her. Wieland, inheriting his father's fanaticism, is driven mad by the voices, and murders his wife and children. Carwin then confesses to Clara that a 'mischievous dæmon' led him to test the family courage, producing the mysterious voices by ventriloquism. Wieland, escaping from an asylum, is about to murder his sister, when Carwin for the last time uses ventriloquism to command Wieland to desist. The unhappy madman commits suicide, Carwin departs to a remote district of Pennsylvania, and Clara marries Pleyel after the death of his first wife.

WIGGIN, Kate Douglas (1856–1923), born in Philadelphia, studied under Emma Marwedel, and moved to San Francisco to conduct one of the first kindergartens in the U.S. (1878–84). She wrote novels for adults, and an autobiography, *My Garden of Memory* (1923), but is best known as a successful author of children's books. The most famous of these are *The Birds' Christmas Carol* (1888), telling of the life and death of an ethereal child, Carol Bird; *Rebecca of Sunnybrook Farm* (q.v.,1903), about a lovable, precocious little girl; and *Mother Carey's Chickens* (1911), dramatized with Rachel Crothers (1917), the story of a kindly widow and her many children.

WIGGLESWORTH, Michael (1631–1705), brought from England as a child (1638), graduated from Harvard (1651) and during most of his life served as minister of the Congregational church at Malden, Massachusetts. After 1663 he also practiced medicine. He is remembered for his long theological poem in ballad meter, *The Day of Doom* (q.v.,1662). His other poetical works, also theological treatises in rime, include 'A Short Discourse on Eternity,' 'Vanity of Vanities,' and 'A Postscript unto the Reader,' all annexed to this book. Other versified theology of a similarly edifying nature included *Meat Out of the Eater* (1669) and 'God's Controversy with New-England,' inspired by the drought of 1662, and first published by the Massachusetts Historical Society (1873).

Edward Wigglesworth (*c.*1693–1765), his son, graduated from Harvard (1710) and became a Congregational minister and professor of divinity at Harvard (1722–65). He was noted as a pamphleteer and stout defender of orthodoxy against the evangelicalism of George Whitefield.

Wigwam and Cabin, 13 stories by Simms (q.v.) published in 1845–6. They deal with the backwoods, the Revolution, Indian lore, and the supernatural.

'Grayling' is the story of a crime revealed by a ghost. 'The Armchair of Tustenuggee,' an Indian legend, tells of a tree that seized its victims and grew around them when they sat in its chair-like branches. 'The Lazy Crow' is a humorous and sympathetic treatment of Negro voodoo beliefs. 'The Giant Coffin' has a tone of Gothic horror in its description of a cleft rock that traps a murderer in its coffin-like space when the river rises.

WILBARGER, John Wesley (*fl.*1839–89), Texas pioneer, whose *Indian Depredations in Texas* (1889) is an important source concerning the early settlement of the region by Americans, based on stories told by surviving pioneers.

WILCOX, Carlos (1794–1827), born in New Hampshire, lived in Connecticut, where he was a Congregational pastor during the two years prior to his early death. His *Remains* (1828), which reprint his sermons and a long didactic poem, 'The Age of Benevolence,' in the school of Young and Cowper, have received attention from scholars for his distinguished nature poetry.

WILCOX, Ella Wheeler (1850–1919), Wisconsin poetaster, whose first book, *Drops of Water* (1872), a collection of temperance verse, was followed by nearly 40 volumes of romantic, unctuous verse, distinguished by a sentimental approach to spiritualistic, metaphysical, and pseudo-erotic subjects. Her popular reputation was insured when *Poems of Passion* (1883) was rejected for 'immorality.' Her platitudes also found expression in many short stories, sketches, and novels. *The Story of a Literary Career* (1905) and *The Worlds and I* (1918) are autobiographical works.

Wild Birds, play by Dan Totheroh (q.v.).

Wild Honey Suckle, The, poem by Freneau (q.v.) published in his *Poems* (1786). In six-line tetrameter stanzas, this brief work, considered one of the author's finest nature poems, celebrates the beauty of the frail forest flower.

WILDE, Richard Henry (1789–1847), Irish-born poet, lawyer, and at various times congressman from Georgia (1815–35). Part of his projected epic on the Seminole War, 'The Lament of the Captive,' was published without his knowledge (1819), and stirred a tempest of speculation, being variously claimed as the work of another or as a translation from Alcæus. A certain Anthony Barclay even went so far as to circulate a translation into Greek, which he later published in an *Authentic Account of Wilde's Alleged Plagiarism* (1871). The poem was enthusiastically praised, and set to music by Lanier and others as 'My Life Is Like the Summer Rose.' Wilde lived in Italy (1835–40), where he wrote his romantic *Conjectures Concerning . . . Tasso* (2 vols.,1842). Moving to New Orleans (1843), he became a professor of constitutional law, and wrote his long poem *Hesperia* (1867), in the romantic-sentimental vein of Tom Moore. His lyric poems have never been collected, and an incomplete life of Dante and translations from Italian poets remain in manuscript.

WILDER, Thornton [Niven] (1897–), born in Wisconsin, was reared in China and the U.S., and after graduation from Yale (1920) became a teacher at the Lawrenceville School and the University of Chicago. His first book, *The Cabala* (1926), was a gracefully written and deftly ironic novel, concerning the sophisticated but decaying Italian nobility of the post-war period. After producing *The Trumpet Shall Sound* (1926) at a little theater, he suddenly achieved enormous popularity with *The Bridge of San Luis Rey* (q.v.,1927, Pulitzer Prize), a delicately wrought ironic study of the way in which providence has directed disparate lives to one end. *The Woman of Andros* (1930), his third novel, was based upon the Latin comedy, *Andrea*, by Terence. *Heaven's My Destination* (1935), although showing the same outlook as his previous novels, for the first time deals with the contemporary American scene. Having published several collections of one-act plays, including *The Angel That Troubled the Waters* (1928) and *The Long Christmas Dinner* (1931), and made adaptations, he came to his full development as a playwright with *Our Town* (q.v.,1938, Pulitzer Prize), depicting the essential qualities of small-town New England life.

Wilderness, Battle of the, Civil War action in eastern Virginia (May 5–6, 1864). Grant, commencing his Virginia campaign, attempted by main force to dislodge the Confederates under Lee from their position in the heavily forested region south of the Rapidan River. Without a clear victory, Grant did push through to a position not previously attained by Northern commanders, but then had to follow Lee to Spotsylvania (q.v.), where he could not penetrate the Confederates' strong defense.

Wilderness Road, pioneer route, known also as Boone's Trace, blazed by Daniel Boone (1775) from eastern Virginia through the Cumberland Gap to Kentucky, and used by many frontier settlers in the first great westward migration. The region forms the setting of *The Great Meadow* and *The Crossing*.

Wildfire, Nimrod, character in *The Lion of the West* (q.v.).

WILKINS, Mary E., see *Freeman, Mary Wilkins*.

WILKINSON, James (1757–1825), born in Maryland, served in the Revolution, rising to the rank of brigadier-general and secretary of the board of war before being forced to resign when involved in the Conway Cabal. Moving to Kentucky (1784), he became a military and political leader, besmirched the reputation of George Rogers Clark, and then, playing one side against the other, pretended to aid the local agitation for statehood while receiving a pension from Spain for working toward disunion. He served with Wayne in campaigns against the Indians (1792–4), but discredited his superior, succeeding him as head of the U.S.army, although his obvious scheming for power troubled federal authorities. When he took possession of Louisiana for the U.S., he again obtained a large sum from the Spaniards, who feared for their boundaries. As governor of the territory (1805–6), he became involved in Burr's conspiracy for a Southwestern empire, but proved himself a consummate scoundrel by betraying Burr simultaneously to the Spanish and to the U.S.government. Although he narrowly escaped conviction in a series of courts-martial, he still held Jefferson's faith, and was dispatched to Florida and Cuba on a grandiose scheme of Pan-Americanism. He was again acquitted in a court-martial

ordered by Madison (1811), and became a major-general in the War of 1812, but a final military inquiry (1815), although it left him unconvicted, relieved him of his command. His last years were occupied by further devious but unsuccessful machinations. He wrote untrustworthy *Memoirs of My Own Times* (3 vols.,1816), and figures in *The Crossing* and other literature.

Will to Believe, The, and Other Essays in Popular Philosophy, 10 essays by William James (q.v.) collected with a preface in 1896. The ideas of the title piece are amplified in such essays as 'Is Life Worth Living?,' 'The Sentiment of Rationality,' 'Reflex Action and Theism,' and 'The Dilemma of Determinism,' while the remaining essays treat other ethical and moral problems.

'The Will to Believe' begins by defining 'hypothesis' and 'option,' and stating the basic principles that 'As a rule we disbelieve all facts and theories for which we have no use' and that 'Our nonintellectual nature does influence our convictions.' The author summarizes his thesis: 'Our passional nature not only lawfully may, but must, decide an option between propositions, whenever it is a genuine option that cannot by its nature be decided on intellectual grounds . . .' He shows the distinction between an empiricist and an absolutist belief in truth, and defines his own position as empirical, but points out that 'The greatest empiricists among us are only empiricists on reflection: when left to their instincts, they dogmatize like infallible popes.' Pyrrhonistic skepticism would condemn this absolutism of instinct, but James argues for its acceptance. 'In our dealings with objective nature we . . . are recorders, not makers, of the truth . . .,' but in regard to the solution of moral questions 'faith in a fact can help create the fact.' Therefore, even in the absence of factual evidence, we have the right to accept idealistic beliefs which lead to action for desirable ends. This is not an argument for an indiscriminate embracing of faiths, and 'the freedom to believe can only cover living options which the intellect of the individual cannot by itself resolve.' Finally, the author applies his thesis to the question of religious belief, foreshadowing his attitude in *The Varieties of Religious Experience* (q.v.), and concludes: 'Indeed we *may* wait if we will [for evidential confirmation] . . . but if we do so, we do so at our peril as much as if we believed. In either case we *act*, taking our life in our hands . . .'

WILLARD, Emma [Hart] (1787–1870), pioneer in feminine education, at Middlebury, Vermont (1814), opened her Seminary for women to teach such subjects as mathematics, philosophy, history, and the sciences, which had been previously closed to them. Her *Address . . . Proposing a Plan for Improving Female Education* (1819), sent to Governor Clinton of New York, attracted attention that led to her founding another seminary in Troy (1821), which offered the equivalent of a college education for women, 16 years before Mount Holyoke, the first women's college, was founded. In addition to works on feminine education and texts for her school, she published a volume of mediocre verse, *The Fulfillment of a Promise* (1831), still remembered for 'Rocked in the Cradle of the Deep,' which became extremely popular in its musical setting by the English composer, Joseph P. Knight.

WILLARD, Frances E[lizabeth] (1839–98), born in New York, was first known for her teaching and other work in behalf of women's education in Illinois, serving as president of the Evanston College for Ladies (1871–4). She became a leader of the temperance movement (q.v.), and from 1879 was president of the Women's Christian Temperance Union. She was one of the organizers of the Prohibition Party. Her books include *Woman and Temperance* (1883) and *Glimpses of Fifty Years* (1889).

WILLARD, Samuel (1640–1707), Congregational clergyman, graduated from Harvard (1659), preached in western Massachusetts, and became pastor of the Old South Church (1678–1707), where he established himself as an influence second only to Increase Mather. His many sermons, precisely expounding orthodox theology, condemning those of different faiths, and questioning the court judgment in the Salem witchcraft trials, were collected in *Compleat Body of Divinity* (1726), the largest volume ever published by a colonial press. His orthodoxy and sound scholarship led to his being made vice president of Harvard (1700–1707), of which he was nominally president for six years while Increase Mather was at odds with the colonial government. His elegy

on Willard was written by Benjamin Colman.

William and Mary, COLLEGE OF, second oldest college in the U.S., was founded as an Anglican institution by James Blair at Williamsburg, Virginia (1693). The main building, designed by Sir Christopher Wren (1695), has been restored under the Rockefeller gift to restore colonial Williamsburg (q.v.). Phi Beta Kappa (q.v.) was established at the college (1776). It was closed during the Revolutionary and Civil Wars, when it was occupied by troops, and from 1881 to 1888, for lack of funds. Among the distinguished students were Jefferson (1760–63) and Monroe (1774–6), and the graduates have included St.George Tucker (1772), George Tucker (1797), N.B.Tucker (1801), J.J.Crittenden (1807), Tyler (1807), and Cabell (1898).

William Wilson, story by Poe (q.v.), published in 1839 and collected in *Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque* (q.v.,1840). The description of school life in England is partly autobiographical.

The central figure is a wilful, passionate youth, who at Dr.Bransby's boarding school leads all his companions except one, a boy of his own age and appearance who bears the same name of William Wilson. This double maintains an easy superiority, which frightens Wilson, and haunts him by constant patronage and protection, noticed only by Wilson himself, whose sense of persecution increases until he flees from the school. He goes to Eton and Oxford, and then travels about Europe, following a career of extravagant indulgence, and becoming degenerate and vicious. At critical times his double invariably appears to warn him or destroy his power over others. Finally at Rome, when the double appears to prevent his planned seduction of the Duchess Di Broglio, Wilson is infuriated, engages the other in a sword fight, and murders him. As the double lies dying, he tells Wilson: 'You have conquered . . . Yet henceforward art thou also dead . . . In me didst thou exist—and, in my death, see by this image, which is thine own, how utterly thou hast murdered thyself.'

WILLIAMS, BEN AMES (1889–), born in Mississippi, graduated from Dartmouth (1910) and became a journalist in Boston until he published his first novel, *All the Brothers Were Valiant* (1919). Of his 30 popular novels, many are detective stories, such as *Silver Forest* (1926), *The Dreadful Night* (1928), *Death on Scurvey Street* (1929), *An End to Mirth* (1931), and *Money Musk* (1932); *Evered* (1921), *Audacity* (1924), and *Immortal Longings* (1927) are concerned with life in Maine; *Black Pawl* (1922), *Touchstone* (1930), and *Honeyflow* (1932) are character studies; *Splendor* (1927) deals with newspapermen; and *Great Oaks* (1930) and *Come Spring* (1940) are large panoramas of American life. His stories for popular magazines are collected in such books as *Thrifty Stock* (1923). His son, Ben Ames Williams,Jr., is the author of *Mr.Secretary* (1940), a fictional autobiography of Stanton.

WILLIAMS, JESSE LYNCH (1871–1929), began his literary career with *Princeton Stories* (1895), but became known as a dramatist when *The Stolen Story* (1906), based on his newspaper experiences, was produced. *Why Marry?* (1917; Pulitzer Prize, 1918), a social comedy, was based on his novel, *'And So They Were Married'* (1914). His next play, *Why Not?* (1922), a satirical comedy, dealt with the subject of divorce. *Lovely Lady* (1925) is a comedy dealing with the relation of two generations. His novels include *The Married Life of the Frederic Carrolls* (1910), *Not Wanted* (1923), *They Still Fall in Love* (1929), and *She Knew She Was Right* (1930).

WILLIAMS, JOHN (1664–1729), after graduation from Harvard (1683) became pastor of the Congregational church at Deerfield in western Massachusetts, whence during the French and Indian Wars he and his entire family were captured by Indians. His account of his two-year captivity and his resistance to Jesuit attempts to convert him, written with the help of Cotton Mather, was published as *The Redeemed Captive Returned to Zion* (1707).

WILLIAMS, JOHN (1761–1818), better known by his pseudonym Anthony Pasquin, after a career as a scurrilous satirist and critic in England found it necessary to emigrate to America (*c.*1797), where he continued his vitriolic writings on literary and political matters in various newspapers. His best-known American work, the *Hamiltoniad* (1804?), is a vicious verse satire of the Federalists. His own language was so outrageous that it drove Macaulay to call him a 'polecat' and 'malignant and filthy baboon.'

WILLIAMS, ROGER (*c.*1603–83), born in London, early became the protégé of the great lawyer, Sir Edward Coke, and was educated at Cambridge and destined for the law. After receiving his B.A. (1627), he determined to become a minister, and by 1629 had taken orders in the Anglican Church. He became increasingly influenced by the Puritans, though he soon went beyond their beliefs. Arriving in Massachusetts (1631), he refused a call from a Boston church because it was not Separatist and after a brief period at the more liberal Plymouth he went to Salem as a minister, holding democratic views of church government even beyond those of Separatists. He became anathema to the Massachusetts theocracy because of his 'leveler' principles (q.v.), based on the ideals of the New Testament and representing the incarnation of Protestant individualism, as well as for his political views, which caused him to attack the royal charter as an imperialistic expropriation of Indian rights. His extremely democratic church at Salem so disturbed the hegemony that the General Court banished him (1635), and, 'sorely tossed for one fourteen weeks, in a bitter winter season, not knowing what bread or bed did mean,' he made his way to Rhode Island to found its earliest settlement at Providence (1636). Carrying out his democratic principles, he entered upon his apostolic labors among the Indians, living with them 'in their filthy smoky holes . . . to gain their tongue,' which efforts resulted in *A Key into the Language of America* (1643). Meanwhile, among the colonists who had followed him from Salem, he showed himself to be moving beyond his previous religious beliefs, and where formerly he had found that an established church was necessarily a corrupt organization, he now became skeptical of any church whatsoever. After a few months as a Baptist (1639), he became a Seeker—that is, one who accepted no creed, although believing in the fundamentals of Christianity. To his Christian belief there was joined a personal mysticism that foreshadowed later New England Transcendentalism in its discovery of an indwelling God of love. If his mysticism looked forward to Emerson, and his views as a Seeker to the Unitarianism of Channing, his political beliefs also were the forerunners of ideas considered revolutionary even in the 18th century. His colony was based on the compact theory of the state, which held that government is a man-made institution resting on the consent and equality of its subjects. Church and state were separated, heads of families were given a voice in local government, and all shared equally in a land association. Despite his democratic views, the colony underwent difficulties, owing to the opposition of the encircling New England Confederation and the internal antagonisms of ambitious individualistic settlers. Accordingly, to insure his colony's safety, Williams went to England (1643), where through the aid of his friend, Sir Henry Vane, he obtained a charter for the 'Providence Plantations in the Narragansett Bay' (q.v.,1644). While abroad, he became an intimate of Milton and Cromwell and took part in the activities of the Revolution. To the arguments then prevalent on the form of church government, he added *Queries of Highest Consideration* (1644), addressed to both houses of Parliament and objecting to the establishment of a national church. He also composed an answer to a letter written six years before by John Cotton, which had justified Williams's banishment, and published the reply as *Mr.Cotton's Letter Lately Printed, Examined and Answered* (1644). This statement of his side of the controversy, with the representation of his own view that 'persecutors of men's bodies seldom or never do these men's souls good,' was followed by a more famous controversy with Cotton. Challenging the views of the Massachusetts hierarchy, and pleading for a complete religious and political liberty, he published his most celebrated work, *The Bloudy Tenent of Persecution* (q.v., 1644). Returning to his colony in the autumn of the same year, he found that William Coddington had usurped leadership, and opposed both Williams's democracy and his desire to unite the various Rhode Island settlements. After a temporary settlement, Williams again went to England (1651), where he succeeded in overthrowing his rival. While there, he wrote *The Bloody Tenent Yet More Bloody . . .* (1652) in reply to Cotton's *The Bloudy Tenent Washed and Made White in the Bloud of the Lamb* (1647). Williams returned to become president of his colony (1654) and obtained a new charter (1663). Illustrating his belief in complete toleration, he admitted both Jews and Quakers, but nevertheless soon

found himself involved in a dispute with the latter group. With great vituperation he attacked the followers of the English Quaker, Fox (1672), and published *George Fox Digg'd out of his Burrowes* (1676). Although this and other controversies embittered his last years, as did the necessity to take part with the other colonies in King Philip's War (1675–6) against the Indians, whom he had so long befriended, he continued to the end of his life to be a democratic leader, both in religious and temporal affairs. In addition to lesser writings, such as *Christenings Make Not Christians* (1645) and *The Hireling Ministry None of Christs* (1652), various fugitive materials have been gathered in *Letters and Papers of Roger Williams* (1924).

WILLIAMS, William Carlos (1883–), New Jersey poet and physician, whose *Poems* (1909) and *The Tempers* (1913) employ the technique of Imagism. *Al Que Quiere!* (1917), *Kora in Hell* (1920), and *Sour Grapes* (1921) are examples of experimentation belonging to the Expressionist movement, and characterized by a clean stripping of poetry to essentials, holding emotion at arm's length in vivid, acrid, gnarled observations of life, restricted almost entirely to sensory experience. His other collections are *Spring and All* (1922), *Collected Poems* (1934), *An Early Martyr* (1935), and *Adam and Eve & the City* (1936). A selection of his poetry was published with the misleading title, *Complete Collected Poems* (1938). Williams is also the author of prose works: *The Great American Novel* (1923) and *In the American Grain* (1925), impressionistic essays; *A Voyage to Pagany* (1928), a novel about a small-town American doctor in Europe; *The White Mule* (1937), a novel about the adjustment of immigrants to the American scene, written partly in a stream-of-consciousness technique; *In the Money* (1940), a sequel concerned with the rise in the business world of one of the immigrants; and *The Knife of the Times* (1932) and *Life along the Passaic River* (1938), collections of short stories whose qualities are similar to those of his poems.

Williams College, chartered as a free school at Williamstown, Massachusetts (1785), opened (1791), and established as a college (1793). Mark Hopkins (q.v.) was president (1836–72), and did much to create its high standards. Under the presidency of H.A.Garfield (1908–34), an Institute of Politics was inaugurated (1919), the first of its kind to present an annual series of lectures and forums. From the beginning, Williams has been a liberal arts college, without religious affiliation. Its graduates include J.A.Garfield (1856), H.M.Alden (1857), H.E.Scudder (1858), Bliss Perry (1881), G.S.Hall (1867), H.W.Mabie (1867), S.P.Sherman (1903), and Max Eastman (1905). Others who have attended include Bryant (1810–11) and Eugene Field (1868–9).

Williamsburg, 18th-century capital of Virginia, was restored during the 1920's and 30's, under the auspices of John D. Rockefeller,Jr., as a monument of the American colonial period. Some 500 modern buildings were razed, and in their place were erected or restored original colonial buildings. In addition to the restoration of the city, extensive work has been carried on in the near-by College of William and Mary (q.v.). Homes, cabins, official buildings, and stores have been furnished with authentic colonial materials.

WILLIAMSON, Thames [Ross] (1894–), Idaho-born author, ran away from home at 14 and became successively a tramp, circus hand, sailor, sheepherder, reporter, and prison officer. After graduation from the University of Iowa (1917) and study at Harvard, he taught for a time at Simmons and Smith, and wrote textbooks on economics and sociology. Besides writing stories for children, often under pseudonyms, he is the author of novels which include: *Run, Sheep, Run* (1925), dealing with a California sheepherder; *Gypsy Down the Lane* (1926); *The Man Who Cannot Die* (1926), the story of an 18th-century American's discovery of an elixir of life; *Stride of Man* (1928), about an Oregon pioneer and inventor, who helps to create an industrial city; *Hunky* (1929), a psychological study of an inarticulate, powerful Polish-American workingman; *The Earth Told Me* (1930), concerned with the lives of Eskimos; *In Krusack's House* (1931), a sequel to *Hunky; Sad Indian* (1932), set in Mexico; *The Woods Colt* (1933), the story of an illegitimate Ozark Mountain boy; *D Is For Dutch* (1934), dealing with the native superstitions and quarrels of a Pennsylvania Dutch farmer; *Beginning at Dusk* (1935); and *Under the Linden Tree* (1935).

WILLIS, N[athaniel] P[arker] (1806–67), born in Maine and reared in Boston,

while at Yale published blank-verse paraphrases of Biblical themes, for which he was hailed as a leading U.S.poet. His collection of verse *Sketches* was published the year of his graduation (1827). After a brief employment by S.G.Goodrich, he founded the *American Monthly Magazine* (q.v., 1829–31), a sprightly literary journal in which he published some of his best stories and sketches, later frequently reprinted. Although the magazine lasted only two years, and Willis was less than 25, he was established as the most graceful, worldly, and fluent of American editors. His representation of himself as a foppish æsthete led Holmes to say 'He was something between a remembrance of Count D'Orsay and an anticipation of Oscar Wilde.' After publishing two more books of poems, Willis became associated with G.P.Morris as a sort of glorified foreign correspondent on social affairs for the *New-York Mirror* (q.v.). He traveled on the continent, in England, and through Turkey and Asia Minor (1832–6), writing dandified letters about his acquaintanceships, which were collected in *Pencillings by the Way* (3 vols., London 1835, Philadelphia 1836, complete edition New York 1844) and *Loiterings of Travel* (3 vols.,1840). In England, where he was a popular fad but irritated some of the stouter minds, he published *Melanie and Other Poems* (1835), and a series of sketches under the pseudonym Philip Slingsby, collected in *Inklings of Adventure* (1836). Returning to the U.S., he wrote such romantic tragedies as *Bianca Visconti* (q.v.,1837) and *Tortesa the Usurer* (q.v.,1839), as well as helping to edit the *Mirror* and writing American sketches for it, which were collected in *A l'Abri; or, The Tent Pitched* (1839) and *American Scenery* (2 vols.,1840). As a co-editor of the *Mirror* he engaged his friend Poe to be literary critic. Meanwhile he published society verse, charming prattle, and *Dashes at Life with a Free Pencil* (1845), short stories whose brilliantly turned surprise endings foreshadow those of O.Henry. As a Broadway dandy, he won notoriety by being implicated in the divorce trial of Edwin Forrest and other sensations of the day. In addition to magazine contributions and collections of letters concerning two trips abroad and one to the West Indies, Willis published his only novel, *Paul Fane* (1857), the story of a young painter adored by women as a celebrity but disdained as a social inferior. In his later years, he reissued his earlier books under new titles, collected short stories in such volumes as *Life Here and There* (1850), engaged in further editorial work, and was noted as a host at his celebrated country residence on the Hudson.

SARA PAYSON WILLIS (1811–72), his sister, was a popular author in her own right, under the pseudonym Fanny Fern. Her first book, *Fern Leaves from Fanny's Portfolio* (1853), became immensely popular for its sharp, rapid, playful sketches. This was followed by several similar works, continuing her style of feminine wit plus blood-curdling melodrama and touchingly tender tales. Her brother's reputation as a rake so infuriated her that she wrote *Ruth Hall* (1855), a scurrilous fictional satire. For many years she was a columnist for the *New York Ledger*. She married James Parton in 1856.

WILLS, HELEN (HELEN WILLS MOODY) (1906–), winner of the women's singles tennis championships of the U.S. (1923–5, 1927–9,1931), and of France and England (1927–30). She has written several books, including an autobiography, *Fifteen-Thirty* (1937).

Wilmot Proviso, proposed amendment by Representative David Wilmot to the bill (1846) appropriating $2,000,000 to negotiate a boundary treaty with Mexico, and possibly to purchase territory. The amendment provided that no slavery or involuntary servitude should ever exist in any territory acquired from Mexico. Although it passed the House, it was refused by the Senate. Its principle became the basis of the Free-Soil party.

WILSON, ALEXANDER (1766–1813), Scottish-born ornithologist, emigrated to the U.S. (1794) and while teaching school near the home of William Bartram was urged by him to begin the scientific investigation which culminated in *American Ornithology* (9 vols.,1808–14), dealing with the eastern part of the U.S. north of Florida. The work is considered both accurate and brilliant, and, preceding Audubon by some 20 years, was the pioneer study in its field. His nature poems, published in *The Foresters* (1805) and *Poems; Chiefly in the Scottish Dialect . . .* (1816), are less important.

WILSON, EDMUND (1895–), born in New Jersey, graduated from Princeton (1916) and became a New York literary

critic. *Discordant Encounters* (1926), collecting his criticism from *The New Republic*, also includes dialogues on literary and social questions. In 1929 he published *I Thought of Daisy*, a novel set in Greenwich Village, and *Poets, Farewell!*, poems indicating the futility of conventional poetic expression in this age. *Axel's Castle* (1931) is a critical study of the symbolist movement, while his later books include: *The American Jitters: A Year of the Slump* (1932) and *Travels in Two Democracies* (1936), volumes of social reporting from a Marxist point of view, the latter concerning Russia and the U.S.; *This Room and This Gin and These Sandwiches* (1937), a collection of plays of his earlier period; *The Triple Thinkers* (1938), 10 essays on literary subjects; and *To the Finland Station* (1940), tracing in terms of Vico's philosophy the thought and actions of the leading champions and opponents of the theory and politics of communism.

WILSON, Harry Leon (1867–1939), was an editor of the humorous weekly, *Puck* (1896–1902), after which he began writing fiction. His best-known novels are: *Bunker Bean* (1912); *Ruggles of Red Gap* (1915), the story of a British valet employed in the Far West, whose tact and understanding show him to be superior to his American employer; and *Merton of the Movies* (1922), concerned with a movie-struck clerk who ironically achieves success because he unconsciously burlesques serious acting roles. *Merton* was dramatized (1922) by Marc Connelly and George Kaufman, and Wilson collaborated with Tarkington in writing *The Man from Home* (1908) and other plays.

WILSON, James (1742–98), Scottish-born jurist and political figure, emigrated to America (1765) and early entered the Revolutionary movement. His *Considerations on the Nature and Extent of the Legislative Authority of the British Parliament* (1774) contended that Parliament had no authority over the colonies, since they were separate states connected only by a common sovereign. Wilson was a delegate to the Continental Congress, a signer of the Declaration of Independence, and a member of the Federal Constitutional Convention, where he was prominent in working for a strong national government. He later became conservative and framed a reactionary constitution for Pennsylvania. He was a justice of the U.S. Supreme Court (1789–98), and for a time a professor of law at the College of Philadelphia. His *Works* were published in three volumes (1804).

WILSON, John (*c.*1591–1667), English-born Congregational minister, emigrated to Boston (1630), where in addition to his influence as a divine he was known as a versifier. His longest published work, *A Song, or, Story, for the Lasting Remembrance of Divers Famous Works* (1626), reissued as *A Song of Deliverance* (1680), in rough ballad meter, was written to teach children how nobly God had shaped English history under Protestant rule. 'Memoria Wilsoniana' (1695), a biography by Cotton Mather, was republished in Mather's *Magnalia.*

WILSON, Margaret (1882–), Iowa-born novelist, whose works include *The Able McLaughlins* (1923, Pulitzer Prize 1924), a story of Scottish-American pioneers in 19th-century Iowa, and their family troubles and feuds, and its sequel, *Law and the McLaughlins* (1936). Among her other novels are *The Kenworthys* (1925), *Daughters of India* (1928), *Trousers of Taffeta* (1929), *The Crime of Punishment* (1931), *One Came Out* (1932), and *Valiant Wife* (1933).

Wilson, William, see *William Wilson.*

WILSON, [Thomas] Woodrow (1856–1924), 28th President of the U.S. (1913–21), was born at Staunton, Virginia, the son of a Presbyterian minister. He graduated from Princeton (1879), studied law at the University of Virginia, and, after a year of legal practice, continued his study of political science and jurisprudence at Johns Hopkins, receiving his Ph.D. (1886) for a thesis on *Congressional Government* (1885). After teaching at Bryn Mawr and Wesleyan, he became a professor of jurisprudence and political economy at Princeton (1890), of which he was president (1902–10), introducing many social and educational reforms in the university, including a 'preceptorial system' of small classes. In 1910 he resigned to become the Democratic candidate for governor of New Jersey, and was elected on a progressive 'reform' platform, although supported by the conservative Democratic party machine. His brief administration was notable for liberal economic and political reforms, and in 1912, through the support of Bryan, he received the Democratic

nomination for the presidency. His campaign made him nationally famous as an orator and progressive, but the immediate cause of his election was the split in the Republican party between the supporters of Taft and Theodore Roosevelt. Many liberal reforms were introduced during Wilson's first administration, including the Federal Reserve Act, the Farm Loan Act, the Federal Trade Commission, the Clayton Anti-Trust Act, the Adamson Eight-Hour Law, and the theoretical repudiation of 'dollar diplomacy.' There were, however, various difficulties with Latin American countries, culminating in the Pershing expedition against Villa and the establishment of partial protectorates in Santo Domingo, Haiti, and Nicaragua. Wilson was re-elected in 1916 on a pacific platform, with the slogan 'He has kept us out of war,' but he was driven by many pressures and emergencies, including the submarine warfare that resulted in the sinking of the *Lusitania* and other ships, to declare war on Germany (April 6, 1917). It was his hope that this action would help to make the world 'safe for democracy,' and he consistently expounded his concept of an eventual peace based upon international co-operation, which would insure the tranquillity of the great powers and the rights of small nations. This was the basis of the League of Nations program. At the end of the war he headed the American delegation to the peace conference, to which he proposed his Fourteen Points (q.v.), but he was disillusioned by the compromises of the Treaty of Versailles (1919). His fight with the Senate to win unconditional approval of the League Covenant and the peace treaty caused him to make a nation-wide tour to appeal to the people. The resulting overwork and disillusion led to his complete breakdown, from which he never fully recovered. Divorced by his confinement from political realities, he lost his cherished dream of American participation in the League of Nations, and was himself bitterly criticized as an egoist, although in 1919 he was awarded the Nobel peace prize. The most important writings on Wilson and his administration are by R.S.Baker, W.E.Dodd, and E.M.House (qq.v.), while his own books include: *The State: Elements of Historical and Practical Politics* (1889), *An Old Master and Other Political Essays* (1893), *Mere Literature* (1896), *A History of the American People* (5 vols.,1902), *Constitutional Government in the United States* (1908), *The New Freedom* (1913), *Division and Reunion*, 1829–1889 (1893), and *Robert E. Lee* (1924).

Wind of Destiny, The, romance by Arthur S. Hardy (q.v.).

Windy McPherson's Son, novel by Sherwood Anderson (q.v.).

Wine from These Grapes, poems by Edna St.Vincent Millay (q.v.).

Wine of the Puritans, The, critical work by Van Wyck Brooks (q.v.).

Winesburg, Ohio, 23 stories by Sherwood Anderson (q.v.), published in 1919. The preface, 'The Book of the Grotesque,' explains the author's unifying conception of his characters: 'It was the truths that made the people grotesques . . . The moment one of the people took one of the truths to himself, called it his truth, and tried to live his life by it, he became a grotesque and the truth he embraced became a falsehood.' In a simple and intense style these psychological portraits of the more sensitive and imaginative of Winesburg's population are seen through the eyes of a young reporter, George Willard.

'Hands' is the story of Wing Biddlebaum, who had an innocent passion for caressing living things and was driven from the town because of this misunderstood eccentricity. 'Queer' tells of Elmer Cowley, who had grown up on a farm, and was lonely and frustrated in Winesburg, until, obsessed by an idea that he was considered 'queer,' he ran away to begin life anew. 'Godliness' is a long tale concerned with Jesse Bentley, who prayed for a David to help him despoil his Philistine neighbors of their farms, and was himself nearly slain by a stone from the sling of the young David, his grandson. 'The Strength of God' tells of the devoutly religious Reverend Curtis Hartman, who was obsessed with sexual desire until his 'cure' after an intense inner struggle, in which he believed that 'God has manifested himself to me in the body of a woman.'

Wing-and-Wing, romance by Cooper (q.v.) published in 1842.

On the island of Elba, at the height of the Napoleonic empire, lives Ghita Caraccioli, granddaughter of the Neapolitan admiral and beloved of the French privateer Raoul Yverne. Raoul's ship is the *Wing-and-Wing*, a lugger carrying British col-

ors but actually preying on British shipping. The romantic privateer visits Ghita, who refuses to marry him unless he becomes a Catholic and gives up his occupation. He is nearly trapped by the arrival of an English frigate, the *Proserpine*, but with the aid of his lieutenant, Ithuel Bolt, a Yankee soldier of fortune, he manages to reach his ship. The *Proserpine* pursues the *Wing-and-Wing* for several exciting days, but by his daring and superior seamanship the privateer escapes. The notorious execution of Admiral Caraccioli by order of Lord Nelson takes place at Naples, and Ghita, present for a last interview with her grandfather, is joined by Raoul in disguise. Attempting to take her and her uncle to their home, Raoul and Ithuel are apprehended, Ithuel is released on the condition that he serve again in the British navy, but Raoul is sentenced to death. A delay is granted, for the unjust Caraccioli execution has had an unfortunate effect on the people, and Ithuel and Ghita help Raoul to escape. They regain the *Wing-and-Wing*, but the ship is soon wrecked on a dangerous reef. The British attack, and Raoul is fatally wounded, but Ithuel helps Ghita to escape.

Wingless Victory, The, play by Maxwell Anderson (q.v.).

Wings of the Dove, The, novel by Henry James (q.v.) published in 1902.

Kate Croy, daughter of an impoverished English social adventurer, is in love with Merton Densher, a London journalist, and they become secretly engaged, although she will not marry him while he is without wealth. While Densher is in America on business, Kate's shrewd, worldly aunt, Mrs.Lowder, has as guests the Americans, Mrs.Stringham and her wealthy protégée, Milly Theale. The latter, an unselfish, poetically lovely girl suffering from a mysterious illness, confides in Kate, who in turn tells everything of herself except her affair with Densher, who has previously been acquainted with Milly, deeply attracting her by his charm and honesty. Sir Luke Strett, a celebrated surgeon, reveals to Mrs.Stringham that Milly's only possibility of postponing her approaching death is to be as happy and cheerful as possible. Kate, learning of this, devises a scheme that she thinks will solve the problems of all. Densher returns to London, and Kate encourages Milly's interest in him, believing that her marriage to the journalist will contribute to her happiness, while, following the girl's imminent death, Densher will inherit her fortune and be able to marry Kate. She simply tells him to be kind to Milly, and, carried away by his love and faith in her ability to manage affairs, he obeys. Milly, who thinks that Densher has been rejected by Kate, is ecstatically happy for a time. In the autumn they all meet at Venice, where Milly arouses the resentment of Lord Mark, a British fortune-seeker, by refusing his proposal of marriage. Kate exposes her entire scheme to her lover, who weakly consents to go through with it if she will give herself to him at once. She fulfils her part of the bargain and returns to London. Lord Mark, who knows the relations of Kate and Densher, vents his spite by divulging the plot to Milly, and the dying girl, deprived of hope, quickly declines. Mrs.Stringham asks Densher to save Milly by telling her he is not engaged to Kate, but this he will not do. He returns to London, and after Milly's death receives a large legacy. He offers to marry Kate if she will consent to destroy the check, and she replies that she will if he can swear that he is 'not in love with her memory.' He cannot, for, as Kate realizes, they are now separated by the barriers of Densher's conscience and their tragic memories.

Winner Take Nothing, 14 stories by Hemingway (q.v.) published in 1933.

'The Light of the World,' set in a small town in the Middle West, has for its chief character a fat blonde prostitute, who recalls nostalgically the prizefighter who furnished the one rudimentary romantic episode of her life. 'A Clean, Well-Lighted Place' portrays the desolate lives of the waiters and customers of a Spanish café. 'The Sea Change' tells of the tragic separation of a young couple, when the girl drifts into a homosexual relation with another woman. 'A Way You'll Never Be' describes the hysterical reaction of a young American officer in the Italian army, when he is relieved from active duty and thus has time to become aware of the significance of the war. 'Homage to Switzerland' contains three vignettes of fatuous middle-class American tourists in Europe. 'A Natural History of the Dead' is a bitter satire on the results of modern warfare. 'The Gambler, the Nun, and the Radio' is concerned with two hospital pa-

tients, a Mexican gambler, and an author, and the latter's cynical playing upon the phrase, 'the opium of the people.'

Winning of Barbara Worth, The, novel by Harold Bell Wright (q.v.).

Winning of the West, The, historical study by Theodore Roosevelt (q.v.), published in four volumes (1889–96). It deals with the settlement of the Northwest Territory, following the Revolutionary War, and specifically with the events leading up to the Ordinance of 1787, which established the conditions of expansion and the development of political and social institutions in the U.S. beyond the Ohio. The work used original sources and influenced later histories in reconsidering the significance of this period, but is generally considered to follow Parkman in its romantic portrayal of heroic events and emphasis on literary qualities rather than scholarship.

WINSLOW, Edward (1595–1655), English-born Puritan, came to America on the *Mayflower*. *Mourt's Relation* (q.v.,1622), concerning this voyage and the earliest days of the Plymouth colony, is considered to be based on his journal and that of William Bradford. When Winslow returned to England (1623–4) as agent of the colony, he published *Good News from New England* (1624), a continuation of his previous narrative to September 1623. The graphic account ends with a racy warning 'to discourage such as with too great lightness undertake' the business of colonization. On his return, he took a leading part in the colony's affairs, serving three times as governor (1633,'36,'44), and was continuously assistant until 1647. On a journey to England (1634) he was briefly imprisoned for his religious beliefs. He went to England again (1646) to remain after the triumph of Cromwell, and published *Hypocrisie Unmasked* (1646), a spirited defense of the colony, attacking Samuel Gorton. *New Englands Salamander Discovered by an Irreligious and Scornfull Pamphlet* (1647), a reply to Major John Child. *New-Englands Jonas Cast Up at London* (1647), answers this criticism, which was unfavorable to the Puritan regime and specifically to Winslow. The latter was sent by Cromwell on a mission to the West Indies, where he died of a fever.

Josiah Winslow (*c.*1629–80), his son, was also prominent in the government of the Plymouth colony, serving as assistant governor (1657–73) and governor (1673–80), as Plymouth commissioner in the New England Confederation, and as a commander of forces in King Philip's War. His elegy on Bradford was published in Morton's *New England's Memorial.*

WINSLOW, Thyra Samter (1893–), popular writer of short stories, whose tales, mainly based on her knowledge of small-town life in her native Arkansas and elsewhere, or on the romance of the theater she discovered as a New York dramatic critic, are collected in: *Picture Frames* (1923), *Show Business* (1926), *People Round the Corner* (1927), *Blueberry Pie* (1932), and *My Own, My Native Land* (1935).

WINSOR, Justin (1831–97), librarian of Harvard University (1877–97), whose historical work included the editorship of the co-operative *Narrative and Critical History of America* (8 vols.,1884–9), in which his own scholarly notes and bibliographical essays were interspersed with the text. He advanced the scientific study of American history by making available new materials.

WINTER, William (1836–1917), was a writer in his native Massachusetts, a Bohemian journalist in the group at Pfaff's, and became dramatic critic of the *New-York Tribune* (1865–1909). Although during the first 25 years he was respected as the Great Cham of the New York theater, he was later considered a relic of the Victorian era because of his romanticism, sentimentalism, insistence upon morality, and hatred of the rising realism. In addition to his daily columns, in part reprinted in *The Wallet of Time* (1913), he wrote such theatrical reminiscences as *Other Days* (1908) and *Old Friends* (1909), and biographies of such theatrical figures as Joseph Jefferson, Henry Irving, Edwin Booth, Ada Rehan, Richard Mansfield, and Belasco. *Shakespeare on the Stage* (2 vols.,1911,'15) is a valuable work of theatrical scholarship, dealing with interpretations of Shakespearean roles by leading actors. He was the author of a great many occasional poems and funeral verse on the deaths of important actors, which, because of his longevity, were so frequent that he came to be known as 'Weeping Willie.' His *Poems* were collected in 1909.

WINTERICH, John T[racy] (1891–), journalist and author of books for

bibliophiles and students of literary history, which include: *A Primer of Book Collecting* (1927); *Collector's Choice* (1928); *Books and the Man* (1929); *An American Friend of Dickens* (1933); *Early American Books and Printing* (1935); and *Twenty-Three Books* (1938).

WINTERS, [Arthur] Yvor (1900–), was born in Chicago, whose university he attended (1917–19), and after further study became professor of English at Stanford. In addition to editing *The Gyroscope* (1929–31), a little magazine, he was Western editor of *Hound and Horn* (1932–4). His poetry, published in *The Immobile Wind* (1921), *The Bare Hills* (1927), *The Proof* (1930), *The Journey* (1931), and *Before Disaster* (1934), is primarily classical, as is his criticism, in *Primitivism and Decadence* (1937), showing the obscurity of modern American poetry to be the result of romanticism qualified by certain aspects of American history, and *Maule's Curse* (1938), studies of obscurantism in 19th-century American authors.

Winterset, verse play by Maxwell Anderson (q.v.), produced and published in 1935. Its theme was suggested by the Sacco-Vanzetti case (q.v.).

Thirteen years before the time of the play, Romagna, an Italian radical, was 'framed' on a murder charge and executed. His wife died, and their son, Mio, wandering through the country as a tramp becomes passionately certain of his father's innocence. He comes to a New York tenement district, where in a mean dwelling under a bridge he locates Garth Esdras, a reformed gangster who has come home in an attempt to escape the domination of Trock, the gangster leader who actually committed the murder of which Romagna was convicted. Mio meets Garth's sister, Miriamne, and they fall in love, finding an intimate bond in their mutual loneliness and terror. Then, in the Esdras cellar apartment, he discovers Garth with Judge Gaunt, who participated in the Romagna 'frameup,' and whose sense of guilt has driven him mad. The Judge is being nursed by Garth's father, a kindly and wise old rabbi. Garth and Gaunt deny Mio's accusations, and the youth begins to doubt his father's innocence, until Trock enters and is shocked into confessing his guilt by the sudden reappearance of his gunman, Shadow, whom he thought he had murdered. Police officers arrive, and take the insane Gaunt into custody, but Miriamne prevents Mio from demanding the arrest of Trock, who, now desperate, waits for the departure of the officers, and then has his men surround the tenement. Mio tries to escape in order at last to clear his father's name, but Trock shoots him down. As he lies dying, Miriamne assures him that she will carry his message to the world, but she too is killed.

WINTHROP, John (1588–1649), a member of an English upper-class family, attended Cambridge and took his position in the English social scheme as lord of the manor at Groton and as an important lawyer. His Puritan sympathies worked against his success, however, and, after careful consideration, he determined to join the Massachusetts Bay Company. Selected as governor, he sailed on the *Arbella* (1630), after collaborating with the other leaders in writing *The Humble Request of . . . the Company Late Gone for New England* (1630), affirming their belief in Puritanism, and disclaiming any intention of separating from the Established Church. While at sea Winthrop wrote 'A Modell of Christian Charity,' pointing out what the colony should be and the manner of the colonists' necessary co-operation. After settling at Boston, Winthrop was at the center of events in the colony's history. For 9 of his remaining 19 years he was governor, and during the other 10 deputy-governor. Since the charter of the company had been transferred to New England, and was not, as in the case of other colonies, held by an English corporation, this Puritan commonwealth had in it the seeds of democracy. Winthrop and the other upper-class leaders, however, had their own ideas on how a democracy should operate, and they attempted to create a sort of benevolent despotism, despite the opposition of the freemen, the original stockholders who alone held the franchise. Because of the power of John Cotton, the company became increasingly an aristocratic theocracy. Quarrels with the freemen were frequent, and their leader, Sir Henry Vane, was temporarily governor, until he took the side of Anne Hutchinson in the Antinomian controversy, after which Winthrop resumed power. His manuscript war with Vane has since been printed, and his contribution to the controversy was compiled at the time

by Thomas Weld (q.v.). In 1642 occurred the *cause célèbre* of Goody Sherman, whose stray sow had been impounded by wealthy Robert Keayne. The aristocratic Court of Assistance vetoed the action of the larger and more democratic General Court, which sided with the poor woman, and thus definitively established its power and created a precedent for American legislatures. Winthrop indicated his views at the time, proclaiming, 'If we should change from a mixt aristocratie to a mere Democratie, first we should have no warrant in scripture for it: there is no such government in Israel . . . a Democratie is, amongst most civil nations, accounted the meanest and worst forms of government.' He founded the New England Confederation (q.v.,1643), but exceeded his authority when, without referring to his colonists or the Confederation, he took sides in a local French dispute in Acadia. Such actions as this, and his writing of a discourse on 'Arbitrary Government' (1644), so inflamed the people that he was impeached, although he escaped conviction by delivering a speech on liberty, thus satisfying the colonists to such an extent that they elected him governor annually until his death. His most famous piece of writing was his *Journal*, of which the first two parts were published in 1790, and the complete work as *The History of New England* (2 vols.,1825–6). This important source book, begun on the *Arbella* voyage and continued intermittently until his death, is composed of brief jottings. It records not only the great events but also the minute happenings, for as a Puritan he conceived of formal history as specific and concrete anecdotes, all equally important, since all occur through the will of God. The *Winthrop Papers*, a collection of his miscellaneous writings, has been published by the Massachusetts Historical Society. Winthrop figures frequently in literature, as in Hawthorne's *The Scarlet Letter*, 'Howe's Masquerade,' and 'Endicott and the Red Cross.'

JOHN WINTHROP (1606–76), his son, was educated in England and Ireland, served in the British navy, traveled widely on the continent, and emigrated to join his father in Boston (1631). During a trip to England (1634), he was appointed by Lord Say and Sele and Lord Brooke to be governor of the plantation that they founded in Connecticut. Although he returned to the colonies (1635), he barely visited Connecticut but continued to make his home in Massachusetts. After another trip to England (1641–3), he settled in Connecticut, built an iron works, and, although holding posts in both colonies, became definitely associated with the new one on resuming the post of governor (1657). From 1659 until his death, he was annually elected governor, and in 1663 won his colony so liberal a charter that it became virtually an independent state. In his own time he was known for his scientific investigations, and he was the first colonial to be elected a Fellow of the Royal Society.

JOHN WINTHROP (1638–1707), his son, commonly known as Fitz-John Winthrop, was prominent as a soldier in Cromwell's parliamentary army and as a commander of colonial troops. He was governor of Connecticut (1698–1707).

WINTHROP, THEODORE (1828–61), Connecticut novelist, graduated from Yale (1848) and traveled extensively in Europe, on horseback across the U.S. to California and Oregon, to Panama, and through the Maine woods. Although for a time in the steamship business and a lawyer, he devoted most of his time to travel and writing. His books were posthumously published after he was killed in the Civil War. His novels include: *Cecil Dreeme* (1861), the story of a New York girl who escapes an undesirable marriage by masquerading as a man among the artists of the Washington Square district; *John Brent* (q.v.,1862), an early novel of western life; and *Edwin Brothertoft* (1862), a romance of the Revolution in New York. All of these are marked by melodramatic plots and a breathless narrative style. *The Canoe and the Saddle* (1863) contains vivid sketches of his journey to the Northwest, with an addendum on his trip to Panama to survey a canal route, and *Life in the Open Air* (1863) is a similar work.

WIRT, WILLIAM (1772–1834), Virginia lawyer and U.S.attorney-general under Monroe and Adams (1817–29), was the presidential candidate of the Anti-Masonic party (1832). His first book, the popular *Letters of the British Spy* (q.v.,1803), was followed by other essays sketching Southern customs and manners, *The Rainbow* (1804) and *The Old Bachelor* (1812), the latter written with friends. These were all published anonymously. Wirt's *Life* of Patrick Henry (1817) recreated many of

the speeches from notes and tradition. J.P.Kennedy wrote his *Memoirs* (2 vols., 1849).

Wisconsin, University of, coeducational state institution founded at Madison (1848), now has an enrollment of some 10,000 students. It is especially noted for its teaching of agriculture and natural history, and for its Experimental College founded by Meiklejohn (1926). Among the graduates of the university are R.M. LaFollette (1879), F.J.Turner (1884), W.B.Cairns (1890), H.E.Bolton (1895), Zona Gale (1895), Honoré Morrow, Marjorie K. Rawlings (1918), P.F.LaFollette (1919), and Horace Gregory (1923). Students who did not receive a degree included John Muir (1859–63) and Ella W. Wilcox (1867–8).

WISE, Henry Augustus (1819–69), naval officer, whose writings include *Los Gringos; or, An Inside View of Mexico and California . . .* (1849), *Tales for the Marines* (1855), and several melodramatic novels published under the pseudonym Harry Gringo.

WISE, John (1652–1725), born at Roxbury, Massachusetts, was minister of the Second Church of Ipswich (1680–1725), except for a brief period (1687) when Governor Andros deprived him of his ministry and jailed him for leading his townsmen in refusing to pay taxes that violated their charter rights. His pamphlets, *The Churches Quarrel Espoused* (q.v.,1710) and *A Vindication of the Government of New-England Churches* (q.v.,1717), opposed the attempts of the Mathers to establish a centralized association for regulating the churches. Their underlying ideas of democracy caused them to be reissued and widely read before the Revolution and the Civil War. *A Word of Comfort to a Melancholy Country* (1721) is a plea for paper money.

WISLIZENUS, Frederick Adolph (1810–89), German-born physician and adventurer, came to the U.S. (1835) and made a trip to the Far West, recorded in a book (1840) translated as *A Journey to the Rocky Mountains in the Year* 1839 (1912). He joined a trading caravan on a trip from St.Louis to Chihuahua, Mexico (1846), and described the journey in *Memoir of a Tour to Northern Mexico* (1848).

WISSLER, Clark (1870–), professor of anthropology at Yale (1924–), and curator of the American Museum of Natural History (1906–), whose books include *The American Indian* (1917), *Man and Culture* (1922), *Social Anthropology* (1929), and *Indians of the United States* (1940).

WISTER, Owen (1860–1938), Pennsylvania author, graduated from Harvard (1882) and made several trips to Wyoming, which furnished material for *Lin McLean* (1898), a series of related stories of the Western cattle country; *The Jimmyjohn Boss* (1900), short stories; and the extremely popular novel, *The Virginian* (q.v.,1902), about Wyoming cowpunchers during the 1870's and '80's. *Lady Baltimore* (1906) is a romantic novel of life in Charleston, and *Philosophy* 4 (1903) is a story with a Harvard background. Wister also wrote biographies of Grant (1900), Washington (1907), and his friend Theodore Roosevelt (1930). His collected works (11 vols.,1928) also include poems, nature studies, other stories of the West, and humorous writings. He was a grandson of Fanny Kemble.

Witchcraft, see *Salem Witchcraft Trials.*

Witchcraft; or, The Martyrs of Salem, blank-verse tragedy by Cornelius Mathews (q.v.), produced in 1846 and published in 1852.

Ambla Bodish, a 17th-century Massachusetts woman accused of witchcraft, is unsuccessfully defended by her son Gideon. Susanna Peache, who loves Gideon, testifies against Ambla, believing that she has used witchcraft to alienate his affections. Despairing of recovering Gideon's love, Susanna commits suicide, and he is killed by Jarvis Dane, another lover of the girl.

Witching Hour, The, play by Augustus Thomas (q.v.).

With the Procession, novel by H.B. Fuller (q.v.) published in 1895.

David Marshall is a wealthy Chicago merchant whose interests do not extend beyond his business. His wife, Eliza, shares his simple, bourgeois tastes, as do their eldest son and daughter, but the three youngest children seek to enter the exclusive, luxury-loving circle of the city's plutocracy. Truesdale, the younger son, leaves college to spend four years in Europe, where he studies art and music, and returns an affected amateur, unsym-

pathetic with David's wish that he enter the family business and with the plans of his matchmaking aunt, Mrs.Lydia Rhodes. His sister Jane, bold and energetic, enters upon a career of charitable and social activities, enlisting the aid of Mrs.Granger Bates, an adept social leader. Rosamund, the youngest, attends school in New York, whence she returns beautiful and sophisticated, intent on social conquest. Her marriage to Arthur Paston, an English aristocrat, establishes her position but removes her from the family circle. David, under the strain of these campaigns to keep 'with the procession,' falls ill and dies, leaving his business in a hopeless condition but his private fortune intact. Truesdale dislikes life in Chicago, and when his courtship of Bertie Patterson is unsuccessful he plans a trip to the Orient. Jane marries a young clerk, Theodore Brower, and devotes her inheritance to erecting a memorial to her father.

WITHERSPOON, JOHN (1723–94), Scottish-born Presbyterian minister, came to America to accept the presidency of the College of New Jersey (1768). He healed the breach between the New Side and the Old Side, revitalized his church in the Middle Colonies, and as a philosopher denounced the theories of Berkeley and championed empirical common sense. He encouraged advanced methods of instruction, and enlarged the curriculum, but because of the suspension of exercises during the Revolution, the institution suffered during his administration, and he turned his interest to political affairs. A member of the Continental Congress, he signed both the Declaration of Independence and the Articles of Confederation. His hand can be traced in several keen political publications of the period, to which he contributed anonymously. His most memorable sermon, 'The Dominion of Providence over the Passions of Men,' preached at Princeton (May 17, 1776), was a calm statement of his advocacy of independence. His best secular writing was the *Essay on Money* (1786), opposing paper currency. He is better remembered for his coinage of the word 'Americanism' in 'The Druid,' a denunciation of the American language published in the *Pennsylvania Journal* (1781). His writings were collected (4 vols.,1800–1801).

Wobblies, see *I.W.W.*

WOLCOTT, ROGER (1679–1767), after serving in the French and Indian Wars, became prominent in the politics of his native Connecticut and served as its governor (1751–4). His *Poetical Meditations* (1725) contains 'A Brief Account of the Agency of the Honourable John Winthrop' (in obtaining the Connecticut charter), a rugged attempt at an epic which is an interesting link between earlier New England elegies and the American epics of the Connecticut Wits. Wolcott's prose pamphlets were concerned with religious controversies.

OLIVER WOLCOTT (1726–97), his son, also served in the French and Indian Wars, and was a prominent lawyer and political figure in Connecticut. He served in the Continental Congress, signed the Declaration of Independence, and then became a major-general of Connecticut volunteers, joining Gates against Burgoyne. He was lieutenant-governor of the state (1786–96) and governor (1796–7).

OLIVER WOLCOTT (1760–1833), his son, succeeded Hamilton as secretary of the treasury (1795–1800). He was so subservient to his predecessor, and so maliciously attacked President Adams, that he was forced to resign. Returning to local politics, he became governor of Connecticut (1817–27).

Wolf Larsen, character in *The Sea-Wolf* (q.v.).

Wolf Song, novel by Harvey Fergusson (q.v.).

WOLFE, JAMES (1727–59), British general, second in command to Amherst in the American expedition of 1758. His successful strategy in the siege of Louisburg won him command of the campaign against Quebec. Conducting a force of 5,000 men at night down the St.Lawrence, he led them in scaling the heights to the Plains of Abraham, and was victorious over the French in open battle. Both Wolfe and the French general, Montcalm, were mortally wounded, but the fall of Quebec marked the end of French dominion in Canada. Wolfe figures in Thackeray's *The Virginians* and Parkman's *Montcalm and Wolfe.*

WOLFE, THOMAS [CLAYTON] (1900–38), was born and reared in Asheville, North Carolina (the 'Altamont, Old Catawba' of his fiction). His father, a powerful stonecutter from the North, is the prototype of Oliver Gant, and his mother, a member of a typical puritanical moun-

tain family, is the original of the mother of Eugene Gant, whose drab life and eventual escape parallels that of the author's own youth. After graduation from the University of North Carolina (1920), where Wolfe wrote and acted for the Carolina Playmakers, he studied playwriting at Harvard, in the 47 Workshop of G.P.Baker, and received his M.A. (1922). He returned from a period abroad to teach English at New York University (1924–30), but with the publication of *Look Homeward, Angel* (q.v.,1929) deserted teaching to devote his full time to writing. This strongly autobiographical novel, displaying great originality and intensity, as well as obvious debts to Dreiser, Lewis, Joyce, and other contemporary novelists, was continued in a sequel, *Of Time and the River* (q.v.,1935). A posthumous novel, *The Web and the Rock* (1939), has as its central character George Webber, apparently the Eugene Gant of the previous books. Despite the author's claim that 'It is the most objective novel that I have written,' the first half of the book closely parallels the material of *Look Homeward, Angel*, and the second part serves as a sequel to *Of Time and the River*. The title indicates symbolically the problem of his first book: the web of experience, environment, and ancestry, in which the hero is snared; and his attempt to escape by finding the rock, which is the original strength and beauty of vision of his father. Arriving in New York from Old Catawba, George, the young college instructor and writer, enters into a tempestuous love affair with Esther Jack, a wealthy stage designer. After he identifies his love with the web, he escapes to Germany to recover, and there concludes that 'you can't go home again,' that you must go forward, you can't return to a dead past. The sequel, *You Can't Go Home Again* (1940) deals with George's life after his return to the U.S. It concerns his continued unsatisfactory romance; his success in writing novels reminiscent of Wolfe's own; his kindly relation and later dissatisfaction with an internationally famous but disillusioned novelist and with his editor, who fatalistically accepts the sickness of civilization; his unsuccessful attempt to return to the roots of his home town, whose morality has become shoddy during the prosperous decade of the '20s; and his horrid discovery of the destruction of the Germany he had once loved. Throughout is the story of a pilgrimage in search of an enduring faith by a man who recognizes that a corrupt society destroys each individual in it, but nevertheless believes that 'the true fulfillment of our spirit, of our people, of our mighty and immortal land is yet to come.' In addition to his long fiction, Wolfe published short stories, *From Death to Morning* (1935), and a critical examination of his own work, *The Story of a Novel* (1936). 'Poetical passages' from his novels have been collected as *The Face of a Nation* (1939). Throughout his fiction, there is evident a self-fascination and self-torment that endow his writing now with a lofty romantic quality, now with the prosaic quality of literal reporting of each fact in the hero's life. His tremendous intensity results both in a powerful emotional evocation and in a sprawling formlessness and lack of restraint. His prose is sometimes highly lyrical, but his critical deficiencies allow the presence of many overwritten passages, characterized by a swollen, frenzied rhetoric. Although his literary career was too brief to indicate whether he might have been capable of a wider range, his books cling always to the story of his life; however, he rises above naïve egocentricity in his mystical, patriotic belief that there is something great in America that haunts and kindles the imaginations of its young men.

Wolfert's Roost and Miscellanies, 19 stories and sketches by Irving (q.v.), published under various pseudonyms in *The Knickerbocker Magazine* and collected in 1855. Besides tales based on Spanish legends, the volume contains stories of colonial America, familiar essays on 'National Nomenclature' and 'Criticism,' and a sketch of the region of the author's home ('Sleepy Hollow'). The title 'chronicle' is concerned with New York in the time of Peter Stuyvesant.

Wolfville, 24 stories by A.H.Lewis (q.v.) published in 1897 under the pseudonym Dan Quin. Told by an 'Old Cattleman,' these dialect tales of a camp on the Arizona mining and cattle-raising frontier owe much to Bret Harte's stories of California, both in their sentimental portrayal of Western character and in their method of describing the local color of a similar region. Lewis wrote several other volumes of Wolfville stories.

'Wolfville's First Funeral' depicts the obsequies of the unduly enterprising gam-

bler, Jack King, whose epitaph states succinctly, 'Life ain't in holding a good hand, but in playing a pore hand well.' 'The Stinging Lizard' tells of another gambler, Cherokee Hall, who is saved from being lynched as a stage-robber by the discovery of his secret philanthropy in rearing the child of a man he had killed. 'Jaybird Bob's Joke' is the story of a cowboy whose practical jokes played on a tenderfoot Easterner cause a cattle stampede, in the excitement of which the tenderfoot kills his persecutor. 'Dawson and Rudd, Partners' is a whimsical tale of a mining-claim partnership that is nearly dissolved by the marriage of Dawson, but established more firmly than ever by Rudd's affection for his partner's son and eventually by his own marriage.

Woman in the Nineteenth Century, feminist study by Margaret Fuller (q.v.).

Woman of Andros, The, novel by Thornton Wilder (q.v.).

Woman suffrage movement, an outgrowth of the feminist movement (q.v.). The first serious demand for the vote for women was made at a meeting held by Elizabeth Stanton, Lucretia Mott, and others, at Seneca Falls, New York (July 1848). Others prominent in the ensuing agitation were Susan B. Anthony, Lucy Stone, Abby K. Foster, and the Grimké sisters, whose interest in reform also included Abolitionism. After the women had helped to bring about the passage of the Fifteenth Amendment (1869), enfranchising Negro men, they turned their energies to agitation for their own right to vote. Wyoming was the first territory to recognize women voters (1869), but it was not until 1920 that nation-wide suffrage was granted by the Nineteenth Amendment.

Woman's Home Companion (1873–), founded as the semi-monthly *Home Companion* at Cleveland, Ohio, became the *Ladies' Home Companion* (1886), and since 1897 has been a monthly under its present title, having since been moved to New York City. Besides its departments of household interest, and such lengthy serials as Dorothy Canfield's *The Deepening Stream*, it mainly features popular fiction by woman authors, among whom have been Willa Cather, Zona Gale, and Edna Ferber. Gertrude B. Lane has been editor since 1911, and the present circulation exceeds 3,450,000.

Women at Point Sur, The, free verse narrative by Jeffers (q.v.), published in 1927. A 'Prelude' reveals the author's personal philosophy, which in this narrative, as in 'Tamar' and 'Roan Stallion' (qq.v.), reasserts the need 'to uncenter the human mind from itself.' It also constitutes a 'warning' against abuses or irrelevant applications of such an idea.

Dr.Barclay, a preacher in a California coast town, after learning of the death of his son in the World War, announces to his congregation that 'Christianity is false,' and that he is leaving them to create a new religion based on energy and violence. He goes to a farm near Pt.Lobos, where he elaborates his mystical faith, preaching to the trees and stones of the desolate mountainside, and 'breaking from the mold' of his former gentleness and continence. Convinced that

> All the relations of the world have changed in a moment.
> If there was anything forbidden you may do it,

he sleeps with the Indian serving-woman Maruca, and then, having achieved 'deliverance,' goes mad with an indiscriminate lust that causes him to rape his daughter, April, and infects all the residents of the Morhaus farm, including the daughter, Natalia, who murders her child to rectify the 'sin' of bearing it; Randal, Natalia's husband, and Faith Heriot, her Lesbian lover, whom Randal has previously possessed; and even crippled old Morhaus. The insane liberation of evil impulses that Barclay's nihilism has effected ends with April's suicide and her father's escape to starve to death in the hills, where he thinks 'on the nothing Outside the stars, the other shore of me, there's peace.'

Women's Christian Temperance Union, see *Temperance*.

Wonder Book, A, tales for children, adapted from Greek myths by Hawthorne (q.v.), and published in 1852. *Tanglewood Tales* (1853) is a similar collection.

Wonderful One-Hoss Shay, see *Deacon's Masterpiece*.

Wonders of the Invisible World, by Cotton Mather (q.v.), published in 1693 as a narrative of some of the Salem Witchcraft Trials. It contains theological observations on the operations of devils, and was answered by Robert Calef (q.v.) in *More Wonders of the Invisible World* (1700).

Wonder-Working Providence of Sions Saviour in New England, The, chronicle of 17th-century New England by Edward Johnson (q.v.), first published anonymously at London (1653, dated 1654), with the title *A History of New-England*. This vigorous history, covering the period from 1628 to 1652, takes an epic view of the founding of the colony, as a spiritual crusade by settlers who are all soldiers of Christ in a war against unbelievers and the wilderness. The rhapsodic quality of the work precludes it from being an accepted authority, but preserves the spirit of 17th-century thought. The prose, which is interspersed with many stalwart verse tributes to contemporary men and events, is ornate and verbose, and yet has a typical Elizabethan zest in its ecstatic view of New England as a land whose settlement is assisted by God working wonders for those who co-operate with Him.

WOOD, CHARLES ERSKINE SCOTT (1852–), born in Pennsylvania, after an army career in the West became an Oregon lawyer (1884–1919) and published his first poetry in *A Masque of Love* (1904), followed by *The Poet in the Desert* (1915), a dialogue between Truth and a Poet, protesting against social injustice and championing humanitarian ideals. Later poetry appeared in *Maia* (1918), a sonnet sequence, and *Poems from the Ranges* (1929). Wood, who has long lived in California, is best known for his book, *Heavenly Discourse* (1927), a series of 40 dialogues written during the World War for *The Masses*, although only a few were published before the magazine was suppressed. Satirizing the folly and inhumanity of the war, as well as other manifestations of meanness, irreligion, economic inequality, sentimental art, Puritanism, political abuses, and persecution, these ironically humorous conversations take place in Heaven among God, Satan, Jesus, and such angels or temporary visitors as Rabelais, Voltaire, Paine, Clemens, Jefferson, Carry Nation, Bryan, Billy Sunday, Ingersoll, Joan of Arc, Anthony Comstock, and Charles Evans Hughes. A second collection, *Earthly Discourse*, was published in 1937.

WOOD, GRANT (1892–), Iowa artist, known for his realistic paintings of the plain people of the Middle West, as in the sympathetic though satirical *American Gothic*. His precise technique has also been used for purposes of pure caricature, as in *Daughters of Revolution*. He is Artist-in-Residence at the University of Iowa.

WOOD, LEONARD (1860–1927), graduated from Harvard medical school (1884), became an army surgeon, and during the Spanish-American War was famous as commander of the Rough Riders (q.v.). After serving as military governor of Cuba (1899–1902), he was sent to the Philippines as a military governor, returning to the U.S. (1908) to hold a department command and serve as chief of staff of the U.S. Army. He was a prominent advocate of military preparedness, his lectures on this subject being collected in such books as *The Military Obligation of Citizenship* (1915) and *Universal Military Training* (1917), and he trained troops at Fort Funston during the World War. Appointed president of the University of Pennsylvania, he did not assume office because of his appointment as governor-general of the Philippines by Harding, whom he had opposed for the Republican presidential nomination. His administration (1921–7) was unpopular, because of his suppression of native government and enterprise.

WOOD, SARAH SAYWARD BARRELL KEATING (1759–1855), Maine author of Gothic romances, whose *Julia and the Illuminated Baron* (1800) is a wildly melodramatic tale of the subversive, atheistic activities of the French society of the Illuminati, as conducted by a miscreant baron. *Dorval; or, The Speculator* (1801) is again a fantastic story, dealing with a villain, Dorval, and his machinations in the Yazoo Fraud. Her last two novels, like her first, were set in Europe and the same absurd plot structure is shown in these novels: *Amelia; or, The Influence of Virtue* (1802), concerned with the travails of a cloyingly perfect heroine; and *Ferdinand and Elmira: A Russian Story* (1804). *Tales of the Night* (1827) contains two long stories, set in Maine, which, though still showing a romantic and moralistic turn of mind, are slightly more realistic.

WOOD, WILLIAM (*fl.*1629–35), English colonist in Massachusetts (1629–33). He is the author of *New Englands Prospect* (q.v., 1634), an important early description of the country. In the book he speaks of his intention to return, but nothing is known of his later life.

WOODBERRY, GEORGE EDWARD (1855–1930), Massachusetts critic, poet,

and professor, first won notice for his life of Poe (1885, enlarged 1909), a subject for which he had little sympathy but which he treated with scholarly impartiality. In 1890 he published his first book of poetry, *The North Shore Watch*, and collected his magazine articles as *Studies in Letters and Life*, a critique of literature in relation to the experiences that produce it. As professor of comparative literature at Columbia (1891–1904), he was known for his stimulating instruction and personal guidance of students. During this period he published further volumes of poetry; two collections of essays, *Heart of Man* (1899) and *Makers of Literature* (1900), which show him to be in accord with the movement later known as the New Humanism (q.v.); a biography of Hawthorne (1902), considered his best biographical work; and *America in Literature* (1903), a literary history illustrating his antipathy to realism in its failure to consider such authors as Whitman and Clemens. After resigning from Columbia, he made his home in Massachusetts, but led a life of academic and literary vagabondage, teaching for brief periods at colleges in the East and West, and spending much time abroad. His works of this later period include collections of his lectures, such as *The Torch* (1905) and *The Appreciation of Literature* (1907); a biography of Emerson (1907); a book of travels, *North Africa and the Desert* (1914); *Ideal Passion* (1917), a sonnet sequence that expresses his idealistic philosophy of beauty; and *The Roamer* (1920), a long narrative poem reflecting his personal creed and spiritual autobiography. His scholarship is demonstrated in his edition of the works of Shelley (1892) and, with E.C.Stedman, of the works of Poe (10 vols.,1894–5).

WOODHULL, Victoria Claflin (1838–1927), born in Ohio, during her early years figured with her mother and her sister Tennessee (1846–1923) in spiritualistic and mesmeric exhibitions. In 1868 the sisters went to New York where the elder Cornelius Vanderbilt set them up as 'lady brokers' in Wall Street. With the aid of Stephen P. Andrews, they inaugurated *Woodhull and Claflin's Weekly* (1870–76), a radical journal advocating socialism, woman suffrage, free love, birth control, and vegetarianism. It published the scandalous Beecher-Tilton story that occasioned the trial of Henry Ward Beecher, and in the same year (1872) printed the first English translation of the *Communist Manifesto*. Victoria was nominated for president by the Equal Rights party (1872), with Frederick Douglass for vice-president. The sisters moved to England (1877), where they married patrician Englishmen. Together they wrote *The Human Body as the Temple of God* (1890), while Victoria's principal works were *Origin, Tendencies, and Principles of Government* (1871), *Stirpiculture* (1888), and *Humanitarian Money* (1892).

Woodman, Spare That Tree!, poem by G.P.Morris (q.v.).

Wood-Pile, The, blank verse poem by Robert Frost (q.v.) published in *North of Boston* (1914).

The poet suggests a cosmic symbol in his discovery, while walking in the frozen swamp one winter day, of a weathered, long-abandoned cord of maple, 'cut and split and piled,' held from being scattered by a growing tree on one side and on the other 'a stake and prop, these latter about to fall.' He reflects that this wasted labor can be the work only of 'someone who lived in turning to fresh tasks,' and could thus afford to leave his creation

> To warm the frozen swamp as best it could
> With the slow smokeless burning of decay.

WOODWARD, W[illiam] E. (1874–), author of two debunking biographies, *George Washington—the Image and the Man* (1926) and *Meet General Grant* (1928); *A New American History* (1936), a breezy, inaccurate account; a biography of *Lafayette* (1938); and several novels, including *Bunk* (1923), *Lottery* (1924), *Bread and Circuses* (1925), and *Evelyn Prentice* (1933).

WOODWORTH, Samuel (1785–1842), Massachusetts-born author, after 1809 was a journalist in New York, edited the *New-York Mirror* and other papers, and wrote plays and poems. He is remembered today for his sentimental song, 'The Old Oaken Bucket,' collected in *Poems, Odes, Songs* (1818) and set to music by Frederick Smith, and 'The Hunters of Kentucky,' collected in his *Melodies, Duets, Trios, Songs, and Ballads* (1826), a frontier ballad written to celebrate the Kentucky riflemen who under Jackson repulsed the British at New Orleans in 1815. His popular plays included *LaFayette* (1824), a historical melodrama; *The Forest*

Rose (q.v.,1825), a comedy known for its Yankee character, Jonathan Ploughboy; and *The Widow's Son* (1825), a domestic tragedy of the Revolutionary period. His sole novel, *The Champions of Freedom* (1816), is a fantastic moral romance with the War of 1812 as background.

WOOL, John Ellis (1784–1869), joined the U.S.army at the outbreak of the War of 1812, rising to the rank of brigadier-general in 1841. During the Mexican War he was second in command to Taylor at Buena Vista, and after serving in Indian wars he became commander of the Department of Virginia and a major-general in the Civil War, retiring in 1863.

WOOLLCOTT, Alexander [Humphreys] (1887–), New York dramatic and literary critic, also known as a whimsical, gossipy essayist. His books, written in a fancifully embroidered style, about his crotchets and romantic enthusiasms, include *Mrs.Fiske* (1917), *Shouts and Murmurs* (1922), *Mr.Dickens Goes to the Play* (1923), *Enchanted Aisles* (1924), *The Story of Irving Berlin* (1925), *Going to Pieces* (1928), and *While Rome Burns* (1934). His other activities include radio, stage, and screen performances, the compilation of anthologies of his favorite authors, and collaboration with George Kaufman on a melodrama, *The Dark Tower* (1933). *The Man Who Came to Dinner* (1939), a play by Moss Hart and Kaufman, is based on the character of Woollcott, who has appeared in the leading role.

WOOLMAN, John (1720–72), New Jersey-born Quaker, had little formal education, and was a tailor's apprentice, baker, and shopkeeper until the age of 26, when he felt the presence of God in his heart commanding him to preach the gospel. As a preacher and leader of his faith, he began the long series of journeys which, with intermittent school teaching, occupied the rest of his life. His ardent humanitarianism aroused his interest in the problems of Negro slavery and the distribution of wealth. His two essays entitled *Some Considerations on the Keeping of Negroes* (1754,1762) were among the earliest American antislavery works; and his other pamphlets include: *Considerations on Pure Wisdom and Human Policy* (1758), on labor, education, and 'the right use of the Lord's outward gifts'; *Considerations on the True Harmony of Mankind* (1770); *A Plea for the Poor* (1793), to which he had given the more precise title, 'A Word of Remembrance and Caution to the Rich'; and *An Epistle* (1772), setting forth his religious belief, in a farewell to friends before his departure for England, where he died. Woolman was consistently interested in social problems, but, when in opposition to the prevailing ideas of this world, governed himself by a principle of 'passive obedience,' obeying the letter of the law but not its spirit, for though he 'studied to be quiet' and live according to his own views, he reasonably accepted that which was required of him. Although having frequently to bow to external authority, in personal matters he did what he wished, giving up dyed clothes because he knew that dyes were harmful to workers, and giving up sugar because of conditions among plantation slaves. He is best known for his lengthy *Journal* (1774), a classic document of the inner life characterized by a crystal-pure style, of which Whittier in his edition of 1871 said 'it has a sweetness as of violets.' Others have paid similar tributes, Channing finding it 'beyond comparison the sweetest and purest autobiography in the language,' and Charles Lamb exhorting his readers to 'get the writings of John Woolman by heart.'

WOOLSON, Constance Fenimore (1840–94), New Hampshire-born grandniece of Cooper, spent her youth mainly in Ohio, of which she wrote in her early local-color stories and novels. *Castle Nowhere* (1875) is a collection of stories, dealing mainly with the primitive French inhabitants near the Great Lakes. Later, as in the title story of *Rodman the Keeper: Southern Sketches* (1880), she wrote of the contrasts between the pre-war South and its life during Reconstruction, for she studied this at first hand during her residence in the Carolinas and Florida (1873–9). *The Front Yard* (1895) and *Dorothy* (1896) are collections of tales presenting character studies of Americans in Italy, where the author lived after 1879. Her five novels, written while she was abroad, use American settings. *Anne* (1882) deals with a simple Mackinac Island girl, thrown into the social life of New York. *For the Major* (1883) set in North Carolina, is a study of a woman's self-sacrifice for her husband to preserve his cherished illusions of the Old South. *East Angels*

(1886) is a study of moral contrasts with a lush Florida background. *Jupiter Lights* (1889) is a story of the conflict between sisters-in-law representative of the Southern and Northern characters. Her last novel, *Horace Chase* (1894), is a story of a self-made man and his wife, who looks down upon him until she discovers his true character.

Woolworth Building, see *Gilbert, Cass.*

WORCESTER, JOSEPH EMERSON (1784–1865), New England lexicographer, graduated from Yale (1811) and for five years taught at Salem, Massachusetts, where, while writing his early textbooks, he had Hawthorne as one of his students. After moving to Cambridge (1819) he began his long series of dictionaries, first editing Dr. Johnson's, then Webster's, and finally compiling his own *Comprehensive Pronouncing and Explanatory Dictionary of the English Language* (1830). This led Webster to charge his rival with plagiarism, and precipitated the long 'War of Dictionaries,' intermittently intensified when each philologist followed the other in publishing new editions, and causing such by-products as Worcester's pamphlet, *A Gross Literary Fraud Exposed* (1835), an invidious denial of his dependence upon Webster. Worcester was an uncompromising advocate of philological orthodoxy and English examples, zealously and consistently combating Webster's attempts at national independence. He frowned upon the imported Bostonian broad *a*, and suggested a 'compromise vowel,' since, as another critic said, 'our *grass* really lies between the *grahs* of a British lawn, and the *grass* of the boundless prairies.' His conservatism in pronunciation and purism in spelling was accepted at Harvard and the University of Virginia, but elsewhere Webster prevailed, although Holmes was speaking for the best New England writers when he declared in favor of 'Mr.Worcester's Dictionary, on which, as is well known, the literary men of this metropolis are by special statutes allowed to be sworn in place of the Bible.' Worcester's last great revision appeared as *A Dictionary of the English Language* (1860), but, with the 1864 revision of Webster by a company of scholars, the Webster supremacy was definitely established.

NOAH WORCESTER (1758–1837), his nephew, was a New Hampshire clergyman and editor. His *Bible News . . .* (1810) and *Respectful Address . . .* (1811) were essentially Unitarian and led him to desert the Congregational church to become the editor of *The Christian Disciple* (1813). From Unitarianism he developed an interest in pacifism, becoming the secretary of the Massachusetts Peace Society (1815–28), editor of *The Friend of Peace* (1819–28), and, under the pseudonym of Philo Pacificus, author of *A Solemn Review of the Custom of War* (1814) and other popular pacifist works.

Worcester Magazine, see *Massachusetts Spy.*

WORK, HENRY CLAY (1832–84), Illinois song-writer, composed 'We're Coming, Sister Mary' for the minstrel show of E.P. Christy. In 1864 he wrote his celebrated temperance song, 'Come Home, Father,' which begins:

Father, dear father, come home with me now,
The clock in the belfry strikes one,

and continues through the hours, punctuated by the striking of the clock and the drinking of father, until dear father loses his domestic appeal. The song was introduced in the play, *Ten Nights in a Barroom* (q.v.) by T.S.Arthur. Under contract to the publisher, G.F.Root, Work wrote the popular 'Grandfather's Clock' and such Abolitionist songs as 'Kingdom Coming' (1861), 'Babylon Is Fallen!' (1863), 'Wake Nicodemus' (1864), and 'Marching through Georgia' (1865). This last piece, celebrating the march of Sherman from Atlanta to the sea, was widely used as a Union marching song.

Workers' Party, see *Communist Party.*

World and the Individual, The, philosophic work by Josiah Royce (q.v.).

World I Never Made, A, novel by James T. Farrell (q.v.).

World War (FIRST), major conflict involving most of the nations of the world (1914–18), and sometimes called the Great War. It was an outgrowth of European territorial problems and nationalism, but the U.S. was finally brought to take an active part (April 6, 1917), the immediate cause being the unrestricted German submarine warfare upon Atlantic shipping. On the side of the British, French, Belgian and other Allied forces, opposing Germany and the Central Powers, the American Expeditionary Force (q.v.) from October 23, 1917, until the Armistice (November 11, 1918) participated in many battles on the

western front, including such critical engagements as the battles of Cantigny, Château-Thierry, Belleau Wood, Saint-Mihiel, the Marne, and the Argonne offensive (qq.v.). The U.S.Senate refused to ratify the Treaty of Versailles, and a separate treaty of peace was signed by the U.S. and Germany at Berlin (Aug. 25, 1921). Approximately 119,956 enlisted men died as a result of the war, and the cost to the U.S. also included $20,737,000,000. Many works of American literature deal with the war and its aftermath. Among them are *A Farewell to Arms*, *The Enormous Room*, *Three Soldiers*, *Soldier's Pay*, and *What Price Glory*.

A Second World War, precipitated by the weakening of the League of Nations, dissatisfaction with the Treaty of Versailles, a world-wide economic collapse, the policies of National Socialism in Germany, military activities of Japan and Italy, the Spanish Civil War, the nonaggression pact of Russia and Germany, the Anglo-French appeasement policy culminating in the Munich pact, and other causes broke into active military campaigns with Germany's attack on Poland (September 1939). The U.S. has been drawn closer to the conflict through such activities as sales of material to France, England and other belligerents opposing Germany, joint defense with Canada, acquisition of British air and naval bases, and intimate co-operation with Great Britain leading to the 'lease-lend' bill. During 1939 and 1940 many books and tracts appeared in the U.S. championing policies ranging from intervention to isolationism.

World's Work (1900–1932), magazine founded by W.H.Page, who edited it until 1913. This monthly journal of the 'History of Our Time' concentrated primarily on the American way of life and the position of the U.S. in the community of nations, emphasizing 'the activities of the newly organized world, its problems and even its romance, . . . trying to convey the cheerful spirit of men who do things.' In 1902 an independent British counterpart was founded, and there was some co-operation between the two magazines. The original policy was continued until after the financial crash of 1929, when the magazine adopted a somewhat less optimistic point of view. It was absorbed by the *Review of Reviews*.

Wreck of the Hesperus, The, literary ballad by Longfellow (q.v.) published in *Ballads and Other Poems* (1841).

Based on the actual wreck of the *Hesperus*, in which one body was found lashed to a piece of wreckage, the poem tells of the ill-fated voyage of the schooner, whose skipper refuses to head for port despite an approaching hurricane. When the gale descends, he wraps his little daughter in a seaman's coat, lashes her to the mast, and remains at the helm until he is overcome by the cold. The ship is shattered upon the reef of Norman's Woe near Gloucester, and at daybreak a fisherman discovers the child's body near the shore, still lashed to the mast.

WRIGHT, Chauncey (1830–75), born in Northampton, after graduation from Harvard (1852) earned his living by computing for the *American Ephemeris and Nautical Almanac*, forcing his work of a year into two months by devising new means of calculation. During the rest of the time he gave himself to quiet scholarly activities and conversations with such friends as William James, John Fiske, and C.E.Norton. He wrote for the *Mathematical Monthly*, contributed philosophical essays to *The North American Review* and *The Nation*, and his paper on the law of the arrangement of leaves was reissued as a pamphlet by Darwin, whom he visited in England. He lectured at Harvard (1870) on psychology and was appointed instructor in mathematical physics the year before he died. His *Philosophical Discussions* (1877) were collected by Norton and his *Letters* (1878) give a clue to the brilliance of the conversation for which he was famous.

WRIGHT, Frances (1795–1852), Scottish-born freethinker and author, who came to the U.S. (1818), where she produced her play, *Altdorf* (1819), concerned with the Swiss struggle for independence, and after a tour through the northern and eastern states returned to England (1820) to write her enthusiastic *Views of Society and Manners in America* (1821). While abroad she also published *A Few Days in Athens* (1822), ostensibly a tale of a young disciple of Epicurus, which set forth her rationalist philosophy. According to Whitman this was 'a daily food' to him 'for years.' Returning to the U.S. (1824), she accompanied Lafayette on his triumphal tour, and through him she met Jefferson and Madison, with whom she discussed

the subject of Negro emancipation. Encouraged by them, she purchased a tract of land in Tennessee and founded the Nashoba Community (q.v.,1825–8) to demonstrate her plan for the gradual emancipation of Negroes. Having fallen under the influence of Robert Dale Owen, she joined him in editing *The New-Harmony Gazette* (q.v.,1828–9). Meanwhile she created a stir by becoming a public lecturer on such subjects as women's rights, free education, workingmen's organizations, birth control, the errors of organized religion, and equitable distribution of wealth. Her talks were published as *Course of Popular Lectures* (1829). After an absence abroad (1830–35), she returned to continue similar lecture tours and published a second *Course of Popular Lectures* (1836).

WRIGHT, Frank Lloyd (1869–), Wisconsin architect, began his career as an assistant to Louis Sullivan (1887–94). Primarily known for his private homes, Wright developed a Prairie style, which, conforming to his idea that architecture should harmonize with its surroundings, stressed low horizontal lines appropriate to the Midwestern landscape, and large windows, open terraces, and treatment of interiors as unified flowing space. In using cantilever construction and poured and reinforced concrete, Wright has vigorously practiced his architectural creed that form should follow function. After 1910 he replaced his simple surfaces with external ornamentation, as in the Imperial Hotel (Tokio, 1916–20), also notable for the floating cantilever construction that enabled the building to withstand the severe earthquake of 1923. During the 1920's, he stressed patterned blocks of precast concrete, reinforced at the joints, which produced an austere effect, as in the Millard house (Pasadena, 1921). Recently he has been occupied with homes and office buildings that achieve their effect mainly through the disposition of masses and the frank emphasis upon modern materials rather than decoration. At Taliesin, his Wisconsin home, he conducts an art school. His books include *Modern Architecture* (1931), *The Nature of Materials* (1932), *An Autobiography* (1932), and *On Architecture* (1941).

WRIGHT, Harold Bell (1872–), popular novelist, whose works include *The Shepherd of the Hills* (1907), *The Calling of Dan Matthews* (1909), and *When a Man's a Man* (1916). His stories, set in the great open spaces of the Southwest, are concerned with love and adventure, and emphasize an incredibly wholesome morality and the superiority of the rugged natural man. His books have had a tremendous circulation, and *The Winning of Barbara Worth* (1911) had sold 1,500,000 copies by 1934.

WRIGHT, Richard (1909–), self-educated Negro author, born and reared in Natchez, Mississippi, is now resident in Chicago. His *Uncle Tom's Children* (1938; enlarged, 1940), a collection of four stories, received the *Story* prize for the best book submitted by anyone associated with the Federal Writers' Project. The stories tell of race prejudice in the South and contain graphic descriptions of lynchings. Since the publication of *Native Son* (1940), Wright has been considered the leading Negro author of the U.S. This novel tells of Bigger Thomas, a Negro boy raised in the Chicago slums, whose environment leads him to crime. Taken by his employer's daughter to meet with Communists, he is received in a patronizing manner, thrown into a confused state of mind, and by mistake murders the girl. In the ensuing flight, pursued by a mob, he kills his own sweetheart before he is captured and condemned to death. *Native Son* was dramatized by Wright and Paul Green (1941).

WRIGHT, Wilbur (1867–1912) and Orville (1871–), Indiana-born inventors and manufacturers, became interested in aviation in 1898, and two years later began their experiments with gliders at Kitty Hawk, North Carolina. Using an engine of their own design and manufacture, they made the first flight in a power-driven airplane (Dec. 17, 1903). Despite the lack of public interest, they continued their experimentation. In 1908 France gave them their first recognition and the following year their airplane was adopted for use by the U.S.Army. They founded the Wright Aeroplane Company in 1909, from which Orville resigned (1915) to devote himself to research.

WRIGHT, Willard Huntington (1888–1939), born in Virginia, was educated in California and at Harvard and became an editor of *Smart Set* (q.v.,1913–14), distinguishing himself as a sophisticated student of esoteric subjects. His writings, during this period in New York and a residence in

Europe, included: *Europe after* 8:15 (1913), in collaboration with H.L. Mencken and G.J.Nathan, co-editors of *Smart Set; What Nietzsche Taught* (1914); *Modern Painting* (1915); and *The Future of Painting* (1923). In 1925 he suffered a serious illness, and, being unable to undertake more formidable work, began writing detective novels. The principal character of his popular series in this genre is the master-sleuth Philo Vance, whose urbanity and scholarship were obviously modelled on the author's. *The Benson Murder Case* (1926) was followed by many other Philo Vance stories, all written under the pseudonym S.S.Van Dine.

WRONG, George Mackinnon (1860–), Canadian professor of history, taught at the University of Toronto (1894–1927), and wrote *Conquest of New France* (1918), *Washington and His Comrades in Arms* (1920), *United States and Canada* (1921), *The Rise and Fall of New France* (1928), and *Canada and the American Revolution* (1935). He was co-editor of the *Chronicles of Canada* (32 vols.,1914–16).

WROTH, L[awrence] C[ounselman] (1884–), head of the Brown University Library (1923–) and professor of American history, is the author of several bibliographical and historical works, including *Parson Weems* (1911), *The Colonial Printer* (1931), and *An American Bookshelf* (1934).

WURDEMANN, Audrey (1911–), born in Seattle, graduated from the University of Washington and moved to New York (1932). Her poems have been collected in *The House of Silk* (1927), *Bright Ambush* (1934; Pulitzer Prize, 1935), *The Seven Sins* (1935), *Splendour in the Grass* (1936), and a sonnet sequence, *Testament of Love* (1938). She is the wife of Joseph Auslander.

Wyandot Indians, see *Huron.*

Wyandotté, romance by Cooper (q.v.).

WYANT, Alexander Helwig (1836–92), born in Ohio, studied painting under Inness. He went to Germany (1865) to study the literal Düsseldorf school, but was more influenced by the landscapes of Constable and Turner which he saw in England. Upon his return to the U.S., his early paintings of the Adirondacks, executed somewhat in the manner of the Hudson River School, gave place to intimate scenes of quiet valleys, glimpsed between slender trees or shaded openings, all painted with a silvery atmospheric quality. His composition varies little, but his work possesses a calm, romantic, wistful spirit. After 1873 a paralytic stroke forced Wyant to paint with his left hand, and toward the end of his life ill-health made him abandon his practice of painting directly from nature.

WYETH, Nathaniel Jarvis (1802–56), Boston merchant, attempted to build a fur-trading and salmon-shipping business in Oregon, but his overland expeditions (1832–3,1834–6) were unsuccessful. His *Correspondence and Journals* were published in 1899, and contemporary records by companions, John B. Wyeth and John Kirk Townsend, were issued respectively as *Oregon, or a Short History of a Long Journey* (1833) and *Narrative of a Journey . . . to the Columbia River* (1839). Wyeth figures prominently in Irving's *Adventures of Captain Bonneville.*

WYLIE, Elinor [Hoyt] (1885–1928), born in New Jersey, published her first collection of poems in England, the anonymous, privately issued *Incidental Numbers* (1912). Her brilliant though brief literary career began with the publication of *Nets to Catch the Wind* (1921), highly polished verse influenced by the metaphysical poets, whose emotion has been described as 'a passion frozen at its source.' This was followed by a similar collection, *Black Armour* (1923). Her four novels are distinguished by a highly mannered craftsmanship and a juxtaposition of artificial formality and fantasy like that of her verse. *Jennifer Lorn* (1923), subtitled 'A Sedate Extravaganza,' deals with 18th-century aristocrats in England and colonial India. *The Venetian Glass Nephew* (1925) has the same delicate color and fragility, which caused Cabell to characterize the author as a 'Dresden china shepherdess.' *The Orphan Angel* (1926), which appeared in England as *Mortal Image* (1927), is an imaginative story of Shelley, who, instead of being drowned, is picked up by a Yankee ship and brought to America, where his character is contrasted with the pioneer environment. *Mr.Hodge and Mr.Hazard* (1928) is a more realistic tale of English life during the 1830's, after the departure of such romantic figures as Byron and Shelley, whose spirits hover over the prosaic period. *One*

Person (1928), a passionately intense sonnet sequence, was republished in *Angels and Earthly Creatures* (1929). *Trivial Breath* (1928) is a final selection of the poems since *Black Armour* which she wished to preserve. Her *Collected Poems* (1932) and *Collected Prose* (1933) were edited by her husband, William Rose Benét.

Wynne, HUGH, see *Hugh Wynne.*

Wyoming Valley, MASSACRE OF, occurred (July 1778) in the valley that was then claimed by both Connecticut and Pennsylvania, but which is now included in the latter state. The settlers of this valley on the Susquehanna were chiefly patriots, and a company of Tory Rangers, accompanied by Iroquois allies, attacked them at this time, successfully besieging Fort Forty. After their victory, the Rangers were unable to restrain the Indians, who brutally massacred the settlers. The event was famous in the history of the time, and *Gertrude of Wyoming* (q.v.,1809) is an inaccurate version of it.

X-Y

XYZ Affair, name applied to a Franco-American diplomatic incident (1797–8). Although an alliance had been made with France in 1778, the anti-French Federalists vitiated this agreement by the Jay Treaty with England (1794), and a general antagonistic approach. To end hostile feeling, President Adams appointed C.C. Pinckney, John Marshall, and Elbridge Gerry as a special commission to negotiate with Talleyrand and the French Directory. Three French secret agents (X,Y, and Z) suggested that a large gift of money would be necessary to obtain a hearing, but the Americans refused to bribe, and Gerry remained alone to continue negotiations as a private citizen. The famous reply, 'Millions for defense, sir, but not one cent for tribute,' is a patriotic legend attributed to Pinckney, who really said, 'No, no; not a penny!' Although war threatened after this incident, Gerry's negotiations and a new commission appointed by Adams in 1800 ended the matter pacifically.

Xingu, *and Other Stories*, eight tales by Edith Wharton (q.v.) published in 1916.

'Xingu' is a witty account of the Hillbridge Lunch Club, a gathering of 'indomitable huntresses of erudition'—hypocrites and snobs, with the single exception of a newcomer, Mrs.Roby—who entertain a famous woman author. Her indifference to the 'topics' advanced for discussion ends only when Mrs.Roby refers familiarly to 'Xingu,' an esoteric subject that she and the other members then pretend to know thoroughly. The ladies of the Lunch Club discover the Xingu to be a Brazilian river, and, crestfallen and indignant, expel Mrs.Roby. 'Coming Home,' a story of the World War, is concerned with a young Frenchwoman who gives herself to a German officer to save her fiancé's home and family from destruction. The fiancé takes revenge by murdering the German, now a wounded prisoner, who is entrusted to his care. 'Autres Temps . . .' is a poignant tale of a woman's personal tragedy, contrasting the attitudes toward divorce of two generations of New York society. 'Kerfol' and 'The Triumph of Night' are subtle delineations of ghosts, mystery, and terror. 'Bunner Sisters,' a novelette, tells of the lives of two commonplace spinsters who operate a small shop near Stuyvesant Square, in 19th-century New York City.

Y.M.C.A. (Young Men's Christian Association), nonsectarian organization whose purpose is to improve the conditions and opportunities of young men by fostering their spiritual, social, intellectual, and physical welfare. The movement, which originated in England, was brought to the U.S. in 1851. A similar organization for women, also originating in England, was brought to the U.S. in the 1860's.

Yale University, founded by a group of Congregational ministers (1701) at Killingworth and Saybrook, Connecticut, as the Collegiate School within . . . Connecticut. In 1716 it was moved to New Haven and renamed (1718) in honor of Elihu Yale, a Boston-born merchant and governor in India, who contributed £562. Timothy Dwight was president (1795–1817), and greatly enlarged the curriculum, attracting to the faculty such important scholars as Benjamin Silliman. The institution had long since been nonsectarian when, in 1887, it became Yale University. Among the main divisions of the university are the Medical School (1813), the Divinity School (1822), the Law School (1824), Sheffield Scientific School (1861), the first school of Fine Arts at any American university (1869), and the Institute of Human Relations (1929). Yale conferred the first Ph.D. degree in the U.S. (1861). Under the presidency of A.T. Hadley (1899–1921), various schools and departments were co-ordinated, and during the administration of James Rowland Angell (1921–37), a great building program (including the college plan) was undertaken. The university library contains more than 2,000,000 books, including fine collections of books and manuscripts in English and American literature. The *Yale Literary Magazine* (1836) is the oldest undergraduate publication in the U.S. and the *Yale Daily News* (1878) is the oldest daily. *The Yale Review: A National Quarterly*, published by the university press, was founded in 1892 and reorganized in 1911. It is edited by Wilbur L. Cross. Among the authors who have graduated from Yale are Ezra Stiles (1746),

Samuel Seabury (1748), John Trumbull (1767), Timothy Dwight (1769), Joel Barlow (1778), Noah Webster (1778), Fenimore Cooper (1806), J.G.Percival (1815), N.P.Willis (1827), Sylvester Judd (1836), Theodore Winthrop (1848), Clarence King (1862), Wilbur L. Cross (1885), Owen Johnson (1900), Sinclair Lewis (1907), W.R.Benét (1907), Waldo Frank (1911), Thomas Beer (1911), Archibald MacLeish (1915), S.V.Benét (1919), and Thornton Wilder (1920).

Yamasee Indians, warlike tribe in South Carolina and Georgia during colonial times. After 1715 they were reduced to a small number, who took refuge mainly in Florida. They are frequently referred to by Southern authors, notably in *The Yemassee* (q.v.), which deals with their attempt to massacre the English settlers of South Carolina, when incited by the Spanish of Florida (1715).

Yamoyden, poem in six cantos on the wars of King Philip (q.v.), written by J.W.Eastburn and R.C.Sands (qq.v.), published in 1820. It is based upon a cursory knowledge of Hubbard's *Narrative of the Indian Wars* and similar studies, but the Puritans are depicted as wholly wrong, the Indians as wholly right. The work was extremely popular, and inaugurated a new literary subject.

YANCEY, WILLIAM LOWNDES (1814–63), born in Georgia, was an editor, lawyer, and congressman (1844–6) before he resigned to write, lecture, and otherwise work for a nonpartisan union of the South against Northern antislavery agitation. His Alabama Platform (1849), an answer to the Wilmot Proviso, set forth his belief that the Constitution was a compact between sovereign states, that Congress had no power to abolish slavery in a territory or regulate the entrance of slaves, and that a territory itself had no power to do so until it in turn became a state. With great singleness of purpose he pressed his ideas on the Southerners and became known as the most notorious 'fire-eater.' After the election of Lincoln, Yancey wrote the ordinance of secession, upon formation of the Confederacy was sent as a commissioner to England and France, and later served in the Confederate Senate (1862–3).

Yank, character in *The Hairy Ape* (q.v.).

Yankee, term of unknown origin, applied during the 18th century to New Englanders. One hypothetical origin is an attempt by the Indians to pronounce either *English* or *Anglais*. This seems unlikely, since the word was first applied to the Dutch in the 17th century, and may have been derived from *Janke*, diminutive of the common Dutch name *Jan*, or from *Jankees*, a blend of *Jan* and *Cornelis*. At some time in the 18th century the name began to be applied to the English colonists rather than the Dutch. The song *Yankee Doodle* (q.v.) did much to establish the name, which was proudly adopted by the Americans after it had been contemptuously applied by the British in the Revolution. During the Civil War it was invidiously applied to Northerners, usually with the adjective, as 'damn Yankee.' During the First World War it had mainly a kindly, facetious connotation, and long prior to that time was applied to Americans generally, although it is more properly restricted to the typical New England native. The Yankee has long been a stock comic figure, and some of the notable characters of this type are Jonathan in *The Contrast*, Major Jack Downing, Sam Slick, and Lowell's Hosea Biglow. He is usually marked by shrewd homespun wit, caution, practical ability, particularly in trading, and taciturnity. When he did speak it was frequently to ask a dry but astute question, or to make a striking understatement in his famous nasal twang.

Yankee Doodle, popular song of the patriot troops during the Revolutionary War, the origin of whose title, words, and tune is unknown. It has often been attributed to a Dr.Shuckburg, a British army surgeon, who supposedly wrote the words in derision of the motley American army. The earliest manuscript version is dated 1775, and the earliest known printing was in a Scottish collection *c.*1778. In Tyler's *The Contrast* (1787), the Yankee character Jonathan says he knows only 190 of its many verses, although 'our Tabitha at home can sing it all.'

Yankee in Canada, A, travel narrative by Thoreau (q.v.), partly published in *Putnam's Monthly Magazine* (1853), and issued posthumously in a volume with his 'Anti-Slavery and Reform Papers' (1866). Derived from the author's journal notes during a week's trip (Sept. 25–Oct. 3, 1850) from his home in Concord to Montreal

and Quebec, the narrative presents homely impressions of the farmers and townspeople, and intimate details of travel and scenery, with digressions of literary criticism and comments on fortresses, Roman Catholicism, the railroad, and comparative manners in Canada and New England.

Yankey in England, The, comedy by David Humphreys (q.v.), produced by amateurs in 1814 and published in 1815. The play is set in a London hotel, where American Whig and Tory officers meet a French nobleman and an adventuress. Their actions furnish a background for Doolittle and Newman, the Yankees, who straighten out their complicated affairs. The last two are significant as showing the Yankee tradition of paradoxical simplicity and cunning, in contrast to the refinement of the other characters.

Yazoo Frauds, Georgia land speculation (1795), in which four companies bribed the state legislature, in order to obtain grants for large areas of land to which the state itself had doubtful claims. This territory lay in the present Alabama and Mississippi, some near the Yazoo River. The sale was revoked the following year. *The Georgia Spec; or, Land in the Moon* (1797), a lost play by Royall Tyler, ridiculed the scheme, and Sarah Wood's *Dorval; or, the Speculator* (1801) is also concerned with the episode.

YEARDLEY, Sir George (*c.*1580–1627), English colonist, came to America in 1610, was appointed deputy-governor of Virginia (1616–17), and commissioned governor (1618–21,1626–7). His first administration is remembered because at the order of the London Company, he summoned the first representative assembly in an American colony.

Years of Grace, novel by Margaret Ayer Barnes (q.v.).

Yellow Jack, play by Sidney Howard (q.v.) produced and published in 1934.

Set in Cuba in 1900, the play is concerned with the struggle of the doctors and scientists of the Walter Reed Commission to discover the cause of yellow fever. The conflicts involved appear in the attempts of a narrow-minded army officer, Colonel Tory, to block the progress of the research; the constant inroads of the disease among the doctors; the difficulties encountered by Dr.Finley, who is the first to suggest the mosquito; and the tribulations and dangers of the doctors and soldiers who volunteer as subjects in the experiments.

Yellow Jacket, The, drama by George C. Hazelton and J.Harry Benrimo, produced in 1912. This play, on a Chinese theme concerned with the life of a boy and his attempt to win his rightful claim to the throne from his half-brother, was successful not only for its subject matter but because of its novelty in employing the technique of native Chinese drama, preserving such conventions as the property man and the chorus.

Yellow Press, term applied to unscrupulously sensational newspapers. In 1894 the New York *World* printed the first colored comic strip, 'Hogan's Alley,' by R.F.Outcault, whose 'bad boy' hero, the Yellow Kid, attracted subscribers by the cartoon and the novelty of color printing. Hearst's New York *Journal* employed Outcault (1896ff.), and from the sensational controversy between the two papers, both of which printed 'Yellow Kid' serials, the term originated.

Yemassee, The, romance by Simms (q.v.) published in 1835 as one of his 'Border Romances.' It deals with the warfare of the Yamasee (q.v.) in colonial South Carolina.

Sanutee, chief of the Yemassee Indians, rebels against the aggressive measures of the English, with whom his people have made a peace treaty, and, aided by the Spanish and the renegade English sea-captain, Dick Chorley (Pepperbox), he gathers forces for an attack on the colonists. Occonestoga, the chief's disinherited son, serves the mysterious English officer, Gabriel Harrison, who arrives with his slave Hector to direct the defense. Harrison loves Bess Matthews, daughter of an aged Puritan parson, who refuses to allow their marriage; Hugh Grayson, who also loves Bess, opposes Harrison's plans until the mysterious leader's generous protection of the Grayson family makes him a loyal friend. The Indians obtain and destroy the treaty, and, led by Chorley, pillage and torture the whites. Occonestoga, sent by Harrison to spy on his tribe, is captured and subjected to the feared ritual of expatriation, but is killed by his devoted mother, Matiwan, in time to escape this equivalent of damnation. Harrison is captured, but Matiwan helps

him to escape. Chorley captures Bess and her father, but Harrison, aided by Hugh Grayson and his brother Walter, kills the renegade and rescues the Matthews. He wins the grateful parson's consent to his marriage with Bess, and reveals himself to be Governor Craven. He then appoints Hugh Grayson to the command of local troops, returns to Charleston to organize a force, which kills Sanutee and vanquishes the Yemassee.

YERKES, Charles Tyson (1837–1905), Philadelphia financier, organized his own banking house in 1862 and by 1871 dominated the city's financial affairs. He lost most of his fortune in the panic which followed the Chicago fire (1871) and served seven months of a penitentiary term for embezzlement in connection with municipal funds, but recouped his losses during the panic of 1873. Moving to Chicago, he engaged in railroad and streetcar operations and achieved wide notoriety for his unscrupulous political and financial methods. In 1899 he was forced to sell his Chicago holdings and the following year he moved to London, where he headed the syndicate that built that city's subways. He donated Yerkes Observatory to the University of Chicago, and was famous as an art collector. His career is the basis of Dreiser's novels, *The Financier* and *The Titan* (qq.v.).

YEZIERSKA, Anzia (1885–), born in Russia, came to New York (1901), whose sweatshops and ghetto life she has described in her stories and novels. The latter include *Hungry Hearts* (1920), *Salome of the Tenements* (1922), *Children of Loneliness* (1923), *Arrogant Beggars* (1927), and *All I Could Never Be* (1932).

Yillah, character in *Mardi* (q.v.).

Yorktown, in eastern Virginia, was the site of the final battle of the Revolutionary War. While the French fleet under De Grasse held the Chesapeake, Washington and Rochambeau attacked by land, and Cornwallis was trapped at Yorktown. He surrendered (Oct. 19, 1781).

You and I, play by Philip Barry (q.v.).

You Can't Take It With You, comedy by Moss Hart and George Kaufman (qq.v.), produced in 1936 and published in 1937, when it was awarded the Pulitzer Prize.

The members of Grandpa Vanderhof's informal, if not anarchic, household in New York City include his daughter, Penelope Sycamore, an enthusiastic though vague amateur playwright; her husband Paul, who manufactures fireworks in the cellar; his assistant, Mr. DePinna, who came one day to deliver the ice and has been a member of the family ever since; Essie, the Sycamores' elder daughter, who makes candy with the aid of her xylophone-playing husband, Ed, but is more interested in being a ballet dancer; Rheba, the amiable colored cook, and her friend Donald; Kolenkhov, Essie's Russian dancing instructor, who eats, and expresses himself, enormously; and Alice, the younger daughter, a private secretary, who is devoted to her eccentric family although 'she seems to have escaped the tinge of mild insanity that pervades the rest of them.' The attractions of the Sycamores' hedonistic arrangement are contrasted with the unpleasantly staid conventional attitude of the Kirbys, when Alice announces her engagement to Tony Kirby, the son of her employer. An attempted dinner party bringing the families together ends in a near riot and a night in jail. All ends well, however, when Grandpa converts Mr. Kirby to his philosophy of life, and Tony and Alice marry.

You Know Me, Al, stories by Ring Lardner (q.v.).

Youma, novel by Lafcadio Hearn (q.v.) published in 1890. It is based on an actual occurrence in the Martinique slave rebellion of 1848.

Youma is a Negro slave of Martinique, raised as the companion of the Creole girl Aimée Desrivières. Aimée dies a few years after her marriage, and Youma becomes the *da* or 'mammy' of her daughter Mayotte. Youma's beauty and courage attract Gabriel, the Negro overseer of the plantation, who wishes to marry her but fails to win the permission of her owner. Youma angers her lover by refusing to elope with him, sacrificing her own interests to keep her promise to Aimée that she will never desert Mayotte. Following conflicting rumors of emancipation, the slaves of the island rebel, and the Desrivières family, fearing an attack by the drunken and infuriated blacks, takes refuge in a large city house of the DeKersaints. A rebel mob gathers before the house, and, denied entry, batters in the door and occupies the main floor. They

set fire to the house, and when neither firemen nor soldiers can be summoned the frightened whites begin to leap from the windows. Suddenly Youma appears in an upper window and appeals to the mob. Gabriel, one of the crowd, dares the fury of the others by bringing a ladder, but Youma refuses to be rescued without Mayotte, and heroically perishes in the flames.

YOUNG, ALEXANDER (1800–1854), Massachusetts antiquarian and Unitarian minister, noted for his critical reprinting of source material in *Chronicles of the Pilgrim Fathers . . . from* 1602 *to* 1625 (1841) and *Chronicles of the First Planters of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay from* 1623 *to* 1636 (1846).

YOUNG, ART[HUR] (1866–), cartoonist noted for his striking satirical drawings for liberal and radical publications. His pacifistic cartoons during the First World War led to a trial for sedition. His books include *Hell Up to Date* (1892) and *Art Young's Inferno* (1934), showing Hell as the abode of reactionaries; and two autobiographical works, *On My Way* (1928) and *Art Young: His Life and Times* (1939).

YOUNG, BRIGHAM (1801–77), born in Vermont near the birthplace of Joseph Smith, of a poor, semi-literate frontier family, was baptized as a Mormon (q.v., 1832). He became a leading missionary both in the U.S. and England, and upon the assassination of Smith (1844) had himself elected president of the church. He led the mass migration from Illinois to the valley of Great Salt Lake in the present Utah (1846–7). Developing the agriculture there, he made the colony a strong theocratic state and ruled it dictatorially. He had little effect on the theological beliefs, but proved himself a successful social and economic administrator of the church. Young was constantly embroiled with the U.S.government, but when his colony was made into a territory he became its first civil governor (1850–58) and controlled his successors. Although he was harsh both with Mormons who disagreed with him and all outsiders, he acted with pure realism as a utilitarian whose one aim was to preserve his church. He was extremely moral, although his concept of morality included polygamy, and he is said to have had at various times between 19 and 27 wives, many of them holding that position in name only, for doctrinal purposes. He was the father of 56 children.

YOUNG, STARK (1881–), graduated from the University of Mississippi (1901) and taught English literature there, at the University of Texas, and at Amherst, until 1921. Meanwhile he published *The Blind Man at the Window* (1906), a book of poems; *Guenevere* (1906), a verse play; several one-act plays in prose; and the essays on the theater collected in *The Flower in Drama* (1923). Since leaving academic work, he has been a dramatic critic and an editor of *The New Republic*. His later writing includes: *The Three Fountains* (1924), sketches and studies on Italy; *The Saint* (1925), *The Colonnade* (1924), plays; a translation of Chekhov's *The Sea Gull* (1939); *Glamour* (1925) and *The Theater* (1927), essays on drama and the stage; *The Street of the Islands* (1930) and *Feliciana* (1935), collections of short stories; and the novels, *Heaven Trees* (1926), *The Torches Flare* (1928), *River House* (1929), and *So Red the Rose* (1934).

YOUNG, THOMAS, see *Allen, Ethan.*

Young Goodman Brown, allegorical tale by Hawthorne (q.v.), published in *The New England Magazine* (1835) and in *Mosses from an Old Manse* (1846).

Goodman Brown, a Puritan of early Salem, leaves his young wife, Faith, who pleads with him not to go, to attend a witches' sabbath in the woods. Among the congregation are many prominent people of the village and church. At the climax of the ceremonies, he and a young woman are about to be confirmed into the group, but he finds she is Faith, and cries to her to 'look up to heaven, and resist the wicked one.' Immediately he is alone in the forest, and all the fearful, flaming spectacle has disappeared. He returns to his home, but lives a dismal, gloomy life, doomed to skeptical doubt of all about him, and never able to believe in goodness or piety.

Young Lonigan: A Boyhood in Chicago Streets, novel by James T. Farrell (q.v.) published in 1932. This naturalistic study of the mind of a 15-year-old boy, utilizing a stream-of-consciousness technique, is the first part of the *Studs Lonigan* trilogy, which includes *The Young Manhood of Studs Lonigan* and *Judgment Day* (qq.v.).

The son of a lower-class Catholic

family, William Lonigan, nicknamed Studs, is depicted in the common experiences of a boyhood on the South Side of Chicago. He smokes secretly, plays baseball and basketball, experiments with sex, fights, swims, enjoys his first familiarity with the older toughs he admires, and participates in Jew-baiting, shoplifting, and other activities of the youthful gang. Lucy Scanlan, a girl of his own age, provides his first romantic affair; he has a comradely friendship with the tomboy, Helen Shires; and shares with other boys the attentions of Iris, a 14-year-old exponent of 'free love.' Other characters include Studs's father and mother; his sister Frances; the priest, Father Gilhooley; Leon, a middle-aged homosexual; Davey Cohen, who deserts the gang when Iris refuses him because he is a Jew; and such intimates of Studs as 'Weary' Reilley, Paulie Haggerty, and Kenny Killarney. The boy is shown throughout to have healthy impulses and attitudes, but these are perverted by his environment, and partially repressed, in order that he may display the hard, unsentimental exterior prevalent among his fellows.

Young Manhood of Studs Lonigan, The, novel by James T. Farrell (q.v.) published in 1934. The second part of his *Studs Lonigan* trilogy, it follows *Young Lonigan* and precedes *Judgment Day* (qq.v.).

Continuing his naturalistic study of the experiences of a Chicago youth, the author follows young Lonigan from the end of his schooling, during the World War, to a New Year's Eve celebration of a decade later. Studs tries to join the army, but fails because of his youth; attempts a holdup; goes to work with his father as a house painter; helps his gang to torture a Negro child during race riots; plays football in a rough game that ends in a gang fight; frequently becomes drunk; learns to dance; joins the Y.M.C.A. but gives it up because the 'joint looks phony'; has various experiences with girls, including his early sweetheart Lucy, who rejects him after he contracts a venereal disease from a 'pickup'; is impressed by the dedication ceremonies of a new church and is nearly persuaded by his mother to undertake a mission; but reverts to hard drinking and narrowly escapes incrimination in his friend Weary's rape of a pickup during a New Year's Eve party. Brief alternating chapters show the universality of the main narrative, by presenting the similar experiences of Studs's younger brother Martin and of a Negro boy; the love affair of Phil Rolfe, a Jew who accepts Catholicism because he wishes to marry Loretta Lonigan; the dreary lives of Studs's parents; the communistic ideas of the waiter, Christy; Davey Cohen's degradation and beggary; and the views of Danny O'Neill, a university student and gas-station attendant, who seems to express the author's own commentary on these events.

Young Mrs. Winthrop, play by Bronson Howard (q.v.), produced in 1882 and published in 1899.

Under the pressure of modern city life, Douglas Winthrop becomes engrossed in business, while his wife Constance is concerned with social affairs. They drift apart and their last tie is lost when their child dies while Constance is at a party and Douglas is visiting a divorcée, Mrs. Dunbar. They separate, but are finally reunited when the sentimental old family lawyer, recognizing that they are still in love, brings them together. Douglas reveals that his visits to Mrs.Dunbar were for the purpose of saving Constance's brother, Clarence, from the charge of misusing securities that she owned.

Youngest, The, play by Philip Barry (q.v.).

Youth and the Bright Medusa, stories by Willa Cather (q.v.).

Youth's Companion, The (1827–1929), Boston weekly magazine, founded by Nathaniel Willis to provide an amusing and instructive children's periodical, unconnected with Sunday schools. Early contributors included the editor's son, N.P.Willis, Mrs.Hemans, and Mrs.Sigourney. In 1857 it was purchased by Daniel Sharp Ford, who raised the circulation from 4,000 to 500,000 before his death (1889), and began to print material for adult reading. The authors included Mrs.Stowe, Gladstone, Tennyson, Whittier, Sarah Orne Jewett, Hardy, Kipling, Huxley, G.E.Craddock, James Bryce, Louisa Alcott, and Mrs.R.H.Davis. Before the turn of the century, the list of contributors included Howells, J.T.Trowbridge, Stevenson, Theodore Roosevelt, Jules Verne, Cleveland, Jack London, Aldrich, Garland, and Woodrow Wilson. In 1929 the magazine was merged with *The American Boy*.

Yukon, see *Klondike*.

Z

ZATURENSKA, MARYA (1902–), born in Russia and educated at the University of Wisconsin, won the 1938 Pulitzer Prize for her book of poems, *Cold Morning Sky* (1937). *The Listening Landscape* (1941) is a later collection. She is the wife of Horace Gregory.

Zaza, play by David Belasco (q.v.).

ZENGER, JOHN PETER (1697–1746), German-born printer and journalist in New York, served as an apprentice to William Bradford, and established the *New-York Weekly Journal* (q.v.,1733) to oppose Bradford's *New York Gazette* and assail the administration of the provincial governor. His polemical articles and rimes caused him to be arrested and tried for criminal libel (1735). Despite the opposition of the judge, the jury found him not guilty, and his acquittal has been considered instrumental in establishing American freedom of the press. He published a verbatim account of the trial as *A Brief Narrative of the Case and Tryal of John Peter Zenger* (1736), and continued to edit the *Journal* until his death.

Zenobia, character in *The Blithedale Romance* (q.v.).

ZIEGFELD, FLORENZ (1869–1932), New York theatrical producer, after presenting a series of light musical farces featuring his first wife, Anna Held, attained fame through his annual musical revues in the continental manner, known as the Ziegfeld Follies (1907–27,1930). These shows were noted for their lush settings, often designed by Joseph Urban; scanty but dazzling costumes on beautiful 'chorines,' intended according to Ziegfeld to 'glorify the American girl'; humorous skits, featuring Will Rogers, Eddie Cantor, W.C.Fields, and other comedians; and musical settings, including popular jazz songs by such composers as Irving Berlin. In addition to the Follies, Ziegfeld produced such lavish musical plays as *Sally* (1920), *Rio Rita* (1927), Jerome Kern's *Show Boat* (1927), and *Whoopee* (1928).

ZINZENDORF, NICOLAUS, see *Moravian Church.*

Zip Coon, see *Turkey in the Straw.*

Zoar, community established in Tuscarawas County, Ohio (1819), by a society of German Separatists, incorporated as the Separatist Society of Zoar (1832). Their spiritual and temporal head, Joseph Bäumeler, later spelled his name Bimeler and the people were commonly called Bimelers. Marriage was at first prohibited, but this rule was set aside (*c.*1828). The community prospered and in 1874 had 300 members and more than a million dollars. Because of internal dissension it was dissolved (1898).

ZUGSMITH, LEANE (1903–), Kentucky-born proletarian author, whose novels include: *All Victories Are Alike* (1929), the story of a newspaper columnist's loss of ideals; *Goodbye and Tomorrow* (1931), about a romantic spinster who seeks happiness by patronizing artists; *Never Enough* (1932), a panorama of American life during the 1920's; *The Reckoning* (1934), the story of a New York slum boy; *A Time to Remember* (1936), concerned with labor troubles and unionization in a New York department store; and *The Summer Soldier* (1938), about modern injustices to Negroes. *Home Is Where You Hang Your Childhood* (1937) is a collection of short stories.

Zuñi Indians, agricultural tribe of western New Mexico, was visited by early Spanish explorers of the region. Incited by glowing accounts of the wealth of their seven pueblos, Coronado led an expedition against them in 1540, only to find that the 'Seven Cities of Cibola' were ordinary Indian villages. The tribe is now concentrated in a single town, Zuñi, noted for its preservation of aboriginal pueblo customs and religion. F.H.Cushing (q.v.) who lived among the Zuñi, published several volumes dealing with their life.

Zury, the Meanest Man in Spring County, novel by Joseph Kirkland (q.v.) published in 1887. A sequel, *The McVeys,* was published in 1888.

Zury (Usury) Prouder, only surviving child of a poverty-stricken pioneer family in southern Illinois, becomes rich and politically powerful through his notorious miserliness and hard bargaining in a starved region. He marries a local girl to gain her land, but they have no children. Ann Sparrow, an idealistic young school teacher from Massachusetts, comes to the

county to teach and receives her position through the influence of Zury. Returning from a community picnic, Ann and Zury are forced to flee together from a forest fire and take refuge in an abandoned coal mine. They become subjects of gossip when they are seen returning the following morning, and Ann, who becomes pregnant, in desperation marries a suitor, McVey. She gives birth to twins, and the weak McVey accepts them as his own. Zury is especially fond of Philip, the male twin, and tries to help him. After the deaths of McVey and Zury's wife, Zury marries Ann, who has aided him in preparing political speeches, and they have another child, but never reveal to the twins, Margaret and Philip, that Zury is their father.

CHRONOLOGICAL INDEX

This is a year-by-year outline in parallel sequence of the social and literary history summarized in *The Oxford Companion to American Literature.* While only the most significant events and writings are mentioned, the selection has not always been in accordance with conventional standards. The literary index attempts to include not only the leading authors, books, and periodicals, but also those less distinguished writers and works whose qualities make them noteworthy as representative of their time. In the social-historical index, each event and personality in some way constitutes a milestone in the progress of the American nation and its culture.

Since they are intended merely for reference to the discussions and summaries in the text, titles are not given in full. Plays and playwrights are included in the literary outline, the former under the date of first production. Actors, painters, and other workers in the arts are arbitrarily placed in the index of social history. In general terms, the index provides a means of ready comparison of the political, economic, religious, scientific, and æsthetic background of a given period with the chief literary events and personalities which it produced.

LITERARY HISTORY	SOCIAL HISTORY
	1000–Leif Ericsson discovers Vineland
	1003–Thorfinn Karlsefni's expeditions (1003–6)
	1492–Voyage of Columbus (later voyages, 1493, 1498,1502)
	1497–Voyage of Cabot; Vespucci claims voyage to America
	1499–'Second' voyage of Vespucci (later voyages, 1502,1503–4)
	1501–Negro slavery introduced in West Indies
	1513–Balboa discovers Pacific; Ponce de Leon in Florida
	1519–Conquest of Mexico by Cortès (1519–20)
	1531–Conquest of Peru by Pizarro
	1534–Cartier claims New France
	1539–De Soto's explorations to the Mississippi (1539–43)
	1540–Coronado expedition in the Southwest (1540–42)
	1562–Laudonnière settles Port Royal
	1565–St.Augustine, Florida, founded
	1567–Champlain (*c.*1567–1635)
	1570–Iroquois Confederacy (*c.*1570)
	1577–Drake takes possession of New Albion
1578–Nathaniel Ward (*c.*1578–1652); Sandys (1578–1644)	
1580–John Smith (1580–1631)	
	1583–Gilbert's voyage to Newfoundland
1584–John Cotton (1584–1652)	1584–Roanoke founded
	Myles Standish (*c.*1584–1656)
1586–Thomas Hooker (1586–1647)	
	1587–Virginia Dare (1587–?)
1588–Hariot, *Briefe and True Report*	
John Winthrop (1588–1649)	
1589–Hakluyt, *The Principall Navigations*	
1590–William Bradford (1590–1657); Thomas Morton (1590?–1647)	
1595–Edward Winslow (1595–1655)	
1596–Richard Mather (1596–1669)	

1603–Roger Williams (*c.*1603–83)
1604–John Eliot (1604–90)
1605–Thomas Shepard (1605–49)

1606–Virginia and Plymouth Companies chartered
1607–Jamestown founded
1608–Smith, *A True Relation*
1608–Pocahontas 'saves' Smith
Champlain colonizes Quebec
1609–Gray, *Good Speed to Virginia*
1609–Hudson discovers Hudson River, claims New Netherland

1610–Rich, *Newes from Virginia*
1612–Smith, *A Map of Virginia*
Anne Bradstreet (*c.*1612–72)
1613–*Purchas his Pilgrimage*; Whitaker, *Good Newes from Virginia*
1613–Sir Henry Vane (1613–62)

1614–John Smith explores New England

1616–Smith, *A Description of New-England*
Steendam (*c.*1616–*c.*1672)

1619–Negro slavery introduced in Virginia
1620–Council for New England
Voyage of *Mayflower*
Plymouth founded
1621–New Amsterdam founded

1622–*Mourt's Relation*

1623–Dorchester Company of Adventurers
1624–Smith, *General Historie*; Winslow, *Good Newes from New England*
1624–Virginia becomes royal colony
1625–Morrell, *Nova Anglia*; Purchas, *Hakluytus Posthumus*
1625–Merry Mount settled
1626–Sandys, *Ovid*
1626–Minuit director of New Netherland (1626–31); purchase of Manhattan
1627–Suppression of Merry Mount
1629–Massachusetts Bay Company chartered (Endecott governor, 1629–30)

1630–Smith, *The True Travels*; Cotton, *God's Promise to His Plantation*; Bradford, *History of Plimmoth Plantation* (1630–51); Winthrop, *Journals* (1630–49)
1630–Voyage of *Arbella*
Massachusetts Bay Colony
1631–Wigglesworth (1631–1705)
1632–Diaz, *True History of the Conquest of Mexico*

1633–Van Twiller director of New Netherland (1633–7)

1634–Wood, *New Englands Prospect*

1635–Boston Latin School
1636–Roger Williams at Providence
Harvard College founded
1637–Morton, *New English Canaan*
1637–Pequot War
1638–Anne Hutchinson banished
New Sweden founded
1639–Daye's press founded; first American almanac
Increase Mather (1639–1723)
1639–*Oath of a Free-man*

1640–*Bay Psalm Book*
1640–Population of colonies, *c.*27,950
1641–*Body of Liberties*

1642–Shepard, *The Sincere Convert*
1642–Sir William Berkeley governor of Virginia (1642–52,1660–77)

1643–*New England's First Fruits*; Williams, *A Key into the Language*
1643–New England Confederation (1643–84)
1644–Williams, *Bloudy Tenent of Persecution*; Cotton, *Keyes of the Kingdom of Heaven*
1644–William Penn (1644–1718)
Edward Taylor (*c.*1644–1729)

1645–Roxbury Latin School

1646–Cotton, *Milk for Babes*; Vaughan, *Golden Fleece*

1647–Ward, *Simple Cobler*; Cotton, *The Bloudy Tenent Washed*
1648–Hooker, *Summe of Church Discipline*
1649–*Platform of Church-Discipline*

1650–Bradstreet, *The Tenth Muse*

1652–Samuel Sewall (1652–1730)
1653–Johnson, *Wonder-Working Providence*

1656–Hammond, *Leah and Rachel*

1661–Eliot's translation of New Testament into Algonquin
1662–Wigglesworth, *Day of Doom*
1663–Davenport, *Discourse about Civil Government*
Cotton Mather (1663–1728)

1665–*Ye Beare and Ye Club*
1666–Pain, *Daily Meditations*
1669–Wigglesworth, *Meat Out of the Eater*; Eliot, *The Indian Primer*

1674–Sewall's diary (1674–1729)
William Byrd (1674–1744)

1676–Tompson, *New Englands Crisis*
1677–Mather, *A Relation of the Troubles*
1678–Bradstreet, *Poems*

1682–Rowlandson, *Captivity and Restauration*

1683–*New England Primer* (1683?)
1684–Mather, *Remarkable Providences*; Exquemelin, *Bucaniers of America*

1687–Tulley's almanacs (1687–1701)

1689–Mather, *Memorable Providences*
1690–*Publick Occurrences*

1693–Mather, *Wonders of the Invisible World*; Mather, *Cases of Conscience concerning Evil Spirits*
1700–Sewall, *The Selling of Joseph*; Calef, *More Wonders of the Invisible World*

1647–Stuyvesant director of New Netherland (1647–64)
1648–Cambridge Platform
1649–Society for Propagating the Gospel in New England
1650–Population, 51,700
1651–First Navigation Act

1655–Dutch take New Sweden

1658–Cadillac (*c.*1658–1730)
1660–Population, 84,800
Second Navigation Act

1662–Half-Way Covenant

1664–English seize New Amsterdam (now New York)

1670–Population, 114,500
Hudson's Bay Company chartered
Charleston founded
1671–Sir Henry Morgan captures Panama
1672–Frontenac governor of New France (1672–82,1689–98)
1673–Jolliet and Marquette explore upper Mississippi

1675–King Philip's War (1675–6)
1676–Bacon's Rebellion

1678–Duluth claims upper Mississippi for France
1680–Population, 155,600
1682–Penn settles Pennsylvania; La Salle explores Louisiana
Philadelphia founded

1684–Massachusetts charter revoked

1686–Andros governor of consolidated northern colonies

1688–Smibert (1688–1751)
1689–Andros overthrown; Leisler's revolt
1690–Population, 213,500
King William's War (1690–97)
1692–Salem witchcraft trials
Massachusetts under new charter (Phips governor, 1692–5)
1693–William and Mary College founded

1700–Population, 275,000

1701–Queen Anne's War (1701–13)
Captain Kidd hanged
Detroit founded; Yale College founded

1702–Mather, *Magnalia Christi Americana*
1703–Jonathan Edwards (1703–58)
1704–Sarah Knight's diary (1704–5); *Boston News Letter* (1704–76)
1705–Beverley, *History of Virginia*
1706–Benjamin Franklin (1706–90)
1708–Cook, *Sot-Weed Factor*
1710–Mather, *Bonifacius* ('Essays to Do Good'); Wise, *The Churches Quarrel Espoused*

1714–*Androboros*
1717–Wise, *Vindication of the Government of New England Churches*

1719–*Songs for the Nursery*
Boston Gazette (1719–41)
1720–John Woolman (1720–72)
1721–Mather, *The Christian Philosopher*
New England Courant (1721–6); Hell-fire Club (1721–4)
1722–Franklin, 'Do-Good Papers'
1724–Mather, *Parentator*
1725–Ames almanacs (1725–75)

1726–Mather, *Manductio ad Ministerium*
1727–Colden, *History of the Five Indian Nations*; Junto Club founded
Ezra Stiles (1727–95)
1728–*Pennsylvania Gazette* (1728–1815)
1729–Franklin, 'Busy Body Papers'; Byrd runs dividing line
Samuel Seabury (1729–96)

1732–John Dickinson (1732–1808)

1733–Franklin, *Poor Richard's Almanack* (1733–58); Byrd, *Journey to the Land of Eden*

1735–Crèvecœur (1735–1813)

1737–Paine (1737–1809); Hopkinson (1737–91); Jonathan Odell (1737–1818)

1740–Tailfer, *Narrative of the Colony of Georgia*

1741–Edwards, *Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God*
Bradford, *The American Magazine*; Franklin, *The General Magazine*
1743–Sower's German Bible
American Philosophical Society founded

1708–Saybrook Platform
1710–Population, 375,500

1713–Treaty of Utrecht

1717–Mississippi Bubble (1717–20)

1718–New Orleans founded
Israel Putnam (1718–90)

1720–Population, 474,400

1722–Samuel Adams (1722–1803)

1725–Lovewell's Fight
James Otis (1725–83)

1729–Berkeley comes to America
Baltimore founded

1730–Population, 654,950
1731–Robert Rogers (1731?–95)
1732–Ephrata Community
Washington (1732–99); R.H.Lee (1732–94)
1733–Oglethorpe settles Georgia
Molasses Act
First Freemason lodge
Richmond founded
1734–Great Awakening (*c.*1734ff.)
Daniel Boone (1734–1820); Robert Morris (1734–1806)
1735–Wesleys visit Georgia
Zenger trial
John Adams (1735–1826); Paul Revere (1735–1818)
1736–Patrick Henry (1736–99)

1738–Whitefield's first visit to America (1738–9)
Copley (1738?–1815); Benjamin West (1738–1820)
1740–Population, 889,000
Faneuil Hall erected
1741–C.W.Peale (1741–1827)

1743–Jefferson (1743–1826)

1745–King George's War (1745–8); capture of Louisburg
Anthony Wayne (1745–96); John Jay (1745–1829); Benjamin Rush (1745–1813)

1746–Shirley, *Siege of Louisburg*
1746–College of New Jersey
C.C.Pinckney (1746–1825)

1747–Stith, *Settlement of Virginia*
1747–John Paul Jones (1747–92)

1748–Brackenridge (1748–1816)
1748–Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle

1749–First dramatic company in America at Philadelphia (later moved to New York)
1749–First Ohio Company chartered

1750–John Trumbull (1750–1831)
1750–Population, 1,207,000

1751–Philadelphia Academy founded (now University of Pennsylvania)
Madison (1751–1836)

1752–Freneau (1752–1832); Timothy Dwight (1752–1817)
1752–George Rogers Clark (1752–1818); Gouverneur Morris (1752–1816)

1753–Edmund Randolph (1753–1813); Benjamin Thompson (1753–1814)

1754–Edwards, *Freedom of Will*
Barlow (1754–1812)
1754–Albany Congress
French and Indian War (1754–60), Braddock commander-in-chief of British forces (1754–5)
King's College founded (now Columbia University)

1755–Acadians deported
John Marshall (1755–1835); Gilbert Stuart (1755–1828)

1756–Woolman's *Journal* (1756–72)
1756–Montcalm in command of French (1756–9)
John Trumbull (1756–1843); Aaron Burr (1756–1836); 'Light-Horse Harry' Lee (1756–1818)

1757–*The American Magazine and Monthly Chronicle* (1757–8)
Royall Tyler (1757–1826)
1757–Hamilton (1757–1804); Charles Pinckney (1757–1824)

1758–Franklin, 'The Way to Wealth'; Maylem, *Conquest of Louisburg*; Prince, *Psalms, Hymns, and Spiritual Songs*
Noah Webster (1758–1843)
1758–Mary Jemison captured
Pittsburgh founded
Monroe (1758–1831)

1759–Capture of Crown Point and Ticonderoga; Battle of the Plains of Abraham

1760–Population, 1,610,000

1761–Gallatin (1761–1849)

1762–Susanna Rowson (*c.*1762–1824)
1762–Pontiac's Conspiracy (1762–5)
Louisiana secretly transferred by France to Spain
St.Louis founded

1763–Gage commander-in-chief of British forces (1763–75)
Treaty of Paris
Mason-Dixon survey (1763–7)
Astor (1763–1848); Charles Bulfinch (1763–1844); James Kent (1763–1847)

1764–Otis, *Rights of British Colonies*; Hutchinson, *History of Massachusetts Bay*
1764–Sugar Act; Colonial Currency Act
Brown University founded

1765–Godfrey, *Prince of Parthia*; Samuel Adams, *Resolutions*
1765–Stamp Act; Patrick Henry's resolutions; Stamp Act Congress, Declaration of Rights; Quartering Act; Regulators (1765–71)
Robert Fulton (1765–1815)

1766–Rogers, *Ponteach*
William Dunlap (1766–1839)
1766–Stamp Act repealed; Westmoreland Association
Queen's College founded (now Rutgers College)

1767–Townshend Acts; Nonimportation agreements
Monticello erected
Andrew Jackson (1767–1845); John Quincy Adams (1767–1848); Black Hawk (1767–1838)

1768–Dickinson, *Letters from a Farmer in Pennsylvania*

1768–Troops sent to Boston

1769–Portóla's expedition to California (1769ff.); Serra's first mission
Dartmouth College founded
DeWitt Clinton (1769–1828)

1770–*Massachusetts Spy* (1770–1904)

1770–Population, 2,205,000
Boston Massacre
Watauga Association

1771–Franklin begins autobiography
C.B.Brown (1771–1810)

1772–Freneau and Brackenridge, *Rising Glory of America*; Trumbull, *Progress of Dulness* (1772–3)

1772–First Committees of Correspondence

1773–Wheatley, *Poems*; Warren, *The Adulateur*; Franklin, 'Edict by the King of Prussia' and 'Rules by which a Great Empire may be reduced to a Small One'
Rivington's New-York Gazeteer (1773–83)

1773–Boston Tea Party
Boone settles in Kentucky
John Randolph (1773–1833); W.H.Harrison (1773–1841)

1774–Hopkinson, *A Pretty Story*; Duché, *Caspipina's Letters*

1774–First Continental Congress; Burke's speech on taxation; Dunmore's War; second Quartering Act; Quebec Act
Shakers in America
Meriwether Lewis (1774–1809)

1775–Burgoyne, *The Blockade*; Burke, *On Conciliation*; Warren, *The Group*; Freneau, 'A Political Litany'; Trumbull, *M'Fingal* (1775–82)

1775–Second Continental Congress
Revolutionary War (1775–83); Battles of Lexington and Concord; Arnold and Allen capture Ticonderoga and Crown Point; unsuccessful campaign against Canada; Washington commander-in-chief of Continental Army; Siege of Boston; Battle of Bunker Hill
Vanderlyn (1775–1852)

1776–Paine, *Common Sense*; Brackenridge, *Battle of Bunkers-Hill*; Leacock, *Fall of British Tyranny*; Freneau, 'The Beauties of Santa Cruz'; Munford, *The Patriots*
Paine, *The American Crisis* (1776–83)

1776–Declaration of Independence; Virginia Bill of Rights; Boston Port Bill; separation from England; Nathan Hale executed; Battles of Trenton and Long Island
San Francisco mission and presidio founded
Phi Beta Kappa founded

1777–Hopkinson, *A Political Catechism*; Burke, *Letter to the Sheriffs of Bristol*

1777–Stars and Stripes adopted as national flag
Battles of Princeton, Brandywine, Germantown, and Saratoga; Valley Forge (1777–8); Conway Cabal
Henry Clay (1777–1852); R.B.Taney (1777–1864)

1778–Hopkinson, 'The Battle of the Kegs'
J.K.Paulding (1778–1860)

1778–Alliance with France
Wyoming Valley massacre; Battle of Monmouth
Articles of Confederation
Rembrandt Peale (1778–1860)

1779–Freneau, 'The House of Night'
United States Magazine
Francis Scott Key (1779–1843)

1779–*Bonhomme Richard* vs. *Serapis*; Vincennes captured; Battle of Stony Point
University of Pennsylvania founded
Decatur (1779–1820); Joseph Story (1779–1845)

1780–Population, 2,781,000

(1780) Benedict Arnold's treason discovered, André captured; Battles of Camden and King's Mountain; Rochambeau arrives with French troops
David Porter (1780–1843)

1781–Freneau, *The British Prison Ship*
1781–Battle of Eutaw Springs; Cornwallis surrenders at Yorktown
James Lawrence (1781–1813)

1782–Crèvecœur, *Letters from an American Farmer*; Aitken Bible (first complete English Bible printed in America)
1782–Lewis Cass (1782–1866); Calhoun (1782–1850); Van Buren (1782–1862); Webster (1782–1852); T.H.Benton (1782–1858)

1783–Webster, *Spelling Book*
Irving (1783–1859)
1783–Treaty of Paris

1784–Allen, *Reason the Only Oracle of Man*
Massachusetts Centinel (1784–1840)
Joseph Worcester (1784–1865)
1784–State of Franklin
Zachary Taylor (1784–1850)

1785–Dwight, *Conquest of Canaan*; Webster, *Sketches of American Policy*
Friendly Club of Hartford (*c.*1785–1807)
1785–Audubon (1785–1851); O.H.Perry (1785–1819)

1786–Freneau, *Poems*; *The Anarchiad* (1786–7)
Columbian Magazine (1786–92)
1786–Annapolis Convention
Shays's Rebellion (1786–7)
Ohio Company of Associates; Tammany Society
Nicholas Biddle (1786–1844); Crockett (1786–1836); W.L.Marcy (1786–1857); Winfield Scott (1786–1866)

1787–Jefferson, *Notes on Virginia*; Barlow, *The Vision of Columbus*; Tyler, *The Contrast*; Adams, *Defence of the Constitutions*; *The Federalist* (1787–8)
1787–Federal Constitutional Convention
Ordinance of 1787
Emma Willard (1787–1870)

1788–Freneau, *Miscellaneous Works*
1788–Constitution ratified
First settlement by Ohio Company

1789–Dunlap, *The Father*; Webster, *Dissertations on the English Language*; Brown, *The Power of Sympathy*
1789–Washington's administration (1789–97)
Gazette of the United States (1789–1847)
First Congress
Cooper (1789–1851)
University of North Carolina founded

1790–Webster, *Essays*
Halleck (1790–1867)
1790–Population according to first national census, 3,929,214
John Tyler (1790–1862)

1791–Hamilton, *Report on Manufactures*; Adams, *Discourses of Davila*; Bartram, *Travels*; Paine, *Rights of Man* (1791–2); *The Echo* (1791–1805)
J.H.Payne (1791–1852)
1791–Bill of Rights
Bank of the U.S.
Vermont admitted as 14th state
Williams College founded
Peter Cooper (1791–1883); James Buchanan (1791–1868)

1792–Barlow, *Advice to the Privileged Orders*; Hopkinson, *Essays*; Odiorne, *Progress of Refinement*; Brackenridge, *Modern Chivalry* (1792–1815)
Seba Smith (1792–1868)
1792–White House cornerstone laid
Thaddeus Stevens (1792–1868); Francis M. Drexel (1792–1863)

1793–*The Hapless Orphan*
Farmer's Almanack (1793–)
John Neal (1793–1876)
1793–Genêt mission
Fugitive Slave Law
Capitol cornerstone laid
Cotton gin
Houston (1793–1863)

1794–Dwight, *Greenfield Hill*; Rowson, *Charlotte Temple*, *Slaves in Algiers*; Paine, *The Age of Reason* (1794–5)
Bryant (1794–1878)
1794–Whisky Rebellion
Jay's Treaty; Neutrality Act
Bowdoin College founded
Edward Everett (1794–1865); Matthew Perry (1794–1858); Vanderbilt (1794–1877)

1795–Freneau, *Poems*
J.R.Drake (1795–1820); J.P.Kennedy (1795–1870); J.G.Percival (1795–1856)
1795–Yazoo frauds
Pinckney's Treaty
Boston State House erected

(1795)First American circus
Polk (1795–1849)

1796–Washington, 'Farewell Address'; Barlow, *Hasty Pudding*; first of Dennie's 'Lay Preacher' essays
T.C.Haliburton (1796–1865); W.H.Prescott (1796–1859)
1796–Greek Revival introduced in U.S.
Horace Mann (1796–1859)

1797–Foster, *The Coquette*; Burk, *Bunker Hill*; Tyler, *The Algerine Captive*; Dwight, *The Triumph of Infidelity*
Porcupine's Gazette (1797–9)
1797–John Adams's administration (1797–1801)
XYZ Affair (1797–8)
Daniel Drew (1797–1879)

1798–Brown, *Wieland*; Dunlap, *André*; 'Hail Columbia'
1798–Alien and Sedition Acts; Kentucky and Virginia Resolutions
Jedediah Smith (1798–1831)

1799–Brown, *Edgar Huntly*, *Ormond*, *Arthur Mervyn*; *The Political Greenhouse*
Bronson Alcott (1799–1889); R.P.Smith (1799–1854)

1800–Weems, *Life of Washington* (1800?); Wood, *Julia and the Illuminated Baron*
Library of Congress founded; Tuesday Club of Philadelphia (1800–?); *National Intelligencer* (1800–1870)
George Bancroft (1800–1891)
1800–Population, 5,308,483
Washington,D.C., becomes capital
Gothic Revival introduced in U.S.
John Brown (1800–1859); Caleb Cushing (1800–1879); Fillmore (1800–1874)

1801–Brown, *Clara Howard*, *Jane Talbot*; Chateaubriand, *Atala*; Tenney, *Female Quixotism*
New York *Evening Post* (1801–); *The Port Folio* (1801–27)
1801–Jefferson's administration (1801–9)
Barbary Wars (1801–5)
W.H.Seward (1801–72); Brigham Young (1801–77)

1802–U.S.Military Academy founded
Dorothea Dix (1802–87)

1803–Wirt, *Letters of the British Spy*; Fessenden, *Terrible Tractoration*
Emerson (1803–82)
1803–Louisiana Purchase
Marbury *vs.* Madison

1804–Marshall, *Life of Washington*
Anthology Club (*c.*1804–11)
Hawthorne (1804–64)
1804–Lewis and Clark expedition (1804–6)
Burr-Hamilton duel
Harmony Society founded
Franklin Pierce (1804–69)

1805–Boston Athenæum (1805–)
1805–Garrison (1805–79); Joseph Smith (1805–44)

1806–Webster, *Compendious Dictionary*
R.M.Bird (1806–54); W.G.Simms (1806–70); N.P.Willis (1806–67)
1806–Nonimportation Act
Edwin Forrest (1806–72); J.A.Roebling (1806–69)

1807–Barlow, *The Columbiad*; Irving and Paulding, *Salmagundi* (1807–8)
Longfellow (1807–82); Whittier (1807–92)
1807–Embargo Act
Burr tried for treason
Clermont's first voyage
Agassiz (1807–73); R.E.Lee (1807–70)

1808–Importation of slaves prohibited
Salmon P. Chase (1808–73); Jefferson Davis (1808–89); Andrew Johnson (1808–75)

1809–Irving, *History of New York*; Campbell, *Gertrude of Wyoming*
Holmes (1809–94); Poe (1809–49)
1809–Madison's administration (1809–17)
Repeal of Embargo Act; Nonintercourse Act
Lincoln (1809–65); Kit Carson (1809–68); Albert Brisbane (1809–90)

1810–Ingersoll, *Inchiquin*; Thomas, *History of Printing in America*
Margaret Fuller (1810–50); Theodore Parker (1810–60)
1810–Population, 7,239,881
P.T.Barnum (1810–91)

1811–Mitchell, *The Asylum*
Greeley (1811–72); Henry James, Sr. (1811–82); Harriet Beecher Stowe (1811–96)
1811–Steamboats on the Mississippi
Battle of Tippecanoe
G.C.Bingham (1811–79); Charles Sumner (1811–74)

1812–Barker, *Marmion*; Paulding, *John Bull*
1812–War of 1812 (1812–15); *Constitution* vs.

(1812) *and Brother Jonathan*; Melish, *Travels in the United States*
American Antiquarian Society (1812–)

1813–Taylor, *The Arator*
Boston Daily Advertiser (1813–1929)
Jones Very (1813–80)

1814–Key, *Star-Spangled Banner*; Humphreys, *Yankey in England*; *History of the Expedition of Captains Lewis and Clark*

1815–Freneau, *Poems*
North American Review (1815–)
R.H.Dana, Jr. (1815–82)

1816–Drake, 'The Culprit Fay'; Woodworth, *Champions of Freedom*
The Portico (1816–18)
Parke Godwin (1816–1904)

1817–Bryant, 'Thanatopsis'; Barker, *How to Try a Lover*; Neal, *Keep Cool*
Thoreau (1817–62)

1818–Payne, *Brutus*; Bryant, 'To a Waterfowl'

1819–Drake and Halleck, 'Croaker Papers'; Noah, *She Would Be a Soldier*; Channing, *Baltimore Sermon*; Irving, *The Sketch Book* (1819–20)
Lowell (1819–91); Melville, (1819–91); Whitman (1819–92)

1820–Cooper, *Precaution*; Eastburn and Sands, *Yamoyden*; Sydney Smith, 'Who reads an American book?'
Boucicault (1820–90)

1821–Cooper, *The Spy*; Bryant, *Poems*; Percival, *Poems*; Wright, *Views of Society and Manners in America*; Dwight, *Travels* (1821–2)
Saturday Evening Post (1821–); *Genius of Universal Emancipation* (1821–39)

1822–Irving, *Bracebridge Hall*; Neal, *Logan*; Halleck, 'Alnwick Castle'; Trumbull, *Works*
Bread and Cheese Club (*c.*1822–7)
E.E.Hale (1822–1909)

1823–Cooper, *The Pioneers*, *The Pilot*; Paulding, *Koningsmarke*; Neal, *Seventy-six*; Moore, 'A Visit from St.Nicholas'
New-York Mirror (1823–60)
G.H.Boker (1823–90)

1824–Irving, *Tales of a Traveller*; Payne, *Charles the Second*; Barker, *Superstition*; Neal, 'American Writers' (1824–5)
Springfield Republican (1824–)
G.W.Curtis (1824–92)

1825–Halleck, 'Marco Bozzaris'; Webster, Bunker Hill oration; Bryant, 'A Forest Hymn'; Woodworth, *The Widow's Son*
Atlantic Souvenir (1825–32)
R.H.Stoddard (1825–1903); Bayard Taylor (1825–78)

(1812) *Guerrière*
'Gerrymander'
A.H.Stephens (1812–83)

1813–Battle of Lake Erie
Frémont (1813–90); Stephen Douglas (1813–61); H.W.Beecher (1813–87)

1814–Hartford Convention (1814–5)
British invade Washington; Battle of Lake Champlain; Creek Indians defeated; Treaty of Ghent
W.L.Yancey (1814–63); Stanton (1814–69); Tilden (1814–86)

1815–Battle of New Orleans
Tripolitan War

1816–Second Bank of the U.S.
Regular transatlantic shipping inaugurated
August Belmont (1816–90)

1817–Monroe's administration (1817–25)
First Seminole War (1817–8)
University of Michigan founded

1818–Northern boundary (to Rocky Mountains) fixed at 49th parallel
Lucy Stone (1818–93)

1819–Transatlantic voyage of the *Savannah*
Purchase of Florida
Dartmouth College case
University of Virginia founded

1820–Population, 9,638,453
Missouri Compromise
First American missionaries in Hawaii
Susan Anthony (1820–1906); Sherman (1820–91)

1821–Santa Fé Trail
James Longstreet (1821–1904); Mary Baker Eddy (1821–1910); Jay Cooke (1821–1905); C.P.Huntington (1821–1900); Clara Barton (1821–1912)

1822–Grant (1822–85); Hayes (1822–93)

1823–Monroe Doctrine

1824–National Republican Party (1824–32)
Tour of Lafayette
W.M.Hunt (1824–79); 'Stonewall' Jackson (1824–63)

1825–John Quincy Adams's administration (1825–9)
Erie Canal opened
Nashoba Community (1825–8); New Harmony (1825–8)
Rutgers College founded
Inness (1825–94)

1826–Cooper, *Last of the Mohicans*; Woodworth, *Ballads*; Payne, *Richelieu*; Kent, *Commentaries*; Flint, *Recollections of the Last Ten Years*
Graham's Magazine (1826–58)
DeForest (1826–1906); Stephen Foster (1826–64)

1826–First lyceum
McClellan (1826–85)

1827–Poe, *Tamerlane and Other Poems*; Cooper, *The Prairie*; Sedgwick, *Hope Leslie*; Tucker, *A Voyage to the Moon*; Simms, *Poems*
The Token (1827–42); *Youth's Companion* (1827–1929)

1828–Hawthorne, *Fanshawe*; Webster, *American Dictionary of the English Language*; Cooper, *Red Rover*; Irving, *Columbus*; Sealsfield, *Americans As They Are*; Calhoun, 'South Carolina Exposition'

1828–Tariff of Abominations
American Peace Society
R.M.Hunt (1828–95)

1829–Poe, *Al Aaraaf, Tamerlane, and Other Poems*; Irving, *Conquest of Granada*; Stone, *Metamora*; Smith, *Eighth of January*; Cooper, *Wept of Wish-ton-Wish*; Knapp, *Lectures on American Literature*; Kettell, *Specimens of American Poetry*
S.Weir Mitchell (1829–1914); C.D. Warner (1829–1900)

1829–Andrew Jackson's administration (1829–37)
Tom Thumb, first steam locomotive in U.S.
Workingmen's Party
Roscoe Conkling (1829–88); Carl Schurz (1829–1906)

1830–Webster, 'Reply to Hayne'; Holmes, 'Old Ironsides'; Paulding, *Lion of the West*; *Book of Mormon*; Smith, *Triumph at Plattsburg*; Worcester, *Dictionary*; Seba Smith begins 'Jack Downing' letters; Hale, 'Mary Had a Little Lamb'
Godey's Lady's Book (1830–98); Boston *Daily Evening Transcript* (1830–1941)
J.E.Cooke (1830–86); Emily Dickinson (1830–86); P.H.Hayne (1830–86)

1830–Population, 12,866,020
Mormon church
Blaine (1830–93)

1831–Poe, *Poems*; Bird, *The Gladiator*; Whittier, *Legends of New England*; Smith, 'America'; Paulding, *Dutchman's Fireside*
Liberator (1831–65); *Spirit of the Times* (1831–58)
Rebecca H. Davis (1831–1910)

1831–Southampton Insurrection
New England Anti-Slavery Society
New York University founded
Garfield (1831–81); Sheridan (1831–88)

1832–Bryant, *Poems*; Kennedy, *Swallow Barn*; Mason, *The Choir*; Bird, *Oralloossa*; Irving, *The Alhambra*; Trollope, *Domestic Manners of the Americans*; Hawthorne, 'Roger Malvin's Burial'; Dunlap, *History of the American Theatre*; Story, *Commentaries* (1832–45)
Louisa Alcott (1832–88)

1832–Ordinance of Nullification; beginning of U.S.Bank controversy

1833–Longfellow, *Outre-Mer*; Simms, *Martin Faber*; Neal, *The Down-Easters*; Poe, 'MS. Found in a Bottle'
Knickerbocker Magazine (1833–65); New York *Sun* (1833–); *Parley's Magazine* (1833–41)

1833–American Anti-Slavery Society
Haverford College; Oberlin College
Chicago incorporated
Benjamin Harrison (1833–1901); R.G. Ingersoll (1833–99); J.E.B.Stuart (1833–64)

1834–*Life of David Crockett*; Simms, *Guy Rivers*; Abbott, first of the 'Rollo' books; Bancroft, *History of the United States* (1834–76)
Southern Literary Messenger (1834–64)
Frank Stockton (1834–1902); Horatio Alger (1834–99)

1834–McCormick reaper
Whistler (1834–1903); Langley (1834–1906); James Fisk (1834–72)

1835–Longstreet, *Georgia Scenes*; Simms, *The*

1835–Locofocos (*c.*1835–40)

(1835) *Yemassee, The Partisan*; Hawthorne, 'Young Goodman Brown'; Sparks, *Life of Washington*; Irving, *Tour on the Prairies*; Drake, *The Culprit Fay*; Poe, 'Berenice,' 'Morella'; Bird, *The Hawks of Hawk-Hollow*; Kennedy, *Horse-Shoe Robinson*
Crockett almanacs (1835–56); New York *Herald* (1835–); *Western Messenger* (1835–41)
Clemens (1835–1910)

(1835) Second Seminole War (1835–42)
Adah Menken (1835–68); Theodore Thomas (1835–1905); Carnegie (1835–1919); John La Farge (1835–1910)

1836–Emerson, *Nature*; Haliburton, *The Clockmaker*; Hildreth, *The Slave*; Holmes, *Poems*; Tucker, *Partisan Leader*; McGuffey, *Eclectic Readers* (1836–57)
Transcendental Club (1836–*c.*1844)
Aldrich (1836–1907); Bret Harte (1836–1902)

1836–Lone Star Republic (1836–45); Battle of the Alamo
Whig Party
Colt revolver
Mt.Holyoke Seminary (first women's college)
Jay Gould (1836–92); Winslow Homer (1836–1910)

1837–Hawthorne, *Twice-Told Tales*; Emerson, *The American Scholar*; Carey, *Principles of Political Economy*; Willis, *Bianca Visconti*; Bird, *Nick of the Woods*; Prescott, *Ferdinand and Isabella*; Cooper, *Gleanings in Europe* (1837–8)
Baltimore *Sun* (1837–); *New Orleans Picayune* (1837–); *United States Magazine and Democratic Review* (1837–49); *Burton's Gentleman's Magazine* (1837–40)
Burroughs (1837–1921); Howells (1837–1920); Edward Eggleston (1837–1902)

1837–Van Buren's administration (1837–41)
Caroline Affair
Financial panic
Cleveland (1837–1908); Mark Hanna (1837–1904); J.P.Morgan (1837–1913)

1838–Emerson, 'Divinity School Address'; Cooper, *American Democrat*; Kennedy, *Rob of the Bowl*; Whittier, *Ballads and Anti-Slavery Poems*; Martineau, *Retrospect of Western Travel*; Neal, *Charcoal Sketches*; Tocqueville, *Democracy in America*; Poe, 'Silence,' 'Ligeia,' *Narrative of A. Gordon Pym*
Henry Adams (1838–1918); John Hay (1838–1905); Muir (1838–1914); F.H. Smith (1838–1915); Tourgée (1838–1905)

1838–Underground Railroad established
J.J.Hill (1838–1916); H.H.Richardson (1838–86)

1839–Longfellow, *Hyperion, Voices of the Night*; Very, *Essays and Poems*; Willis, *Tortesa*; Marryat, *Diary in America*; Kirkland, *A New Home*; Poe, *Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque*; Trowbridge, *The Green Mountain Boys*
Liberty Bell (1839–58)
Henry George (1839–97)

1839–Aroostook War
Rockefeller (1839–1937)

1840–Dana, *Two Years Before the Mast*; Cooper, *The Pathfinder*; Alcott, 'Orphic Sayings'; Simms, *Border Beagles*; Hoffman, *Greyslaer*
The Dial (1840–44)

1840–Population, 17,069,453
Chardon Street Convention (1840–41)
Thomas Nast (1840–1902)

1841–Emerson, *Essays, First Series*; Cooper, *The Deerslayer*; Lowell, *A Year's Life*; Thorpe, 'Big Bear of Arkansas'; Catlin, *North American Indians*; Poe, 'Murders in the Rue Morgue'
New-York Tribune (1841–); *Merry's Museum for Boys and Girls* (1841–72)
Joaquin Miller (1841?–1913)

1841–Harrison's administration (1841); Tyler's administration (1841–5)
Dorr's Rebellion
Brook Farm (1841–7)

1842–Hawthorne, *Twice-Told Tales* (enlarged); Longfellow, *Ballads and Other Poems*; Simms, *Beauchampe*; Dickens, *American Notes*; Whittier, 'Massachusetts to Virginia'; Cooper, *Wing-and-Wing*; Poe, 'Eleonora,' 'Masque of the Red Death'; Griswold, *Poets and Poetry of America*
Lanier (1842–81); William James (1842–1910); Bronson Howard (1842–1908); Bierce (1842–1914?)

1842–Amana Community; Fruitlands (1842–3); Hopedale (1842–56)
Webster-Ashburton treaty
Barnum's American Museum

1843–Prescott, *Conquest of Mexico*; Webster, second Bunker Hill oration; Pierpont, *Anti-Slavery Poems*; Thompson, *Major Jones's Courtship*; Poe, 'The Gold-Bug,' 'The Black Cat'
Henry James, Jr. (1843–1916)

1843–North American Phalanx (1843–54)
Barnburners (1843–8)
McKinley (1843–1901)

1844–Emerson, *Essays, Second Series*; Cooper, *Afloat and Ashore*; Whittier, *Voices of Freedom*; Smith, *The Drunkard*; Dickens, *Martin Chuzzlewit*
Littell's Living Age (1844–); *Brownson's Quarterly Review* (1844–75)
G.W. Cable (1844–1925)

1844–'Fifty-four forty or fight'
Hunkers (1844–52)
Vulcanizing process patented; Morse demonstrates telegraph
Bethel Community (1844–80)
Eakins (1844–1916); Comstock (1844–1915)

1845–Poe, *The Raven and Other Poems*, 'The Literati'; Mowatt, *Fashion*; *Life of Frederick Douglass*; Fuller, *Woman in the Nineteenth Century*; Judd, *Margaret*; Cooper, *Satanstoe*
Broadway Journal (1845–6); *Harbinger* (1845–9)

1845–Polk's administration (1845–9)
Texas annexed
U.S. Naval Academy founded
Elihu Root (1845–1937)

1846–Melville, *Typee*; Hawthorne, *Mosses from an Old Manse*; Holmes, *Poems*; Hooper, *Simon Suggs*; Emerson, *Poems*; Mathews, *Witchcraft*; Poe, 'Cask of Amontillado,' 'The Philosophy of Composition'
DeBow's Review (1846–80)

1846–Mexican War (1846–8); Oregon acquired; Bear Flag War; Wilmot Proviso
Hoe rotary press; Morton's use of ether as anæsthetic; Howe sewing machine
Donner Party
Smithsonian Institution
Carry Nation (1846–1911); Elbert Gary (1846–1927); W.F. Cody (1846–1917)

1847–Longfellow, *Evangeline*; Melville, *Omoo*; Field, *The Drama in Pokerville*; Prescott, *Conquest of Peru*; Paulding, *The Bucktails*; Griswold, *Prose Writers of America*
Union Magazine (1847–52)

1847–Free-Soil Party (1847–54)
Mormons in Utah
Edison (1847–1931); Jesse James (1847–82); C.F. McKim (1847–1909); A.P. Ryder (1847–1917); Alexander G. Bell (1847–1922)

1848–Lowell, *Biglow Papers*, *Fable for Critics*, *Vision of Sir Launfal*; Poe, *Eureka*; Foster, *Songs of the Sable Harmonists*
The Independent (1848–1928)
H.H. Boyesen (1848–95); J.C. Harris (1848–1908)

1848–Gold discovered in California
Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo
Oneida Community (1848–79)
College of the City of New York; University of Wisconsin
Seneca Falls woman suffrage meeting
Saint-Gaudens (1848–1907); Harriman (1848–1909)

1849–Parkman, *Oregon Trail*; Melville, *Mardi*, *Redburn*; Longfellow, *Kavanagh*; Thoreau, *Week on the Concord and Merrimack*, 'Civil Disobedience'; Whittier, *Margaret Smith's Journal*; Southworth, *Retribution*; Paulding, *The Puritan and His Daughter*; Poe, 'Annabel Lee,' 'The Bells,' 'Eldorado'; Griswold, *Female Poets of America*
Sarah Orne Jewett (1849–1909); J.L. Allen (1849–1925); J.W. Riley (1849–1916)

1849–Taylor's administration (1849–50)
California gold rush
Astor Place riots
Burbank (1849–1926)

1850–Hawthorne, *The Scarlet Letter*; Taylor, *Eldorado*; Mitchell, *Reveries of a Bache-*

1850–Fillmore's administration (1850–53)
Population, 23,191,876

(1850) *Ior*; Melville, *White-Jacket*; Garrard, *Wah-Tó-Yah*; Emerson, *Representative Men*; Whittier, 'Ichabod,' *Songs of Labor*; Calhoun, 'Fourth of March' speech; Webster, 'Seventh of March' speech
Bellamy (1850–98); Eugene Field (1850–1902); Hearn (1850–1904)

(1850) Clayton-Bulwer Treaty; Fugitive Slave Law; Compromise of 1850
Currier and Ives partnership established
Jenny Lind's tour (1850–52)
Gompers (1850–1924); D.C.French (1850–1931); H.C.Lodge (1850–1924); Seth Low (1850–1916)

1851–Melville, *Moby-Dick*; Parkman, *Conspiracy of Pontiac*; Simms, *Katharine Walton*; Hawthorne, *The Snow Image, The House of the Seven Gables*; Mitchell, *Dream Life*; Foster, *Old Folks at Home*; Morgan, *League of the Ho-dé-no-saunee*; Schoolcraft, *Indian Tribes* (1851–7)
Kate Chopin (1851–1904)

1851–'Go West, young man'
Maine becomes first permanently 'dry' state
Northwestern University founded

1852–Stowe, *Uncle Tom's Cabin* (the novel and the Aiken dramatization); Hawthorne, *The Blithedale Romance*; Melville, *Pierre*
San Francisco *Golden Era* (1852–93)
Mary Wilkins Freeman (1852–1930)

1853–Baldwin, *Flush Times*; Curtis, *Potiphar Papers*; Simms, *The Sword and the Distaff*
Putnam's Monthly Magazine (1853–1910)
E.W.Howe (1853–1937); T.N.Page (1853–1922)

1853–Pierce's administration (1853–7)
Gadsden purchase; Perry's voyage to Japan
Kane's Arctic expedition (1853–5)
Rail connection, New York to Chicago
Antioch College founded

1854–Thoreau, *Walden*; Arthur, *Ten Nights in a Barroom*; Cooke, *Leather-Stocking and Silk*, *The Virginia Comedians*; Melville, 'The Encantadas'; Grayson, *The Hireling and the Slave*; Shillaber, *Mrs. Partington*; Thorpe, *Hive of the Bee Hunter*; Cummins, *The Lamplighter*
F.M.Crawford (1854–1909)

1854–Trade treaty with Japan; Ostend Manifesto
Kansas-Nebraska Act; Emigrant Aid Company

1855–Whitman, *Leaves of Grass*; Longfellow, *Hiawatha*; Melville, 'Benito Cereno'; Simms, *The Forayers*; Bartlett, *Familiar Quotations*; Boker, *Francesca da Rimini*; Bulfinch, *Age of Fable*; Thomson, *Doesticks*; Parton, *Horace Greeley*; Duyckinck, *Cyclopædia of American Literature*; Irving, *Life of Washington* (1855–9)
Saturday Club of Boston (1855–); *New York Ledger* (1855–1903)
Belasco (1855?–1931); Bunner (1855–96); Royce (1855–1916); Saltus (1855?–1921); Woodberry (1855–1930)

1855–Mellon (1855–1937); Debs (1855–1926); La Follette (1855–1925); W.H.Page (1855–1918)

1856–Stowe, *Dred*; Motley, *Rise of the Dutch Republic*; Simms, *Eutaw*; Emerson, *English Traits*; Curtis, *Prue and I*; Reid, *The Quadroon*; Bateman, *Self*; Thomson, *Plu-ri-bus-tah*; Whitcher, *Widow Bedott Papers*; *Sabin's Dictionary* (1856–1936)
Copyright law
Lizette Reese (1856–1935)

1856–Know-Nothing movement; national organization of Republican Party
Wilson (1856–1924); Brandeis (1856–); J.S.Sargent (1856–1925); L.H.Sullivan (1856–1924)

1857–Bunce, *Love in '76*; Butler, 'Nothing to Wear'; Helper, *Impending Crisis of the South*; Boucicault, *The Poor of New York*; Trowbridge, *Neighbor Jackwood*

1857–Buchanan's administration (1857–61)
Dred Scott decision
Financial panic
First Otis elevator

(1857) *Atlantic Monthly* (1857–); *Harper's Weekly* (1857–1916); *Russell's Magazine* (1857–60)
Gertrude Atherton (1857–); Margaret Deland (1857–); H.B.Fuller (1857–1929); Veblen (1857–1929)

1858–Longfellow, *Courtship of Miles Standish*; Holmes, *Autocrat of the Breakfast-Table*; O'Brien, 'The Diamond Lens'; Taylor, *Our American Cousin*; Allibone, *British and American Authors* (1858–71)
Agnes Repplier (1858–)

1859–Stowe, *The Minister's Wooing*; Boucicault, *The Octoroon*; Simms, *The Cassique of Kiawah*; 'Dixie'; Thackeray, *The Virginians*
Vanity Fair (1859–63)
John Dewey (1859–)

1860–Hawthorne, *The Marble Faun*; Holmes, *Professor at the Breakfast-Table*; Timrod, *Poems*; Emerson, *Conduct of Life*; Boucicault, *The Colleen Bawn*; Whittier, *Home Ballads*; Tuckerman, *Poems*; Stephens, *Malaeska* (first dime novel)
Huneker (1860–1921); Garland (1860–1940)

1861–Holmes, *Elsie Venner*; Timrod, 'Ethnogenesis'; Longfellow, 'Paul Revere's Ride'
Bliss Carman (1861–1929)

1862–Browne, *Artemus Ward*; Howe, 'Battle Hymn of the Republic'; Davis, *Margaret Howth*; Winthrop, *John Brent*; Stowe, *The Pearl of Orr's Island*; Newell, *The Orpheus C. Kerr Papers* (1862–71)
Edith Wharton (1862–1937); W.S.Porter (1862–1910)

1863–Longfellow, *Tales of a Wayside Inn*; Lincoln, 'Gettysburg Address'; Thoreau, *Excursions*; Hawthorne, *Our Old Home*; Hale, 'The Man Without a Country'
Santayana (1863–); John Fox,Jr. (1863–1919)

1864–Boker, *Poems of the War*; Trowbridge, *Cudjo's Cave*; Halpine, *Private Miles O'Reilly*; Locke, *The Nasby Papers*
Richard H. Davis (1864–1916); Richard Hovey (1864–1900); P.E.More (1864–1937)

1865–Whitman, *Drum-Taps*; Clemens, 'The Celebrated Jumping Frog'; Thoreau, *Cape Cod*; Parkman, *Pioneers of France in the New World*; Boucicault and Jefferson, *Rip Van Winkle*; Dodge, *Hans Brinker*; Shaw, *Josh Billings*

(1857) Clarence Darrow (1857–1938); Pennell (1857–1926); Taft (1857–1930)

1858–Lincoln-Douglas debates
First transatlantic cable
Theodore Roosevelt (1858–1919); E.M. House (1858–1938)

1859–Brown's raid on Harpers Ferry
First commercial production of petroleum
Cooper Union founded

1860–Population, 31,443,321
Tweed Ring (*c.*1860–71)
Pony Express (1860–61)
Crittenden Resolutions; South Carolina secedes
Bryan (1860–1925); Pershing (1860–)

1861–Lincoln's administration (1861–5)
Secession of Mississippi, Florida, Alabama, Georgia, Louisiana, Texas, Virginia, Tennessee, Arkansas, and North Carolina; Jefferson Davis president of Confederate States of America; attack on Fort Sumter begins Civil War; first Battle of Bull Run; Trent Affair
Gatling machine gun
Vassar College founded
Edward MacDowell (1861–1908); Maurice Prendergast (1861–1924)

1862–Lee in command of Confederate Army; *Monitor* vs. *Merrimac;* Peninsular Campaign; battles of Shiloh, Antietam, second Bull Run; Siege of Vicksburg (1862–3)
Homestead Act
Union and Central Pacific railways chartered
C.E.Hughes (1862–)

1863–Battles of Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, and Chattanooga
Emancipation Proclamation
National Banking Act
Henry Ford (1863–); W.R.Hearst (1863–)

1864–Maximilian's regime in Mexico (1864–7)
Grant in command of Union Army; Sherman's march to the sea; *Alabama* vs. *Kearsarge;* battles of Wilderness, Spotsylvania, and Mobile Bay
First Pullman car

1865–Johnson's administration (1865–9)
Lee's surrender at Appomattox ends war
Lincoln assassinated
13th Amendment
Molly Maguires (1865–7); first Ku Klux Klan organization

(1865)*Nation* (1865–)
Irving Babbitt (1865–1933); P.L.Ford (1865–1902)

1866–Whittier, *Snow-Bound*; Howells, *Venetian Life*; Emerson, 'Terminus'; Smith, *Bill Arp*; Cooke, *Surry of Eagle's Nest*
New York *World* (1866–1931); *Galaxy* (1866–78)
George Ade (1866–); Steffens (1866–1936)

1867–Harte, *Condensed Novels*; Harris, *Sut Luvingood Yarns*; DeForest, *Miss Ravenel's Conversion*; Longfellow's translation of the *Divine Comedy*; Parkman's *The Jesuits in North America*; Timrod, 'Ode'; Daly, *Under the Gaslight*; Evans, *St.Elmo*; Burroughs, *Notes on Walt Whitman*; Whittier, *The Tent on the Beach*; Lowell, *Biglow Papers* (second series); Emerson, *May-Day and Other Poems*
Journal of Speculative Philosophy (1867–93); Radical Club (1867–80); *Oliver Optic's Magazine* (1867–75)
D.G.Phillips (1867–1911)

1868–Harte, 'The Luck of Roaring Camp'; Ward, *The Gates Ajar*; Holmes, *The Guardian Angel*; Alcott, *Tablets*; Louisa Alcott, *Little Women* (1868–9)
Hearth and Home (1868–75); *Lippincott's Magazine* (1868–1916); *Overland Monthly* (1868–1933); *Vanity Fair* (1868–1936)
Mary Austin (1868–1934); Robert Herrick (1868–1938); W.A.White (1868–)

1869–Clemens, *Innocents Abroad*; Stowe, *Oldtown Folks*; Harte, 'Tennessee's Partner,' 'Outcasts of Poker Flat'; Parkman, *La Salle*; Aldrich, *Story of a Bad Boy*; Lowell, 'The Cathedral'
Appleton's Journal (1869–81)
Herbert Croly (1869–1930); Stephen Leacock (1869–); Masters (1869–); W.V.Moody (1869–1910); E.A. Robinson (1869–1935); George Sterling (1869–1926); Tarkington (1869–)

1870–Harte, 'Plain Language from Truthful James'; Emerson, *Society and Solitude*; Howard, *Saratoga*; Bryant's translation of the *Iliad*
Scribner's Monthly (1870–81)
Frank Norris (1870–1902)

1871–James, 'A Passionate Pilgrim'; Burroughs, *Wake-Robin*; Harte, *East and West Poems*; Hay, *Pike County Ballads*; Eggleston, *Hoosier Schoolmaster*; Lowell, *My Study Windows*; Miller, *Songs of the Sierras*; Johnston, *Dukesborough Tales*; Howells, *Their Wedding Journey*; Whitman, *Democratic Vistas*, *Passage to India*; Bryant's translation of the *Odyssey* (1871–2); Furness, *New Variorum Shakespeare* (1871–)
Winston Churchill (1871–); Stephen Crane (1871–1900); Dreiser (1871–)

(1865)Cornell University founded
Harding (1865–1923); Steinmetz (1865–1923)

1866–Civil Rights Bill
G.A.R.
Second Atlantic cable

1867–National Ku Klux Klan
Reconstruction Act; purchase of Alaska
Granger movement
Howard University founded
George Luks (1867–1933); J.P.Morgan, Jr. (1867–)

1868–14th Amendment
Johnson impeached, acquitted

1869–Grant's administration (1869–77)
15th Amendment
Knights of Labor, Prohibition Party
Union Pacific railroad completed
'Black Friday'
C.W.Eliot president of Harvard (1869–1909)
Brady's *National Photographic Collection of War Views*

1870–Population, 38,558,371
Standard Oil Company
Cardozo (1870–1938); Glackens (1870–1938)

1871–Tweed Ring overthrown
Treaty of Washington
Chicago Fire
Barnum's circus
Smith College founded
John Sloan (1871–)

1872–Clemens, *Roughing It*; Hayne, *Legends and Lyrics*; Stanley, *How I Found Livingstone*; King, *Mountaineering in the Sierra Nevada*; Murdoch and Mayo, *Davy Crockett*; Roe, *Barriers Burned Away*; Holmes, *Poet at the Breakfast-Table*
Congressional Record (1872–)

1872–Crédit Mobilier scandal (1872–3)
Muybridge's pictures of movement
Coolidge (1872–1933)

1873–Howells, *A Chance Acquaintance*; Clemens and Warner, *The Gilded Age*; Aldrich, 'Marjorie Daw'; Wallace, *The Fair God*; Timrod, *The Cotton Boll*
Delineator (1873–1937); *St. Nicholas* (1873–); *Woman's Home Companion* (1873–)
Anne D. Sedgwick (1873–1935)

1873–Financial panic
Slaughterhouse cases
Nevada silver rush
Alfred E. Smith (1873–)

1874–Eggleston, *The Circuit Rider*; Fiske, *Outlines of Cosmic Philosophy*
Ellen Glasgow (1874–); Charles Beard (1874–); Owen Davis (1874–); Clarence Day (1874–1935); Zona Gale (1874–1938); Amy Lowell (1874–1925) Gertrude Stein (1874–)

1874–W.C.T.U. founded
Hoover (1874–)

1875–Eddy, *Science and Health*; Howells, *A Foregone Conclusion*; Holland, *Sevenoaks*
Lambs Club (1875–)
Frost (1875–)

1875–Greenback Party

1876–Clemens, *Tom Sawyer*; James, *Roderick Hudson*; Whitman, *Leaves of Grass* (Centennial Edition); Moore, *Sweet Singer of Michigan*
Frank Leslie's Popular Monthly (1876–1906)
Sherwood Anderson (1876–1941); Willa Cather (1876–); Julian Hawthorne, *Garth*; Jack London (1876–1916); Rölvaag (1876–1931)

1876–Bell telephone; barbed wire
Battle of Little Big Horn
Centennial Exposition
Johns Hopkins opened
Socialist-Labor Party
Disputed election of Tilden and Hayes

1877–Jewett, *Deephaven*; James, *The American*; Lanier, *Poems*; Morgan, *Ancient Society*; Burroughs, *Birds and Poets*; Parkman, *Count Frontenac*
Puck (1877–1918)
William Beebe (1877–)

1877–Hayes's administration (1877–81)
End of Reconstruction
Chief Joseph's revolt
Railroad and coal strikes
Edison's phonograph

1878–James, *Daisy Miller*, *The Europeans*; Eggleston, *Roxy*; Green, *Leavenworth Case*; Lanier, 'The Marshes of Glynn'; Tyler, *American Literature*, 1607–1765
Upton Sinclair (1878–); Sandburg (1878–); Don Marquis (1878–1937)

1878–'Solid South'
Bland-Allison silver act
Arc light
Isadora Duncan (1878–1927)

1879–George, *Progress and Poverty*; Cable, *Old Creole Days*; Tourgée, *A Fool's Errand*; Burroughs, *Locusts and Wild Honey*; Herne and Belasco, *Hearts of Oak*; Stockton, *Rudder Grange*; Howells, *Lady of the Aroostook*
Cabell (1879–); Vachel Lindsay (1879–1931); Dorothy Canfield Fisher (1879–)

1879–Edison's incandescent lamp
First Madison Square Garden

1880–Adams, *Democracy*; Cable, *The Grandissimes*; Wallace, *Ben-Hur*; Aldrich, *Stillwater Tragedy*; Tourgée, *Bricks Without Straw*; Clemens, *A Tramp Abroad*; MacKaye, *Hazel Kirke*
The Dial (1880–1929)
Shalom Asch (1880–); Hergesheimer

1880–Population, 50,155,783
Bryn Mawr College founded

(1880) (1880–); Mencken (1880–); Julia Peterkin (1880–); Ernest Poole (1880–); Van Vechten (1880–)

1881–James, *Washington Square, The Portrait of a Lady*; Howells, *A Modern Instance*; Harris, *Uncle Remus*; Lothrop, *Five Little Peppers*
Century (1881–1930); *Judge* (1881–1939)
William McFee (1881–); Neihardt (1881–); Stribling (1881–)

1881–Garfield's administration (1881); Arthur's administration (1881–5)
Greely's Arctic expedition (1881–3)
A.F.of L.
Tuskegee Institute founded

1882–Clemens, *Prince and the Pauper*; Crawford, *Mr.Isaacs*; Stockton, 'The Lady or the Tiger'; Howard, *Young Mrs. Winthrop*; Whitman, *Specimen Days and Collect*
Susan Glaspell (1882–); G.J.Nathan (1882–)

1882–Immigration of Chinese labor suspended
Knights of Columbus
F.D.Roosevelt (1882–); Frankfurter (1882–)

1883–Clemens, *Life on the Mississippi*; Howe, *Story of a Country Town*; James, *Siege of London*; Stevenson, *Silverado Squatters*; Riley, *Old Swimmin'-Hole*; Peck, *Peck's Bad Boy*; Rives, *Quick or the Dead?*; Grant, *An Average Man*; Wilcox, *Poems of Passion*; Eggleston, *Hoosier Schoolboy*
Ladies Home Journal (1883–); *Life* (1883–1936)
Max Eastman (1883–)

1883–Civil Service Reform Act
Brooklyn Bridge completed
New steel navy begun
Maxim machine gun
Metropolitan Opera

1884–Clemens, *Huckleberry Finn*; Murfree, *In the Tennessee Mountains*; Parkman, *Montcalm and Wolfe*; Harris, *Mingo*; Jackson, *Ramona*; Jewett, *A Country Doctor*; Hay, *Bread-Winners*; Adams, *Esther*; Lanier, *Poems*; Lowell, 'On Democracy'
Sara Teasdale (1884–1933)

1884–Nationai Bureau of Labor
'Mugwumps'
'Rum, Romanism, and Rebellion'
Norman Thomas (1884–)

1885–Howells, *Rise of Silas Lapham*; Janvier, *Color Studies*; Keenan, *Money-Makers*; Royce, *Religious Aspect of Philosophy*; Grant, *Personal Memoirs* (1885–6)
DuBose Heyward (1885–1940); Lardner (1885–1933); Sinclair Lewis (1885–); Ezra Pound (1885–); Elinor Wylie (1885–1928)

1885–Cleveland's first administration (1885–9)
Statue of Liberty; Washington Monument dedicated
Stanford University founded

1886–James, *The Bostonians, The Princess Casamassima*; Jewett, *A White Heron*; Burnett, *Little Lord Fauntleroy*; Grady, 'The New South'; Howells, *Indian Summer*; Carnegie, *Triumphant Democracy*; Thompson, *The Old Homestead*
Cosmopolitan (1886–); *Forum* (1886–)
Van Wyck Brooks (1886–); Elizabeth M. Roberts (1886–1941)

1886–Haymarket Riot
Mergenthaler linotype first used
Presidential Succession law

1887–Page, *In Ole Virginia*; Howard, *The Henrietta*; Kirkland, *Zury*; French, *Knitters in the Sun*; Freeman, *A Humble Romance*; Wiggins, *Birds' Christmas Carol*; Crawford, *Saracinesca*; Frederic, *Seth's Brother's Wife*; Robinson, *Uncle Lisha's Shop*
Scribner's Magazine (1887–1939)
Floyd Dell (1887–); Edna Ferber (1887–); Jeffers (1887–); John Reed (1887–1920)

1887–Interstate Commerce Act
First electric surface railway

1888–Whitman, *November Boughs*; Bellamy, *Looking Backward*; Howard, *Shenandoah*; Lowell, *Political Essays*; Bryce, *American Commonwealth*; James, *Aspern Papers*; Conwell, *Acres of Diamonds*; Whitman, *Complete Poems and Prose* (1888–9); Stedman, *Library of American Literature* (1888–90)
Collier's (1888–); American Folk-Lore Society (1888–)
T.S.Eliot (1888–); O'Neill (1888–); Maxwell Anderson (1888–)

1888–Department of Labor
Irving Berlin (1888–)

1889–Howells, *Annie Kilburn*; Field, *A Little Book of Western Verse*; Clemens, *A Connecticut Yankee*; Carnegie, *Gospel of Wealth*; Hearn, *Chita*; Smith, *A White Umbrella in Mexico*; Adams, *History of the United States* (1889–91); Roosevelt, *Winning of the West* (1889–96)
Munsey's (1889–1929)
Conrad Aiken (1889–); Hervey Allen (1889–); Waldo Frank (1889–); George Kaufman (1889–)

1889–Harrison's administration (1889–93)
Australian ballot system adopted in ten states
Department of Agriculture
Oklahoma opened for settlement
Johnstown flood
First Pan-American Congress
Samoan treaty

1890–Dickinson, *Poems*; William James, *Principles of Psychology*; Riis, *How the Other Half Lives*; Mahan, *Influence of Sea Power*; Nicolay and Hay, *Abraham Lincoln*; Howells, *A Hazard of New Fortunes*; Hearn, *Youma*; James, *The Tragic Muse*; Woodberry, *Poems*
Literary Digest (1890–1938); *Smart Set* (1890–1930)
Marc Connelly (1890–); Christopher Morley (1890–)

1890–Population, 62,979,766
Sherman Anti-Trust and Silver Purchase acts
New Madison Square Garden

1891–Bierce, *Tales of Soldiers and Civilians*; Garland, *Main-Travelled Roads*; Howells, *Criticism and Fiction*; Freeman, *A New England Nun*; Smith, *Colonel Carter of Cartersville*; Dickinson, *Poems: Second Series*; Fiske, *The American Revolution*; Cooke, *Huckleberries Gathered from New England Hills*; Allen, *Flute and Violin*; Hoyt, *A Trip to Chinatown*; Norton's translation of *Divine Comedy* (1891–2)
First international copyright law
Review of Reviews (1891–1937)
Sidney Howard (1891–1939)

1891–Forest Reserve Act (beginning of conservation movement)
Populist Party
Thomas's Chicago Orchestra (1891–1905)

1892–Herne, *Shore Acres*; Page, *The Old South*
Sewanee Review (1892–)
Pearl Buck (1892–); MacLeish (1892–); Edna Millay (1892–); Elmer Rice (1892–)

1892–Cœur d'Alene and Homestead strikes
Ellis Island becomes immigrant receiving station
Lizzie Borden case
'The Four Hundred'
University of Chicago founded

1893–Fuller, *The Cliff-Dwellers*; Crane, *Maggie*; Turner, 'Significance of the Frontier'; Howells, *A Traveler from Altruria*
McClure's Magazine (1893–1929); *Outlook* (1893–1915)
Dorothy Parker (1893–)

1893–Cleveland's second administration (1893–7)
Gold panic
Chicago World Fair
Anti-Saloon League
Treaty of annexation of Hawaii signed, then withdrawn
Huey Long (1893–1935)

1894–Carman and Hovey, *Songs from Vagabondia*; Muir, *Mountains of California*;

1894–Coxey's army; Pullman, coal, and American Railway Union strikes

(1894) Clemens, *Pudd'nhead Wilson*; Santayana, *Sonnets*; Warner, *Golden House*; Allen, *Kentucky Cardinal*; Chopin, *Bayou Folk*; Tabb, *Poems*; Ford, *Honorable Peter Stirling*

Chap-Book (1894–8)

E.E.Cummings (1894–); Paul Green (1894–); Robert Nathan (1894–); James Thurber (1894–)

(1894)U.S. recognizes Republic of Hawaii

1895–Crane, *Red Badge of Courage, Black Riders*; Gillette, *Secret Service*; Mitchell, *Amos Judd*; Garland, *Rose of Dutcher's Coolly*; Fuller, *With the Procession*

Bookman (1895–1933); White's Emporia *Gazette* (1895–)

Vardis Fisher (1895–)

1895–Cuban rebellion; Venezuela affair
Income Tax Law declared unconstitutional

1896–Clemens, *Joan of Arc*; Dickinson, *Poems: Third Series*; Jewett, *Country of the Pointed Firs*; Robinson, *Torrent and the Night Before*; Van Dyke, *Story of the Other Wise Man*; Santayana, *The Sense of Beauty*; Bangs, *Houseboat on the Styx*; Frederic, *Damnation of Theron Ware*; Dunbar, *Lyrics of Lowly Life*; Parker, *Seats of the Mighty*; Patten, first of the 'Frank Merriwell' books; Sheldon, *In His Steps*

Philip Barry (1896–); Bromfield (1896–); Dos Passos (1896–); Fitzgerald (1896–1940); Sherwood (1896–)

1896–Klondike gold rush (1896ff.)
Bryan's 'Cross of Gold' speech
Rural free delivery
Edison introduces motion pictures in U.S.
Princeton University given present name

1897–James, *What Maisie Knew, The Spoils of Poynton*; Allen, *The Choir Invisible*; Sheldon, *In His Steps*; Mitchell, *Hugh Wynne*; Kipling, *Captains Courageous*; Davis, *Soldiers of Fortune*; Freeman, *Jerome*; Lewis, *Wolfville*; Robinson, *Children of the Night*; Tyler, *Literary History of the American Revolution*; William James, *The Will to Believe*

Survey Graphic (1897–)

Faulkner (1897–); Thornton Wilder (1897–)

1897–McKinley's administration (1897–1901)

1898–Dunne, *Mr. Dooley in Peace and War*; Rosenfeld, *Songs from the Ghetto*; Crane, *The Open Boat*; Johnston, *Prisoners of Hope*; Westcott, *David Harum*; Major, *When Knighthood Was in Flower*; Mitchell, *Adventures of François*; James, 'Turn of the Screw'; Parker, *Way Down East*

Stephen Benét (1898–); Hemingway (1898–)

1898–Spanish-American War; *Maine* incident; Battle of Manila Bay; Treaty of Paris
Annexation of Hawaii
Uniform Bankruptcy law
Gershwin (1898–1937)

1899–Crane, *The Monster, War Is Kind*; Gillette, *Sherlock Holmes*; Ade, *Fables in Slang*; Markham, 'The Man with the Hoe'; Hubbard, *Message to Garcia*; Norris, *McTeague*; Churchill, *Richard Carvel*; Veblen, *Theory of the Leisure Class*; Ford, *Janice Meredith*; James, *The Awkward Age*; Chesnutt, *The Conjure Woman*; Tarkington, *Gentleman from Indiana*

Everybody's (1899–1928); *Pearson's* (1899–1925); *American Boy* (1899–)

1899–Philippine insurrection (1899–1902)
First Hague conference
'Open Door' policy in China

(1899)Hart Crane (1899–1932); Vincent Sheean (1899–)

1900–London, *Son of the Wolf*; Roosevelt, *The Strenuous Life*; Crane, *Whilomville Stories*; Grant, *Unleavened Bread*; Dreiser, *Sister Carrie*; Belasco and Long, *Madame Butterfly*; Bacheller, *Eben Holden*; Thompson, *Alice of Old Vincennes*; Johnston, *To Have and to Hold*; Tarkington, *Monsieur Beaucaire*; Stedman, *An American Anthology*; Howells, *Literary Friends and Acquaintances*; Wendell, *Literary History of America*; Baum, *Wonderful Wizard of Oz*; Royce, *The World and the Individual* (1900–1901)

World's Work (1900–1932); *Who's Who in America* (1900–)

Thomas Wolfe (1900–1938); V.F.Calverton (1900–1940)

1900–Population, 76,303,387
Boxer rebellion
Galveston tornado
Socialist Party

1901–Norris, *The Octopus*; Moody, *Poems*; Fitch, *The Climbers*; Churchill, *The Crisis*; McCutcheon, *Graustark*; Rice, *Mrs.Wiggs of the Cabbage Patch*; Riis, *Making of an American*; James, *Sacred Fount*; Washington, *Up from Slavery*; Muir, *Our National Parks*

Granville Hicks (1901–); Glenway Wescott (1901–)

1901–Theodore Roosevelt's administration (1901–9)
Hay-Pauncefote Treaty
Northern Pacific panic
First transatlantic radio
Consolidation of U.S.Steel Corporation and of Union, Central, and Southern Pacific railroads

1902–Robinson, *Captain Craig*; William James, *Varieties of Religious Experience*; Riis, *The Battle with the Slum*; Wilson, *History of the American People*; Wister, *The Virginian*; James, *Wings of the Dove*; Fitch, *Girl with the Green Eyes*; Wharton, *Valley of Decision*; Glasgow, *The Battle Ground*; White, *The Blazed Trail*; Davis, *Ranson's Folly*; Fox, *Little Shepherd of Kingdom Come*

South Atlantic Quarterly (1902–)

Langston Hughes (1902–); Steinbeck (1902–)

1902–Reclamation Act; Isthmian Canal Act
Anthracite coal strike
Maryland enacts first state workmen's compensation law; Oregon adopts first state initiative and referendum laws

1903–London, *Call of the Wild*; Norris, *The Pit*; Adams, *Log of a Cowboy*; Austin, *Land of Little Rain*; DuBois, *Souls of Black Folk*; James, *The Ambassadors*; Wiggin, *Rebecca of Sunnybrook Farm*; Trent, *History of American Literature*; Woodberry, *America in Literature*; Sterling, *Testimony of the Suns*

Kay Boyle (1903–); Erskine Caldwell (1903–)

1903–Department of Commerce and Labor
Wisconsin enacts first state direct primary law
Postal scandal
Pacific cable from San Francisco to Manila
Revolt of Panama from Colombia; independence of Panama recognized by U.S.
Wright brothers airplane
Rhodes Scholarships

1904–James, *The Golden Bowl*; London, *The Sea-Wolf*; Cabell, *The Eagle's Shadow*; Tarbell, *History of the Standard Oil Company*; Porter, *Cabbages and Kings*; Stratton-Porter, *Freckles*; Steffens, *Shame of the Cities*; Belasco, *Girl of the Golden West*; Glasgow, *Deliverance*; Churchill, *The Crossing*; Howells, *Son of Royal Langbrith*; More, *Shelburne Essays* (1904–35); Adams, *Mont-Saint-Michel and Chartres*

American Academy of Arts and Letters (1904–)

1904–Pacific cable completed; Panama Canal begun
Northern Securities case
Chicago meat packers strike

(1904) James T. Farrell (1904–)

1905–De Leon, *Socialist Reconstruction of Society*; London, *War of the Classes*; Dixon, *The Clansman*; Austin, *Isidro*; Wharton, *House of Mirth*; Royle, *Squaw Man*; Santayana, *Life of Reason* (1905–6)
Variety (1905–)

1905–Insurance companies investigated
Rotary clubs; I.W.W.

1906–Austin, *The Flock*; Porter, *The Four Million*; Sinclair, *The Jungle*; Mitchell, *The New York Idea*; Churchill, *Coniston*; Deland, *Awakening of Helena Ritchie*; Traubel, *With Walt Whitman in Camden* (1906–14)
Odets (1906–)

1906–San Francisco earthquake and fire
Pure Food and Drug Act; Meat Inspection Act
Helicon Home Colony (1906–7)

1907–*Education of Henry Adams*; Sumner, *Folkways*; James, *The American Scene*; William James, *Pragmatism*; Porter, *Trimmed Lamp*; Fitch, *The Truth*; Thomas, *Witching Hour*; Wharton, *Madame de Treymes*; Service, *Spell of the Yukon*

1907–Second Hague Conference
Georgia and Alabama adopt prohibition
First Ziegfeld Follies
DeForest's vacuum tube

1908–Herrick, *Together*, *Master of the Inn*; Royce, *Philosophy of Loyalty*; Fox, *Trail of the Lonesome Pine*; Gale, *Friendship Village*; London, *The Iron Heel*; MacKaye, *The Scarecrow*
Saroyan (1908–)

1908–'Gentlemen's agreement' with Japan restricts immigration

1909–Stein, *Three Lives*; Croly, *The Promise of American Life*; White, *A Certain Rich Man*; Crothers, *A Man's World*; Porter, *Roads of Destiny*; Stratton-Porter, *Girl of the Limberlost*; London, *Martin Eden*; Moody, *Great Divide*, *Faith Healer*; Pound, *Personæ*; Sheldon, *The Nigger*
Richard Wright (1909–)

1909–Taft's administration (1909–13)
Peary's last North Pole expedition
Rise of 'Progressive' movement
'Dollar diplomacy'
Model T Ford marks first mass production of automobiles

1910–Robinson, *Town Down the River*; Myers, *History of the Great American Fortunes*; Peabody, *The Piper*; Lomax, *Cowboy Songs*; Addams, *Twenty Years at Hull House*; *Harvard Classics*; Huneker, *Promenades of an Impressionist*

1910–Population, 93,402,151

1911–Dreiser, *Jennie Gerhardt*; Wharton, *Ethan Frome*; Belasco, *Return of Peter Grimm*; Spingarn, *The New Criticism*; Sheldon, *The Boss*; Wright, *Winning of Barbara Worth*; Harrison, *Queed*; Bierce, *Devil's Dictionary*; Johnston, *Long Roll*; Sedgwick, *Tante*
Masses (later *New Masses*, 1911–); *Boy's Life* (1911–)

1911–La Follette forms National Republic Progressive League
Standard Oil and American Tobacco trusts dissolved

1912–Johnson, *Autobiography of an Ex-Colored Man*; Dreiser, *The Financier*; Antin, *Promised Land*; Grey, *Riders of the Purple Sage*; Manners, *Peg o' My Heart*; Millay, 'Renascence'; London, *Smoke Bellew*; Lowell, *Dome of Many-Coloured Glass*
Poetry: A Magazine of Verse (1912–)

1912–Progressive Party
Massachusetts establishes first minimum wage for women and children
Stokowski leader of Philadelphia Orchestra (1912–36)

1913–Cather, *O Pioneers!*; Frost, *A Boy's Will*; Wilson, *The New Freedom*; Sheldon, *Romance*; Glasgow, *Virginia*; Beard, *Economic Interpretation of the Constitution*; London, *Valley of the Moon*; Lind-

1913–Wilson's administration (1913–21)
16th and 17th Amendments; Federal Reserve Bank Act; Parcel Post system; Department of Labor
Armory Show

(1913) say, *General William Booth Enters into Heaven*; Churchill, *Inside of the Cup*; Eastman, *Enjoyment of Poetry*; Herrick, *One Woman's Life*; James, *A Small Boy and Others*; Macy, *Spirit of American Literature*

Reedy's Mirror (1913–20)

(1913) Ludlow strike (1913–14)

1914–Dickinson, *Single Hound*; Ficke, *Sonnets of a Portrait Painter*; Frost, *North of Boston*; Lowell, *Sword Blades and Poppy Seed*; Tarkington, *Penrod*; Oppenheim, *Songs for the New Age*; Brandeis, *Other People's Money*; Lindsay, *The Congo*; Herrick, *Clark's Field*; Giovannitti, *Arrows in the Gale*

New Republic (1914–); *Little Review* (1914–29)

1914–Panama Canal opened
Financial crisis
Federal Trade Commission; Clayton Anti-Trust Act
U.S.fleet in Vera Cruz; protest against British interference with American shipping
Kiwanis clubs

1915–Widdemer, *Factories*; Brooks, *America's Coming of Age*; *Some Imagist Poets*; Masters, *Spoon River Anthology*; Teasdale, *Rivers to the Sea*; Dreiser, *The 'Genius'*; Poole, *The Harbor*; Neihardt, *Song of Hugh Glass*; Cather, *Song of the Lark*; Pattee, *History of American Literature Since* 1870

Provincetown and Washington Square Players

1915–*Lusitania* sunk; Ford's 'Peace Ship'
Revival of Ku Klux Klan

1916–Frost, *Mountain Interval*; Sandburg, *Chicago Poems*; Clemens, *Mysterious Stranger*; Tarkington, *Seventeen*; Robinson, *Man Against the Sky*; McFee, *Casuals of the Sea*; Lowell, *Men, Women and Ghosts*; O'Neill, *Bound East for Cardiff*; Dewey, *Democracy and Education*; Wharton, *Xingu*; Bynner and Ficke, *Spectra*; Glasgow, *Life and Gabriella*; Lardner, *You Know Me, Al*

Seven Arts (1916–17); *Theatre Arts Magazine* (1916–)

1916–American punitive expedition in Mexico
U.S.Shipping Board; Federal Farm Loan Bank Act
San Francisco Preparedness Day Bombing

1917–Eliot, *Prufrock*; Garland, *Son of the Middle Border*; Teasdale, *Love Songs*; Robinson, *Merlin*; Moeller, *Mme Sand*; Morley, *Parnassus on Wheels*; Cabell, *Cream of the Jest*; Williams, *Why Marry?*; Lindsay, *Chinese Nightingale*; Austin, *The Ford*; Hergesheimer, *Three Black Pennys*; Phillips, *Susan Lenox*; Poole, *His Family*; Smith, *Trivia*; *Cambridge History of American Literature* (1917–20)

Pulitzer Prizes (1917–)

The Dial (1917–29)

1917–Germans renew unrestricted submarine warfare; U.S. enters World War; draft; A.E.F. in France; Espionage Act; War Industries Board; food production and control bills; government control of railroads
Prohibition amendment submitted to states
Lansing-Ishii Agreement
Rosenwald Fund
Lions clubs

1918–Sandburg, *Cornhuskers*; Gale, *Birth*; Hergesheimer, *Java Head*; Tarkington, *Magnificent Ambersons*; O'Neill, *Moon of the Caribbees*; Beebe, *Jungle Peace*; Ridge, *The Ghetto*; Smith and Bacon, *Lightnin'*; Streeter, *Dere Mabell*; Cather, *My Antonia*; *I.W.W. Songs*; Perry, *American Spirit in Literature*

Theatre Guild (1918–); Carolina Playmakers (1918–)

1918–Battles of Belleau Wood and Chat[illegible] Thierry; Argonne and St.Mihiel offensives; second Battle of Marne
'Fourteen points'; armistice; Wilson [illegible] peace conference

1919–Anderson, *Winesburg, Ohio*; Mencken, *The American Language*; Veblen,

1919–Treaty of Versailles (not signed by U.S.)
18th Amendment; Volstead Act

(1919) *Higher Learning in America*; Moeller, *Molière, Sophie*; Reed, *Ten Days That Shook the World*; Frank, *Our America*; Untermeyer, *Modern American Poetry*; Cabell, *Jurgen, Beyond Life*; Hergesheimer, *Linda Condon*; O'Brien, *White Shadows in the South Seas*; Mencken, *Prejudices* (1919–27)

(1919) Steel strike; National Industrial Conference
American Legion; Communist Party
Alcock and Brown fly Atlantic

1920–Eliot, *Poems*; Lewis, *Main Street*; Sandburg, *Smoke and Steel*; Huneker, *Painted Veils*; Wharton, *Age of Innocence*; Robinson, *Lancelot*; Brooks, *Ordeal of Mark Twain*; Gale, *Miss Lulu Bett*; O'Neill, *Emperor Jones, Beyond the Horizon*; Anderson, *Poor White*; Dell, *Moon-Calf*; Sinclair, *The Brass Check*; Millay, *A Few Figs from Thistles*; Fitzgerald, *This Side of Paradise*; Yezierska, *Hungry Hearts*
Frontier (1920–39)

1920–Population, 105,710,620
19th Amendment
Transcontinental airmail; first commercial radio broadcasting
Transportation, Merchant Marine, and Water-Power Acts
Socialists poll 919,799 votes in presidential election

1921–Dos Passos, *Three Soldiers*; O'Neill, *'Anna Christie'*; Robinson, *Collected Poems*; Tarkington, *Alice Adams*; Davis, *The Detour*; McFee, *Harbours of Memory*; Marquis, *The Old Soak*; Anderson, *Triumph of the Egg*; Adams, *Founding of New England*; Hecht, *Erik Dorn*; Donn-Byrne, *Messer Marco Polo*; Cabell, *Figures of Earth*; Wylie, *Nets to Catch the Wind*; Kaufman and Connelly, *Dulcy*; Van Doren, *The American Novel*

1921–Harding's administration (1921–3)
Industrial depression (nearly 6,000,000 unemployed)
Emergency Tariff Act; immigration quotas
First Sacco-Vanzetti trial
Separate peace with Germany; Washington Armament Limitation Conference

1922–Eliot, *The Waste Land*; Lewis, *Babbitt*; Cummings, *The Enormous Room*; Santayana, *Soliloquies in England*; Van Vechten, *Peter Whiffle*; Quick, *Vandemark's Folly*; Cather, *One of Ours*; *Civilization in the United States*; Sedgwick, *Adrienne Toner*; Colton, *Rain*; O'Neill, *The Hairy Ape*; Lowell, *Critical Fable*; Hough, *Covered Wagon*; Pound, *American Songs and Ballads*
Secession (1922–4)

1922–Coal and railway strikes
Fordney-McCumber tariff, highest in history
Nine-Power Treaty concerning China

1923–Millay, *Harp-Weaver*; Cather, *A Lost Lady*; Davis, *Icebound*; Leonard, *Two Lives*; Sinclair, *Goose Step*; Bradford, *Damaged Souls*; Wylie, *Black Armour, Jennifer Lorn*; Frost, *New Hampshire*; Atherton, *Black Oxen*; Rice, *Adding Machine*; Stevens, *Harmonium*; D.H. Lawrence, *Studies in Classic American Literature*; Foerster, *Nature in American Literature*; Quinn, *History of American Drama* (1923–7); Santayana, *Realms of Being* (1923–40)
Time (1923–)

1923–Coolidge's administration (1923–9)
Minimum wage law held unconstitutional
Teapot Dome scandal (1923–4)

1924–Jeffers, *Tamar*; Lardner, *How to Write Short Stories*; Seldes, *Seven Lively Arts*; Anderson, *Story Teller's Story*; Dickinson, *Complete Poems*; Clemens, *Autobiography*; O'Neill, *All God's Chillun, Desire Under the Elms*; Anderson and Stallings, *What Price Glory*; Kaufman and Connelly, *Beggar on Horseback*; Howard, *They Knew What They Wanted*; Melville, *Billy Budd*; Brom-

1924–Industrial depression
Soldiers' bonus passed over veto; new immigration quotas, with total exclusion of Japanese; child labor amendment submitted
Second Progressive Party
London reparations conference ('Dawes Pl[illegible]'

(1924) field, *Green Bay Tree*; Hemingway, *in our time*; Wharton, 'Old New York'; Sedgwick, *Little French Girl*; Nichols, *Abie's Irish Rose*

1925–Dos Passos, *Manhattan Transfer*; Anderson, *Dark Laughter*; Dreiser, *An American Tragedy*; Lewis, *Arrowsmith*; Cather, *Professor's House*; Heyward, *Porgy*; Kelly, *Craig's Wife*; Glasgow, *Barren Ground*; H.D., *Collected Poems*; Boyd, *Drums*; Fitzgerald, *The Great Gatsby*; Jeffers, *Roan Stallion*; Neihardt, *Song of the Indian Wars*; Pound, *Cantos*
American Speech (1925–); *New Yorker* (1925–); Guggenheim Fellowships (1925–)

1925–Scopes trial
Trinity College becomes Duke University

1926–Hemingway, *The Sun Also Rises*; Sandburg, *Abraham Lincoln: The Prairie Years*; O'Neill, *The Great God Brown*; Hughes, *The Weary Blues*; Van Vechten, *Nigger Heaven*; Parker, *Enough Rope*; Stribling, *Teeftallow*; Roberts, *Time of Man*; Cabell, *Silver Stallion*; Howard, *Silver Cord*; Beer, *Mauve Decade*; De Kruif, *Microbe Hunters*; Faulkner, *Soldier's Pay*; Green, *In Abraham's Bosom*; Loos, *Gentlemen Prefer Blondes*; Sullivan, *Our Times* (1926–36)

1926–Transatlantic wireless telephone
Byrd flies over North Pole

1927–Robinson, *Tristram*; Sinclair, *Oil!*; Cather, *Death Comes for the Archbishop*; Peterkin, *Black April*; Aiken, *Blue Voyage*; Rourke, *Trumpets of Jubilee*; Marquis, *archy and mehitabel*; Wescott, *The Grandmothers*; Rölvaag, *Giants in the Earth*; Sandburg, *American Songbag*; Parrington, *Main Currents in American Thought* (vols. I and II); Beard, *Rise of American Civilization*; Wilder, *Bridge of San Luis Rey*; Hemingway, *Men Without Women*; O'Neill, *Marco Millions*
Hound and Horn (1927–34); *American Caravan* (1927–); *Transition* (1927–)

1927–Lindbergh flight, New York to Paris
Transatlantic telephone
Sacco and Vanzetti executed
U.S. Marines in Nicaragua (1927–33)

1928–O'Neill, *Strange Interlude*; MacLeish, *Hamlet of A. MacLeish*; Benét, *John Brown's Body*; Sandburg, *Good Morning, America*; Sinclair, *Boston*; Peterkin, *Scarlet Sister Mary*; Frost, *West-Running Brook*; Bradford, *Ol' Man Adam an' His Chillun*; Foerster, *American Criticism*; Whipple, *Spokesmen*; *Dictionary of American Biography* (1928–36)
American Literature (1928–)

1928–Pan-American Conference; Kellogg Pact to outlaw war
First Byrd explorations from Little America
Talking pictures; first 'Mickey Mouse' cartoon

1929–Hemingway, *Farewell to Arms*; Krutch, *Modern Temper*; Wolfe, *Look Homeward, Angel*; Faulkner, *Sound and the Fury*; Frank, *Re-Discovery of America*; Aiken, *Selected Poems*; Lewis, *Dodsworth*; Rölvaag, *Peder Victorious*; Rice, *Street Scene*; La Farge, *Laughing Boy*; Lynd, *Middletown*; Lippmann, *Preface to Morals*; Glasgow, *They Stooped to Folly*

1929–Hoover's administration (1929–33)
Stock market collapse begins depression; Gastonia strike; Agricultural Marketing Act
Byrd flies over South Pole
Museum of Modern Art

1930–Eliot, *Ash Wednesday*; Crane, *The Bridge*; MacLeish, *New Found Land*; *I'll Take My Stand*; *Humanism and America*;

1930–Population, 122,775,046
London Naval Treaty; Smoot-Hawley tariff

(1930) Connelly, *Green Pastures*; Gold, *Jews without Money*; Barry, *Hotel Universe*; Glaspell, *Alison's House*; Dos Passos, *42nd Parallel*; Roberts, *Great Meadow*; Gregory, *Chelsea Rooming House*; Porter, *Flowering Judas*; Roberts, *Arundel*; Mott, *History of American Magazines* (1930–); *Encyclopædia of the Social Sciences* (1930–35)
Lewis receives Nobel Prize
Fortune (1930–)

1931–O'Neill, *Mourning Becomes Electra*; Steffens, *Autobiography*; Cather, *Shadows on the Rock*; Wilson, *Axel's Castle*; Stribling, *The Forge*; Aiken, *Preludes for Memnon*; Allen, *Only Yesterday*; Buck, *Good Earth*; Rölvaag, *Their Fathers' God*; Kaufman and Ryskind, *Of Thee I Sing*; Faulkner, *Sanctuary*; Riggs, *Green Grow the Lilacs*; Canby, *Classic Americans*
Group Theatre (1931–); *Story* (1931–)

1931–Debt and reparations moratorium; Norris Anti-Injunction Act
Ford's twenty-millionth automobile
First Scottsboro trial

1932–Caldwell, *Tobacco Road*; Farrell, *Young Lonigan*; Glasgow, *Sheltered Life*; Austin, *Earth Horizon*; Calverton, *Liberation of American Literature*; MacLeish, *Conquistador*; DeVoto, *Mark Twain's America*; Dos Passos, *1919*; Fisher, *In Tragic Life*; Anderson, *Night over Taos*; Nordhoff and Hall, *Mutiny on the Bounty*; Jeffers, *Thurso's Landing*; Stong, *State Fair*

1932–Reconstruction Finance Corporation
War veterans' bonus march on Washington

1933–Stein, *Autobiography of Alice B. Toklas*; Caldwell, *God's Little Acre*; Allen, *Anthony Adverse*; O'Neill, *Ah, Wilderness!*; Hicks, *Great Tradition*; MacLeish, *Frescoes*; Hemingway, *Winner Take Nothing*; Howard, *Alien Corn*; Kingsley, *Men in White*; Nathan, *One More Spring*; Robinson, *Talifer*; Kirkland and Caldwell, *Tobacco Road* (1933–41)

1933–Franklin Roosevelt's administration (1933–)
Bank 'holidays'; National Industrial Recovery Act; Civilian Conservation Corps; Tennessee Valley power project; Home Owners' Loan Act; Agricultural Adjustment and Farm Credit Acts; Banking and Gold Reserve Acts; Emergency Relief Act
U.S. recognizes U.S.S.R.
20th and 21st Amendments
Einstein and other *emigrés* come to U.S.

1934–Saroyan, *Daring Young Man on the Flying Trapeze*; Adamic, *Native's Return*; Cantwell, *Land of Plenty*; Hellman, *Children's Hour*; Sherwood, *Petrified Forest*; Farrell, *Young Manhood of Studs Lonigan*; Suckow, *The Folks*; Anderson, *Valley Forge*; Millay, *Wine from These Grapes*; *Culture in the South*; Young, *So Red the Rose*; Lomax, *American Ballads and Folk Songs*
Partisan Review (1934–)

1934–Reciprocal trade treaties
Securities Exchange Act; National Housing Act; Tyding-McDuffie Independence Act grants autonomy to Philippines in 1946
Federal Communications Commission
Upton Sinclair's EPIC campaign in California

1935–Lewis, *It Can't Happen Here*; MacLeish, *Panic*; Wolfe, *Of Time and the River*; Sheean, *Personal History*; Steinbeck, *Tortilla Flat*; Freeman, *R.E.Lee*; Perry, *William James*; Day, *Life with Father*; Glasgow, *Vein of Iron*; Anderson, *Winterset*; Odets, *Waiting for Lefty*, *Awake and Sing*; Kingsley, *Dead End*; *Proletarian Literature in the U.S.*
Federal Writers Project (1935–9); American Writers Congress

1935–Works Progress Administration ('work relief'); N.R.A. declared unconstitutional; Social Security Act; Agricultural Adjustment Act; National Labor Relations Act; first Neutrality Act; Public Utility Holding Company Act; National Youth Administration
C.I.O. founded
Regular transpacific air service

1936–Brooks, *Flowering of New England*; Dos Passos, *The Big Money*; Santayana, *The Last Puritan*; Frost, *A Further Range*; MacLeish, *Public Speech*; Sandburg, *The People, Yes*; Mitchell, *Gone with the Wind*; Steinbeck, *In Dubious Battle*; Jeffers, *Solstice*; Eliot, *Collected Poems*; *Dictionary of American English* (part one); Sherwood, *Idiot's Delight*; Peattie, *Green Laurels*; Shaw, *Bury the Dead*; Parker, *Not So Deep as a Well*
O'Neill receives Nobel Prize
Federal Theatre Project (1936–9)
New *Life* (1936–)

1936–Rural electrification act; A.A.A. declared unconstitutional; Merchant Marine Act; Soil Conservation and Domestic Allotment Act; Roosevelt re-elected, winning electoral votes of all but two states
C.I.O. expelled from A.F.of L.
Inter-American Peace Conference

1937–Hemingway, *To Have and Have Not*; Roberts, *Northwest Passage*; MacLeish, *The Fall of the City*; Marquand, *The Late George Apley*; Zaturenska, *Cold Morning Sky*; Blitzstein, *The Cradle Will Rock*; Millay, *Conversation at Midnight*; Steinbeck, *Of Mice and Men, The Red Pony*; Paul, *Life and Death of a Spanish Town*; Anderson, *High Tor*; Jeffers, *Such Counsels You Gave to Me*

1937–C.I.O. 'sit-down' strikes in glass and automotive industries
Roosevelt asks for reorganization of federal judiciary; Supreme Court validates National Labor Relations Act
'Quarantine aggressors' speech of Roosevelt; third Neutrality Act
Business 'recession'; migrant labor problem increased by drought
Bonneville dam project; U.S. Housing Authority

1938–Sherwood, *Abe Lincoln in Illinois*; Wilder, *Our Town*; Van Doren, *Benjamin Franklin*; Rawlings, *The Yearling*; Hemingway, *The Fifth Column*; Peattie, *Prairie Grove*
Pearl Buck receives Nobel Prize

1938–Largest peace-time naval bill in U.S. history; Lima Conference
Wages and Hours Law
Mexico expropriates foreign oil holdings
Howard Hughes flies around world in 91 hours

1939–Steinbeck, *The Grapes of Wrath*; Beard, *America in Midpassage*; Dos Passos, *Adventures of a Young Man*; Fisher, *Children of God*; Frank, *The Bridegroom Cometh*; Frost, *Collected Poems*; Shaw, *The Gentle People*; Marquand, *Wickford Point*; Parker, *Here Lies*; Sandburg, *Abraham Lincoln: The War Years*; Saroyan, *The Time of Your Life*; Thurber, *The Last Flower*; Van Doren, *Collected Poems*; Wolfe, *The Web and the Rock*

1939–Regular transatlantic air service
King George and Queen Elizabeth tour U.S. and Canada
Neutrality Act amended, repealing arms embargo
Hatch Act forbids political activity by government employes
Tom Mooney pardoned

1940–*Dictionary of American History*; Wright, *Native Son*; Wolfe, *You Can't Go Home Again*; Sinclair, *World's End*; Hemingway, *For Whom the Bell Tolls*; Saroyan, *My Name is Aram*; Sherwood, *There Shall Be No Night*; Frank, *Chart for Rough Water*; Brooks, *New England: Indian Summer*; Cather, *Sapphira and the Slave Girl*; Roberts, *Oliver Wiswell*; Wescott, *The Pilgrim Hawk*; Josephson, *The President Makers*; Bacon, *Sunderland Capture*; Anderson, *Journey to Jerusalem*
PM (1940–)

1940–Population, *c.*131,000,000
First peace time conscription; acquisition of British naval and air bases; 'two ocean' navy; joint defense with Canada; Republicans, business leaders 'drafted' for defense administration; aid to Great Britain 'short of war'; transfer of 50 over-age destroyers to Great Britain
Roosevelt elected for third term

1941–Marquand, *H.M.Pulham,Esq.*; W.R. Benét, *The Dust which is God*; MacLeish, *A Time to Speak*; Van Wyck Brooks, *On Literature Today*; Sinclair, *Between Two Worlds*; Glasgow, *In This Our Life*; Saroyan, *The Beautiful People*; Hellman, *Watch on the Rhine*; Nathan, *They Went on Together*

1941–'Lend-lease' bill for aid to Great Britain; seven billion dollar first appropriation for aid to anti-Axis nations; U.S. acquires bases and military fortifications in Greenland to maintain 'present status'; President declares National Emergency; U.S. seizes Axis ships in American ports; orders all Nazi consulates closed.
National Gallery of Art opened